THE ROGVE:

OR

THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE.*

WRITTEN IN SPANISH

by MATHEO ALEMAN,

Seruant to his Catholike Maieſtie, and borne in SEVILL.

LONDON,

Printed for *Edward Blount.* 1623.

THE TILE

OF

THE BOGAR

AL

ILLVSTRE

SENNOR, *DON IVAN ESTRANGWAYES* ESPEIO

DE LA VIRTVD Y NOBLEZA,

Cauallero Titulado, y gentilhombre de la Camara de Su Sereniſsima Mageſdad de la *gran Bretaña.*

SEñor mio ; No he querido encomendar mi *Picaro* á la protecion de los Reyes, y Principes. Porque, demas que no conuienen tales perſonas à ſus Mageſdades y Grandezas, an hecho particulares Leyes muy rigoroſas, y Pragmaticas ſeueras contra los que lo hazen.

Ni tampoco a los Conſejeros de Eſtado. Porque, aunque à caſo los tengan, no ſe ſiruen, ni guſtan dellos, ſi no por ſu proprio interes, ò razon de Eſtado.

A los Iuezes, menos. Porque ſon enemigos mortales de la pobreza, y de los, que no tienen dineros.

Pero, à vueſtra Señoria ſi ; (aunque no ſin reçelo) por amor de los grillos, y çien açotes bien pagados. Siendo vueſtra Señoria Gouernador principal en ſu tierra, y vno de los Corregidores de *Loçanos*, y *Picaros*. Yo ſe muy bien, que vueſtra Señoria puede echar mano à mi *Picaro*, y agarrarle, para lleuarle à la Carcel, y detenerle en ella. Yo confieſſo, que era todo quanto malo ſe puede dezir. Arrojado, y

desuanecido, inconsiderado, descuydado, confuso, desordenado, indiscreto. Era reboltoso, y amigo de nouedades. Tenia sutilezas, inuenciones, y engaños. Era importuno, y porfiado, semejante al nauio, que anda dando bordes en la ribera, y nunca acaba de tomar puerto. Era como vna pared, que cada momento estaua para desmoronarse, y caer en tierra. No tenia firmeza en su voluntad; no tomaua resolucion, en lo que auia de hazer; No Sabia refrenar sus passiones; Hinchosele la cabeça de viento, desuaneçio en embelecos; Dando consejo à los otros, no sabiendo los tomar para si. Donde llegò à triste fortuna, y suerte, a Lazeria, mezquindad, de sarrapamiento, estrema miseria, y necessidad, y en fin, à las Galeras.

Con todo esso, como los *Picaros* tienen entrada en las Casas de Señores, no desconfio, que este niño de la Piedra, serà bien recebido de vuestra Señoria, y en toda verdad, deue estimarse en mucho.

Porque, aunque habla mucho, pero no sin sustancia. No se puede dezir ser todo hoja, y no tener fruto. O, que nuestro *Picaro* es gran *Charlatan*; que tiene muchas palabras, y en ellas poco de que echar mano, que sea de consideracion. Tira à dos hitos, por diuersos caminos, dando à entender vna cosa con sus palabras, y haziendo lo contrario en sus obras. Hallarà vuestra Señoria (como dizen) entre Col, y Col, Lechuga. Variedad de cosas para entretener, y recrear, para que no nos enfademos, tratando siempre vna cosa. Trayendo tanta variedad de razones, quantas colores tiene vn Pintor. No es como Elecho, yerua sin tallo, sin flor, y sin simiente. Las rasuras, que salen de las pieças de açofar, quando se tornean, en si valen poco, y quando las recogen, hazen bulto; pero echadas à derretir, se bueluen en muy poco. Tales son las palabras vanas de los *Charlatanes*, y Habladores. Que, si los apurais, tienen poca sustancia.

Pero este *Picaro*, no es holgaçan, que esta papando viento, como los fuelles. Grande es el prouecho, la vtilidad, y ganancia, que del se saca. Estremado es en sus dichos, y donayres, y comprehende, y encierra muchas moralidades, vnas dentro de otras. Es muy graçioso: Es (como dizen) vna sal.

Diran

Diran algunos ; Que es todo intricado, confuſo, mal-digeſto, reueſado. Mienten. Antes todo al contrario.

Por el hilo, ſe ſaca el ouillo : y por la mueſtra, y principio de vna coſa, ſe conoçe lo demas della.

O que natural fuerça de entendimiento ! O , como da en el blanco ! Como tira à punteria. No tira, (como otros) à tiento, à troche moche, de donde diere, ſi no con orden, y buen concierto. Aduertiendo à todos, que no enſucien ſus manos en coſas viles, ni hagan coſa fea, O indecente ; ſi no, que ſe recojan, y que paren, y obedeſcan al freno de la razon.

Mi *Picaro*, es hombre de bien. No es de aquellos Vellacos de Madrid, que pregonan vino, y venden vinagre. De los, que prometen coſas buenas y altas, y deſpues ſon ordinarias y friuolas.

No digo mas, ſino que me he engolfado en vn negocio muy dificultoſo. Perdone me vueſtra Señoria. No pude menos. Quales las cadenas, quales las ataduras de es labones nigeridos vnos en otros, ſon la importunidad de los Amigos, y la propria promeſa ? Eſtando deſta manera empeñado, me fue meneſter para ſatisfazer con mi obligacion ; y auiendome engargantado el pie en el eſtriuo, no pude tan facilmente ſacarlo.

Yo me he pueſto las faldas en cinta, para paſſar mi Carrera ; Se mi poco valor, y flaqueza, y que alo menos, ſi no he errado, he tropeçado. Pero, ſi vueſtra Señoria ſera ſeruido de tenerla por buena, y ſuficiente, y que he hecho mi deuer ſin falta, O Fealdad, el Torneo no ſera malo, teniendo *Padrino* tan noble para abonarme.

El que buelue las palabras y conceptos de vna lengua en otra à meneſter tener fidelidad, prudencia, y ſagacidad, y ygual noticia de ambas Lenguas, y lo que en ellas ſe dize por aluſiones, y terminos metaforicos, y mirar lo, que en eſta otra Lengua ſe puede correſponder. Muchos vierten ; y las mas vezes, peruierten.

El *Picaro*, eſta traſladado. Plega à Dios, que di mi mano no ſea mal tradado. Traducido, ſi ; Si traſlucido, bien eſta. El *Picaro* de *Aleman* ha mudado ſu Veſtido ; ſu Traje, no es

al modo de Eſpaña, ſi no de Inglaterra. Si yo le he pueſto en ſu punto y ſer, muy venturoſo ſoy. Guarde me Dios, *de mala noche, y parir hija.* Ay tal deſconſuelo en el mundo cómo trabajar mucho en vn negocio, y alcabo no ſuceder como ſe deſeaua.

En algunos lugares, hallo mi *Guzmanico* eſcuro como la noche. Pero, yo he hecho algunos *Eſcolios*, para quitar los *Eſcollos*. Eſpero buen puerto. Pero, ſi à caſo ſe em braueçe la *Mar* de *Maldiçion*, ſi las Olas creçen, con la eſpuma de los Deſlenguados, ſi eſte mi pobre Vaxel no tiene fuerça para contraſtar las Tempeſtades amenazadas, me deſnudare, y arrojare con impetu y furia en la Mar, dexandole à la inclemencia deſtos *Toruellinos*, y eſpiritus turbulentos. Confiando, que vueſtra Señoria me dara la mano, para Sacarme fuera de vn Abiſmo tan peligroſo, no ſufriendo ſe anegue y perezca en la Mar, ahogandoſe en ella, vno que es tan

Aficionado à vueſtra Señoria; como
Don Diego Puede-Ser; de Santa
Maria Magdalena.

* *Puede ser. may be. Mabbe.*

TO

DON FRANCISCO DE ROIAS, MARQVESSE DE POZA, LORD OF THE HOVSE DE MONCON, Presidēt of the Councell de HAZIENDA to his Maiestie, and the Courts *belonging there-vnto.*

OF *all those things in this world, which are wont amongst men to cause the greatest feare, I know not any that may be greater, or of equall compare to that of an euill intention, and secret ill meaning. And by so much truely the more, by how much it shall bee the more deepely rooted in those that are of obscure Bloud, humble Birth, and base mindes. For in such, it is vsually more forcible, and lesse corrigible. But both of them, the one and the other, are like vnto* Hunters; *who (taking vp some close standing shadowed ouer with boughes) lye in wait for our destruction, and euen then, after that we haue receiued our deaths wound, we are neuer awhit the neerer in discouering whence our hurt came. These are* Basilisks, *whom if we view them first, their poyson loseth its force, and is of so much the lesse preiudice; but if they once gaine the hand of vs (by getting a kinde of dominion ouer vs) they bring vs in danger of our vtter vndoing. They are a scandall to a Common-wealth, the promoting Knaues of* Innocence, *and the very executioners of* Vertue; *against whom the wisedome of man is not of power to preuaile, or able to guard it selfe. Of these kinde of men, from whose subtill gins (as traps tending to death) no person liues secure, I (for mine owne part) haue euer been more afraid then of any other beasts, how fierce or hurtfull so euer. And more especially in this present occasion, wherein a large field is laid open vnto them, wherein they may sow the seed of their venome, calumniating mee (at*

the

the leaſt) with the reprochfull attribute of an ouer-bold and raſh-headed fellow, that I ſhould preſume to offer to ſo powerful a Prince, *ſo poore a gift. Not conſidering, that this my boldneſſe firſt grew from that neceſsitie, where-into their feare had put mee. For, as thoſe Cities that are weakely fortified, meanely mann'd, and of ſmall force for defence, haue ſo much the greater need of braue and worthy Captaines to maintaine them, by reſiſting the furious violence, and ſharpe aſſaults of their enemies: So in like manner was it needfull for me, to helpe my ſelfe, and make vſe of your Lordſhips protection, in whom, with ſo much ſplendour and glory, are made manifeſt to the worlds view, thoſe three parts* (Vertue, Blood, *and* Power) *whereof true* Nobleneſſe *is compoſed. And becauſe it is a peculiar propertie belonging there-unto, to fauour and protect thoſe, who (as to a Sacred place) with-draw themſelues thither for their better ſafety, I reſt ſo ſecure vnder the ſhadow of your Lordſhips protection, and rely ſo much vpon your noble diſpoſition, that you ſtretching out the wings of your accuſtomed clemency, my booke ſhall vnder them (as Chickens vnder the Hens wing) remaine free from thoſe that ſhall ſeeke to wrong it: And together therewith obtaine this happineſſe, that you making that great, which in it ſelfe is little, admitting a poore* Picaro, *to become a Courtier, ſhall giue a being to that which had none before, a worke of ſuch Greatneſſe and Excellencie, as ſhall make your Lordſhip to appeare the more. Whoſe long and happy life is deſired of no man more then*

MATHEO ALEMAN.

TO

To the Vulgar.

TO me it is no new thing (though perhaps it be to thee) to ſee (O thou vertue-hating Vulgar) the many bad friends that thou haſt; that little, which thou deſerueſt, and that leſſe, which thou vnderſtandeſt: To behold, how biting, how enuious, how couetous thou art; how quick in defaming, how ſlowe in honoring; how certain in ill, how vncertaine in good; how facile to fly out, and how hard to bee curbed in. What Diamond is there ſo hard, which thy ſharpe teeth doe not grind to powder? What vertue ſcapes Free from thy venemous tongue? What piety doe thy actions protect? What defects doth thy cloake couer? What Treacle doe thy eyes behold, which doe not like the *Baſiliske* impoyſon? What Flower, though neuer ſo cordiall, euer entred thorow thy eares, which in the Hiue of thy heart thou didſt not conuert into poyſon? What ſanctitie haſt not thou calumniated? What innocencie haſt not thou perſecuted? What ſingleneſſe of heart haſt not thou condemned? What iuſtice haſt not thou confounded? What truth haſt not thou profaned? In what greene field haſt thou ſet thy foot, which thou haſt not defiled with thy filthy luxuries? And if it were poſſible to paint forth to the life the true faſhion of hell, and the torments thereof, thou onely, in my iudgement, mightſt (and that truely) be its perfecteſt counterfet. Thinkeſt thou (peraduenture) that paſſion blindeth mee, that anger moueth me, or that ignorance violently thruſts me on? No verily. And if thou couldſt but be capable of ſeeing thy owne errour, but ſuffer thy ſelfe to be informed, (onely but with turning thy head aſide) thou ſhouldſt finde thy actions æternized, and euen from *Adam* reproued, as thou thy ſelfe art already condemned. But alas, what amendment may bee expected from ſo inveterated a Canker? Or who is he, that can be ſo happy, as to vnclue himſelfe from this Labyrinth, or to vnſeaze himſelfe from thy griping talons? I fled from the confuſed Court, and thou followedſt me into a poore Village; I with-drew my ſelfe into ſolitarie Shades, and there thou madeſt a ſhot at me, and drew'ſt thy venemous ſhafts at mee; neuer letting me alone, but ſtill vexing and purſuing me, to bring me vnder thy rigid Iuriſdiction, and tyrannicall Empire. I am well aſſured that the protection which I carry with mee, will not correct thy crooked diſpoſition, nor giue that reſpect, which in good manners thou oweſt, to his noble qualitie, nor that in confidence thereof I ſhould get free from thy arreſting hand. For thou deſpiſing all goodneſſe and ciuilitie, (which are things that neuer yet came within the reach of thy better conſideration) haſt raſhly and vnaduiſedly bitten ſo many illuſtrious and worthy perſons, extolling ſome for their wit (though idle) accuſing others for their lightneſſe, and defaming a third of lyes and falſe-hoods. Thou

art

art *Mus campeſtris*, a very Field-mouſe, and no better. Thou art ſtill nibbling on the hard rinde of the ſowre and vnſauourie *Melons*, but when thou commeſt to thoſe that are ſweet and wholeſome, and fitter for nouriſhment, thy ſtomake fals into a loathing, thou canſt not feede on them without ſurfetting. Thou imitateſt that importunate, troubleſome, and eare-offending Fly (through his vntuneable buzzing) the *Scarabee*, who not dwelling on the ſweeter ſort of Flowers, flyes from forth the delicate Gardens, and pleaſant Woods, for to ſettle on a Cowe-ſheard, fall vpon a dunghill, and other ſuch like noyſome places. Thou doeſt not make any ſtay vpon the high moralities of diuiner wits, but onely content'ſt thy ſelfe with that which the Dogge ſaid, and the Foxe anſwered; this cleaues cloſe vnto thee; this, when thou haſt read it, remaineth ſtill with thee, and hauing made it once thine owne, is neuer againe forgotten. O vnfortunate Foxe, that thou muſt be likened to one of theſe, and muſt, like theſe, be reuiled and perſecuted, like an vnprofitable and miſchieuous member in a Common-wealth! I will not inioy the priuiledge of thy honours, nor the freedome of thy Flatteries, though thou wouldſt inrich me with all the wealth of thy praiſes. For the commendation of wicked men, is but ſhame and diſhonour. And I rather deſire the reprehenſion of the good; becauſe the end for which they doe it, is like vnto themſelues, then thy depraued eſtimation, which cannot bee but bad. Thou takeſt too much libertie vnto thee, thou art an vnbridled beaſt, a head-ſtrong Iade; and, if occaſion of matter bee offered vnto thee, thou runn'ſt away with it, thou kick'ſt, and fling'ſt, thou trampleſt mens good names vnder thy feete, thou breakeſt all bounds of modeſtie, and teareſt all in pieces that ſtands in thy way, and whatſoeuer elſe ſhall ſeeme good vnto thee. But theſe faire Flowers, which thou ſo ſcornefully treadeſt vnder thy feete, crowne the Temples of the vertuous, and giue a fragrant and odoriferous ſmell in the noſtrils of thoſe that are noble. The deadly razour-wounding ſlaſhes of thy ſharpe tuskes, and the mortall ſtrokes made by thy hands, ſhall heale the man that is diſcreet, vnder whoſe warme ſhade, I ſhall happily bee defended from all the ſtormes and tempeſts of thy bluſtring malice.

TO

To the discreet Reader.

IT is vsuall with some, that are troubled in their sleepe with sad and melancholy dreames, to striue so strongly with their imagination (that without beeing otherwise moued at all) after they are awakened and come to themselues, remaine so broken and tyred out, as if they had wrestled and tugged hand to hand with some braue fierce Bull. And such a one for all the world doe I finde my selfe in getting out of my former Proeme, my mind still beating vpon the Barbarisme, and dis-equall number of those ignorant Dolts, to whose censure I submitted my selfe, it faring therein with me, as with him, who thrusts himselfe into a voluntary exile, hauing not the power afterwards in his owne hands to reuerse his banishment. I did ingage my selfe by promise to compose this booke, and now I am inforced to hold my honest word. I must confesse I made a false Vie, and did set vp my rest in iest, but now I am driuen to see it in earnest. For it is the word, that bindes the Player. I know full well (considering the rudenesse of my wit, and shortnesse of my studies) that it had beene very fit in me to feare the Carreere that I am to make; and that this libertie and licence of mine is more then needed, and might well haue beene spared; But considering with my selfe, that there is not any Booke so bad, out of which some good may not be drawne, it may be possible, that in that wherein my wit was wanting, the zeale which I had to profit others, may supply that defect, by working some vertuous effect; which happinesse if I light vpon, it shall bee a sufficient reward of my greater paines, and make this my boldnesse, more worthy your pardon. I shall not need with the discreet to vse long Proemes, nor prolixe circumlocutions. For neither can the eloquence of words vainely worke him, nor the force of speech dotingly perswade him to more then what is iust; nor doth his felicitie consist in the procuring of his fauourable Censure. I remit my selfe to his correction; I craue his helping hand to vphold my weakenesse, and put my selfe wholly vnder his faire protection.

And thou, (O Reader) that art desirous to profit hereby, if thou wilt but truely consider me, when I wrote this Booke, and that common good, to which I had then an eye, thou wilt not conceit, that what hath beene done therein, was haply performed by me for priuate Interest, or vndertaken for ostentation of wit; for I did neuer so much as pretend it, nor could I finde that sufficient worth in me, to put my selfe vpon my wings in so vaine a flight.

Some perhaps will say, That hauing (like vnto Watermen) turn'd my backe and eyes the contrarie way, (who looke one way, and rowe another) I direct this little Barke of mine, where I haue most desire to land. But vpon mine honest word, hee is deceiued, that so thinketh. For it was my sole purpose, to guide the prow for the publike good, if I might be worthy to obtaine so great a blessing, and that my labour might serue to so good a vse. Thou shalt finde many things not

so

ſo cleane wrought, but like Painters firſt colours, laid on with a careleſſe hand and ſlubberd ouer, which I did omit to poliſh and flouriſh ouer for ſome cauſes, that gaue hinderance there-vnto. Others are ſome-what more refined, and better ſhadowed, which I did willingly auoid to follow, and was loth to finiſh them to the full, being as feareſull, as careſull of committing ſome vnaduiſed errour, or vn-conceiued offence. Others I boldly vnmasked and laid open to diſcouery, as worthy to be drawne without a vayle, and fit to be preſented to publike view. I haue much to ſay vnto thee, and deſire ſo to doe, yet may not tell it thee. I haue written vnto thee, yet haue I left out much of what I would haue written. Reade ſo, as it becomes thee to reade, and doe not ſcoffe at my Fable; and if it ſhall receiue intertainment at thy hands, accept theſe lines, which I giue thee, and with them, the minde wherewith they be offered vnto thee. Doe not caſt them, as duſt and ſweepings of the houſe, vpon the dunghill of oblition; conſider that there may be ſome filings and parings of price; rake them out, gather them into a heape, and when they come to a conuenient quantitie, put them into the criſole of thy conſideration; giue to them the fire of the Spirit; and I aſſure thee, thou ſhalt extract ſome gold from them, wherewithall to inrich thy ſelfe. Theſe Arrowes are not all of mine owne Quiuer, nor this honey that I ſet before thee, all of mine owne hiue; much of their ſweetneſſe did I ſucke from holy and learned men; this is merchantable ware, well-conditioned; and for ſuch I recommend it vnto thee. And becauſe there is no good thing, which doth not proceed from the hands of God; nor any thing ſo bad, whereof ſome glory doth not reſult to his diuine Maieſtie (as hauing a part in euery thing) imbrace, and giue a friendly reception to that which may be profitable for thee, reiecting that which is otherwiſe, or whatſoeuer elſe is bad, as meerely mine: Albeit I am very confident, that thoſe things which cannot hurt, are wont many times to doe much good.

In this Diſcourſe, thou maiſt moralize things, as they ſhall bee offered vnto thee; Thou haſt a large margent left thee to doe it; That, which thou ſhalt find leſſe graue, or diſcompoſed, preſents it ſelfe in the perſon of a Picaro, *or* Rogue; *which is the Subiect of this Booke. Such things as theſe (which are not very many) ſport thy ſelfe a while with them, ieſt & play the wagge, and afterwards ſhake hands with them. For at great Feaſts, we muſt haue meats for all mouthes; and diſhes for all taſtes; Pleaſant and ſweet wines, which muſt cheere the heart, and helpe digeſtion; and muſicke for to pleaſe and delight the eares.*

Vale, Amice.

A Declaration for the better vnderſtanding *of this* BOOKE.

HAuing written this Poetical Hiſtory, with purpoſe to haue it printed in one only Volume, in the diſcourſe whereof thoſe doubts might be cleared, which now (being diuided) might offer themſelues; it appeared (to my ſeeming) a very iuſt thing, to remoue this inconuenience, beeing it might eaſily be done, and that in very few words. For which purpoſe, it is to bee pre-ſuppoſed, That *Guzman de Alfarache*, our *Picaro*, hauing (by his ſtudy) come to be a good Latiniſt, Rhetorician, and Grecian (as we ſhall deliuer vnto you in this firſt Part) after that hee had returned out of *Italy* into *Spaine*, he went forward in his Studies, with purpoſe to profeſſe the ſtate of Religion, and to make himſelfe a Church-man. But by reaſon of his often relapſings to his Vices, he left that courſe, after he had ſpent ſome yeeres therein. Now himſelfe writeth his owne life from a-boord the Gallies, where hee remained, and was put to the Oare, for the faults which hee had committed, hauing beene a moſt famous Thiefe, and notorious Offender, as you ſhall ſee more at large in the ſecond Part. Nor is it any improprietie, or beyond our preſent purpoſe, if in this firſt Part I ſhall ſet before you ſome Tracts of Doctrine: But rather ſeemeth agreeable vnto reaſon to preſent vnto you a man of a cleere vnderſtanding, holpen by Learning, and puniſhed by Time, making benefit of that idle time, which hee had in the Gallies; Being that we likewiſe ſee many ignorant poore ſoules ſentenced to death, who being to ſpend the remainder of their time in thinking on their ſoules health, diuert their thoughts from all other worldly things, for to make a ſhort ſtudied ſpeech when they come to the Ladder.

This Booke diuides it ſelfe into three parts: In the firſt, it is treated of *Guzman de Alfaraches* going forth of his mothers houſe, and the ſlender conſideration of yong men in thoſe indeuours which they attempt: And how, though their eye-ſight be cleere, they will not ſee, precipitated and blinded with their falſe pleaſures. In the ſecond, the life of a *Picaro* or *Rogue*, which hee vnder-went, and the lewd tricks which he was led into by ill company, and the time which he idly miſ-ſpent. In the third, the calamities, and extreme pouertie, whereunto he grew, and the inconſiderate courſes which he ran into, becauſe he would not take vp himſelfe in time; and his obſtinacie in not ſuffering himſelfe to be ruled by thoſe, who were both able and deſirous to doe him good. In that which I ſhall write hereafter, I ſhall (God willing) giue an end to this Story.

AN ELOGIVM

Of ALFONSO de BAROS, Chamberlaine to KING PHILIP the third, in praise of this Booke, and of MATHEO ALEMAN the Author thereof.

IF we owe somewhat to those Painters, who in a Treasurie as it were of Monuments, or some faire Store-house, haue reserued and lapt vp in their linnen clothes (though vnder lines & dumbe colours) the pictures of those, who for their Heroicall Actions, merited their Tables; As also of those, who by their vnworthie carriage gaue motion to their Pensils; for that with the pleasing portraiture of the one, and the abhorred aspect of the other, they awaken and stirre vp our Spirits, through the ones fame, to imitation; and through the others infamie, to feare, and aduisement: Much more obligation (without all comparison) haue we vnto those, who to their full life represent these things vnto vs in their Histories; Who doe vs more good in what they haue written, and haue this aduantage of the others limming, that their reports and relations doe worke so strongly, and with that perswasiue power vpon our imagination, as if we had really and in truth seene both them and all that they did, with these our bodily eyes.

In these, and all the rest (if there resteth any obligation that may be greater) we haue both the light and the life, from this our Author: For in this his Historie, which he now hangs foorth (as Painters doe their pictures) in the open streete, to the eye of all the World, he hath portraited so to the life, a sonne of idlenes, a loytering Rogue; that there is not any man (though neuer so ignorant) but will knowe him at the first sight, for that he is so like his father: Who as he is the parent of all Vices, so this his childe came to be the Center and Gulfe of them all, suffering them to imbosome themselues within him, receiuing in (as sinkes doe) infinite gatherings, not of waters, but of filth and mire. And being now so farre improued in them, that he might serue for an example and patterne vnto those, who should dispose themselues to inioy the like kinde of life, the Authors drift is, that no man should adorne himselfe with such roabes as these: For there is not any one so abhorring himselfe, that at so deare a rate will cloathe himselfe with his Liuerie, seeing that he payd with a shamefull end the punishment of his offences, and the disordinate actions, which his licentious desires did commit. Whose merited and exemplary chastisemens: is expressed with Categoricall and strong tearmes, and with an argument ex contrario; *to wit, the reward, & fortunate successes which shall follow him, who liuing vprightly, and spending his time well, shall in his course of life, apply himselfe to a certaine and determined end, and make himselfe the opposite, and Antipodes as it were of the inconstant Figure of this insuing discourse. Wherein, for his admirable order, and good obseruations, bearing in the face of it the resemblance of a Historie, the Author hath happely attained the name and office of an Historian, and a Painter; as well in those representations, that are to be seene a farre off, as in those shadowes, wherewith he hath disguised his instructions, and those his so necessary rules and aduertisments, appertaining to a politicall life, and to Morall Philosophie, whereunto hee principally aimed; shewing plainely, that which* Licurgus *expressed, by the example of those two Whelps of one litter, whereof the one, through good teaching, and a habit he had gotten, followed the hunting of the Hare, till he had kill'd him; and the other, because he had not beene so well bred, in stead of falling to hunting, fell a gnawing the bone which he found in the way: Giuing vs to vnderstand by infallible demonstrations, the knowne danger, wherein those children stand, who in their childe-*

child-hood are trayned vp without obedience and good education by their parents: For without this curbe, they ruſh into the careere of their youth, vpon the vnbridled Horſe of their irrationall and vntamed appetite, which carries them away headlong, and precipitates them into a thouſand inconueniences, daſhing them-ſelues as vpon ſo many Rocks, till there is not one bone left vnbroken, nor one limme left vnrent of their life & goods. He likewiſe ſheweth vnto vs, that that man is no leſſe ſubiect to the like misfortunes, who, being deſtitute of ſome noble Science, or ſome ſpeciall miſterie, groundes his hopes vpon the vntilled doctrine of Natures ſchoole: For without exerciſing his Talent, or imploying his wit, or without putting him-ſelfe into ſome profeſſion, (hauing experimented that arte, to which he is moſt inclineable) he vſurpeth offices quite contrary to his owne inclination, omitting none which hee not imbraceth, attempting to make triall of all, loſing in all of them both himſelfe, and his time, pretending by his inconſtancie and vnſettled diſpoſition, to ſeeme not to be idle; that man being not-withſtanding more idle, who puts his Sickle into another mans Corne, and venters vpon a profeſsion that belongs not vnto him, then he that ſleepeth and takes his eaſe, or leades the moſt retired life. This our Treaſurer, Matheo Aleman, hath alſo well defended himſelfe from the like obiections, by thoſe inſt occupations of his life, wherein he buſied himſelfe; who doth teach vs as well thereby, as by his booke, finding therein the oppoſite of this his Hiſtorie, which he pretendeth to imply: For being bred vp in his tender yeeres in the ſtudie of humane learning, they could not challenge him of keeping (*) reſidencie in idlenes: Much leſſe, that in this his Hiſtorie, he hath thruſt himſelfe into another mans profeſsion: for that it is ſo properly his owne, and ſo annexed to his ſtudies, that the deſire he had to write it, withdrewe and diſtracted his thoughts from the honourable intertainment of thoſe his Maieſties papers; (being at that time his Contador) wherein (albeit he were very ſufficient for the exerciſing of that office) yet it ſeemeth that hee was haled thereunto by violence, and againſt his will; in that he returned afterwards to his former exerciſe; in the continuation whereof, and by his watchfull indeuours, he hath formed this booke for vs, mixing it with that moſt ſweet harmony of delight & profit, which Horace requireth; inuiting vs with its pleaſure, and inſtructing vs with its grauity, taking for its ſcope, the publick good, and for its reward, the common benefit. And becauſe young men ſhall finde in him, the obligation which they haue to their parents, who by a good and lawfull education, haue drawne them out of the darkenes of ignorance, by ſhewing them that North-Starre, which ought to guide them in this confuſed Sea of their troubleſome life, (being as long to the idle, as it is ſhort to thoſe that are well occupied) it ſhall (in point of good manners) be very vnfitting, that the Readers, who are the children of this Bookes Learning, ſhould ſhewe themſelues vnthankefull to their Maſter, by not throughly eſteeming his iuſt Zeale. And if this ſhall not ſaue him from their rigorous cenſure, the fault muſt then be in the ineuitable contradiction of the diuerſitie of opinions. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at, but rather naturall, and that cannot be auoyded: For moſt certaine it is, that a man cannot ſo write, as that hee ſhall pleaſe all: And that whoſoeuer ſhould indeuour it, ſhould but goe about to take from Nature her greateſt miracle. Nor doe I knowe which is the greater beauty, either that which ſhe placed in that diuerſitie, from whence proceed ſo many diuerſe opinions; or that of the diuers formes of mens faces.

For, for the reſt, it were but to ſay, that all the world were but one man, and one taſte.

(*) His learning need not call him to an account, how he had ſpent his idle howers. A Metaphor take from Magiſtrates, of whom their Succeſſours doe take an account of what things haue paſſed in their time of reſidence in the Office. And this is, pedir reſidencia.

AD

GVZMANVM DE ALFARACHE,

Vincentij SPINELLI Epigramma.

Spinellus.

QVis te tanta loqui docuit Guzmanule? *Quis te*
Stercore ſubmerſum, duxit ad aſtra modò?
Muſca modò, et lautas epulas, et putrida tangis
Vlcera; iam trepidas frigore, iamq; cales.
Iura doces, ſuprema petis, medicamine curas,
Dulcibus et nugis ſeria mixta doces.
Dum carpiſq; alios, alios virtutibus auges,
Conſulis ipſe omnes, conſulis ipſe tibi.
Iam ſacræ Sophiæ virides amplecteris vmbras,
Tranſis ad obſcœnos ſordibus indè iocos.
Es modò diuitijs plenus, modò paupere cultu,
Triſtibus et miſeris dulce leuamen ades.

Guzman.

Sic ſpeciem humanæ vitæ, ſic præfero ſolus
Proſpera complectens, aſpera cuncta ferens.
Hac Aleman *variè picta me veſte decorat,*
Me lege deſertum, tuq; diſertus eris.

GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE

vpon his owne life.

BOrne without Parents, which in my Cradle
Should haue sowne such seeds, as might inable
Me to good; My *Youth* chose *Vice* for 'ts *Father*,
Whose Step-dame, *Fortune*, quickly did inslaue her.
My Trauels, and my Studies found eft-soone
More Formes, and Changes, then are in the *Moone*.
But now my building being ruin'd quite,
Like to a Pillar, I onely stand in sight,
Others to fore-warne, what course they runne,
Lest, like my selfe, they chance to be vndone.
With this Story, my life now liu's againe,
Which in *Obliuions* pit did dead remaine.
Whose blurrs are now in such faire letters writ,
As *Time* no more shall triumph ouer it.
An vn-hewne piece of wood, I long haue beene,
Knotty, and rugged, rinded vp in sinne.
But polish't now by this neat Worke-mans hand,
And, on the *Altar* set, as a *Memoriall* stand
To lesson others, how their liues to leade,
While I to them, mine owne mis-fortunes reade.

Hernando de Soto, to the Author.

TWo great things I see
In this wise booke contained be:
A notable Knaue,
And yet the Authors Subiect, graue.
In it I discerne,
By others harmes, how men may learne
Their owne faults t'amend,
And shape their course to some good end.
Likewise we may know,
What Loue to goodnesse we must owe.
To teach more, none can;
Nor more be learn'd of any man.
'Tis the Common voice,
So good on either side's the choice.
Picaro honour gaines,
Aleman immortall remaines.

In GVZMANVM d'ALFARACHIA *nobilem Erronem*
et Prædonem publicum, à clariſſ. reiq; militaris expertiſſ. Duce
Don Diego Pnede-Ser captum, vinculis conſtrictum,
nec ſine ouatione in Britannias
perductum.

ESte procul Elegi:
Nihil hîc Dolente dignum,
Vocem premant Epica:
Non hîc celebratur Heros.
Flebili nil opus Lyrâ:
Facilis hîc proſtat Venus.
Sed nec Tubâ Mantuana:
Bella canuntur bellula.
Grande nimis reboantes
Davum dedecent Cothurni.
Nec Iambi turbet furor
Hilares Lyæi iocos.
Multoq; minùs loripes
Fugitiuum dicat Scazon.
Quale iam dic Metri genus,
Nobilis, Guzmane, *prædo,*
Te tuoſq; mores ſonet
Expertes Legis, Ordinis?
Nam Marini more Dei,
Vitijs nunc irritatus
Leo fremis: Nunc remulcens
Caudam Canis adularis:
Colubrinâ ſæpe linguâ
Immane quiddam ſibilas:
Sæpè Sophi meditantis
Pendulâ ſeuerus togâ
Vitæ prædicas mæandros.
Vaferſic, et fallis Omnes,
Et Teipſum multiformis.
Vt ſtupore plenum fuat,
Quibus hamis & catenis
Illiganit Verſipellem,
Et hoc Monſtrum cicurauit;
Voce Qui donat Anglicâ?
Aureis catenis nempe,
Quibus vinciuntur aures:
Nempe Circeo poculo,
Tumidos quod ſopit angues:
Nempe Thracis *plectro Lyræ,*
Quæ ſequaces reddit vrſas.
Hiſce comprenſus artibus,
Retrò manibus revinctis,
Curru poſitus ſuperbo,
Per Britanna *regna,* (Guzman)
Prodis in pompam publicam.

I. F.

To the exact Tranſlator of the famous *Hiſtory of infamous* GVZMAN.

WHen *Guzmans* Legend was allow'd in *Spaine*,
And, though a *Rogue*, found Prince-like intertaine;
He did o're *Alpes* and *Pyrene* Hils aduance
To tell his Tale in *Italy* and *France*:
With which their natiue eares being ſweetly ſtung,
He theeuiſh ſtole their heart, and bound their tongue
To ſpeake his praiſe. At laſt on *Gallick* ſhore
(Standing like *Cæſar*) thence he did implore
Some *Pegaſus*, or winged *Argoes* ayd,
To croſſe the *Brittaine* Seas: Shall they (he ſaid)

Want

Want onely my thrice-ſeuen times printed ſtory?
Nor know my *Odyſſe's*? Nor ſhall my glory
Out-goe my feet? I come no Spy, nor take
A Factious part; No ſound of Warre I make,
But againſt ſinne; I land no forraine mates;
For Vertues Schooles ſhould Free be in all ſtates.
Straight-wayes thy Gentler ſpirit (without thirſt
Of Fame or Fare) wafts him a-ſhore, and firſt
Shewes him the preſent garbe, the parle, and guiſe,
In a few weekes; whoſe Quill both writes and flyes
With equall ſpeed: Then ſhapes him quaint and rare,
That he ſeemes *Engliſh*, nay a *Courtiar*.
Would you know his Diſcourſe? He biting laughes,
A Comicke Satyre, at ſmall faults he ſcoffes,
But ſtabbes th' impudent: Now in amorous ſtraine
He ſighes a *Louer*; Now in buſie gaine
He acts a *Merchant*; Then in learned weedes
He lookes a *Student*: *Ibis*-like he feedes
On publike venome, and deſerues a Shrine
(Sooner then he that ſtiled was Diuine)
For purging humours. Now his wiſhes are
Outſtript by fauour; Then in Gallies bare
He honours beggery: His whole Theame is *Man*,
On which nor *Crantor* nor *Chryſippus* can
More wiſely comment; for his life alone,
Is Precept with Example; So that none
Can better teach by worſe meanes; who by ſtrange
Bifronted poſture, Ill, to good, doth change.
So Vipers fleſh, the Vipers cure hath bin:
And ſinfull ſurfets, Antidotes for ſin.
So an old Bawdes face, Chaſtneſſe doth ſuggeſt:
Vices true Picture, makes vs Vice deteſt,
More then Graue *Platoes* wiſh; For vertues ſight
Can leſſe allure, then villany affright.
Deare Country, then harbour a weary wight,
Be thou a *Delos*, to this errant Knight:
Giue the kind *Parabien*, and gracious eye
To various mirth: And (Reader) if thou ſpy
Thy owne ſelfe in this Magick glaſſe, Refuſe
No Surgeons hand, but ('gainſt the common vſe)
Let the Booke cenſure thee; And thanke his paine,
Whoſe Pen, ſo gently prickt thy maiſter-vaine:
And thanke his faithfull Conuoy; It may be,
Who ſcornes baſe fawning; Loue may gratifie.
More is but Due: for as my Scale deſignes;
This is the Baſe, to large and worthy Lines.

Yours *I. F.*

To

To *Don Diego Puede-Ser*, and his Tranſlation of GVZMAN.

AS, few, French *Rablais* vnderſtand; and none
Dare in our Vulgar Tongue once make him knowne,
No more; our Plodding Linguiſts could attaine
(By turning *Minſhewe*) to this *Rogue* of *Spaine*,
So crabbed Canting was his Authors Pen
And phraſe, eu'n darke to his owne Country-men;
Till, thankes and praiſe to this Tranſlators paine,
His Margent, now makes him ſpeake Engliſh plaine.

Leo: Diggs.

On the Author, Worke, and Tranſlator.

VVHo tracks this Authors, or Tranſlators Pen,
Shall finde, that either hath read Bookes, and Men:
To ſay but one, were ſingle. Then it chimes,
When the old words doe ſtrike on the new times,
As in this *Spaniſh Protevs*; who, though writ
But in one tongue, was form'd with the worlds wit:
And hath the nobleſt marke of a good Booke,
That an ill man dares not ſecurely looke
Vpon it, but will loath, or let it paſſe,
As a deformed face doth a true glaſſe.
Such Bookes deſerue Tranſlators, of like coate
As was the *Genius* wherewith they were wrote;
And this hath met that one, that may be ſtil'd
More then the Foſter-father of this Child;
For though *Spaine* gaue him his firſt ayre and Vogue,
He would be call'd, henceforth, the *Engliſh-Rogue*,
But that hee's too well ſuted, in a cloth,
Finer then was his *Spaniſh*, if my Oath
Will bee receiu'd in Court; If not, would I
Had cloath'd him ſo. Here's all I can ſupply
To your deſert, who'haue done it, Friend. And this
Faire Æmulation, and no Enuy is;
When you behold me wiſh my ſelfe, the man
That would haue done, that, which you onely can.

Ben: Ionſon.

THE PRINTER TO THE

Diſcreet and Curious READER.

AFter ſo much as you haue read heere, vttered in their iuſt Commendation, let it be my minute, to be heard in a line or two for my ſelfe: which is, that you would be pleaſed not to lay my faults on them. I will neither pretend badneſſe of Copy, or his abſence, whoſe prouince it was to correct it; but pray the amendment of theſe few eſcapes (as you finde them here-vnder noted,) before you begin to reade: with hope of your pardon, the rather, becauſe it hath beene my care they ſhould be no more.

Ed: Blount.

Page.	*Line.*	*Fault.*	*Correct.*
9.	20.	the they	then they
11.	23.	*Labuador*	*Labrador*
22.	18.	ſhe could	he could
36.	43.	tumbled	tumbling
56.	24.	time	Ayre
61.	40.	action	actions
83.	13.	in clearing	indearing
87.	17.	thoſe that,	and thoſe that
ibid.	22.	wherevpon,	whereunto
92.	15.	*Zerezano*	*Xerezano*
103.	*marg.*	*pein*	*pan*
109.	55.	to be much	to be ſo much
110.	4.	many	money
114.	16.	top	toy
122.	*marg.*	Cartas	Cantos
123.	28.	inconheuience	inconuenience
156	17.	wiſh to ſell	wiſh you to ſell
ibid.	28.	he told	he told me
163.	47.	to former	to my former
168.	45.	to is,	is to
180.	35.	for fifty	twenty
187.	35	the	thee
208	43	*vico*	*vico*
228.	22.	much to	to much
236	48	to haue	haue to
239	41	*Aprouechom*	*aprouchan*
262	6	indiſpoſition	in diſpoſition

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the three Bookes of the first Part.

Chap. I.

Gvzman de Alfarache *recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractors, and euill speakers, of vnconscionable Merchants, of Iudges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatnesse in cloathes, and nice dressing, is ill in a Woman, and worse in a Man.*

Chap. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better instruction, describes the euill conditions and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a sensuall and lasciuious man, & that the end of dishoneſt Loue, is the wasting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himselfe.*

Chap. III.

How Guzman *departed from his Mothers house vpon a Friday towards the Euening, discouering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill Gouernment.*

Chap. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hostesse: And discourseth of laughing. After that, he tels two short Tales; one, of a couetous Physician; the other of two yong men, how they vs'd the said Hostesse: And vpon the neck of that, fals into a learned discourse, touching the pardoning of iniuries.*

Chap. V.

How Guzman *and the Carrier did eate of a yong Mule, thinking it had beene Veale, being cooZened by his Host in* Cantillana, *and discourseth by the way of the cooZening tricks, which bad Hosts put vpon poore Trauellers.*

Chap. VI.

Guzman *goes on, in recounting what succeeded with his Host of* Cantillana, *who had giuen him to eate of his yong Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the said* Guzman: *And how it is not good vpon the way to quarrell with our Host.*

Chap. VII.

Mans misfortune is here discourſed of, and to that purpose you haue a story told you of the gods of those ancienter times: And how Guzman, *being thought to be a Thiefe, was apprehended; but afterwards being knowne what he was, hee was set at liberty. One of the Clergy-men promiseth to tell vs a story, to entertaine the time withall, vpon the way.*

Chap. VIII.

Wherein *Guzman de Alfarache* relateth the Story of those two Louers, *Ozmin* and *Daraxa*.

The Argvment.

How Ferdinand *and* Isabell, *King and Queene of* Spaine, *tooke* Baça, *a Citie of the Moores, wherein* Daraxa *a beautifull and noble DamoZel was taken Prisoner, whom Queene* Isabell *brought with her to* Seuill, *and there left her in the custodie of* Don Luys de Padilla. *And how* Ozmin *a yong Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after hee had suffered long sickneſse for the imprisonment of his faire* Daraxa, *went to the said Citie; together with the diuers accidents that happened to them both.*

The

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the second BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

HOw Guzman de Alfarache, *going out of* Caçalla *towards* Madrid, *proues the quality and condition of a miserable man, and vpon this occasion, gravely discourseth of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Castles in the ayre: And how he came to serue an Host; and of the wicked disposition of such kinde of men.*

CHAP. II.

How Guzman de Alfarache *leauing his Host, went begging to* Madrid; *and comming thither, how he set himselfe to learne to play the Rogue, & to beare a Basket; where, by the way he discourseth of Hunger, of Beggery, & of Honour which hurteth the soule.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Discourse against vaine* Honours: *where, by the way he offers vnto Mans consideration, what manner of person he ought to be, how to beare himselfe in his Office, and to gouerne himselfe in those high places, whereunto he is called.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *deliuereth a learned and witty discourse, conceiued by himselfe, against the Vanity of* Honour: *touching by the way vpon the Vices of Seruants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Iudges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Physicians, and of Lawyers.*

CHAP. V.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cookes seruice, and with faire Sentences, and good Lessons, sheweth, what he should be that serueth. He blameth gaming, & Gamesters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of* Dispensero's, *Cookes, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abused by their seruants. Of Kings, and their miserable condition. Of the vanity of Inferiours, contesting with their Superiours. He condemneth those Masters, that ill intreate their seruants: And how they ought to carry themselues towards them.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which past betwixt him and his Master, till being dismist, he departed from him: And takes occasion here-vpon, to condemne Idlenesse and euill Company, and those inueterated vices in rich men. He recounteth the spoyles, and* Trophees *of Cookes; and tels a merry Story, that past between himselfe, and the Cookes wife, his Mistresse.*

CHAP. VII.

How Guzman de Alfarache *being put from the Cooke his Master, turnes* Picaro, *and proues a notable cunning Rogue. How he hauing a great desire to see* Italy, *occasion was offered vnto him to effect his purpose, by the helpe of a theft done vpon a Grocer, and how he went sheere away with it, and left* Madrid.

CHAP. VIII.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *cloathing himselfe like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes loue to certain Gentlewomen: He telleth how things past with them, & how there, and in* Malagon *they scorned him; He discourseth of youthfull iollity, and of the craft & subtilty of your Spanish Women; which may serue for an Instruction, & Warning to all yong men.*

CHAP. IX.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lists himselfe for a Souldier. He telleth, whence that ill phrase grew:* En Malagon, en cada casa vn ladron; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre: *In* Malagon, *euery house a Thiefe; and in that of the* Alcalde *two: The father and the sonne. How in a short time, through ill gouernment, all* Guzmans *money is gone; How to his griefe he is forced to serue a Captaine. Some lessons are giuen to young men. To these are added the faults of bad Ministers in matters of war-fare.*

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *declareth the mis-fortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how he followed a Captaine, till he came into* Italy; *Exercising himselfe in all kinde of thefts great and small, for the reliefe and helpe of his Master.*

A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the third BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

GVzman *discourseth of powertie, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man indureth; As also of Riches, and of the honours that are done vnto the Rich: As likewise of the naughtinesse of this present world: And how, not finding his Kindred, which he sought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome; *and of a iest that was put vpon him, before he left that Citie.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman *discourseth of the vnhappinesse, greatnesse, & commendation of Necessitie and Want; And how after he was gone frō* Genoa, *he fel a begging. And how, keeping company with other poore beggers, he was instructed by them, of their Statutes, & Lawes.*

CHAP. III.

How Guzman de *Alfarache was not only reprehended by a learned Rogue, & Doctor in his facultie; but likewise how he learned of him some new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguish kinde of life, and that which hapned vnto him in this his vpright course; And of many Precepts and Lessons, deliuered vnto him vpon this point by a* Cordouese, *an old cunning Crosse-biter.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the Charitie that wee are to vse towards our neighbour; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great libertie which a Begger inioyes.*

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the qualitie of mens Consciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heire. He treats of the ambitious man; And deliuers in the end, how he was thrust out of* Gaeta *for his counterfetting.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of Almes: And being returned to* Rome, *hee fals afresh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himselfe to haue a sore legge. A Cardinall taking compassion of him, takes order, to haue him cured in his own house, and to be laid in his owne bed. He discouers the knauery of Surgeons, hauing a bad conscience: And how being cured, he becomes the Cardinals Page.*

CHAP. VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth, how all things haue had their time of Empire. He deliuereth strange things, touching* Truth *and* Lying. *As beeing Page to the Cardinall; he declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exercise themselues. He relateth a pleasant Story of his stealing of some Conserues, and how hee was punished for it.*

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *reuenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put vpon the Chamberlaine, whom he then attended. He tels a tale of Shame and feare; What it is, and how painted forth. He is reteined againe into the Cardinals service. And how finely he coozened him of a Barrell of Conserues.*

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charitie: Discourseth of Masters, kind, and vnkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conserues. His exercises, and distastes being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he vsed at* Primera. *That it is good to know play; but better not to vse any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals service. And how proud ignorance is the cause of all euill.*

CHAP X.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of ill cōpany; of Hospitality; of Patience; and how being put out of the Cardinals house, he placed himselfe with the Embassador of France, where he plaid some Knauish prankes. He relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he giues an end to the first part of his life.*

THE

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The first Booke.

CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractors, and euill speakers, of vnconscionable Merchants, of Iudges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatnes in cloaths, and nice dressing, is ill in a Woman, & worse in a Man.*

CVrious Reader, The desire which I had to recount my life vnto thee, made me make great haste to ingulfe my selfe therein, without first preparing some things fit to be related, which (seruing as an induction and entrance to the matter) had beene very needfull for the better informing of thy vnderstanding: (for beeing essentiall to this Discourse) they would likewise haue giuen thee no small content. But through too much haste, I forgat to shut the doore after mee, and so vnawares haue left a way of entrance open, for euery wrangling Sophister, and smatterer in Logicke, to taxe me of ignorance, and to lay it as a fault to my charge, that I did not proceed *à definitione ad definitum*, from the definition to the thing defined. And that before I tooke vpon me to make Relation thereof, I had not first told thee, who, and what were my Parents, together with their obscure and confused birth: which so much for so much, or as farre as concerneth them in their particular, according to their modell, and proportion in their kind and degree, would without doubt (had I but vndertaken to describe it vnto you) beene farre more pleasing, and more acceptable vnto you, then this mine owne life. I will rather preferre that, which is of most importance, leauing that which is not lawfull for me, to others to vndergoe that taske, and to play out that tricke at Cards for me. And albeit it becommeth no man, to participate of that propertie of the *Hyena*, to make a liuing by ripping vp the liues of the dead, as shee doth maintaine her selfe

The Hyena and her qualities.

by feeding on thoſe carkaſes which ſhe teares out of graues; I aſſure my ſelfe, conſidering the Cenſurers that are now adayes to bee found in the world, they will not want thoſe that will write their *Chronicle*. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at, ſince that this ſlight ſhadowing of my Fathers life, ſeemeth to inferre, that I pare them too neere the quicke, or at leaſt, that there went but one paire of ſheeres, betweene their liues, and mine. And I doubt not, but thou wilt out with thy purſe, and giue mee a thouſand raſh Attributes; the leaſt whereof ſhall be either Foole, or Blockhead, or Coxcombe, or the like. For if I cannot conceale mine owne faults, you will ſay, I will make no bones to bewray others. Thy reaſon is good, and I allow of it, but I would haue thee withall to conſider, That albeit thou wilt count mee but a lewd [a] Companion, yet I would not willingly ſeeme ſo to be, though it bee farre worſe to be ſo, and to make boaſt of wickedneſſe. And that by contradicting ſo iuſt a Precept, as is that fifth Commandement, touching the honour and reuerence which I owe them, I ſhould goe about to couer mine owne weakeneſſes, by laying open thoſe of my Anceſtors. For, it is the birth of vile and baſe [b] thoughts, to ſeeke to grace themſelues by diſgracing others, which is now an ordinary practice, which I condemne for that ſolemn [c] foolery of ſixe Prieſts Copes, or double-Feaſts; that is to ſay, for a notorious, and high point of folly. And a greater there cannot be, becauſe therein I diſcouer my bend, and ſhew which way the dint of my edge lyeth. And my errour is not ſalued, by wounding the good name of my neighbour, or by traducing my Parent. Beſides, the Detractor neuer heareth well, but is euill ſpoken of by all men. But to me, it doth not ſucceed ſo; for in the ſetting forth and adorning of this Hiſtory, (it being neceſſary that my ſelfe muſt needs doe it) no man but will ſay, Gods bleſsing be with him, that ſo truely reſembles his Parents, caſting vpon me theſe their good wiſhes by the way. Againe, his life was ſo well knowne, and all that he did, ſo manifeſt to all the world, that to pretend the denying of it, were meere folly, and an open [d] Arreſt, and free liberty giuen for the occaſioning of new matter of murmuration to be brought againſt him. And therefore I am perſwaded, that I doe them (if I may vſe that phraſe of ſpeech) a notorious courteſie, in expreſsing the pure, and true naked Text, wherewith I will giue the lye to thoſe gloſſes, which haue beene made thereupon. For as often as any one mentioneth any thing of him, or recounts ought of his, he addes thereunto, and multiplyes it with the Cyphers, which are ſet to his owne Spectacles, or as it pleaſeth him; ſometimes making more, but neuer leſſe, as the vaine comes vpon him, and as the toy for the preſent takes him in the head. For there is a certaine kinde of men, that when matter is offered ſuting to their purpoſe, for to make their tale ſquare, and to hang well together, will leſſen a *Pyramis* of *Egypt*, and make of a Gnat an Elephant, gather euidence from ſurmiſes; ſight from hearing; and knowledge from opinion, onely for to flouriſh their eloquence, and to credit their diſcretion. Thus it vſually falleth out, and this was to bee ſeene in a Gentleman a Stranger, whom my ſelfe knew in *Madrid*: Who beeing much affectioned to Spaniſh Horſes, and deſirous to carry home with him to his owne Country a true and faithfull Counterfeit, as wel for his own entertainment and delight, as that he might ſhew the ſame to his friends. And for that he was of a Nation farre remote, and it being neither permitted, nor poſsible for him, to carrie them home aliue, hauing in his owne ſtable two of the faireſt of ſtature, and feature, that were to be found in all the Court: he intreated two famous Painters, that each of them would draw one, as they ſhould agree vpon their choiſe; promiſing (beſides their due) a certain reward to him that ſhould ſurpaſſe the other in workemanſhip. The one painted a py'd Horſe, with that

[a] *It is worſe to be bad, then to be thought ſo.*

[b] *What minde is that, which is baſe*

[c] *In your great ſolemne feaſts in Spaine, they vſe to haue ſeuen, & in ſome places eight Prebends with Scepters of ſiluer in their hands, and Copes of cloth of gold on their backs, when they aſſiſt at diuine ſeruice, and ſinging of Anthemes. From which metaphor this phraſe is borrowed.*

[d] Arreſto, *is a French word: but becauſe it is Spaniolized, I ſay,* Arreſto, *is as much as a Decree, or Sentence confirmed in the Supreme Counſell, from which there is no Appeale. So ſayes* Caſaneus *in his* Catol. gloriæ Mundi. Arreſtum firmum, & fixum, à quo nemo prouocare poſsit. *And it is a meere Greeke Word* ἀρεστον, placitum, gratum, æquum. *That it is pronounced with a double rr: the reaſon is, for that the French is a Virile tongue.* Reſto conſignado, *is the ſet reſt agreed vpon at* Primero, *which they may not paſſe. But* jugar à reſto abierto, vale, ſin taſſa, *without limitation; when a man may ſet what he will: The Reader may take which ſenſe he beſt liketh.*

perfection,

perfection, that hee onely failed in that, which was impoſsible for him to doe, to wit, in giuing him life, and ſoule. For, in the reſt (deceiuing the ſight, becauſe it did little, or nothing at all differ from the naturall) it would on the ſudden haue blinded any careleſſe eye, and at the firſt bluſh amazed his vnderſtanding, for that there was no difference betweene a liuing Horſe and it. With this onely did he fill and finiſh his Table; giuing in the reſt Lights and ſhadowes, as might ſute beſt with each ſeuerall part.

The other drew a Dapple-gray (that heauen-reſembling colour) and though his worke were very good, yet it came very ſhort of that before deliuered; yet in one thing, he went much beyond him, wherein he ſhew'd himſelfe his crafts-maſter. And it was this: when he had painted his Horſe, in thoſe other parts of the Table, where he found blankes, or void places, in thoſe that were vppermoſt, hee drew admirable Land-skips, and other repreſentations of things afarre off, as clouds in the ayre; ſtreakes in the sky, and other fiery colours of the heauens, occaſioned by the reflexe of the Sun-ſetting beames, ruinated buildings, and other diuerſities of rare Architecture. And in the lower part, neereſt to the ground; he had graced his worke with many fine Groues, dainty Flowers, greene Meddowes, and craggy Rocks. And on the one ſide of the Table, that made fitteſt for that purpoſe, hee had faſtned all the furniture, belonging to his Horſe, to the body of a Tree, at the foote whereof ſtood a Saddle, Gennet-faſhion, ſo coſtly, and ſo curiouſly wrought, and with that excellency of Art, as it cannot be in-deered too much, or expreſſed to that life it deſerueth.

When this Gentleman ſaw his Tables, and liking them wonderfull well (as he had reaſon ſo to doe) he firſt paid him, with whom he had firſt agreed, and not ſticking vpon that which he demanded for it, giuing in reward to that ingenious Painter a rich ring from off his finger, he ſent him away well ſatisfied, hauing paid him ouer & aboue the price for which they bargained.

Now the other grew ſo fondly conceited, & ſo fooliſhly in loue with his own worke, and was ſo vainely tranſported with hope of a liberall and franke paiment, that he required ſuch an exceſsiue price, as was beyond all reaſon.

The Gentleman, being ſtrooken blanke, and put to a *non-plus*, that hee ſhould aske him ſo much, and that he had ſcarce wherewithall to pay him, ſaid vnto him; Tell me (my friend) why ſhouldeſt thou aske me ſo much; or why doeſt thou not conſider with thy ſelfe what this other piece coſt me, wherevnto thine cannot be compared, nor comes nothing neere it? For the Horſe (indeede Sir, anſwered the Painter) your Worſhip ſpeakes reaſon. But the very trees, and ruines, that are in mine, are worth as much as all the others worke. To whom the Gentleman replide; It is neither fitting, nor neceſſary for me to carry home with me ſuch a volume of trees; ſuch a bulke of ill combined buildings; and ſuch a deale of lumber and luggage as is heere; when we haue many faire and goodly houſes in our owne Country. Beſides, I haue not that affection to theſe toyes, as I haue vnto Horſes. And that which I cannot otherwiſe enioy but by picture, that alone I deſire to carry along with me.

The Painter againe made anſwere; In ſo great and large a piece, a ſole ſingle Horſe will not ſhew ſo well. And if for nothing elſe, yet at leaſt for the delight of the Eye, and the gracing of the Square, it not only importeth a Painter, but euen enforceth him ſometimes to compoſe a Picture of other different things, beſides the Maſter piece, that may qualifie it the better, and giue it the more delicate luſtre. So that, this ſeeming fairer to the ſight, and preſenting it ſelfe with that pleaſure as it doth, you will grant me this, I hope; That it is very fit, that a horſe ſhould haue his bridle, and his ſaddle, together with his trappings, and all other things belonging to a perfect and complete furniture; eſpecially being ſo curiouſly wrought, with ſo cleane a hand, and

ſuch exquiſite Art, that if you would giue me other ſuch as theſe, though they were all of Gold, I would not take them in exchange for thoſe that you ſee heere drawne. The Gentleman hauing now found a ſtring whereupon to play, and caught hold of that, which he moſt deſired, which was the Picture, that he had already paid for (the other eſteeming impertinent, though in it's kinde very good, and much to be commended) and not finding himſelfe ſo ouer-ſtored with money, as to part with ſo much as hee required, diſcreetly ſaid vnto him; I onely bargain'd with you for the Horſe, and (for that the worke is good, and well wrought) I will (if you be pleaſed to ſell it mee) pay you accordingly. As for the furniture, you may keepe it to your ſelfe, or beſtow it vpon thoſe, that haue a minde to it, for I haue no need of it. The Painter went away diſcontented, and vnpaid, by reaſon of the exceſsiue rates hee had ſet vpon his Picture; and for that out of his owne choiſe, he had wilfully ouerlaſhed his diſcretion, thinking with himſelfe, that becauſe his Worke was more, he ſhould be the more rewarded.

He that does that which he ought not, that haps to him, which hee thinkes not.

It hath been (and ſtill is) a common and generall cuſtome amongſt men, when you intreat them to recite what they know in this, or that other thing; or to report what they haue heard, or ſeene; or to tell you the truth and ſubſtance of a buſineſſe, to prepare colours to flicke it ouer, and to paint and diſguize it, that you can no more know the face of it, then the countenance of an old Hagge, that is plaiſterd ouer with painting. Euery one giues his ſhadowings after his owne fancie: one while amplifying; another while mouing paſsion; ſometimes diſannulling, and ſometimes diuerting, as the humour takes him. Now he ſtretcheth it with his teeth, that he may make the Leather retch: By and by againe, he fileth and poliſheth it, till he haue made it fit for his purpoſe, that he may cut and graue therein what he liſt; putting it an Ace, or a Sice higher, if it pleaſe him ſo to do. Making, like another *Count* * *Palatine*, a Foole, a Wiſe man; a filthy-fac'd fellow, a beautifull perſon; and a Cowardly Villaine, a valiant *Hercules*. They ſet the Caract and worth vpon things, as they pleaſe to value them; not remembring, that they may paint a Horſe well inough, though they leaue him bare-ridged, and without his furniture; and report a thing true inough to the life, without commenting vpon it. Iuſt ſo hath it fared with my father, of whom to ſpeake the truth, things are ſo falſified, that nothing is now ſaid of him, which was ſo indeed. They haue (with *Celeſtine*) of *tres* made *treze*, of three, thirteene; and of thirteene, three hundred. For euery one thinkes it fit to adde ſomewhat: ſo that Molehils are growne to be Mountaines, and ſuch a confuſed *Chaos*, and *rapſodie* of things huddled one on the necke of another, that there is no bottome of them, nor can there any ground for them be found: euery one incouraging himſelfe by the additions of others, (one growing ſtill vpon another.) And that wrong which euery particular perſon in himſelfe was not able to doe, by a generall helping hand, and common conſent of all men, is become more grieuous. There are ſome deceitfull and falſe tongues, which, like ſharpe-headed Arrowes, and hot burning Coales, haue gone about to wound the honour, and conſume to aſhes the good name of my Parents; whence both to them, and my ſelfe, diuers notable affrents doe dayly redound. It is to bee imagined, and you may very well beleeue mee, that if it lay in our hands, to make our owne choiſe (but beggers muſt be no chooſers) out of that maſſe of *Adam*, and firſt lumpe of fleſh, I would haue ſcrambled hard for one of the beſt morſels, though I had been forced to goe to Cuffes for it: But there is no helpe for that; Euery man muſt bee content with that which fals to his lot: we may not be our owne Caruers. But ſince he that hath ſhared theſe things amongſt vs, keepes them in his owne hands, and knowes when and where to beſtow them, and what is fitteſt for euery man, let vs praiſe his holy Name. For though I had (God be thanked for it) my [a] haltings, though I had naturall

The effects of Detractors.

* *The Count Palatines, anciently in Rome, had power and priuiledge to legitimate* Baſtards, *to giue degrees, and Titles of honour in learning, or otherwiſe.* Vide Couarruuias in Vocabulo Palatino.

[a] *Alluding to Iacobs halting.*

defects,

defects, though I were not without my spots and blemishes, yet was I so fauoured by Fortune, that I was nobly borne; and that they lighted vpon a man innobled in his blood, both by father and mother. *La sangue se hereda, y el vicio se apega*, Blood is by inheritance, but Vice is aduentitious, yet cleaueth closer then the other, when it once takes hold of vs. He that shall be, what he ought to be, shall be accordingly rewarded, but shall not purge away the faults of his Parents.

First of all then, I shall giue you to vnderstand, That my father, and his Kindred, were a certaine kind of vpstart Gentlemen, that came out of the (a) *Leuant*, who hauing no certaine abiding, came at length to reside, and settle in *Genoa*; where they were ingrafted into the Nobilitie, and had many large and goodly Priuiledges granted vnto them. And although they were not Naturals of that place, yet we shall here put them vnder that stile, as if they had beene borne there. His Trafficke and income, whereby he maintained himselfe, was according to the common custome of that Country; the which, for our sinnes sake, is growne now into ours; which infection of late, hath spred it selfe thorow the world, to wit, Vsury, Money-bankes, and profitable Exchange of gold and siluer. Euen for this, was he persecuted and reuiled, defaming him with that foule name of Vsurer. Many times hee himselfe heard that reprochfull word as hee past along the streets; it could not escape his eare, yet he was of that good nature, and gentle condition, that hee tooke no notice of it, but slightly past it ouer. For which, they had no reason so to do, since that Vse-money (the more the pittie) hath beene, and is still permitted thorowout the world. I will not commend it, and (God forbid) that I should defend it to be lawfull (which some do allow) to take money for money, vpon pawnes of gold or siluer for some limited time, or to take (the day being broken) the (b) Forfeiture thereof, nor other close trickes and conueyances: nor that which they call by the name of (c) *Cambio seco*, a dry kind of Exchange. Nor that money should runne from Faire to Faire, where there was neuer any intercourse of men, or trading: for those doe but beare about them the voice of *Iacob*, and the hands of *Esau*; kind shewes, and rough deeds. And at the shooting of *Ionathans* flight, or some warning-piece or other that is giuen, the deceit is discouered. But such things as these, (though they laid them to his charge) I my selfe saw them not, and therefore cannot giue you any inckling of them.

But that which is absolutely vnderstood to be *Cambio*, an Exchange or turning and winding of moneys, is a thing indifferent, which may (as it is vsed) be either good or ill. And for such (though perhaps vniustly) I doe not wonder, that (being it ought to be esteemed ill) it is not reproued. But that which is euidently good, being without any shadow of euill, that men should murmure at this, and speake against it; this is that, which doth astonish me, and strikes me into a strange amazement. To say, when I see a religious person enter at midnight thorow a window, into a suspected place, with his sword in his hand, and his buckler at his girdle, that he is going to minister the Sacrament, were a meere madnesse: for neither God will haue it so, nor doth his Church permit, that I should be such an errant Asse, as to thinke that to be good, which is euidently euill. When a man shall pray, frequent vertuous exercises, heare diuine Seruice, confesse his sinnes, and often communicate; for men to say, that such a one is an Hypocrite, I can by no meanes indure it: and as there is nothing more scandalous to a good Christian, so is there not any wickednesse like vnto it.

My father had a faire large Masse-booke with the full number of *Dauids* 150. Psalmes, wherein he had beene taught to pray, (I meane in the *Spanish* tongue) and a great paire of Beades, whereof euery one of them was as bigge as an hazell nut. These my mother gaue him, which came to his hands when

Guzmans *father.*

(a) Levantisco, *which is the word in the Originall, is taken for an Vpstart, a Iew, or an Easterling, come from the* Levant *And,* Estar de Levante, *is one, that hath no set dwelling.* Covarruvias, vocab. Levante.

Against Vsurers, and Exchangers of Moneys.

(b) *The Spanish word, is* Rematado. *Now* Remato, *or* Trance. *is the last bidding for a thing at a Port-sale, which when we are come vnto,* transit res à venditore, ad emptorem.

(c) Cambio seco, *is a mystery among Marchants, to assigne ouer Bils of Exchange from* Antwerpe *to* Bezonzon *in* Lorrain, *where there is no Fayre or trade of Merchandize: but Bils are thence remitted to* Genoa, *onely to gaine time, and day of payment.*

Guzmans *fathers deuotion.*

ſhe died. Theſe he alwaies carried about him, you ſhould neuer ſee them out of his hand, euery morning he heard his Maſſe, humbly kneeling with both his knees on the ground, his hands ioyning themſelues together at his breſt, lifting them vp towards heauen, on the toppe whereof his Hat hung. Some malicious people (by way of reproch) did not ſticke to ſay, that he did pray in this manner, becauſe he would not heare the Prieſt, and that he held his Hat ſo high, becauſe he would not ſee him. But of this, let them iudge, who find themſelues free from paſsion, and let them tell me, whether it be not a peruerſe and raſh cenſure, proceeding from a prophane kinde of people, that haue no care of their ſoules, and without any conſcience at all. But the very truth is, that the maine cauſe, and firſt beginning of their murmuring againſt him, was; that a Partner of his in *Seuill*, being broken, and turn'd Bankrupt, and hauing carried away with him great ſummes of moneys that were his, he purſued after him, as well to remedy himſelfe as well as he could of ſo great a loſſe, as alſo to order and ſettle ſome other neceſſary buſineſſes, which did much concerne him.

Guzmans father taken priſoner.

The ſhip he went in was ſet vpon and taken; and hee, together with the reſt that were in her, taken captiues, and carried to *Argiers*: where, what out of feare, and what out of deſpaire; feare, for that hee knew not how or which way to recouer his liberty; and deſpaire, for that hee neuer looked to get againe his moneys; for quietneſſe ſake, as one that had not the ſpirit of contradiction, or that was wont to gaineſay any thing, he renounced his Religion, and turned *Turke*. There he married a *Moore*, a woman of perfect beauty, and principall ranke, with whom he had good ſtore of wealth. For in matter of intereſt, (taking it in the generall, in which tracke I ſtill treade, without preiudice to a great number of noble perſons, and graue and principall Gentlemen; for there are of all ſorts in all places) I will onely ſpeake by the way, what I my ſelfe knew of ſome of my fathers kindred, during the time, that I traded and conuerſed with them. They were very ſolicitous in meddling with other mens houſes, and too forgetfull and careleſſe of their owne: deſirous, that other men ſhould deale plainly and truly with them, whileſt from themſelues, you ſhould not get ſo much as one true word. Willing, that others ſhould pay them all that they ought, but of what they ought, to pay nothing at all: to gaine and ſpend freely, (light where it would light for them, they cared not who did wring for it) for the pawne was already forfeited, their day was paſt; and (as the Prouerbe is) *à Roma por todo*, at *Rome* there is an abſolution for all offences. It afterwards ſo fell out, that my fathers Partner, to ſecure himſelfe from after-claps, and to liue out of danger, laboured to take order with his Creditors, and to compound for his debts, vpon faire and reaſonable conditions, requiring ſuch rates and dayes of payment, as that he might both be able to liue well himſelfe, as alſo to pay his debts.

He turnes Turke. He marries a Moore.

Guzmans kindred, what condition they were of.

Guzmans father flies from Argiers. And in what manner.

When this came to my fathers eare, that had certaine and aſſured notice of it, he had a great deſire to come away with all the ſecrecie and diligence he could poſſibly deuiſe. And the better to deceiue the *Moore* his wife, hee told her, that he purpoſed to employ himſelfe in matters of Merchandize, which would turne much to their profit. He made money of moſt that he had, and putting it into Chekines, (a certaine coyne, that is made of fine *Barbary* gold) taking with him all the Iewels he could finger, and ſo leauing her alone, and very poore, he came his way with all the ſpeed he could. And not making any one acquainted therewith, neither friend nor foe, reducing himſelfe to the Faith of *Ieſus Chriſt*, repenting himſelfe of his fault, with teares in his eyes, being his owne Promoter, he accuſed himſelfe, crauing pardon for his offence, and that ſome fauourable penance might bee inflicted vpon him. Which being inioyned him, and fully performed by him, he afterwards went

about

about to recouer his debts. And this was the chiefe cauſe, why they would neuer afterwards truſt him, nor haue any charitable opinion of him, were his workes neuer ſo good, neuer ſo pious. And if you aske other reaſon, you were as good hold your tongue, you ſhall get none other from them, but impertinencies, and anſwers nothing to the purpoſe, ſuch as they haue often made me; Once a knaue, and euer a knaue: *Nam qui ſemel eſt, ſemper præſumitur eſſe malus*: For he that hath once beene naught, is preſumed to bee ſo ſtill; and that he will neuer get out of the way of wickednes, that hath once made it his common walke. Not conſidering, that no man knowes, how God toucheth a mans heart, and cals him home vnto him, putting him againe in the right path, and whether (agreeable to that authenticke Law) hee had reformed his manners or no.

Once a Knaue, & euer a Knaue.

Here you ſee, without leaning this or that way, or without any the leaſt inclining to any ſide, my fathers Mere-ſtones; the very limits, and bounds, that do define and determine him; On the one ſide, ſtand (as ſupporters) his couzening Kindred, and bankrupt Copartner; on the other ſide, his owne coozening of the *Moore*. And if it be obiected, that he himſelfe brake twice or thrice, hauing other mens goods in his hands; if they likewiſe brake with him, it is no wonder, that he ſhould not hold. For men are not made of ſteele, nor are they bound to hold like nayles: for they, euen though of yron, doe ſometimes faile and burſt in ſunder, and grow weake and looſe. Theſe are your Merchants ſtratagems, their fine ſhifts of wit, which (vpon occaſion) they practiſe when and where they pleaſe; eſpecially in *Spaine*, where they haue found the tricke of getting. Nor is it a thing ſo much to be wondred at; there lies their skill, let it thriue as it will: we leaue that to themſelues, and their Confeſſors, to whom, I doubt not, but they giue a large account of their doings. Onely God is the Iudge of theſe things; and let him that abſolues them, looke what he does: I ſee many, that make a common practice of it, but not a man of them, that hangs for it. If it were a delict, an euill thing, or a theft, it is a cleare caſe that it ſhould be puniſhed, ſince for leſſe then ſixe Royals, we ſee an hundred poore ſoules whipt about the towne, and ſent to the Gallies.

The cunning trickes of certaine Merchants in their Trading.

That I might not vent my ſelfe in my fathers preiudice, I could be content to hold my peace, and to ſilence what I thinke: but if I will follow the Philoſophers counſell, I muſt then ſay, *Amicus Plato, ſed magis amicus Veritas*: *Plato* is my friend, but the Truth more. I loue my father well, but I muſt preſerue the truth aboue all things. Conforming my ſelfe therefore to that Philoſophicall ſaying, let the world hold me excuſed, if I canonize this Caſe for one of the greateſt villanies and rogueries, that was euer put in vſe, and ſuch as deſerueth exemplarie puniſhment, and that in no meane degree. But perhaps ſome one Merchant or other, that is his crafts-maſter in this kind of trade, will tell me to my face, Hold your hand, Sir; you are a little too forward, in what Conſiſtory (I pray) of the Pope and his Cardinals, hath Bankrupture beene determined, and condemned for a ſinne? Who will put an Ideot, a Galley-ſlaue, a Rogue, to eſtabliſh Lawes, or to cenſure thoſe Trades wherein he hath no skill? But I now ſee how I haue erred, in ſpeaking againſt that, which I cannot helpe, and whereof there is ſo little amendment to bee expected. For I would willingly indure thy taunts, and beare thy reproches, ſo that there might either puniſhment or remedy be giuen to this honourable kind of theeuing, though my owne father ſhould ſtretch for it, and giue the Gallowes it's firſt handſell. Let it runne on as it doth; for the reformation of ſuch important things as theſe, and other of greater moment, grow daily worſe and worſe; their (a) Cloake is falne (as it is in the Prouerbe) from off their ſhoulders. But what doth this belong vnto me? for me to ſpeake againſt it, is to cry out vpon the Woolfe, where none will come to helpe mee, to

(a) Andar de capa cayda. *To go with their Cloake fallen, is a phraſe that is vſed of thoſe, who go looſing both their ſubſtance, and their credit.*

to ſtoppe the Sunne in its courſe, and to preach in the wilderneſſe.

But I returne to that, which they layd moſt to his charge; which was, That he was apprehended and impriſoned, for that which thou thy ſelfe ſayeſt, or that hath beene dictated vnto thee by others. But for that he was rich and wealthy, and (as ſome ſay) for that he had an *Alcalde* to his father, and a (a) Notarie to his Goſsip, he by that meanes came off, and was freed. For there were ſufficient proofes and euidences brought againſt him; and ſuch ſuſpicions to induce beliefe, as might haue ſeru'd the turn to haue turn'd him ouer. But one puls me by the ſleeue, and tels me in mine eare, Do you heare, Sir? Suſpicion is no proofe, and naked ſignes, are not of themſelues capable of chaſtiſement. I did looke for this concluſion from thee; aſſuring my ſelfe beforehand, that thou wouldſt take them all to be old Wiues tales, when they meet at the Bake-houſe to ſet their bread into the Ouen; that they are all lies, and falſe teſtimonies, maliciouſly vrged againſt him. And ſeeing I haue auow'd, and made good one part vnto thee, thou wilt not deny, but that I haue reaſon to defend the other, and to giue thee my reaſons for it. I ſay then, that to haue *Scrivanos*, or Notaries, (I may ſo terme them) to be a mans Goſſips, is a bare title, that onely ſuites it ſelfe according to the Money, wherewith euery one wageth Law. For in blearing the ſight, and picking a mans purſe before his face, ſome haue the ſoule and conſcience of your Gypſies, and will make of Iuſtice a matter of iuggling, with a hye paſſe, and a repaſſe, come off *Iacke* with a whim-wham; ordering things ſo, as they ſhall thinke good, and may make moſt for their profit: ſo that it ſhall neither be in the power of the Plaintiffe or Defendant to impeach it, nor in the Aduocate to diſpute the right, nor in the Iudge to ſentence it.

How a Iudge & a Scrivano *may be had.*

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Eſcriva-no. *i.* Scriba publicus, ſervus publicus, qui acta in Iudicio, vel extra Iudicium, notis vel literis excipit. Vt conſtat Lege, nõ vnum. 18. §. de adoptionibus. *Beſides that which is alledged by* Don Iuan Vela *in his Tract* de pœnis delictorum, cap. 24. de Notario falſum committente.

And leſt that I ſhould chance to forget it, I pray, hearken by the way to that, which in the Church of S. *Gil*, in *Madrid*, was deliuered to the Lords of the ſupreme Councell, by a learned Preacher, vpon a certaine Friday in Lent. By way of diſcourſe, he ranne thorow all the miniſters of Iuſtice, till he came to the *Scrivano*, or Notary, or Regiſter, (or what in that kind you pleaſe to call him) which he purpoſely forbore to ſpeake of, as reſeruing that diſh for the laſt ſeruice, and then with theſe words, he ſet it before them: Here my Cart ſtickes faſt, and is ſo clogg'd with durt and myre, and ſo ſurrounded and wedged in, as it were, on euery ſide with filth and mucke, that I know not in the world how to get it out, vnleſſe the Angell of God returne once againe to the fiſh-poole. I confeſſe (my Lords) that for theſe thirty yeeres and vpwards, I haue ſeene and heard the Confeſsions of many ſinners; who hauing falne into one ſinne, haue falne againe many times into the ſame. And yet all theſe, (by Gods helpe, and his goodneſſe and mercy towards them) haue reformed both their liues and conſciences, and become good liuers, and haue all put on amendment. The Wencher, that hath lyen at racke and manger, and ſtood at continuall Liuery, time, and a filthy Queane hath tam'd him. The Gameſter, a Maſter of a Dicing-houſe, or Keeper of an Ordinary, makes him in the end to ſee his error; who like a Horſe-leech, goes from one to another, ſucking by little and little their blood from them. To day thou winneſt, to morrow thou loſeſt; the money runnes round, and ſtill it remaineth, but they that play, I am ſure, remaine without it. The famouſeſt Thiefe, feare and ſhame reformeth. The raſh Railer, the (b) Palſie, from which few eſcape. The proud man, his owne miſerie doth diſ-deceiue him, being conſcious to himſelf, that he is but durt. The Lyer, the ill language, and the affrents, which are daily caſt in his teeth, put a bridle vpon his tongue. The vnaduiſed Blaſphemer, the continuall reprehenſions of his friends and kinſfolkes correct and amend him. All theſe, either early or late, at one time or another, reape ſome fruit, and caſt off (like the Snake) their old skinne, although perhaps (within) they wring hard for it.

A diſcourſe of a worthy Preacher againſt Notaries.

(b) *The Spaniſh word* perleſia, *ſignifieth alſo* Prelacie. *As if the way to get preferment, were to raile vpon Gouernement.*

In

In all, and euery one of theſe, haue I found ſome markes and ſignes of their ſaluation: Onely in the Scriuener, I miſſe in my account, and am quite out of my reckoning, nor doe I finde in him any amendment at all; but is iuſt the ſame man to day, that he was yeſterday; this yeere, as he was thirty yeeres ſince; for he is ſtill one and the ſelfe-ſame man: Nor doe I know to whom, or how he confeſſeth, nor who abſolueth him: (I ſpeake of him, who doth not faithfully exerciſe his Office) for they informe, and write downe that, which they thinke fit, and for two ducats, or to pleaſure a friend, or to doe a ſhee-creature a courteſie (for your mantles, are great meddlers, and your women, not the worſt ſollicitours:) they take away this mans life, that mans honour, and a third mans wealth; ſetting the gate wide open to an infinit number of ſinnes, in their inſatiable couetouſneſſe, in their canine and dogge-like appetite, through the heate of that infernall fire that is in their ſoule: which makes them to ſwallow downe without chewing, bee it good or bad; right, or wrong, another mans goods. And becauſe euer and anon, vpon euery ſlight occaſion, they take that which is not their due; and for that the money that is put into the palmes of their hands, their fiſt beeing well greaſed therewith, is in an inſtant conuerted into fleſh and bloud, and incorporated into one & the ſelfeſame ſubſtance with themſelues; they haue no more power to caſt it off frõ them, then they haue to ſhake off the World, or the diuell, who ſit ſo cloſe vnto them, that they can hardly be remoued. So that it ſeemeth vnto me, that when any ſuch is ſaued, (for it cannot be, that all ſhould bee ſuch, as I haue heere taken vpon me to treat of) at his entrance into glory, the Angels fulfilled with ioy, will cry out one to another, *Lætamini in Domino*, A Scriuener come into Heauen, new fruit, new. For Scriueners are not *pomi Paradiſi*, ſuch fruit growes not there: And with this he ended his Sermon. But let it paſſe and goe for currant, that ſome good may be wrought vpon a Scriuener, and that there may be ſome hope his ſoule may bee ſaued, by changing his former courſe of life; yet for all this, fall backe, fall edge, goe which way you will to worke with him, he will bee well inough able to anſwere for himſelfe, by laying an excuſe vpon his faults (for iron alſo may be guilded) and then will he tell you that theſe are the rates of old, and that they take no more but their wonted fees, that victuals and other things grow ſtill dearer and dearer, and the meanes to maintain them, worſe and worſe: That the Kings rents and prices are variable; that they had not their Offices for nothing, but paid ſoundly for them; and therefore muſt licke himſelfe whole as well as he can, ſauing himſelfe harmeleſſe out of other mens gettings: And that there is no reaſon but that he ſhould bee well paid for the imployment of his perſon, and his paines taking. This hath been the courſe of all ages, and for ought I ſee, is like ſtill ſo to continue: Howbeit, *Ariſtotle* tels vs, That the greateſt wrong, that can be offered to a Commonwealth, is the ſale of Offices.

A defence of Scriueners, though a weake one.

Ariſtotles ſaying.

And *Cleomenes* the *Spartane*, being demanded how a Kingdome might come to be happy, made anſwere, When a King ſhould not reſpect his priuate profit. But for a Iudge that comes freely by his place, to whom, they haue giuen the *Title of gracious Lord*, in hope that he will doe the office of God, which is, to doe Iuſtice, and to ſhew Mercy, (and therefore are called Gods vpon earth) that to ſuch a one it ſhould be imputed, that he ſels Iuſtice; omitting to puniſh the bad, and to reward the good; and that hee will ſaue and couer a fault in a lewd fellow, or ſaue a notorious offender from the gallowes; I abſolutely deny it, and proue this my propoſition by plaine and euident Reaſons. For who can thinke, that there ſhould be in the world a Iudge ſo ill, ſo vnorderly, ſo impudent and ſo ſhameleſſe (for ſuch a one muſt he be, that will doe ſuch things) tho a mountaine of gold ſhould make his Mace, or rod of iuſtice to bend, and compell him to breake the Law? Howbeit, there are ſome abroad in the world, who ſticke not to ſay, that this ſuing for Offices, and

A ſaying of Cleomenes.

Iudges are Gods.

A bad Iudge, and his conditions.

and ſeates of Iuſtice, goes by certaine indirect pathes, and by-wayes, vnuſuall courſes out of the common track, & vn-accuſtomed; or (to ſpeake more properly) by falſe reports and forged Relations, whereof they make benefit, and grow thereby into great Eſtates. And after that they once grow warme in their places, & ſee that they are ſurely ſetled in them, they then make vp their ſtocke againe, and ſet vp for themſelues, and begin to play their prizes, raking and ſcraping at whatſoeuer comes within their reach; like vnto the *Polypus*, [a] or Cuttle Fiſh, that hath many clawes (like ſo many Wyers) to catch his prey. There is not a pore, or ioynt in all his body, but is either a mouth to ſwallow, or a paw to take hold, if you once come within his clutches. Heere he ſeazeth on Wheat, there on Barley; heere Wine, there Oyle, beſides flitches of Bacon, cloathes both woollen & linnen, ſilks of all ſorts, Iewels, money; frõ the Hangings in the dining Chamber, to ſtoope ſo low as the ſpice-boxe in the Kitchen; from the Maſters-bed, to the Mules Cratch; from the pureſt wheat in the granarie, to the very ſtraw and chaffe that lyes at the barnes doore, chooſing rather to play at ſmall game, then to ſit out. From which terrible griping, and violent hold-faſt, nothing can vn-hitch them but deaths fleſh-hooke. For, when the hand takes a bribe, and they once begin to be corrupted, there is no hope with them, they are marred for euer after by an euill vſe, and neuer come to be good. And ſo they receiue with open hand all manner of Bribes, as if they were men in pay, and what they wrongfully take, were true wages, and lawfull fees. So, that they obſerue not Iuſtice, they winke at theeues, becauſe they offer vnto them the firſt fruits and tithes of their thefts: they haue gotten the fauour of ſome Courtier, to beare them out in that, which they haue bought for their money: wherevpon they relying, caſt away all feare of wreſting and peruerting Iuſtice.

[a] *A Fiſh that hath many feet wherewith to catch his prey. Deriued from the Greeke word* πολυπους, *à* πολυς, Multus & πους: ὁδος, pes.

Thus is it, in all your Officers of Iuſtice, as well with your royall Merchant, as your Retayler; your *Alcalde*, as your *Alguazil*; your Iudge, as your Petty-fogger; with him that ſelleth in groſſe, as him that ſelleth by retayle; your Iuſticer is the Merchant; your Petty-fogger, the Pedler. And (for their better thriuing in the world) euery one hath his *bonus Genius*, or Angell of guard, either bought out-right for his money, (or at leaſt ſo ſettled vpon him, that it can hardly be alienated from him,) for thoſe impertinent neceſsities of the body; beſides that, which God hath giuen them for thoſe that import the Soule. So that they haue two *Genij*, (as men for the more ſurety wil haue two ſtrings to their Bowe:) The Court *Genius*, which is the Protector of their bodily goods; and Gods good Angell, that is the Protector of their ſoules.

So that out of all this, you ſee ſomething may be gathered, and happely a great part of it too true; yet for all this, we muſt not hence preſume to conclude of all: But he that ſhall fall through couetouſneſſe into the like baſeneſſe, which perhaps may be one of a thouſand, and the ſame ſome baſe-born Slaue, an ill-bred fellow, or of a vile and abiect minde, thou needeſt not wiſh him greater harme, or worſe misfortune, then hath already lighted vpon him; for he carries with him his owne chaſtiſement; He is pointed at (where-euer hee goes) with the finger; he is murmured at by men; he is abhorred of the Angels; and both in publike, and in priuate, hath euery mans mouth againſt him: yet muſt we not for their ſakes condemne the reſt, or thinke all to bee made of the ſame lumpe. And if ſome particular perſon finde himſelfe aggrieued, and complaine, that he hath receiued hard meaſure, wiſe men will conſider (as a thing to be neceſſarily preſuppoſed) that ſuites of Law, being in number ſo infinit; in nature, ſo differing; and in their ends ſo diuerſe and difficile to be decided, it is not poſsible that one iudgement ſhould content both ſides; or one Iudge (though neuer ſo indifferent) pleaſe both parties. There will (while the world ſtands) be ſome querrulous men, either with, or without

The puniſhment that an euill Iudge receiueth.

What he ſhould doe, that hath a ſuite in Law.

out reaſon, haue they cauſe, or not cauſe. Therefore, thou muſt firſt weigh, and conſider well with thy ſelfe, that theſe things, (I meane your Law-ſuites) will require a great deale of care, a great deale of skill, and a great deale of cunning. And if thou be wanting to thy ſelfe in theſe thy diligences, and take not the right courſe, the blame will lye in thy ſelfe. Nor is it any maruell, *Que pierdas tu derecho, no ſabiendo hazer tu hecho:* That for want of good information, thou ſhouldeſt loſe thy right, and miſcarry in thy ſuite, ſo that the fault is not ſo much the Iudges, as thine owne. But that the Iudge ſhould deny to doe iuſtice, becauſe many times hee does not giue ſentence on his ſide, who perſwades himſelfe that he is in the right, it is becauſe hee failes peraduenture in his proofes, or for that his Aduerſarie made a bad cauſe good, and the other a good cauſe bad, by the euill carriage of the buſineſſe. (For much aduantage doth conſiſt in the handling of a cauſe.) Or elſe through the negligence of the partie; or for that hee wants meanes and money to follow his ſuite; or for that his oppoſite is too powerfull for him. And therefore it is not good to taxe the Iudges, much leſſe thoſe, that are ſeated in thoſe higher Thrones, and ſuperiour tribunall ſeates, where there are many good & choiſe men, euen the beſt that the Kingdome affoordeth. And ſuppoſe, ſome one Iudge or other out of paſsion, would raſhly and vnaduiſedly precipitate himſelfe, not caring which end went forward (be it right, or be it wrong,) yet the reſt will not doe ſo, they beare a better minde, and will not ſticke to withſtand him to his face.

I remember that a *Labuador* in *Granada*, a good crafty Clowne, did (for his owne priuate profit) follow a ſuite very hard in open Court, againſt the Lord of the towne where he dwelt. Thinking with himſelfe, that he had to doe with *Pero Creſpo*, the Townes *Alcalde*, or Conſtable (if I may ſo ſtile him) of the Pariſh, and that he could haue drawne the *Oydores*, or Iudges (appointed to heare his cauſe) by the eares, and led them along as hee liſted; ſtanding one day in the *Plaça nueua*, or the new-Market-place, gazing hard, & looking buſily on the Porch, by which you enter into the *Chancery*, which is one of the famouſeſt buildings (for it's bigneſſe) that is in all *Spaine*; and whereunto (for not onely the curiouſneſſe of the Arches and Vaults, but for the faire carriage of buſineſſe) there is not any in theſe times knowne to be equall vnto it: after he had well viewed it, he perceiued that the Kings Armes that were placed in the Frontiſpice, had for it's two Supporters, *Iuſtice*, and *Fortitude*. Another Country fellow of his acquaintance, ſeeing him ſtand thus gaping as if hee had nothing to doe, asked him, why hee did not goe in to ſollicite his buſineſſe? He told him, I begin to thinke with my ſelfe, that theſe things are not for me, and therefore I could wiſh my ſelfe at home againe. Why (quoth his friend?) Why, ſaid he? becauſe *Iuſtice* is heere ſeated ſo high, that it is in vaine for me to looke to haue her ſtoope vnto me, and I am not able to reach vp vnto her, and therefore would I were well at home.

A witty ſaying of a Country fellow.

It is no maruell then (as I ſaid before) that a Iudge doe not *Iuſtice* now and then to ſome men, though they haue Law on their ſide; but it would ſeeme ſomewhat ſtrange, that a man ſhould haue a ſentence goe on his ſide, that hath not wit to defend his cauſe. But my father found ſentence in his fauour, becauſe hee had beene beaten to thoſe kindes of buſineſſes, and knew the trace of them, and was well able to hold plea. Beſides, when hee had the torment giuen him, and was put (as we heere tearme it) vpon the rack, he cleered himſelfe of thoſe imputations that were laid vpon him, and attainted thoſe witneſſes that were brought againſt him of publike malice, prouing that they had depoſed againſt him vpon idle and vaine preſumptions, and vpon weake and feeble grounds.

But heere (mee thinkes) I heare a Murmurer muttering forth his malice, telling me, That my father had a very ill report: That hee curled his hayre, painted

painted his face, and did diuers other things, which I paſſe ouer with ſilence, and willingly omit to ſpeake of: That moneys were ſtill ſtirring, and came tumbling in on euery ſide, beſides gifts and preſents, which comming from two oppoſite parties, continually croſſed one another. Whereunto I may adde the ſollicitation of women, who are not the worſt Aduocates, or the leaſt importunate Suitors. All which put together, leaue ſuch a thorne or ſting in my finger, that I dare not touch vpon them. O thou man of malediction, thou doeſt preſſe me too too hard, thou doeſt weary, & tyre me out; I purpoſe this bout onely, to giue thee the beſt ſatisfaction I can, and not to anſwer any more to thy replyes; for it were but to proceed in *infinitum*, and neuer to make an end, to waight vpon thy Sophiſtries, and friuolous queſtions. And therefore I doe not tell thee, that thou ſhooteſt at randome, ſpeakeſt *non ſequiturs*, and ſuch like things, wherein thou canſt not preuaile as thou wouldſt, nor make thy part good; for as much as the truth thereof is otherwiſe already determined. Yet, when ſuites goe thus, they giue occaſion of much miſlike and offence; but there is no remedy, and we muſt bee contented with it, as things that can not ſometimes bee poſsibly auoided: But God deliuer thee from ſuch a Iudge, *qui habet Legem in ſcrinio pectoris*, that interpreteth the Law as hee liſteth himſelfe, and as his owne conceit ſhall leade him, hauing neither Text, nor Doctor on his ſide to make good that hee doth; and from a Notarie, that is thine enemy, or any other of thoſe kinde of creatures, that are bribed: for they will falſifie orders for their profit, and regiſter things otherwiſe, then they were reported in Court. But in caſe thou wilt be carried away with opinion, and the voice of the Vulgar, (which is euermore the weakeſt, and leaſt true, according to the ſubiect from whence it comes) tell me, not out of the peoples talke, (whereunto little credit is to be giuen) but to ſpeake like a wiſe man, (out of thine owne diſcretion and iudgement,) whether all that which thou haſt ſaid, be ſufficient to proue, that my Father was (vndoubtedly) faulty.

Vox populi non modo eſt infirma, ſed ipſa infirmitas, & morbus.

Againſt painting.

Beſides, if it be the receiued opinion of ſome Phyſicians, that the vſing of Complexions, and ſuch like ſlibber-ſlabbers, is a kinde of infirmitie and ſickneſſe in it ſelfe, who can ſay, whether my father were ſound or no? And as for your curling of pates, criſping of haires, and other greater diſhoneſties, and vnſeemelier ſights then theſe, I doe not commend them; nor allow of thoſe, who permit them in *Spaine*.

Omnium colorum homo.

But that which I ſaw with mine owne eyes, for that time that I knew him, and was conuerſant with him, I am able to tell thee what manner of man my Father was. Hee was of a faire complexion, ruddy, well coloured, cleane and ſoft, was the graine of his skinne, and his hayre curled, which on my conſcience was naturall vnto him: He had a full eye, and that full of life, reſembling in colour the watry *Turquoys*. He ware a foretop, and thoſe his Locks, which ouerſpred his Temples, to giue them the greater grace, curled themſelues into rings of hayres. And if God had giuen him theſe colours, as proper to him, was it fit (thinke you) that he ſhould beſoot his face with the ſame paintings? or is it likely, that he would make ſuch ſlight reckoning of theſe faire pledges of Gods goodnes, & imbrace ſuch counterfet ſtuffe to the ill example of others? But if it be true, as thou ſaiſt, that he made vſe of oyntments, greaſie ingredients, ſlabber-ſawces, gals of beaſts, and the like artifices; and that thoſe teeth, and hands, which did ſo much commend him, that all this, I ſay, ſhould be done by the vertue of certaine Powders, Oxe-gals, Lees, Latherings, and other ſuch ſluttiſh and beaſtly confections, I ſhall then ingeniouſly acknowledge whatſoeuer thou ſhalt ſay of him, and ſhall be a capitall enemy not onely vnto him, but to all thoſe that ſhall practiſe the like. For beſides, that they are effeminate actions, fitting onely wanton wenches, and light huſwiues, they giue occaſion to men, to murmure againſt them, and breed

breed a iuſt ſuſpition of baſeneſſe in the vileſt degree, when they ſhall ſee them thus dawbed ouer with clay, and wholly compoſed of thoſe things, that are onely permitted vnto women; who, becauſe they haue not ſufficient beauty of themſelues, borrow it from paintings, and varniſhings, to the great coſt, both of their health, and purſe. And (which to ſee, is a thouſand pities) that your foule, and worſt fauoured women, are not onely thoſe that do this, but euen your faireſt, and thoſe that are moſt beholding to Nature: who thinking thereby to ſeeme fairer, and to make Nature appeare more louely in Arts dreſſing, begin this worke betimes in the morning in their bed, and finiſh it at noone, when the Cloth is layd. So that I ſay, (and not without reaſon) *Que la muger, quanto mas mirare la cara, tanto mas deſtruye la caſa*: That a woman, the more curious ſhe is about her face, the more careleſſe ſhe is about her houſe; the repairing of the one, being the ruining of the other. If this then (euen in women) be blame-worthy, how much more ſhall it bee in men? O filthineſſe, aboue all other filthineſſe! O affront, aboue all other affronts! that God hauing giuen thee one face, thou ſhouldſt abuſe his image, and make thy ſelfe another. Thou canſt not twit mee in the teeth, that my loue to my father hath blinded me, or that my naturall affection to my Country hath bribed me, nor ſhalt thou euer find me out of reaſon, or in ought that I ſhall ſay, to ſwerue from the truth. But if there be any diſcharge or ſatisfaction in a thing that is euil, I wil tel thee one curioſitie, becauſe it fals out patt for this place, and did ſucceed all, as it were about one and the ſelfe-ſame time. To thee it will ſerue for counſell; to me, for comfort, as a common euill, that goes not without its fellowes.

Painting bad, both in a foule, & in a faire woman, but worſt of all in a man.

Dulce eſt ſocios habuiſſe dolorum.

In the yeere 1512. (a little before *Rauenna* was ſack't) there were cruell warres in *Italy*. And in this very Citty, (I meane *Rauenna*) there was borne a ſtrange Monſter, which did ſtrike the beholders into great admiration, and cauſed much wonder. He had from the girdle vpward, all his whole body, face, and head, like vnto a man, ſauing that he had one horne in his forehead: he wanted his armes, but in ſtead thereof, Nature had giuen him two wings like a Bat: he had figured in his breſt, the *Pythagoricall* (Y) and in his ſtomacke downe to his belly, a well-formed Croſſe, or Crucifix. He was an *Hermaphrodite*, both thoſe two naturall Sexes, beeing in a very proportionable manner well and truly formed: he had no more but one thigh, and to it one legge with its foot like a Kites, and the tallons anſwerable thereunto. In the knotty part, or locking ioynt of the knee, he had one onely eye. Theſe monſtroſities and vnnaturall ſhapes poſſeſſed mens minds with extraordinary admiration; and thoſe that were learned men, and great Schollers, conſidering with themſelues, that ſuch monſters in nature were vſually prodigious, and did foretoken ſome ſtrange effects, did beate their braines, and exerciſe the ſtrength of their wit, in the ſpeculation and ſearch of the ſignification thereof, and what this ſtrange Monſter might portend. And amongſt many other that were giuen, onely this that followeth, was well receiued amongſt them: That the horne did ſignifie Pride, and Ambition; the wings, Inconſtancie and Lightneſſe: want of armes, want of good workes: the foot, of that bird of rapine, Theft, Vſury, and Auarice: the eye in the knee, affection to vanities and worldly things: the two Sexes, Sodomy, and beaſtly filthineſſe; in all which vices, all *Italy* did then abound. For the which, God did ſcourge them with that his whip of warres and diſſentions. But the Croſſe and the Y were good and fortunate ſignes; for the Y in the breſt did ſignifie Vertue: and the Croſſe on the belly, that if men (ſuppreſsing their diſhoneſt luſts of the fleſh, ſhould imbrace vertue in their breſts, God would giue them peace, ſweeten his diſpleaſure, and abate his wrath.

You ſee here, (in a caſe prohibited) that when the whole current ran with a troubled water, my father followed along with the ſtreame, and did as o-

thers did, and was not the ſole and onely offender. And therefore more worthy ſhalt thou be of blame, if thou ſhalt offend, hauing beene brought vp in a ſchoole of Chriſtianity, and taught by example what to auoyd. God lend vs his helping hand, that we may not fall into other the like miſeries: for all of vs, euen the beſt of vs, we are but men.

CHAPTER II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better inſtruction, deſcribes the euill conditions, and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a ſenſuall and laſciuious man, and that the end of diſhoneſt Loue, is the waſting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himſelfe.*

BVT that I may returne againe to my Storie, I told you before, (if my memory doe not faile mee) that (hauing performed his penance) my father came to *Seuill* for to recouer his debt; whereupon Law was waged, many offers made either to giue or take; ſome demands, and ſome anſwers: and if he had not thorowly purged himſelfe for his health, and found an euaſion; that is, if he had not well cleared himſelfe of being a *Renegado*, it would haue broken out vpon him into the ſcurfe of the head, or the ſcratches in the paſternes; all the fat had lyen in the fire, and he had beene quite blowne vp. But he had wrought ſuch a cure vpon himſelfe, and handled the buſineſſe ſo handſomely, that they could not catch hold of him for hauing the Leproſie, or the dry ſcab. All things were ſo well made vp, that they could not find a hole in his coate, or make any marke or white, to ſhoot at him; ſo well was he prouided for all commers. Meanes were vſed on both ſides, compoſition offered, but not accepted; the one being vnwilling to pay all, the other as loth to loſe all. Of this ſpilt water, hee gathered vp as much as he could, making the beſt of a bad bargaine. And with that which came to his ſhare (be it what it will) it ſo well ſerued his turne, that the cards once more were dealt round againe, and he come into very good play. His incomes were ſuch, and his lucke ſo great, that in a very ſhort time, hee gained not onely where-withall to dine, but alſo to ſup. Hee built him a prety handſome houſe, he ſought to plant and ſettle himſelfe in thoſe parts, hee bought him land of inheritance; he had a Garden in *San Iuan de Alfarache*; a neat one it was, and of much recreation and pleaſure, diſtant from *Seuill* little more then halfe a League; whither many dayes, eſpecially in the Summer time, he went for his paſſe-time, and made many banquets. It happened, that the Merchants made a Burſe or Pawne for their contractations at the ſtayres of the great Church, (like that of Saint *Felipe* at *Madrid*) with a place to walke in, which went round about it, hauing a Parapet or Wall breſt-high on the outſide of it, to ſeparate it from the open ſtreet, girt in with great Marble pillars, and ſtrong chaines of yron. My father walking there with other Merchants, there chanced a Chriſtening to paſſe by. And (as the talke there went) this child was ſaid to be the ſecret ſonne, or (to ſpeake plaine Engliſh) baſtard to a certaine perſon, that ſhall be nameleſſe. My father followed in the tayle of the troope, and entred in after them euen to the very Font, for to ſee and view my mother; who with a certaine old Knight of the military habit, (who for to maintaine the honour of his Order, liued by the Rents of the Church) were Partners in this Ceremonie: it was a metall'd thing, a luſty liuely wench, yet graue enough withall; her carriage was very gracefull, and full of courteſie,

Guzmans father compounds with his Creditors; growes rich, and takes his pleaſure.

Guzmans mother an handſome woman: Her condition.

courteſie, her ſelfe young, beautifull, diſcreet, modeſt, and of a well compoſed and ſettled behauiour. Her handſome feature needes no other commender, then it ſelfe. He ſtood ſteddily looking vpon her, all the while that the Exerciſe of that Sacrament gaue him leaue ſo to do, beeing aſtoniſht to behold ſo rare a beauty, if not beſotted with it. For, to that her naturall beauty of face, and feature of body, (without any tricking or painting at all) all was ſo curious and fitly placed thorow that whole frame of nature, that one part helping another, and all put together into one piece, did make ſuch a delicate contexture, that no penſill can reach to expreſſe its perfection; nor imagination conceiue, how to make it better. The parts, and faſhion of my father, I haue already largely laid open vnto you: this goodly creature, (for they ſeeme gods and not men, who are not touched with naturall affections) began to perceiue his earneſt eying of her, and did not a little reioyce in it, howſoeuer ſhe did diſſemble it. For there is not any woman, (though neuer ſo proud, be ſhe of high or low degree) but does take comfort, and chucke for ioy, to be beheld and looked vpon with an hungry eye, be the man neuer ſo baſe, neuer ſo meane. Their eyes being their interpreters, though their tongues were ſilent, ſpake plaine language each to other: manifeſting by them their hearts; for ſoules on ſuch occaſions do not admit of maskes, neither will willing minds yeeld to the vaile and muffler. For that time, there paſſed no more betwixt them, nor ought elſe done, ſaue onely that he came to know, that ſhe was that Knights Pawne; his iewel, his delight, a morſell that he kept for his owne mouth, ouer whom he was wondrous wary, and ſo tenderly affected, that he could ſcarce indure to haue her out of his ſight. In fine, this Gentlewoman went directly home to her houſe, and my father was at his wits end, not knowing in the world how to put her out of his mind. He vſed, that hee might come to the ſight of her againe, many extraordinary diligences: but, vnleſſe when ſhe went foorth to Maſſe vpon ſome ſolemne Feaſt-dayes, he could not otherwiſe ſee her for a long time together.

Women loue to be eyed, and to be look't vpon.

The often falling drop, hollowes the hardeſt ſtone that is; and ſtedfaſt perſeuerance ſtill gets the victory: for continuance crowneth our actions, and diſpoſeth them to their intended ends. Hee plodded ſo long on the matter, that he found out a tricke to ſerue his turne, vſing the meanes of a good old beldame, a reuerent Matron forſooth, an honeſt Bawd, one of my charitable Aunts: for ſuch miniſters as theſe doth the Diuell ſet aworke, and employ in his ſeruice; with which ſecret Mynes, he ouerturnes the ſtrongeſt towers of the chaſteſt women: for that they may better themſelues in their rayment, ſeeking to gaine a widowes habit, a Huke, or a Mantle, and that their little Caskets may be ſtored with Boxes of Marmalet; there is no trecherie which they will not attempt; no filthineſſe, which they will not ſollicite; no blood, which they will not draw foorth; no chaſtity, which they will not ſpot; no cleanneſſe, which they will not fully; no wickedneſſe which they will not bring to paſſe. This good creature then, being courted by him with words, and rewarded by him with deeds, went and came to and fro with papers: And becauſe the Principles, as they are the firſt, ſo the hardeſt to learne; and becauſe the greateſt difficultie conſiſts in the beginning; and for that, Loaues go aſide, if they be not well ſet into the Ouen, ſhe molded the buſineſſe well, vſing the beſt ſleights ſhe had. And becauſe my father had heard of old, That money leuelleth the greateſt difficulties, and makes all things plaine and eaſie, he did euer manifeſt his faith by his workes, becauſe they ſhould not condemne it to be dead and fruitleſſe. He was neuer negligent, nor yet no niggard. He began (as I told you) by this womans hand, to ſow the ſeeds of his loue, and prodigally to ſpend vpon my mother; and they both, very willingly, and very cheerefully, are ready to receiue all. And becauſe vnto goodnes, gratitude is ſo due a debt; and that he who receiueth, is bound to a requitall,

A Bawde, and her condition.

Money ouercomes all difficulties, eſpecially with women.

and euery courteſie deſerues its acknowledgement This good mother of miſchiefe did play her part ſo well, grew ſuch a good Sollicitor, and followed the buſineſſe ſo cloſe, that her diligence meeting in a happy coniuncture, with the forwardneſſe of my Mothers will, ſhe ſtill went adding more fuell to the fire; and of a little light ſtubble, raiſed in a ſhort time a terrible flame. As we ſee many times, ieaſting turned into earneſt; and things full often to end in ſober ſadneſſe, which at the firſt, were but begun in ieaſt.

My Mother (as ye haue already heard) was a diſcreet woman; faine ſhee would, but durſt not; ſhe had a good mind to the buſineſſe, but yet ſhe was afraid: ſhe was ſometimes on, ſometimes off; her owne heart was the Oracle of her deſires; with that ſhe conſulted often, what were beſt to do. And thus diſputing *pro* and *con* with herſelfe, *ya lo tenia de la haz, ya delenues*. Somtimes (as we ſee in the handling of Stuffes, or of Cloth) ſhe was on the right, ſometimes on the wrong: one while ſhe would put on a full reſolution to doe thus and thus; by and by againe, ſhe would turne to a new Coniugation, and vary the Mood ſhe was in before. In concluſion, whom will not ſiluer win? whom will not gold corrupt? This Knight was an elderly man, much ſubiect to ſpitting, ſpalling, and coughing, he was troubled with the Stone, with ſharpneſſe of his Vrine, and other the like infirmites: ſhe had ſeene him full oft by her ſweet ſide in the naked bed; where he did not appeare the man my father was, he had not that vigour, nor liuelineſſe, nor that handſomeneſſe of ſhape and proportion. And beſides, obſerue it while you liue, and you ſhal euermore find it to be true, That long acquaintance, and much conuerſation, (where Gods feare is not) breeds weariſomneſſe, and loathſomeneſſe at the laſt. Nouelties pleaſe all, eſpecially women, who are louers of flim-flam tales, and for the receiuing and returning of newes; like vnto *Materia prima*, which neuer ceaſeth to deſire and ſeeke after new Formes. She was reſolued to haue forſaken the old Knight, to ſhift her of her old clothes, to change her ſmocke, and was fully bent to fly out, and to breake looſe, whatſoeuer came of it: but her great wiſedome, and long experience, which was hereditary vnto her, and ſuckt from her mothers teat, opened the way, and preſented vnto her an ingenious reſolution. And queſtionleſſe, the feare of loſing her penſion, kept her aloofe off, the thought whereof much perplexed her for the preſent, who otherwiſe was of her ſelfe well egged forward, and had a good mind to the game. For what leſſon my Father read but once vnto her, the Diuell repeated the ſame ten times ouer; ſo that it was no ſuch great matter now to winne *Troy*; there was likelihood inough to take it in leſſe then ten yeeres.

Nouelties pleaſe women.

A woman, wiſe in wickednesſe, what one ſhe is.

My good Mother caſts vp her account, and made this reckoning with her ſelfe: In this particular, my perſon loſeth nothing, I ſell no houſhold ſtuffe, I waſte none of my goods; and though in this kind, I affoord much kindneſſe to others, I am therein like vnto the Candle, or the Sunne in its brightneſſe, though I lend light vnto others, I haue nothing the leſſe my ſelfe: I ſhall not want awhit in my eſtate, but be rather ſtill at the full. Of whom I haue receiued ſo many courteſies, ſo many gifts, it is fit, I ſhould in ſome ſort ſhew my ſelfe thankfull, and not be ſparing to him, that hath beene ſo bountifull to me. Shall I be couetous, when he is ſo liberall? God forbid. I am now reſolued what to do: I will ſow my bagge at both ends, my iawes ſhall grind on both ſides, my chaps ſhall walke euery way; and the better to ſecure my ſhippe, I will haue two anchors to one bottome; that if I ſhould chance to loſe the one, I might ſtill haue another remaining to ſerue my turne. And if the manſion-houſe ſhould hap to fall, yet if the Doue-houſe hold vp, if that ſtand faſt, we ſhall lacke no Pigeons, as long as there is a Louer-hole for the poore fooles to get in at.

Hauing taken theſe things into her conſideration, ſhe treated with this her

bawdy

bawdy Embaſſadreſſe, how, and when it might be; the manner, how; and the time when. But finding (after long conſultation) that it was impoſsible to effect her deſires in her owne houſe, and that there was no good to be done at home, for to enioy each other freely, & to take that fulneſſe of content, which muſt ſatisfie the hungry mawes of greedy Louers, amongſt many other ſhifts and tricks, and very good and witty deuices, and ſtrange plots, which they had laid their heads about, for the better ſucceſſe in the buſineſſe, they made choyſe of this which followeth.

The Spring had ſo farre aduanced it ſelfe, that *May* was in it's ending, and the Summer was now making his entrance. And the Village of *Gelues*, and that of **San Iuan de Alfarache*, are now the ſweeteſt and the pleaſanteſt of all that bordring Territory, none thereabouts was like vnto them; beſides, the fertileneſſe and goodneſſe of the ſoyle (which is all one with that of *Seuill*, as next neighbour vnto it) which that Riuer of (*a*) *Guadalquibir*, makes the more famous, whoſe watry gullets purling along the bankes, in-rich and adorne all thoſe gardens and fields, that confine thereupon: ſo that with reaſon (if there may be a knowne Paradiſe vpon earth) ſure the name thereof properly appertaines to this particular ſeate: So fairely is it ſet forth with ſhadow-caſting trees, ſo beautified with curious bowers, ſo richly inameled with ſundry ſorts of flowers, ſo abounding with ſauoury fruits, ſo accompanied with ſiluer-running ſtreames, with cleere ſprings, glaſſe-labour-ſauing fountaines, freſh ayres, and delightſome ſhades, whereinto the beames of the Sunne are at that time denied their entrance, and haue not permiſsion ſo much as once to peepe in. At one of theſe retiring roomes of recreation, my mother agreed with her marriage-maker; her *Sine qua, non*; and ſome of the people of her houſe, to come one day thither to make merry. And albeit the place, whither they were to goe, was not that which my father was owner of, but was ſomewhat beyond it, neerer vnto *Gelues*; yet of force they muſt, to goe thither, paſſe cloſe by our doore.

Vpon this care taken, and former agreement concluded betweene them, iuſt about the time that ſhe was to come neere vnto our garden gate, my Mother began preſently to complaine of a ſudden and grieuous paine in her ſtomake, imputing the cauſe thereof to the coldnes of the morning, and the freſhneſſe of the weather, and did ſo cunningly diſſemble the pangs and gripings ſhe indured, that they were faigne to take her downe from her (*b*) *Xamuga*, which for her more eaſe in her iourney, was borne by a pretty little, but ſure-footed (*c*) *Sardinian* Aſſe. She feigned ſuch extremities of torture, made ſuch pittifull faces, and ſuch wofull geſtures (holding her hand as hard as ſhee could for her life vpon her belly, cruſhing and wringing it with all the might and maine ſhe could:) then would ſhe let them looſe againe, then claſpe them together, and wring each finger through anguiſh of her paine: other-while ſhe would hang the head, as if ſhe were fainting and ready to ſwoune; and that fit paſt, fetching a deepe ſigh or two, ſhe fell to vnlacing and vnbracing her ſelfe, that all that were about her (ſaue thoſe that were priuy to the plot) did verily beleeue that ſhe was wonderfully and mightily tormented, that ſhee made them to melt into teares, and to haue a compaſsionate feeling of this her affliction. Diuers paſſengers chanced in the *interim* to come by, and euery one propoſed his remedy; ſo many men, ſo many medicines; but becauſe they knew not for the preſent where to haue the things that ſhould be applyed, nor where to haue a fit place for to miniſter vnto her, their medicines were impertinent, and to no purpoſe in the world. To goe backe vnto the Citie, it was impoſsible; to goe further forward, dangerous; and to abide thus in the high-way, not commodious. Her fits increaſed, all ſtood amazed, as not knowing what to doe, nor what courſe to take. At laſt, one amongſt the reſt, that was there (who was laid there for the purpoſe) breakes mee in amongſt them,

* Alfarache, *a place of recreation neere vnto* Seuill: *And it's rare pleaſures.*

(a) Guadalquibir *is a famous Riuer, which thwarteth all* Andaluzia: *it empties it ſelfe into the Sea, neere to* San Lucar de Barrameda. *It is a great Riuer, whoſe head riſes in the* Sierra de Sigura, *or* Alcaçar, *anciently called* Tabigenſis: *from whoſe ſpring-head to the Sea, it runnes more then 60. Leagues; it's ancient name was* Betis: *from whence that Prouince is called* Betica, *of* Betus *the 6. K. of* Spaine. *Or from the Greeke word* Βαθος, *which ſignifies Deepe. Some ſay it is a* Chaldee *word, and ſignifies a Houſe. For that it is the receptacle whither al other Riuers enter in, as into a houſe. Some call it* Thuria, *of* Θυειν, *which ſignifies, impetuous, proud, &c.* Vide Couarruuias, *and* Eſteban de Garrib. l. 5. c. 4. fol. 128.

(b) Xamuga, *A womans ſaddle with a Chaire.*

(c) *A* Sardinian *Aſſe, of all Aſſes, is the leaſt. A notable ſubtilty of* Guzmans *Mother, for the inioying of his Father, before ſhe came to bee his wife.*

them, and as he paſſes the preſſe, cryes, Roome for the paſsion of God, make way there, ſtand farther off, leſt you ſtiffle her for want of ayre. Come, let vs take her, and remoue her out of the high way; it were cruelty, not to ſeeke to cure her, and a thouſand pitties, that ſo ſweet a creature ſhould bee caſt away, for want of care and good looking to. Come, let vs take her in our armes, and put her into this garden houſe heere hard by, in this caſe we muſt be content to take that which comes next to hand.

All approued what hee ſaid, his motion was applauded, and ſo generally well liked, that it was preſently concluded amongſt them, That vntill that fit were ouer-paſt, they ſhould craue leaue of thoſe that kept the houſe, to giue her entrance, not doubting but ſhe would bee much the better, if they could be but ſo happy as once to get her within the doores. They knockt hard and thick, (as men vſe to doe when they are in haſte;) the good woman that kept the houſe, made ſhow as if ſhe thought her Maſter had been there: and as ſhe came waddling along, bawled to her ſelfe: O good God, is it you, Maſter? O ſweet Ieſus! I pray bee not angry, that I came no ſooner, I was very buſie, I could not doe withall, I came as ſoone as I could. Theſe and the like excuſes, her vnprofitable chaps mumbled to her ſelfe.

The old Hagge knew well enough what ſhe had to doe, ſhe might goe in the ranke of thoſe rude Countrie wenches, that make curtſey, and cry, *No chero, no ſabo*; No forſooth not I, I am a poore ſilly old Woman, ſeeming as if ſhe did not know how to ſay B. to a battle-doore. Yet was ſhe a diſſembling Hilding, a crafty old Carrion, one that had learned her leſſon before-hand, and receiued her inſtructions from my father, ſo that ſhee was well prepared for the buſineſſe. Beſides, ſhe was no Dullard, and for ſuch kinde of imployments ſhe was no Baby, but vnderſtood very well in ſuch ſeruices as theſe what was fit to be done.

The difference betwixt the poore and the rich Maſter.

And herein (amongſt other things) the rich haue this aduantage of the poore, That euill ſeruants will not ſo eaſily come to the beck and bend of a poore Maſter, as well-diſpoſed ſeruants will be ouer-awed by a rich Maſter, and wonne to his lewd commands. The poore man, (though he be neuer ſo honeſt) yet muſt he yeeld ſometimes to the violent diſpoſition of his wilfull and headſtrong ſeruants; whereas honeſt Country-Swaines, ouer-commanded by their rich Land-lords, become Miniſters to their luſtfulneſſe. So that the poore (though neuer ſo good) hauing ill ſeruants, are ſeruants to their ſeruants. And the rich (though neuer ſo bad) by beeing ſerued with good ſeruants, are the onely men that are well ſerued.

My good old Woman had by this time opened the gate, and either not well remembring, or making ſhow as if ſhe had not knowne them, full of diſsimulation, ſhe fell thus vpon them: What a ſtirre, what a knocking is heere? The Diuell take you all for me; beſhrew me, if I did not thinke it had beene our Maſter. The very feare whereof, leſt I might haue ſtayed too long before I let him in, hath not left me one drop of bloud in all my body. It's very well, what's the matter now, I pray? What would you with me? What is your Worſhips pleaſure? Haue you any thing to ſay to mee? If you haue, let me know your minde, that I may make an end and goe about my buſineſſe; for I haue ſomething elſe to doe then to ſtand thus idly heere.

Then the old Knight anſwered, and ſaid; Good woman, I pray afford vs ſome place in your houſe, where this Gentlewoman may reſt her ſelfe awhile: for a grieuous paine in her ſtomake, hath befalne her heere vpon the way: ſhe, that kept the houſe, ſeeming to reſent her paine, and to be much grieued for it, in her rude ruſticke manner, ſorrowfully replyde:

Now a miſchiefe on all ſuch ill lucke! O what a griefe it is to ſee, that any paine ſhould proue ſo vnhappy, as to be thus ill imploy'd vpon ſo ſweet a face, ſuch a dainty bed of red and white Roſes! Come in a Gods name, come in, I

pray,

pray, for all the houſe is at your ſeruice. My Mother, all this while, ſaid not ſo much as one word, onely ſhe complained of her griefe.

The good old Wench of the houſe, vſing her with all the kindneſſe her Country-faſhion could afford, gaue them the liberty of the whole houſe, bringing them into a lower roome, where, in a well-furniſht bed, there were certaine *Colchones*, or Mattreſſes; theſe ſhee preſently vnfolded, and hauing ſpred them forth, and made all things fit and handſome, ſhe preſently opened a Cheſt, whence ſhe tooke out a very fine payre of ſheetes, that were neat and ſweet, a faire Quilt, and a couple of Pillowes; wherewith ſhee dreſſed vp a bed, and made it ready for her to take her reſt in. Well might the bed haue beene made, the roome kept cleane, all places ſweetned with the burning of perfumes, breathing forth Pomanders, and other the like odoriferous ſents, and a breakefaſt prouided, and many other dainties and delicacies put in a readineſſe for to entertaine them withall. All theſe things, I ſay, might well haue beene made ready before-hand; but it was thought fit, that ſome of them ſhould not be prepared; as alſo that the woman that kept the houſe, ſhould not come at the firſt knocking, as likewiſe that the gate ſhould be ſhut againſt them, and not be opened vntill they called, that it might not ſeeme to bee a ſet match, and leſt it might chance to breed ſome ſuſpition, and ſo the ſtratagem (a) might be diſcouered, and the maskers made known; for this dayes plot was meerely no other thing. My Mother, in this her pittifull paine, put off her cloathes, got her to bed, and called euer and anon for warme cloathes; which being brought vnto her, making as if ſhe had laid them to her belly, ſhe thruſt them lower beneath her knees, and ſomewhat apart from her, becauſe the heat of them did ſomewhat offend her, fearing leſt they might cauſe ſome remotion or alteration in her body, whereby qualmes might ariſe and weaken her ſtomake: With the helpe of theſe warme Napkins, ſhe found her ſelfe much eaſed, and feigned ſhe had a deſire to ſleepe, hoping ſhe ſhould bee the better after ſhe had taken ſome reſt.

A Colchone, *is a kinde of Mattreſſe, quilted with Wooll, and baſted with Thread, that the Wooll may not ſlide and grow into Knots.*

The poore old Knight, whoſe chiefeſt ioy conſiſted in giuing her content, hauing placed all his happineſſe in her welfare, was (honeſt Cuckold as hee was) wonderfully glad of this, and left her all alone in her naked bed. And hauing made faſt the doore after him, that none could get in to trouble her, he went forth to recreate himſelfe in thoſe Gardens belonging to the houſe; charging his people to make no noiſe, and that none ſhould come neere the doore, enioyning ſtilneſſe and ſilence, and that none of them ſhould dare to open it, till they had farther order from him, or that he came himſelfe: And for that honeſt woman of the houſe, he willed her that ſhe ſhould watch by her, till ſhe awaked, and that then ſhe ſhould come and call him. My Father in the meane while was not aſleepe, but ſtood with attention hearkening to what was ſaid, and lay peering out through the Key-hole (like one that lyes in Ambuſcado) of a certaine back doore, belonging to a little cloſe cloſet, whither he had retired himſelfe, till he could ſpy his time of aduantage for to ſally forth, and ſurprize that deſired fort, which he had long ſince ſo cunningly vndermined.

(a) *The* Spaniſh *word* Encamiſada, *ſignifies a ſtratagem; borrowed from the wearing of ſhirts vpon their Armour, thereby to ſurprize the enemy on the ſudden, and to bee diſtinguiſhed frō their enemies. It is alſo a* Maske, *or* Mummery.

Now, when all was huſht and quiet, and that her owne Nurſe that came with her, and that other old Bawd of the houſe, ſtood like two Sentinels vpon their Watch, ready vpon all occaſions, to giue quicke aduice, by a certaine ſecret ſigne, which might ſerue in ſtead of a watch-word, when the old Knight ſhould make head that way, then did my father iſſue out at that poſterne, or little back-doore of his, that he might ſee, and conferre with his Miſtreſſe. And at that very inſtant did her feigned pangs ceaſe, and thoſe truer ones of loue began to manifeſt themſelues, giuing other kinde of twinges, and thoſe kinder for the place affected. In this ſwelling kinde of ſport they continued two long houres, two yeeres being not ſufficient to expreſſe

expreſſe thoſe paſſages that were betwixt theſe two new Louers in this their merry fit.

Now the day began to grow hot, and was entring more and more into his heates, which forced the Knight to make his retreat towards the houſe. Which he did the more willingly, out of the deſire which he had to know how his ſicke Saint did, whether ſhe were any thing better, and whether they ſhould ſtay there, or goe forward, or what they were beſt to doe, theſe were the lines that led him along to viſit her. Vpon his marching thitherward, the Sentinels ſhot off a warning peece: and my father with great ſorrow of heart forſooke the Fort, where hee had ſet vp his Standard, and retyred backe to his Court of guard, and ſhut himſelfe vp cloſe, where he was before.

Vpon the entring in of her old Gallant, ſhe made ſhow as if ſhe had beene faſt aſleepe, and was awakened with the noiſe that hee had made. And with a bended browe, and angry looke, caſting her eye a-skew vpon him with a coyneſſe of language, ſhe turn'd aſide from him, accenting her words in a pretty kinde of mournefull faſhion, pittying as it were and bemoning her ſelfe; Ay me; God helpe me. Why (alas) haue they opened the doore ſo quickly? Was there no care, no loue to be ſhowne vnto me, in letting mee ſleepe a little longer? I thought you, of all others, would not haue put me out of ſo ſweet a ſlumber. But tis no matter, I ſhall one day; and with that ſhee ſigh'd, and ſtop'd, as if ſhe had ſome-thing elſe to ſay, ſtudying more to amuze him, then to declare her ſelfe.

This good old Knight of ours, this patient peece of fleſh, gently made anſwere: By thoſe eyes of thine, then which I adore nothing more, I did not thinke to wake thee, it grieues me (pretty ſoule) that I haue done thee that wrong; yet haſt thou ſlept full two houres and more. Two houres? (replide my Mother:) no, nor yet halfe an houre: me thinkes it is but euen now that I beganne to ſhut mine eyes, and in all my life, I neuer had ſo quiet and contented a napp, for that little while that it laſted; (nor did ſhe lye in all that ſhe ſaid, for ſhe gulled him with a matter of truth:) and looking with ſomewhat a more cheerefull countenance vpon him, ſhe much commended the remedy which they had giuen her; telling them, that they had giuen her her life.

The old Knight was glad to ſee ſo much comfort come from her. And by conſent of both parties, they agreed to celebrate their feaſt there, and to paſſe away as merrily as they could the remainder of that day, for that Garden was no leſſe pleaſant, then that whither they intended to haue gone. And becauſe their people were not farre off, that had the charge of their prouiſion (for the other houſe was hard by) they ſent to them to bring back their dinner thither, and ſuch other things, as they had brought along with them.

Whileſt this buſineſſe was a-doing, my Father found fit opportunity to get out ſecretly at the other gate, and to returne backe to *Senill*: where, euery houre, was a thouſand yeeres; a moment, an Age, and the time of his abſence from his new Loue, a preſent Hell.

Now, when the Sunne was in his declining, which was about fiue in the Euening, mounting vpon his *Gennet*, as if it had been but his ordinary walke, he came to viſit this his houſe. Wherein he found theſe gallants, he bid them welcome, and told them he was very glad to ſee them there, onely hee was ſorry for the miſhap, which cauſed their ſtay. For he no ſooner came in, but they told him all that had paſt. His carriage was courteous; his voice lowd and ſhrill, but not very cleere: He made them many diſcreet, and faire offers, (for hee had learned a little Courtſhip) and they on the other ſide, remained no whit in his debt for kinde words: So that in the end, there was a great League of friendſhip profeſſed and confirmed betweene them in publike; but a ſtricter tye in ſecret, betwixt my Father and his Miſtreſſe,

for

for the good pawnes and pledges of Loue, that had lately paſt between them.

But there is a difference betweene Loue, Friendſhip, and Good-will. Good-will, is that, which I may beare to one that I neuer ſaw in all my life, nor had any other knowledge of him, then that I haue heard of his vertues, or of his noble diſpoſition, or ſome other worthy parts in him, which makes me to wiſh him well, and drawes my affection by a violent kind of motion as it were, to follow after him.

The difference that is betwixt Loue, Friendſhip, and Good-will.

Friendſhip, we call that, which is commonly concluded betwixt man and man, or one friend with another, vpon ſome long Treaty or Communication, Similiancie in condition, or ſome other pledges of loue, and reall courteſies, that haue paſſed betweene them: ſo that Good-will, is ſaid to bee betweene thoſe that are abſent; and Friendſhip, betweene thoſe that are preſent. But Loue runnes by another kind of courſe; it ſteeres by another Compaſſe. That muſt of force be reciprocall, a commutation of hearts, a copy or counterpane of interchangeable kindneſſe, a tranſlation of two ſoules, where each ſtriues with other with all their might and maine, to aſsiſt there more, where it loues, then where it liues. And this takes its perfection from its obiect; the perfecter the obiect, the perfecter the Loue: but the trueſt Loue of all is *diuine Loue*. And therefore we are to loue God aboue all things, with all our heart, with all our ſtrength, and with all our ſoule, ſeeing that he ſo much loueth vs. Next vnto that, is your *Amor coniugalis*, that Loue which is betweene a man and his wife, and then that which is betwixt neighbour and neighbour, or one friend towards another. For lewd Loue, and that which is diſhoneſt, (whoſe ground growes not from Vertue) is not worthy of this name of Loue, as being of a baſtard-brood.

True Loue, what it is.

What lewd Loue is.

But hap what may hap, come what will come, fall backe, or fall edge; whereſoeuer this lewd loue raigneth, there are all your Witchcrafts, as no where in the world more; there your inchantments, there your Sorceries. This lewd loue is that, which (like another *Circes*) alters the conditions of men, aduentureth thorow all difficulties, and makes them eaſie; it is that alone which tameth the ſtrongeſt and fierceſt Lyons. For to ſay, that there are *Philtra*, amorous potions, poyſons of loue, and the like baits and trickes to force affection, it is all falſe: for this alone, is ſufficient of it ſelfe to turne a mans braines, to peruert his iudgement, to take away his life, to confound his memory, to draw on diſeaſes, and to occaſion ſundry ſhrewd fits either of melancholy, or of madneſſe. Loue ought to be free, and to haue the libertie and power to conſigne, & deliuer ouer al the faculties of the ſoule to the thing beloued. For the *Alcayde*, or Gouernour of a Caſtle, cannot be ſayd to giue vp the Caſtle, when as by force it is taken from him; ſo hee, that ſhall make loue by indirect and euill meanes, it cannot be truly ſaid that hee loueth, but that he is forced (contrary to his better will) and violently carried away with that eager paſsion of luſt and ſenſualitie, which like a head-ſtrong beaſt beares a man on headlong to his deſtruction.

Loue ought to be free.

The conuerſation went forward, Cards are call'd for, and to play they go. Their game was *Primera* at three hands; my mother, ſhe got the money, for my father was willing to loſe to her: and it beginning now to waxe night, they gaue off play, and went out into the garden to take the ayre. In the meane while, the Cloth was layd, and their ſupper brought in, and ſet on the boord: they ſit downe, they eate, and haue ſup't. And hauing giuen order againſt after ſupper, that a Barge ſhould be made ready for them, and tricked vp with freſh Flagges, and greene Boughs: when they came to the water ſide, they tooke Boat, and were no ſooner lanched foorth into the channell, but they might heare from other Veſſels, which went to and fro vpon the riuer, ſundry Conſorts of all ſorts of Muſicke, which made a moſt melodious ſound; being an vſuall and ordinary thing with them, in ſuch a place, and ſuch a time

as that was, being in that ſeaſon of the yeere that was fitteſt for it. In this manner they were brought along, till at laſt they landed; and being now come into the city, they tooke their leaues: euery one betaking himſelfe to his owne home, and his owne bed, ſaue onely my fathers contemplatiue pate, whoſe rouing head was ſo full of fancies, that it could take no reſt. My mother too, (like another *Meliſendra*) full of muſing and thoughtfull loue, ſlept with her bedfellow, her old Conſort; her body beeing priſoner in *Sanſuenna*, and her ſoule a ſlaue in *Paris*; her corps in one place, and her mind in another.

Guzmans fathers craftie condition.

From that day forwards, ſuch a ſtrong knot of friendſhip was there knit betweene them, and continued with ſo much diſcretion and good cunning, (conſidering their ouer-venturouſneſſe, and the danger they might run into) as could poſsibly be preſumed from the quaint wit, and cloſe conueyance of an Eaſterling, dyed into a *Genoueſe*, and dipt in the Vat of Vſury, who knew well inough, how to put out his money to the beſt profit; who could cleare you any account, could liquidate and diuide you to an haire, how much loſſe there was in meaſure, from the waſtings that aroſe from the winnowing, and cleanſing of corne; how many graines loſt in the refining of ſuch a proportion or quantity of Metall; nay, ſhe could tell you to a crumme, how much loſſe there was in an hundred doozen, betweene the bread that was broken with the hand, and that which was cut with the knife. As likewiſe from a woman of that good talent, and thoſe gifts and conditions, which I haue heretofore acquainted you withall, it is inough (if I ſay no more) that ſhe was an *Andaluz*, borne in the towne of *Seuill*, and bred vp in that good ſchoole, where ſhe prooued ſo good a proficient, that ſhee ranne thorow the whole courſe of her Art, and did all her Exerciſe for her Degree of a Whore; which ſhe had laudably taken, by making her appointments betweene the two Quires, and the Naves, or Iſles of the old Church. Now my mother had her fits and flings before this time; this was not her firſt flying out, inſomuch, that not hauing any thing of her owne in her owne hands, that was woorth the keeping, that very day that ſhe compounded with this old Knight for her company, and had driuen her bargaine with him, ſhe ſwore vnto me, that ſhe put ouer in truſt aboue 3000. Ducats, onely in Iewels of gold and Plate, beſides the moueables of her houſe, and her change of apparell for the ſetting foorth of her perſon.

The diſpoſition of Guzmans mother.

The time (we ſee) weares away, and we muſt weare with it: that runnes from vs, and we muſt follow after it. Euery day that opens, diſcouers new things; and with the riſing of the morning, ariſe new alterations. And let vs labour, and do all that we can, we may not be excuſed, nor can the flower of our youth eſcape in its due time the cutting Sythe of Death. For there is not the ſhorteſt moment that paſſes, that doth not ſhorten ſomewhat of our life. And the older ſtill we grow, the neerer we are to our graue. The good old Knight (as formerly you haue heard) was an ancient man, and of a feeble body: my mother, young, faire, and full of wit, and knew ſo well how to prouoke his appetite vpon all occaſions, that his diſorder opened the doore to his death; for the old Lad, by ouer-doing himſelfe, haſtened his owne end. Firſt, his ſtomacke began to faile him, then was he taken with a paine in his head, after that followed a burning Feuer, which after ſome few fits began to leaue him; but though that ceaſed, he had neuer awhit the more mind to his meate, he could eate nothing: ſo by little and little hee conſumed away, and after ſome few puls, he died. My mother not being able to reſtore him to life, though ſhe would euer ſweare vnto him, that ſhe was his life, and he hers: But all that proteſtation proued to be but a lie; for he was buried, yet ſhe ſtill liued.

An old man, vnfit for a young woman.

The old Knight left many kinſmen behind him in the houſe, when he dyed, but none of them of the ſame ſute with my ſelfe, though they colour'd for it;

it; onely my mother and I ſorted well together: as for the reſt, they were *pan de diezmo, cada vno de la ſuya*: like the bread, that the people offer vp to the Prieſt; euery one with a different deuice, or contrary marke, that his loafe may be knowne from others. That good old Gentleman, (God be with him, and haue mercy on his ſoule) had but little comfort in this life; and at the time of his death, they on the one ſide, my mother on the other, while the breath was yet in his body, pull'd the linnen from vnder him, leauing him a ſoule in his body, but not a ſheet in his bed: ſo that the ſacking of *Antwerpe* (which for the cruelty thereof is growne into a Prouerbe) compared with this, was not halfe ſo rigorous, nor halfe ſo inhumane as this: and all (forſooth) for feare of a Sequeſtration to haue the goods depoſited. But my mother, as ſhe churned the milke, ſo ſhe was her owne caruer; ſhe was the Taylor to cut out her owne coat, and the worker of her owne fortune. Shee found a time not long after to put her hands there, where her heart was long before, and fell to fingring of his mony. For ſhe had the chiefeſt of all his goods in her owne keeping vnder locke and key, and was Miſtris of all that was woorth the hauing. But ſeeing her ſelfe in danger, and fearing to be put to her iumpes, ſhee thought it better to ſteale, then to begge; and like a thiefe to make a ſtart out of a buſh, then hereafter to aske an almes for Gods ſake. They were ſo nimble on all hands, that there was ſcarce inough left where-withall to bury him.

The actions of Guzmans *mother.*

Some few dayes were ſcarce ouer-paſt, but many diligences were vſed, for to make theſe his goods appeare. They ſet vp Excommunications at the Churches, and vpon mens doores, to try if that would do any good, and make the purloyners to bring in the goods: but all to ſmall purpoſe; for hee that ſteales, ſeldome returnes to make reſtitution. But my mother made her excuſe, ſaying; That the Knight (God be with him) would ſtill tell her, when he came to viſit his moneys, and ran ouer his Coffers and his Cabinets, or had brought any thing into the houſe; This is thine, (ſweet heart) it is all for thee. So the Lawyers were of opinion, that with this ſhe might very well ſatisfie her conſcience. Beſides, they affirmed, that it was a due debt, and properly belonged vnto her; for though ſhe gain'd it ill, yet it was not receiued ill. And howbeit the Act were not lawfull, yet the Compact was iuſtifiable. It was not lawfull for her to play the whore, yet might ſhee by Law haue whatſoeuer was promiſed her for the vſe of her body.

In this mans death, I found that to be verified, which I had often heard before; That rich men dye of hunger, poore men of ſurfets, and thoſe which haue no Heyres, and enioy the goods of the Church, of cold: So that this man may ſerue herein for an Example. For whileſt he was yet liuing, they left him not ſo much as a ſhirt, ſaue only that which he wore on his backe, which of courteſie they were content he ſhould carry out of the world with him. Rich men, for feare they ſhould be ſicke with eating too much, to auoyd hurt, hurt themſelues; ſince by eating by ounces, and drinking by thimble-fuls, they liue by drams; dying rather out of hunger, then their diſeaſe. Poore men, in that they are poore, euery man takes pitie of them; one ſends, another brings to them, & all of all ſorts, and from all parts repaire vnto them, to giue them reliefe, eſpecially when they are in that extremity. And when they find themſelues leane and hunger-ſtaru'd, they make no good choyce of their feeding, for want of ſome diſcreet bodie that ſhould adminiſter vnto them, and order them in their dyet: whereupon they eate ſo much, and glut themſelues ſo full, that they cannot digeſt their meat for want of naturall heat, and ſo choaking themſelues with ouer-gorging their pannels, they meerely die ſurfeited.

Rich men dye of hunger.

Poore men dye with ouer-eating themſelues.

The like happeneth likewiſe in your Hoſpitals, where ſome deuout fooles, tender-hearted women, who go thither to viſit them out of meere deuotion, ſtuffe their pockets and their ſleeues full of banquetting-ſtuffe to carry along with

with them, ſending their ſeruants laden with baskets of *regalo's*, and delicate choice Dainties. And thinking therein to do an almes-deed, out of their charity, they kill them for Gods-ſake. In my opinion, this ought not to be ſuffered, but this coſt ſhould rather be beſtowed vpon the ſickneſſe, then the ſick, and be put into their Keepers hands, that are ſworne to haue a due care of them: for by that meanes, (hauing the counſell of ſome learned Phyſician) theſe things ſhall be better diſtributed in their proper place, and make more for their good: And to doe otherwiſe, may proue hurtfull and dangerous. And in this their ill-diſpenſed charity, not weighing the good, nor the hurt; the ſeaſon, nor the ſickneſſe; whether it be fitting, or not fitting, they cramme their crawes, like ſo many Capons in a Coope, till they can ſwallow no more, and ſo die of the throttle. Hencefoorth therefore, let it be ordained, that ſuch things as theſe, be giuen to thoſe which miniſter vnto them, who know better how to diſpoſe of them, or let it be giuen in money, for to ſupply other their greater wants and neceſsities.

A remo, ad clauum & gubernaculum Nauis: *A Metaphor from Galley-ſlaues.*

O what a gentle *diſparate*, what a pretty abſurdity is this of mine, yet well grounded in Diuinity? how am I leapt from the Oare to the Helme? What a Saint *Iohn* the Euangeliſt am I become on the ſudden, that I reade you ſuch a Lecture? The Ouen grew hot, my zeale was kindled, and ſo theſe good flaſhes flew foorth; you may the better pardon this fault in me, becauſe I haue made you ſome amends in being ſo ſhort. As it came in my fingers, I tooke it along with me; it came in my way, and I could not let it ſlippe: ſo ſhall I doe hereafter, as often as occaſion is offered. And looke not thou on him that ſayes it, but to that which is ſaid vnto thee. For if thou be clad in a neat Suit of clothes, and that they ſit well vpon thee, it is not materiall, whether thy Taylour were crooke-back't, or no: that is not a thing to be thought on. And thus much by way of preuention, that thou mayeſt either leaue mee to my ſelfe, or arme thy ſelfe with patience. I wot well, that it is impoſsible to bee well receiued of all; for there is not that Veſſell in the world, that can meaſure mens taſtes; nor that Balance, that can equall their likings, or giue an euen poyze to ſuch vneuen humours. Euery one is in loue with his owne: and thinking his owne iudgement to be the beſt, is thereby the more deceiued: For the moſt of men haue it, for the moſt part, moſt depraued.

Guzman *had two fathers, by vertue of his mother.*

But I returne to my firſt ſtation, whence I haue digreſſed: for my mother lookes for me, now being the widow of him that firſt poſſeſſed her; and dearely beloued, and wonderfully much made of by this ſecond Owner. In this change and alteration of things, betweene theſe and thoſe other nuptials, I was betweene three and foure yeeres old: and by the reckenings and rules of your feminine knowledge, I had two fathers: for my mother was ſo well learned in her Art, that ſhe knew very well how to father me on them both. She had attained to the knowedge of working impoſsibilities, as plainely was to be ſeene, ſince ſhe had the cunning to ſerue two Maſters, and to pleaſe two husbands; to both of them giuing good contentment. Both of them did acknowledge me to be their ſonne; the one ſayd, I was his; ſo did the other. And when the Knight was alone by himſelfe, my mother would tell him, that I was as like him, as if I had beene ſpit out[a] of his mouth; and that two Egges were not liker one another, then I was like him. When againe, ſhee talked with my father, ſhe would tell him, that I was his *alter ego*, that he and I were one, and ſo would haue ſeemed, if our heads had beene cut off, and layd in a Charger: and that I was himſelfe, made leſſe; and did ſo truly reſemble him, as if my head had ſtood vpon his ſhoulders. But I wonder a God, in this reſemblance of mine, (which a blind man might diſcerne at the firſt bluſh) that the myſtery thereof was not diſcouered; that they found not out her craft, and ſearched not out the ſecret of this her deceit. But what with the blindneſſe where-withall they lou'd her, and the confidence which each of them had,

[a] *As they ſay,* el gato es eſtornudo del leon, *as like him, as if he had beene ſpit out of his mouth, or ſneezed out of his noſe; for his face, eyes, and muſtacho's.*

had, it was not perceiued, nor any the leaſt ſuſpition made thereof And ſo both their beliefes were good, and both made exceeding much of me: the difference onely was, that in the time the good old man liu'd, hee was my true father in publicke, and the ſtranger in ſecret. And ſo my mother certified me afterwards, making large relations of theſe things vnto me.

And therefore I proteſt, howſoeuer men may talke, and ſeeke to ſlander me, that it doth no whit preiudice me; I heard it from her owne mouth, and barely relate vnto you what ſhe told me. For it were great indiſcretion and vnaduiſedneſſe in me, to affirme, which of theſe two did beget mee, or whether I were the ſonne of a third. Let her excuſe me in this, who brought me foorth: for it ill becommeth any man to lye; much leſſe to write an vntruth: nor would I that men ſhould ſay; that I maintaine Paradoxes. But that woman, that profeſſes to loue two, deceiueth both the one and the other, and there is no truſt to be had to her. This is to be vnderſtood of a ſingle woman; for the rule in thoſe that are married is otherwiſe. It is an old ſaying, That two is one; one, none; and three, Roguery. For a woman, making no reckoning of her husband, (and this is true which I ſpeake) he being alone, is none; and he, with another, makes one; and with thoſe other two, which are three in the whole, make vp iuſt as much, as thoſe two to a ſingle-woman. So that according to their reaſon, the reckoning is already made. But be it as it may be, and grant that this Eaſterling, this Iew, or this Moore be my father; for ſince that they haue ſaid it, and euery one doth auerre it to be true, it is not fit that I ſhould appeale, all parties being agreed. I call my ſelfe his ſonne, and ſo I take my ſelfe to be: ſince that from that [a] Mellon-bed I was made legitimate by the holy right of Matrimony. And it is much better for me this way, then that people ſhould ſay, that I am ill borne, and the ſonne of no man.

My father did loue vs both with that true loue, as his actions ſhall ſufficiently declare. For by the force of this his loue, he did tread vnder-foot the idolatry of that, which men ſtyle by the name of popular Voyce, and common Opinion. For they knew no other name that ſhe had, ſaue the [b] *Commendadora*; and to that would ſhe anſwere, as if ſhe had had ſome *Commendum* conferred vpon her. But he not regarding any of theſe things, nor making any reckoning of the one or the other, ſetting as light by them, as the leaſt hayre of his head, kept company with her, and in the end tooke her to wife. I would haue thee likewiſe to vnderſtand, that he did not enter vpon this buſineſſe, *à humo de pajas*, ſuddenly and vnaduiſedly, without hauing firſt well bethought himſelfe of what he did. Euery man knowes his owne eſtate beſt; And a foole vnderſtands more in his owne, then a wiſe man in another mans houſe.

In this *Intermedium*, albeit this his *Quinta* or Garden-houſe, which hee had purchaſed, was a place of pleaſure and delight, yet it was his vndoing, it was his ouerthrow: The profit little, and loſſe much; the coſt great, as well for the keeping of it neat and handſome, as for the feaſtings and banquetings which were very frequent. Such kind of delicacies as theſe, and ſuch places for recreations, are onely fit for thoſe, that haue other large poſſeſsions, good ſure Lands, great and certaine Rents, which may quit the coſt, and make the loade ſeeme the lighter. But for thoſe that are not well lin'd, that haue not a ſtrong and able purſe, and that haue not the world at will, theſe niceties, are that Moth that eateth on, till it fretteth out and conſumeth the heart: it is that Worme in Wood; that Magot in the Nut, which turnes all into duſt and rottennеſſe: it is Hemlocke in a cup of Ambar; and poyſon in a golden Veſſell.

And thus much by the way concerning that point; it is but a touch; and now we go on. What with ſuites in Law, what with making loue to my mother, and other expences, one charge drawing on another, a great part of my

[a] *Agreeing with that phraſe which we vſe to little children, when we tell them they were borne in their mothers Parſly-bed.*

[b] *By reaſon the old Knight held ſome Church-liuing in* Commendum.

For poore men to keepe places for pleaſure, is their ruine.

fathers ſtate was conſumed, all was almoſt gone, he was vpon the point of breaking, and ready to turne (a) Bankerupt, as he had often done before; ſo that it would haue beene no ſtrange or new thing vnto him.

My Mother was a ſtorer, a thrifty Wench, one that could hold her owne; ſhe was no waſter, but lay ſtill on the ſauing hand: what with that which ſhe gained in her youth-fuller dayes, and what ſhe had ſcraped vp in the Knights life-time, as likewiſe at his death, amounted almoſt to ten thouſand Ducats, this vvas her Dowry, and ſo much had he with her.

This money did ſomewhat refreſh his drooping eſtate, it made him hold vp his head againe, who before vvas vpon fainting, and ready to ſwoune: it was vnto him like a piece of Weeke or Cotton in a Lampe, dipt in Oyle; hee began to giue light a-freſh; he ſpent brauely, got him a Caroche, and a *Silla de manos*, a little chaire to carry vvith hands, borne with girthes vpon mens ſhoulders, as well for eaſe, as ſtate. Not ſo much for any longing that my mother had thereunto, as for his owne oſtentation and glory, that the world might not take notice of the weakeneſſe of his Eſtate, or that he was going downe the winde. In this kinde of faſhion did he liue to vphold his credit, and rubb'd out as vvell as he might vvith his meanes; but his gaines did not equal his expences. There was but one to get, & many to ſpend; but one paire of hands, and a great many mouthes. The Times vvere hard; the yeeres deare; dealings, ſmall and bad; little, or no Trading. What vvas well gotten, is waſted and gone; and vvhat was ill gotten, hath not onely conſumed it ſelfe, but his owner too. So that at laſt, all was brought to nothing: Sinne, brought it in; and Sinne (on my conſcience) ſent it packing. For of all that vvas left, nothing appeared. The light was now quite out, and my father beeing taken with a grieuous ſickneſſe, was arreſted by Death within fiue dayes after: and ſo ſhut vp his ſhop-windowes, and departed this world.

Now, for that I was a child, and of ſmall vnderſtanding, I did not feele the want of a Father, nor found any great miſſe of him when he dyed, though I was then at that time a doozen yeere old, and better. And notwithſtanding that we grew poore, the houſe was ſtill well furniſhed with houſhold-ſtuffe, whereof we tooke now a piece, and then a piece, and ſold it away by parcels for to buy vs bread, and wherewith to eate. But the wealth of thoſe, that haue beene rich, hath this property, that the remainder of their eſtate is alwayes more, then the beſt eſtate of thoſe that be poore; & dayly more & more they leaue ſome prints, which diſcouer, like the ruines of *Rome*, what it was.

My mother grieued much, for that ſhe had loſt a good and honeſt Husband, and found her ſelfe, not onely robbed of him, but alſo of her wealth, and growne now ſo aged, that ſhe was ſuper-annuated for any more Suitors, ſo that ſhe could not help her ſelfe with her good parts; nor recouer her former credit. And albeit her beauty was not disfigured, yet her yeeres had ſomewhat defaced it: And it grieued her exceedingly, that hauing beene ſo many times ſued vnto by many, that ſhe was not now in caſe to be courted: And eſpecially of ſome ſuch perſon, whoſe fethers ſhe might haue pull'd from him; for otherwiſe, neither would ſhe haue yeelded vnto him, nor I haue permitted it. Euen in this alſo was I vnhappy, ſince that in-come which my Mother got (as Cats doe) by her tayle, did then ceaſe, when I had moſt need of it. I ſaid amiſſe, when I ſaid it ceaſed: For ſhe was yet fit for action; and would (when ſhe was ſo diſpoſed) put on her dreſsings, and weare her head attire, as being little more then forty yeeres old. I haue knowne ſince ſome old Maids (puſſocks in compariſon of her) of greater yeeres, and leſſe handſomneſſe, that would call themſelues by the name of young Girles, and little pretty Maidens, and ſweare (if you would beleeue them when they lye) that they came but yeſterday out of their ſwaddling cloathes: And although my Mother did not ſhew ſo faire for it, ſhe thought her penny good ſiluer, and would not

(a) Eſtallido: *Is the noiſe which a thing makes whē it cleaues, or rends in ſunder.* Metaphoricè. *A Bankerout.*

How Guzmans *Mother got her wealth which his father had with her.*

Ill gotten goods what became of them?

The death of Guzmans *Father.*

The property of the wealth of rich men reduced to pouerty.

not giue her arme for the wringing, or her head for the washing. And shee would rather die and starue for hunger, then bate an Ace of her former height, or faile one quilate in the touch and fineneſſe of her punctualitie.

You now see me heere left without a father, either the one or the other, our goods wasted, and that which is worst of all, bearing a high sayle, liuing at a great rate, without any person in it to gaine a penny, to maintaine this port. On my fathers side, (a) *Cid* did not goe beyond me, he was no better a man than my selfe; for my possession crossed and diuided that Lordship. On my mothers side, I was as well descended; my great grand-fathers being men of great wealth, and of good esteeme in their Country. I had more grafts, then the [b] *Cigarrales* of *Toledo*, (for by that name are those Gardens of pleasure thereabouts called) as I learned afterwards. I tell you (as a thing publiquely knowne to all the world) that my mother was her mothers owne daughter, and trode iust in her steps; she set her Samplar before her, that she might draw out some good worke from thence, so that shee went along in the very same path that she did, saue only in that of their child-bearing; for my grand-mother brought forth a daughter for her comfort, and my father begot a sonne for my mothers ruine. If my Mother brought two into the net, my Grand-mother brought two doozen, and made them like Chickens (if the world speakes truth) to eate together in one pot-sheard, and to sleepe in one Hen-roost, and to be pen'd vp in one Coope, without pecking one at another, or driuen to hood them, as they doe Hawkes.

With this daughter of hers, (I meane my Mother) she insnared a hundred seuerall persons, vowing and protesting to euery supposed father, that my Mother was his child, and so to all, that she was like them all: To such a one, in her eye; to another, in her mouth; to a third, in most of the parts and lineament of her body: nay, to colour the busines the better, she would go a little farther, in counterfetting markes and moles in the face, and other spots in other parts to that purpose; not wanting to tell some, that she did spit like them, and that she had it naturally from them. She had this (as she was excellent in many) cunning tricke with her, that when any of her sweet-hearts were present with her, she would call her after his Sir-name. And if two, or more were there at the same time, she call'd her barely by her owne name, without any addition. Her proper name was *Marcella*, which was burnished and furbished ouer with the title of *Don* set ouer the head of it; for as she was called *Donna Marcella*; so had she her *Don* or *Cauallero* for her seruant. For *Donna*, without a *Don*, are lesse compatible, and lesse comely, then a house without a bed; a Mill, without a Wheele; or a body, without a shadow. As for her sir-names, being they were things that meerely depended vpon her mothers owne free choise and election; and for that she was vncertaine thereof, because she could not well tell who was the true father to her daughter: I must therefore giue you to know, that she did bolster her vp, and vnder-prop her, with the best titulary names she could deuise, throwing more noble houses vpon her, then a King of *Armes* could conferre with all his farre-fetcht Pedigrees. Which to repeat vnto you, were to reckon vp a Bead-roll of Genealogies, as long as any Letany, that is solemnly sung at diuine seruice.

The *Guzmans* were those, vnto whom she most inclined, (for she had a great liking to that name) and my Mother told me in secret, that in her opinion, which was no more then her owne conscience did tell her: in discharge whereof, she did verily beleeue, and was fully perswaded (by some likely incounters, probable ghesses, and other circumstances of time and place iumping and concurring together) that she was some by-blow of a *Cauallero*, that was neere of kinne to the Dukes of *Medina Sidonia*. My Grandmother was a wise woman, a crafty old Dame, and neuer wanted to her dying day, but had

a Cid, *was the braueſt & valianteſt Souldier in his time, and had conquered fiue Kings of the Moores, and made them pay tribute.* Guzmans *linage.*

(b) *In* Toledo, *they tearme* Gigarrales, *certaine poſſeſsions, not farre from* Toledo, *which are little choiſe garden-plots, full of Fountaines, as alſo Fruit trees, Vines, Oliues, and Figges, with a little houſe of pleaſure to entertaine the Owner. But ſome of your* Cigarrales *are goodly things of great both value, and recreation; but of as much expence, as profit. Father* Guadix *ſayes, that it is an Arabique word; and ſignifies as much as a little Houſe.*

A notable vanity.

had wherewithall to ſpend freely, nor was it any wonder; for when it began to wax night with her, and that it was time for her to ſhut vp her ſhop, then did my Mothers dawning of the day begin to appeare, and ſhe had her at her elbow, to continue the trade for her, and the firſt bargaine that ſhe droue, was worth to her better then 4000. ducats, which ſhee had of a rich Merchant, (with whom ſhe held trafficke, and exchanged wares) that was newly come from *Peru*, who did deliuer her the money by basket-fuls, which was good and quick payment. She neuer made bad voyage, ſhe ſtill bore vp, liu'd in plenty, and would not loſe a iot of what was her due. No Chriſtian could carry away her right from her; nor would ſhe giue any firſt fruits to the Diuell.

Now, if we had had the like good lucke, our miſery might haue beene the leſſe: Or if, as I was the onely ſonne of my Mother, it had been my good hap to haue had a Siſter, to haue ſeru'd as a prop to my Mother, as a Staffe to her old Age, as a Pillar to our Pouerty, and as a Port to our often ſhipwracks, we would haue bid a figge in Fortunes teeth.

Seuill, *and its condition.*

Seuill ſtood very fitly and commodiouſly ſeated for point of profit, or for any kinde of incroaching-getting, and as much is brought thither to be ſold, as there is to be bought. For there ſhall you meete with Merchants that will deale with you in all commodities, no wares come amiſſe. It is *Patria communis*, and a free-common for all commers; it is a paſture, without incloſure; a Gordian Knot, an open field, a Globe without end, a mother of Orphans, and a ſhelter for Sinners; where all cry out of want, and yet no man wants. Or (ſince not this) that I had been bred vp in Court, which is the Sea, that ſwallowes all; the point, wherein all lines meet, and the very center, wherevnto all other parts haue recourſe: ſure my abilities would not haue beene leſſe then other mens; and as I ſhould haue wanted no good parts, ſo ſhould I not haue lackt entertainment. I ſhould haue lighted on ſome good Office or other, got to be in Commiſsion, and other the like places of profit and honour, wherein I ſhould haue gone as farre as another, and haue found as much fauour, had my purſe been as good: For that will hold any thing faſt, and is the onely thing to keepe a man in. And had the worſt come to the worſt, yet could vve not haue wanted meat and drinke, but ſhould haue far'd like Kings. For he that ſhall haue a good piece of land, or the like pledge, either to impawne, or to ſell, ſhall euer haue a chapman ready at hand, either to buy it out-right, or to lend ſo much money vpon it, as to ſerue a mans preſent occaſions. But I was an vnfortunate man, (as you haue already heard) and ſtood alone by my ſelfe, vvithout any tree by me, either to ſhadow, or to ſhelter me. I had many troubles come vpon me, the burthen was heauy, my ſtrength weake, my debt great, and my meanes ſmall. See then and conſider whether it were fit or no, that ſuch a young Youth as I, that began to crowe before I was ſcarce out of the ſhell, and to write man ſo ſoone, hauing ſuch honeſt parts in me, and good indowments, ſhould not bee made ſome reckoning off? The beſt help that I had, was to try my fortune, by leauing my Mother, and my Country, to ſee if I could mend my miſerable Eſtate. I did ſo, and becauſe I would not bee knowne, I vvould not make vſe of my Fathers name: but that of *Guzman*, which I tooke from my Mother, and of *Alfarache*, vvhich was the place of my inheritance, as alſo of my beeing. With this reſolution, I went abroad to ſee the World, trauelling from place to place, re-commending my ſelfe to God, and well-diſpoſed people, in whom I had put my truſt.

Whence Guzman de Alfarache *had his name.*

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

How Guzman *departed from his Mothers houſe vpon a Friday towards the Euening, diſcouering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hoſteſſe, recounting many notable examples of ſome Rules of ill gouernment.*

I Was a fat plumpe Lad, well fed, and cockerd vp, bred in *Seuill*, neuer checkt, chid, nor corrected by my Father: My Mother (as you haue heard) a Widdow-woman, my ſelfe cram'd with Collops of Bacon, your fineſt Bread, and your daintieſt Creame; your ſops of Honey ſteep'd in Roſe-water, more lookt on and adored, then a Merchant of *Toledo*, or at leaſt as good a man as he, it grieued me very much (beſides that the loue of a mans Country is ſweet and deare vnto him) to forgoe thus my houſe, my kinsfolke and my friends. But being forced thereunto, I could not auoid it. The deſire that I had to ſee the world, and to goe into *Italy* to take acquaintance of my Noble Kindred and Alliance, did much quicken and put life into me.

The delicacie wherein Guzman *liued.*

I ſet forth, vvhich I ought not to haue done (I may be bold to ſay it) late, and vnluckily. And thinking to meet with ſome rich remedy, I loſt all that little that I had. That hapned vnto me, which befell the Dogge in the Fable with the ſhadow of his piece of fleſh in the water.

Guzman departs from Seuill to ſee the world; and what hapned vnto him the firſt night.

I had ſcarce gone out of the Citie gate, when (without being able to make reſiſtance) two great Riuers (like an ouer-flowing *Nilus*) did breake out from forth mine eyes, watring my face in great aboundance, till it was bathed all ouer with teares. What vvith this, and the nights comming on (for it grew darke) I could not diſcerne any light of heauen; nor perceiue ſo much as a hands-breadth of earth as I went along. When I came to *San Lazaro*, (which is but a little way off from the Citie, I ſate me downe there vpon the ſtayres or ſteps, by which we goe vp to that holy Hermitage. There I made a new muſter of my life, ſuruay'd it ouer and ouer; and diſcourſed with my ſelfe thereupon. I was about to goe backe againe, for that I came forth ill prouided, worſe aduiſed, and poorely furniſht with money for ſo long a Voyage, hauing ſcarce ſufficient to ſerue my turne for a farre ſhorter iourney. And amongſt other my ſo many misfortunes, (vvhich vvhen they once beginne, come by cluſters, hanging like Cherries; one at the tayle of another) it was Friday night; and withall, ſomewhat darke. I had neither ſupt, nor had any beuer that afternoone. Had I gone out of the Citie vpon a fleſh day, although I had beene borne blind, my noſe would haue helped mee to ſmell out ſome one Cookes ſhoppe or other, where I might haue bought a penny Paſty, wherewithall to entertaine my ſtomake, and to dry vp my teares, and ſo my ſorrow would haue beene the leſſe.

Misfortunes ſeldome come alone.

Then I began to perceiue, how much more ſenſible a man is of the good he loſeth then when he inioyed it; and what difference there is betweene the hungry belly, and the full-fed paunch. All troubles paſſe the better with bread: Where good feeding fayleth, there no good followeth; no euill which aboundeth not; no pleaſure that indureth, nor content to comfort vs. All fret and chafe, and know not why, nor wherefore. No man is in fault; and yet they lay it one vpon another; all runne vpon the haunt, feigning ſtrange *Chimera's* in their heads; all is then nothing but gouernment; all is Philoſophy. I had a great minde to my ſupper, but the diuell a bit of any thing that I could get to put to my mouth, ſaue a little freſh water that ran from a fountaine that was there hard by. I knew not what to doe with my ſelfe, nor how

He that hath not wherewithall to eate, hath ſtore of ſorrowes.

to caſt about, to bring my ſelf into ſome one Hauen or other. That vvhich did hearten me one vvay, did diſcourage me another. I found my ſelfe betwixt feares and hopes; a ſteepe downe-fall before mine eyes, and rauening Wolues ready to deuoure me at my backe. My thoughts began as faſt to vvauer, as my feet did to vvander: at length I was vvilling to put my ſelfe into Gods hands. I entred into a Church, I powr'd foorth a ſhort prayer, but vvhether deuout enough or no, I know not. Nor would they ſuffer me to dwell any longer on my Orizons; for the hower was come that they vvere to rid the Church, and to ſhut vp the doores.

The night was now ſhut vp, and with it my imaginations, but not the teares, that trickled from mine eyes: In this melancholy humour I fell at laſt aſleepe vpon a ſeate without in the Church-porch. I know not what ſhould be the reaſon of it, vnleſſe peraduenture, that ſleepe crackes cares, and breaks melancholy in twaine. As that *Mountaneſe* gaue vs to vnderſtand, who going to bury his Wife, went bare-foot, and bare-legg'd; his Iacket with its inſide outward; and ſo in the reſt, all was Kim-kam, I know not how. In that mountainous Country the houſes ſtand apart, and ſome of them very farre from the Church. And paſsing by a Tauerne, he perceiued white-Wine was there to be ſold: whereupon he made as if he had ſome other neceſſary buſineſſe to do, and ſayd vnto them; On a Gods name, keepe on afore, my maſters, with this vnfortunate Coarſe, for I ſhall ouer-take you in a trice: So hee ſlunke backe, and went into the Tauerne; where taking cuppe after cuppe, he ſoop't ſo long, till he was ſtarke drunke, and there fell aſleepe. Now when thoſe of his company came from the Buriall, and found him ſtretcht out vpon the floore, they called alowd vnto him; he after awhile being come againe to himſelfe, looking ſomewhat heauily vpon them, ſayd; Now a pockes of all ill lucke: pardon mee, (my maſters) I pray, pardon mee; for, I ſweare vnto you, that there is not any thing in the world, that cauſeth more thirſt, or more ſleepe, then ſorrow. It was iuſt euen ſo with me; for it vvas now Saturday morning, and the Sunne was ſome two houres high, vvhen I began to bethinke my ſelfe vvhat I had beene doing; nor ſhould I haue vvak't ſo ſoone, if the Timbrels, and the Songs, and the Dancings of certaine Women, which came thither that day to keepe their Wake, and to feaſt, and be merry, vvith their dubbing, and their bawling, had not rowz'd me vp from ſleepe. I got me vp, (though ſomewhat of the lateſt) hungry, and drowſie, vvithout knowing for a vvhile vvhere I vvas; ſo that me thought I vvas ſtill as it vvere in a dreame. But when at laſt I vvas fully awake, and found all vvas true that I or ſaw, or heard, I ſaid to my ſelfe; *Echada eſta la ſuerte*, the Dye is throwne, God ſend me good lucke. And vvith this reſolution, I vvent forward on my iourney; but the diuell a whit did I know vvhither I did go, nor indeed did I much ſtand vpon it; for all vvas one to me. At laſt, I tooke that vvay, which offered it ſelfe faireſt to mine eye; let it lead vvhither it vvould, I did not care. Which did then put me in mind of thoſe ill-gouerned both houſes and Common-wealths, vvhere the feet performe the heads office. Where reaſon and vnderſtanding doe not diſpatch buſineſſes; vvhere they haue not the command, it is to melt a mans gold, (come of it vvhat may come) and afterwards to adore a calfe. My feet carried me along; I followed as faſt after them; come good, or come ill; ouer hill and dale trudge I. That happening vnto mee, vvhich befell a fooliſh Phyſician in *Mancha*; vvho had no learning in the vvorld, neuer ſtudied any Phyſicall Author; but had gotten together (which he carried along with him) a great number of Receipts; ſome for Syrrupes, and ſome for Purges, vvhich were diſtributed into ſeuerall, either Boxes, or Vyols.

The conceit of a Mountaneſe.

What houſes and Common-wealths are ill gouerned.

A tale of an ignorant Phiſician.

Now this cunning Leech, vvhen he viſited any ſicke-body, (and look't to be vvell payed for his paines, for the good he ſhould do him) he vvould thruſt his

his hand into his Satchell, (vvhich he ſtill bare about vvith him for thoſe purpoſes) and then vvould he take foorth one of his *recipe's*, ſaying firſt to himſelfe, God diſpoſe it to good. And ſo he gaue the Patient that vvhich came firſt to hand, vvithout any more ado; vvorke how it vvould vvorke, that was all one to him; he would put that ſtill to the venture. In letting of blood, he kept no account either for the Veine, or the quantitie; but would cry, either a little more, or a little leſſe, as he chanced to blurt the vvord at all aduenture out of his mouth, caſting himſelfe vpon Fortune, ruſhing thorow thicke and thinne; like him that careleſly runnes thorow a Corne-field, where ſome Eares are trod vnder-foot, and ſome ſcape without harme; more by chance, then good cunning. I might then haue ſaid to my ſelfe, as did hee, God diſpoſe it to good; for I did not know vvhat courſe I ran; I vvas ignorant of my vvay, nor could I tell, (if my life ſhould haue lyen vpon it) whither I was bound.

But becauſe his diuine Maieſtie ſendeth troubles, according to his owne good will and pleaſure, and for ſuch ends, as are beſt knowne to himſelfe, they turne all to our greater good, if we can haue the grace to make true vſe of them. They began now to come faſt vpon me, and followed me at an inch, not allowing me one moment of content, nor affoording mee ſo much as a breathing-time from my cares, all the vvhile that I was abroad in my trauels: ſo that they neuer left, whither-ſoeuer I vvent. But theſe vvere not thoſe, that vvere ſent me of God; but onely thoſe vvhich my ſelfe vvent ſeeking after. And there is a great deale of difference betweene the one, and the other: for thoſe that come from the hand of God, he knowes how to free vs from them; and ſuch as theſe, are Myries of moſt pure gold, moſt precious Iewels, couered vvith a little Sward, or light Turfe of earth, vvhich vvith a little labour may be diſcouered and found. But thoſe, which men draw vpon themſelues by their vices and ſenſuall delights, are gilded Pilles, which deceiuing the ſight vvith a falſe ſhow of a ſauourie taſte, put the body out of order, if not vtterly ouerthrow it. They are greene fields, full of venimous Vipers; ſtones (at the firſt ſight) of great eſteeme, but vnderneath are full of Scorpions: and laſtly, an eternall death, vvhich deludeth vs with a ſhort life.

Afflictions are ſent vs by God for our good.

Troubles ſent from God, are Iewels:

But drawne on by our ſelues, are torments vnto vs.

This day hauing vvearied out my ſelfe with going onely but two little Leagues, (vvhich vvere the firſt that euer I vvent) it ſeemed vnto me, that I had arriued at the *Antipodes*, and like another famous *Columbus*, that I had diſcouered a new World. Well, I came at length to an Inne, full of ſweate and duſt; my feet ſurbated, my ſelfe ſad, and aboue all, with my Mill in very good ſtate to grind, my teeth ſharpe, and my ſtomacke faint. It vvas about Noone, I ask't vvhat we might haue to dinner: they told me, That they had nothing but egges; it had not beene amiſſe if they had beene egges: for either vvhether the roguiſh Hoſteſſe, through too much heat, clocking ouer them, or that the Foxe had kill'd the Hen, ſome vvere growne addle, others ready to hatch; and that ſhe might not loſe by them, ſhee had put them in a boxe, and had mingled them with other egges that were good. But ſhee did not deale ſo ill with me, God reward her according to her vſage of me: ſhee ſaw I was a young Lad, ruddy-cheek't, full-fac't, and plumpe withall; that I was a nouice in the world, and look't like a good honeſt ſimple Youth, and that any thing would ſerue me well inough: vpon this ſhe ask't me; My pretty child, whence are you? I told her, I was of *Seuill*: vvith that, ſhe came neerer vnto me, and giuing me a chocke vnder the chin, ſhe ſaid vnto me; Now you little wanton foole, vvhither wander you? O good God, how did her ſtinking breath annoy me! with her very touching of me, me thought I had drawne old-age vpon me, the attraction was ſo ſenſible to my ſeeming. This made me imagine, that the vtmoſt of euils had now lighted vpon me, in meeting vvith ſuch a filthy vnſauoury Slut. And if my ſtomacke had beene full

The roguery of an Hoſteſſe.

at

at that time, as it was empty, I ſhould haue ſpued out all within me; for my ſtomacke then roſe vp to my mouth, and my guts had almoſt kiſt my lippes. I told her, that I was going to the Court, and vviſht her to giue me ſomwhat for my dinner. Then ſhe made me ſit downe vpon a lame Bench, and on the top of a little blocke, ſhe ſpred a Diſh-clout before me, iuſt for all the world, like vnto the Maulkins vvherewith ſhe ſwept her Ouen; and this (forſooth) was my Table-cloth: my Salt-ſellar, was the foot of an old broken Pitcher, or ſome piece of a pot-ſheard, ſuch as ſhe ſets full of water, to make her Poultry drinke: and halfe a Loafe of bread, that was blacker then her Napery. This preparation made, ſhe preſently powr'd me foorth vpon a plate a Froize of egges, which might more truly haue beene tearmed a Plaiſter of egges: they, the bread, the Iarre, the water, the Salt-ſellar, the ſalt, the linnen, and the Hoſteſſe, were all one; ſo well did they ſuit together. I knew my ſelfe to be a young traueller, and therefore held it diſcretion to make no reply, but to take all patiently; my tongue vvas tyed, my mouth muzzled, my ſtomacke empty, my guts ſhrunke, and clung ſo cloſe together, as if they had beene newly milched. I was as ſharpe ſet vpon my Froize, as a Hog is after Akornes, and ſlopt vp my egges, as a Sow do's Waſh, I was ſo eager vpon the buſineſſe. I made no bones of it, all went cleane vp together without any great chewing, howbeit, to ſpeake the truth, I felt the tender bones of thoſe vntimely Chickens to crackle betweene my teeth, that they made my gummes to tickle againe. I muſt tel you truly, that me thought, (beſides the ill-fauouredneſs of the taſte, vvhich was not like that of other egges, which I vs'd to eate at home in my mothers houſe) this was but a coorſe kind of vſage; and ſuch as I had not here-tofore beene acquainted with. But I did let that conceit paſſe by, and drown'd the imagination thereof in my hunger and wearineſſe; conceiting with my ſelfe, that the diſtance of place, or difference of the Climate, might be the cauſe thereof, and that all egges were not of one ſauour, nor of one quality. In concluſion, I digeſted all things ſo well, that I tooke it for a token of good lucke. For it is as proper to him that is hungry, not to ſtand vpon Sauces, and your fine reliſhes; as to him that is in want, to ſtep out into the high way, and to take a purſe. No booty comes amiſſe to him that is in need. Beg, ſteale, or any thing, rather then ſtarue.

He that is truly hungry, will not flicke to eate any thing.

I made light of it, my dinner was ſhort, and as quickly diſpatch't, and took in good part this my firſt courſe, though it could not well be courſer. Vpon my bread I dwelt ſomewhat longer; I fell to that a little more leyſurely, pawſing now and then betwixt euery bit; for it being likewiſe very bad, I was forced to take longer time; one morſell making way for another, that it might the more orderly deſcend downe into my ſtomacke. I began with the cruſt, and ended in the crumme, which was as tough as Whit-lether, and as dry as a Paſte-boord. But whatſoeuer it were, were it better or worſe, I deuoured euery iot of it; nor did leaue out of courteſie, the leaſt crumme thereof for the Ants to feed vpon, no more then if it had beene little, and good. That happening vnto me, which doth befall good feeders, when they fall cloſe to a diſh of fruit; who picking out firſt the beſt and the ripeſt, do (as in the eating of Cherries) eate vp the greeneſt and worſt laſt, without once thinking of thoſe that were gone before. Then did I eat apace, one bit (as they ſay) driuing down another, till I had made an end of halfe a Loafe: vvhich, if it had beene good, or but any thing reaſonable, or that it had but pleaſed my eye, (for it was but poore browne-bread) I would haue taken in a greater crop, and haue filled vp my pannell, with a whole Loafe of at leaſt three pound weight. The yeere was barren by reaſon of the great droughts; and in ſuch times as thoſe, *Seuill* was wont to ſuffer much ſcarcitie; for euen in their better, and more plentifull yeeres, they haue had much ado to rub out: what hope can there then be, when corne is ſcant with them?

But

But it is not fit, that I ſhould inlarge my ſelfe in this ſubiect, nor open the myſterie thereof vnto you, by giuing you a reaſon for it. I am a ſonne of that Citie, a Towne-borne child: I will therefore hold my peace; for all the whole World is one and the ſame, here and there, and euery where, all alike. For no man buyes an [a] Office for any other end and purpoſe, but for his profit, be it publike, or be it priuate; they will grate and ſcrape, be it by hooke or by crooke, to raiſe a fortune there-out vnto themſelues. Few are they, that will part with ſo many thouſand Ducats, for to do good vnto the poore, but to themſelues. For ere they will beſtow a farthing-token on a poore body by way of almes, they will firſt examine the buſineſſe, and conſult with themſelues, whether it be a charitable act or no.

Thus it fared with a *Regidor*, who being eſpied by an old man, one of that Towne where he had to doe, to exceed the bounds of his duty, and to doe things beyond his Commiſsion, call'd him vnto him, and told him; How now Sinior N, &c. Is this it, that you were ſworne vnto, when you were admitted at the Aſſembly, to be one of our Company, that you ſhould goe about to picke vp your crummes a this faſhion, and trot vp and downe to ſharke for theſe [b] *Menudo's*? To whom he made this anſwer; Doe not you ſee, how I comply with mine Oath, ſince I come for them euery Saturday to the Shambles? I bought them with my money, and I had them out of the poore ſheepes belly. After this manner all things paſſe, in all places; it is the world. They go diuiding the ſpoile among themſelues; they will fetch flowre from all parts to make themſelues a good Cake. Claw me, claw thee: to day for me, to morrow for thee: doe thou giue me leaue to buy, and I will giue thee leaue to ſell. They make reſtraints for ſelling of Victuals, ſaue onely at ſuch ſet times and places: they ſet the prices vpon all things, as if they were their owne: and when they pleaſe they will ſell the ſame againe at vvhat rate they thinke fit. For all is theirs, as well what is bought, as vvhat is ſold.

My ſelfe am a Witneſſe, that a *Regidor* of one of the chiefeſt Cities of *Andaluzia*, and Kingdome of *Granada*, had a flock of ſheepe, an herd of Goates, and ſome other milch-beaſts; and for that the weather was cold, he could by no meanes vtter his milke, but euery man fell to his [c] *Bunnuelo's*. Now thinking with himſelfe, that he ſhould loſe much thereby, if Lent ſhould grow on, and ſhould not remedy the matter before-hand, hee propounded at an open Meeting, or publicke Aſſembly, That the Moriſcan *Bunnulero's*, or Fritter-makers, did rob the Common-wealth. Hee rated them therefore at a leſſer price, then it ſtood them in, amounting to little more then ſixe [d] *Marauedis*. Well, he was willing in the end to raiſe them to eight, allowing them rather a ſmall, then moderate gaine.

Hereupon, none would make of them, becauſe they could get nothing by the bargaine. And ſo in that ſpace or tract of time, he ſpent the profits of his Cattle, in Butter, Creame, freſh-Cheeſe, and other ſuch like things, till the time of yeere was come, that he was to put foorth his Flockes and Herds of Cattle into the common fields. And when he began to make his Cheeſe, then would he raiſe vp your *Bunnuelo's* to twelue *Marauedis*, as they were at before; but then Summer was comming on, and they ſhortly to grow out of ſeaſon. He himſelfe did not ſticke to report this crafty tricke of his, to teach men how to become good husbands, and how they ought to beate their brains, to make ſhift to liue.

Now let vs returne againe into our old way, from which we haue digreſt: for me thinkes it is not meet, that we ſhould lay all the fault vpon the Magiſtrates and Gouernours of Townes and Incorporations, being that wee may diſtribute it as well among others. Let vs throw ſome of this vpon your Purveyors, and Commiſſaries; and not vpon all neither, but on ſome of them, as it may be foure out of fiue, or ſo; who like Caterpillers deſtroy the Land, by robbing

[a] *Or a Monopoly. Againſt the ill Gouernours and Magiſtrates of Seuill.*

[b] *The conceit of this paſſage, conſiſts in the word* Menudos, *and its double ſignification. For* Menudo's *are braſſe Moneys: they ſignifie alſo particular neceſſities.* Menudo *is likewiſe the intrailes of a ſheep, together with the head and feet: and in birds, the garbage. And theſe are vſually eaten in* Spaine *vpon Saturday, but no other part of the carkaſe. This laſt ſignification ſorts beſt.*

[c] Bunnuelo, *is a certaine round Fritter compos'd of Meale, Oyle, and Hony: and is more vs'd in* Spaine, *then in any other parts, in Winter time. It is called* Bunnuelo, quaſi Punnuelo, *becauſe it is ſtrained or ſqueazed out of the Fiſt, and ſo let fall into the Pan of Oyle.*

[d] *A* Marauedis, *is a ſmall piece of braſſe-money,* 32. *of them go to ſixepence.*

The craft of a couetous Magiſtrate.

robbing of poore old Men, and desolate Widdowes, by deceiuing of their betters, and by telling lyes, and informing false-hoods to their King; the one for to increase their lands and inheritances; and the other, to haue them confirmed vnto them, that they may settle a good estate vpon the Heires of their house, and haue where-withall to liue in fulnesse, and in plenty.

This likewise is somewhat out of the vvay from that discourse which I ought heere to treat of, and requires of it selfe a whole and intire booke. I treat in this of mine owne life, and therefore will not meddle with other mens; but I doe not know, whether I shall be able, when a ball offers it selfe so fairely vnto me, to pull backe my hand or no? For there is no man that is Master of himselfe, when he is on horsebacke: How much more is a man vnable to containe himselfe, in things so generally knowne? Both the one and the other is generally imbraced, and all walke the same way, yeelding the field to the stronger, crying out *Viuat, qui vincit*, let him liue that conquers; and he weare gold that wins it. But alas, how do we deceiue our selues? For we are those that are conquered; and he that deceiueth, is the deceiued. I say then, that *Seuilla per fas, aut per nefas*, either by right or by wrong, one vvay or other, I know not vvhich (considering her aboundance of fruits, and the deareneſſe of them) suffreth sterrilitie, and scarcitie; and that yeere was there greater vvant and penury then heretofore, by reason of some secret disorders, and through the couetousneſſe of those, who should haue sought to remedy the matter, who did study onely their owne ends, and to make a particular fortune to themselues. The secret of this mysterie past onely betweene some three or foure of them, many were not acquainted with it, who without considering the ends, tooke in hand bad beginnings, and diuelliſh meanes, to the hurt of their owne Common-wealth.

Rich men are like Whales: for they grow great by the hurt of others.

In all my trauels, I haue euer obserued, that these great rich men, and powerfull persons, are like vnto Whales, vvho opening wide the mouth & iawes of their couetousneſſe, swallow vp all that comes in their vvay; to the end that their houses may be vvell prouided for, and their reuenues increased, vvithout casting any eye of compassion vpon the poore young Orphane; or lending an eare to the cry of the distressed Damsell; or affoording his shoulders for to vphold the feeble and the vveake; or opening his charitable hands to relieue the sicke, and him that is in need: but rather vnder the name of good gouernment, euery man so gouernes himselfe, that hee does the best he can, to draw all the vvater to his owne Mill. They publish good desires; but they exercise bad actions. Their pretensions are faire; but their practise starke naught. They vvould seeme to be Gods Lambes, innocent and harmeleſſe soules, but the Diuell onely makes profit of them; they fall wholly to his share; he, and none but he reapes the fruit of them: God has the name indeede, but the Diuell hath the shearing of them. There vvas good store of Rye-bread, passable inough, and at a reasonable price; He that had Wheat, reserued the Flowre of the Meale for his own table, and the refuse he brought forth to sell in the Market, as if any thing vvere good enough for the poore Commons. Our Officers and great men turn'd to be Bakers, and those went about to burne and waste the Country, which should haue rather beene willing to haue been burned for it. I can not deny, but this was punished, and that there were many good men, to whom euill seemed euill. But in such neceſsities as these, it is not to be holpen by a few. Besides, the great numbers of those that were intereſsed therein, did crush those, that offered to stirre against them, becauſe they were poore. And if poore, it is inough, I need say no more. Let euery man make his owne coniecture, and discourse that with himselfe.

Perceiueſt thou not how impatient I am? Seeſt thou not that I can not con-

containe my ſelfe? and how that my pen, before euer I thought of laſhing out ſo farre, hath ſlipt vpon this Theame. They gaue mee the yarke with the ſpurre, and I turned my head to ſtrike where they pricked me. I know not what excuſe to make thee, but to tell thee, that I doe as Carriers doe, that driue their beaſts of burthen before them, who ruſh the man that meetes them againſt the vvall, or throwes him to the ground, and then ſay, I cry you mercy, Sir. In concluſion, all the bread was nought, although then it did not relliſh amiſſe with mee. I did refreſh my ſelfe with eating, and did cheere vp my heart with drinking, for the Wines of thoſe Countries are exceeding rich, generous, and full of ſpirit; and with this I had pretty well recouered my ſelfe, and receiued new courage. And my feet, that were wearied out with bearing my belly, though empty, and of ſmall weight (as being lightly laden) now that it was full, and had his loade, made ſhift to carry my feet.

And ſo I went on on my way, with no ſmall care to know, what knacking of *(a) Caſtanneras* that might be, which made the Egges that I had eaten, to daunce in my mouth. My imagination was working to and fro vpon this matter; and the more it did beat vpon it, the more misfortunes repreſented themſelues vnto me, and my ſtomake began to ſtirre more and more: for I could ſuſpect nothing leſſe then a kinde of loathing, ſeeing how ill they were dreſt, of what blackneſſe the oyle, like to that which is in the bottome of a Lampe; a fowle Pan; and a fowle bleare-ey'd Hoſteſſe.

Thus my imagination running from one thing to another, I met at laſt with the truth; and hauing gone another League, my fancy wrought ſo with me, that I could hold no longer. For, as it is with your women that are with child, ſo was it iuſt with me. Eructations and belchings did come and goe from my ſtomake to my mouth, till at laſt I fell a vomiting, till there was not any thing left within me. And euen yet to this day, me thinkes I heare thoſe little chickens, thoſe poore pretty fooles, cry ſtill peepe, peepe, within my bowels.

Being in this miſerable taking, I ſate mee downe on the ſide of a hollow Ditch, that ſeru'd for a fence to certaine Vines that were thereby; conſidering with my ſelfe the misfortunes that I had, and was like to runne into, much repenting my ſelfe of my ill aduiſed departure.

But it is, and euer will be the faſhion of young fellowes, to caſt themſelues away headlong, vpon their preſent pleaſures, without hauing an eye, or any regard in the world to their future hurt, or the harme that will follow after.

(a) Caſtanneta, *is the ſtroke or ſound, that is giuen with the Thumbe, and the middle finger, when they dance. And to make the noiſe the lowder, they tye two hollow thinne pieces of wood to their thumbe, which are made round after the manner of your Cheſſe-Nuts.* Caſtanneta, *being deriued from* Caſtanna, *which ſignifies a Cheſſe-Nut.*

Chapter IV.

Guzman de Alfarache, *recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hosteſſe: And diſcourſeth of laughing. After that, hee tels two ſhort Tales; one, of a couetoas Phyſician; the other of two young men, how they vſ'd the ſaid Hosteſſe: And vpon the neck of that fals into a learned Diſcourſe, touching the pardoning of iniuries.*

Troubled in minde, full of care and thoughts, and penſiuely muſing with my ſelf, I lay all along on the ground, leaning mine head vpon mine arme; when by chance a Carrier hapt to paſſe by, who went along with empty Mules, which were to be laden with Wine at the Village called *Caçalla de la Sierra*. He ſeeing me ſitting in this melancholly manner, a Yong Strippling, all alone, afflicted in minde, handſome in my perſon, and reaſonably well clad, as one that had beene much made of heretofore, began (as I then conceiued) to pitie my troubles, and to take compaſsion of me, asking me, what the matter was, that I was ſo ſad. I told him all that had hapned vnto me in my Inne; and had ſcarce made an end of my Tale, when he brake forth into ſuch a Youle of laughing, that he was ready to burſt, and I to breake forth into choller. And that face of mine, which before was as pale as aſhes, was ſet on fire by thoſe coales of anger, which were kindled in my breſt againſt him. But becauſe I was not then a Cock that ſtood vpon my owne dunghill, nor ſcarce mine owne man; as alſo for that I found my ſelfe diſarmed, and as it were in a deſart by my ſelfe: I held my tongue, and ſaid nothing vnto him, becauſe I could not crowe as I would. For it is diſcretion to diſſemble that, which a man cannot helpe; Patiently brooking this his rather grinning, then laughing: And thoſe ends that are doubtfull in their obtaining, muſt be throughly firſt conſulted on, and be reduced to ſome certain grounds and Principles. For opinions are various, and honours vitreous, glaſſy, and ſubiect to breaking. And if I ſhould there, at that time, haue miſ-behaued my ſelfe, happely he would haue laid hold on me firſt, and by aduenturing to gaine vpon him, I might haue runne the hazzard, if not the certainty of loſing all. For *Competition* is a thing to be auoided. But if it cannot be auoided, but that we muſt needs haue it, let it be with our equals; and rather of the two, with thy Superiours, then thy inferiours; but haue a care that thou doe not ouer-match thy ſelfe with thoſe that are too ſtrong for thee, leſt they trample vpon thee, and tread thee vnder foot. Euery thing hath its Vice, and there muſt an account be giuen of it. But although I did forbeare him; yet he had ſo heated me, that out of the warmth of that choller, which yet boyled within me, I could not chooſe but tell him:

The deſcription of laughter.

My friend; Doe you ſee me coated for a Foole; or with a Fooles Cap on my head? Or what elſe is it that occaſions you thus to laugh? He, rather increaſing, then ceaſing his laughter, as if it had beene a taske put vpon him, or a part that he had beene enioyned to play: ſo faſt it came from him, that gaping with his mouth fiſt-wide, he let his head fall on tone ſide, (for hee was not able for laughing to hold it vpright:) and laying both his hands as hard as he was able, one while vpon his belly, another on his ſides, for feare of burſting; he was ſcarce able to ſit vpon his Beaſt for falling, and ſeemed with his extreme ſtraining of himſelfe, as if he would at euery bout haue come tumbled downe on the ground.

I was about to anſwere him ſome three or foure times, but I could neuer come to doe it: for I no ſooner offered to ſpeake vnto him, but he preſently

fell a-freſh to his laughing till he chuck't againe ; ſo did his pot runne ouer, when it once fell a boyling.

God be thanked yet at laſt, after this great invndation and ſudden breaking forth of waters, (that thoſe ouer-flowings of *Tagus* could not be greater) began to fall by little and little, by patches and by pieces, now a word & then a word, as well as he could, hauing taken a little breath, deliuering his minde by halfes, like one that ſtumbles and goes, and goes and ſtumbles, he blunderd forth theſe words vnto me: My good Youth, I doe not laugh at your ill ſucceſſe, nor doe your mis-fortunes glad me any whit at all : but I laugh at that, which hapned to this woman ſcarce two houres ſince. Did you happely meet with two young fellowes, that were *Camerades*, and walkt along together, and ſeemed by their habit to be Souldiers; the one clad in a medley greene ſuite; the other in a gray or aſh-colour'd cloth, with a white doublet cut to the skin? Theſe two (quoth I) by your deſcription, if my memory doe not faile me, when I left the Inne, remained there behinde, beeing newly come in, when I went my way, and called for their dinner. Theſe then (ſaid the Carrier) are thoſe that haue reuenged your quarrell. And the ieſt, that they put vpon the Hoſteſſe, is that which I now laugh at. But if you goe my way, get vp vpon one of theſe beaſts; & as we ride along I will tell you how it was. I thankt him for his kindneſſe, as I had good cauſe ſo to doe, conſidering my preſent neceſsitie, rendring him ſuch good language, as I thought might make ſufficient paiment for ſuch a courteſie. For good words requite good workes, when a man is not able to pay him, that he is beholding vnto, in better money; and that he is in neceſsitie, to whom the kindneſſe is done.

Kinde words currant money in caſe of neceſsity.

Mounting my ſelfe then vpon this ill accoutred Gennet, howbeit it was no better then a plaine Aſſe with a pack-ſaddle; yet it ſeemed to me a *Silla de manos*, or eaſie hand-Chayre, a Litter or a Coach, drawne with foure horſes. For ſome ſuccour, in caſe of neceſsitie, although it bee little, yet it helpeth much; and that which is but a triffle to him that giues, is an infinit ſupply to him that wants: it is like a little ſtone, that is throwne into a ſmooth & cleere water, which makes not only many, but great circles alſo. And then is a kindneſſe moſt to be eſteemed, when it comes in a good coniuncture, albeit it alwayes comes well, and neuer too late, ſo as it come at laſt. Now (me thought) I ſaw Heauen opened, and my honeſt Carrier appearing vnto me in the ſhape of an Angell. His face was as ioyfull vnto me, as that of the deſired Phyſician is to him that is afflicted with ſickneſſe. I ſay, deſired; becauſe (as perhaps you may haue heard) a Phyſician hath three faces. Of a man, when wee ſee him, and haue no need of him: Of an Angell, when we are ſicke, and cannot bee without him; and of a Diuell, when at one and the ſelfe-ſame time our ſickneſſe, and our purſe ends together, and yet for his priuate intereſt and to gaine a fee, he followes vs with dayly viſits. As it hapned to a Gentleman in *Madrid*, who hauing ſent for a Phyſician, for a certaine infirmity, where-withall he was troubled, euery viſit that he made, gaue him a Crowne. The humour ceaſed; but his Phyſician was not in the humour to ceaſe from comming vnto him.

A Phyſician hath three faces.

A Tale of a Phyſitian that lou'd money too well.

In Spaine *your Phyſicians fee is ordinarily two ſhillings; the better ſort giue foure ſhillings, and the beſt ſeldom aboue a Crowne.*

The nature of Seruants.

Now the Gentleman, when he ſaw that he was thorow well, and that his Phyſician did ſtill continue his Viſits, he got him vp one morning very early, and went to Church.

Now, when the Phyſician came to viſit him, and found him not at home, he asked his ſeruant whither he was gone. He (like a foole as he was) for there are ſeruants ſtill inow for their Maſters hurt, but few for their profit, told him, that he was gone forth to Maſſe to ſuch a Church. My nimble Doctor, putting ſpurres to his Mule for to make the more haſte, went with all ſpeed to the ſaid Church, and ſearching for him, at laſt he found him; and then ſaid vnto him; What a-Gods name, Sir, doe you meane to commit ſo great an

exceſſe, as to go abroad without my leaue? The Gentleman, who knew well inough what he came for, and ſeeing that now he had no more need of him, put his hand in his pocket, tooke out his purſe, drew foorth a Crowne, and putting it in his hand, told him; Here, take it; (maſter Doctor) for by the faith of a Gentleman, I now perceiue, that this ſacred place cannot priuiledge me from you.

See here, how farre the couetouſneſſe of a fooliſh Phyſician carries him; and how farre the vertue of a quicke and noble diſpoſition, this other Gentleman.

I betooke me to my beaſt, and fetching my riſe, I got vp vpon his backe, and away vve went together: and wee had ſcarce gone a furlong from the place, but we met with two Church-men that ſate there hard by, expecting ſome paſſengers, that would carry them on horſe-backe towards *Caçalla*, (for there was their dwelling) and had beene at *Seuill* about a certaine Suit in Law. By their carriage and their countenance you might well know their good life and their pouertie. They were well ſpoken men, very kind, and very courteous; the one was about ſome 36. yeeres of age, the other aboue fifty. They made the Carrier ſtay, they agreed with him; and, doing as I had done before, they got each of them vp vpon his Aſſe, and wee proceeded on our iourney.

But all this while, ſo great was the laughter of this honeſt man, and ſo exceſsiue beyond all meaſure, that he could ſcarce go on with his tale: for betwixt euery word he would let go the ſluce of his ſides, whileſt like a Flood that furiouſly breakes foorth, his laughing ſuddenly fluſhes out vpon him: and as in houſes, where men vittaile vpon the way, a man ſhall meet many times with a bare couple of Hens onely amongſt fiue hundred perſons; and ſee what they want in good cheere, they make vp with good mirth: ſo this mans laughter was three-fold more then his diſcourſe; ſo farre did his ſpleene out-talke his tongue. Theſe his delayes were ſo many Speares in my ſides; euery deferring was a farther prouoking: ſo that I was all this while vpon thornes. For he that hath a longing deſire to know a thing, vvould willingly haue one word come treading on the heeles of another; and with a quicke and nimble pace come (if it were poſsible) huddling all at once out of the mouth.

Neuer any woman that hath beene with child, did euer more earneſtly long for any thing, then I did to know the ſucceſſe of this buſineſſe. Mee thought I did conſume and pine away while I vvas held in this ſuſpence, I could haue burſt for anger, that my eares vvere put off, from hauing a preſent hearing: for I could not but expect, that ſome great matter muſt ariſe from ſuch a glorious and ingenious Fabricke, as this made ſhow to be. I began to conceit vvith my ſelfe, whether ſome fire falne from heauen, had conſumed the houſe, and all that was therein: or whether thoſe young fellowes had ſet the houſe on fire, and roſted my Hoſteſſe aliue: or at leaſt (for a leſſer reuenge could not be taken of ſo vile a creature) whether or no they had ſtript her ſtarke naked, and hung her vp by the heeles vpon an Oliue-tree, and giuen her ſome thouſand laſhes, till they had left her for dead: for leſſer things then theſe, his laughter could not promiſe. Howbeit, I muſt confeſſe, had I beene then ſo wiſe and conſiderate, as I ſhould haue beene, I ought not to haue look't for any great matter, or to preſume that any good thing could proceed from one, that was thus immoderate in his laughter. For euen that which is moderate, doth in a kind of manner, accuſe a man of lightneſſe, argue indiſcretion, want of iudgement, and ſtore of vanity: but that vvhich is diſ-compoſed, and out of Reaſons compaſſe, is (though there be neuer ſo much occaſion offered) the marke of a mad-man, and the onely note of an abſolute Aſſe, or complete Foole.

Exceſſiue laughter condemned.

At laſt (God be thanked) this Mountaine brought foorth its Mouſe: in conclu-

conclusion, he told vs, (but with a thousand stops and iumpes, and his wonted bounds and curuets of laughing) that he hauing stayd to drinke a little wine, and to tarry the comming of a Companion of his, whom he had left behind, he perceiued, that the Hostesse of the house brought in on a Plate, a Froyze of sixe egges; three of them starke naught, the other not so bad; which she set before them: and going about to diuide this their Froyze or Tansey in twaine, it seemed vnto them, that it made a certaine kind of resistance, refusing (as it were) to be parted, one piece hanging (like torne ragges) at the taile of another. Whereupon, because this seemed to be somewhat a bad signe, and such as they did not vvell like of; they began to search a little more narrowly, vvhat should be the cause thereof. They vvere not long in discouering the truth; for they might discern certaine knobs and knurs in it; which, had it bin any body but my self, he might at first sight haue seen how the world went, and vvhere the fault lay; but being a young Lad, I should easily haue swallowed such a Gudgeon, and should in good manners haue slightly past it ouer. But these vvere a little more curious, and more Court-like, and sifted it out so finely, that they found to their seeming, three little round bumps, like three little Chickens heads all clotted together. And this cleared the doubt; for finding the bils of these pretty fooles somewhat hard growne and none of the tendrest, the pad that lay in the straw vvas presently perceiued. And they taking one of them betweene their fingers, going about to crush and breake it in pieces, it put foorth his bill, and began (though dead) to peepe foorth its head, and spake alowd vnto them, and told them plainely, vvhence, and what he vvas. So they couered the Plate, clapping another thereupon, and vvhispered somewhat in secret amongst themselues: vvhat it vvas, I then knew not, howbeit afterwards it did manifest it selfe; for presently one of them called out, and sayd; Hostesse, haue you any thing else for vs? she had a little before (in their sight) bought a [a] *Sabalo*, (vvhich is a Fish like a Shad) which she had put vpon the ground for to rub off the scales of it, telling them; I haue such a Fish here, vvhereof (if you vvill) I shall spare you a slice or two, other meat haue I none. I pray (mother) said they, broyle it vs quickly then, for we must be gone; and if it stand vvith your good liking, set a price what you will haue for it all, and vve vvill carry it home along vvith vs. She said, it being cut out into pieces, euery slice wil yeeld me a Royal, and I cannot bate you a farthing of it. They said, No: they thought it vvas too much, one Royall profit in the vvhole, vvere very good gaines.

A iest put vpon an Hostesse by two young fellowes.

At last they agreed for two Royals; for a bad pay-master neuer reckons vvhat he receiueth, nor stands a hucking for that, vvhich he is to take vp vpon trust. It vvent against her heart to let them haue it so, howbeit the gaine of two Royals in foure, for so short a time as she layd it out of her purse, did worke much vvith her, and made her vvilling at last to let them haue it. She cuts it out into pieces, broyles two of them, they eate it, the rest they vvrapt vp in a Napkin of her owne; and after they had fill'd their bellies, being not vvell contented with their ill vsage, in stead of paying their Reckoning, they reckoned vvithout paying. For one of the young fellowes, taking the Froyze of egges in his right hand, vvent directly thither where the old vvoman was vnpanching the belly of an old rotten sheepe, that had dyed in some ditch, to make thereof Tripes and Chitterlings, or (as the Spanish word hath it) [b] *Mondongo's*; and vvith all the force that he had, threw it full in the face of her, seeling vp both her eyes therewith, which looked like an old vvall all to bedawbed with rough-cast. Which plaistred eyes of hers, he had made so blind and painefull vnto her, that not daring to open them, she cryed out, as if shee had beene mad, whilest this his other Companion, behauing himselfe, as if he had rebuked him for it, and that he might be ashamed to vse a poore old woman in this vnciuill kind of fashion, threw me a handfull of hot ashes in the very face

[a] Sabalo, *is a knowne fish, and a sauoury, and is called* Sabalo, quasi Sapalo à Sapore. *In Latine they call it* Alosa, Frisia, Clupea. *In fresh water it doth vsually dye.* Rondelecio de Piscibus, lib. 7. cap. 15.

[b] Mondongo, *is a hodge-podge made of the intrailes and trotters of a sheepe, or other beast, boyled, and sold at euery corner of the streets in* Spaine *to poore folkes.*

face of her, and ſo they got them out of dores, telling her, as they went away; Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui en tal haze, que tal pague*, you are now payd in your owne money: what you got by your coozening, you may now put it in your eye.

She was toothleſſe, chap-falne, hollow-eyed, and wappering withall, her haire ſluttiſhly hanging about her eares, vnkempt, and as greazie, as it vvas knotty; a fouler Swine no man euer ſaw: mealed ſhe was all ouer, like a Mullet dreſſed with Flowre, or a Flounder that is ready for the frying-pan; with a geſture ſo graciouſly ſcuruie, a looke ſo pleaſantly fierce, and in all the reſt ſo handſomely ill-fauoured, that as oft as you ſhall but thinke either of it or her, you cannot (if your life ſhould lye vpon it) but you muſt needes burſt foorth into laughter.

With this, he ended his ſtorie, telling vs, that he had now matter inough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Whereunto I anſwered; And I to weepe. Why, quoth he? Becauſe when time was, I did not do the like: but like a coward (as I was) ſuffered my reuenge to come from anothers hand. But I vow (if God giue me life and health) it ſhall coſt her deare; I will make her pay for the old and the new; I will haue my penny-woorths out of her, and make my ſelfe that full amends, that the longeſt day ſhe ha's to liue, ſhe ſhall thinke vpon the egges, and the Youth.

The good honeſt Clergie-men much condemned their Hoſteſſe, and did as much reproue my ſpeech; for that I ſeemed to be grieued, that I had not done her a miſchiefe. They both ſet themſelues againſt me, and turning towards me, the ancienter of the two, ſeeing mee ſo angry and full of choler, ſpake thus vnto me:

Your hot and young blood moues you to ſay that, vvhich your owne good nature and ingenuous diſpoſition vvill by and by confeſſe to be ill: and I hope in God, that I ſhall worke ſo much good vpon you, that you will be ſorry for the preſent, for what you haue ſayd, and ſtudy to correct hereafter, not onely the acting of any ſuch violent deed, but the very thought of it.

A diſcourſe touching the pardoning of iniuries.

Saint *Mathew* in the fift Chapter of his holy Goſpell, and S. *Luke* in his ſixt, reade vs this Leſſon; *Loue your enemies, and do good to them that hate you.* Wherein you are firſt to conſider, that the Euangeliſt doth not ſay, Doe good vnto thoſe, that do ill vnto you; but he ſayth; Do good to them that hate you. For ſuppoſe that your enemy ſhould hate you, yet is it impoſsible that he ſhould hurt you, vnleſſe you will your ſelfe. For, it being an infallible truth, that we are to account thoſe as true goods, which are to continue for euer: and that thoſe which faile vs to morrow, (as they often do) are more properly to be called euils, for the ill vſe which vve make of them: ſince that in the truſt that we haue in them, *& nos ipſos, & illa amittimus*, wee loſe both them and our ſelues. We may reckon theſe our enemies, to be our beſt friends; and theſe our friends to be our greateſt enemies; in regard of the effects which ariſe from the one and the other: for, from our enemies, ariſeth all our true good; and from our friends, our aſſured hurt. Wee may plainely perceiue, how that the greateſt good that we can draw from the faithfulleſt friend that we haue in this world, can be no more, then to pleaſure vs, either with his purſe, by giuing vs all that he hath; or by his life, by employing it in thoſe things that giue vs content; or by his honour, by not ſticking to hazard that for vs, when our reputation ſhall lie at the ſtake. In which two latter none will aduenture themſelues; or there are ſo few of them to be found, that I doubt we ſhall not be able to produce any example in theſe times wherein we liue. But ſay it were ſo indeed, and that there were ſome ſuch kind of men now adayes, and ſhould iumpe together in all theſe three repeated particulars, when they haue done all that they can, it is much leſſe (if in that which is not at all, a *magis* and a *minus*; a more, or a leſſe, may be found) then a Geometricall

True good is that which is eternall.

The goods of this world are not good.

A faithfull friend, what good he may do vs.

metricall point. For, when he hath giuen me all that hee hath in this world, (were it neuer ſo much) it is too ſmall a ſubſtance to free me from hell. Beſides, men do not now adayes ſpend their wealth, and their riches vpon the vertuous, but ſuch as are conditioned like themſelues, and aſsiſt them in their ſinnes; and theſe are the friends that they reckon of, and to theſe their purſe is open.

If for my ſake, my friend ſhould loſe his life, one minute of time is not added thereby vnto mine; if he ſhould put his honour in perill, nay ſay, he ſhould be willing to loſe it quite for his loue to me, I ſay, that is not honour, nor may it be ſo called: for true honor is that, vvhich is ingaged in the ſeruice of God; and whatſoeuer is otherwiſe, and hath not ſome reference thereunto, is falſe and euill. So that, whatſoeuer my friend ſhall throw vpon me, being it is temporall and of no continuance, it is vnprofitable, vaine, and of little or no woorth at all. But my enemy, proues all pure wheat; all turnes to profit, that comes from him to me; ſo that my ſelfe will be willing to make true vſe thereof. For from his ill-wiſhing to me, doe I come to wiſh well vnto him; and therefore God will vviſh well againe vnto me, and do me good, (though I deſerue ill) for that I do good for ill. If I pardon him a light iniury, to me are forgiuen and remitted an infinit number of ſinnes; and if he ſpeake ill of me, and I ſpeake well of him, his euill language cannot hurt me; and his bitter tongue ſhall bring me a bleſsing; *Come ye bleſſed of my Father, &c.* So that by his thoughts, words, and workes, my enemy makes mine to be good and true.

The good we receiue from our enemies.

And what is the cauſe, thinke you, of this ſo great a wonder, and whence is the force of this ſo excellent a vertue? I ſhall tell it you, becauſe it is a thing commanded by God, becauſe it is his expreſſe will and commandement ſo to do. And if we are to obſerue that of the Princes of this world, much better (without compariſon) is it, to keep that which is commanded vs by the King of heauen: before vvhom are humbled all the hearts both of heauen and earth. And that ſaying of his, *I command you this*, is a *ſweet conſerue, which is applied to the diſtaſted palate of him that is commanded. As if the Phyſicians ſhould preſcribe their ſicke Patients to take flowres of Oranges, young preſerued Wall-nuts, buds of Limmons, rindes of Pome-Citrons, the rootes of wild [a] Borage, or Bugloſſe. What ſhall I ſay more? O my good Lord, doe not giue me any ſuch thing! for a body that is ſtrong and in health, can by no meanes away with it, but is rather vnpleaſing then otherwiſe. But for the better ſwallowing of theſe Pilles, and to make the relliſh the ſweeter, they are ſo well candyed and rolled vp in Sugar, that what was hard in it ſelfe to be taken downe, is now become ſweet and ſauoury vnto vs. The like effect doth this ſweet Conſerue of Gods Word worke with vs. *I command* (ſaith the Text) *that ye loue your enemies*. This is a dainty Sauce, made for that foure Morſell, which before was ſo vnſauoury to our taſtes. So that, that which goes moſt againſt our ſtomackes, and which fleſh and blood can hardly indure, by reaſon of its bitterneſſe, being to our concupiſcences and fleſhly deſires, no better then very Gall and Worm-wood; The Spirit tels vs in the voyce of a good Phyſician, now it is made more pleaſant, more ſauoury and ſweeter for you, ſince that Chriſt our Redeemer hath ſo commanded it. So that if a man ſhould now ſtrike me on the one cheek, I would turne the other; for it is an honour vnto vs punctually to obſerue thoſe orders which are deliuered vnto vs by thoſe that are ſet in authority ouer vs, and not to breake them in the leaſt branch or tittle.

*Gods cõmandements are ſweet.

[a] *The Spaniſh word is* Eſcorzonera. *This hearbe the Latines call* Viperina, *a ſpecies of that which they call* Barba de Cabron. *It is called* Eſcorzonera, *becauſe it is good againſt the venyme of Toades, and all other venymous Vermin; and amongſt the reſt, the Viper. This Plant was firſt found out in* Spaine *in* Catalunna, *by a ſlaue of* Barbary. *And in harueſt-time men being ſtung by Vipers, they gaue them the iuyce of this herbe, wherwith they were healed. There is excellent good now in this kind, in the* Sierras de Cuenca *in* Spaine. Vide Mathiolo, lib. 2. cap. 137. Et Couarruuias, verb. Eſcorzonera.

A Generall doth command one of his Captaines, that he make good ſuch a ſtrong place or paſſage, by which the enemy is to paſſe; where, if he will himſelfe, it ſhall be in his power to ouercome him, and to kill him: but his Generall tels him; Take heed, I charge you, for it much importeth my Seruice, and

We muſt obay God.

it is my pleasure so to haue it, that when he shall passe by you, you offend him not, but let him goe quietly along, notwithstanding that he should giue you cause to the contrarie, and prouoke you all that he can to fight with him.

Now when this his enemy shall passe thus along by him, and shall braue him to his face, and reuile him with reprochfull and iniurious termes, calling this Captaine Coward, and other the like disgracefull names, will this Captaine (thinke you) though thus mightily abused, and affronted in the face of the whole Armie, offer him hereupon any offence at all, or violently set vpon him? No certainly: But he will rather laugh at him, as a Braggadoccio, and vaine-boaster; and though he could easily haue ouerthrowne him, and kill'd him at pleasure; yet he doth it not, onely because he would keepe that Order which was giuen vnto him: And if he should haue broken it, he had done very ill, and contrary to his duty, and therefore had well deserued to be punished for it. What reason then is it, that we should not diligently obserue the orders and ordinances, giuen vs by God? Why should we goe about to breake them; or seeke euen in the least kinde of manner to contradict them? If a Captaine, for his pay onely, and vpon hope of some better preferment (which is a hazzard, whether he shall euer attaine there-unto or no) shall bee so punctuall: why should not we be as obseruant, since we shall gaine thereby a celestiall reward, which is reserued for vs? Especially, since that hee that made the Law, had the first handsell of it himselfe, and submitted himselfe thereunto, by suffering and receiuing from that vnhallowed and sacrilegious hand of an vnder-officer, a great buffet on that most sacred face of his, without returning him so much as an euill word, or any angry looke.

God rewardeth the obedient.

If God himselfe could be content to indure such rough vsage, and pocket it vp with so much patience: Why should this same *Nada del hombre*, this same nothing of man, this *res nihili*, why I say should he be puffed vp with pride, transported with passion, and stand vpon his *puntos*, and termes of honour? And why, for to receiue satisfaction of a poore silly word, shot out vn-awares, or aduisedly; or howsoeuer (complaining of the infiniteneſſe of the wrong) breaking forth into rage, should one Christian challenge the field of another, seeking amongst Infidels, as if he were one of them himselfe, a (*a*) place, where to fight it out; or (to speake more truely) to thrust themselues wilfully into the hands of the Diuell their mortall enemy, flying from those of their Creator?

Man ought to be humble, not proud.

(a) *The Duell, in* Spaine *is a capitall crime. And therefore the Spaniards, when they challenge the Field, goe into* Barbary *to end their quarrell.*

Of whom we may learne, that when he was to leaue this world, and was to seale his last Will and Testament, he suffered himselfe to bee nayled to the Crosse, his body to be bored, his flesh to be torne, being full of paine, and gored all in bloud, from the sole of his foot, euen to the crowne of his head, whose haire did cleaue to his most precious bloud, being congealed and clodded together in hard-plotted Knots, and matted, as it were, with the cruell wounds, occasioned by that his sharpe thorny crowne, which they scornefully crowned him withall. And when he was to take his leaue of his Mother, and that his beloued Disciple, amongst other his last words that he vttered, as it were by way of his last request, and charge vnto them, and in that his violent and extreme agony, which was then plucking vp his soule by the rootes from his diuine body, he prayed vnto his eternall Father, that hee would pardon those that had thus persecuted him, and put him to this so shamefull and painfull a death.

A lesson for the forgiuing of our enemies.

This mildneſſe of our Sauiour, was imitated by Saint *Christopher*: who, when he had a sound boxe on the eare giuen him, calling that to mind, which his Master had before receiued, told him that strooke him; If I were not a Christian, I would be reuenged on thee. So that reuenge then, is a member put apart from the children of the Church our Mother.

Saint Christopher *his answer to one that strooke him.*

The like blowe was giuen to Saint *Bernard* in the presence of his brethren;

S. Bernards

and

and they being very earneſt to reuenge this wrong done vnto him, hee ranne in amongſt them, telling them, It is not fit, that we ſhould reuenge the iniuries done vs by others, when as wee doe all day-long, kneeling humbly on our knees, craue pardon for our owne offences.

ſaying, touching the ſuffering of iniuries.

Saint *Steuen*, when they were ſtoning him to death, doth not grieue for thoſe cruell blowes, which bereaue him of his life; but his ſorrow was, to ſee that theſe bloudy Miniſters ſhould loſe their ſoules; and grieuing for them, deſires God, euen then, when the pangs of death were vpon him, that hee would pardon his perſecutors, and *Saul* eſpecially; who being deceiued, and zealous of his Law, thought to merit heauen by looking to the Cloakes and other cloathes belonging to thoſe that were the Executioners; to the end that hauing nothing to hinder their armes, they might, being ridde of thoſe lets, wound him with the greater force.

S. Steuen *prayes for his perſecutors.*

And ſo feruent was his Prayer; that this glorious Apoſtle Saint *Paul* vvas afterwards reduced to the faith; who like a wiſe Doctor, well experienced in this doctrine, finding it to be ſo neceſſary a thing, and ſo much importing our ſaluation, as nothing more, giues vs this good counſell: That we ſhould forget and lay aſide all anger; that we ſhould not ſuffer the Sunne to goe downe vpon our wrath. Rather bleſſe then curſe your perſecutors: Giue them to eate, if they ſuffer hunger; and if they be a-thirſt, giue them drinke: which if you ſhall not doe, the ſame meaſure that you mete vnto others, ſhall be mete vnto you againe: and as you forgiue, ſo ſhall you be forgiuen.

S. Paul *teacheth vs to forgiue our enemies.*

The Apoſtle Saint *Iames* ſaith; Without mercy ſhall they be iudged, that haue no mercy: and the rigour of iuſtice ſhall be returned on thoſe that are rigorous.

S. Iames *inſtructeth vs to be mercifull.*

Very fearefull of the breach of this diuine precept, was *Conſtantine the Great*; who, when one told him, how his enemies, to affront him, had in contempt and ſcorne of him, throwne ſtones at his picture, wounding him with their ſtrokes in the head and the face; ſo great was his modeſty, that neglecting the iniury, he began to touch & feele with his hands from place to place all the ſeuerall parts of his body: Asking, when he had ſo done; What are become of theſe blowes; where are thoſe wounds you talk off? I feele none, nor haue I any paine of all thoſe thou tell'ſt me, they haue done vnto me. Giuing thereby to vnderſtand, that there is no diſhonour done to any, but to him that will eſteeme it ſo. Beſides, he was willing thereby to inferre, that whoſoeuer does thee an iniury, ſhall not ſcape ſcot-free, or goe cleere away with it, though thou doe not reuenge it; nay, though thou for thy part ſhouldſt pardon the wrong that he hath done thee: For what iniury he hath offered vnto thee, he hath likewiſe offered the like vnto God, whoſe, both thou and he art. *Duenno tiene eſta hazienda*; theſe goods haue an owner; And therefore you muſt not be your owne caruers. For, if in a Princes Palace, or a Kings Court, any affront ſhal be done, it is likewiſe done vnto the Lord thereof: nor ſhall the pardon of him that is affronted be ſufficient abſolutely to excuſe the other, becauſe by that indiſcreet act of his, and inferred iniury, are likewiſe iniured the lawes of that Prince, the good gouernment of his houſe queſtioned, and his Kingdome ſcandalized thereby. And therefore God ſaith, *Reuenge* belongeth vnto me; and when I ſee my time, I ſhall puniſh the offender: Vengeance is mine, and mine owne hands ſhall execute the ſame. Wretched then is that man, who is thus threatned; for if Gods owne hands ſhall giue him his chaſtiſement, better had it beene that he had neuer beene borne. So that thou muſt neuer requite ill with ill, vnleſſe thou wilt that ill ſhall light vpon thy ſelfe. Moreouer, thou ſhalt merit much thereby, and thou ſhalt be thine owne pay-maſter: for, by imitating him that commandeth thee, thou ſhalt be made like vnto him. Giue way therefore to the ire and fury of your perſecutors, that you may merit Gods fauour: Thanke him for theſe outrages

Conſtantine *the Great, & his great patience.*

God fauoureth and defendeth the wronged.

rages and wrongs that are done you, and you ſhall in requitall receiue glory; and obtaine eternall reſt. --- And there he reſted. ---

I would faine haue committed to memory that good doctrine which hee deliuered vnto me to this purpoſe, that I might repeat it heere vnto you. For it was all heauenly ſtuffe. Fine, moſt fine holy Scripture. From that time forward I vnfeignedly propounded to my ſelfe to make true profit thereof. *Iniury, how foule a thing it is.* And if it be well conſidered, he ſpake very home, and well vnto mee. What greater reuenge can there be, then that a man may be reuenged if hee will? *Poſſe, nolle, nobile*, is as true a ſaying as it is old: And what thing can bee more foule then reuenge, being that it is a paſsion of iniuſtice? And ſuch a one, as none is more odious in the ſight both of God and Man? For it is onely proper vnto brute beaſts. *Reuenge, what it is.* Reuenge is but a kinde of cowardize, and a certain *Actus fœminilis*, an effeminate Act, and womaniſh kinde of weakeneſſe: Whereas the forgiuing of a wrong, is a glorious kinde of Victory. The reuengefull man makes himſelfe the *Reus*, when by pardoning, he might bee made the Actor; that is, in ſtead of an Accuſer, the Accuſed. What greater preſumption can there be in the world, then that the creature ſhould vſurpe the office of his Creator? appropriating that vnto him, which is none of his; and going away (as we ſay) with another mans wealth, whereunto hee hath no right in the world? If thou thy ſelfe art not thine owne, nor in thine owne diſpoſall; neither haſt thou any thing of thine owne in thee, that he, who (as thou ſayſt) hath offended thee, can take from thee. *Man hath nothing that is his, no not ſo much as himſelfe.* Such actions as theſe, thou canſt not commence thy ſelfe, they belong vnto thy Lord, which is God: Leaue vengeance therefore vnto him. God will take it of the wicked, *tardiùs aut citiùs*, at one time or another, early or late. And that cannot bee termed too late, which is in a continuall inclination to its end. And to take it out of his hands, is a heynous offence, a mighty miſ-regard, and a contempt in the higheſt degree.

But admit ſatisfaction ſhould belong vnto thee, and that the Law were in thine owne hands; tell me, I pray thee, What thing can be more noble, then to doe good? And what more good, then not to do ill? One onely, which is this; To doe good vnto him, that doth ill vnto thee, and doth perſecute thee, as it is commanded vs, which we are bound to obey. For, to repay ill with ill, is the Diuels office; to doe good to him, that doth good vnto thee, is a naturall debt betweene man and man; nay, the wilde beaſts of the Forreſt doe acknowledge as much, and doe not waxe furious againſt thoſe, that do not ſeeke to hurt them. But to procure and worke that mans good, that would doe thee a miſchiefe, and cut thy throat, if it were in his power to doe it; this is *opus ſupernaturale*, a worke aboue the reach of nature: it is that diuine Ladder, whereby we climbe vp by the rounds of Charitie, to glorious Eternitie; it is that key of the croſſe, which openeth the gates of Heauen: it is the ſoules ſweet peace; and the bodies quiet reſt. But reuenge is a life without quietneſſe; one cals vpon another, and all vnto death. Is not he a foole, nay, worſe then a mad-man, who, if his doublet chance to wring him, will thruſt his ponyard into his owne body? And what other thing is reuenge, then to doe ill vnto our ſelues, out of a deſire to doe ill vnto others? And to plucke out both our owne eyes, to put out one of our enemies? Or to ſpit againſt heauen, that it may preſently fall againe in our owne faces? *Seneca's ſaying touching reuenge.* *Seneca* vnderſtood this doctrine wonderfull well, when an enemy of his hauing giuen him a boxe of the eare in the Market-place, and all that ſaw it, did incite him to complaine thereof vnto the Iuſtice; he ſmiling vpon them, ſaid vnto them, Were it not a fooliſh part in me (thinke you) to call a beaſt into the Court? As if he ſhould haue ſaid, With that buffet, hee like a beaſt did expreſſe his rage; and I like a man, did ſcorne and contemne this his brutiſh behauiour. Can there be any brutiſhneſſe greater then to doe ill? Or can there bee any

greatneſſe

greatneſſe like vnto that, which ſhall deſpiſe the ill that is done him, and ſet light by it?

The Duke of *Orleans* hauing formerly beene iniured by one, when he was afterward King of *France*, he was put in minde, that hee might now be reuenged of the wrong he then receiued: for now it was in his power to doe it. But he, looking ſowrely on him that did ſo aduiſe him, told him; it was not fit, that the King of *France*, ſhould reuenge the wrongs of the Duke of *Orleans*. If, for a man to conquer himſelfe, be counted ſo great a Victory; Why, by ſubduing our appetites, allaying our anger, and rebating our rancour; doe not we gaine vnto our ſelues this glorious Palme? Since that, (beſides that which is promiſed vnto vs in the future) euen in this life alſo, wee ſhall auoid many miſchiefes, which may either take away our life from vs, or rob vs of this our vaine honour, and conſume our wealth. O good God, had I beene a good Lad, that which I heard from that good man, I might haue been the better for it all the dayes of my life. But I was young, and paſt it quickly ouer; that treaſure was ill beſtow'd vpon me, I loſt it; it was corne that fell in the high-way, it did not thriue with me. His good conuerſation and doctrine entertained vs to *Cantillana*, whither we came about Sun-ſet: I with a good deſire to my Supper, and my Companion with an earneſt expectation to haue his, but that neuer came. The two Clergie men made their ranke apart, and went to a friends houſe that they were acquainted withall in the Towne, and we to our Inne.

The French Kings anſwere.

Fortior, qui ſe, quàm qui fortiſsima vincit mœnia.

CHAP. V.

How Guzman *and the Carrier did eate of a young Mule, thinking it had beene Veale, beeing coozened by his Hoſt in* Cantillana, *and diſcourſeth by the way of the coozening tricks, which bad Hoſts put vpon poore Trauellers.*

WHen the Company, that came along with vs, had left vs, and were gone euery man his way; I askt my Camerade, Whither ſhall we goe now? He told me. Here 's an honeſt Hoſt hard by, one of my old acquaintance, a good-fellow, where we ſhall be well lodged, fare daintily, and kindly entertained. Well, along we trudge together, till we came to this his ſo much commended Inne, hauing brought me (as you ſhall heare hereafter) to one of the veryeſt theeues, and arranteſt knaues, that there was not ſuch another in all that part of the Country wherin he liu'd.

Heere new occaſion of matter was offered, freſh plates ſet vpon the boord, and ſuch prouiſion, as you may therewith well entertaine the time. Was I not (thinke you) in fine taking when I leapt out of the Frying-pan into the fire; and fell into *Scilla*, ſeeking to ſhunne *Charibdis*? Our Hoſt had for his owne vſe a good ſtrong Aſſe, and a *Galitian* Mare, that was a pretty little Tit. And becauſe men in their neceſsitie, doe not ſtand vpon beauty, youth, nor pompe of apparell; but content themſelues onely with Night-caps, when their heads are mangie and ſcabbed; it is no maruell, if the like ſhould happen euen amongſt brute beaſts. They were alwayes fellow-feeders in one Stable, one Racke, and one Field; and he that was owner of them, tooke no great heed to haue them tyde faſt, but let them go looſe of purpoſe, to the end, that they might helpe the other Beaſts in the Inne in the repeating of their leſſons. Whereby it came to paſſe that this Mare grew great with Foale, by liuing at large amongſt this good company.

It

A Law in Andaluzia *against the vnnaturall couering in horſes.*

It is an inuiolable law in *Andaluzia*, That no ſuch Coniunction, or Commixture be permitted; and to this end, grieuous penalties are ordained. This Mare then, hauing in her due time foaled a pretty young Mule, mine Hoſt was willing to make profit thereof, and to that end nouriſhed and bred it vp. He kept this buſineſſe very ſecret ſome certaine dayes, and was wonderfull carefull, that it might not come to light: but becauſe he ſaw it was not poſsible for him to hide this matter long, and to keepe it from the knowledge of the world, that he might not giue his enemies aduantage of reuenge; carried away partly with the feare of his owne hurt, and partly with the greedineſſe of gaine, he reſolued (this laſt Friday night) to kill him. He cuts me out the fleſh of it into pieces, which he powders vp in a pickle made of purpoſe, and made ready againſt the next day, (being Saturday) for his Gheſts: *partes minutiores huius animalis, vt pedes, ilia, venter, &c.* all the intrailes and offals of this beaſt; as feet, tripes, the cragge-end of the necke, tongue, braine, and the like. We (as I told you) came to our Inne in a very good hower; for he that trauailes, takes contentment vpon the way, that hee may come into his Inne betimes, that he may haue meat to fill his empty guts, and a bed to reſt his weary bones.

Theſe things are commonly eaten in Spaine *vpon Saturdayes, by a cuſtome receiued amongſt them.*

My Companion, as ſoone as he had alighted and taken off his lading, and put vp all things ſafe, ſets vp his Aſſes in the Stable, taking order for their dreſsing and their feeding. But I came thither ſo wearied, that I was not able when I lighted, to ſtand vpon my legges, but was faine to lie downe on the ground, and was not able for a great while to turne my ſelfe any way in the world. For all my muſcles and ſinewes were quite benum'd, my legges and feet ſwolne, vvith their long hanging downe for lacke of Stirrops, my breech extremely gall'd, my parts neerer my priuities full of paine, as if ſo many needles had beene ſtucke in my Groyne; my body was all out of ioynt; but of all other parts, my belly (for pure hunger) did moſt pitifully complaine.

Vneaſie riding cauſeth wearines.

Now when my Companion had ordered his beaſts of burthen, and had eaſed them of their carriages, and had done all things fitting for one of his profeſsion, my turne was next to be ſerued, and therefore ſaid vnto him; How now (my Camerade) what thinke you of the motion? Is it not high-time (thinke you) to go to Supper? He anſwered, It was; the motion he told me, was very good, and that it was high time indeed: for he meant to bee ſtirring very early the next morning, and to reach betimes to *Caçalla*, and ſo to lade, and away. We ask't our Hoſt, if he had any thing in the houſe for our ſupper? He anſwered, He had; adding withal, that we ſhould fare very daintily. He was a burly-kind of man, yet of a ſtirring metall, nimble-witted, cheerfull both in his ſpeech and countenance, an eternall talker, but aboue all a moſt excellent Villaine. His promiſing perſon (I confeſſe) did deceiue mee: for, ſeeing ſo good a preſence, and not hauing knowne him before, the Spot at firſt ſight, made ſhow of a good Card. And hearing him ſay, that he could feaſt vs brauely, my very heart and ſoule did leape for ioy within mee: Oh, they were comfortable words! Whereupon, I began with my ſelfe to giue thankes vnto God, reuerencing his holy Name, for that after our troubles he giues vs eaſe; after ſickneſſe, health; after a ſtorme, a calme; after ſorrow, ioy; and a good Supper, after a bad dinner.

What a manner of creature our Hoſt was.

I know not, whether I may well tell you or no, of a toung-errour, but a witty one, which came from a plaine country-fellow, whom I knew in *Olias*, being a certaine Village belonging to *Toledo*? yet I ſhall make bold to tell it you, as well for that the thing in it ſelfe is not ſcandalous, as alſo for that it proceeded from the ſincere heart of an [a] old Chriſtian.

[a] *Old Chriſtians in* Spaine *are counted the beſt, by way of difference from the* Moores, *whom they call new Chriſtians, as being but lately conuerted.*

A ieſt of a country-fellow.

There were certaine good fellowes playing at *Primera*, and the third hauing diſcarded, the ſecond cride, I am *Prime*; God be thanked yet at laſt, that I haue got one game ſince I playd, ſaid hee, that had the *Prime*. The other Country-

Country-fellow that was in the *interim* drawing his Cards, when he had puld them, found them to be all of one linage, and being glad that he had got the hand of him, ſuddenly brake foorth at that very inſtant, and ſayd; Not ſo much God be thanked neither, as you thinke for; for I am Fluſh. If ſuch a *diſparate*, or idle toy as this, being not purpoſely ſpoken with either due meaſure, or to any certain end, but by meere chance, as it were, may be brought vpon the Stage; this is its proper place, and the Scene well layd here, conſidering what befell vs. Its very well, (ſaid my Companion) to mine Hoſt; Now and thou beeſt a good fellow, tell me, I pray thee, what dainty morſell haſt thou prouided for vs? This [b] *Socarron*, this diſſembling Raſcall, that was all for his commodity, & cared not (ſo as he might get by him) whom he coozened, told him; Yeſterday I kill'd a very delicate fine young Calfe; which, becauſe the Damme thereof was very weake; and by reaſon, (through the drineſſe of the yeere) that he wanted feeding, he cauſed this Calfe to be kill'd after it was ſome eight dayes old. The offals; and the intrailes are ready dreſt, take what you pleaſe. After this, crying out *Preſto*, bee gone, lifting vp his legges, and fetching a friſcall or two, he flyes away in the ayre in a trice, clapping his heeles with his hands as he runnes along. With this, my heart began to be ſomewhat lighter then it was before, and it did reioyce me much to heare him ſay, that he had the Calues intrailes; the very naming whereof, did make my Bowels to moue within me. And now taking leaue of my former wearineſſe, looking cheerily vpon him, I ſaid vnto him; Mine Hoſt, bring vs what you thinke good.

[b] Socarron; el vellaco diſſimulado, que ſolo pretende ſu interes, y quando habla con vos, os eſtà ſecretamente abraſando.

Thereupon, the Cloth was laid in the turning of an hand, our Linnen was cleane; and our bread was not ſo bad as before, but our wine was paſsing good: we had alſo a freſh Sallad ſet vpon the Board in a faire Plate; but for ſuch waſhie Tripes as mine then were, I held it no good meate. And had it beene ſpared by me, either for any of the intrailes, or any one foot of a Calfe, it would neuer haue grieu'd me. But theſe premiſes might deceiue any diſcreet iudgement whatſoeuer; making the taſte of an hungry appetite drunken with the very conceit of his promiſed fare. The *Italian*, by way of aduice, giues vs this good leſſon; That in the promiſes of Women, Mariners, and Inne-keepers, we ſhould place ſmall confidence: for they that are giuen to commend themſelues, and their owne things, (as all theſe vſually do) they do all (gueſsing the whole by the greater part) generally lye. After he had ſet downe the Sallad, he brings vs in two little Plates, in each of which lay a little of this ſame Calues-plucke, I ſay, a little; for he was afraid to giue vs too much; leſt through too much plenty, hunger being ſatisfied, and the belly glutted, we might more eaſily come to the knowledge of this deceit of his.

Leading vs thus ley ſurely along, we follow the ſent we firſt ran vpon, and it ſeemed to our taſte, that we ſtill did eate, according to that conceit, which wee had intertained of this our ſuppoſed tender Veale; and the more wee thought thereon, the greater edge was ſet vpon our appetite; and as wee had a longing deſire thereunto, ſo by degrees wee were ſtill calling for the ſame hand againe. For my Companion, there was no care to be taken for him, all meates were alike to him; for he was borne amongſt Sauage people, and bred vp by brutiſh Parents, whoſe palate was ſeaſoned from the cradle with a cloue of Garlicke; and your rude ruſticall Clownes, (as a thing not belonging to their either goodneſſe or cleanlineſſe) in matter of taſte can ſeldome diſtinguiſh ill from good. To moſt of them, there is a want of perfection in their Senſes; and albeit they ſee, yet do they not ſee that, which they ought to ſee: and though they heare, yet do they not heare that which they ought to heare: and ſo in the reſt; but more particularly in the tongue, which was not giuen them to murmure againſt any man, much leſſe againſt thoſe, that are gentle and

The deſect which is in Country people in their feeding.

and noble, as well in their diſpoſition, as their deſcent. But theſe kindes of vn-nurtured people are like vnto Dogs, who ſnatch and ſnap at euery thing, ſwallowing all that comes in the compaſſe of their chaps, without chewing: or like vnto the Oſtrich, that will deuoure a horſe-ſhoo, though it bee neuer ſo red hot. And if a double-ſoled ſhoo, which had done ſeruice three Winters in *Madrid*, treading thorow thicke and thinne; *lodo y mierda*, durt and turds had beene ſet before ſuch a fellow as this, he would haue made no bones of it, nor found no difference in the going downe of it. But that I, who was daintily brought vp, and borne of ciuill parents, and ſuch as were neat and curious in their dyet, that I ſhould not find out this deceit, my hunger muſt needs be great; and this muſt excuſe my errour. The deſire that I had to eate ſomething that was good, was exceeding great, ſo that euery thing ſeemed too little to feed mine eyes. This cunning Rogue, mine Hoſt, gaue it vs by way of diſtillation, Limbecke-faſhion, now a little, and then a little: and therefore it is no ſuch wonder, had it had farre greater defects, that it ſhould ſeeme vnto me a well-ordered Banquet.

The Hoſts craft.

Haue you not heard it ſayd, *Que à la hambre, no ay mal pan?* That all bread is ſauoury to the hungry? I ſay, all ſeemed to me to be Suckets, and Marmalate; and me thought I ſhould neuer haue enough to fill my belly. I demanded, if he had any thing elſe: He told me, we might (if wee would) haue the braines fryed, with ſome butter and egges. We told him, we would: but we are ſlower in telling him ſo, then he in going about it; nay, almoſt in the dreſſing of it. In the meane while, leſt we might not catch cold with ſtanding ſtill, like your Poſte-horſes when they haue run their ſtage; he gaue vs, to intertaine the time withall, a piece of fleſh folded and rolled vp, made out of the Tripes, (after the faſhion of your roſted Oliues of Veale) together with ſome of the Filme and rinde of the belly. I did not like the taſte of it halfe wel; it ſmelled (me thought) like rotten ſtraw that's throwne out vpon the dunghill. Whereupon I thruſt it from me, leauing it to my Companion, who entred roundly vpon it, deuouring it as greedily, as a man would grapes, comming into a Vineyard in the time of Vintage. Nor did it grieue mee a-whit to ſee him fall to it ſo luſtily, but was rather very glad of it, thinking by this meanes, that when he had beene full-fed therewith, a greater part of the braines would fall to my ſhare. But it fell out contrary to my expectation; for he had neuer awhit the more cloyd his panch, nor did hee ceaſe to lay about him with as good a ſtomacke, as if he had not all the day, nor night before, eaten ſo much as one morſell of bread.

The egges and the braines were ſet vpon the Board; and when my honeſt Carrier ſaw this fine Froyze, he began, according to his old wont, to laugh out alowd, with as wide a throat, as you can imagine. I did fret, and fume, and chafe with my ſelfe out of all cry, conceiting with my ſelfe, that he made himſelfe merry with my miſerie, and tooke delight, to repreſent to my remembrance thoſe former loathſome things, that had lately ouerthrowne my ſtomacke.

A guilty Conſcience is euermore ſuſpicious, and full of feare.

Our Hoſt thereupon looking very ſoberly on vs both, with a watchfull eye obſeruing our behauiour, and with an itching eare, liſtening to heare what we ſayd; ſeeing his diſ-compoſed laughter ſo ill ſeaſoned, and vn-occaſioned, (as he thought) was much mooued thereat; fearing, that hee had found out his Knauery: for vntill then, there was not any matter offered, that might mooue occaſion of laughter. And therefore he was ielous, that the Foxe was now vn-earthed, and this muſt needs be it. And becauſe a guilty perſon carries his [a] Beard euermore vpon his ſhoulder; *& vmbræ ſuæ imagine concutitur*, and is afraid of his owne ſhadow; becauſe his owne conſcience doth accuſe him; and the committed fault, repreſents the deſerued puniſhment: Euery the leaſt act, or inkling of any thing whatſoeuer, he imagineth, that it is all

[a] Traer la barba ſobre el ombro: Viuir recatado, y con recelo, como hazen los que tienen enemigos, que van bolviendo el roſtro à vn lado, y al otro, de donde naçio el refran.

all meant againſt him; and that the very ayre doth whiſtle foorth his offence, and publiſheth it to all the world.

This poore Rogue, (albeit a very villaine) hardened in roguery, and habituated in miſchiefe, and being ſteeped, and layen long in ſoke, (as it were) in thefts, and all kinds of coozenages, was now out of heart, and grew ſilly and weake-ſpirited, and was ready to quake for feare. Beſides, ſuch kind of men are commonly Cowards, and haue onely an outſide of men, but no manhood at all. Why is it (thinke you) that ſome men hacke and hew, and threaten to kill and ſlay, and like Tygres lay about them? I will tell you the reaſon of it. They do this, not out of true metall, but to make others afraid, and to ſupply by this roaring carriage, the defect of their courage; being like herein, vnto dogges; whereof, thoſe that are barkers, are the leaſt biters: they are like your little [a] *Melitean* dogges, or a kind of foyſting-Hounds, which are made all of noyſe and barking; but if you turne towards them, they clap their taile betweene their legges, and runne away. Our Hoſt was (as I haue told you) much troubled; for feare, ſuſpicion, and ielouſie, is a propertie, that is ſtill incident to an euill liuer. He had quite loſt his ſtirrops, nor did he know how or which way to recouer his ſeat; but began to ſweare with many great and horrible oathes that it was very good Veale that hee had ſet before vs, and that we had no iuſt cauſe, nor reaſon to laugh as we did; and if need were, I could bring you an hundred witneſſes to teſtifie as much.

[a] Meliteos ſi dizen, porque ſe trahian de Malta.

Theſe words he vttered with much paſsion; with a face as red as fire, that the blood ſeemed to trickle downe his cheekes, and ſparkles to flaſh for very anger foorth his eyes. The Carrier lifting vp his head and looking earneſtly vpon him, told him; Who medles with you, (my friend) what wrong haue we done you, that you are ſo cholericke? We do not touch vpon you, no not ſo much as to aske you how you do, or how [b] old you are? Haue you any [c] Edict, or Proclamation here in the houſe, that doth ſet a taxe or rate vpon laughing; or to what proportion and quantitie your gheſts ſhall be tyed to laugh, if at any time he be ſo diſpoſed, vpon paine of ſome great forfeit? or is this a generall ſeſsing ſet thereupon, and you alone haue got the Monopoly thereof into your hands? If it be ſo, good mine Hoſt, let euery man weepe, or laugh, as he will himſelfe; and take that a Gods-name which is your due, and recouer your right of vs by order of Law. I tell you, Sir, you are miſtaken in me; for I am of that free diſpoſition, that if I were minded to laugh at any thing of yours, I am not ſo meale-mouth'd, but I would plainely tell you at what I laught.

[b] *A Metapher borrowed from women, who cannot abide to be aſk't, how old they are.*

[c] *The Spaniſh word is* Aranzel, *which is a Decree, or Law, which ſets a taxe vpon ſuch things as are ſolde.* Tabula eſt, vbi ſcribitur ordo & pretium rerum venalium. *deriued of* a. articulo arabico, *and* rancel, que vale tanto, como decreto, determinaſion, aſsiento. *The Spaniards faſhion of wondring.*

Theſe egges now put me in mind of thoſe other, which my Companion here did eate to day at an Inne ſome three Leagues hence. Then hee vp and told all that had paſſed, as my ſelfe before had deliuered vnto him; and that which happened afterwards in his preſence, betwixt the old Hoſteſſe, and my two young Souldiers; in the relating whereof, he ſeemed as if hee had beene bathing himſelfe all the while in Roſe-water, if a man might iudge the content he tooke in repeating the ſame; by his paſsions, his lowd laughters, ſtrange viſages, anticke geſtures, and the diuerſities of poſtures, in the bowing and writhing of his body, all the while that he was telling him this tale. Mine Hoſte, he fell as faſt a bleſsing and croſsing himſelfe, powring out Volleys of Exclamations, calling vpon, and often reiterating the name of Ieſus, a thouſand times one after another, and lifting vp his eyes vnto heauen, ſayd; Our bleſſed Lady be my helper; let her ſtill be preſent with me! *Mal haga Dios, à quién mal haze ſu Oficio*, let ill betide him, that performes his function ill. And becauſe in his Theeueries and his Rogueries he was ſo good a Proficient, he might reſt aſſured, that this maledi&tion did not belong to him, ſo well had he exerciſed that trade all his life-time. Hee began afterwards to walk vp and down, & ſeeming ſomtimes to wonder, ſomtimes to complaine,

Mine Hoſt by railing on the old Hoſteſſe, diſcouers the knauery of Inne-keepers.

at laſt he cryde out; I vvonder a-gods name, that the earth did not open, and ſwallow vp this Inne? How is it poſsible, that God ſhould diſſemble his anger, and forbeare to puniſh ſo vile a vvoman? Does this old Witch liue? is ſhe not gone downe quicke to hell? All Trauellers haue iuſt cauſe to complaine of her; I now ſee, that all men haue reaſon to complaine of her ill vſage; no man comes away contented from her; all finde fault, not one that comes thence well ſatisfied, but are ſorry that euer they came within her doores. Either all her gheſts are very bad, or ſhe her ſelfe: but it is not to bee imagined ſo many can be all bad; and therefore ſure the fault is onely hers.

For theſe, and other the like tricks, no paſſenger will ſtay to bait at her Inne, they haue all ſet a croſſe vpon her doore, they bleſſe themſelues when they goe by, and make large ſtrides till they bee paſt that wicked houſe. I ſweare vnto you, ſhe ſhould be ſoundly whipt, if ſhe were well ſeru'd, that all other coozening queanes, ſuch as ſhe is, might take example by her. Her Signe was once pull'd downe, and order taken, that ſhee ſhould not keepe victualling any more. And I much wonder, that ſhe turning againe to the old byas, the officers returne not againe to puniſh her anew.

There is ſomething in it, as the Ant ſaid, but what it is I cannot tell you, that makes her to doe as ſhe does. There muſt be ſome myſterie in it, what euer it be: for ſhe robs and coozens with the like liberty to day, as ſhe did yeſterday; and now, as laſt yeere: And (which is worſt of all) ſhe coozens with that confidence, as if ſhe were commanded ſo to doe. And ſure it muſt needs be ſo; for the Guards, the Searchers, the Promoters, and the Alguazils, all ſee her dealings, and know them well inough; yet they winke at them, and ſay not ſo much as blacke is her eye. Theſe I warrant you be her fee'd men, ſhe giues them good content, and greazes them in the fiſt with that, which ſhe filches from others. For if it were not ſo, as ſure as the coat is on your back, they would haue another fling at her, and pay her home againe with a poxe in her owne kinde.

Howbeit (wretched woman as ſhe is) it is puniſhment inough vnto her, that ſhe liu'd ſo long, as to diſcredit her houſe. For if ſhe had kept good meat in her houſe, and vſ'd her gheſts well, behauing her ſelfe ciuilly, and demanding reaſonable reckonings, her cuſtome would haue been good, and all Trauellers would haue flockt vnto her houſe. And you know, *De muchos pocos hiziera mucho*; Many a little, makes a mickle. For, by carrying but one graine of corne away with him at once, the Ant fils his granary, and liues in ſtore and plenty all the yeere long. And had ſhe done ſo, the proudeſt Officer of them all, could not haue ſet his foot vpon her neck, and teare her vngodly gaines out of her throat. But ſhame light vpon her, and all ſuch as ſhe is. The Diuell take ſuch vnconſcionable Inne-keepers.

When he had come thus farre and made his full point, I thought he would there haue left. But hee comes about againe, giuing vs this cloze for a farewell: Bleſſed bee that vnſpotted purity of the Virgin *Mary*, that though I am but a poore man; yet I thanke God for it, there is no ſuch ill vſage in my houſe, no ſuch deceitfull tricks; Euery thing is heere ſold for the thing it is: no Cats, for Conies; nor Mutton, for Veale. *Limpieza de vida, es lo que importé*, a cleere conſcience, is that, which will carry a man through thicke and thin. He may goe bare-faced through the world, and neuer bee aſhamed, that hath led an innocent life. Let euery man enioy that which is his owne, and not defraud and deceiue one another.

Heere he ſtopt, and tooke in freſh breath, which was no more then needed, conſidering how faſt his tongue walkt: And though happely he might thinke, that we might the more willingly giue him the hearing now that we had ſupt; yet he heere cuts off the thread of his Diſcourſe, and ſayes no more, giuing

uing vs in ſtead of our ſecond Courſe, two or three Oliues, as bigge as Nuts. We intreated him that againſt the next morning we might haue a morſell of his Veale made ready for vs. He vndertooke that care, and we went to take our reſt. Our boulſters, were our pack-Saddles; and our bedding the cloathes that couered our Packs, which we ſtretch out as plaine as wee could vpon the bare Floore: and ſo we paſt ouer that night, as well as we could.

CHAPTER VI.

Guzman *goes on, in recounting what ſucceeded with his Hoſt of* Cantillana, *who had giuen him to eate of his young Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the ſaid* Guzman: *And how it is not good vpon the way to quarrell with our Hoſt.*

HAd I, the Sunday morning following, when it was day, been ſet in the Market-place in *Seuill*, or at my mothers owne doore: I am doubtfull, whether they would haue knowne me or no. For I was monſtrouſly Flea-bitten by that infinit number of Fleas, which had fed that night on my carkaſe, that it ſeemed they likewiſe indured a deare yeere, and that I was offered vp vnto them for a prey. And ſo in the morning I got me vp, looking for all the world, like one that had been ſick of the ſmall Pox, or infected with the Meazels; my face and hands, and all my whole body ouer, not hauing one free place, or one ſpot of white, no, not ſo much as you might put a pins point betweene; ſo miſerably was I tormented with them.

Guzman *is extremely bitten by Fleas.*

Bnt fortune was herein ſo fauourable vnto me, that what with the wearineſſe of the iourney, and taking a cup or two ouer-night more then ordinary, I ſlept ſoundly, dreaming heauenly dreames, no noiſe hindring my quiet reſt; till that my Companion, whoſe minde ranne vpon hearing Maſſe betimes in the morning, and of his ſeuen Leagues which he had farther to goe, did awaken me.

Drinking freely, what it effecteth.

We riſe by the breake of day, before the Sunne was vp. And calling preſently for our breakefaſt, it was brought vs in; but it did not like me ſo well, as it did my fellow: for euery morſell, that went downe his throat, ſeemed to him, as if he had ſwallowed ſo many bits of the brawne of ſome yong tender Peacocks, and he did ſo much commend the goodnes of it, as if all the world could not affoord a daintier diſh. And I was forced ſo to eſteeme of it, by laying my faith vpon another mans taſte, attributing that defect to mine owne bad palate, which this hungry hound had inherited from the Aſſe his father. But, to ſpeake the plaine truth, it was ſtarke naught, and as vile meat as a man could eate, and did not ſticke to ſpeake it ſelfe vnto mee in a knowne language.

To me it ſeemed tough, and vnſauoury, and of that little which I did eate ouer-night at ſupper, my ſtomake was ſo ſur-charged with it, lying as heauy within me as Lead, that I was not able for my life to digeſt it. And albeit I was ſomewhat fearefull, leſt my fellow ſhould finde fault with me, yet did I not ſticke to ſay vnto mine Hoſt; How comes this fleſh to be ſo tough, and of that euill relliſh, that a man can ſcarce faſten vpon it with his teeth? Hee told me; Do not you ſee, Sir, that it is fleſh that hath been newly kill'd, and wants time for the mortifying and making of it tender? Hereupon, my Companion taking his Q: It is not (quoth he) any lack of mortifying, or hanging in the ayre; or that it does not eate tender and ſhort inough, that makes this

Gentleman to be ſo ſqueamiſh: but becauſe he hath been fed from his cradle with ſpice-Buns, Sugar-Cakes, and freſh Egges, all other meates ſaue theſe, are hard both to his teeth and ſtomake. I ſhrunke vp my ſhoulders, and held my peace, as one that knew full well, that I was now as it were in another kinde of world, and that it was but one dayes patience more, and then I ſhould be out of danger of vnderſtanding ſuch kinde of language any longer.

But for all this, I could not here-with reſt contented, but ſtill mee thought this meat had an ill ſmatch with it, of I know not what.

And as I was thinking thereon, it preſently came in my minde what vnneceſſary oathes mine Hoſt made the night before, when he vow'd and ſwore it was Veale.

This ſwearing and ſtaring of his, I did not like halfe well, and did therefore thinke, he did the rather lye, becauſe he did ſo deepely ſweare: for the truth hath no need of the confirmation of an Oath, vnleſſe it be in open Court before a Iudge, or in caſe of great neceſsitie. Beſides, all ſuch ſatisfaction, as offers it ſelfe by way of preuention, before the thing deliuered, is queſtioned, or called into doubt, makes the faith of the reporter to bee euermore ſuſpected. I knew not what did ayle me, or what might be the cauſe of this; for although I did not really conceiue any aſſured ill, I did as little preſume, that there could be any good meaning herein. It was onely a touch of my imagination, a ſtrange apprehenſion, that I had in my head at that time: Wherevpon I did not long dwell, nor made any great reckoning of it. So paſsing it ouer, I call'd for a reckoning, my Companion told me, I ſhould let my purſe alone, for he would pay for vs both. Whereupon I went aſide, leauing him to be the Pay-maſter: thinking with my ſelfe, that out of courteſie, and this our new acquaintance, he was not willing, that I ſhould pay my ſhare of ſo ſmall a ſhot.

Qui ſæpè iurat, ſæpè periurat.

I was very thankefull to him in my heart for this his kindneſſe, and was not wanting to ſing forth his praiſes, for this his freeneſſe and loue, which he had ſhowne vnto me, euer ſince that he met me vpon the way, giuing me my horſe-hyre, and my dyet *gratis*; not ſuffering me to ſpend one penny in his company.

I thought with my ſelfe, this world would ſtill hold, and that whereſoeuer I went, I ſhould meet with ſome one or other that would beare my charges, and let me ride for nothing. I had now taken heart vnto me, and began to be prettily well fleſht, and to forget my mothers teat, as if it had been noynted with Aloes, Worme-wood, or the like bitter ſtuffe, and ſo in all other things did I doe the like, whereunto I had beene formerly accuſtomed. And becauſe it ſhould not be ſaid of me, *Que delos ingratos eſtaua lleno el infierno*; That hell is full of vngratefull perſons: While he was paying the ſhot, I was willing to ſhew ſome part of my thankefulneſſe, by leading out his Aſſes to drinke, and carrying them backe againe to their cratches, to the end, that while they were ſaddling and making all things ready, they might champe vpon their ſtrawe, and make an end of their prouender. I put a helping hand to all that was needfull, rubbing their foreheads and their eares, as well as I was able.

He that receiues a courteſie, euer ought to ſhew his readineſſe to doe that man ſeruice from whom it comes.

Whil'ſt I was buſied in this, I had laid my Cloke vpon a bench hard by, which like Quick-ſiluer, before the fire, or ſmoake before the winde, was vaniſht away in an inſtant, that I could neuer ſet eye on it any more; nor could deuiſe in the world, what ſhould become of it. I thought with my ſelfe, that either mine Hoſt or my Conſort, had, to make themſelues merry therewith, hid it from me in ieſt. But it was now no more a ieſting matter, for they beganne to ſweare in good earneſt that they had it not, nor knew what was become of it; I made diligent ſearch for it euen to the very gate which was ſhut, and had not yet been opened. There was no body there in the houſe but our ſelues,

ſelues, and mine Hoſt, and therefore me thought it was impoſsible, that it ſhould be loſt, and that I might peraduenture forget my ſelfe; and haue put it apart in ſome other place. Hereupon, I ſought vp and downe all the houſe; and going out of the Hall into the Kitchen, it was my hap to come into a back-Court, where I found a great plaſh of freſh bloud, and hard by it a Mules skinne, fairely ſtretcht but to its full breadth and length, from the which the feet were not yet cut off; The eares were there at large, and all that part of the head towards the fore-head, neere whereunto were thoſe other bones belonging to the head, onely the tongue, and the braines were wanting: Which I no ſooner perceiued, but I was preſently confirmed in my doubt.

Hereupon I ſtreight goe forth to call in my Companion; To whom, when I had made ſhow of the Hide, that had bound in our breakefaſt and our ſupper, I then ſaid vnto him; What thinke you now, Sir? Are not thoſe things (trow you) Sugar-cakes, and new-laid Egges, in compariſon of theſe that we eate at home? This is that Veale, forſooth, which you ſo extolled to the skies; and this the Hoſt, you promiſed ſhould prouide vs ſuch dainty cheere.

What thinke you of the ſupper now, and the breakefaſt which he hath beſtowed vpon vs? Hath he not dealt well with vs I pray? haue we not beene excellently well vſed? He (good man) is none of theſe coozening Hoſts, and cheating Inne-keepers, that will ſell a Cat for a Cony; and put away Mutton, for Veale. This is that innocent man, that may goe vnmaskt throughout the world, and care not who ſees him, and lookes him in the face, he is ſo honeſt a man. This is that *integer vitæ, ſceleriſq; purus*, ſo vnſpotted in his life and conſcience, and ſo free from all ill dealing, that out of his owne integritie, made no bones to curſe our Hoſteſſe, and the euill vſage of her Gheſts.

He was ſtrooken ſo dumpe, and ſo full of wonder, to ſee what I had ſhow'd him, that he had not a word to ſay; but with his head caſt downe into his boſome, went ſlinking away from me, and was ſo amazed at this ſtrange ſight, that all the day after till we parted company, I could not get from him ſo much as a vvord, ſaue what paſt at our parting when we were to take our leaue each of other. And that which then came from him, ſeemed to bee drawne out of the very guts of him, as you ſhall heare anon.

Howbeit, I vvas not (as euery man may imagine) very well pleaſed vvith this vnhappy accident; yet notwithſtanding, (that this his floud of laughter might by this meanes be dammed vp, or the current thereof turn'd another way, wherewith euery moment before, my very heart and ſoule was ouerflowne, and in a manner, quite drowned.) I was wonderfully ouer-ioyed with this my misfortune, vvhich did ſo much the leſſe grieue me, becauſe he had ſo great a ſhare in it.

What vvith this (which was vantage inough) and the ſtrong beliefe that I had that no man but mine Hoſt could poſsibly conuay away my Cloake, I began ſomewhat more boldly to charge him vvith it; It being euer incident to a good cauſe, to put ſtrength into weakeneſſe; and to adde courage to the faint-hearted I began to put it home to him, and told him plainely that hee ſhould anſwere me my Cloake, and that he had ſtolne it: But he very ſcornefully denies it, ieering and fleering at me; and the more earneſt I vvas, the more merry he makes himſelfe. Wherewith my patience was ſo much mooued, that I could not hold, but threatned him (in my choller) vvith the Iuſtice; yet did I not touch at all on this new buſineſſe, nor ſpake one word to him of that which I had ſeene. But he, for that I vvas a young Lad, a poore Boy, and no body to take my part, began to domineere ouer me, telling me, that he had a rod for me in his pocket, and other the like reproachfull words, termes onely befitting Cowards, and men of baſe condition, ſuch as himſelfe. But becauſe worms will turne againe, if they be trod on, and the gentleſt

He that hath right, hath courage.

Lambes grow mad, if they be too much wrong'd, vpon multiplying of words one begetting another; and the latter worſe then the former, at laſt wee fell foule. And as the fewneſſe of my yeeres, and weakneſſe of my ſtrength would giue me leaue, I tore out halfe a brick-bat from the ſide of a Bench there-by, and threw it at him as hard as euer I could driue; which, if I had hit him withall, and that he had not hid himſelfe behind a pillar, I thinke I had beaten out his braines, and beene fully reuenged of the wrong he did me. But hee ſcap't my hands, and ranne as faſt as his legges would carry him into his chamber; whence he came foorth in all haſte with his ſword drawne in his hand.

He that is faulty turnes coward.

Here you may ſee, what manner of men theſe roaring-Boyes be, ſince that this great Gull doth not now ſeeke to defend himſelfe with the force of his ſtrong and brawnie armes, againſt thoſe weake and tender twigges of mine; forgetting, that he ſaid, he would whip me, ſeeking now to offend mee by force of armes, I beeing but a griſle, and a poore ſimple diſ-armed chicken. In this manner then, he makes towards me with his naked ſword; whileſt I fearing what might follow, ſtood vpon my gard with two pibble-ſtones, which I had pluck't out of the pauement. Which when hee ſaw I had now ready in my hand, his courage began to be abated, and did not dare to draw neerer vnto me.

Now with the noyſe and out-cries that were made vpon this occaſion, the whole Inne was in an vprore; and all the neighbours there-abouts, hearing the ſtirre, came flocking in vpon vs, to ſee what the matter was. All the whole ſtreet haſted thither, and with them a great throng of people, as well Iuſtices, as Notaries. There came in two *Alcaldes*, both at the ſame inſtant, and each of them ſtroue to haue the hearing of the cauſe, labouring to preuent each other. And the Notaries for their priuate gaine, euery one ſaid, that this buſineſſe did belong vnto him; whereupon they grew at difference and oddes betweene themſelues.

Vpon this contention, grew a ſecond quarrell, noleſſe fierce and tumultuous, then was ours: for on both ſides, they digg'd vp thei r Grandfathers graues, twitting one another in the teeth with their fathers and their mothers, not ſparing one anothers wiues, ripping vp their faults, and the courſe of life that they led; wherein perhaps they did not lie: But they would no more vnderſtand one another, then did we. Whileſt we were in this hurly-burly, come in certaine *Regidores*, accompanied with other worſhipfull Burgomaſters of the Towne, who laboured to make peace betweene them, and laid hold on me. *Que ſiempre quebra la ſoga, por lo mas delgado*: for the weakeſt muſt ſtil go to the wal: and the Skeane there breaketh ſooneſt, where the thred is fineſt. The ſtranger, the poore ſoule, the miſerable man, he that ha's no ſhelter, no friends to ſticke vnto him; no great Ones to fauour him, he that is depriued of all ſuccour and comfort, and hath no body to defend him, he is the man, whom the Iuſtice doth firſt take in hand.

They would needs know, what this ſtirre was, and whence it grew. They call'd me aſide, and tooke my confeſsion: I plainely told them all that had paſſed; but becauſe ſome that were there by, might chance to ouer-heare me, I went apart with the *Alcaldes*, and told them in ſecret, that which I knew concerning the *Machuelo*, or little young Mule. They were firſt of all deſirous to approue and verifie the cauſe; but it ſeeming vnto them, that they had time inough to diſpatch all, they vſed diligence for the apprehending of mine Hoſt; who was careleſſe of any ill that might come vnto him for that offence. And perſwading himſelfe, that all this inquiry was onely about the Cloake, made but a ieſt of it, and laugh't at it as a thing of nothing, and could no way touch him, for default of Information, and thoſe due proofes that I was to make, hauing no man, beſides the Carrier, to witneſſe for me, that I was ſeen to come in thither with a Cloake.

But

But afterwards perceiuing, that by little and little, this piece of hangings came to be ſeene, to wit, the skinne, and the reſt of the appurtenances, the copy of my Gentlemans countenance was quickly altered, and began ſuddenly to looke blanke vpon the matter: ſo that, when they began to examin him, and had withall before his face ſhewd him the skinne; confeſsing the fact, hee was conuicted, not hauing the heart to deny any thing, but told them the truth of all that had paſt.

For it is an aſſured truth, that baſe-minded men, infamous in their life, and ill-conditioned in their carriage and manners, are (as I ſaid before) ranke cowards, and of no courage in the world. For, without hauing the torment giuen him, or before euer that he was threatned with the Racke; vndemanded, he declared the Thefts, and the Rogueries that he had done, as well in that his Inne, as his robbing vpon the high-way, when he was a ſhepherd: whereby he got him a Stocke, to ſet vp for himſelfe in the world. I all this while liſtened very cloſe; looking ſtill when his confeſsion ſhould bring my cloake to light; but out of the malice and hatred that he bare vnto me, that was quite left out. I vſed my beſt diligence I could, to make it appeare, but all would not ſerue the turne. After they had made an end of taking our declarations, I meane, the Carriers and mine, becauſe we were ſtrangers, they did in that particular ratifie and approue what we had depoſed. And whileſt this Plea was depending, whether or no (till it were determined) they ſhould carry me to priſon, and keepe me there (*tras paciente, aporreado* (as they ſay) I muſt haue the wrong, & be beaten too,) there were diuers diſputes thervpon. The Notaries were very glad of this, & they did pretend I ſhould: but one of the *Alcaldes* ſtood vp and ſaid, That I had reaſon on my ſide, and was in no fault at all: and that they had no reaſon to queſtion me any farther; for it was puniſhment enough already for me, and too much too, that I was left thus naked in my hoſe and dubblet, and was coozened of my cloake. Hereupon, they let mee goe, but mine Hoſt, he was led away to priſon. And leauing him there, we prepare for our iourney; and all things being made ready, we begin to ſet forward, paſsing along that ſtreet, where the Clergy-men ſtood looking for vs, each of them tooke his Aſſe, and away we go. By the way I told them the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe: they bleſt themſelues, when they heard of it, and much pitied my caſe. But becauſe they could not helpe it, they committed it to God. My ſelfe and my Companion, what with the long time that was ſpent in this broyle, and the haſte we had to be gone, wee went away without hearing Maſſe; ſeeming rather to flie, then go foorth of the Towne. I (for my part) neuer miſt Maſſe before, being accuſtomed all my life-time to that daily exerciſe of deuotion. From that time forward, it entred into my head, That from ſo bad a beginning, it was impoſsible to looke for a good ending. And that now, nothing could ſucceed well and happily vnto me. And ſo it fell out, as you ſhall heare hereafter. Nor can it be otherwiſe expected, when we ſerue our ſelues, and not God firſt; and not begin with him, before we begin our buſineſſe.

He that leaues God, God will leaue him.

CHAP.

Chap. VII.

Mans misfortune is here discourſed of, and to that purpoſe you haue a ſtory told you of the gods of thoſe ancienter times: And how Guzman, *being thought to bee a Thiefe, was apprehended; but afterwards being knowne what he was, hee was ſet at liberty. One of the Clergie-men promiſeth to tell vs a ſtory, to entertaine the time withall, vpon the way.*

The Egiptians adored Fortune *as a goddeſſe.*

THe *Egyptians*, a great while ago, in thoſe times of old being notable Sooth-ſayers, (as indeed they were) amongſt many other errours, which they had, this was one amongſt the reſt, that they adored *Fortune*, as a Goddeſſe; verily beleeuing, that there was ſome ſuch thing indeed. To her, they celebrated a Feaſt on the firſt day of the yeere, preparing ſumptuous Tables, making great Feaſts and coſtly Banquets, in a thankefull acknowledgment of the fore-paſſed yeare, and intreating her fauour, for that which was to come. They were fully perſwaded, that this Goddeſſe was ſhe, that had the diſpoſall of all things, giuing and taking away at her pleaſure, as ſupreme Gouerneſſe ouer all humane things. This they did, becauſe they wanted the knowledge of one onely true God, whom we adore and worſhip, by whoſe powerfull hand, and diuine will, heauen and earth are gouerned, and whatſoeuer is created in them both, be it viſible, or inuiſible. It ſeemed ſomewhat ſtrange vnto them, and were touched therewith to the quicke, when misfortunes began to light vpon them; to ſee how one miſchiefe came vpon the necke of another; one no ſooner paſt, but another at the heeles of them, not giuing them one howre of eaſe and quiet, neuer making an end, till they had made an end of man, and quite ouerthrowne him horſe and foot: And how againe at another time (like ſo many Cowards) they come trooping all at once vpon vs, and neuer leaue aſſaulting vs, till they haue vtterly ruin'd vs, and throwne this our houſe of clay downe to the ground.

And on the contrary ſide againe, the time doth not aſcend with that nimbleneſſe and quicke motion to the top of the higheſt mountaines, as Fortune doth eleuate and lift men vp by wayes and meanes, neither ſeene, nor thought vpon, neuer ſuffering them to continue ſtill firme, either in the one, or t'other eſtate; to the end that he that is deiected, may not deſpaire; and hee that is exalted, may not preſume. If the light of faith were wanting vnto me, as it was vnto them, I might (giuing credit to this their errour) happely ſay, when ſuch like misfortunes ſhould befall me; *Bien vengas mal, ſi ſolo vienes.* Welcome is that misfortune which comes alone: yeſterday morning I did complaine of little vvearineſſe, and of the two demy-Chickens that I had to dinner, going diſguized in your Hermits habit, as vnwilling to be knowne. Afterwards, I came to make my ſupper vpon the ſtinking panch of a young Mule; and which was worſe, to feed vpon the fleſh and braines thereof, which vvas all one in a manner, as if I ſhould haue deuoured mine owne fleſh; I meane, by his [a] fathers ſide; vvhich may be euery mans caſe, as well as mine. And for an vpſhot of all, the ill lucke that I had at laſt, to be coozened of my Cloake. *Poco danno eſpanta, y mucho amanſa*: little loſſes doe onely ſtartle and amaze men at the firſt, but great ones do quell and daunt a man, making him as gentle as a Lambe.

[a] *The Sire of a Mule, is an Aſſe.*

What treaſon hath beene plotted againſt me? vvhat ſquint-ey'd Starre hath ſcowl'd vpon me? vvhat misfortune followed me, ſince I came from home? For from the time, that I firſt put foorth of doores, all things haue

gone

gone amiſſe with me, one miſchance being the fore-runner of another, and the ſad preſager of worſer things to come, which like a double *Tertian* went increaſing vpon me, euery fit being vvorſe and more violent, then the former, not allowing me the leaſt *intervallum* of time, or any ſpace or reſpit in the vvorld to take any reſt.

Mans life is a warre-fare vpon earth, there is no certainty therein; no ſettled aſſurance, no eſtate that is permanent; no pleaſure that is perfect; no content that is true; but all is counterfeit and vaine. Wilt thou ſee, that this is true? Then hearken to that which I ſhall tell thee.

Mans life, what it is.

The great god *Iupiter* (for ſo the Poets faigne him) hauing created all things vpon earth; and man to be the enioyer of them, commanded the god *Content*, to reſide in the world, not beleeuing, nor preuenting the ingratitude, which afterwards they fell into, following their owne proper pleaſures and delights, and bearing themſelues in a high and proud faſhion: for hauing this *god* continuing amongſt them, they did not ſo much as thinke on any other. To him they did ſacrifice, to him they offered their oblations, his name they celebrated with ioy; and to him onely did they ſing Songs of prayſe and thankſgiuing. *Iupiter* ſcorning this contempt, and being mightily offended vvith man for this ſtrange neglect, called a Councell of the gods; and when they were all aſſembled together, he made vnto them a long Diſcourſe, wherin he informed them, of the euill Correſpondence which man held with him, for that they did onely adore *Content*, as their true god; not conſidering the benefits vvhich they had receiued from his prodigall hand, being meerely his workmanſhip, and by him created of nothing. And that therefore they ſhould deliuer their Opinions, vvhat order was to be taken, for the redreſſing of ſo foule an abuſe; and vvhat Medicines to be applied for the curing of this their madneſſe.

A morall Fable of the gods of old time, and the Councel that was held in heauen againſt Mankind.

Some of the milder gods, out of their tender hearts, and mercifull natures, ſpake thus vnto *Iupiter*:

Man, you know, is but a weake kind of creature, framed of a frayle and brittle matter, a corruptible ſubſtance, ſoone diſſolu'd and turn'd to nothing; and therefore we thinke it fit, that they ſhould be holpen and held vp by vs, and that we ſhould yeeld them our ſuccour and aſsiſtance in all that we can: For, if it were poſsible, that vve could exchange fortunes with them, and vvere in the ſame ſtate and condition as they are, and euery way equall with them, I doubt me, vve ſhould do iuſt as they do. And therefore we are not to make any great reckoning of the matter: but if we doe, and that they muſt be proceeded againſt, we for our parts are verily perſwaded, that ſome mild and gentle correction will be a ſufficient remedy for the preſent.

Momus would faine haue ſpoke his mind, and his tongue itch't to bee let looſe, hauing already entred into ſome free language, and would haue laſh't out farther, had he not beene commanded to hold his peace, and to forbeare till it came to his turne, and then he ſhould haue a full hearing. Hee would gladly haue taken hold on that occaſion, to haue incenſed *Iupiter*, becauſe it did ſo fairely offer it ſelfe vnto him: but obeying for the preſent, he meditated in the meane while on a long Oration, vvhich he meant ſhould make for his purpoſe, vvhen it came to his turne to ſpeake. Howbeit, there were not ſome wanting in the *interim*, of equall (almoſt) condition vvith himſelfe, and of the ſame humour, vvho ſtood vp and ſaid:

It is not fit (great god of Heauen) to leaue ſo heynous a fault vnpuniſhed: for the offence is infinit, being committed againſt ſo infinit a Maieſtie; and therefore the puniſhment ought likewiſe to be infinit. Our opinion is, that they ſhould be vtterly deſtroyed, and made an end of at once, and neuer to haue any more of them created anew; for there is no neceſsity at all of their being and liuing in the world, but may very well be ſpared.

Others

others vvould not agree to that motion, but did hold it fit, that great ſtore of Thunder-bolts, with fearfull flaſhes of Lightning, ſhould be throwne downe vpon them, and conſume them all; and that others more good ſhould be created a-new.

Thus as they were deliuering their opinions, being more or leſſe rigorous, according to their ſeuerall qualities and complexions, till it came to *Apollo's* turne to ſpeake, who crauing leaue of the Houſe, and their fauour obtained, in a graue voice, and with a cheerefull countenance, he thus expreſt himſelfe:

Apollo's *ſpeech in mans fauour.*

Supreme Scepter-ſwaying *Iupiter*, higheſt amongſt the gods, both in power, and in pitie: That grieuous accuſation, wherewith thou chargeſt Man, is ſo iuſt, that we can not gaine-ſay, or contradict any vengeance, vvhich thou ſhalt take of them. Yet withall, I can not (out of that great reſpect which I beare vnto thee) but vtter what I thinke, and plainly to ſhew vnto thee, what I haue conceiued in my minde, my words being as free from paſsion, as I hope they ſhall be from offence.

If thou deſtroy the world, in vaine then are thoſe things, which thou haſt therein created; and it were imperfection in thee, to vn-make that, which thou haſt already made; only for to mend that which thou now findeſt amiſſe: Much leſſe, vvould I haue thee to repent thy ſelfe that thou haſt made Man; for that will be but to diſcredit thy ſelfe and thine owne worke. Beſides, how can it ſtand with the power and goodneſſe of a Creator, to take too ſtrict a courſe againſt his Creature, and to exceed, by extraordinary meanes, in his chaſtiſements?

To deſtroy theſe that are now liuing, and to create others a-new, I hold that not ſo fit to be done by thee. For thou muſt either giue them, or not giue them free-will: if thou giue them it, they muſt neceſſarily then be ſuch manner of men, as their fore-fathers were: If thou not giue it them, they ſhall not be men: And ſo thou ſhalt haue created in vaine that ſo great and glorious a frame of Heauen, Earth, Starres, Moone, Sunne, together with the compoſition of the Elements, and millions more of things, which thou haſt made in ſo exact a manner, and ſuch a ſingular perfection. So that (which importeth your ſeruice, if you will be pleaſed to take it into conſideration) there remaineth but one thing to be done to ſet all right againe, without ſeeking for any other remedy; or that you ſhall be driuen to vſe any violent or rigorous proceeding againſt them, to the preiudice of your clemencie.

Thou (O *Iupiter*) gau'ſt them the God Content, vvhom they were to haue with them as long as it pleaſed thee, and no longer: for vpon thy will and pleaſure, all things both in Heauen and earth haue their dependency. Now, had they beene ſo wiſe, that they could haue continued thankefull towards thee, and haue conſerued themſelues in iuſtice and obedience towards thee, it had been a thing repugnant to the goodneſſe of thy nature and iuſtice, not to vphold and protect them, by inlarging thy fauours towards them, and multiplying thy bleſsings vpon them. But ſince they haue diſ-merited this by diſobedience, thou oughteſt in ſome ſort to puniſh them. For it is not fit, that they ſhould in tyrannous manner, & with a ſtrong hand poſſeſſe theſe ſo great bleſsings, to offend thee thereby: But thou oughteſt rather to take this their god from them, and in his ſtead to ſend downe his brother Diſcontent amongſt them, who is very like in fauour vnto him, and doth reſemble him ſo neere, that a man can hardly diſcerne the one from the other. And ſo by this meanes, they will euer hereafter come to acknowledge their own miſery, and thy mercy; thy happy eſtate, and their owne wretched condition; thy eaſe, and their trouble; their paine, and thy glory; thy power, and their owne weakeneſſe. And then, as thou ſhalt ſee cauſe, thou maiſt diſtribute thy fauours to thoſe that ſhall deſerue them; and according to thy louing kindneſſe recom-

recompence euery man according to thine owne good will and pleaſure, not making thy benefits alike common to the good and the bad, by ſuffering all men equally to enioy one and the ſame happineſſe. This courſe being taken with them, I am of opinion, that it will not onely be a ſufficient puniſhment vnto them; but will alſo bring them to a due acknowledgement of their errour. I haue ſpoke my minde and ſhall now leaue it vnto thee (thou mercy-imbracing *Iupiter*) to doe that herein which ſhall ſute beſt with thine owne good liking, and ſhall make moſt for thy ſeruice.

Momus *mans ancient enemy.*

With this briefe aduice, he ended his Oration. Then *Momus*, with his venemous tongue, began to lay about him; labouring to exaggerate the offence, and to ſet it forth in its vileſt colours, induced thereunto not ſo much for goodneſſe ſake, as that inueterated hatred which he euermore bare vnto mankinde. But notice being taken of his paſsion (which was a knowne diſeaſe in him) his opinion was reproued, and cryde downe by the generall voice of that higheſt Court of Parliament: All commending the motion that vvas made by *Apollo*. The execution of whoſe ſpeech was (with an vnanimous conſent) committed to *Mercury*: Who preſently (ſpreading his wings, and breaking with them through the ayre) deſcended downe vpon the earth, where he found the men of this world with their god, *Content*, feeding and making merry together, doing him all the honour they could deuiſe, being farre from any the leaſt thought, that this their god ſhould (while the world indured) be alienated from their poſſeſsion.

Mercury, *by order from* Ioue, *deſcends on earth, and to what end.*

Mercury came to this god, where he was; and hauing in ſecret deliuered the Embaſſage vnto him, ſent from the gods aboue, was (though ſore againſt his will) inforced to yeeld thereunto. The men were herevpon in an vprore, and ſought to hinder it all they could, and began with might and maine to intereſt themſelues in the cauſe; and ſeeing that there was no remedy, but that this their god muſt be taken away from them, they ſtroue to defend him with all the ſtrength they could make; and taking ſtrong hold of him, they tugged hard for him, as deſirous to retaine him ſtill amongſt them.

Iupiter perceiuing how the vvorld vvent, and what a coyle they kept about him, came downe amongſt them, and whileſt theſe men were buſied in laying faſt hold on his cloathes, (vſing a pretty ſlight) he cunningly conuay'd away *Content* from amidſt his cloathes, leauing them *Diſcontent* in his ſtead, with the ſame cloathes, and the very ſame habit of raiment, wherewith *Content* was at that time apparelled, taking him from thence away with him to heauen. Wherewith the men that were in this broyle were very well pleaſed (though thus deceiued) thinking that they had preuailed in their purpoſe, and obtained vvhat they deſired, ſince they had their god ſtill amongſt them: But it vvas not ſo well with them, as they thought it to be.

This errour of thoſe former times (the ſame deceit yet liuing ſtill amongſt them) hath continued euen to this preſent age. Men did thinke that *Content* remained ſtil with them, and that they had him ſure inough heere vpon earth. But it is nothing ſo; for it is onely the bare raiment, and outward ſhape and reſemblance, which they inioy with them; and *Diſcontent*, clapt into his cloathes. And if thou beleeue otherwiſe, or conceiu'ſt the contrary, thou art vvide of the truth, and a meere ſtranger thereunto. Wilt thou, that I make this plaine vnto thee? Marke well then what I ſhall ſay vnto thee.

Weigh and conſider with thy ſelfe, in any kinde of manner thou thy ſelfe ſhalt deuiſe: the Feaſts, the Sports, the Bankets, the Muſicks, all the delights and ioyes, and whatſoeuer elſe may moſt moue thy inclination to the higheſt point of all, which thine owne deſire can ſuggeſt and paint forth vnto thee to the life. If I ſhall aske thee by the way, Whither goeſt thou? Thou wilt anſwere me perhaps, and that very proudly: To ſuch a feaſt of *Content*. I giue it for granted, that there thou doeſt receiue it, and that the place doth affoord it thee;

thee; the Gardens being freſh and full of flowers; the Riuers plated with their ſiluer-ſtreames, and that the Fountaines diſtilling their drops of pearle, may much cheere and glad thy heart. I ſuppoſe that thou haſt banketed thy ſelfe in ſweet and pleaſant Arbours, where neither the Sunne did offend thee, nor the ayre annoy thee. And that thou didſt inioy thy deſires to their full height, & that thou hadſt all the ſports & paſtimes that a man could wiſh. Yet notwithſtanding, there is no contentment ſo abſolute in this vvorld, which is not watred vvith ſome ſorrow. And though in all theſe things thou hadſt no diſtaſte at all giuen thee; but hadſt euery thing according to thine owne mind: yet when thou returneſt home to thine own houſe; or layeſt thee down in thy bed to take thy reſt it is not poſsible but thou ſhalt find thy ſelfe weary, duſty & ſweaty, to haue loſt thy ſtomake, or taken cold, to grow heauy, melancholly, and ſad; and peraduenture become either mad, or dead. For amidſt our greateſt pleaſures, happen the greateſt misfortunes: And are vſually wont to be vnto vs Veſpers of feare, and of horrour; and not Veſpers, vvhere the night paſſeth merrily away from the beginning to the middle, and from the middle to the end: for in the midſt of this thy idolatry, all ſhall bee taken from thee. Set not thy heart therefore vpon them; but ſlight them, and let them goe by, as if thou didſt not know them: for there is no truſt to be had in them.

Now, by this time, (I doubt not) but thou wilt ingenuouſly confeſſe, that this diſguiſe did deceiue thee, theſe cloathes coozen thee, and this maske ſo blinde thy eye-ſight; That whereas thou didſt verily thinke, that thou hadſt *Content* now ſafe inough in thy hands, thou hadſt nothing more but his outward raiment; and in it, *Diſcontent*. Now doeſt thou ſee, how there is no *Content* vpon the earth; and that our true *Content* is onely in Heauen. And therefore, till thou meet with it there; doe not looke for it heere.

True content is in heauen.

When I reſolued on my departure, (O good God) what a deale of *content* did repreſent it ſelfe vnto me? Me thought, the very thought of it wrought wonderfully vpon me, apprehending no happineſſe to be equall vnto this. With theſe eyes of my imagination, I beheld onely *Aprill*, and the beauty of the Fields in that ſeaſon; not ſo much as once thinking on the *Auguſt*, that was to come after: As if I vvere to ſuffer nothing, and had been made of ſome impoſsible ſubſtance, that could not be ſubiect to perturbations; or theſe fooliſh croſſes of the world. Thoſe long and euen wayes, I conceited as things, that I was not to goe; at leaſt, not to be wearied with them. To eate and drinke at your Innes, and other the like vittailing houſes, (as one that did not know what kinde of Vermine, theſe bloud-ſuckers were,) I thought they vvould haue giuen me my meat for nothing; or if they did take money for it, that it would haue beene much better then what you haue heard me tell you. The variety and greatneſſe of things; as Birds, Beaſts, Mountaines, Woods, Cities, and whatſoeuer was inhabited with people, as if I had them all already in my hand, all did figure forth vnto me *content*, and nothing but *content*; but could not finde it in any thing, but in a good and honeſt life.

The ſtrange alterations in this world.

I did frame in the fabricke of my braine, Caſtles of *Content*, and that all things ſhould ſucceed proſperouſly with me, and that where-ſoeuer I came, I ſhould meet with my Mother, that ſhould make much of me, and my Maid, that ſhould make me vnready, and bring my ſupper to bed to mee, and that ſhould helpe me on in the morning with my cloathes, and fetch me my breakfaſt. Good God, who vvould thinke, that the world were ſo large and ſo long as it is? I had ſeene it in ſome Maps, and me thought it was all plaine and ſmooth, and huddled (as it ſeemed there to be) all together, without any great either difference, or diſtance. I did not imagine, there could haue been ſo many troubles, and ſo many miſeries in it. But to ſay, I neuer thought it, is a thing that betrayes a man to haue lineally deſcended of a race of Coxcombs,

Inſipientis eſt dicere non putarem.

it

it is a property, that belongs onely vnto fooles; it is the excuſe of rude and ignorant Aſſes, the childs helpe, and the careleſſe mans refuge. For he that is wiſe and diſcreet, ought euer to thinke on things afore-hand, to fore-caſt the worſt; and to preuent a miſchiefe before it come.

But I did like a ſimple Youth, (as I was) hauing neither wit nor gouernment in me; and therefore I was iuſtly puniſhed, for that liuing ſo at eaſe as I did; and being as it were in Paradiſe, I would goe abroad into the world; and like my firſt fore-fathers, could not ſee when I was well, but I know not out of what vaine humour, muſt goe ſeeke after the knowledge of good, and ill. How many things began I then to call to minde, when I came out of the Inne without my Cloake, and was not onely coozened, but made a common laughing ſtocke, to as many as lookt vpon me! I would faine haue then beene feeding on the fleſh-pots of *Egypt*: O how I did long to be at home againe! But (as the ſaying is) *el bien, haſta que ſe pierde, no ſe conoçe.* Man knowes not what happineſſe is, till he want it.

Magis carendo, quàm fruendo, &c.

We were all ſad and heauy, and iogged on along in a ſullen and melancholy kinde of faſhion; and now my honeſt Carrier was no more ſo full of his laughing, as he was before; the winde was laid in that corner, by the tricke that mine Hoſt had put vpon him. Before, he threw ſtones on my houſe top, thinking to breake the Tyles, and cracke my Roofe: but when hee found his owne to be made of glaſſe, he left his flinging, with-drew his hand, and kept himſelfe quiet. It is leſſe ill, and more diſcretion to conſider with a mans ſelfe, before he ſpeake, what he may chance to heare; and before that he doe a wrong, whether it may be returned vpon himſelfe, or no? It is not good for a man to thruſt himſelfe wilfully into danger. For when a man ſhall take too much liberty to himſelfe; he ſhall finde a tongue for a tongue, and a hand for a hand. All things haue their equall meaſure; like doe, like haue: And he that will be honoured of all; muſt honour all.

Morall leſſons.

If it enter not (yet at leaſt it ought) into thy conſideration, that what thou haſt ſaid or done in ſecret, either ſhall, or may be publiſhed by ſome one or other to the world, and that thou maiſt meet with ſuch a one, that either in word, or in deed, may reply that vnto thee, which thou wouldſt not vvillingly heare, and leſſe indure: Doe not ſtand vpon thy ſtrength, nor rely too much on thine owne might: For though thy affront be not written in thy fore-head; yet will it be made knowne to all the world. Doe not make thoſe thy enemies, whom with good vſage thou maiſt make thy friends. For it is not good to haue any enemy at all, though neuer ſo weake. For from a little ſparke, ariſeth oftentimes a great flame. What thing's ſo faire and beautifull in it ſelfe; what more worthy wiſe-men; what more befitting braue ſpirits and valiant Gentlemen, then to meaſure their action by the rule of reaſon, to bridle and reine in their paſsions, and to carry an euen hand in all that they doe; to the end that they may not act any thing vn-aduiſedly, and put themſelues vpon extremities? Doeſt thou not ſee, how the world is now altred with our Carrier? He was now as ſilent as the night, not a word that comes from him. He laughs no more, but hangs downe his head in his boſome, not daring for ſhame to lift it vp. Our good honeſt Clergy-men rode mumbling their Mattins to themſelues; I was thinking on mine owne mis-fortunes: and when all and euery one of vs were as it were in a wood, euen in the thickeſt of all our contemplations, (euery man thinking vpon his owne buſineſſe) two Miniſters of iuſtice, with their Officers at their heeles, came in purſuit of a Page, that had ſtolne from his Maſter great ſtore of money and iewels. And by the markes that were giuen them; it ſhould ſeeme it was ſuch another ſtrippling as my ſelfe. They had no ſooner ſpide me, but they cryde out aloud: Ah thou thiefe, haue we caught thee? wee haue thee ſafe enough now, thou canſt not eſcape our hands: And preſently hereupon they ſtrooke

Guzman *apprehended for a Thiefe, and his ſufferings.*

ſtrooke me off the Aſſe (my brother) with their Fiſts; and when they had me downe, laying faſt hold on me, they fell a ſearching mee, thinking to haue found the ſtolne-goods about me.

Sergeants and Catch-poles, an vnciuill kind of people.

They tooke off the Pack-ſaddles, ſearched the Pannels, leauing not ſo much roome, as you may put a pins-head betweene, which they did not narrowly pry into: and when they could find nothing there, then they beganne to exclaime, and cry out vpon me; Ah, thou thieſe, confeſſe and tell vs the truth; for we will hang thee here preſently, if thou delay vs any longer. They would not heare me, nor admit of any excuſe I could make for my ſelfe; and in deſpight of the world, without any other cauſe giuen, (ſaue their own ſelfe-will and opinion) I, and no other man, muſt needs be the fellow. They gaue me many blowes, thumpes on the breſt, boxes on the eare with the backes of their hands, and many other outrages, wherewith they tormented me, and all, that I might not be ſuffered by them to ſpeake for my ſelfe, and to pronounce ſomething in mine owne defence. And although it did much grieue me, to ſee how ill I was vſed by them, yet I could not chooſe but laugh to my ſelfe, for that my companion was worſe dealt withall; laying more load and harder blowes vpon him, than me, as a receiuer and concealer of this theft, and that he was my partner and ſharer therein.

Mans depraued diſpoſition, what effects it worketh.

Doeſt thou not here perceiue the peruerſe inclination of men, who haue ſcarce any feeling of their owne miſeries, when they ſee thoſe of their enemies, to be greater then their owne? I was not halfe Cater-couſins with him, becauſe by his meanes, I had loſt my Cloake, and ſup't vpon a Mule. And therefore I did beare mine owne hurt the better, becauſe hee ſuffered ſomewhat more than my ſelfe. They did beat him without mercy; they had no pitie of him in the world, but were ſtill bawlling vpon him, that hee ſhould diſcouer, whither he had carried theſe goods? and to what ſecret place hee had conueyd them?

** A Prouerbe.*

The poore man that was as innocent as my ſelfe, and as free from any ſuch fault, as the child that is new borne, did not know in the world what to doe. He thought at firſt that they had beene but in ieſt with him; but when he ſaw they were in earneſt, and paſt ſo farre beyond the bounds of ſport, and that it was now no longer a ieſting matter, * He curſt the dead to the diuell, & all thoſe that ſhould but ſhed a teare for him. This ſport did nothing pleaſe him, and wiſht by this time with all his heart, that he had neuer ſeene mee. The Gowne (as they ſay) was now bruſht cleane, not a ſpecke to bee ſeene; all was vnfolded, and ſearched ouer and ouer, but nothing at all to bee found: and though the theft appeared not, yet the rigour of their puniſhing ceaſed not: But as if they had the Law in their owne hands, or had beene to ſit vpon vs as our lawfull Iudges, they did vſe vs moſt cruelly both in word and deed: perhaps it was giuen them ſo in charge amongſt other their inſtructions. Now they being weary with punching vs, and wee with ſuffering it, they began to bind our hands, and pinion our armes, to carry vs backe vvith them to *Seuill*.

[a] The holy Inquiſition is well knowne to the world, what ſeuere courſes they take.

The ſeuereſt and cruelleſt Officers that are in all Spaine.

What baſe and vile people, are the Sergeants and Catch-poles.

Let it be in thy *Letany*, that God would deliuer thee from committing any offence againſt theſe three *Holy's*; The holy [a] *Inquiſition*, the holy [b] *Hermandad*, and the holy [c] *Cruſada*: But if thou bee faulty, then pray, That the Lord would deliuer thee from the holy *Hermandad*: for the other *Holy's*, hauing (as they haue) vpright Iudges, men of truth, knowledge, and Conſcience; their Miniſters notwithſtanding and vnder-Officers, are of a different condition. And your Sergeants and Catch-poles belonging to the holy *Hermandad*, are in the generall, a kind of moſt lewd and wicked people; men without Soules, and not worthy to be ſpoken of, or named amongſt honeſt men. And very many of them, for a very little matter, will not ſticke to ſweare that againſt thee, which thou neuer didſt, nor they neuer ſaw, more then the money which they

[b] Hermandad, *in Caſtile is a certaine Tribunall, that hath a great Iuriſdictiõ, and puniſheth the faults cõmitted in the fields, which hath great prerogatiues and exemptions from the kings of Spaine: And is in that reſpect amongſt them, that it is ſtyled by the name of* Santa, *or* holy.

[c] *The* Cruzada *is an Indulgence which the Popes granted to thoſe, that went to conquer the Holy-Land, which is now granted to the King of Spaine, by way of Subſidie againſt Infidels and Hereticket, giuing ſome ſmall almes towards ſo pious a worke.*

they tooke, to beare falſe witneſſe againſt thee, (vnleſſe thou beſtow the wine vpon them, or otherwiſe content them, by greaſing their fiſt.) They are in concluſion, of a raſcall kind of race; very Varlets, Buckle-boſomes, Collar-catchers: in a word, they are Sergeants, and Catch-poles; and ſo by conſequence, theeues, paſſants, or but an Ace leſſe; and (as we ſhall tell you hereafter) thoſe that rob the Common-wealth where-ſoeuer they come, as if they had a Commiſsion for theſe their open thefts. And now (my honeſt Sergeant) me thinkes I heare thee mutter, that I ſpeake amiſſe; telling mee, that thou (for thy part) art a very honeſt man, and doſt exerciſe thy Office well, without abuſe vnto any. I confeſſe as much, and ſay; that thou art ſuch an one, and that I know thee to be ſo. But tell me, my friend, (and let vs ſpeake it in ſecret betweene our ſelues; that no body may heare vs) doeſt not thou know, (and confeſſe ingenuouſly) that this is truth which I ſpeake of thy fellowes? if thou knowſt as much, (as thou canſt not chooſe) and that it is ſo indeed; I talke to them, and not to thee.

Now had we quite loſt our Clergy-men, we ſhooke hands with them at the firſt, who walked afoot their way, and we ours. Shall I tell you, vvhat I thought with my ſelfe? if you will giue me the hearing, I will. Truſt me, all the blowes that I receiued, nay, Death it ſelfe, would not haue beene halfe ſo grieuous vnto me, as to ſee my ſelfe brought backe againe, in this manner to mine owne Countrey, if their reſolution had held: if they had carried me to any place, where I was vnknowne to it, and it vnto me, it had not beene a Pins-poynt matter. I ſhould haue ſet light by it, and caſt it at my heele, eſpecially conſidering, that in the end I muſt be ſet at libertie, and come off cleare; and that the truth would at laſt ſhew it ſelfe, and make it knowne to the world that I was not the man, they took me to be. We were drawn along like dogges in a paire of couples, afflicted in that manner as thou mayſt imagine, (if euer the like misfortune ſhould happen vnto thee.) I know not how it came to paſſe, (but ſo it was) that one amongſt the reſt lookt ſtedfaſtly vpon me, and ſaid to one that was by him; How now, what's this? I feare mee we haue taken our marke amiſſe, and through our too much haſte, haue run into an errour. The other anſwered; Why thinke you ſo? Hee replide; Doe not you know, that he, whom we are to ſeeke after, wants his left Thumbe; and this Youth you ſee, is found in that part? Whereupon they went to read their [a] *Requiſitoria*, which did ſet downe the markes, whereby they ſhould know him, and they found they had beene deceiued almoſt in euery one of them. But queſtionleſſe, they had a great deſire to beat ſome-body, and ſo fell vpon him that came firſt to hand. Preſently thereupon, they vn-pinion'd vs, and looſed our hands, and crauing pardon, that they were ſo much miſtaken, they went their way, and left vs ſoundly payd for our paines; taking ſome few [b] *Quarto's* of the Carrier, for the ſight of the Commiſsion, to moyſten their mouthes herewith, at the next Inne that they ſhould light on.

No ay mal tan malo, de que no reſulte algo bueno.

There is no ill ſo bad, from whence there doth not ariſe ſome good. If they had not ſtolne my Cloake from me, by hauing that vpon my backe, they would not haue perceiued, whether I had beene ſound of my thumbes, or no? But had it ſo falne out, that they ſhould haue come to know any ſuch thing by me, it had come ſo out of ſeaſon, that rather then I would haue confeſt the fact, I would haue firſt indured a thouſand torments. In euery thing I had very good fortune. My money ſpent, my Cloake ſtolne, my belly hungry, my cheekes buffeted, my necke out of ioynt, and my teeth bathed in blood, with the bobs on my noſe, and the daſhes that they gaue mee on the mouth. My Companion, if he were not worſe, was no leſſe ill intreated then my ſelfe. And when they had vs'd vs both thus hardly, to make vs amends, they cry vs mercy, ſaying; That we are not the men. I pray marke, what a

[a] Requiſitoria *is a Iudges Warrant to another, wherein he requireth him to execute his command.* Guzman, *ſet free.*

[b] *The Spaniſh word* Quarto, *is a kind of braſſe coyne, whereof foure make 3. pence.*

Guzmans *good fortune what it was.*

pretty kind of pardon this was, and in what good time it came: first, they fall a beating of vs, before they examine vs; and when they haue almost maimed vs, to make vs amends, forsooth, they aske vs forgiuenesse.

The Clergy-men were now neere at hand, we presently ouertake them; they blest themselues when they saw vs. But I vp and told them, what was the cause of our liberty; for my Companion was so bang'd about the chappes, that he durst not dare to speake, for feare he should spit out his grinders.

Euery one got vpon his Asse, and we began to spurre on, but not with our heeles; because with them we were not able to reach to our Saddle-skirts. And I assure you in good faith, it were a world to tell you, what a bargaine we had of it; how the Faire went, and what a market we made of it.

Then said the younger of the two Clerkes; No more of this (my friends) it is enough. That we may forget part of these sorrowes past, and intertaine the way with some merriment; when my Companion hath ended his (*a*) Deuotion, I shall relate a Story vnto you; much whereof happened in *Seuill*. We tooke it all as a fauour; and the other hauing now ended his Orizons, attending this Discourse with a deepe silence, and an earnest desire, wee lookt still when he should begin.

(*a*) *The Clergy-men in Spaine, when they trauell on the way, haue certaine set prayers to say.*

Chap. VIII.

Wherein *Guzman de Alfarache* relateth the Story of those two Louers, *Ozmin* and *Daraxa*.

The Argvment.

How Ferdinand *and Isabell, King & Queene of* Spaine, *tooke* Baça, *a Citty of the Moores, wherein* Daraxa *a beautifull and noble Damozell was taken prisoner, whom Queene* Isabell *brought with her to* Seuill, *and there left her in the custodie of Don* Luys de Padilla. *And how* Ozmin *a young Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after he had suffered long sickenesse for the imprisonment of his faire* Daraxa, *went to the said Citty; together with the diuers accidents that happened to them both.*

AS soone as they had mumbled vp their prayers, (which they quickly dispatch't) they shut their Prayer-bookes, and putting them in their *Alforjas*, (which is a kind of Wallet) all of vs giuing diligent eare vnto him, the good Priest began his promised History after this manner:

The Catholike Kings *Don Ferdinand*, and *Donna Isabella*, being at the Siege of *Baça*, it was so well fought on both sides, (being as brauely defended, as it was valiantly assaulted) that for a long time it was not knowne vvhich side had the better, or vvhere the aduantage vvas like to fall, (Fortune had so equally spred her wings.) For albeit, the Kings Forces were the greater, and did exceed the other in number of men; yet the Moores (being likewise many) were vvonderfully strengthened by the good disposition of the situation of that City.

The Queene *Donna Isabell* remained in *Iaen*, making prouision of all things necessary for the Campe. And the King *Don Ferdinand* vvent foorth in person to supply the Army; which hee diuided into two parts: In the one he planted his Ordinance, recommending the care thereof to the Marquesses of *Cadiz*, and *Aquila*, to *Luys Fernandez Portocarrero*, Lord of *Palma*, and to the *Commendadores* of *Alcantara* and *Calatraua*, besides other Captaines and Souldiers.

Souldiers. In the other himſelfe vvas incamped, accompanied with the chiefe of his Nobilitie and Gentry, and moſt experienced men of Armes; ſo hedging in the Citie on euery ſide, that it ſeemed as a Center in the midſt of a large Circle.

The two Campes lay ſome halfe League the one from the other, if the compaſſe had runne right; but becauſe their paſſage was ſtopt, they beleaguerd the other halfe along by the mountaine; and by this meanes were diſtanced one from the other a League or thereabouts: and becauſe they could hardly ſuccour one another, they agreed (the Councell of Warre hauing ſo thought it fit) to make certaine Trenches and Caſtles, which the King in his owne perſon did often viſit. And albeit the Moores did labour by all meanes poſsible, to hinder this deſigne, yet the Chriſtians made good their Worke, valiantly defending what they had vndertaken; there being not a day that paſt ouer their heads, wherein there vvere not two or three (if not more) skirmiſhes that paſt betweene them; many on both ſides being both hurt and ſlaine. But becauſe the worke, (being a thing of ſo great importance) ſhould not ceaſe vpon thoſe that wrought thereon, a ſufficient Gard did continually attend both night and day: it happened, that *Don Rodrigo*, and *Don Hortado de Mendonça*, *Adelantado* of *Caçorla*, and *Don Sancho de Caſtilla*, beeing of the Gard; the King commanded them to make good that place, till that the *Condees* of *Cabra*, and *Vrenna*, and the Marqueſſe of *Aſtorga* ſhould enter with their Regiments for a certaine exploit that was to be put in execution. The Moores, who (as hath beene ſaid) were very watchfull, ſeeking to diſturbe the worke, deſcended from the top of the mountaine with ſome 3000. Foot, and 400. Horſe, and ſet vpon *Don Rodrigo de Mendonça*. The *Adelantado* and *Don Sancho* began the fight with them; and now the battell growing hot betweene them, the Moores were relieued by many other that ſallied out of the City. King *Ferdinand* being there preſent, and ſeeing how things went, commanded the *Condee de Tendilla*, that he ſhould aſſaile them on the other ſide, ſo that the battell by this time grew very bloody on both ſides.

The King then ſeeing the ſtreight wherein the *Condee* vvas, and that hee was wounded, manfully fighting againſt the Moores, he gaue order to the Maſter *de Santiago* to aſsiſt with his forces on the one ſide, and to the Marqueſſe of *Cadiz*, the Duke of *Nagera*, and the *Comendadors* of *Calatraua*, and to *Françiſco de Bouadilla*, that they ſhould charge them with their troopes, vvhere the Artillery was planted. The Moores thereupon drew foorth another third Squadron againſt them, and it vvas brauely fought on both ſides, as vvell by the Moores as the Chriſtians. And the King being himſelfe in this conflict, diſcouered by thoſe of his Campe, they armed vvith all the haſte they could, and vvent foorth to ayde him. And ſo thicke vvere the Troopes of thoſe that came to ſuccour him, that the Moores being vnable any longer to make reſiſtance, betooke themſelues to flight, the Chriſtians ſtill hauing them in chaſe, making great ſlaughter of them; purſuing them euen to the very ſuburbes of the Citie; vvhereinto many of the Souldiers entred, and got rich pillage; taking ſome of the principall perſons priſoners; in which number was *Daraxa*, a Mooriſh Damoſell, the onely daughter of the *Alcalde* of that Fort. Her beauty was her owne, and the moſt perfect one, that euer eye had ſeene: her yeeres vvere rather ſhorter, then full ſeuenteene; being ſo well growne in the bud, that ſhe vvas now ready for the blowing. And beeing in this true height of excellencie, as is here ſet downe, it was raiſed much the higher by her diſcretion, grauity, and gracefull carriage: She ſpake Spaniſh ſo well, that a man that had not knowne her, vvould haue taken her to haue beene an old Chriſtian; for ſhe might haue paſt amongſt thoſe that ſpeake the pureſt Language.

The King did highly eſteeme of this Lady, accounting of her as of a iewell

of great price. And therefore ſent her as a treaſure to the Queene his Wife, who made no leſſe reckning of her, receiuing her very graciouſly, as well for her owne deſert and worth, for that ſhe was of principall ranke and qualitie, being deſcended of Kings, and the daughter of ſo honourable a perſon; as alſo for to try whether ſhe might be a meanes to make the Citie to yeeld, without farther fight, and ſhedding of bloud. Whereupon ſhe treated her with all kindneſſe, and the beſt vſage ſhee could deuiſe, farre exceeding the faſhion of thoſe her other Ladies, which were neereſt about her perſon. So that, not as a Captiue, but as a Kinſwoman, ſhe entertained her in the kindeſt manner that could be, greatly deſiring, that ſuch an excellent piece of nature as ſhe was, and where ſuch ſurpaſsing beauty did poſſeſſe the body, there the ſoule might not with fowle Paganiſme be ſullied and defiled. Theſe were ſufficient reaſons of themſelues to haue her ſtill in her ſight, beſides the content ſhe receiued in talking and conuerſing with her. For ſhee was able to giue her ſo good an account of the ſtate of the whole Country, and of euery particular paſſage in thoſe warres (though ſhe were but of yong and tender yeeres) as if ſhe had been of maturer age, and the wiſeſt Counſellor in the Kingdom. And albeit the King and Queene hapned afterwards to meet in *Baça*, (that Citie being rendred vp into their hands vpon certaine conditions) yet the Queene would neuer ſuffer *Daraxa* to be from her ſide, for that great affection which ſhe bare vnto her, promiſing the *Alcalde* her father, to doe her many particular fauours. Her abſence did much grieue him: but the loue which he ſaw their Catholike Maieſties bare vnto her, did ſomwhat leſſen his ſorrow, conceiuing that much honour and profit would redound vnto her thereby: And ſo reſted himſelfe contented, and pocketed vp his griefe in ſilence. The Queene (as I told you) would neuer be without her, and at length carried her along with her vnto *Seuill*; where, out of the deſire ſhee had to winne her to be a Chriſtian, for to diſpoſe her thereunto by little and by little, vſing no violent, but tractable meanes; ſhe tooke her one day aſide, and ſaid thus vnto her:

Thou canſt not by this time (*Daraxa*) but truely vnderſtand how well I affect thee, and the great deſire I haue had to giue thee content: In requitall whereof, I ſhall intreat thee for my ſake to grant me one requeſt; which is, that thou wilt exchange this attire thou now weareſt, and put on ſuch cloathes as I ſhall inueſt thee withall, appertaining to mine owne perſon; and to weare, and enioy them, being that thy beauty will be much aduantaged by this habit of ours.

Daraxa mildly made anſwere; I ſhall willingly performe, what your Maieſty ſhall be pleaſed to command me. For, by obeying you herein, (if there be any diſcretion in mee, or any conſideration of worth in this my weake apprehenſion,) I ſhall from this day forward thinke the better of it, and hold it for good, for doubtleſſe it cannot be otherwiſe, but that theſe your Maieſties ornaments will adde a grace to my imperfections, and your rich dreſſings ſupply my poore defects.

Daraxa (replide the Queene) it is not your modeſty that can make you derogate from your ſelfe. For if euer Nature made a perfect worke, ſhee ſum'd it all vp in thy ſelfe. But not to inſiſt vpon the praiſe of that, which can not ſufficiently be expreſſed, we graciouſly accept of this your ſeruice, and the willing tender you make thereof vnto vs.

Now was *Daraxa* apparelled after the Spaniſh faſhion, reſiding certaine dayes in the Palace, till ſuch time as their Catholike Maieſties departed from thence, to goe to the ſiege of *Granada*. And therefore as well for the troubles that attend the Warres; as alſo that ſhe might take ſome fauour in the things of our Faith, the Queene thought it fit to leaue her in the houſe of *Don Luys de Padilla* (a man of quality and a Fauourite) where ſhee might entertaine her

her ſelfe with *Donna Eluira de Guzman*, his Daughter and a Virgin; to whom was giuen in charge, the care of her entertainment, with expreſſe order to vſe her with all reſpect; and that ſhee ſhould want nothing that might giue her content. And albeit ſhe were accordingly receiued by them, being feaſted and courted with all the pleaſures that place could affoord; yet it grieued her much to ſee her ſelfe ſo farre from her natiue home, beſides other cauſes, which gaue her much more diſcontent, but thoſe ſhee did not diſcouer; for vvith a cheerefull countenance, and a pleaſant ſemblance, ſhee made ſhow, that ſeeing it was her Maieſties pleaſure ſo to diſpoſe of her, that ſhee did eſteeme it as a fauour; and ſo did expreſſe it in her lookes and geſture.

This Damſell, her Parents had betrothed to a Mooriſh Gentleman of *Granada*, whoſe name was *Ozmin*: whoſe qualitie and condition, together with his diſpoſition, was in all points ſutable to that of *Daraxa*. Hee was young, rich, of a ſweet behauiour, perſonable, diſcreet, and aboue all very valiant, and full of courage, and euery one of theſe parts well adapted, and diſpoſed to receiue many other, which as they were fit for him, ſo they did well become him. Beſides, he was ſo dextrous in the Spaniſh tongue, as if hee had been bred vp in the heart of *Caſtile*, and a naturall of that Countrey: (it being a thing as worthy commendation in vertuous young men, as it is a glory to thoſe parents, who breed vp their children in the knowledge of tongues, and exerciſe of Armes.) He lou'd his eſpouſed Lady with all the tenderneſſe that a Louer could, inſomuch that hee did (in a manner) commit idolatry, out of the reuerence and reſpect that he bare vnto her; and would (might hee be ſuffered ſo to doe) haue ſet vp her *Statua* vpon the higheſt Altars. On her, hee did wholly imploy his memory; for her all his ſences kept continuall watch and ward, and his will was more hers, then his owne: Nor was his Spouſe (who was made all of thankefulneſſe) any whit his debtor. Their loue was as equall, as was their qualitie; and their affection did truely correſpond with their euen condition. But ſurpaſsing all the reſt, was that moſt honeſt courſe of life, wherein they conſerued themſelues. The ſweetneſſe of thoſe diſcourſes which by Letters paſſed betweene them, thoſe louely meſſages which were ſent to and fro each to other, can not be indeered according to their true deſert. They had viſited & ſeen one another very often, but neuer treated of loue mouth to mouth. But their ſpeaking eyes parled many times, when their tongues were ſilent, which neuer omitted the occaſion to talke together. For both of them many yeeres before, and yet not very many, becauſe they were both but young, but to ſpeake more properly, had euen from their child-hood loued and viſited each other at their pleaſure. The parents were knit in ſo perfect a friendſhip, and their children in ſuch ſtreight knots of the faſteſt loue, that to make this harmony the fuller, they did all deſire to be neerer linked (if poſsibly it might be) by a ſtrong Alliance: And by this marriage it had taken effect, had it not, when all was in a manner concluded, beene croſt in an vnlucky houre, and by the rigour of ſome auſtere Planet, when *Baça* was beſieged.

But vpon this reuolution of things, and theſe warlike commotions, it was thought fit to deferre it for a while, wayting for a more conuenient time, wherein their marriage might be ſolemnized with greater mirth and iollitie, and ſuch triumphs and feaſtings performed, as the youthfulneſſe and qualification required of ſo ſweet and louely a couple; and ſeemed neceſſarily to ſuit with the eſtimation and greatneſſe of both their parents.

You haue heard already who *Daraxa's* Father was: Her Mother was her owne Kinſwoman, daughter to a Siſter of *Boabdelin*, King of that Citie, who had treated this Match betweene them. And *Ozmin* was couſin German to *Mahomet*, King of *Granada*, ſur-named *The Little*. Now that all theſe faire

faire deſignes, had contrary ſucceſſe to their deſires, and that Fortune had bent her browe againſt them, *Daraxa* remaining now in the power of thoſe their Catholike Maieſties; and being left behind in *Seuill*, as ſoone as *Ozmin* heard of it, the exclamations that he made; the ſorrowes which hee vttered; the ſighs which he vented, (as they were the true Heralds that proclaimed his hearts-griefe;) ſo did they moue all men to compaſsion, who could not chooſe but ſhare, (and that in no ſmall meaſure) with him, when they ſaw ſuch lamentable effects of his great affliction.

But becauſe the loſſe was ſo ſolely his, and the wound put ſo home to his very heart and ſoule, ſorrow did ſo ſeaze vpon him, that in a ſhort time it tooke hold vpon his manly (yet delicate) body: ſo that all the whole frame thereof was out of temper, and fell at laſt into a grieuous ſickneſſe, as dangerous and difficill to be cured, as the remedy was diſtant, and the cauſe vnknowne. The effects whereof dayly increaſed with mortall ſignes of death, becauſe the cauſe increaſed; and the medicines that were miniſtred vnto him, being not rightly applyed, did him no good at all. And which is the worſt in maladies, the Phyſicians did not truely apprehend the nature of his diſeaſe, being the moſt eſſentiall point, for the reſtoring of a man to his former ſtate of health. So that his affliсted Parents, deſpairing of his recouery, had now rendred vp all hope of life; and the Phyſicians, they had giuen him ouer, being of opinion, that it was impoſsible hee ſhould liue; their iudgement being ſtrengthned and confirmed by all thoſe accidents which did ioyntly concurre, and openly expreſſe themſelues, in this his painfull torment.

But when this ſicke Louer was treading the laſt ſtep of life, that he had to goe, and euen entring into the doores of Death; a conceit came ſodainly into his head, which repreſenting it ſelfe to his imagination, wrought ſo effectually with him, that he ſeemed to draw ſome fruit from it, and to be ſomewhat better then he was: And though his ſickneſſe were yet ſtill full of danger, yet compared with that miſerable eſtate wherein hee ſtood before, the amendment could not for the time be greater. And out of the longing deſire that he had to put that in execution, which his conceit had formerly entertained, plotting in his imagination, how he might come to get a ſight of his beloued Spouſe, he gained breath, and grew ſomewhat ſtronger, ſtoutly reſiſting thoſe things, that might hinder his intent.

Whereupon he licenced his ſorrowes, and ſhooke hands with melancholly, taking his leaue of them both, bidding them fare-well for euer, and did now wholly intend his health; and by this meanes beganne by degrees to grow better and better, cleane contrary to the expectation of thoſe, vvho had ſeene how low hee was brought, and in what a deſperate eſtate hee was.

True is that old Adage, *Deſire ſubdueth feare*, trampleth on the neck of inconueniences, and leuelleth all difficulties, be the way of them neuer ſo ſteepe, neuer ſo rocky. And a good and cheerefull heart in a ſicke man, is the beſt Sirrop, and the moſt comfortable cordiall in the world; your Amber, your Corall, your Pearle, your Gold, and all the rabble of your other reſtoratiues are nothing vnto it. And therefore it is good for a man to make himſelfe as merry as he can. And when thou ſeeſt a man once to wax merry when he is ſicke, thou maiſt boldly ſay he mends.

Now then, by this time, our Gentleman is vp vpon his feet, and though yet weake and ſcarce able to walke vp and downe in his Chamber (his long ſickneſſe hauing yet made his legges vnable to beare his body) he forthwith furniſhed himſelfe of a *Moore*, to be both his Guide, and Interpreter, who had for a long time ſerued the Kings of *Granada* as an Intelligencer. And putting vp good ſtore of gold and iewels for that iourney, and taking with him a good horſe, that was browne Bay, with a Petronell hanging at the arſon of his

Saddl,

Saddle, and his Sword and Dagger girt to his ſide, vpon a certaine night by them appointed they departed out of the Citie, in the faſhion and habit of Spaniards; and going by the way, knowing well how to coaſt the Country, as being well acquainted with thoſe parts, they paſſed within view of the enemies Campe, and hauing left that behinde them by by-pathes, and ſecret paſſages they came to *Loja*. Where, being neere vnto the Citie, it was their hard fortune to meet with a Captaine of the field, who went gathering vp of men which had fled from the Army, and forſaken their colours. Now as ſoone as he ſpied theſe two, he tooke hold of them. The *Moore* feigned hee had a Paſport, ſeeking for it one while in his boſome, another while in his pocket, and other parts about him. But becauſe he could not finde it, and for that the Captaine perceiued he had beene out of the rode way, which made him ſhrewdly to ſuſpect them, he tooke them along with him, to bring them backe againe to the Campe.

But *Ozmin* not diſmayed herewith, nor ſuffering any alteration of countenance, with great boldnes and free language, making benefit of the Noblemans name, in whoſe power his Spouſe was, feigned himſelfe to be his ſonne, ſtiling himſelfe by the name of *Don Rodrigo de Padilla*, and that he came with a meſſage to their Catholicke Maieſties from his father touching *Daraxa*; and that his health failing him (which was witneſſed by his wanne lookes) hee was making home with all the conuenient haſte hee could. Other-whiles, hee affirmed he had loſt both his Paſport, and his way; and that to returne againe thereinto, he had betaken himſelfe to that path.

But this would not ſerue his turne; for hee ſtill inſiſted to haue them goe backe, whileſt they either did not, or would not then vnderſtand, that he did not care a button whether they returned or no? His pretenſion onely was, that a Gentleman of that ranke and quality, as hee pretended himſelfe to be, ſhould haue blinded his eyes with ſome few Dubblons; for there is no Generals hand, that can equall the ſeale-Royall, which is of ſo much the more power with vs; by how much wee finde it firmed and inſtamped with that more noble metall. For your poore Shag-rags, and ſilly ſnakes, that ſteale from the Armie to returne home: for theſe (I ſay) they haue teeth, and ſharpe ones too, and on ſuch poor ſoules as theſe, doe they onely exerciſe their power, executing thoſe orders which are made againſt ſuch kind of fugitiues: But not on them, from whom they haue hope of profit, and may make good gaine; for this is that they ſeeke for.

Ozmin ſuſpecting whither theſe brauings of his did tend; and finding on which foot he began to halt, followed him cloſe, and began thus to ſpeake vnto him: Miſconſter me not (Noble Captaine) nor thinke, that it ſhall grieue me a whit to returne once more backe againe, nor were it ten times one after another, ſhould it trouble me to reiterate the ſteps that I haue troden; nay, I would willingly repeate the ſame way againe and againe; if my health (as you ſee) were not wanting vnto mee; but ſince the neceſsitie of my returne is made euident and plaine vnto you: let me intreat you, Sir, not to put me to that trouble, ſeeing it is as much as my life is worth, conſidering the weakeneſſe wherein I now am. And with that, taking a rich ring from off his finger, he put it into his hand, which was as if he ſhould haue throwne Vinegar vpon fire; for he ſtreight grew coole vpon it, and kindely ſaid vnto him; Sir, God be your good ſpeed; for I well perceiue that you are as you ſeeme to bee, a man of principall note, that does not ſerue the King for pay; nor would out of your nobleneſſe and point of honour forſake the field, but vpon ſo great an occaſion as this. I ſhall waight vpon you to *Loja*, where I will giue order, that you paſſe forward with the more ſafety. And ſo he did, remaining both good friends; and when they had repoſed themſelues awhile, they tooke their leaue.

Attended with theſe and other the like misfortunes, they arriued at length at *Seuill*; vvhere, by the information that he had gotten, he came to know the ſtreet and houſe vvhere his *Daraxa* dwelt: hee vvalked many a faire turne thereabout at different howers, and on diuers dayes, but it was neuer his good hap to ſee her: for in regard ſhee walked not abroad, nor vvent to Church, ſhe ſpent her vvhole time in her needle, and in recreating her ſelfe with her friend *Donna Elvira*.

Now *Ozmin* perceiuing the difficulty to compaſſe his deſire, and the ſuſpicion vvhich he might giue, (as ordinarily all ſtrangers do, in vvhat-ſoeuer place they come: for all mens eyes are vpon them, deſiring to know vvho they are, vvhence they come, vvhat they ſeeke, and how they liue, eſpecially if they frequent one ſtreet more then another, and caſt a carefull eye either vpon the vvindowes or the doores of ſome particular houſe.) Hence ariſeth enuie; hence, a muttering and murmuring of the multitude; and hence, (though none be intereſſed in the buſineſſe) an hatred vvithout a cauſe. And ſome vvhiſperings vvere already begun; vvhereupon he vvas inforced, for the auoyding of ſcandall, to forbeare for ſome few dayes, vvhileſt his ſeruant in the meane while performed that office, as being a perſon of leſſe eſteeme, and therefore the leſſe obſerued. But hee making no diſcouery, did onely comfort himſelfe in walking that way in the night at extraordinary howers, and in imbracing the wals, kiſsing the doores and threſholds of that houſe.

In this forlorne kind of hope he liued ſome time, till at length that fell out vvhich ſorted with his deſire. For his ſeruant taking the care vpon him to round the houſe three or foure times aday, found out in the end, that *Don Luys* was a making vp of a certaine Wall that vvas falne downe. Then did he take Occaſion by the fore-top, aduiſing his Maſter to put on a poore canuaſſe Frocke, or the like baſe garment, and to thruſt himſelfe in amongſt the reſt, as a Labourer in that Worke. He liked vvell of the inuention, put it in execution, leauing his ſeruant to looke to his horſe, and the vvealth and Iewels that vvere in his Lodging, that he might helpe himſelfe there-withall, if need were. And ſo he vvent ſoorth to this worke: vvhither, when he came, he demanded, if they had any vvorke for a ſtranger; they told him, they had. For his vvages, it is to be ſuppoſed, that he for his part vvas vvilling to bee hired at any rate, rather then to ſit out. So he now ſets himſelf roundly to his vvorke, ſtriuing to out-worke them all: and albeit, through his many croſſes and diſcontents, he had not yet recouered his perfect health, yet (as the phraſe is) he drew ſtrength out of vveakneſſe: for it is the heart that commands the fleſh. He vvas the firſt ſtill that came to worke, and the laſt that left off: and vvhen all the reſt were vvilling to take their eaſe and refreſh themſelues, hee vvas ſtill ſeeking out ſomething, vvherein he might buſie himſelfe: inſomuch that being found fault vvithall for it by his fellow-Labourers, (for euen in misfortunes Enuy likewiſe hath a hand) he made them anſwer; That he knew not how to be idle. *Don Luys*, vvho noted his diligence, had a liking vnto him, and was reſoluing vvith himſelfe to take him into his ſeruice for the affaires of his houſe; and more particularly for the keeping of his Garden. Hereupon he demanded of him, vvhether he had any skill in that kind? Hee told him, A little; and that the deſire that he had to do him ſeruice, vvould in ſhort time inable him much more. He was well pleaſed both with his ſpeech and perſon; for he had found him in euery thing, to be as ſufficient, as he was carefull.

The Maſon had made an end of repayring the wall, and *Ozmin* was now Gardiner to *Don Luys*: nor vntill that day, was it euer poſsible for him to ſee *Daraxa*. But ſuch was his good fortune (Fortune being willing ſo to haue it) that the Sunne ſhone bright that morning, the skie was cleare, the heauens propitious, ſcattering the clouds of his former diſgraces, and diſcouering a

new

new light; by helpe whereof, he ſaw the ioyfull hauen to his long-indured ſhip-wracks.

And the very firſt Euening that he exerciſed this his new Office, he ſaw his Spouſe comming all alone, ſoftly pacing her ſteps thorow a ſpacous Walke, beſet all with Myrtles, muske-Roſes, Ieſmines, and other Flowers, gathering here and there one, vvhere-with ſhe adorned her haire. Now by her attire, he vvould neuer haue knowne her, if the true Originall had not vvell agreed with that liuely counterfeit, vvhich he had imprinted in his heart: as likewiſe, that he did plainely perceiue, that ſo great beauty could not belong to any body but her ſelfe. He was much perplexed vvhen he ſaw her, and debated with himſelfe, whether he were beſt to ſpeake to her or no: but his baſhfulneſſe being as great, as vvas his preuention, being hindred by the ſhortnes of that time wherein ſhe paſſed along, he hung downe his head, making holes in the earth with a Dibbe that he had in his hand, for the ſetting of a few choyce Slips.

Daraxa turn'd her head aſide, and when in the caſting of it, ſhee ſaw this new Gardiner; ſhe ſtedfaſtly began to looke vpon him: and viewing vvell that ſide of his face (vvhich did moſt conueniently diſcouer it ſelfe vnto her) that place did repreſent it ſelfe to her imagination, vvhere ſhe had ſo often beheld her Beloued, (ſo like did he ſeeme vnto her:) vvhereupon, ſuch a ſudden ſadneſſe ſeized vpon her, that fainting ſhe fell to ground; and vvhen ſhee came to her ſelfe, taking hold on the Rayles of the Garden, which vvere vvrought of well-ordered Canes, (according to the faſhion of that Country) ſhe ſent forth a moſt ſorrowfull ſigh, attended vvith infinite ſtore of teares; and leaning her hand on her roſie cheeke, ſhe called many things to remembrance; vvherein, if ſhe ſhould haue inſiſted vpon euery particular, and perſeuered in the recordation of them, ſhe might eaſily haue beene the authour of her owne death. But ſhe did put them off as well as ſhe could, with another new deſire which ſhe had, to intertaine her ſoule with his ſight; deceiuing thoſe conceits, with that little parcell of *Ozmins* face which repreſented it ſelfe vnto her.

Hereupon ſhe roſe, but accompanied vvith a generall trembling, (her vvhole body and heart, panting and ſhiuering vvith an aguiſh fit of Loue) and turning againe to contemplate anew the image of her adoration; vvhich the more attentiuely ſhe beheld, the more liuely ſhe transformed the ſame into her ſelfe. It ſeemed vnto her that ſhe had beene in a dreame, but when ſhee perceiued that ſhe was awake, and that her ſight ſerued her, ſhe vvas afrayd it was ſome ghoſt or Fairy-apparition. But afterwards, vvhen vpon better view ſhe ſaw it vvas a man, a very man, and no *Phantaſma*, ſhe vviſhed that it might be he, vvhom ſhe loued. Notwithſtanding, ſhe vvas mightily perplexed in mind, and caſt many doubts vvith her ſelfe, not beeing able to deuiſe vvho this man ſhould be. For his ſickneſſe had layd a paleneſſe on his cheekes, vvhich had loſt their wonted colours; but in all other things beſides, as his fauour, his feature, his proportion, and carriage did aſſure her of the truth: yet his office, his habit, and the very place vvherein hee ſtood, made her diſcard all ſuch kind of thoughts, and to diſ-deceiue her ſelfe: and again, it grieued her to be drawne out of this errour, perſiſting obſtinately in her wiſh, not being able to abſtaine to diſcouer her particular affection vnto him, for the reſemblance vvhich he had of him, vvhom ſhe ſo dearely loued: wherupon, out of thoſe her doubtings and anxieties to know vvhat hee vvas, ſhe ſayd vnto him; Friend, vvhence are you? With that, *Ozmin* ſuddenly, and in a ſtarting manner caſts vp his head, looking vpon his beloued and ſweeteſt pledge, but his tongue being knit cloſe to the roofe of his mouth with the fulleſt knot of Loue, hauing not the power to ſpeake a word; and not being able, no not for his life, (ſo great was his paſsion) to anſwer her with his

tongue,

tongue, he replyed vvith his eyes, watering the earth with that abundance of teares, which fell guttering downe his cheekes, as if they had flowed from two cleare fountaines. And with this, these two deere and faithfull Louers came to haue true knowledge each of other.

Daraxa answered him in his owne language, distilling ropes of Pearles in round orientall drops downe her louely cheekes. And now were they ready to exchange imbracements, at least some sweet words of Loue; when lo, in the instant there entred into the Garden *Don Rodrigo*, sonne and heyre to *Don Luys*, who being inamoured of *Daraxa*, did alwayes wait vpon her steps, that he might thereby inioy the occasion to contemplate on her beauty. Now, that they might auoyd all suspicion, they no sooner spyde him, but *Ozmin* returned roundly to his labour, and *Daraxa* walked leysurely along, as she was wont to do. *Don Rodrigo* perceiued (by her sad semblance, and inflamed eyes, growne red with weeping) an alteration in her countenance, and presuming that somewhat had offended her, (for her lookes did shew she was not well pleas'd) he made towards *Ozmin*, and asked him what the matter might be of her discontent: who, albeit he vvas not fully as yet recouered of his fore-passed perturbation, yet inforced by that necessity vvhereunto he was driuen, told him; Sir, as you see her now, so was she when she came hither, she did not exchange so much as one word with me; and therefore told me no part of her mind, nor do I know whence this her pasion should proceed. Especially, this being the first day, that I entred into this place: so that it was neither fitting for me to aske her the question, nor discretion in her to open her heart vnto me. With this answere he went his way, with purpose to learne it out of *Daraxa* her selfe. But the more he intertained himselfe in this displeasing subiect, the larger steps shee made, speedily wheeling about to her Lodging, shutting the doores after her as she went in.

Diuers Euenings and Mornings these two Louers luckily met, inioying vpon seueral occasions some flowers, and honest fruits from the tree of true loue, wherewith they gaue some ease vnto their griefes; Intertaining their true pleasures, with the desire and hope of that happy time, wherein without shadowes and interruptions, they might freely inioy each other. But this content of theirs was as short, as vnsecure. For the extraordinary continuation of their companying together, and their close discourse, (and that in the *Arabicke* tongue) and her excusing herselfe (for his sake) from the conuersation of her friend *Donna Elvira*, had already giuen sufficient distaste to all those of the house, and *Don Rodrigo* himselfe was horne-mad, inraged so with Ielousie, that he knew not what to do. Not that he had any the least imagination, that the Gardiner did treat with her any thing that was vnlawfull, or made any loue to her: but because he saw, that he was made worthy to be intertained with so much frequencie in that sweet conuersation of hers, which she did not exercise so freely with any other in the world.

THE ARGVMENT.

Going on in the discourse of the aduentures of these two faithfull Louers, Ozmin *and the faire* Daraxa, *are deliuered at large the troubles, ielousies, and the sorrowes that befell them.*

MVrmuring, being the naturall daughter of Hatred and Enuy, is euer more busily labouring to staine the liues of others, and to draw a curtaine of darkenesse ouer their bright-shining vertues. And amongst people of base and vile condition, (where most commonly she keepes her Court of Audience) it is the onely sauce to moue their appetite, without which

which their daintieſt diſhes haue no relliſh, nor their beſt morſels any ſauour in them. It is a bird of the flippantſt vving, which as it moueth with moſt nimbleneſſe, ſo it doth the greateſt miſchiefe. There were not ſome wanting, that toſſed words from hand to hand; ſome adding, and others inuenting matter vpon this their ſo great familiaritie, till the ball at laſt came to ground, and this vvhiſpering to *Don Luys* his eare, by one vvho thought to worke out himſelfe a fortune therby, and to grow into fauour with his Lord, by this his ſuppoſed honourable piece of ſeruice.

This is that which the world doth practice, ſeeking to gaine great mens loue at other mens coſt, by trickes and lies, when in the naked truth there is not cloth inough to ſhape a garment according to their mind. An office, worthy thoſe, to whom their owne worth is wanting, and haue nothing either in their actions, or their perſons, that may deſeruedly recommend them.

Don Luys attentiuely gaue eare to theſe well-compoſed words, and painted ſpeeches, on vvhich ſuch faire colours vvere layd. He vvas a vviſe and diſcreet Gentleman, and therefore did not ſuffer them to dwell, vvhere theſe men had placed them, but gaue them onely paſſage to his imagination, leauing a roome empty for to receiue the reaſons of the defendant, to whom he had left the doore open, and vvould by no meanes giue way to haue his eares ſtopped, albeit he vvere ſomewhat offended vvith the occaſion of the ſcandall. Many things did he caſt in his mind, but ſtill the farther hee went, the farther he vvas from the truth. But that which did moſt trouble him, was the ſuſpicion which he had, that the Gardiner vvas a Moore, vvho was cunningly come thither to ſteale away *Daraxa*: and perſwading himſelfe that it was ſo, his vnderſtanding vvas preſently blinded there-with. And that which is ill conſidered on, many times, nay, for the moſt part; the execution of that aduice is ſcarce gone out of doores, but that repentance preſently enters the houſe. Vpon this ſurmiſe, he was reſolued to take hold of him, and to clappe him faſt. *Ozmin*, vvithout any reſiſtance, or ſhow of Sorrow, or any other alteration of countenance, ſubmitted himſelfe to be ſhut vp in the Hall, the fitteſt place the ſuddenneſſe of his ſurpriſe could afford for the preſent. And leauing him thus vnder locke and key, he made towards *Daraxa*, who by the hurrie and tumult of the miniſters and ſeruants of the houſe, knew already all that had paſt, there hauing beene ſome few dayes before a muttring of this matter about the houſe. She ſhewed her ſelfe much agrieued with *Don Luys* his manner of proceeding, forming complaints, how he had put in doubt the goodneſſe and vnſpotted innocencie of her life, ſetting the gate wide open to ſuſpicion; and that with this blurre vvhich he had giuen to her reputation, euery one might thinke as he liſted, and as his fancie ſhould ſtand affected, to cenſure her honour accordingly; for there was not any ſuſpicion ſo bad, whereunto he had not by this his vnaduiſed act, opened a gap to it's entrance.

Theſe, and other vvell-ordered reaſons, deliuered with an affection of the mind, and freeneſſe of ſpirit, made *Don Luys* quickly repent himſelfe of what he had done. He now wiſht with all his heart, (after *Daraxa* had thus newly molded him) that he had neuer attempted any ſuch thing, being angry with himſelfe, and much incenſed againſt thoſe, vvho had put this into his head. But that he might not ſhew his lightneſſe, in being thus miſ-led, and ouer-facile to be wrought vpon by other mens perſwaſions, but that what hee had done, he had done it vpon good conſideration, and as the weightineſſe of the buſineſſe required, diſſembling his ſorrow, he ſpake thus vnto her:

Deare *Daraxa*, I acknowledge the wrong I haue done you, and ingeniouſly confeſſe that your complaint is not without iuſt cauſe, in that I proceeded againſt you in this vnciuill faſhion, without hauing firſt examined the Witneſſes to the full, who haue depoſed, (as it ſhould ſeeme) thus wrongfully againſt you. I am not ignorant of your owne woorth, as likewiſe that of your

parents, and Anceſtors, from whom you are deſcended. I know, that the merits of your owne proper perſon haue purchaſed of the King my Maſter, and his noble Queene, all that loue, which a true and onely heyre can gaine of his louing and tender Parents, hauing conferred vpon you many prodigall and publike fauours. To this I muſt giue you to vnderſtand, that they placed you in my houſe; to the end that you might be ſerued therein with all care and diligence, according to your own will and pleaſure: And that I am bound to giue account thereof, according to the truſt that was repoſed in me. For which reaſons, and for that which my ſeruice deſerueth at your hands, you ought to correſpond (that you may not be vnlike your ſelfe) with that faire carriage which is due vnto my loyalty, and the conſideration of theſe things that are now in queſtion. I neither can nor will conceiue, that there can bee any thing in you that may ſeeme vnbefitting your breeding, or giue the leaſt blemiſh to your honour. But the great familiaritie which you hold vvith *Ambroſio* (for that name had *Ozmin* put vpon himſelfe, when he firſt entred to ſerue as a day-labourer) together with his talking vnto you in the Arabike tongue, hath ſomewhat troubled me, out of the generall deſire that all heere haue to vnderſtand what manner of man this fellow is, and what his firſt beginning, neither you, nor my ſelfe hauing ſeene or knowne him heretofore. And this being ſatisfied, you ſhall rid others of their doubt, and my ſelfe of an impertinent and tedious trouble. I beſeech you (as you are worthy) that you will reſolue vs of this ſcruple, aſſuring your ſelfe for mine owne part, that as much as in me lyeth, I ſhall euer bee ready to ſerue you vpon all occaſions that ſhall offer themſelues, wherein I may be ſeruiceable vnto you.

Daraxa ſtood curiouſly attentiue to that which *Don Luys* had deliuered, that ſhe might be able to make anſwere vnto him, (albeit his good vnderſtanding had already preuented her with reaſons) in caſe that any thing had beene diſcouered. But out of that ſhort tearme of time which ſhe had to bethinke her ſelfe (laying her former thoughts aſide) ſhe was driuen to make vſe of other more materiall to that propoſition which was made vnto her, wherewith eaſily (leauing him well ſatisfied) ſhee freed him of his care, making good vſe of it, to bee more vvary hereafter, that ſhee might inioy her ſelfe, as ſhee was wont, vvith her beloued; and therewithall ſhe thus ſaid vnto him:

My Lord, and Father; (for ſo I may truely call you) Lord, for that I am in your power: and Father, for the tender care which you haue of me. I ſhould ill correſpond with that obligation whereunto I am bound, and thoſe continuall fauours, which I receiue from their Maieſties by your meanes, and by your interceſsions dayly augmented in my fauour, if I ſhould not depoſite in the Cabinet of your diſcretion, my greateſt ſecrets: ſheltring them vvith your ſhadow, and gouerning my ſelfe by your wiſedome: and if with the ſame truth and plaineneſſe, I ſhould not fulfill all your iuſt deſires. And albeit to recall things to my remembrance (which I may not forbeare to recite vnto you) cannot but be a great griefe vnto me, and euen a matter of no ſmall martyrdome; yet with this I will repay your kindneſſe, and make you become a debtor to my ſorrowes, and giue you aſſurance thereby in how much I eſteeme your loue.

Sir, you haue already vnderſtoood who I am, for it is notorious to you, and all the world; and how my misfortune or good hap (for I can not, till the fruit wax ripe, by ſeeing the end of ſo many troubles, condemne the one, or commend the other:) brought me to this houſe of yours, euen at that very time, when a marriage was in Treaty for me, with a Gentleman of the beſt both worth and ranke in *Granada*, being a neere Kinſman of thoſe Kings, and anciently deſcended from them.

This my Husband (if I may ſo ſtile him) was bred vp, being then about ſome

ſixe

ſixe or ſeuen yeeres of age, with another child a Captiue Chriſtian, much about the ſame yeeres, whom his parents bought for his ſeruice and entertainment. They euer went together, plaid together, eate together, and vſually ſlept together, out of the great loue that was betweene them. See whether theſe were not pledges of friendſhip which I haue repeated vnto you. And ſo well did my Husband loue him, that had hee beene his equall, or his neereſt Kinſman, he could not haue lou'd him better. Hee truſted him with his perſon; for he was very valiant; he was the Feoffie of all his pleaſures, the Companion of his entertainments, the Treaſury of his Secrets, and in ſubſtance his ſecond ſelfe. In concluſion, they were in all things both of them ſo like, that nothing did difference them, but their Religion, whereof (out of the greatneſſe of both their diſcretions) they neuer argued, that they might not diſ-brother themſelues. For no brothers in the world could loue better then they did. And well did this Captiue deſerue his loue (I ſpake amiſſe, the word Brother better befits him, and ſo I ſhould haue call'd him) for his faithfull carriage, his compoſed behauiour, and his Gentleman-like proceeding; inſomuch, that if we had not knowne him to haue beene borne of meane parents that got their liuing by their handy-labour, in a poore Cottage, who were captiuated and made ſlaues at the ſame time, we ſhould verily haue beleeu'd, that he had deſcended from ſome Noble bloud, and generous off-ſpring.

This honeſt man (I ſhould ſay honourable; for his vertue deſerues that ſtile) was the Meſſenger of our entertainments, the Poſt that ranne betweene vs: for being ſo faithfull as he was, hee was the onely man that was wholly imployed in that buſineſſe. He brought me Letters and preſents, returning back by him ſuch due requitals, as in like caſes vſually paſſe betwixt thoſe that truely loue.

Now, when *Baça* was deliuered vp, and he found there, hee was ſet at liberty, together with the reſt of the Captiues that were at that time within the Citie. But I am not able to ſay, whether his ioy to recouer his freedome, or his ſorrow to forſake vs, were the greater. This himſelfe can beſt tell you, as alſo whatſoeuer elſe you ſhall deſire to know beſides, if it pleaſe you to aske him, which is no hard matter for you to doe: for this man I ſpeake of, is that very *Ambroſio*, which is now in your ſeruice, it being Gods will that he ſhould come hither, for to be a comfort vnto me in theſe my afflictions. I loſt him before euer I thought of it; and when I leaſt looked for him, I found him againe. With him I ranne ouer the whole courſe of my misfortunes, ſince the firſt time that I was graduated and tooke degree in them; vvith him I did cheriſh the hopes of my aduerſe fortune, entertaining a painefull life, for to deceiue the weariſomneſſe of a lingring and tedious time. If this comfort (for that it is in my fauour) ſhall offend you, follow your owne will, for mine ſhall euer be ſubordinate to yours, which you may diſpoſe of at your pleaſure.

Don Luys was ſtrooken with aſtoniſhment and tenderneſſe, as well for the ſtrangeneſſe, as the pittifulneſſe of her Story. Beſides, he was much mooued with her manner of proceeding; for ſhe went on in her Diſcourſe without any pauſing, perturbation, or other accident, whereby hee might coniecture, that it was a made tale, or inuention of her owne vpon the preſent. Which carriage ſhe did credit the better, by letting fall from her eyes ſome effectuall teares, which were able to ſoften hard Marble, and to rent in ſunder the rocky Diamond.

With this ſpeech of hers, *Ambroſio* was looſed out of priſon, without being queſtioned of any thing, that he might not wrong the report vvhich *Daraxa* had giuen of him: Onely laying his arme about his neck, looking cheerefully vpon him, he told him. Now I know *Ambroſio*) that thou haſt ſome noble

bloud about thee; and though this ſhould be wanting vnto thee, thou art able to giue it thy ſelfe by thine owne vertue and nobleneſſe. For by that which I haue lately heard of thee, I am obliged henceforth to vſe thee with that faireneſſe as thy worth deſerueth. *Ozmin* told him; In this, Sir, you ſhall doe like your ſelfe; and the good which I ſhall receiue from you, I ſhall euer make it my glory, that it came from the largeneſſe of your hand, and from ſo noble a Houſe as this is. This paſt, he was permitted to return againe vnto the garden, with the ſame familiaritie as before, if not with much more licence and freeneſſe of liberty. So that now they talked together as often as they would themſelues, without any ſcandall at all.

In this *interim*, the King and Queene had ſtill a care to know how it was with *Daraxa*, as well in the ſtate of her health, as otherwiſe; whereof particular aduice was giuen them from time to time, who were very glad to heare of her well-doing; and did continually in their Letters recommend her very dearely to the care of *Don Luys*, with expreſſe charge to vſe her with all kindneſſe.

This fauour of theirs wrought ſo much, that as well out of the deſire to ſtand in grace with their Maieſties, as out of *Daraxa* her owne deſerts; not onely *Don Rodrigo*, but moſt of the principall Cauallero's of that Citie, wiſhed in their hearts ſhe were a Chriſtian, that they might make loue vnto her, pretending to take her to Wife. But becauſe *Don Rodrigo* had her (as hath been ſaid) in his cuſtody, he was in the common opinion of the World, amongſt all the other riualls thought to be moſt fauoured by her. The caſe was very cleere, and this ſuſpition not without great likelihood. For of his qualitie, condition, behauiour, and faire proceeding, ſhe had had very good try-all; and oſtentations of this nature, and apparences of ſuch commendable parts as theſe, are not wont to be of the ſlighteſt moment, nor the loweſt round in the Ladder, that climbes vnto honour. For when a man ſhall haue made publike demonſtrations of his vertues, and his noble carriage, it is to be preſumed he will be no leſſe beloued, then he is knowne; and ſo get aduantage of thoſe, who (when it ſhall come to matter of oppoſition) ſhall be vnder-valued by opinion. But as if theſe Louers had exchanged their ſoules, and none of them poſſeſſed that which was his owne, they were as firme in louing, as farre from offending.

Daraxa neuer gaue way by any diſ-compoſture, or vnioynted behauiour, or any other occaſion whatſoeuer, whereby any one might preſume more then other vpon her fauour; howbeit, all of them adored her, left no meanes vnſought to procure her loue, nor no nets vnſpred, ſeeking by traines to draw her within their reach, but none of them had any ground, whereupon to build their hopes.

Don Rodrigo perceiuing how little his ſeruices did auaile him, how his labour was in vaine, and the ſmall remedy that hee found, ſince after ſo many dayes ſpent in her continuall conuerſation, he remained in the ſame ſtate as he did the very firſt day, neither better nor worſe, for ought hee knew, it came into his conſideration to make vſe of *Ozmin*, thinking by his interceſsion to get into her fauour; and taking this to be the beſt and ſureſt way to worke his ends, being one morning in the garden, hee brake thus with him:

Friend *Ambroſio*, Thou canſt not but know the obligations which thou haſt to thy Religion, to thy King, to thy Country, to that bread which thou eateſt of my Fathers, and to that deſire, which we haue of thy good. I conceiue, that as a Chriſtian of that quality, which thy workes doe publiſh, thou wilt correſpond with that thou profeſſeſt thy ſelfe to be.

I come to thee, moued thereunto by a great neceſsitie (which now offers it ſelfe vnto me) whereupon doth depend all the increaſe of mine honour, and

the

the ſafety of my life, which wholly lyes in thy hands. If diſcourſing then with *Daraxa*, amongſt other reaſons, thou ſhalt worke her by force of Argument, that ſhe forſake this falſe Sect, wherewith ſhe is now infected, & make her to become a Chriſtian, thou canſt not but ſee what good will come thereof: firſt, Saluation to her owne ſoule; next, good ſeruice vnto God; thirdly, great content to their Catholike Maieſties; fourthly, honour to thy ſelfe in thy Countrey; and laſtly, to my ſelfe perfect happineſſe. For, deſiring her to Wife, I meane to be married vnto her, and the benefit ſhall not be ſmall vvhich thou ſhalt make by this voyage; for it ſhall be as profitable, as it ſhall be honourable vnto thee; and therefore ſtraine all the wits thou haſt to bring this good purpoſe to paſſe. For beſides that thou ſhalt bee rewarded by God, for the ſoule which thou ſhalt gaine, I for my part will, with many requitals, and thoſe reall, recompence the life which thou ſhalt giue mee by thy good diligence in this buſineſſe, and if (exerciſing thy power with her,) it ſhall be my good hap to winne her by thy interceſsion. Doe not refuſe to doe mee this fauour, ſince thou canſt doe ſo much with her: And becauſe there are ſo many tyes vpon thee, to induce thee hereunto, it is not fit that I ſhould preſſe thee any further, or be too importunate with thee. To whom, when hee had ended his exhortation, *Ozmin* made him this anſwere:

My very good Lord; The ſame reaſon, wherewith you ſeeke to binde me, ought likewiſe to oblige you to beleeue, how much I deſire that *Daraxa* ſhould follow my Religion, which very earneſtly, diuers, nay infinit times I haue perſwaded her vnto. My deſire is no other, then your own; and therefore I will vſe all diligence in this particular cauſe, as in a thing wherein I am ſo much intereſſed. But louing her betrothed friend, and my Maſter ſo dearely as ſhe does, to treat with her to turne Chriſtian, were but to double paſsion in her, without any other fruit at all: For ſhe hath ſome hopes yet aliue in her, that Fortune may turne the wheele againe, flattering her ſelfe with ſome accident or other, whereby in time ſhe may come to inioy her deſire. This is all that I can yet learne from her, ſhee is ſtill harping vpon this ſtring, and (for ought that I can perceiue) very conſtant in this conceit of hers. But that I may comply with that, which you command me, I ſhall (though I were ſure my labour ſhould be fruitleſſe) returne once more to treat with her in this kinde; and when I haue done, I will acquaint you with her anſwere. The *Moore* did not lye in any one word that he ſaid, had he been rightly vnderſtood; but (not thinking on a thing ſo remote) *Don Rodrigo* gaue credit, not to that which he truely, but to that he formally deliuered. And ſo (though deceiued) he had ſome confidence with him, and was not cleane out of hope. For *Quien de veras ama, Se-enganna, con deſengannos*: Hee that truely loues, is deceiu'd with that, which ought to diſ-deceiue him.

Ozmin (when *Rodrigo* was gone) remained ſo ſad to ſee the open inſtance which was made to his owne hurt, that he was ready through iealouſie to runne out of his wits. Which did ſo afflict him, that from that day forward you could neuer get a cheerefull looke from him, and making things impoſſible, ſeeme poſsible vnto him, hee did wraſtle and ſtruggle with himſelfe, imagining, that this new Competitor (being powerfull in his owne Houſe and Country) might vſe ſome tricks and deuices, wherewith to hinder his intent, being ſo ſollicitous as he was, and ſo earneſt in the buſineſſe. He feared againe on the other ſide, leſt ſhe might be wrought to alter her former affection; for many batteries make a breach in the ſtrongeſt walles; and with ſecret mynes they are blowne vp, and laid leuell with the ground.

Out of this iealouſie of his, hee diſcourſed in his thoughts of Tragicall ends, and diſaſtrous accidents, which preſented themſelues vnto his phantaſie, which he did not ſo much beleeue, as he did mightily feare, becauſe hee was a perfect Louer.

Daraxa seeing how her deareſt beloued had for many dayes together continued in this melancholy mood, was very deſirous to know the cauſe of this his ſadneſſe: but ſhe could not wring it from him, nor did he ſpeake a word of that vnto her, vvhich had paſt betwixt him and *Don Rodrigo*. Shee (poore Gentlewoman) knew not what to do, nor vvhich way to vvorke him to bee merry; howbeit with ſweet words, vttered from a daintier tongue, pleaſant ſmiles, and a conſtant heart, much augmented by thoſe faire eyes, whoſe warme teares did be-dew her tender cheeks with thoſe criſtall waters which did flow from them, ſhe ſoftly breathed foorth (hauing firſt ſent foorth many a ſigh, as heralds of her ſorrowfull mind: theſe few words vnto him.)

Lord of my life and liberty; my betroathed, vvhom I honour and obay, what thing can there be of that force, (I being aliue, and in your preſence) that ſhould thus to my hurt torment and grieue you? May my life peraduenture be the price of your ioy? or how vvill you be pleaſed to diſpoſe of it, whereby my ſoule may be freed from this hell of ſorrow, vvherein for your ſake I am tormented? Let the chearefull heauen of your countenance, ſcatter thoſe clouds vvherewith my heart is ouer-caſt, if I am able to doe any thing with you; if the loue which I beare you deſerueth ought; if the griefe wherein I am may moue you to pity; if you will not that my life receiue its buriall in your ſecrecie, I beſeech you to tell me the cauſe of your ſadneſſe. Here ſhe ſtopt; for her teares had choak't her vtterance, ſorrow working on them both, one and the ſame effect; for he could not anſwer her otherwiſe, then with the ſcalding teares of loue, each ſtriuing with their owne to dry vp the others, ſeeming both to bee one and the ſelfe-ſame thing, as long as their tongues were thus tyed, and the current of their ſpeach ſtopped.

Ozmin, with the oppreſsion of his ſighes, (for he cloſely ſmoothered them) fearing (if he ſhould vent them) to be ouer-heard, did ſo long reſiſt them, by returning them backe againe vnto his ſoule; from whence they would haue broken out their way, that he fell downe into a ſwoune; and ſo deepe an one, as that he lay for dead. *Daraxa* knew not what to do, nor how to fetch him againe, nor which way to comfort him, nor could ſhe conceiue what might be the cauſe of this ſo great and ſudden an alteration, hauing formerly beene accuſtomed to ſhew himſelfe merry and cheerefull. Shee was very buſie in wiping his face, in drying his eyes, putting her faire hands vpon them; after ſhe had dip't a rich hand-kerchiefe, that ſhe had about her in the water, imbroydered with gold and ſiluer, inter-wouen with diuers other glorious colours, and ſcattered here and there with pearle, and other deuices of wonderfull both worth and workmanſhip. So much was ſhe transformed into this paine of his; and her ſenſes ſo wholly taken vp in ſeeking to recouer him, that had this fit continued but a little longer, *Don Rodrigo* might haue found them little leſſe then arme in arme; for *Daraxa* had his head leaning on her knee, and one ſide of his body folded in her Gowne, when he firſt began to come to himſelfe. Now when his Senſes were come againe into their proper places, and all was well, thinking to haue taken his leaue of her, *Don Rodrigo* on the nicke, comes into the garden. *Daraxa* (though much troubled) came off as handſomely as ſhe could, leauing through haſte her curious hand-kerchiefe on the ground, which was quickly taken vp by *Ozmin*, who preſently had it in his eye.

Now when ſhe ſaw that *Don Rodrigo* drew nigh, ſhe went her way, and left them two alone together: *Rodrigo* (when he ſaw the coaſt was cleare) ask't him what he had done in the buſines? He told him, (as he had at other times) that he found her ſo firme in her loue to her betrothed friend, that ſhe will not onely not be wonne, (as you pretend) to be a Chriſtian: but if ſhee were ſo, yet for his ſake, ſhe would willingly turne Moore; ſo extreame is her owne folly, the loue of her Religion, and of her husband. I treated your buſineſſe

with

with her; and to you, becauſe you attempt it, and to me, becauſe I propoſe it, ſhe beareth vs both that hatred, that ſhe is reſolued, if euer I ſpeake word thereof againe, neuer any more to ſee me; and as for you, you ſee, ſhe no ſooner ſaw you, but ſhe vvent her way. So that I would not haue you vveary out your ſelfe in this ſuit, nor ſpend any more time in it; for I ſee it vvill be but in vaine, and a hopeleſſe piece of vvorke. *Don Rodrigo* was ſtrucken deeply into his dumpes vvith this ſo reſolute an anſwer, deliuered vvith that ſharpneſſe, vvhich made it the more ſowre and vnfit for relliſh. From that time forward he began to ſuſpect that *Ozmin* vvas rather in his preiudice, then profit, and did rather diſ-aduantage, then aduance his pretenſion. Howſoeuer he thought at leaſt with himſelfe, that though *Daraxa* might haply haue giuen ſo diſtaſtfull a reply, yet it did ill become him to report it vnto him, in that rough faſhion as he did, making himſelfe, as it were, maſter and ruler of the roſte: but ſuch impoſsible things in their incounter are Loue and diſcretion; for euermore a man is ſo much the more confounded and troubled in himſelfe, by how much the more hee loueth and affecteth: hereupon did repreſent it ſelfe vnto him that ſtrict league of amity and friendſhip, which *Daraxa* reported to haue beene betwixt him and his old Maſter, he imagined, that loue was ſtill aliue in him, and could not be perſwaded, that the aſhes of that fire were yet growne cold. With this conceit (which was re-inforced by his paſsion) he was fully bent to put him out of the houſe, informing his father how vnfitting it was; nay how dangerous to permit (where *Daraxa* was) ſuch a one, as might intertaine her in the Diſcourſe of her former Loue, ſtill putting her in mind thereof, eſpecially it being their Maieſties intent and purpoſe to haue her turne Chriſtian: which would be hard to do, as long as *Ambroſio* was there. Let vs, Sir, (ſayd he) make ſome triall by ſundring them ſome few dayes one from another, and then we ſhall ſee what effect it will bring foorth.

Don Luys did no whit miſſlike his ſonnes councell, and preſently picking a quarrell, where no cauſe was, (for of great men we muſt not aske the reaſon of things; and a Captaine with his ſouldiers will bee bold now and then to make fifteene of two eights) he diſmiſſed him of his ſeruice, commanding him, that he ſhould not ſo much as once dare to paſſe by the doore. And hee tooke him ſo on the ſudden, that he could not take his leaue of *Daraxa*. And ſo obaying his Maſter, faining leſſe ſorrow, then what he felt, he remoued his body from thence, (for that pledge he could carry whither he liſted) but for his ſoule, that abode ſtill with her, in whoſe power it had formerly ſo long remained.

THE ARGVMENT.

Continuing the ſtory of the loue of Ozmin *and* Daraxa, *are recounted the troubles and griefes that befell them both: as alſo thoſe publike Feaſts, that were made by diuers Knights and Gentlemen, for to glad and cheare vp the diſ-conſolate* Daraxa: *and of the valour which* Ozmin *in diſguiſe and vnknowe, did performe in them.*

DAraxa ſeeing ſo ſudden a change, began to ſuſpect that his former ſorrow had its birth from that new ſucceſſe; and now by the ſequele aſſured her ſelfe it was ſo: whereupon adding one euill to another, ſorrow to ſorrow, and griefe to griefe, wanting the ſight of her eſpouſed Lord; albeit the poore Lady did diſſemble it all that ſhee could, yet this was that, which did moſt trouble her. Giue them leaue to weepe, howle, ſigh, cry, and talke, that find themſelues afflicted: for albeit they doe not there-with take away

away the burthen of that paine which they indure, yet it doth leſſen ſorrow, and makes the load ſomewhat lighter. She was ſo depriued of all content, ſo heauily ſad, and ſo bodily afflicted, that you might read her griefes not onely in her face and countenance, but throughout all the courſe of her carriage. Our inamoured Moore would not change his eſtate and condition of life; for as he went clad before, the ſame ſtile he ſtill continued, and in the habit of a day-Labourer, he followed his painefull fortune: therein hee had had good ſucceſſe, and he hoped the like with aduantage. He daily followed his worke hard, where there was ought to be got, going in this ſort from place to place to proue his fortune, trying if by this meanes he could come to heare or hearken out any thing that might import him, or ſerue his turne concerning *Daraxa*: for no other end or intereſt in the world had he but this, to labour ſo hard as he did; for he had liberally to ſpend with a large hand for many dayes together, out of the meanes that he had brought from home in money and in Iewels. But as well for that vvhich hath beene ſayd, as alſo becauſe hee vvas well knowne in that habit, that he might haue the freer licence whereſoeuer he came, and himſelfe remaine ſafe in his perſon vnder this diſguiſe, leſt his deſignes might otherwiſe be ouerthrowne, he continued his wonted weare.

Thoſe young *Canallero's* that ſerued *Daraxa*, knowing the fauour that ſhe bare to *Ozmin*, and that he was now no longer ſeruant in *Don Luys* his houſe, euery one did couet him for himſelfe and his owne ends, and happy vvas he, that could make the firſt purchaſe; ſo generall was their deſire to haue him theirs.

But *Don Alonſo de Cuniga* got the ſtart of all the reſt, being a Gentleman of that City, one that was borne to a great eſtate, young, gallant, and rich, and one that was confident, that others want, and his wealth, by the helpe of *Ambroſio*, ſhould carry the buſineſſe. He commanded him to be ſent for; intertained him in his ſeruice, did him many knowne good turnes, made him more aduantageous proffers, gaue him many kind and louing words, and in concluſion, a kind of friendſhip was begun betweene them, (if any ſuch thing may be found betweene maſter and man:) notwithſtanding, inaſmuch as man is compatible, it is commonly called by the name of Priuancie or Inwardneſſe; vvhereinto men grow by ſome deſeruing ſeruice, vvith whom hauing runne ouer ſome paſſages, he came in the end to diſcouer his deſire vnto him, promiſing him great rewards: all which was but an opening vnto him of his old wounds, and a ripping vp of his ſores, to make them greater then before: if he were ielous before of one, now he had two Corriuals, and vvithin a ſhort time after, he knew of many which his Maſter had diſcouered vnto him, and which way they marched, and the meanes whereby they thought to preuaile: but for his owne part he neither ſought, nor deſired any furtherance of others, ſaue onely his good intelligence, beleeuing (as he verily perſwaded himſelfe) that ſolely his interceſsion ſhould bee ſufficient to effect it.

I am not able to imagine, much leſſe to expreſſe the griefe vvhich hee conceiued, ſeeing himſelfe now the ſecond time to be made a Bawd to his owne wife: and how fitting notwithſtanding it was for him to paſſe thorow all theſe pikes with a diſcreet kind of diſsimulation.

He intertained him with good words, for feare leſt it might happen vnto him, as it did with *Don Rodrigo*; and if he ſhould carry himſelfe violently and inconſideratly with the reſt with whom he had to deale with, he ſhould finde his hands too full, and giue himſelfe a great deale of trouble, and in the end loſe all, and not come to the knowledge of any thing concerning his beſt beloued. And if we will peaceably inioy the end of our deſires, we muſt put on Patience and ſufferance in the atchieuement of them.

He bore him fayrely in hand, albeit his heart was all on fire, his various thoughts

thoughts gaue him many a ſhrewd battell, and aſſaulted him on euery ſide, galling him in ſuch cruell manner, that like a Bull inraged, he knew not how to helpe himſelfe, nor whither to fly for ſuccour, nor behind vvhom to runne, nor could he find any comfort for to eaſe thoſe intolerable torments which he indured. The Hare was ſingle, the Grayhounds many, and all light-footed, they had certaine Falcons too in their fauour, that for all their high place, would not refuſe to ſtoope to their Lure, for hope of reward: to theſe I may adde a number of ſhe-friends and acquaintance, comming to viſit and banquet with *Daraxa*, who too too vſually ſet fire to the honour of many a faire Lady, and blow the coales of Luſt in many Noble houſes of good report and honeſt fame: many Ladies and Gentlewomen enter (for ſuch they are in appearance) and all forſooth vnder the faire name of *Viſites*; ſome, out of the difficulty they find at home in their owne houſes to effect their purpoſe; others, to worke deceite, and to bring innocent Dames, by one deuice or other into the ſame net, wherein themſelues haue beene caught. Of theſe kind of creatures there are great ſtore, the world is full of them, and the practice too too common. Nay, out of the principalleſt and graueſt ſort of Ladies, the Diuel hath not beene careleſſe in working them to become pot-lids, and couers to theſe boyling veſſels of concupiſcence. Theſe are thoſe ſiluer Plates, that couer many a ſweet morſell, after which your Gallants ſo eagerly long to licke their lippes, and are ſo ſharpe ſet. All theſe things did hee feare, and many more, but moſt of all *Don Rodrigo*, to whom both himſelfe, and the reſt of the Riuals bare great hatred for his falſe arrogancie, vvhereof hee cunningly made vſe, to haue them thereby to deſiſt from their purpoſe: and the more to daunt and amate them, hee made them all beleeue, or at leaſt would faine haue them ſo to thinke, that he was the onely man that was like to carry *Daraxa*, as hauing the beſt meanes and opportunity, (beſides his owne deſires) to grow into her Loue and fauour. Hereupon they ſpake courteouſly vnto him, but in their hearts they wiſh't him hang'd; they powred hony to him out of their mouthes, leauing rancour and poyſon in their breſts; they ſaluted him kindly, but curſt his very bowels and intrailes, deſiring to ſee them burſt in a thouſand pieces; they ſmiled vpon him, but as dogges doe grin at Waſpes, they long'd to haue a ſnap at him: this is the common faſhion now in Court, and more particularly amongſt thoſe of the greateſt ranke and quality.

Now let vs returne againe to *Daraxa*, and ſpeake of the torments which ſhe ſuffered; of the care which ſhe tooke to know what was become of her deareſt Loue, whither he was gone, what he did, how it was with him in his health, how he ſpent his time, and whether he had got him ſome other new Miſtreſſe; and this did trouble her moſt: for albeit mothers haue likewiſe ſome ſorrow for the abſence of their children, yet notwithſtanding the caſe is not alike: for they onely feare the life of their child, but a wife the loſſe of her husbands loue, leſt ſome other woman with fawning blandiſhments, and ſmooth flatteries ſhould draw his affection from her. What dayes ſo ſad as thoſe, what nights ſo tedious, as for a woman to weaue and vn-weaue her thoughts, like *Penelope's* Web, with the chaſte deſire of her beloued *Vlyſſes*?

I ſhall vtter much by being ſilent in a paſſage of this nature, for to paint foorth ſuch a ſorrow as this, ſmall was that cunning, which a famous Painter vſed vpon the death of a young damoſell, who after hee had painted her dead, ſtretcht out to the life lying in her Coffin, hee placed round about the Coarſe, her parents, her brethren, her kinsfolkes, her friends, her acquaintance, and her houſhold ſeruants in their proper places; and with that griefe which was fitting for euery one of them in their ſeuerall degrees: but when he came to her father and mother, he left off to finiſh their faces, giuing euery one licence and free libertie to pourtrayt foorth ſuch a ſorrow, according as

he

he himſelfe ſhould therewith be affected; for neither words nor penſill were any way able to manifeſt a parents loue, or the ſorrow that they conceiued, ſaue onely ſome actions, which wee haue read of Heathen people. The ſame courſe muſt I take. The penſill of my rude tongue, ſhall bee but a groſſe vnhewen ſticke, fit onely to forme blots and blurres; and therefore it ſhall bee wiſedome to leaue it to the diſcretion of the hearer: and to him that ſhall vnderſtand Hiſtory, to referre it to his conſideration in what manner ſuch paſſions as theſe are to be apprehended. So that euery man may meaſure it by his owne imagination, iudging others hearts by their owne.

Daraxa was ſo ſurcharg'd with ſorrow, that her outward remonſtrances manifeſted her inward afflictions. *Don Luys* ſeeing her ſo wholly taken vp with melancholly, as alſo *Don Rodrigo* his ſonne, both of them for to cheere her vp, ordained certaine feaſts; as that of the running of Buls, and their *juego de cannas*: And becauſe the City was ſo well fitted for theſe paſtimes, it ſhortly after tooke effect. Now thoſe that were Actors in theſe ſports, had euery one of them his ſeuerall deuice, wrought in dfferent ſorts of ſilkes and colours, expreſsing therein their diuers paſsions; one, his Deſpaire; another, his Hope; this, his Captiuity; that, his Iealouſie; ſome their Ioy, ſome their Sorrow, and ſome their being in Loue, and the like. All which, and more too, did meet in poore *Daraxa*.

As ſoone as *Ozmin* knew that this appointed feaſt was to bee performed, and that his Maſter was one of the number he thought with himſelfe, that it were not time ill ſpent to ſee his Miſtris, by giuing ſome proofe of his valour, and ſetting himſelfe forth that day amongſt the reſt. Which being come, iuſt as the Buls began to rune, he mounted vpon his horſe, both he and it being in euery point very well fitted. His face was ſcarfed with watchet Taffata, that he might auoid the common eye, and his Horſe had his eyes vayled with a bend of blacke. He feigned himſelfe to be a ſtranger; his ſeruant went before him, bearing in his hand a goodly ſtrong Launce, he rounded the whole place, beholding many things of admiration which were therein: but aboue all, the beauty of *Daraxa* did out-ſhine the reſt, as the day doth the night; and in her preſence all the other Dames were but darkneſſe. He placed himſelfe right ouer againſt her window; whither he was no ſooner come, but hee ſaw the place much altered, euery man flying as faſt as he could from a fierce Bull, which at that inſtant they had let out of the Paddock; it was a Bull of *Tarifa* well growne, cunning in the carriage of his head, and as ſtout as a Lyon, and as full of rage. Who was no ſooner let forth, but giuing two or three nimble bounds, put himſelfe into the midſt of the place, making himſelfe Maſter of all that Round, to the great affright and terrour of all that were there. Hee turn'd his frizzled front from ſide to ſide, whileſt diuers darts were throwne at him, which he did eaſily ſhake off, and vſed ſuch art, that hee would not ſuffer them to gall him in the flanke, or other his inferiour parts: and this hee did auoid, by vſing certaine light friskals, which he performed ſo dexterouſly as they could not touch him. Now, there was not a man in all the place that durſt to incounter him a horſe-backe, and thoſe that were a-foot, durſt not expect his comming, nor looke him in the face, though he were neuer ſo farre from them. So that for very feare they left him all alone, and not one man ſaue onely *Ozmin*, and his ſeruant, was to be ſeene any thing neere him in all that circuit of ground.

The Bull, as if he had rode on the wings of the winde, ranne with all the ſpeed he could, directly towards this Gentleman; ſo that hee was forced to betake himſelfe ſuddenly to his Launce, which he had not taken into his hand, when the Bull was firſt let looſe, and lifting vp his right arme, bearing his Launce for his beſt aduantage, whereat was faſtened *Daraxa's* Handkerchiefe which ſhe left behind her in the Garden (as you haue heard heretofore) with a gracefull

a gracefull kinde of actiueneſſe, and a gallant ayme in the carriage of his arme, he charged home vpon him; and making way by his necke, hee ranne his Launce quite through his body, which made no ſtay till the point thereof had nayled the hoofe of one of his farther feete to the ground, leauing him there for dead, without any motion in the world; there onely remaining in his hand the ſhort broken truncheon of his Launce, which hee caſting away from him in a careleſſe faſhion, he victorioufly, but modeſtly quitted the place.

Daraxa was much reioyced in the ſight of him: for when he firſt made his entrance, ſhe knew him by his man, who had ſometimes alſo been her ſeruant; as likewiſe by his handkercher, which after the Bull was ſlaine, he wore about his arme. All that were there preſent, with a generall murmure, remained full of admiration, giuing him due commendation, in clearing the happineſſe of the ſtroke, and the ſtrength of this vnknowne Knight. Nor was any thing elſe in the mouthes of the multitude; then the diſcourſing of the braue performance of this buſineſſe, deliuering the manner thereof one to another; and though they had all ſeene how it was, yet euery one ſpake thereof a-freſh, and it ſeemed to them as a dreame; ſome in wonder clapping their hands; others highly extolling his valour; one ſpeakes with his fingers; another ſtands amazed; a third bleſſes himſelfe; a fourth lifts vp his arme; a fifth acts it with his hand, all of them hauing their mouthes and their eyes full of ioy; a ſixt bowes downe his body, and ſuddenly leapes vp againe in the ayre; ſome bend the browe, and ſome being ready to burſt with content, make gracefull Matachines, with many other pretty Antike-geſtures.

All which to *Daraxa* ſeemed ſo many degrees of glory. *Ozmin* with-drew himſelfe out of the Citie into certaine back-Gardens, out of which he formerly came; and (leauing his Horſe, and changing his cloathes, vvith his Sword vnder his arme, returning in the habit of *Ambroſio*) he came to the place; taking his Stand where he might ſee what hee moſt deſired, and was ſeene againe by her, who lou'd him more then her owne life. They tooke great pleaſure in beholding each other; howbeit *Daraxa* was very fearefull, leſt ſome mis-fortune might befall him, ſtanding there a-foot amongſt the multitude: ſhe made ſignes vnto him, that he ſhould get vp vpon a Scaffold: but he made ſhow that he did not vnderſtand her meaning, ſtanding there ſtill, till the Buls began to runne.

By this time the euening was farre ſpent, and with the approaching of the night, thoſe that were to ſport at the *juego de Cannas*, made their entrance in manner following:

Firſt of all, the Trumpets, Fifes, and Drums, accompanied with diuers other ſorts of Muſicke, preſented themſelues, being cladde in rich Liueries of ſundry colours; after whom followed the *Azemilas*, or Sumpter Mules, laden with bundles of Canes.

The Companies that were to maintaine this ſport, were likewiſe eight, anſwering to the number of their bundles of Canes. Euery one had his Sumpter Cloth of Veluet caſt ouer the Canes, richly imbroydered with the Armes of their Maſter in Silke and Gold, the *Garrotes* belonging thereunto, being all of ſiluer.

After theſe, entred two hundred and forty Gennets, richly furniſhed for 48. Knights, which were fiue a piece for euery man, beſides that which came in with the Canes, which made vp ſixe in the whole. But they that entred firſt on the right hand, came in two Files, oppoſing themſelues againſt the aduerſe part. The firſt two horſes (which as if they had beene yoaked together, ranne on in an euen and equall courſe) were aſſiſted by fiue others of a ſide, bearing their Owners Targets at the Arſon of their Saddles, offering their faireſt ſhow to the eyes of the Spectators; wherein were depainted their Emblemes

blemes and their *Motto's*, ſet forth with faire Scarfes, rich Ribbonings, Taſſels and Buttons of the beſt both ſilke and gold, with ſundry other borderings and coſtly imbroyderies, euery man ſuting himſelfe according to his own humour, and particular fancy. Moſt of the Horſes had their Pettrels ſtucke full with Bels, all their other furniture and trappings being very rich and curious, they had ſumptuous head-ſtals of gold and ſiluer, ſet with precious Stones, as thicke as they could ſtand each by other: it ſhall ſuffice, for the better amplifying of what I haue ſpoken, that they were in *Seuill*, where there is no ſmall ſtore of them, nor make little eſteeme of ſuch things; and that theſe Knights and Gentlemen were Louers, Competitors, rich, and young; and the Lady for whom they ſtroue, preſent amongſt them. Theſe entred in at one gate of the Place, and when they had giuen it a round, they iſſued out at another neere vnto that by which they entred. So that the one did not hinder the other either in their comming in, or their going forth: and thus they paſt in very good equipage as could be deſired.

The Horſes hauing quit the place, theſe Gallants entred in againe, the whole eight ſquadrons running two and two together, well attired themſelues, with their Liueries attending vpon them (as before hath been deliuered) and with their Launces in their hands, which they ſtrongly brandiſhing, made the ſtock and point thereof ſeeme to meet together, whoſe nimble ſhaking cauſed euery ſingle Launce to appeare to be foure. Preſently vpon this, incouraging their proud Gennet with their lowd ſhoutes and cryes, and wounding their Sattin ſides with their ſharpe Spurres, you would haue thought them rather to fly, then runne; their Maſters, and they, ſeeming but one ioynt-body, ſo cloſely did they keepe themſelues in their ſeates. Nor is this any Hyperbole, or ouer-indearing what was done, ſince that in all parts almoſt of *Andaluzia*; as *Seuill*, *Cordóua* and *Xerez de la frontera*, they bring forth their children (as it is commonly ſaid) from the Cradle, to the Saddle, as in other parts they accuſtome them to carry Canes. And it is a wonder in ſuch tender yeeres, to ſee ſuch hard ſteeles, and ſuch dexterity and agility of body. For to doe theſe things, is an ordinary exerciſe amongſt them. They gaue a turne about the Place, running to and fro from all the foure parts thereof: and then leauing the place for a while (to recouer freſh breath) and to giue ſome pawſing to the Spectators) they entred againe, as before, (changing ſtill their Horſes) with their Targets on their armes, and their Canes in their hands.

Then they diuided themſelues by ſixe and ſixe (as the manner there is) and in a handſome well-ordered faſhion began their ſport. Wherein hauing continued for the ſpace of a quarter of an houre, or thereabouts, ſome other Gentlemen thruſt in amongſt them to part the quarrell, beginning with their freſh Horſes a well-prepared skirmiſh, both the one and the other from all parts of the Place, ranging and marſhalling themſelues in ſuch good array, obſeruing ſuch due both time and meaſure, that it ſeemed a very fine contriued daunce: the beholding whereof, as it held the people in ſuſpence by poſſeſſing all their faculties; ſo did it giue them ſingular content. But this ſport was interrupted, and wholly diſordered by the ſudden approch of a furious Bull, which they had let looſe from the other ſide of the place. Thoſe that vvere a horſebacke, changing their Canes into Iauelins, (which they had ready at hand) began to caſt themſelues into a ring, ſeeking to ſhut him in on euery ſide: but the Bull ſtood ſtocke ſtill in the midſt of them, not knowing whom he ſhould firſt ſet vpon: he caſt his eyes vpon them all, tearing vp the earth with his forked feet; and whileſt euery man ſtood in this manner expecting his chance; one bold Rogue amongſt the reſt comes athwart him, prouoking him to fury with his tottered Cloake, and his ſhrill ſhoutes, but little needed any ſuch inſtigations: for the Bull preſently thereupon, like one mad with rage, forſaking the horſemen, made after him with all the eagerneſſe he could,

could, who tooke himselfe to his heeles as fast as they were able to carry him; he flyes from the Bull, the Bull after him, and neuer giues him ouer, forcing him to take Sanctuary vnder *Daraxa's* window, iust there where *Ozmin* then stood; who deeming it a place of priuiledge for this fearefull young fellow, and reputing it a kinde of iniury offered to his Lady and Mistris, if there he should receiue any ill entertainment, as likewise to himselfe, if this poore Rogue should suffer for his comming thither; as well out of this respect, as also for that he was incensed against those, who stroue to get the honour of the day, and to winne grace by doing something brauely in her presence, breaking through the thickest of all the people, he went out against the Bull, who forsaking him he formerly followed, made directly towards himselfe. All that beheld this, thought him either foolish or mad, that should so desperately put himselfe forth to incounter with a Beast of that courage and fiercenesse, looking euery minute, when he should take him vp betweene his Hornes; and tossing him vp aloft, breake euery bone of him in pieces. All of them with lowd voices cride out vnto him, Take heed, for the passion of God; if you loue your life, looke to your selfe; for if you had a thousand liues, they are all in danger of losing. You may by this time imagine with your selues, what a poore taking his Spouse was in: for mine owne part I know not what to say therein, saue that she was as a woman bereft of her proper Soule, and was become an insensible body, through too much Sence. The Bull bowed downe his head for to fasten his blowe vpon him, but this was but an humbling himselfe to the sacrifice, for he neuer came to lift it vp againe. For the *Moore* wrything his body aside, and with extraordinary quickenesse vnsheathing his sword, acting it all in an instant, he gaue him such a cut in the neck, close vnto the horne, that parting the bones of the braine in sunder, hee left his head hanging by his winde-pipe, and there he lay for dead.

This done (as though he had done nothing) sheathing his sword, he presently leaues the *Place*. But the common rout that loue nouelties, and hunger as well to heare, as to tell strange tales, (besides many horsemen, and foot-men, that began to flock about him, to know who he was) pressed so hard on euery side to see him, and so throng'd him both before and behind, that they had almost stiffled him, being scarce able to wagge amongst them. In the Windowes, and on the Scaffolds, began a new murmure of admiration, like vnto the former, there being a generall ioy amongst them all, for that this thing had hapned at the conclusion of these feasts, so that nothing else was talked of, saue onely those two wonderfull accidents of that Euening, doubting which were the greater of the two; and taking in good part this second course which he set before them, hee left their palate well pleased, and their mouthes seasoned with a good relish, to recommend such braue actions in perpetuall remembrance to all succeeding ages.

THE ARGVMENT.

The Story continues of these two illustrious Louers, Ozmin *and* Daraxa; *wherein is declared her sorrow, and his griefe, with diuers other accidents; and how for to comfort and cheere vp* Daraxa, *there was a Tourneyment, or Iusting performed by many Knights, & Gentlemen of worth, wherein* Ozmin *bore away the bell, and had the glory of the day: yet all this could not make* Daraxa *merry.*

THis day *Daraxa* had (as you haue seene) her pleasures interrupted, her ioyes intermixed with griefes, her delights false, and her contents vnsauoury: For scarce had arriued the comfort which she tooke in seeing that which she most desired, but on the sudden it was ouer-taken

with feare of danger: it did likewiſe torment her, to thinke with her ſelfe, that ſhe knew not how, nor vpon what occaſion to ſee him once againe, nor how ſhe might feed her fill, ſatisfying the hunger of her eyes, on the delicate food of her ſweet deſire. And becauſe Pleaſure appeares not, where Sorrow is in place, it could not be diſcerned in her countenance, whether theſe Feaſts had giuen her that contentment, for which they were intended: As well for this, as for that theſe Gallants were ſomewhat more heated then before, beeing ſet on fire with that beautifull fayreneſſe, and fayre beauty of *Daraxa*, deſirous more then euer to entertayne her with pleaſures, and that fitting occaſion might be offered to come againe to the ſight of her; in this their pride of heart, and heat of blood, they ordayned a Tourney, wherein *Don Rodrigo* was to be the Challenger.

And ſome few nights after, the Challenge was publiſht with great ſtore of muſicall Inſtruments, and bright-burning Torches, that all the ſtreetes, together with the great Place, ſeemed to be all on a flame: in this ſolemne manner they ſet vp the Challenge, where it might beſt be ſeene and read of all that paſſed by.

There was a place for Tourneyment neere vnto the Gate, which they call the gate of *Cordoua*, adioyning to the wall, (which I haue ſometimes ſeene and well knowne, though now decayed) where the Knights and Gentlemen went to exerciſe Armes, and to proue their Lances: there *Don Alonſo de Zuniga*, being but a new beginner, did likewiſe practiſe amongſt the reſt, deſirous to ſhew himſelfe in this Tourney, for the great affection which hee bare to *Daraxa*. He was afraid he ſhould rather loſe then get honour in this Tourneyment, nor did he ſticke in all Companies publikely to ſay as much; not becauſe he wanted eyther ſtrength, or courage; but becauſe in all things whatſoeuer, Vſe makes maſteries: for they that haue onely the bare *Theoricke*, and naked ſpeculation of things, be they neuer ſo skilfull in this their contemplatiue knowledge, they erre in their ayme, be they neuer ſo confident in their vnder-takings. And in this, of all other he was moſt vnwilling to erre, the thought whereof did much afflict him, yet made him with-all more carefull how to behaue himſelfe in the buſineſſe.

Ozmin on the other ſide deſired to haue as few enemies as hee could, and becauſe he might not Tourney, nor thought it poſſible to be admitted into the number, he would faine haue ſome-body to enter the Liſts, that might ouerthrow *Don Rodrigo's* pride; for that he was more ielous of him, then of all the reſt: more to effect this his purpoſe, then any mind that he had therein to do his Maſter ſeruice, he ſpake thus vnto him:

Sir, if you be pleaſed to grant me free liberty of ſpeech, I may haply deliuer that vnto you, which may be of ſome profit vnto you in this ſo honourable an occaſion. *Don Alonſo* dreaming of nothing leſſe, then that he vvould treat with him touching ſuch Gentleman-like exerciſes as theſe, but rather ſuppoſing that he would entertaine him with ſome diſcourſe touching his Loue, ſayd vnto him; You are too ſlow in vnfolding your ſelfe, conſidering the haſte I haue to heare thee, and the longing deſire which I haue to know what it is thou wilt ſay vnto me.

Sir, (quoth he) I find, that of force you muſt bee preſent at this famous Tourneyment, the noyſe whereof, as it hath filled euery mans eare, ſo it is now all their talke: nor do I wonder, that where the reward of a glorious name lyes at ſtake, men go on fearefully, out of their great deſire that they haue to gaine it. I that am your poore creature, will doe you the beſt ſeruice I can, by inſtructing and enabling you in that vvhich you are deſirous to attayne vnto in the exerciſe of Horſemanſhip, and the vſe of Armes, and that in a ſhort time; no way doubting but my inſtructions ſhall bring foorth good fruits of what I promiſe. Let not this ſeeme ſtrange vnto you, nor let my

youth

youth ſcandall my skill; for I muſt tell you, they beeing things whereunto I haue euen beene bred, they are familiar vnto mee, and I dare boldly boaſt my knowledge in them. *Don Alonſo* was much ioyed in hearing him, and giuing him many thankes for this his voluntary offer of his loue and ſeruice: he told him; If thou performeſt what thou ſpeakeſt, thou ſhalt bind me much vnto thee. *Ozmin* made anſwere; He that promiſeth that, which he cannot performe, is as wide of his word, as he is from the worke; and meanes nothing but deceit; but he that ſtands in thoſe tearmes, as I doe now, where trickes cannot ſerue the turne, he muſt of force, (vnleſſe he bee a foole) accompliſh more in deeds, then he promiſeth in his vvords.

Take order, Sir, that Armes be prouided for your owne perſon, and mine, and then you ſhall quickly know, that by how much the ſlower I haue beene in my offer, by ſo much the ſooner I will bring it to effect: freeing my ſelfe from this debt, but not from that obligation which I haue to ſerue you. *Don Alonſo* preſently gaue order to haue all things neceſſary prouided, and when they vvere fitted for the purpoſe, they went foorth to a place a-part, where that day, thoſe that followed till the determined time of the Tourneying, they ſpent their time in the exerciſes which that ſolemne Feaſt required. So that in a very ſhort time, *Alonſo* learn'd to keepe his ſeate ſo ſure, as if hee had beene lockt to his Saddle, bearing his Lance with ſo gracefull a carriage, and cowching it in his wreſt with ſo comely a diportment, as if he had many yeeres beene practiſed in the Feates of Armes: vvhereupon vvere very good helpes, his cleane proportion of body, accompanied with a ſmart and nymble kinde of ſtrength, which gaue no ſmall gracefull ſucceſſe to his performance.

From his dexterity in vaulting on his horſe, paſſing lightly from one Saddle to another, from his directions in his teaching, and from the ſhape, proportion, faſhion of his body, from his behauiour, beſides the garbe of *Ozmins* language, *Don Alonço* began to thinke with himſelfe, that it was impoſſible this mans name ſhould be *Ambroſio*, much leſſe a Labourer, vnleſſe perhaps he laboured with his wretched Fortunes, whereof hee ſeemed to make ſhew. He diſcouered by his actions the liuely ſplendour of ſome principall perſon nobly deſcended, who by ſome various ſucceſſe of Fortune, wandred vp and downe in this diſguiſe: and not being able to contayne himſelfe in quiet, till he were rid of this doubt, taking him one day aſide, hee ſpake thus in ſecret vnto him:

Ambroſio, it is not long that you haue ſerued me, but in this ſhort time you haue beene with me, you haue bound me much vnto you: your vertues, and your noble kind of carriage ſpeake what you are; and therefore it is in vayne to ſeeke any longer to conceale your ſelfe: vnder the courſe vayle of theſe baſe and vile clothes, and vnder this poore habit, which thou now weareſt, lyes hid a nobler office, and a nobler name, (like Iewels lap't vp in leather-Caſes.) I now know by manifeſt ſignes which I haue noted and obſerued in thee, that thou doeſt, (or to ſpeake more properly) haſt deceiued me: for, that a poore Labourer, whoſe perſon you are willing to repreſent, ſhould be ſo generall (eſpecially being ſo young) in all kind of knowledge, but more particularly in the exerciſe of Armes and Horſemanſhip, is a thing almoſt (let me call in that word againe, and ſay) beyond beliefe. I haue ſeene in thee, and plainely perceyued, that vnder theſe hard clods of earth, and muddy ſhels, is incloſed the fineſt gold, and the pureſt orientall Pearles the vvorld can afford. What I am, it is already well knowne vnto thee; what thou art, I am yet to ſeeke; howbeit (as I ſay) the cauſes are knowne by their effects, and that thou canſt not any longer conceale thy ſelfe from me. I ſweare vnto thee by the faith which I haue in Ieſus Chriſt, and by the Order of Knight-hood which I profeſſe and maintaine, to be thy both faithfull and ſecret friend, keeping that

vnder the Locke of Silence, which thou ſhalt depoſite in my boſome, aſſiſting thee in all that I am able, both in my purſe and perſon. Giue mee an account of thy fortune, that I may in ſome ſort cancell the debt, wherein I ſtand bound vnto thee for thoſe reall courteſies, vvhich I haue receiued from thee. Hereunto *Ozmin* thus replyde:

So ſtrongly (Sir) haue you coniur'd me; ſo ſquiz'd the Grapes in the vvine-preſſe, that you muſt of force wring that from my Soule, which with any other ſtrayning in the world, ſaue by theſe the Preſſes of your Gentleman-like proceeding, were impoſſible to be drawne from me. Complying therefore with that which you cõmand me, putting aſſured confidence as well in your perſon, as your promiſe, I ſhall giue you to vnderſtand, that I am a Gentleman; my natiue Soyle *Saragoça* in *Aragon*; my name *Iayme Viues*, which I borrowed from my father; for ſo likewiſe vvas he called. It is not many yeres ſince, that following an occaſion, (it being the nature of young-men to bee in action) I fell into the Moores hands, and was made a ſlaue, by a ſubtill kind of trechery, and falſe play of certaine fained friends; which, whether it were occaſioned through their enuy, or my misfortune, is too large a tale to tell you. It ſhall ſuffice that I deliuer vnto you, that being in their power, they ſold me to a *Renegado*, one that had renounced his Chriſtianity; who, how he did vſe me, it is inough to haue nam'd his condition. He led me along with him, till he had brought me to *Granada*, where a Gentleman bought mee, called *Zegri*, one of the principalleſt perſons in that City. This man had a ſonne of the ſame yeeres with my ſelfe, vvhoſe name was *Ozmin*, who becauſe he was the very picture of my ſelfe, as well in age, as in ſtature, feature, fauour, condition, and all things elſe whatſoeuer: for that I did ſo truly reſemble him, he was the more deſirous to buy me, and to vſe me the better, that it might breed the greater faſtneſſe and friendſhip betweene vs. I taught him all I could or knew, according as my ſelfe had learned of my friends at home in mine owne Country, which was the more perfected in mee by the frequent practice of ſuch like exerciſes, being of that common vſe with vs, as nothing more. From whence I reaped no ſmall benefit; for, by conuerſing with my Maſters ſonne, my knowledge was thereby increaſed, which otherwiſe I might haply haue forgot: and experience teacheth vs, That men by teaching, come to learne. Hence grew to be refined both in the ſonne and father, that affection which they bore vnto me; truſting me with their perſons and wealth; ſo much did they rely vpon my truth and honeſty.

This young Gentleman was a Suitour to *Daraxa*, daughter to the *Alcalde de Baça*; (my Miſtreſſe, whom you ſo much adore:) the marriage was treated of, and vpon the point to take effect; for the Articles of agreement were already drawne, and no doubt the match ere this had beene concluded, had not the warres hindred it, and the preſent ſiege that was then layd vnto it, wherby they were forced to deferre it till ſome fitter time.

Baça was ſhortly after yeelded vp, by occaſion whereof, this intended Marriage hung in ſuſpence. And becauſe I was then *Dominus Fac-totum*, and the onely man in fauour and truſt with them, I went and came with preſents, and other inter-changeable kindneſſes, from the one City to the other: it being my good fortune to be in *Baça* at that time, when it was rendred vp; and ſo I recouered my liberty, together with many other Captiues. I would faine haue returned home to mine owne Countrey, but I wanted money: In the end I had notice, that a Kinſman of mine was abiding in this City. Two things did concurre to draw me hither; the deſire I had to ſee this place, (being ſo noble and magnificent a City) and the ſupplying of my wants, the better to performe my Iourney. I continued here a great while, without finding him, that I ſought for: for hearing no newes of him, but ſuch as were vncertaine, it turned to my vtter vn-doing; by finding that which I did not ſeeke for;

for, as in ſuch caſes it commonly falleth out. I vvent wandring vp and downe the City, and hauing little money, and much care, it was my happe to meete with a rare piece of Nature, an admirable Beauty; (at leaſt in my eye, howſoeuer in other it might be otherwiſe) but that's all one, beeing that is onely faire, which moſt pleaſeth. To her I deliuered vp all my faculties, leauing to my ſelfe not one of them to liue with me: I made now no more any reckoning of my ſelfe, nor poſſeſſed any thing which was not hers. This faire workmanſhip is *Donna Elvira*, ſiſter to *Don Rodrigo*, and daughter to *Don Luys de Padilla*, my old Maſter. And becauſe counſell (as the ſaying is) ſpringeth from neceſſity, ſeeing my ſelfe ſo wholly loſt in her loue, and not finding any meanes to manifeſt my affection, together with the quality of my perſon, I held it my beſt courſe to write Letters vnto my father of the recouery of my liberty, and that I was indebted in a thouſand double Ducats; and that he would be pleaſed to ſupply me with ſo much moneys for my reliefe. Which buſineſſe ſucceeded well; for hauing ſent me the whole Summe, and a ſeruant with a horſe for my iourney, I put my ſelfe into good Cloathes, and fitted my ſelfe with all things neceſſary according to mine owne mind. The two or three firſt dayes I began to make that ſtreet my walke, giuing many a turne at all howers of the day, but could neuer haue the happineſſe to ſee her. Now, from my continuall walking that way, I began by ſome ſuſpicious people to be obſerued, who ſeemed to haue a watchfull eye ouer me; wherefore, for the auoyding of Spyes, I with-drew my ſelfe from my wonted walke, and betooke my ſelfe to a more retired courſe of life.

My ſeruant (to whom I imparted my Loue-buſineſſes) thinking vpon ſome courſe for me, aduiſed me (as beeing elder and better experienced then my ſelfe) finding a certaine piece of Worke going forward in my Lords houſe, to ſuite my ſelfe like a day-Labourer, and to change my name, that I might not be knowne, and ſo ranke my ſelfe amongſt the reſt, that are hired to digge and carry away the rubbiſh from the Maſons worke. I began to conſider with my ſelfe, what might happen thereupon; but becauſe Loue ouercomes all difficulties, and Death is too weake an aduerſary to withſtand its force, all feare was layd aſide, euery thing ſeemed eaſie vnto me, I put on a reſolution to entertaine his aduice, and ſo I did accordingly. At that time there befell mee an vn-expected accident, vvhich was this; When the Worke was finiſhed, they receiu'd me into the houſe to be their Gardiner. Then, & neuer till then, was that happy day that I long looked for: my Moone was now come to her Full; and I was now climing to the height of my good fortune: for the very firſt day that I ſupplyde that place, and had but newly ſet foot within the garden, I luckily met with *Daraxa*; ſhe wondred to ſee me there, and I no leſſe to behold her. We gaue an account each to other of our liues, relating our mutuall misfortunes; ſhe recounting hers, and I mine; not ſticking to tell her, how farre I was in loue with her friend, and in what faſt Fetters ſhe held my heart: intreating her withall, that ſince ſhee had ſuch cleare knowledge both of my parents and ſelfe, and how nobly I was deſcended, ſhe would bee pleaſed to fauour my pretenſion, and to worke ſo with her by her good interceſſion, that I might come (by the holy Rite of Marriage) to enioy the fruit of my hopes. She promiſed ſhe would, and did (I aſſure my ſelfe) all that in her lay to accompliſh my deſire. But becauſe Fortune was euermore too too niggardly-handed towards mee, when theſe our tender loues (like young Plants) began to gather a little ſtrength, and were in the way to ſhoot vp higher; the ſprigs being rent off, the bud was blaſted with a ſharpe Eaſterly wind, and ſome malicious Worme lay gnawing at the root, till at laſt it withered to nothing, and was quite conſumed: for I was on the ſudden baniſhed the houſe, not knowing why, nor wherefore; falling thus from the higheſt top of happineſſe, to the loweſt depth of miſery. He that with the ſtroke

of a Launce kill'd the firſt Bull, hee that with the edge of his ſword made the other fall dead at his foot, was my ſelfe. She ſaw me well inough, and knew me too, and was not a little glad of it, which I did plainely reade in her looks, and her eyes did expreſſe it to the life. And in this occaſion (if it were poſsible) I would likewiſe ſtriue to make ſome notable proofe for to pleaſe my Miſtris, who ſhall eternize my actions, by giuing the world to vnderſtand who I am, and at what valuation I ought to be rated amongſt the reſt. My inability to execute this my deſire, makes me euen ready to burſt with griefe; and if I could purchaſe it with my bloud, I would willingly let looſe the Sluces of my veines to obtaine my wiſhed end. Thus (Sir) you ſee, I haue freely laid open vnto you the whole ſucceſſe of my loue, I haue giuen you a true account of it, there remaining nothing to my ſelfe in the reckoning, ſaue a groſſe ſumme of diſgraces. And with that word he ſtopt.

Don Alonſo, who liſtned earneſtly all this while vnto him, when his eares were let looſe (for t'others tongue had tyde them to his mouth) threw his armes about his necke, claſping him cloſe vnto him with ſtreight imbracements: Whilſt *Ozmin* in the meane while ſtroue to kiſſe his hands, but hee would not ſuffer him ſo to doe, ſaying; Theſe hands and armes are to bee imployed in thy ſeruice, that they may thereby deſerue to gaine thine. It is no time now to vſe compliments, nor to alter as yet the courſes you haue hitherto held, ſeeing your owne will is not in diſpoſition to doe otherwiſe. As for the Tourneyment, let that neuer trouble your thoughts, for you ſhall enter in with the reſt, and doubt you not of it, for it ſhall be ſo; therefore plucke vp your ſpirits, and ſet your heart at reſt. *Ozmin* once more made offer to kiſſe his hands, humbling his knee on the ground. *Don Alonſo* did the like, making many proffers of preuention: ſo forcibly did this new bond of friendſhip tye them each to other. Thus they paſt in large conuerſation the reſt of thoſe dayes that remained, till the very time and houre, wherein the Tourneyment was to be performed.

I told you before, how that *Don Rodrigo* for his great arrogancie, was ſecretly miſliked by moſt of theſe Gallants. And therefore *Don Alonſo* thought with himſelfe that he had now met with that he deſired. For *Iayme Viues* entring into the Tourney, he was wel aſſured, that he would eclypſe his honour, and beat downe his pride. *Ozmin* for his part likewiſe did deſire it as much. And before the houre of arming was come, that he might ſee *Daraxa* enter the place, he walked vp and downe there a while, wondring to ſee it ſo richly adorned: the Hangings of Cloth of Gold and of Silke, were ſuch and ſo many, as are vnable to be expreſſed; ſuch variety was there in the colours; ſuch curioſitie in the windowes; ſuch beauty in the Ladies; ſuch richneſſe in their dreſsings, and their cloathes; ſuch concourſe of all ſorts of Gallants, that all being put together, ſeemed to be one ineſtimable Iewell; and euery particular by it ſelfe, a precious Stone ſet therein. The Tilt-yard, which diuided the Place into two equall parts, ranne quite athwart the midſt of it; and in a conuenient place was a Scaffold ſet vp for the Iudges, right ouer againſt the which were the windowes appointed for *Daraxa* and *Donna Elvira*, vvho vpon two white Palfreys, their furniture being blacke Veluet ſet with ſiluer Oes, and ſutably frindged, entred well attended: Who after they had rounded the Place, tooke their Seates. Where *Ozmin* leauing her, haſted away, becauſe anon after, the Challengers were to enter; who within a little ſpace made their arriuall, wonderfull well ſet foorth, and in very good equipage. The Ho-boyes, the Trumpets, and other inſtruments of Muſicke ſounded without ceaſing, till they were ſeated in their places. Afterwards entred the Defendants, and *Don Alonſo* was one of the firſt; who hauing performed his three courſes, and thoſe ſingular well (that few did better) he preſently returned home.

Hauing

Hauing before obtained licence for a Caualeere, a friend of his, whom hee expected from *Xeres de la frontera*, *Ozmin* in the meane while attending his comming. They came in both together to the place; and *Alonso* being his *Padrino*, presented him vnto them. The Moores Armes were all blacke, his Horse sutable, without any plume in his Helmet; in stead whereof with great curiosity, he had made a Rose of *Daraxa's* Handkercher, which was an assured token, whereby she might know him. He put himselfe in his posture, and as good lucke would haue it, he was to runne his first Launce against one of the Challengers Abettors: The signall was giuen, they made their Carreere, *Ozmin* hits his Aduersary on the Beuer, where hee brake his Launce; and giuing him a counter-buffe with the Truncheon of his Staffe, he remoued him from his Saddle, and fell with that stroke to the ground ouer his horse crupper, but he had no other harme, saue what he suffered with the weight of his Armour. For the two last courses, *Don Rodrigo* put himselfe forth, who lighted with his first Launce on the left arme of the *Moore*, neere vnto the shoulder, remaining wounded by him in the pouldrons on the right side, where he brake his staffe in three pieces. With the last *Don Rodrigo* mist, and *Ozmin* brake his neere the sight of his Helmet, where hee left behinde him a great splinter of his Launce; so that it was generally thought, that he had shrewdly wounded him; but his Helmet defended him so well, that he had no great harme.

The *Moore* hauing broken his three Launces, went his way wonderfully ioyed with his Victory; but much more *Don Alonso* who had brought him as his Champion into the field, and could not finde any place large inough to intertaine his ioy. They quitted the *Place*, and went home to his house to disarme himselfe, suffering no man else to see his face. And putting on his ordinary apparell, he secretly went out at a posterne doore on the backside of the house, returning to behold his deare *Daraxa*, and to see that which passed in the Tilt-yard. Hee had gotten so neere vnto his Mistris, that they might in a manner haue shaken hands: they looked steadily each on other, but he euermore bare his eyes sadly, and with a heauy cheere; but she beyond all degrees of sadnesse, supposing that the cause of his sorrow might be, that she had not cheered him with some gracious cast of her eye. Nor could shee tell what to thinke, so much was she amazed, to see him Tilt in blacke both Horse and Armour, being it is a signe amongst them of euill lucke. All this put together, wrought in her a most deepe melancholly, and continued so extremely passionate therein, and was so surcharged with sorrow, that the sports being scarce ended, her heart trembling in her body, shee left her window, and hastned home. They which did accompany her, did much maruell that she went away no better pleased, seeming to take no contentment in what was done, and withall began to murmure and mutter amongst themselues, euery one suspecting that, which his owne malice did suggest vnto him.

Don Luys, like a wise Gentleman, as oft as he heard any reasoning thereof, spake still in her excuse; the like he did with his sonnes that Euening, when he found them grumbling at her carriage, telling them that an afflicted soule weepes in the midst of mirth, and that there is not any thing that can minister matter of ioy and gladnes to man or woman, that is absent from those, whom they best affect. Good things are so much the more esteemed, by how much the more we inioy them with knowne persons, and our particular acquaintance.

Towards strangers, there may (no doubt) be many intertainments giuen to moue pleasure and delight; but (alas) they haue no feeling of them; their thoughts are otherwise taken vp, and in them the increase of sorrow is so much the more, by how much in others they see the greater ioy. I blame her not

not for it, nor doe I thinke it a thing ſo ſtrange; but rather imagine it to haue proceeded from her great prudence, then any diſlike ſhe had of our ſports, and doe meerely attribute it to her graue and ſober behauiour; whereas the contrary vvould haue argued tóo much lightneſſe, and an vnſettled kind of carriage, which imputation, women that prize their vertue and goodneſſe, ſtudy to auoid. Beſides, ſhe is farre from father and mother, and from her beſt-beloued; and (though free in her vſage) yet a Captiue in her condition, and that in a ſtrange Country, not knowing how to remedy her ſelfe, nor when ſhe ſhall finde the meanes. Let euery man examine his owne boſome, let him but make her caſe his owne, and then hee will tell mee another tale, and ingenuouſly confeſſe, that he ſhould finde himſelfe affected, iuſt as ſhe is now. And in doing otherwiſe, is (as it is with him that is in health) to bid the ſicke to eate and be well.

This diſcourſe hauing paſt in ſecret amongſt them, they treated afterwards in publike of the *Zerezano*, how brauely hee had behau'd himſelfe that day; and how (albeit they deſired much to know who he was) they could neuer get any more out of *Don Alonſo*, then what he told them at firſt, and they beleeued it was true. *Daraxa's* melancholly increaſed dayly more & more, but the cauſe thereof none could gueſſe aright: they were all wide of the marke, none came neere the Butt: of all that ſhot their bolts; ſome fell too ſhort, and ſome flew ouer. All did iudge amiſſe, inuenting in the meane time all the entertainments their wits could deuiſe to giue her content: but ſhould they haue broken their braines in the ſtudy thereof, they had neuer been neerer their purpoſe: for ſhe was as farre from being capable of the delights they deuiſed for her, as they were from entring within the Circle of her deſires.

THE ARGVMENT.

Continuing the Story of the noble loues of theſe two diſconſolate Louers, it is now recounted how Don Luys, *for to cheere vp the gentle* Daraxa, *brought her to a pleaſant Village, whither* Ozmin *repairing, was ſet vpon by a company of Clownes. And in the defence of himſelfe he ſlewe foure of them outright, and wounded many others. For the which fact he was committed to priſon, and ſentenced to death; together with the diuers and ſundry accidents that inſued thereupon; and how in the end hee was ſet at liberty. And how himſelfe and* Daraxa *turning Chriſtians, their happy Nuptials were ſolemnly celebrated in the preſence of the King and Queene of* Spaine.

DON LVYS had a houſe in *Axarafe*, and other poſſeſsions belonging thereunto, by the vert ue of his *Mayorasgoſhip*, in a little Village appertaining to *Seuill*. The ſeaſon was temperate, beeing then about *February*, at which time the Fields ſeeme to put on their new apparell; thither they agreed to goe to make merry, and to recreate themſelues for ſome few dayes, that they might not leaue this path vntroden, to ſee if by this meanes they could diuert her ſorrowes. With this ſhee ſeemed ſomewhat pleaſed, and made ſhew of better cheereſulnes then before; ſuppoſing, if ſhe went forth of the Citie, ſhee ſhould finde ſome meanes or other, to ſee and ſpeake with *Ozmin*. They made ready their *Recamara*, and all fitting prouiſion for ſuch a buſineſſe: and it was good ſport to behold the hurly burly and confuſed noiſe amongſt them, as of him that had the charge of Gray-hounds, of that other, that was to goe along with the ſetting dogs, the Tumblers, and the Kennell of the hounds; of a third, that carried Hawkes a-field; of this man bearing the Owle, that his Peece on his ſhoulder; of ſome with Croſſe-bowes in their hands; otherſome with Mules laden with Bedding, Hangings,

and

and other houſhold-ſtuffe, and all of them trooping together, laughing and making themſelues merry with the conceiued ioy of this Feaſt.

Don Alonſo hauing notice hereof, comes me to *Ozmin*, and tels him that their Miſtreſſes were gone abroad into the Country to take the ayre, and diſport themſelues, and that they were to remaine there ſome time: but when they would returne againe, that he knew not. This newes was nothing diſpleaſing vnto them for two reſpects: the one, for that they might (happely) meet there with the fewer *Competitors* in the purſuit of their Loues; the other, that they might haue the better occaſion not to be knowne. The nights were neither cleere, nor darke, nor cold, nor hot; but with a pleaſant noiſe of ſtilneſſe, and delicate darke cleareneſſe, heau'n and earth were both ſo ouer-ſpred, that the heart of man could not imagine a fitter night for the purpoſe.

Theſe two louing friends, and friendly Louers, agreed to try their fortunes, and to ſee what prize they could make in the choiſe of two ſuch rich Bottomes as theſe were, laden with ſo much Honour, Beauty, and Wealth, the greateſt treaſure the world can afford. They diſguiſed themſelues, apparelling their bodies with good honeſt Country cloathes, like plaine Husbandmen, and ſet forth about Sun-ſet vpon two hackney Iades; and when they came neere vnto the Village, ſome quarter of a League, or there-abouts, they alighted at a certaine Farme-houſe; to the end, that by marching thus on foot, the leſſer notice might be taken of them. Which might then haue fell out very happily for them, if Fortune had not wheeled her ſelfe about, and turned her back towards them; for they arriued in very good time, euen then when their Ladies were in the *Balcon* intertaining diſcourſe, wholly fitting themſelues for conuerſation, and mirth, as the company, or occaſion ſhould giue cauſe.

Don Alonſo durſt not draw too neere, for feare of frighting the game; and therefore intreated his Companion to make the winde-laſe, and to negotiate alone for them both; becauſe he being beloued of *Donna Elvira*, and well knowne to *Daraxa*, he had no reaſon to hide himſelfe from them. *Ozmin* then by degrees, (with a carefull kinde of careleſneſſe) ſtole neerer and neerer, ſinging in a low Baſe as it were, humming betweene the teeth an Arabique ſong; which (to thoſe that vnderſtood the language) were cleere notes: But to thoſe that knew it not, and were negle&full thereof, it ſeemed no more then an ordinary *La, La, La*. *Donna Elvira* (hearkening vnto him) told *Daraxa*; Euen on theſe rude kinde of people God hath beſtow'd his gifts, if they knew vvell how to vſe them. Doe you not obſerue that ſauage fellow, what a ſweet and well-tuned voice he hath; and how he rellifheth and ayreth his notes, and how merrily he chants it, as if his mother had brought him into the world with a prick-ſong? But this is in him as water that raines it ſelfe into the Sea without any profit. By this you ſee (ſaid *Daraxa*) that all things are eſteemed according to the ſubie&t wherein they ſubſiſt. Theſe country Clownes, if in their tender age they be not tranſ-planted into a political & Ciuill life: and if they be not remoued and changed from their barren, to better grounds, and wholly ſtript of that rugged bark, wherin they are born, it is a thouſand to one if euer they come to be well behau'd. Whereas on the contrary, thoſe that are Citizens, and naturally of a good diſpoſition, are like the Vine, which if it continue a yeere vndreſt and vntrim'd, it yeeldeth fruit notwithſtanding, though it be but a little: but if you returne to prune and husband it aright, it acknowledgeth the good it hath receiued, and renders a very large and thankefull recompence. But this fellow that ſings heere now, is ſuch a knotty piece of Timber, ſuch an arrant Clowne, that the beſt Carpenter in the world cannot with his Axe nor his Plainer, hewe him into faſhion, or ſhaue him to any ſmoothneſſe of ciuill carriage, but for euer remaine an vn-

profitable

profitable blocke. It is a torment to me to heare this Turtle ſing; if it pleaſe you, let vs go hence, for it is time to with-draw our ſelues, that we may take our reſt.

The Louers well vnderſtood one another; ſhe the Song, and he her words; and to what end ſhe ſpake them. The reſt of the Ladies went their way, only *Daraxa* remained a little behind after the reſt, and ſpeaking to him in the *Arabicke* tongue, will'd him to ſtay there: where he ſtood waiting for her, and in the meane while, walked careleſly vp and downe, but ſtill with an eye towards the Window, to ſee vvhen ſhe ſhould make her returne.

The baſer ſort of people, (by a ſecret kind of inſtinct) do euermore beare a naturall hatred to thoſe that are Noble; as the Lyzard to the Snake, the Swan to the Eagle, the Cocke to the [a] Pheſant, the Crab to the Cuttle-fiſh, the Dolphin to the Whale, Oyle to Pitch, the Vine to the Cole-wort, and the like. And if you aske, (as deſirous to know, vvhat is the naturall cauſe thereof,) I can ſhew you no other reaſon for it, more then that the Adamant drawes vnto it the Yron, that the Marygold followes the Sunne, the Baſiliske kills by Looking, and Swallow-wort helpes the Sight. For as ſome things naturally loue one another, ſo otherſome hate and abhorre by a celeſtiall influence; the reaſon whereof mortall men haue not to this day beene able to reach vnto. And that things of diuers kinds haue this property, it is no vvonder, becauſe they conſiſt of differing compoſitions, diſpoſitions, and inclinations in nature: but that reaſonable men, both t'one and t'other, molded of one and the ſame earth, of one fleſh, of one blood, of one beginning, created-forme, and the ſelfe-ſame end, liuing vnder one ſelfe-ſame Law, beeing of one and the ſame Religion, and all of them in all and euery part, (as farre-foorth as they are men) ſo one ſelfe-ſame ſubſtance; that out of that Similiancy, man naturally loues man: that yet (I ſay) there ſhould be that contrariety and vnſauorie taſte; that this Raskallity, and baſe off-ſcumme of the earth, more hard then Flint, or the *Gallician* Nut, ſhould perſecute the Nobility with that vehemencie as they do, is a matter to me of great admiration.

[a] Francolino.

That night certaine young Lads of the Pariſh likewiſe walked abroad, and lighted by chance vpon theſe two Strangers: and at the very firſt incounter, without any cauſe or reaſon in the world; no occaſion being giuen them, began to flocke together; and gathering themſelues into a ring, beganne to cry amaine; A Woolfe, a Woolfe, the Woolfe is come: and throwing therewithall little ſtones by hand-fuls on their heads, (as they had ſhowred down from heauen) they ſhrewdly be-pelted their Pates: ſo that they were forced to flie, vnable to make any longer ſtay, their intertainment was ſo bad. And ſo they returned without any more ado, *Ozmin* being diſ-appointed (which did much grieue him) of taking his leaue of his Miſtreſſe. They went thither where their horſes ſtood; and on them to the City, vvith purpoſe to returne late againe in the night, that they might not bee diſcouered. But this forecaſt ſtood them in little ſtead: for if Lightning and Thunder ſhould haue fallen from heauen, and though they knew it ſhould either burne or daſh them in pieces, there was one Rogue amongſt the reſt, that would rather loſe his life, then carry himſelfe ciuilly towards them; and onely out of no other end but to do mischiefe and villany. Scarce had they the next night following ſet foot in the Village, but that a knot of theſe mad-caps being met together, and knowing them to be the very ſame whom they abuſed the night before, one with a Sling, another with a Yard, this man with a Bore-ſpeare, that with a Batt, ſome with Staues, ſome with Spits, not ſparing ſo much as the Peele and Maulkin of their Ouens, (as if they were to go out againſt a mad Dog) they ioyntly ſet vpon them: but they found them better prouided then they were the night before; for they had brought with them good Iackes of Male, and ſteele Murrians, and ſtrong Bucklers. On the one ſide you might ſee ſtones,

Cudgels,

Cudgels, and lowd ſhowtes; and on the other, many ſtrong blowes, and cutting ſlaſhes with the ſword; and on both ſuch a tumult, and ſuch a ſtirre, that with the noyſe thereof, the vvhole Village ſeemed to be vp in armes; ſo like a little warre did this fierce fight appeare. *Don Alonſo*, in croſſing the ſtreet, was vn-awares with an vnluckie ſtone ſtrooke on the breſt, and fell to the ground, wanting ſtrength to recouer himſelfe to returne afreſh to the fight. Wherefore as well as he could, he crawled vp, and with-drew himſelfe aſide, while *Ozmin* in the meane time draue them vp before him in the ſtreet, working them much harme: for ſome of them (and thoſe not a few) were ſore hurt, and three left dead in the place. The tumult increaſing, all the whole Village came out at once, and ſtopt the paſſage, that he could not, though he would neuer ſo faine, haue fled from them. There was got now on the one ſide of him a Turfe-breaker, a ſturdy ſtout Rogue, who vvith the Barre of a doore ſtrooke him ſuch a cruell blow on the ſhoulder, that he forc't him vpon his knees: but it did nothing benefit him, that he was the *Alcalde's* ſonne; for before that he could come to double his blow vpon him, (which he was about to do) he gaue him ſuch a ſlaſh, that he claue his head in twaine, as it had bin of a Kid or a Calfe, leauing him lying like a *Tunny* on the ſhore, hauing rendred vp his life in ſatisfaction of his Roguery. So many charged him on euery ſide, and laid ſuch load vpon him, that being vnable any longer to defend himſelfe, he was taken by them.

Daraxa and *Donna Elvira*, ſaw & heard all that had paſt between them, (but with much ſorrow to ſee ſuch vnciuil out-rage) euen from the very firſt beginning of the Fray, as alſo what a coyle they kept, when they had caught him thus aliue, and had him in their hold, and how they bound his hands behind him with a Cord, as if he had beene one of their fellow-rogues. All of them on all ſides intreated him ill; one buffetted him, another puncht him, a third kickt him, throwing on him a thouſand diſgracefull affronts, vvherewith they ſought to be reuenged on him for all the wrongs he did them, who (before he was their priſoner) durſt not looke him in the face.

What a beaſtly and a ſhamefull thing was this, to vſe a man thus, when he was not able to make reſiſtance, his hands being bound to the peace? A thing neuer to be done by any, but ſuch baſe Villaines, and dogged Clownes, which kind of coorſe vſage is naturall and proper vnto them. But what becomes now of *Daraxa*? how does ſhe brooke this misfortune? how is ſhe able without ſwouning, to ſee his perſon thus baſely abuſed, who did ſo much loue and adore his ſhadow? on the one ſide to ſee him priſoner, on the other, to ſee ſome wounded, and ſome ſlaine, and her honour lying in the midſt betweene them both? for ſhe knew well enough, when the caſe ſhould bee layd open, *Don Luys* of force could not but aske, what *Ambroſio* made there, and what occaſion drew him thither.

In this confuſion, neceſſity draue her to ſit in councell with her ſelfe what courſe were beſt to be taken. To preuent therefore farther miſchiefe, ſhe deuiſed a Letter, which when ſhe had ſealed, ſhe lockt it vp in a little Cabinet that ſhe had, to the intent that when *Don Luys* ſhould come vnto her, ſhee might make ſhew thereof for her owne diſcharge.

Now by this time the day began to appeare, and yet the people were not quieted. They had ſent vnto the City to giue notice of what had happened, to the end that information might be taken how things had paſt, and to open the buſineſſe. And when the Notary was come, they began to examine Witneſſes; whereof many (without being called) made their voluntary appearance. For ill men, of themſelues inuite themſelues vnbidden, onely out of a deſire to do that is ill: and of enemies, become friends, to condemne the innocent. Some ſware that *Ozmin* had ſixe or ſeuen, beſides himſelfe in his company; others, that he was ſeene to come out of *Don Luys* his houſe, and that

ſome

ſome cryde out of the window, Kill them, kill them. Others, that the people of the Towne reſting ſecure and quiet, they wilfully ſet vpon them; others, that they came and challenged them out of their houſes; there not being one man amongſt them all that ſware a truth. God deliuer vs from ſuch Clownes, for they are as ſtiffe as Oakes, and of the ſame toughneſſe of nature, cruell, and hard-hearted: if you will haue any fruit from them, they muſt bee vſed like Akornes, beaten downe with Cudgels and dry blowes; for they will ſooner ſuffer themſelues to be pluckt vp by the rootes, though it be to the vtter ruine of themſelues, and their eſtates, then to bow or ſtoope, bee it neuer ſo little. And if they be once minded to perſecute a man, they will periure themſelues a thouſand times, though the matter in queſtion be not worth a ſtraw, onely out of an inclination to doe that which is euill. And the ill is ſo much the worſe, that theſe wretches thinke, that they do God good ſeruice therein, and that their ſoules are ſaued by it: and it is a wonder, if they confeſſe their fault, and repent themſelues of this their rancour and malicious poyſon. The deaths and wounds receiued, were prou'd vpon him, and the poore Gentleman laden with yrons, and put in ſafe cuſtody. *Don Luys*, as ſoone as he had notice hereof, haſtened to the Village, his daughter informed him of the buſineſſe, acquainting him truly with all that had paſt: he inquired likewiſe of *Daraxa*, who told him the ſame tale, and that ſhe had ſent for *Ambroſio* to come thither, for to diſpatch him thence with Letters for *Granada*, and before that he could get to ſpeake with her, they had theſe two nights together beaten him with Cudgels, and pelted him with ſtones; ſo that, though her Letters were written, and lay ready for him, ſhee could not come to deliuer them into his hands. *Don Luys* deſired her, that ſhe would ſhew him the Letter, as well to ſee the contents thereof, as alſo for his owne diſcharge, ſhe being by their Maieſties committed to his cuſtody. Shee (though ſhe ſeemed loth ſo to do) condeſcended at laſt to his requeſt, and gaue him the Letter, howbeit little intreaty would haue ſerued the turne; for ſhe deſired nothing more, then to haue him ſee what ſhe had writt. And taking it from foorth her Cabinet, ſhe ſayd vnto him; I giue it vnto you, that you may perceiue my truth, and conceiue no ielouſie, that I vvrite any thing vvorthy the hiding from you. *Don Luys* tooke the Letter, and going to reade it, found that it was vvritten in the *Arabicke* tongue, wherein he had no knowledge. Hee then made inquirie for one that could reade and interpret that Language; the Contents whereof were, that ſhe ſignified vnto her father, vvhat a griefe it vvas vnto her, to line thus diuided from him; and that ſhe deſired to be certified of his welfare; and if the deſire ſhe had to ſee him did not ouer-ſway all other reſpects, ſhe liu'd otherwiſe in as full content as any woman in the world, being more made of by *Don Luys*, then any of his owne children: And therefore beſought him, that in acknowledgement of this his kindneſſe, and courteous intertainment, he vvould be pleaſed to remember him with ſome Preſent worthy his deſert.

And becauſe in ſuch like hurly-burlies as theſe, vvords multiply more and more, and together with the ſtirre, reports, gather-ſtrength, and increaſe; and for that euery one canonizeth his owne preſumption, according as hee is in loue vvith it, they began to murmure againſt *Don Luys*, and the people of his houſe. The Muſtard was got vp already into their Noſes, and their fingers began to itch; but he, like a vviſe and diſcreet Gentleman, (as he was) thought fit for the preſent to diſſemble the matter; and ſeeming to take little notice of their malicious proceeding, he remoued his vvhole houſhold, and returned backe to the City.

Now, vvhileſt theſe things thus ſucceeded, *Granada* had yeelded her ſelfe to the Conquerours, vpon ſuch conditions as the Chronicles mention, and as by our fore-fathers hath beene reported vnto vs. Amongſt thoſe other Nobles

bles that vvere found there at that time, were the two fellow-father-in-lawes, *Alboaçen* father to *Ozmin*, and the *Alcayde de Baça*: both which beſought to be baptized, deſirous to become Chriſtians: vvhich Ceremonie being performed, the *Alcayde* intreated their Maieſties hee might haue licence to goe ſee his daughter *Daraxa*: vvhich being granted, they tolde him he ſhould be aduiſed from them ere long, how and when it ſhould be. *Alboaçen* thinking that his ſonne was dead, or taken Captiue, vſed all diligence to know what was become of him, but he could neuer get any inkling thereof. For the vvhich (as he had good reaſon ſo to be) he vvas wondrous ſad, not onely as he was his onely child, but being alſo ſuch a ſonne, ſo well qualified as he was, and deſcended of ſuch rich and noble Parents, the onely hope of their Houſe. The *Alcayde* had no leſſe feeling of it then he, as vvell for that he loued him as dearely, as if he had beene his owne; as alſo for the griefe *Daraxa* would conceiue, vvhen ſhe ſhould come to heare the tidings of this heauy newes. Their Maieſties on their part had diſpatcht a meſſenger vnto *Seuill* with expreſſe command, that *Don Luys* ſhould preſently without delay repaire vnto them, and bring *Daraxa* along vvith him; vvith that reſpect and good vſage, wher-withall they had put him in truſt.

Vpon the receipt of theſe Letters, ſhe (being acquainted what order was giuen) vvas at her vvits end, and ready to runne mad, becauſe of force, vpon this occaſion, ſhe was to depart, grieuing thus to go away, before ſhe ſhould ſee an end of this buſineſſe, not knowing what would become of it; and ſorrowing beyond meaſure that her deareſt Loue ſhould be left behind her in priſon; and that now when he had moſt need of her helpe, ſhe muſt in this his greateſt extremity, be driuen to leaue him to ſhift for himſelfe. Her thoughts were all in a confuſion, her imagination vvas troubled and her heart (through the vveight of her griefes) as heauy as Lead, calling her ſelfe a thouſand times more vnfortunate, then Misfortune it ſelfe, and of all other the moſt wretched woman.

She was reſoluing to finiſh all at once, and together with her Loue, to loſe her life, vvith a perplexed, but almoſt-ſettled mind, it was in her deliberation to haue acted a moſt cruell errour vpon her ſelfe, in token of that chaſte and true loue vvhich ſhe bare to *Ozmin*. But *Daraxa*, vvhoſe paſſion had not quite out-gone her iudgement, like a diſcreet Lady, (as ſhe was) correcting her cruell determinations, taking vp her ſelfe when ſhe was in the height of her ſpeed, ſhe reſolued to truſt her misfortunes in the hands of Fortune her enemy, expecting what-euer ſhe vvould giue them; and being that the vtmoſt euill, was death, ſhe vvould not deſpaire of the game till ſhe ſaw the laſt man borne. But this reſolution of ſufferance could not ſtop a ſea of teares, which burſt with a ſwelling Tide from foorth her eyes. The ſtanders by, ſuppoſed this to proceed out of her ouer-ioy, that ſhe was to returne to her owne Country, but they were all deceiued, ſo that euery one ſpake to her, but none did comfort her. *Don Rodrigo* came to take his leaue of her, who with a countenance bathed with thoſe criſtalline teares, vvhich dropped from her heauenly eyes, ſpake vnto him in this manner following:

Noble *Don Rodrigo*, I might very well ſeeke to perſwade you with abundance of reaſons to that good worke, vvhich vpon this preſent occaſion I pretend to preſent vnto you, and to craue your furtherance therein. Which in its owne nature is ſo iuſt, that I cannot forbeare to aske it, nor you to grant it, being that your ſelfe is ſo much intereſſed therein: you know (though I ſhould not tell you) the obligation we haue to do good; which as a naturall and diuine Law ſpeaketh particularly to euery mans ſoule and conſcience. Nor is there any man ſo barbarous, that is ignorant thereof: and this carries ſomuch the more force with it, by how much the ſtronger the reaſons are that are alledged; amongſt the which, a principal one, and not the leaſt, is, that we

apply this good vnto thoſe, that haue eaten of our bread, and been intertained in our ſeruice. And becauſe I know you can not be vnlike your ſelfe, my interceſsion may ſeeme the leſſe needfull. But that which I ſhall intreat at your hands, is this: You know, that *Ambroſio* was ſeruant to both our fathers: firſt to mine, then to yours: And therefore we are both bound (but I the more) to doe for him; hauing put himſelfe through my default in that neceſsity, wherin now he is, the cauſe in hand no otherwiſe concerning him, but as I was intereſſed in the buſines. By my hand he was thruſt into this danger, I was the ſole cauſer of it; and therefore I ſtand charged with it, and muſt put it to my account. If you will therefore free me from this debt; if you deſire to giue me content; if you purpoſe to binde me vnto you, that I may for euer remaine the thankefull acknowledger of your loue and kindneſſe, it muſt be, that by laying vpon your ſhoulders this weighty care of mine owne deſire, that you ſeeke by all meanes to procure his liberty, which in the reckoning is mine; and my requeſt vnto you is, that you indeuour it with that earneſtneſſe, as I doe deſire it. *Don Luys*, (whom I haue euer found my ſingular good Lord) will, before I goe hence, vſe all poſsible diligence in his owne perſon, with his friends and kinsfolke; that the one ayding the other in his abſence, may free mee of this debt, for the which I ſtand ingaged. *Don Rodrigo* promiſed to do his beſt, and ſo they parted.

Now, for that this poore Lady had left her beſt beloued in this great perill of his life, ſhe was much grieued; and by ſo much the more, by how much the farther ſhe was from him; ſo that when ſhee came to *Granada*, ſhee did not ſeeme to be the ſame ſhe was.

Don Alonſo, though he had eſcaped their hands, yet being ſorely bruiſed in his breſt, he was forced to keepe his bed, ſo ſoundly had the Clownes bang'd him. But when he afterwards heard, that his Companion was carried priſoner to *Seuill*, he got him out of his bed, poſted thither, tooke infinit paines, trotting vp and downe, and neuer ceaſing to ſollicit his friends cauſe, as if the caſe had been his owne. Notwithſtanding, what with the complaint of the Plaintifes; the accuſation of Witneſſes; the euill inclination of the Iudges, (either vpon information, or corruption; not fauouring the Defendant,) beſides the ſlaine and wounded (which were many) he could not ſaue him, together with diuers other his good friends, from being condemned to be hanged at the common Gallowes.

Don Rodrigo was in a great rage, that his father and himſelfe ſhould find ſo little reſpect, as to hang vp a ſeruant of theirs, that had not offended the Law, had he had equall hearing, and a faire tryall. On the other ſide, *Don Alonſo* ſtood much in maintenance of the Defendant, ſaying, that it was not to bee permitted; nor could the Law condemne a Gentleman, ſo nobly deſcended as his friend *Iayme Viues* was, to be hanged: And that in caſe the fault were farre greater, yet the difference of quality ought to ſaue his life: At leaſt it ought to priuiledge him from hanging, it being the Law, that, in matters deſeruing death, Gentlemen ſhould not be hanged, but be-headed. The Iudges and the reſt of the Bench were diſtracted in this Caſe, and knew not what they were beſt to doe. *Don Rodrigo*, he ſtiles him his ſeruant; *Don Alonço*, his friend; *Don Rodrigo* pleades for him by the name of *Ambroſio*, and *Don Alonço*, by that of *Iayme Viues*, a Gentleman of *Zaragoſa*; who, at the feaſt of their Buls, had made ſuch noble proofe of his Valour, as the whole Citie could well witneſſe: And that in the Turnament (he being his *Padrino*, or Champion that brought him in) vn-horſt one of the Challengers, ſhewing that day great tokens of his worth and Valour. The difference was ſo great, the names ſo contrary; the qualities alledged ſo diſcrepant; that the Iudges, to cleere this doubt, reſolued with themſelues to take declaration thereof from himſelfe. They demanded then of him, whether he were a Gentleman or no? Hee

anſwered

anſwered that he was nobly deſcended,& of Royall Bloud, but that his name was neither *Ambroſio*,nor *Iayme Viues*. Then they willed him,that hee ſhould manifeſt his name,and the quality of his perſon. Whereunto he made anſwer, that his puniſhment might excuſe him for not diſcouering himſelfe;and being that he was vndoubtedly to dye,it was no more neceſſary to tell it them, then it was materiall,to ſuffer either the one,or the other death. Then they deſired him to deliuer, whether hee were the ſame man *Don Alonço* had reported, which had ſo brauely kill'd the two Buls,and gotten ſuch honour in the Tourneyment.

He replide he was; but that he had neither of thoſe names, whereby they called him. And becauſe he was ſo loth to declare his Linage (conceiuing him thereby to be a man of quality,) they demurred vpon the buſines, to ſee if they could worke the truth out of him,to know who he was; as alſo to winde out the reaſons,why theſe two noble Gentlemen ſhould ſo earneſtly vndertake his defence. And which did not a little ſtartle them; they ſaw the whole City did generally deſire his liberty, & ſtood ſtrongly affected towards him. Hereupon they diſpatched ſome preſently away for *Zaragoſa*,that they might learne out the truth,& giue knowledge of his Birth. But hauing ſpent ſome dayes therein,and vſed many diligencies,they could not meet with any(for all their ſtrict inquiry,)that could giue them notice who he might be,nor could deuiſe what manner of Gentleman he might be,either by his name,or any ſignes or tokens by them giuen,who failed not to deſcribe him at full vnto them. Being returned with this ill Diſpatch,albeit his friends did much importune for him,and the Magiſtrates of Iuſtice did often require him, that he would lay open his quality and condition,yet he would not do it,nor was it poſsible to perſwade him thereunto. So the Iudges (the time limited being fully expired for farther reſpite)ſore againſt their will, much pittying both his Youth and Valour, not being able to croſſe the courſe of Iuſtice,being preſt ſo earneſtly by the importunity of the aduerſe party,they confirmed their former ſentence.

Daraxa,nor the two fathers were aſleepe,whileſt theſe things were in doing; for they had made their Maieſties acquainted with the whole carriage of the buſineſſe,& were by them informed of the truth thereof. Many petitions they put vp,and no ſooner one Memoriall giuen, but another was a drawing to ſecond their ſuit. *Daraxa*,ſhe in her owne perſon did ſollicit the life of her eſpouſed husband, begging it by the way of *merced* and grace: But their Maieſties anſwered nothing thereunto. Yet ſecretly they diſpatched *Don Luys* preſently away, with their kingly prouiſion to the Iudges, that they ſhould deliuer vnto him the Bill of the whole inditement,in euery point as it was taken from the beginning to the end,together with the priſoner, for that it did much concerne their Highnes ſeruice. *Don Luys* poſted away(as he was commanded) with all the ſpeed he could; whileſt poore *Daraxa*, her own father, and father-in-law melted into teares, conſidering the haſte which the Iudges would make in diſpatching this poore innocent Gentleman. Which they ſo much the more feared, for that their Petitions receiued ſo ſlowe an anſwere. They knew not what to ſay,or think of this ſo long a delaying of them,without giuing them any anſwer off or on, either good or bad,or any the leaſt hope of life. This did exceedingly grieue them, but they knew not how to helpe themſelues, nor had they left any one ſtone vn-remoued, but made all the meanes and friends they could. But that which did moſt daunt them, was, that the maine danger did conſiſt in the delay.

Whileſt they were thus ſtricken into their dumps, and doubts (for vvhat comfort can there be in ſo dangerous a ſuſpenſion?) *Don Luys* (as you heard before,)ſpurred on a mayne,with much both ſpeed and ſecreſie. And as he entred the gates of *Seuill*,*Ozmin* was led forth of the priſon, to be carried to his execution. The ſtreets, and euery place through which they paſt, were full of

people; all was tumult & noiſe, and not a perſon, but wept and ſhed teares, to ſee ſo handſome a yong man, ſo well fauour'd, ſo valiant, and well-belou'd for thoſe famous deeds which he had publikely done, to bee ſo vntimely cut off: And the more was their ſorrow, to ſee him dye without confeſsion. Which made them all to thinke, that he did it to eſcape death, or to prolong his life: but he was ſilent, and ſpake not a word, nor ſhew'd any ſigne of ſadneſſe in his lookes, but with a ſmiling kinde of countenance beheld them all as he paſſed along. They made now and then certaine ſtops, to ſee if they could exhort him to confeſſe himſelfe, labouring all they could to perſwade him, that hee would not loſe body and Soule both at once. But hee anſwered them not a word, but held his peace all the while. The people continuing thus in this confuſion, and the Citie wayting on this ſad ſpectacle, *Don Luys* came, making the people giue way, preſsing through the throng, to hinder the Execution. The (a) *Alguazils* thought it was a reſiſtance of Iuſtice, and out of very feare which they had of *Don Luys*, for that he was a ſtout and valiant Gentleman, and dared to oppoſe himſelfe to any danger, they forſooke *Ozmin* who was vnder their guard, and with a great hurry and clamour, they ranne to giue account of what had paſt, to the Magiſtrates, whoſe authority (they thought) it more neerly touched. Whereupon they came to know, what might be the cauſe of ſo great diſreſpect done vnto them. He put his hand in his pocket, and taking out the Kings Order, he deliuered it vnto them, which was by them, to their great contentments, moſt willingly obeyed. And ſo they brought *Ozmin* (being accompanied with all the Gentlemen of that Citie, and the common ioy of the people) to *Don Luys* his houſe; Where that night hee was intertained with a gallant Maske, ſetting vp many Torches and Creſſets in the ſtreetes and windowes, for to giue the more generall content: And in token of their great ioy, they would haue celebrated thoſe dayes hee ſtayed there with publike feaſts; for now they knew who he was. But *Don Luys* would not giue vvay thereunto; but tying himſelfe to his Inſtructions, carried him as his priſoner, along with him the next morning, being kindely vſed, and well intertained vpon the way, according to the greatneſſe of his ranke and quality.

Being now arriued at *Granada*, hee kept him ſecretly with him ſome few dayes, vntill ſuch time as he had order from their Maieſties to bring him to Court. Who when he was come before them, they ioyed much in the ſight of him; and whileſt he was ſtanding thus in their preſence, they commanded *Daraxa* to be called forth. Now when theſe two Louers thus ſuddenly met in ſuch a place as that was, ſo vnexpectedly, and ſo farre beyond their hopes, euery man may make his owne heart iudge of the wonderfull ioy which they receiued in this happy (but vnlooked for) incounter, and imagine with himſelfe what each of them did thinke and conceiue thereof. When each others eyes had fed their fill, the Queene made towards them, and told them that both their fathers were become Chriſtians: howbeit, *Daraxa* knew ſo much before. She deſired them to doe the like, which ſhee ſhould receiue as a ſingular fauour from them; but that no other loue, nor feare ſhould inforce them thereunto, ſaue onely that of God, and their owne ſaluation. But howſoeuer, whether they did ſo or no, (for ſhe would not compell the conſcience) her pleaſure was that they ſhould now inſtantly inioy their liberty, and diſpoſe of their Eſtates and Perſons, according to their owne will and pleaſure.

Ozmin would faine haue anſwered the Queene with all the ioynts and ſinnewes of his body, making them ſo many tongues, to render thankes to her Maieſty, for this ſo great a benefit; ſignifying that he was very willing to be baptized; and them addreſsing himſelfe to *Daraxa*, in the preſence of their Maieſties, he intreated her to doe the like. *Daraxa*, whoſe eye was neuer off from her deareſt *Ozmin* (ſo hungry was ſhe in beholding him) ſhedding a few ſweet teares from her Roſie cheekes, directing her lookes & ſpeech vnto their Maieſties,

Maieſties, ſhe told them, That ſince it was Gods will to inlighten their vnderſtanding, and by many tribulations, to bring them to the knowledge of his truth, ſhe was diſpoſed, and that vnfeignedly, and with a true heart, humbly to ſubmit her ſelfe thereunto, and to the obedience of their Maieſties, vnder whoſe protection and princely hands, ſhe repoſed both her ſelfe, and all that ſhe had. So anon after, they were chriſtened with a great deale of Ceremonie, naming the one *Ferdinand*, and the other *Iſabell*; according to that of their Maieſties, who as God-father, and God-mother gaue them their names at the Font. Within ſome few dayes after, their Nuptials were celebrated with a great deale of glory and oſtentation; many Preſents and other courteſies being conferred vpon them in that City, where they liued all their life-time, and left behinde them an illuſtrious and noble off-ſpring, which continueth yet to this day in much honour and reputation in their Country.

We went hearkening to this Story, with a great deale of Silence, being led on attentiuely with it, till we came within ſight of *Caçalla*: ſo that it ſeemed to haue been meaſured iuſt out for that iourney, ſo truely did the one iumpe with the other. Howbeit, it was ſomewhat more inlarged by the Author, flouriſhed ouer with finer phraſes, and a different Soule, to that which I haue deliuered vnto you.

Our honeſt Carrier, who remained mute from the beginning to the ending (which was no more then all of vs did) began now to finde a tongue, and was the firſt that opened his mouth. Alight (my maſters) quoth hee: For heere I muſt leaue you: my way lyes along by this path. And with that hee cals vnto me, Come hither, (my yong Gallant) let vs make vp our reckoning before we part.

When I heard this, I was almoſt ready to hang my ſelfe, it was the bittereſt draught, that ere went downe my throat. Is it e'ne ſo, (ſaid I to my ſelfe?) Well, let it goe: for I did verily beleeue, that all that paſt betweene vs, had been in the way of friendſhip. Well, I diſ-mounted, and got not vp ſo lightly before, as I now came downe heauily: for I knew not in the world what anſwer to make him, ſaue onely to aske him, how much I was to pay him for the riding of nine Leagues? See what theſe Gentlemen giue, ſo muſt you. For your lodging and your dyet, you are to pay me three Royals more. The Vmbles of the Mule I now found to be deare meat vnto me (and that they ſtucke a little alſo in his ſtomake:) but that which grieu'd me moſt, was; That I had not money to pay for it. And therefore I came vnto him, and told him; My friend, Lo, heere is your money for the reckning, ſo much you ſay is my part of the ſhot; but for my horſe-hyre I owe you nothing; for you your ſelfe, without any intreatie of mine, deſired me to get vp, inuiting me thereunto of your owne accord.

What a Diuell (quoth he) meane you by this? Marry gupp with a murraine, you are a fine Gentleman indeed; doe you thinke to ride a cock-horſe on free coſt? you are a pretty Youth indeed. I replyde vpon him; we fall to ſcuffling; the Clergy-men inter-poſed them-ſelues; they were to vmpire the buſineſſe betweene vs: They condemned me to pay for the meat of my Beaſt for that night. I did ſo; making an euen reckoning with my purſe, hauing no more left me in all the world, but twenty *Marauedis*, to beare my charges that night.

The Muletier went about his buſineſſe; The Clergy-men, and my ſelfe, entred into *Caçalla*, where we take our leaue, euery man betaking himſelfe to his owne way.

THE ROGVE:
OR;
THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The ſecond Booke.

Wherein is treated, how he came to be a Rogue; and by beeing ſo, what happened vnto him.

CHAPTER I.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *going out of* Caçalla *towards* Madrid, *proues the quality and condition of a miſerable man; and vpon this occaſion, grauely diſcourſeth of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Caſtles in the ayre: And how he came to ſerue an Hoſt; and of the wicked diſpoſition of ſuch kind of men.*

THOV ſeeſt mee here in *Caçalla*, twelue Leagues from *Seuill*, vpon Munday in the morning, with my purſe pennileſſe, and my patience remedileſſe: and accuſed (as you haue heard) for a Thiefe, by way as it were of Prophecie, preſaging what I ſhould bee hereafter. I ſuffered inough the firſt day I ſet forth; the ſecond, more. For my care increaſed, and it rained downe hard vpon him, who was too wet already; one miſchiefe ouer-taking another. I had lately money in my purſe, and meate to put in my belly: and *griefes* (as the Prouerbe is) *are the better ouer-paſt with bread.* It is good to haue a father, it is good to haue a mother; but to haue meat to put in a mans mouth, is better then them both. The third day was to me, as it were, a day of death: for then I had my full load of miſeries. I found my ſelfe then like a leane Dogge, barked at by others; grinning with my teeth vpon all thoſe that came round about me; turning head againſt all, but not daring to bite any: my cares continued with me; with them, their barking: and hauing hedg'd me in, ſet all vpon me at once: but that which moſt troubled mee, was; That I had not where-

Los duelos con pein, ſon menos.

where-withall to ſpend, nor any meanes to defray my neceſſary expences. I knew then, what a [a] *Blanke* meant; and that he that doth not ſeeke to gather, doth not make any reckoning of it, nor know the woorth thereof, till he feeles the want of it. This was the firſt time, that I look't that Hereticke *Neceſsity* in the face: I knew him then by his Character, but afterwards I did better conſider him by his effects. How many diſhoneſt actions doth it venture on? what cruell imaginations doth it repreſent vnto thee? what infamous things doth it ſollicite? what diſorders doth it driue thee into? and what impoſsibilities doth it not attempt? I weighed alſo with my ſelfe, with how little our mother Nature is contented; and hauing giuen much to many, yet none of them reſt contented: all cry out, They are poore, publiſhing their wants to the world. O thou Epicure! O thou ryotous Glutton! thou lauiſh Prodigall! why doſt thou talk thus fooliſhly, that thou eateſt and ſwalloweſt downe ſo many thouſand Ducats yeerely? Say rather, that thou haſt ſo much Rent comming in; and that thou keep'ſt it in thy hands, but not that thou eat'ſt it out: and if thou doeſt eate it out, why doeſt thou keepe ſuch a complaining? ſeeing thou art no more man, then my ſelfe, whom poore Lentils, dry Fitches, old Beanes, hard Peaſe, and Biſket that is ſenowed and moth-eaten, keepes as fat and faire, as thoſe that haue daintier feeding. Thou wilt not tell me, nor canſt thou (I thinke) giue me a reaſon, what ſhould bee the cauſe of it. For my part I know not: but if euer thou haſt beene in want, or ſhouldſt (which is poſsible) be put to ſhift for thy ſelfe, and be driuen to need and to lacke, thou wouldſt then be able to tell mee another tale. I vviſh no man that ill lucke, but onely lament mine owne misfortunes. She is the Miſtreſſe to all things, a ſubtill Inuentreſſe, by whom your Thruſhes, your Pyes, your Iack-dawes, and your Parrats are taught to ſpeake. I plainely began to perceiue, how Aduerſitie makes men vviſe: in that very inſtant, me thought, I diſcouered a new light; which as in a cleare Glaſſe, did repreſent vnto mee things paſt, things preſent, and things to come.

Till this preſent I was a meere Cockney, and well might that name ſute with my breeding. For (as it is in the Prouerbe) *Hijo de la viuda, bien conſentido, y mal dotrinado*: the ſonne of a Widow is well fed, and ill taught. I had many chips to be hewne out of me, and the firſt ſtroke of the Axe, vvas this trouble that did light vpon me; which did ſo wound the maine timber, and ſo touch me to the quicke, that I know not how to indeere it vnto thee. I ſaw my ſelfe abandoned, and ſo dangerouſly ingulphed, that I knew not where to find harbour, or to put into any port for to ſaue my ſelfe. My yeeres were few, my experience leſſe, it being fitting, that they ſhould both haue beene greater then they were. And which was worſt of all, (knowing by manifeſt ſignes, that my ruine was neere at hand) being willing to aske counſell, I did not know from whom I might receiue it.

I entred into a reckoning with my ſelfe, and was making my Account; which I found to be very bad; my charge was great, and my caſh ſmall: I was about not to haue gone any farther; for to go on I wanted meanes, as I likewiſe did for to carry me home. I was aſhamed, being I was come away from thence, to become againe (as it is in the Prouerbe) an Hindge to the doore; (which, how ſoeuer that open or ſhut, it remaines ſtill in the ſelfe ſame place) or to put my foot vpon our owne Threſhold, in the open ſight of my Mother, my friends, and my kinsfolke. God helpe me, how many, from that day to this, haue I ſeene to be vtterly vndone, and meerely out of this reſpect! I was (I ſay) aſhamed: how many Virgins haue left off to be ſo, and haue loſt their Maiden-heads, by thinking themſelues to be tyde in thankfulneſſe for a paper of Sugar-Comfits, and ſome Loue-verſes; or becauſe ſome vaine fellow hath giuen her muſicke at her Window, and made her fall in loue with him, by the helpe of another mans quality; with that very Song, which with a ſweet

[a] Blanca, *is a ſmall piece of money, Lat.* As, aſſis.

The effects of Want.

Neceſsity the beſt Schoole-miſtreſſe.

Aduerſity makes men wiſe.

A poore mans account, to what a reckoning it comes.

To be aſhamed out of modeſtie to do what is good, is a cauſe of great hurt.

ſweet ayre and gracefull voyce another ſung for him? How many block-heads (out of ſhame of deniall) haue entred into Sureti-ſhip for others, & haue payd the debt, themſelues beeing vtterly vndone thereby; and the children (through the fathers folly) for want of maintenance, ſent to ſome Hoſpitall? How much money hath bin lent and borrowed, for the continuing of friend-ſhip and kindneſſe betwixt man and man; whereby in the end it ſo falles out, that he doth not onely loſe his friend, but his money too? Nay more, many times it ſo comes to paſſe, that he that parted with his money, hath not meat to put in his mouth, and is ready to ſtarue for want of food; and hee that had it of him, hath ouer and aboue to pay him; and yet the other dare not aske it him, and all (forſooth) for that he is aſhamed to ſpeake to him.

Shameſaſtneſſe, what it is likened to.

I would haue thee to know, (if thou knowſt it not already) that Shamefaſt-neſſe is like vnto a web in a Weauers Loome; if one thred be broken, it rauels the whole Worke. In thoſe things, whereby hurt may ariſe vnto thee, and driue thee to narrow ſhifts, ſpoyle the worke, and breake the threds in ſun-der, and I aſſure my ſelfe thou wilt rather thanke me for it, then thinke amiſſe of my counſell. And the inconuenience which thou muſt ſuffer, (hauing done that which is deſired at thy hands) let him ſmart for it that craues it, rather than thou, when thou haſt done it.

Good Aduice.

For Modeſty and ſhamefaſtneſſe in ſuch a caſe, when it ſtands vpon a mans making or marring, is a thing that is onely proper vnto fooles. It is fit, that thou ſhouldſt haue a kind of modeſtie in thy ſelfe, not to do (no not when thou art alone by thy ſelfe) any foule or ſhamefull act: but for any other, what knowſt thou of what colour he is, or of what metall hee is made? Free thy ſelfe from him, in that which ſhall neerely concerne thee; let him not tye thee vp like a Dogge, vvith a chaine and a clogge, behind the doore of thy ignorance: cut, or ſlip the Collar; get looſe, and runne away from him, as faſt as thy legges will carry thee. Onely be aſhamed to do any thing (as I ſayd before) that is ſhame-worthy. For that which thou calleſt Modeſtie, is no better then meere fooleric: if I my ſelfe had not beene aſhamed, I ſhould not haue waſted ſo many ſheetes of Paper, as this volume containes, to acquaint thee with the ſad Story of my miſerable life: whereunto I might adde many more; but I now ride poſte, and muſt haſten away, promiſing to deliuer vnto thee farre greater things concerning my life, if God ſay Amen.

Modeſty, when to be vſed. Shameſaſtneſſe in ſome things, is notable ignorance.

I tell you, it would haue grieued me very much to haue returned home without a Cloake, eſpecially hauing come foorth with one vpon my backe. Nor was I willing to be laught at, (which they could not chooſe but doe) to ſee what a ſingle-ſole Gentleman I was, and how like a naked cottage I lookt, or a bare wall without hangings: Beſides, I made it a point of ſhame, and ſtood much vpon it. And that hauing put on a reſolution at my departing, it had beene puſillanimity in me, and baſeneſſe of mind, to haue had but ſo much as a bare thought of returning backe againe. I thought, I ſhould neuer haue the like occaſion againe, (though I thinke, neuer any man but my ſelfe, played ſuch an idle tricke) and therefore when I was once on my way, it ſtood not (me thought) with my reputation to hang an arſe, and to pull that foot backe, which had already ſet it ſelfe ſo forward: I made it a matter of ſhame, which turned afterward to my vndoing; but am not now aſhamed to ſpeake this as boldly, as I did vnder-go it fooliſhly: for ſuch another Aſſe as I, was there neuer.

The good old Hoſteſſe ran ſtill in my mind, vvho, I make account, will fall ere long into my hands; whom, if it be my chance to light vpon, I beleeue ſhe ſhall not get from me with her Kerchiefe on her head: I will make her walke with her haire about her eares, and throw her (Sir-reuerence) in the durt. I haue water inough in ſtore for her, to ſet her vp to the chinne: I am reſolued to be reuenged on her, by treading on the very necke of her, and ſet-

ting

ting my foot on her old withered wind-pipe, throwing her firſt to the ground, as thou wouldſt throw a Diſh-clout.

Would to God (thou paltry proud Boy, thou vnruly young man, and thou ſenſeleſſe old Aſſe) that I had either then vnderſtood, or thou didſt now know, what manner of thing Shame is, what point of honour and reputation, conſidering the great diſorders that thou doeſt, and the idle courſes that thou runneſt.

I ſaid vvith my ſelfe, my Reputation lyes vpon't; my Honour is ingaged; I muſt and will goe on, my truſt is in God, and I hope he will not faile mee. Hauing thus ſet vp my reſt, I reſolued to paſſe forward, with purpoſe to make a iourney to *Madrid*. For there vvas the Court, where was all the brauerie and gallantry of the world, nothing to bee ſeene, ſaue Roſes and Lillies great plenty, and aboundance of all things, vvith many Knights of the order of the golden Fleece; many Dukes and Grandes of *Spaine*; many men of Title; many Prelates; many Knights of the Habit, with many principall Gentlemen of extraordinary ranke and quality; and aboue all, a young King newly married.

I thought with my ſelfe, becauſe I was a handſome young Lad, vvell ſhap't, and of ſome reaſonable good faſhion in my behauiour, that they would haue gone together by the eares for mee, ſtriuing who ſhould haue me away with him. O how many things did preſent themſelues at once vnto mee! How farre, in this ſimplicitie of ours, are our deeds, from our thoughts! What made diſhes; what hot, what cold; what boyld, what roſt? For it is eaſier to thinke, then to doe. Buſineſſes may bee ſoone conceiued, but they are not ſo eaſily effected. Both which in my imagination I thus paint forth vnto thee.

It is eaſie to think on a thing, but hard to bring it about.
How both theſe are painted.

To thinke vpon a thing, I ſuppoſe to be like vnto a pretty little Boy, riding vpon a Hobby-horſe, with a Winde-Mill made of paper, which hee beares in his hand vpon the top of a Cane, or ſome little ſticke, that comes firſt to hand. But to bring that thing to paſſe, I liken that to an old man, bald-headed, weake-handed, lame-legged, who leaning on two Crutches, goes to the ſcaling of a high wall, that is ſtrongly defended. Haue I ſpoke too much? I ſay it is no leſſe. For things oftentimes ſeeme to bee well diſpoſed of in the night, when the Candles are out, and all is darke, taking counſaile with our pillow: But the Sunne no ſooner appeares, but they vaniſh away in an inſtant, like thinne clouds in the heat of Summer. He that could haue ſeene mee, when I made this account, might eaſily haue perceiued with what care, and breaking of my ſleepes, I framed theſe things in my thoughts. But they were Caſtles in the ayre, and fantaſticall *Chimera's*, and had ſcarce put on my cloathes when I had put them all off againe, and throwne them from mee. I plotted many things, but none of my proiects did hit right, but fell out croſſe, if not quite contrarie to what I had propoſed. All was vaine, all lyes, all illuſion, all falſehood, and deception of the imagination, and like (a) *Duendes* Treaſure, all cold embers, and dead coales.

Pillow Counſell proueth vaine.

Now, I goe onward on my way, and hauing gotten me a ſhort Cane in my hand, in ſtead of a walking Cudgell, me thought, all the while I had that, I had my (b) Cloake on my back; but it did neither doe me that credit, nor keepe mee ſo warme, as that would haue done. Onely it ſeru'd me to vnder-prop mine arme now and then, whileſt I gaue breath to my weary legges.

As I was trudging along, a couple chanced to ouertake mee, trauelling that vvay on their Mules: I thought with my ſelfe, Could I now hold out luſtily, and keepe company with them, they could not in kindneſſe but pay my charges. But *Peſcar con* (c) *Maço, no es renta cierta.* To fiſh with a Pole,

(a) Duende, *is one of the ſpirits that fell with* Lucifer. Teſoro de Duende: *Or* Duendes *treaſure, we ſay to be that Eſtate, or Wealth, which is all conſumed and gone, and a man knowes not how, being vaniſhed like a ſpirit.*

(b) *A* Plimmouth *Cloake.*

(c) Mazo *is properly a Mallet wherewith Carpenters driue their Chizell.*

a Pole, is no certaine rent. Nor, is it to thinke, and to be wiſe, all one. They are two differing things. They had neuer a boy betweene them, to goe along and looke to their Mules; they did not ride very hard, though their hearts (as I afterwards found) wery very hard towards me. They rode gently inough, but they were cruell-minded men. Their pace was ſofter then their bowels, for any compaſsion that was in them.

To ſuite this with an Engliſh Prouerbe, I know not.

I iogg'd ſtill along, and kept cloſe with them: and when wee had gone ſome three Leagues, or there-abouts, it was neere about Noone. My heart-ſtrings were ready to breake with trotting and galloping after them, becauſe I would not be caſt behinde. For, though their gate were eaſie, yet it put me (conſidering my youth and weakeneſſe of body) to the height of my ſpeed. Theſe were men, or rather Beaſts in mens ſhape, for they ſpake not a word. And I beleeue they were monſtrous couetous; and ſome there are that are ſo neere, that they will not part with their ſpittle, if they knew it would ſerue for a medicine. Theſe miſerable wretches would not exchange ſo much as one word vvith mee, becauſe they would not helpe mee (if need had been) with ſome intertainment on the way.

Had they entred vpon ſome Diſcourſe, or told mee ſome ſuch Story, as did my honeſt Clergie man, I ſhould not haue beene halfe ſo weary as I was. For good company, (whereſoeuer we chance to light vpon it) is a kinde of meat and drinke to the Soule: it cheeres the hearts of Trauellers; it recreateth their minds; it refreſheth their bodies; it makes them forget their wearineſſe; it riddeth the way; it eaſeth our griefe; it expelleth melancholly; it lengthens mans life, and by a particular priuiledge that it hath, it makes horſe-men, of footmen. Wee came in together into the Inne where wee were to bait; but I in that caſe, that there was but little difference betwixt me, and one that is dead, I was e'ne quite out of heart, and cleane tyred out. But that I might get me a morſell of bread to put in my mouth, I was forced to buckle vp my ſelfe, to beſtirre my ſtumps, to lay aſide all ceremonies, and to forget to ſtand vpon my points. Moreouer I ſtrain'd my ſelfe beyond my ſtrength; humbled my ſelfe more then ſtood with my nature; applyde my ſelfe to wayt vpon them, to put their Mules into the Stable, and to carry their luggage into their lodging. They were ſound and luſty, and had their healths about them, but I had got the Plague by meeting with them. For at the firſt daſh, one of them ſayes vnto me; Stand aſide (my yong Gallant) get you gone, we haue no need of your ſeruice.

Good company, what effects it worketh.

O Traytors, enemies to God (thought I to my ſelfe) how vncharitably doe theſe men beginne with mee? what hope can I haue from them, that they will giue me victuals; or if I ſhould faint on the way, that they would take pitie of me, and ſet me vp behinde them? They are ſet downe to dinner: I ſtood right ouer againſt them, but ſomewhat aloofe off, thinking they would haue been ſo tender-hearted, as to affoord one bit or other from their trencher: but I fell ſhort of my hopes.

There came thither at that time a *Franciſcan* Fryer, who was on foot, and all in a ſweat. He ſate downe to reſt himſelfe, and anon after, puls mee out of his Wallet (which hung on his left ſhoulder) a Loafe of Bread, and a piece of Bacon. I was ſo horrible hungry, that I could ſcarce ſtand vpon my legges, or fetch my breath, ſo faint was I growne for want of food.

But not hauing (white-Liuer'd Whore-ſonne, as I was) the courage (out of a daſtardly kinde of baſhfulneſſe) to ſpeake vnto him to relieue my want: I lookt pittifully vpon him, and beſought him with mine eyes (which is a good dumbe eloquence) that he would giue me a bit of ſomething for Gods ſake.

The good Fryer, who read my Petition in my lookes, (with all the haſte he could make, as if his life had lyen vpon the ſpeedy doing of it,) ſaid; Bleſ-

The Franciſcan Fryers Charitie.

ſed

ſed be God, Though I ſhould want my ſelfe; yet ſeeing thee in that neceſsitie thou now art, I would rather goe vvithout my ſelfe, then to ſee my poore brother lacke.

Take this (my pretty Boy) quoth hee; and much good may it doe thee. O to ſee the wonderfull goodnes of God, the eternall Wiſedome, the diuine Prouidence; the infinit Mercy, which in the bowels of a hard ſtone, doth ſuſtaine a poore ſilly worme, and prouide it food, and filleth all things liuing with his heauenly bounty!

They that were able, and had vvherewithall, vvould not (out of meere couetouſneſſe) giue mee ſo much as one crumme from their table: and vvhat reliefe I could not draw from them, by all my ſeruiceable indeuours, I had from this Mendicant, this poore beggerly Fryer, onely for Gods ſake, and out of meere charitie, ſeeing in vvhat extremitie I vvas *Quién proprias neceſsidades no tiene, mal ſe acuerda de agenas.* Hee that neuer knew what want meant, hath little feeling of another mans miſery. Mine vvas before them, they ſaw it, and with it my tender yeeres, and that I had almoſt broken my heart, hauing ſpent and tyred out my ſelfe to keep company with them; yet vvere they not ſenſible of my wearineſſe, tooke no pitie at all of me, nor did commiſerate my vvants.

My good honeſt Fryer, did freely ſhare his victuals with me, wherewith I fill'd my belly, and was vvell ſatisfied. If that good man, as hee vvent towards *Seuill*, had beene to goe my vvay, hee had ranſomed mee from my mis-fortunes, and had made me a happy man: but we were to runne a contrarie courſe, and to take ſeuerall wayes: yet when he was to goe his way, the good man (I ſhall euer call him by that name,) gaue mee halfe a Loafe that hee had left, and bid me farewell, telling mee, Thou muſt content thy ſelfe (my child) with this; had I more, more ſhouldſt thou haue.

I put it in the lyning of the lappet of my Iacket, and faire and ſoftly ſet forward on my way. By that time I had gone three Leagues more, it was night, then did I ſupper my ſelfe vpon my bread, without any other meat in the vvorld; nor was there any that vvould giue me ought elſe to eate.

It was the Carriers day, and ſome of them Inned there: Mine Hoſt of the houſe bid me goe in, and ſleepe vpon the Straw, I did ſo, and paſt ouer my trauell, as well as I could, being poore and needy, and muſt doe as I might, ſeeing I could not doe as I would.

A hard-hearted Hoſt.

I had made a light Supper, (which you may well beleeue vvithout an oath) for I did not riſe the next morning with a full ſtomake. But when I vvas about to depart, and ready to leaue the Inne, my Hoſt comes vnto mee, and demaunds a *Quarto* of mee for my lodging. I had it not, and therefore could not pay it him: the cunning Rogue had a great deſire to haue ſtript mee out of my Iacket, which was of very good cloath.

All Carriers are not Knaues; ſome haue Soules to be ſaued.

When I ſaw I was put to this ſtreight, and that hee was ſo eager vpon mee, my eyes were brimme full, and ready to runne ouer with water. One of the Carriers tooke pitie of mee that was there, (for they are not all Blaſphemers, and fellowes that haue no Soules) ſtept in betweene vs, and ſaid, Mine Hoſt, Let the poore Boy alone, I vvill pay it for him. His fellowes askt mee; Sirra, whence are you, and vvhether goe you? Hee made anſwere for mee, that had paid for mee. What vnciuill people are ye to aske him that queſtion? Is that ſo hard a matter to be knowne? you may eaſily gueſſe, that hee is runne away either from his Father, or his Maſter.

Mine Hoſt then ſaid vnto mee: How ſayſt thou my Boy, wilt thou take wages, and dwell with mee? As things then ſtood with me, me thought it vvas no badde bargaine; yet it ſeemed harſh vnto mee, that I ſhould now learne to ſerue, who from my child-hood, had beene taught to command.

mand. I told him I would. Get you in then (quoth hee) and reſt you heere, for I will not imploy you in any other ſeruice then the Stable, for the deliuering out my (a) Strawe and my Barley, and ſee that you keepe a good account, and ſcore vp truely, what euery man takes, that neither you, nor they may be mis-reckoned. Take you no care, Sir (quoth I) I ſhall doe it to a hayre.

And thus I remained there a while, hauing victuals vvithout allowance, and feeding (as they ſay) vpon free coſt; and for my worke, that vvas rather a ſport vnto mee then otherwiſe, and holpe well to paſſe away the time. For till thoſe nights that the Carriers came, there vvas little or nothing to doe; as for other ordinarie Paſſengers, it vvas not a trouble, worthy the talking of. There I learned to ſteepe Barley in warme water, to make it increaſe a third part, and to giue falſe meaſure; I had the cunning ſtrike of the hand; I knew how to (b) hollow it with mine arme, and to runne ouer the Mangers; and if any man did put me in truſt to looke to his Beaſt, and to giue him his Prouender, I would bee ſure to coozen him of one third part of his meaſure. Some of my Yongſters vvould come in now and then very neatly, in their trickſie (c) Garters, and their trim Mouchato's, as ſpruce as could be, carrying the ſhow of Gentlemen, but the Diuell a Page or Lackey that they had to attend vpon them. It vvas good holding the Baſon to theſe: they are your onely *Dons*, to indure a fine Shauing.

With theſe, wee droue a good Trade. For vvee came vnto them, and taking charge of their Hackneys, we did ſet them vp in ſuch places as vvere appointed for them, where they had the remaines of that the others had left, which went for one halfe of their allowance; and the other halfe they were preſently ſupplide with (though but bad meaſure;) but when they came to pay, we gaue them a reckoning for the whole. And into the bargaine we had our Hens, and our Pigs, if not now and then the Foale of an Aſſe, that did helpe to ſhare with them. For bountifull natures, and minds that are magnificent, neuer ſticke for trifles, nor offer to ſtand for ſmall matters; ſo that we had all that we could aske, and they neuer made any more bones of the matter. Our mouthes were the meaſures, neuer weighing the ſet prices of things, nor the Sizes ſet downe in the Proclamation, nor what the Iuſtices had ordered in that kinde, which were formally hung vp in euery Inne, with a particular taxe to euery thing there ſpecified. For thoſe are neuer kept, and therefore made little or no reckoning thereof at all. Onely they are ſet vp there at our doores, to the end that the *Alcalde* and the (d) *Eſçriuano* may licke their fingers, and receiue ſome monethly profit from the fees belonging thereunto. And to take occaſion to ſee, whether they had fixed vp the *Cedula* or no, with purpoſe to picke a quarrell vvith them, if they neglected the doing thereof, and ſo make them pay ſoundly for it. For the Stable, it is already well knowne, what euery Horſes allowance is, and how much it comes to a piece, both for their Straw, their Prouender and their Standing. For the Kitchen, that was ſport alone to vs, it made vs all merry, for we were quicke vpon that call to come in, and nimble (as hauing learned our leſſons afore-hand) in the bringing in of our reckoning. So many * *Ryals* (Gentlemen) and ſo many * *Marauedis* miche yee God diche you, and you are heartily welcome. Being euer ſure to reckon rather a *Ryall* ouer, then a *Blanke* vnder.

Many (like good wiſe men as they were) would neuer examine the reckoning, but lay downe their money preſently, ſaying, Lo (my friend) ther's your due. But ſome freſh-water-Souldiers, that were but Nouices and yong Trauellers, plants of the firſt Leafe, would aske vs wherefore? How can it come to be much, &c? But this was but to cut their owne throates, and to make vs to

(a) *They haue little Hay in* Spaine, *and no Oates at al. Their ordinary feeding for Horſe, is chopt Straw, and Barly.*

(b) Hincar el pulpejo.

(c) Mancebilletes de ligas y vigotes.

Magnanimus non curat de minimis.

(d) *The Notary.*

* *A* Marauedi, *is the thirty two part of a* Ryall, *which is ſixe pence.*

inhaunce the reckoning the higher; for when they once put vs to that iumpe, (beſides the rayſing of our prices in the generall) we did alwaies finde a tricke to adde ſome-thing, though it vvere but for the boyling of their [a] *Olla*, and ſuch like toyes; ſo that by this time there were many wanting for to make vp the full reckoning, vvhich they were forced to pay in the end, by way of fine or amercement for their folly. For had they (like others) taken their payment quietly, they had not beene ſo ſoundly laſh't. For you muſt vnderſtand, that the word of an Hoſt, is a kind of definitiue Sentence; there is no appealing from it, but to the Purſe. Nor is it ſwaggering or roaring that can ſerue the turne; your brauings vvill little benefit you; for your Hoſtes, for the moſt part, are a company of old Catch-poles, dogged Curres, who out of a ſcuruie condition that they haue, will with a ſtill mouth hunt dry-foot after you, till he come to ſome good Towne, and then hee will bawle vpon you (like olde Cryer) and when he hath ſet you vp, vvill accuſe you to the Iuſtice, That you would haue ſet his Inne on fire, or that you did baſtonado him with a Cudgel, or that you vvould haue forced his vvife, or his daughter; and onely that hee might do thee a miſchiefe, and be reuenged vpon thee. Beſides, we had ſome Lures in our houſe to catch fooliſh birds with-all, and had ſome ſhewes of prouiſion for poore Trauellers; vvhich were ſuch, that no man that had come into the Inne afoot, vvould haue ſtayed to goe out a horſe-backe: if thou chance to forget thy ſelfe, and to leaue any thing behind thee, giue it thy good word, vnleſſe thou haue the better lucke; for it ſhall be layd vp ſure inough for thy finding.

What ſhall I tell thee of the theſts, the tyrannies, the impudencies, and the villanies, that daily paſſe in your Innes and Victualling-houſes? There is neither the feare of God, nor of his Miniſters amongſt them: and for matter of Iuſtice, either there is none at all to be had againſt them, or elſe they take part with them: But God forbid, that vve ſhould beleeue any ſuch things of them; for it is not to be ſuppoſed, that your Iuſtices will be corrupted: But be it ſo or not ſo, take it as you will, the remedy thereof were a matter of no ſmall importance. For it is a thing vvorthy the following, that many Wainmen, and thoſe that goe vp and downe with Carriages, do refraine their Trading, through the great expence and charges of your Innes. Trafficke ceaſſeth euery where, out of the feare that they haue to be bitten by your Hoſts, and Victuallers, who receiue good payment for euill vſage, profeſſing a kind of publicke theft.

I haue beene an eye-witneſſe of ſeeing many things touching theſe kind of inſolencies; vvhich to deliuer, would require a large Diſcourſe. And ſhould we heare the like amongſt Barbarians, vve ſhould cenſure them accordingly; and yet, vvhen we ſee the ſame here at home before our eyes, we are not moued thereat. But I ſweare vnto you, that [b] the mending of the high wayes, the repayring of Bridges, and the reforming of Innes, is not that which requires leſſe care, then matters of greater moment, in regard of commerce and trafficke. Howſoeuer, when I ſhall leaue this houſe, I haue not farre to go.

CHAP.

[a] Olla, *is a pot or Pipkin, wherein fleſh, & other things are ſod. by the Figure* Metonym. *The* Olla *is taken for that which is boyled in it.*
Olla podrida, *is a very great one, containing in it diuers things, as Mutton, Beefe, Hens, Capons, Sawſages, Piggs feete, Garlick, Onions, &c.*
It is called Podrida, *becauſe it is ſod leiſurely, til it be rotten (as we ſay) & ready to fall in peeces.*
And it is therfore tearmed Podrida, *for that it is like fruite that is ouer-ripe.*
Andreas Bacius, *A Roman Phiſician, in his booke* de natura Vinorum, *ſays; That* Olla Podrida, *is the ſame as* Podcroſa:
To wit, powerfull by reaſon of its greatneſſe, and the variety of the things contayned in it.
In Engliſh it may well beare the name of Hodgepodge.
Couarruuias, verb. Olla.
This Olla, *is in* Spaine *the commonſt meate of all other, and in moſt eſteeme. They eate the meate firſt, and ſuppe vp their* Caldo *or broth afterwards.*

[b] *Profitable conueniences for Trauellours.*

CHAPTER II.

How Guzman de Alfarache *leauing his Hoſt, went begging to* Madrid; *and comming thither, how he ſet himſelfe to learne to play the Rogue, and to beare a Basket; where by the way he diſcourſeth of Hunger, of Beggerie; and of Honour which hurteth the ſoule.*

THIS beeing too lazie a life for me, I did not like it halfe well; and the leſſe, for that it did not ſort to my purpoſe. For I vvas no better (to ſpeake the beſt of it) then an Inne-keepers Boy, vvhich is ſome-what worſe then a blind-man. I had a mind to be a Traueller, and thereon had ſet vp my reſolution, and therefore would not (though it had coſt mee a thouſand liues) haue beene found there in ſuch a baſe Office, as that was. There did daily paſſe by the doore many haggard-Hawkes, young wandring Lads, much about my yeeres and growth; ſome with money in their purſe, others begging an almes for Gods ſake: whereupon I ſaid with my ſelfe, What a deuill ayles me? or what ſcuruy metall am I made of, that I ſhould be more cowardly, and baſer-minded then other men? in that I am not ſenſible, how much I wrong my ſelfe; and out of a faint-heartedneſſe, and like a Crauen (as I am) ſhould ſtoope to picke out a poore liuing, out of ſuch a dung-hill kind of life, as this? Hereupon I tooke heart vnto me, and ſet a good face on the matter; and ſo bidding mine Hoſt God b'wy, I vvent foorth to ſeeke my fortune, carrying ſome Copper-money along with me, gotten in a good warre; and ſome other lawfull purchaſes that I made: but my ſtore being ſmall, it was quickly gone. When all was ſpent, I fell a begging: ſome would giue me an [a] *Ochauo*; but moſt would ſay vnto me, Pardon me (my Boy) I haue not for you.

With this poore *Ochauo*, and other his fellowes, I did eate now and then with a *gaudeamus*, according to my gettings: but this Pardon mee (my Boy) I haue not for you, did me no good in the world: I might haue ſate downe with a *pereamus*, for any comfort that I found in it. Charity was very cold, and it was no maruell; for it was a deare yeere, and there was a generall ſcarcitie thorow-out the Kingdome. And if there were a dearth in *Andaluſia*, how great then muſt the want be in the Kingdome of *Toledo*? and farre greater in the In-land. Then I heard that Prouerbe verified, *Librete Dios de la enfermedad que baxa de Caſtilla, y de hambre, que ſube del Andaluzia*, [b] God deliuer thee from the Plague, that comes downe from *Caſtile*, and from the Famine that comes vp from *Andaluzia*.

Now, becauſe I found begging to be but a poore Trade, and all things elſe at exceſsiue rates; food and rayment being deare commodities, I grew ſo out of heart therewith, that I reſolued to follow that occupation no longer, though my wants ſhould be neuer ſo great. Hereupon, I was minded to make the beſt I could of thoſe Cloathes that I had on my backe: then I began to vnbinde the Booke, and to diuide it into Leaues: that is, to ſeparate one thing from another, that all might not go away at once; ſorting my clothes into ſeuerall parcels, conſuming one piece after another, till all was gone; ſelling this, chopping that, and pawning t'other, till I had not a ragge left.

So that when I came to *Madrid*, I look't like one that had newly come from the Oare, or ſome gentile Rower returned lately from the Gallies, I was

Curzman *reſolues to part with his Hoſte.*

Guzman *falls a begging.*

[a] Ochauo, *is a kind of braſſe-money, whereof two make three farthings.*

[b] *When there is a Plague in Caſtile, the infection is generall. And when there is a a famine in* Andaluzia, *the dearth is ouer all the Land.*

Guzman *leaues begging.*

What ſhift he makes to liue.

Guzman *comes to* Madrid; *and in what kind of faſhion.*

ſo lightly clad, hauing nothing on but a Canuas paire of Breeches, and a courſe Shirt; & that none of the cleaneſt, but as foule as foule might be; all to tatter'd and torne, and ſo rotten with age, that it vvas ready to fall from my backe. And this I was forced to do, to keepe life and ſoule together, and all little inough to ſerue the turne.

Seeing my ſelfe thus out of reparations, and all to be rent and torne; howbeit I ſought after Seruice, thinking to winne credit with my good words, no man vvould truſt me the more for my faire tongue, but grew rather ielous of my euill conditions; inſomuch that I could not meet with any that would giue me intertainment, admit me into his ſeruice, or ſuffer me to come within his doores, becauſe I vvas without a Cloake, and ſo naſty in my other cloathes; that out of a very loathing, they were able to turne a mans ſtomacke. They did thinke, that I was ſome roguiſh little Thiefe, and that if they ſhould take me in, I would filch ſome thing from them, and betake mee to my heeles when I had done.

Seeing my ſelfe in this deſperate ſtate, counting my ſelfe, as it were a loſt man, I began to follow the Trade *de la Florida Picardia*, exerciſing all your Cony-catching trickes, knauiſh prankes, fine feates, with ſlight of hand, and whatſoeuer Rogueries come within the compaſſe of that prowling office. The ſhame that I had to returne home, I loſt it vpon the way; for trauelling a-foot as I did, it wayed ſo heauie, that I was not able to bring it along with me; or perhaps, they that ſtole my Cloake, carried it away with them in the Cape thereof; and this is ſure the likelier of the two. For euer ſince that time I haue beene troubled with a lazie kind of yawning, and a * Feuer-lordane, which did prognoſticate the Diſeaſe I ſhould be ſicke of to my dying day. A Pockes vpon Shamefaſtneſſe, which hung ſtill vpon me, and yet I had none of it; for I began to free my ſelfe from that irkeſomeneſſe, and that little ſhame that was left me, I turned into Impudencie: for Hunger and Shame could neuer yet be made friends. My former Modeſtie (I confeſſe) was meerely out of my ſhallowneſſe of wit, and now I find, that it was euen then a fooliſh kind of Simplicitie. And in thoſe dayes, I playd the child, as others of my age do: but now, like a Vyper, that hath ſtung mee vnawares by the hand, I haue ſhak't that Vermine from off my fingers ends. I fell in with other Taſſelgentles, much about my ſize and pitch, that were high Flyers, and cunning in the catching of their prey. As I ſaw them do, ſo did I, as well as I could: but becauſe I was but newly entred, and was not yet come to that true flying to ſeize the Partridge in foot, I did aſsiſt them with my beſt indeuours, refuſed no paines, followed their ſteps, and walked their ſtations; whereby I came to picke vp my crummes, and to gather a few Blankes together. Thus I ſayled vp and downe, fetching my boords to and fro, ſtill ſounding as I went along, to ſee how many fadome I was off from the ſhore, and what new Countrey was vpon diſcouery.

I could now hunt out for my ſupper, as well as the beſt of them, and knew certainly where to haue it; but I was to take heed, that I playd the true Clock-keeper: for if I failed of my hower, (eſpecially at your Monaſteries, and Religious Houſes) and did not truely keepe the due time, limited and preſcribed by them, I was ſhut out, and left in the darke: ſo that I had now learned the faſhion, to ſhew my ſelfe a mannerly Gheſt, by ſtaying rather for others, then that others ſhould ſtay for me. This loytering kind of life was not without its cares; and as idle as it ſeem'd to be, it was painfull inough vnto mee: for, while I led this Roguiſh life, I learned to play at Cock-All, at Handy-Pandy, and at Nine-holes: from theſe I went a Forme higher; I knew how to play at Noddy, One-and-thirty, Quinolas, and Primera: in a ſhort time I profited ſo well in theſe my ſtudies, that I paſt on to the vpper Forme. I could cogge a Dye handſomely, and if I had good lucke, all was mine owne (eſpe-

* *The Spaniſh word is* Calofrio: *Lat.* Paroxyſmus, frigus ſimul & calorem inducens: & nomen habet à calido & frigido.

Hunger and Shame, mortall enemies.

Guzman *begins to turne* Picaro.

Need is a diligent Mayter.

(especially if I met with weake Gamesters.) Nor would I change this life of a *Picaro*, this roguish life of mine, for the best that any of my Ancestors euer ledde.

I had a moneths mind to the Court; and I went daily refining my wit; I set a new edge vpon my vnderstanding; and inriched my braine with new Philosophie. And seeing others of lesser worth then my selfe to grow from a little, to a great deale of wealth; and from meane beginnings, to come to mighty matters, and to eate their bread without begging, nor expecting it from others hands, (which is the bread of sorrow, and the bread of blood) yea though it should be bestowed vpon thee by thine owne father: out of a desire that I had to attaine to this glorious liberty; and that I might not (as many others) be punished as a Vagabond, and runne the censure of a wandring Rogue, I applyed my selfe to carry such burdens, as my weake shoulders were able to beare.

Bread of Sorrow, what it is.

The Fraternity of Asses is a great Brother-hood; for, euen men haue beene willing to bee admitted into this Companie; and haue beene glad to yeeld themselues to carry vncleane and heauie Loades, with as much patience, as the sillieſt Asse aliue, as if they had beene borne for no other end, but to ease them of their burthens. Now, if men are growne to that basenesse, that they will quite the Asse of his Hamper, and clap it on their owne backes, onely to gaine an [a] *Açumbre* more of Wine, that they may drinke the freelier, when they haue done their worke: see in what ample manner their Assishnesse extendeth it selfe; what a strong hand it hath in the world, and to what a mighty Corporation it is now growne.

[a] Açumbre *is a Iarre or Pitcher, containing about a Pottle, little more or lesse, and is one mans allowance in wine. The* Açumbre *we diuide into foure Measures, called* Quartillo's. *It is an Arabicke word. All things are hard in the beginning.*

But to let this passe, I confesse vnto thee, that I was some-what cold in the matter at the first, and fell to it with an ill will; but aboue all, I was wonderfull fearefull: for being a thing that I was neuer vs'd to before, it suted ill-fauouredly with me at the first, and worse afterwards, when I was entred into it: for all beginnings haue their difficulties; and are not so easie at the first as they seeme to be: but after I had taken a relliſh of this Roguish life, and found the sweetnesse of it, I could tread the true Tracke of it, and was growne so perfect, that I could haue gone blind-fold to my worke, and not haue stept a foot out of the way.

What a fine kind of life vvas it, vvhat a dainty and delicate thing, without Thimble, Thred, or Needle; vvithout Pinsers, Hammer, or Wimble, or any other Mechanicall Instrument whatsoeuer, more then one onely bare Basket; like vnto those of your Brethren of the Order *de Anton Martin*, (though vnlike to them in their goodnesse of life, and solitary retiredness) I had gotten me an Office whereby to liue: and such a kind of Office, as seemed to be a bit without a bone; a backe, without a burthen; a merry kind of Occupation, and free from all manner of trouble and vexation?

I did often thinke on the life that my Parents led; and that, which I had made tryall of in this so short a time; as also, that which they had vndergone to so little purpose, and to their so great cost. O! (said I to my selfe) what a burthen is the weight of Honour? And what metall is there, that can equall it in poyze? To what a world of inconueniences, is that man lyable, who is driuen to make vse of it? How warily, and how circumspectly must he goe to worke? What a deale of care, and sudden passions, come vpon him? What high and slender ropes must he runne vp and downe vpon? Thorow how many thousands of perils must he sayle in this vaste Ocean? Into what infinit troubles must hee thrust himselfe? And amidst how many Brambles, and Bushes, and pricking Thornes, must he im-bryer, and intangle himselfe withall, and scarce get out of them, without leauing his fleece behinde him, if not his skinne? What a thing is it, that my honour must bee subiect to the mouth of the dissolute, and to the hand of the indiscreet and vnaduised man?

Honour, what a burthen it is.

man? The one by word, the other by action. Againſt which, all the wit and force of man is not able to preuaile, nor to turne that vnruly tyde, when it ſhall breake in vpon vs. What phrenſie of Satan, what malice of the Diuell was it, to marry this foule Abuſe vnto Man, which is able to make him run mad, and irrecouerably to loſe his wits? As if he did not know, that Honour is the Daughter of Truth. And ſee how much a man is Vertuous, ſo much is he Honorable, and no more. And it is impoſsible, that my honour ſhould be taken away from mee, as long as my Vertue remaines with mee, which is it's proper Centre. Onely mine owne Wife may take away mine honour from me (according to the opinion of *Spaine*) by taking away firſt her owne: for ſhe being one and the ſelfe-ſame thing with my ſelfe, my Honour and hers are one, and not two, as being but one, and the ſame fleſh; and whatſoeuer ſhall be ſaid in the contrarie, it is but ſcurrility, meere wit and inuention, and the idle dreames of a fantaſticke braine. Happy is that mans life, that neither knowes what Honour meanes, nor ſeekes after it, nor hath any thing to doe with this Titulary top.

True Honour, is the Daughter of Truth.

The honour of a mans Wife, what it is.

I was euer of the minde, that if that man that pretends Honour, ſhould but truely open his eyes, & looke vpon it without partialitie, conſidering (not carried away with paſsion) the effects thereof, he would not ſtoope to take it vp; nor touch that with his hand, whoſe burthen muſt either breake his backe, or make him ſinke vnder the vveight thereof to the ground. O how troubleſome a thing is it, firſt to get it? how difficult afterwards to keepe it? how dangerous to hold, how eaſie to loſe, as depending on the common eſtimation and opinion of men? But if it rely vpon the Vulgar, and that bee the proppe that muſt vp-hold it, it is one of the greateſt torments that Fortune can giue, or man ſuffer in this life, vvho deſires to end his dayes quietly, and to paſſe his Carreere peaceably, vvithout being croſſed in his Courſe. And albeit men plainely perceiue, that this which I ſay is true, and they ſee the experience thereof daily before their eyes, yet they vvill not ſticke to hazard their liues; nay to giue their very Soules for it, as if that ſhould ſaue them another day.

What the honour of the Vulgar is.

Thou thinkſt it no honour vnto thee, to cloath the naked, to feed the hungry, nor to exerciſe (as thou oughteſt) thoſe good deeds, that belong to thy function, and many other things, vvhich I know, and am ſilent in; and thou knoweſt them to thy ſelfe, though thou doeſt diſſemble them; thinking that others perceiue it not, and that thou carryeſt things cloſely, when as indeed thou danceſt but as it were in a net, and all thy actions lye open to publique view, which my pen ſhall omit to ſet down, that I may not point them forth vnto thee as it were with the finger, and whereof perhaps, when I ſhall haue deliuered thee my minde, thou wilt make no more, if not leſſe reckoning of it, then of a blaſt of winde, or a puffe of ſmoake, that preſently vaniſheth, and is no more ſeene.

Chriſtian Honour, what it ought to be.

Canſt thou thinke it an Honour vnto thee, that the Hoſpitall ſhould bee maintained with the droppings of thy Tap, and the Scraps of thy Kitchen, (when there is not a Dogge, that waites at thy Trencher, but fares better?) Canſt thou thinke it an honour vnto thee, that thy Mules ſhould haue their Linnen and their Woollen cloathes, whileſt Chriſt (in his members) dyes out of very cold, not hauing wherewith to couer his nakedneſſe? Canſt thou thinke it an Honour to thee, that thy Horſes ſhould be as fat as their skins can hold, that they are euen ready to burſt againe with the fulneſſe of their feeding, while the poore fall downe at thy gate for want of food, their weake legges not being able to ſupport their hunger-ſtarued bodies? No, thou canſt not. And I preſume, the practice of euery good Chriſtian is farre otherwiſe. And this is that honour, which euery man ought highly to eſteeme, and may iuſtly ſeeke, and hunt after it. But that which thou calleſt honour, may

more

more properly be termed *Pride*, or fooliſh eſtimation, which makes men fall into *Hellicks*, and *Ptyſicks*, and with a canine appetite to catch greedily at that Honour, which is no ſooner had, then loſt. And not onely that, but with it the Soule; (which is a thouſand pities) which euery good Soule ought to auoid, and bewaile.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Diſcourſe againſt vaine* Honours: *Where by the way he offers vnto Mans conſideration, what manner of perſon hee ought to be, how to beare himſelfe in his Office, and to gouerne himſelfe in thoſe high places, whereunto he is called.*

ALBEIT, (as being then but a Youth) and newly (as they ſay) crept out of the ſhell, this being the firſt flight that euer I made, I had runne thorow many miſeries, and ſuffered much want, yet I paſt them all ouer as eaſily as I could; imagining ſtill in my minde, that *Honour* is like vnto your early fruits, that are ſooner ripe then the reſt, and brought firſt into the Market, which though they be exceſsiue deare, & not to be had, but at a high rate, and vnmeaſurable prices; yet all doe equally buy them, and pay alike for them, euen from him, that hath a purſe to beare it, as from him, that hath not the like abilitie. What a great preſumption and ſhame is it, that a poore Huſband-man ſhould buy halfe a pound of your firſt Cherries that come into the market, which may chance to coſt him the price of ſo much bread, as would very well ſerue to ſuſtaine himſelfe, his Wife, and his Children? O holy Lawes, and O happy Kingdomes, that ſhall put a bridle to this abuſe, as a thing tending to the generall hurt of a Common-wealth! For (there being no reſtraint in that kinde) they buy, and eate thereof without limit, or moderation, neuer growing weary of buying, nor glutted with eating: Which too timely, or rather vntimely fruits, breed no good nutriment, corrupt the bloud, cauſe raw concoction, and ingender euill humours, which afterwards pay their bodies with ſound Agues, ſharpe Feuers, ſtrange *Paraſiſmes*, and other the like grieuous, and painefull infirmities.

Honour, how prettily it is heere compared.

I ſweare by the faith of an honeſt man, that ſuch a deuouring of Honour, will coſt thee more then one purge. I was neuer ambitious in this kinde, neuer greedy of this honour, neuer gaue it a good looke, ſince I firſt knew it; eſpecially, when I ſaw Pages, Seruing-men, and Prentiſes forſake their old Trades, to follow new courſes, and to get themſelues into ſome odde Office, or other, as farre repugnant from their nature, as heat, from cold, and as much differing from their diſpoſition, as heauen is diſtant from the earth. Yeſterday, thou wouldſt haue ſent thy Seruant to one of theſe fellowes, to will him to come to thee, and when he had come, giuen him an *Ha*, or a Nod, or a plaine (*a*) *Vos*, which was as much, if not more, then he deſerued. And now that he hath got but an Office vpon his backe, hee ſends the next day for thee by a Porter, where thou muſt ſue and intreat that hee will be-friend thee in ſuch a buſineſſe, and ſtand with cap in hand, crowching vnto him, giuing him the Worſhip, with a Sir-reuerence at euery word, beſeeching him, that his Worſhip would be pleaſed to doe you this or that fauour.

Honour ill placed vpon ſome.

(a) Counted a diſgracefull word in Spaine. *As if heere in* England *we ſhould in ſcorne Thou a man.*

Tell me, is not that true of this man, which is ſpoken of that proud Bird the Peacocke, who t'other day hauing ſcarce euer a feather to couer his nakedneſſe, doth now boaſt his ſilken plumes, and ſpread abroad his golden traine? If this be true, it muſt likewiſe then follow, that when this painted puffe ſhall haue his tayle pluckt, all his gilded feathers, and rich imbroyderies

ries taken from him, which natures richeſt hand hath ſo curiouſly wrought; if any mis-fortune befall ſuch a man, and that he once come to be ſtript of his honours, downe goes his goodly traine, and his plumes beeing pull'd from him, is iuſt the ſame man, as he was before.

Touching Honour, and the honoured.

And if you ſhall but weigh and conſider this thing well, you ſhall find ſuch men as theſe, not to be men of Honour, but men honoured; for they that are truely honourable, haue this honour from, and in themſelues, and no man can ſo pill and pull their feathers, but that freſher and goodlier plumes will come vp a-new in the place, and be more glorious to looke to then before.

But the honoured, that receiue their honour from another, one while you ſee them; another while you not ſee them. So long as the merry moneth of *May* laſteth, ſo long are your flowers freſh and faire to ſee to: As theſe flowers, ſo are thoſe fauours, which the Fauourite receiueth from the Prince, or perſon that fauours him. They ſoone fade; they had but their time, and thats gone, and they with it: And then they returne to be the ſame men they were before.

Whileſt the ſap is in the bough, it is greene and flouriſheth; but when it goes backe into the roote, it dyes and withereth for the time. So it ſtands with your Fauourite; his Honour flouriſheth like the greene Bay-tree, while his Princes fauour ſhines vpon him; but when hee cals this in againe vnto himſelfe, as the tree doth the ſappe, and it returnes to the roote from whence it came, his honour is nipt in the head, and is no better (if not much worſe) then he was before his riſing. So haue I ſeene ſome men mounted on high, imployed in great affaires, and to haue held great places of Dignity and honour in the Common-wealth, which might haue beene put into the hands of Gentlemen of approued good iudgement, and excellent parts, and thought themſelues happy, if they had beene conferred and beſtow'd vpon them.

A reprehending of thoſe that are Sots and Dolts, and yet ſeeke after Offices, and Places of great preferment.

To theſe men I haue call'd as I haue lyen in my bed, and cryde out vnto them: How now (my friends) whither away goe ye with theſe Offices? Who (if they heare me) might very well anſwere: I vow to God, I know not my ſelfe: I thinke they are therefore giuen vs, that wee ſhould make our profit of them, feather our neſts, and in-rich our ſelues, as well as we can. But thou doeſt not conſider (wretched as thou art) that the burthen which thou beareſt, thou neither truely vnderſtandeſt, nor is it properly belonging to thy profeſsion: and that in loſing thine owne Soule, thou ouerthroweſt withall another mans buſineſſe, and art bound in conſcience to make him recompence, for the wrong thou haſt done him.

Doeſt thou not know, that there belongs more to the diſpatch of buſineſſe, and deciding of differences betwixt party and party, then there doth to the ſowing of a Garment, or the ſhearing of Cloth, or to lend ſuch a Gentlewoman your arme, when you Vſher her along the ſtreetes; which grace ſhee vouchſafes to affoord thee, for that hands ſake, which did aduance thee?

Peraduenture, thou maiſt haue beene askt the queſtion, or thy ſelfe mayſt perhaps haue made ſome ſecret ſcrutiny in thine owne boſome, whether thou didſt finde thy ſelfe of ability and ſufficiency to performe thy charge; or whether thou hadſt the knowledge and vnderſtanding to doe things well and handſomely, without wronging thy Conſcience, going thy ſelfe to hell, and carrying him along with thee, that did conferre thy Office vpon thee? But ſome babbling fellow here-abouts, which I ſuppoſe to be ſome one Barbers man or other, (for they are commonly a kind of Climacterical and dangerous prattlers) will giue me this ſhort anſwere: Wee can. It is a ſtrange thing to ſee the humours of ſome men. Conſider with mee (for Gods ſake) what buſineſſe hath with it ſo many tricks, ſo many ſhifts, and ſo many difficulties, as hath this? We are all of vs men (the beſt of vs are no more) and when

when the wheeles are once set a-worke, wee imagine, they must goe well inough of themselues, without any care, or looking to of ours. O what a pitie is it, that thou shouldst then begin to learne an Office, when thou should'st come to vse it! O what a griefe, to see a mans practice out-runne his knowledge / he being as vnfit for the Place, as the place for him.

The Pylot is fearful of gouerning his Ship, (not only in tempestuous weather, but at all times, euen in the calmest Sea, and fairest Season; by reason of those sudden accidents, and various casualties, which hourely, nay, euery minute may befall him) although he be his Arts-master, and throughly vnderstands, what he hath to doe vpon all occasions. And thou, which neuer sawest the Sea, wast neuer taught thy Compasse, nor knowst what belongs to the Art of Nauigation: Wilt thou, I say, venture to steere a Ship, and ingulph thy selfe, thou knowst not whither, nor into what danger? What wouldst thou thinke or say, when thou seest a Boy fumble on the Citterne, and when hee should come to play before thee, not to be able to strike a true note; what a tearing would this bee to thine, or any other musicall eare? O how harsh would it sound? And yet all this while, thou doest not, or wilt not perceiue, that when thy selfe commest to vnderstand thy Place, or to thinke, that thou vnderstandest it (which is the truer of the two) for want of knowledge, thou hast not onely lost that, but thy Lords loue together with it, and the time which thou hast spent, and nothing left to comfort thee withall, but the fooleries, which thou hast committed therein. Follow thine owne trade, and exercise thy selfe in those things, thou well vnderstandest, thrust not thy Sickle into another mans Haruest, and meddle not with those things, that are fitter for others, then thy selfe. But this is not so much thy fault, as of those that thrust it vpon thee, who haue more, then thou, to answere for it: it is a Commutation, that lyes heauily vpon the Conscience. But to proceed.

Euen now, but to day, haue I knowne these kinde of men, meane, poore, and miserable creatures; on the morrow after, they haue risen vp in a strange fashion, vtterly vnknowne vnto me (like him that dyes his Beard, or being old and strooken in yeeres, growes to be young againe,) exalted, and set aloft, looking bigge vpon the matter, expecting to haue the first Cap, and to bee first saluted by those, whose seruants they might well haue been, and that in meane and base offices, and yet haue thought it preferment good inough for them. I knew very well, which way he would goe, that led the daunce; & whence this violence did proceed, by altring things, and putting them out of their due course, thrusting out the naturals, to bring in strangers. I likewise was not ignorant, that those that did murmure and repine thereat, had good reason so to doe; for by giuing vnto euery one, that which of right belongeth vnto him, the gall of Enuy and Malice is thereby broken and split in sunder. For it is an ease to the sicke stomake of a State, when Offices seeke men, and not men Offices, whence great scandall and infamie doth arise. For by how much the more high Places make them to be knowne, that doe not deserue them, by so much the more they make the owners of them to be contemned and despised. And these vndeserued dignities go not away without their payment. For as they are an affront to those that hold them, when they are vnworthy of them; so they suffer dishonour in themselues, by beeing conferred on such vndeseruing persons; Leauing him likewise, who did bestow them, subiect to Infamy, Detraction, and Obligation to make satisfaction to the State, for the wrongs occasioned thereby.

Heere I alight, and make a stand, shutting vp my conceit within it's bounds, that it may not straggle too farre. This ware I sell you as mine owne, and recommend it vnto you for good, vnlesse you vnder-value it for the sellers sake. And I must needs confesse, that this off-spring of my braine is worthy a better father. But doe thou dispose of it, and compose it, according as thy

thy ſelfe ſhall thinke fit, by amending ſuch faults as thou findſt amiſſe. And though it be a beggers Brat, and the ſonne of a Rogue, yet conceiue withall, that we are all men, and haue all of vs vnderſtanding; and that *El habito no haze el Monge*: it is not the Coule, that makes the Fryer. Yet in this, as in all things elſe, I ſubmit my ſelfe to thy cenſure, and am willing to receiue thy correction.

Cucullus non facit Monachum.

Now by this time, thou knoweſt my weakneſſe, notwithſtanding I would haue thee to know, that there was not that day went ouer my head, wherein I did not runne ouer my beades, beſides other deuotions that I did. And although I heare thee murmure, that it is a common practice amongſt Thieues and Ruffians, to haue their [a] *Roſario* ſtill in their hand, faining themſelues to be very deuoutly affected towards our Lady: Thinke, and ſay what thou wilt, I care not a ruſh, for I deſire not thy good opinion, nor ſeeke to winne any credit from thy mouth. Euery morning, the firſt thing that I did, was to goe to Church to heare Maſſe; that being done, I afterwards began preſently to caſt about, how I ſhould ſpend that day, for the getting of ſomething to ſuſtaine my ſelfe withall, and to keepe me from ſtaruing.

[a] Roſario. Las cuentas para rezar. *Latinè*, Sphærulæ, Pręcatoriæ, Corona.

I once remember, that hauing layen ſome-what long a-bed, and finding my ſelfe not halfe currant, I thought it not fit, that day, to take any paines for my liuing: it vvas a Feſtiuall-day, and to Church I went, vvhere I heard high Maſſe, and a very good Sermon by a learned *Auguſtine*, vpon the fifth Chapter of S. *Mathewes* Goſpel, vvhere it is ſayd; *Let your light ſo ſhine before men, that they may ſee your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in Heau'n*: vvhere by the way, he beſtowed a little ſprinkling vpon your Clergie-men, your Prelates, and ſuch as vvere beneficed: telling them, That they had not theſe great Rents giuen them for nothing; that they were to looke rather vpon the greatneſſe of their charge, then into the greatneſſe of their Reuenew; and that theſe good things were not confer'd vpon them, to fill the belly, and to cloath the backe, and to waſte and conſume theſe good bleſſings of God in vnneceſſary idlements; but in feeding the poore, and cloathing the naked, and in diſpenſing to the needy, and thoſe that are in neceſsitie; ouer whom God had ſet them as Stewards, and no otherwiſe; or to ſpeake more properly, hath appointed them his *Adminiſtrators* ouer this his *Hoſpitall*. And that in putting this Steward-ſhip or Adminiſtration into their hands, it was more particularly throwne vpon them, then any other, as on men of all other the moſt to be truſted, and (by reaſon of their Profeſsion) leaſt intereſſed in the World: mercifull-minded men, vvholly retired from the world, and from thoſe confuſions which accompany it; to the end, that with the more care, and the leſſe trouble, they may apply themſelues to this Miniſterie, wherewith they were in-truſted.

A Diſcourſe vpon the 5. of Mat.

Clergie-men charitably reproued of their faults.

Would to God they would open their eyes, and looke to vvhom they giue, how, and on what they do diſtribute it; for it is anothers money, and not their owne, whereof a ſtrict account will be taken of them. Let them not therefore abuſe the truſt, that is repoſed in them; God neuer ſleepeth; he is ſtill awake and ſeeth all our Actions. Nor will it boot them to vſe trickes and deuices to defraud him but in a Farthing, or to coozen him of the leaſt Mite. For as it is the gaine of *Iudas*, ſo ſhall they receiue *Iudas* his reward. He ſayd in the generall, that their manners and behauiour ſhould bee like vnto the Lanterne in the Admirall, to the reſt of the Fleet, by whoſe light, all the reſt of the Ships ſhould ſteare their Courſe, and ſtill haue an eye vpon it, without troubling themſelues in other worldly affaires, and matters of profit to their purſe, which is contrary to their Profeſsion, and to that obligation, whereunto they are bound by Gods Word, which cannot lie.

What manner of men Church-men ought to be.

I remember very well, I did then call to mind a certaine friend of my fathers, how ill he diſpoſed of that which he had got, and the ill example which he

he left behind him : this was his end; and with this the Preacher ended.

Many other excellent good things did he vtter to this purpoſe, and ſtrongly confirmed what he deliuered with forcible reaſons; which for the in-decencie of my profeſsion, I willingly ſilence; nor is it fitting for a man of my faſhion, to make mention of them.

That night my ſickneſſe increaſed vpon me; my bed was none of the beſt, nor much ſofter then a piece of an old Matt, that is full of holes, and throwne vpon the dung-hill, as good for nothing. The cattell went grazing on the humane Paſture of my miſerable corps; I awaked with their nibbling, fell a ſcrubbing, aud finding no diſpoſition in my ſelfe to ſleepe, I made a repetition of the vvhole Sermon to my ſelfe; as one, that vnderſtood very well, that albeit his ſpeach tended more particularly towards Church-men, yet it did in the generall appertaine vnto all; from the Myter to the Crowne; from the moſt powerfull Prince, to ſuch a poore Caytiffe as my ſelfe. Lord be merciſull vnto me, I began to thinke with my ſelfe, that this did as well concerne me as them: and that I was a kind of Some-thing; that I had a ſoule to ſaue as vvell as they; and that there was ſome reckoning to be made of me too. Then I began to examine my ſelfe, What light am I able to giue to others; or how can it be had, much leſſe, ſhine in a man, whoſe office is ſo vile, and ſo baſe as mine? Yes (my friend) quoth I: and it belongeth alſo vnto thee, and therefore I ſpeake it vnto thee; for thou likewiſe art a member of this myſticall Body, equall with the greateſt in ſubſtance, though not in quality. Beare thy burthens well and faithfully; make not your Vintage out of other mens Grapes; doe not nimme and purloyne by the vvay; conueying from the Baſket to the Breeches, into priuy Pockets, and falſe Linings, that which is none of thine. Doe not ſhrinke the ſhoulder, as if thou hadſt the dead weight of Plate vpon thy backe; and do not thou moue as ſlowly, when thou haſt but two Loaues to carry, as when thou art laden with two Beames, or maine pieces of Timber.

Guzmans *miſerable condition.*

Euery man, euen the meaneſt, is bound to be vertuous, and to haue a good conſcience.

Make a conſcience of thy gettings; bee moderate and temperate in thy gaines; not demanding more then thy labour is woorth; vſe all men well, but beſtow thy paines on the poore for nothing; offering that freely, as thy firſt fruits due vnto God. Be not diſhoneſt, be not vicious, be no Glutton, nor no Drunkard: call thy conſcience to an account, be ſure to keepe a true ſcore and reckoning with it: for, in ſo doing (like that poore olde woman in the Goſpell) thou canſt not want the comfort of lifting vp thy heart, and thy eyes vnto Heau'n, ſaying; *Bleſſed be the Name of the Lord.* For euen in *Rogues* there is ſome vertue, ſome ſparke of goodneſſe; and this in thee ſhall bee thy Light.

What your Porters that carry baskets, and the like burdens, ought to do.

But in my iudgement, both now, and then vvhen I heard the Sermon, (that we may returne againe to our former conſideration) what he ſpake (beſides that which concerned the Clergy and the Communalty) had eſpeciall reference vnto Princes, and their miniſters of Iuſtice, whereof I ſhould haue ſpoken when I made this my Digreſsion. Theſe are truly ſayd to be the Light; and in that ſacred Chapter-houſe, or in the greateſt part thereof, all is Light, more and more Light ſtill, to the end (to leaue them the more inexcuſable) that they may not alledge hereafter, that they had not any Light at all. Conſider with me, that the Light ought to ſubſiſt (as the Agent) in ſome ſubiect (as the Patient) whereon to worke. As for example, in the Waxe, be it Torch, or any other thing whatſoeuer. I ſay then, that when any ſuch kind of perſon, be it another, or be it thy ſelfe, ſhall repreſent himſelfe, as a Light vnto me, thy good workes, thy faire behauiour, thy ciuill carriage, thy zeale, thy holineſſe of life, is that which makes thee to ſhine, and to giue Light vnto others. What thing is it then, think'ſt thou, to haue an Office throwne vpon thee, or ſome great dignity or other? It is, a putting of Waxe to this Light, to

Light, how it ought to be in thoſe that beare Office.

Rules for him that gouernes others.

to make it ſhine the more: but tell me then, what is the office of the Light? It is to go with his heate, drawing and ſucking the Waxe ſtill towards him, that it may burne the brighter, and maintaine it ſelfe the better. Euen ſo muſt thou do with thy Office; thou muſt drinke it in, as it were, and incorporate it into this Light of thy vertues, and honeſt courſe of life, that all men may ſee it, and imitate it, bearing thy ſelfe ſo vprightly, that prayers may not moue thee, teares may not ſoften thee, gifts may not corrupt thee, menaces may not daunt thee, anger may not ouer-come thee, hatred may not diſturbe thee, nor affection deceiue thee. Againe, which offers it ſelfe firſt to our ſight, the Light, or the Waxe? You will grant me, the Light: if ſo, then ſo behaue thy ſelfe, that thy Office, which is the Waxe, may be ſeene after thee; and that the Office may be knowne by thee, and not thou by the Office. It often ſo fals out, that the Waxe is much, and the Light is little; whereby the Light comes to be drowned and quenched in it; as in caſe the Torch ſhould be great, and the Weke ſmall. Other-times it happeneth, that the Light is turned down-wards; and ſo by melting the Waxe aboue, it is preſently extinguiſhed and put out.

Officers compared to the Light, and to Waxe.

Bad Officers, and their euill effects.

So we ſee, that the good in thy ſelfe is ſo little, and the Office which thou art put into, is ſo farre beyond the meaſure of thy Merit, that that little Light thou haſt, is ſmoothered on the ſudden, and ſo thou remaineſt in darkneſſe. Other-whiles, thou turneſt theſe thy vertues towards the ground, by inclining thy ſelfe vnto euill: for thou doſt make thy Office to melt as it were at the top, and to waſte and conſume its light, by thy robbing, by thy coozening, by thy ouer-commanding, and contemning the poore: vſing in his Cauſe, delayes; in that of the rich, all poſsible ſpeed: with the poore thou deal'ſt rigorouſly; with the rich, gently and mildly: on the one thou frowneſt, on the other thou ſmileſt: the poore thou proudly trampleſt vnder thy feet; but the rich thou ſaluteſt with Cap in hand; boweſt thy body, vſing him in all the reſt, with a great deale of loue and kindneſſe. And while this is in doing, Death comes on thee vnawares; it ſeizeth ſuddenly vpon thee, thy life is quickly at an end, but thy damnation remaineth for euer. Others there are, who (as I ſayd before) draw Light from their Office; and whereas they themſelues ought to be the Light, they are indeed but the Waxe. Wouldſt thou know the condition of theſe men, and what they do? I will tell thee: What, I pray, is the property of Waxe? To goe by little and little, wearing and waſting away; haling the Light violently after it ſelfe, till they both go toppling out, vaniſh away at laſt, and come to nothing. Iuſt ſo is it with theſe kind of men; they liue in that manner, (hiding their Light vnder a Buſhell, concealing their good Workes, and burying all Vertue and Goodnes in them) that they make no vſe of it, nor eſteeme it: onely they eſteeme the Office, which they haue made their Light: this, they go forcing, as it were, by violence, they tugge and hale it vnto them, that they may incorporate it into themſelues, that they may reape their profit by it, skimme the Creame from it; and not onely that, but to draw away its very heart-blood. And ſo by little and little, together with it, they themſelues likewiſe conſume away. Ill they liu'd, and ill they dye: as was their life, ſo was their end. What doth he thinke with himſelfe, that ſuffers himſelfe to be made Waxe, when he taketh from one that which is his right, or that which he iuſtly deſerueth, and doth transferre it on a foole, or ſome vn-worthy perſon, whom he hath a deſire to pleaſure? Shall I tell thee what becomes of this man in the end? He melts and drips away like Waxe, not knowing how, nor which way he comes to bee conſumed: his health decayes, his honour diminiſheth, his wealth waſtes away, his friends faile him, his wife, his children, and his kinsfolke, are taken from him by Death; on whom, as on the proppes of his houſe, leaned all his pretenſions, he is ſwallowed vp with Melancholy, as it were in a graue, or

God puniſheth euill Officers, and in what maner.

ſome

ſome deepe pit, yet knowes not the cauſe why, nor whence it ſhould proceed. But the cauſe (my friend) is, that theſe are the whips of God, wherewith he ſcourgeth them temporally in this world, in that part which ſhall paine them moſt, beſides that which he reſerueth for their farther puniſhment, in the world to come. And his diuine Maieſty, for the comfort of the righteous, is willing, that thoſe, that doe diſſolutely ſinne, by doing publike and open wrongs, contrary to all right and reaſon, ſhould be corrected in the ſight of men, and in the open view of all the world, to the intent that they may magnifie him in his iuſtice, and draw conſolation vnto themſelues from his mercy, which is alſo made knowne in the chaſtiſement of the wicked.

Wouldſt thou liue in health? wouldſt thou bee cheerefull and merry? wouldſt thou continue free from thoſe diſturbances, which might giue thee cauſe to lament? wouldſt thou abound in riches? and leade a contented life without melancholly? Take then this rule of me; Make thy dayly account with God, confeſſe thy ſelfe vnto him euery day, as if that very day thou wert to dye.

A good leſſon for thoſe that deſire, to liue well and happily.

Let Iuſtice be obſerued by thee in that maner, as it is defined and ſet down vnto thee, giuing to euery man that which is his due: Eat of the ſweat of thine owne browes, and not of the labours of other men; and to this end, ſtore thou vp ſuch riches, as are well and truely gotten; ſo ſhalt thou liue contentedly, ſo ſhalt thou be happy, and euery thing ſhall proſper and thriue with thee, and all ſhall goe well with thee and thine.

In good ſooth I am halfe afrayd, that this conſideration of mine hath ledde mee on a little too farre, where-into I haue ſo farre thruſt in my foot, that I had need of ſome helpe to pull it out. I haue launched out too much into the deepe, and ingulphed my ſelfe before I was aware. I haue almoſt loſt my ſelfe in this buſineſſe, in dilating vpon this point, and ſhould runne out much more at randome, if I ſhould goe about to tell you, why, and how, ſome of theſe things, are thus and thus carried, whether out of priuate intereſt, or affection, or paſsion, &c. But I will bee ſilent, all ſhall bee huſh with me; for I will not (in theſe tongue-controlling dayes) that the Law take hold vpon mee. *Secreta mea mihi*: My ſecret I will keepe to my ſelfe; I will locke it vp cloſe in mine owne boſome: beſides, good and diſcreet ſilence is counted a holy thing: Though in that which I haue ſpoken, I acknowledge my exceſſe, and confeſſe I haue (with the Cobler) gone beyond my Laſt, this being a point of doctrine, fitter-to bee diſcuſſed by a *Preacher*, then a *Picaro*. Theſe barkings will require better mouth'd Dogges. Let them ſtretch out their throats, and yawle alowd, that they may diſcouer the theeues. But alas, it may happely, or rather vnhappely bee, that they haue their mouthes ſtopt with a cruſt, which makes them to hold their peace.

Why Preachers refuſe to reproue ſinne, and to cry out againſt it?

Chap. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *deliuereth a learned and witty Diſcourſe, conceyued by himſelfe, againſt the Vanity of* Honour : *touching by the way vpon the Vices of Seruants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Iudges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Phyſicians, and of Lawyers.*

I Haue made a long and a tedious digreſsion, and am well witting thereof to my ſelfe. But I would not haue thee make it a matter of wonder; for the neceſsitie that enforced me therevnto, was very great. And if two or more hurts meet in one and the ſelfe-ſame body, it is good diſcretion to ſuccour the more important, not being vnmindfull in the meane while of the leſſer. So doth it often occurre in Warre, and in all other things whatſoeuer. I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, that I am not able to tell thee, which of the two were the greater, either that which I did let alone, or that which I tooke in hand, conſidering how much both of them imported, and of what conſequence they were. But let vs redeeme the Pawne that ſtands ingaged, and returne againe to our former matter, following the purſuite of that Diſcourſe, of whoſe footing, we haue found the pricks already.

It was my hap one day to beare in my basket, (which I brought from the Shambles) a quarter of Mutton, for a certaine Hoſier, or Gentleman Taylor. I had by chance at that time about me, certaine old (*a*) *Coplas*, or Ballads, which (in a kind of broken tune) ſtill as I read this or t'other line, I fell a ſinging, as I went along. My good Maſter hauing (as it ſhould ſeeme) liſtened vnto me, look't backe on the ſudden, and ſmiling, ſaid; How now (my totter'd Raskall) a pox take you for a ragga-muffin, can you reade, you Rogue? Yes marry can I, Sir, (quoth I) I thanke God, I can reade reaſonable well, but my writing is better then my reading. Sayſt thou me ſo, Boy? And with that he intreated me, that I would teach him to write his name, or to make ſome marke, that might ſerue for a ſubſcription, or vnder-ſigning (hee cared not which) for either would ſerue his turne. I pray Sir (ſaid I) what good can this doe you? What can you benefit your ſelfe, by hauing learned to make a bare marke, and no more? Me thinkes you ſhould haue no great vſe for that alone, vnleſſe you could write too. Yes marry haue I, Sir (quoth he,) for I haue much worke goes through theſe hands, of ſuch and ſuch great men, I make all the cloathes their children weare (and there by the way, he reckons me vp a bead-roll of theſe and theſe Lords) and therefore I would very faine, (if I knew how) learne to write my Name, or to make my Marke, that (if occaſion were offered) I might not be taken for an Aſſe, and ſay (like a foole as I am) when I am call'd to ſubſcribe, Indeed, Sir, you muſt pardon mee, I cannot write. And ſo this buſineſſe broke off as abruptly, as it began. And I making a large *Soliloquium*, and meditation to my ſelfe, went on a good while with the ſame after this manner.

Heere (*Guzman*) thou ſhalt ſee, what a kinde of thing Honour is, ſeeing it is conferred on ſuch as theſe: It is, the ſonne of Nothing; the Child that knowes neither father, nor mother; the Earth's off-ſpring, beeing raiſed out of the duſt thereof; it is a fraile Veſſell, full of cracks, of flawes, and of holes, vncapable of containing any thing in it, that is of any moment or worth. Fauour hath indeuoured to mend this broken Bucket, and to ſtop the Leakes thereof with clouts and with rags; and putting therevnto the rope of priuate intereſt, now they draw vp water with it, and it ſeemeth to bee very beneficiall and profitable vnto them. It is one of *Peter* the Taylors ſonnes, whoſe father,

(*a*) Coplas, ſon cartas que venden por las calles, y en las plaças los ciegos.

A Taylor would faine learne to write his name, or to make his firma or marke. And the reaſon why?

Honour, what kinde of thing it is?

Honour, compared to baſe perſons.

father, howſoeuer he got it, were it well, or were it ill, made a ſhift to leaue him ſomething to liue vpon. Or like vnto that other, who by ſtealing from others, got wherewithall to giue, and where-with to bribe, and ſuborne. Theſe are the men that are honoured now adaies, they ſpeake high language, and vtter arrogant words, and preſſe into all your great Aſſemblies, and principall meetings, as if they were the only men, and none but they. Theſe now take the vpper hand, ſit downe firſt, and take place of all men, whom heretofore you might haue ranked amongſt your Muletters, or ſcarce ſo good men as they.

Behold, how many good men haue with-drawne themſelues from the Court, and liue a priuate and retyred life at home? How many habits of *St. Iago, Calatraua,* & *Alcantara,* ſowne with white threed? How many of the ancient Nobilitie of *Zayn Caluo,* and *Nunno Raſura,* trodden vnder feet? *The more rich, the more honour.*

Tell me I pray, who is that that giues honour vnto ſome, and takes it from other ſome? Marry, it is more or leſſe wealth. O what a braue Canon is this, to qualifie a man? what an excellent Rector, what a learned Schoolemaſter? How diſcreetly doe they graduate a man, what a good examination doe they take, before they preferre any! Tell me once more I pray: What difference is there in their Obligation, between him that cõmeth fairely (as thou ſaidſt before) by an Office; and him that buyes an Office, whoſe money only (without any other merit) hath inthroned him in the *Sancta Sanctorum* of the world? Whence comes it to paſſe, that the man that is diſcreet, noble, vertuous, well deſcended, of a ſound and ſober iudgement, long practice, & more experience, a true Maſter of his Art, ſhould (by being depriued of his due preferment,) remaine poore and needy, ſhut vp in a corner, excluded from buſineſſe, afflicted, and peraduenture inforced to derogate from his owne worth, and to doe that which is not agreeable to his diſpoſition, that he may auoid the incurring of a worſe inconheuience? Thou haſt put too hard a taske vpon me, conſidering that ſlender ſatisfaction, that I am able to giue thee: But I ſhall tell thee, according to my talent, aud as the poorenеſſe of my vnderſtanding ſhall giue me leaue.

When I conſider thereon, as a thing properly appertaining vnto God (whoſe iudgements are inſcrutable, and hidden both from men and Angels) I ſhall not inter-meddle, or ſtraine my ſelfe any further therin, then the ſhortnes of my apprehenſion ſhall be able to reach vnto. Which is; That he very well knoweth, how to proportion his gifts, and to giue vnto euery one ſo much as is needfull for him, for his ſaluation. And therefore when a man ſhall faile of ſuch or ſuch an Office, or miſſe ſuch or ſuch a preferment, God ſaw it was not ſo fitting for him, for cauſes beſt knowne vnto himſelfe, or for that hee fore-knew that it would be a meanes to worke his condemnation, whom he is willing to ſaue, becauſe he hath predeſtinated him to a better place. *Gods ſecrets concealed from man.*

And this is as much as can be ſaid concerning him, who doth not obtaine that, which he deſerueth. But for that Fauorite, or perſon of Power with his Prince, that ſhall either be a blocke in this mans way, or ſtrippe him of the Office that he worthily holdeth, who is not a Iudge of the inward intentions, nor of the hearts of men, neither is able to examine them; but muſt goe vpon truſt, and make his iudgement by externall and outward things, (which he can only ſee and know) doth often-times tread awry, and peruert and wreſt things to an ill ſenſe: If it may be lawfull for vs to ſpeake in a ruſticall phraſe; applying the language of heauen, to that here on earth, I ſay, that vpon the margent of this great mans Account, God doth (as we vſe here to doe, when we will marke a thing the better, and looke more narrowly into it) ſhut one of his eies, to make his ſight the ſurer, when he mindes to hit the marke hee aimes at. I ſay then: I wil demand of theſe men, what cauſe they had to do this wrong, knowing that my threatnings are out againſt them? O ye Iudges

of the earth, becauſe ye haue iudged vnrighteouſly, I haue prepared for you a hard and inſufferable puniſhment : I will reſide in the Synagogue of the gods, and I will iudge them. O, what a griefe is it, how many thouſands of pitties, that theſe men (knowing this to be true) will aduenture to come before that vpright and true Iudge, when the Accuſation is certaine, which is brought in to condemne them; and the reſtitution now wanting, which they ought to make; without the which, their ſinne cannot be forgiuen them; and yet would not, when time ſerued, take order to make amendment for ſo foule a fault!

True it is, that peraduenture there were not ſome wanting, that would whiſper them in the eare, and ſay; Sir, you may doe this very well, and not ſinne, it is not a thing that ought to trouble your conſcience, you did well, (which is no more then euery wiſe man would doe, were he in your place) in beſtowing this Office, on that kinſman, that acquaintance, that friend, or ſeruant of yours, which are neereſt vnto you. But (to ſpeake the truth) thou couldſt not doe it; for thou didſt remoue it from it's right place, and put it into that, which was vnfit, and improper for it. Looke ouer thy Cardes a little better, thinke well on this buſineſſe, and then thou wilt tell me (my friend) that it was an errour in thee, and that thou couldſt not doe it; And becauſe thou couldſt not doe it, thou didſt ſinne; And becauſe thou didſt ſinne, it was not well done. Doe not liſten to the words of fooles, nor of flatterers, in a thing that concernes thee ſo much as this doth: it were better for thee, that thou wouldſt gird vp thy loynes, and looke vnto that which may doe thee hurt, and ſeeke in time to preuent it, leſt the remedie come too late. For there are ſome Confeſſors, that will giue large Abſolutions, who are like vnto Taylours, who will tell thee, that the garment which they haue made for thee, fits thee very well; but thou knoweſt better then they, whether it wring thee or no, whether it be too ſtreight, and vneaſie for thee, and how it ſitteth to thy body. And God doth permit, becauſe thou didſt not ſeeke after one (whileſt thou waſt liuing, and in place of authoritie) that ſhould tell thee the truth; at the time of thy death, when thou art in thy laſt agonie and anguiſh of ſoule, thou ſhalt not meet with that true friend, that ſhall then tell it thee, but rather ſooth thee vp to thy condemnation. Looke about with thine eies, open wide thine eares, and ſuffer not theſe buſie Bees of Satan, to put honie into them, nor there to ſwarme and in-hiue themſelues. For theſe their ſweet words will but leade thee on in the high and ready way to damnation.

But to returne againe vnto theſe kinde of men, in reſpect of God, I doubt not of their puniſhment; And in regard of man, I muſt plainely tell thee, that they open the doore to murmuration, and giue occaſion to the people, to ſpeake thereof in publike, not ſticking to vtter (as I ſaid before) thoſe ends which I thought ſhould haue beene kept ſecret; taking pittie and compaſſion of ſo many merits, ſo ill rewarded; and of ſo diſ-proportionable an Exchange as this, in ſeeing the euill, by euill meanes, to be in higheſt eſteeme: and the good, by reaſon of their goodneſſe, to be excluded, and ſhut out of all. But I can aſſure you, that God hath numbred all the haires of their head, and will not ſuffer one of them to fall to the ground. Though men therefore may chance to faile them, yet let them comfort themſelues with this, that they haue a good God to friend, that will neuer forſake them. This is the World, and thus things goe.

I therefore will neither haue Empire, nor Dignitie; I will not haue Honour, I will not ſo much as once looke vpon it. Keepe thy ſelfe as thou art, (*Guzman:*) continue (my honeſt friend) the ſame man ſtill. Let others (a Gods name) be the Councell of the Common-wealth, the Oracles of the State; let them neuer thinke vpon thee; Enter not into that place, whence thou

thou canſt not get out, when thou wouldſt: Doe not put thy ſelfe into that danger, which may bring a continuall feare with it; Deſire not to haue too much, leſt it chance to be taken from thee; nor too little, leſt thou bee driuen to beg; Doe not pretend any thing by way of flatterie: Doe not intangle thy ſelfe in many buſineſſes, leſt they ſhould diſquiet thee: Seeke to be the Vſufructuarie, and free inioyer of thy life, that by vſing of it well, thou maiſt liue ſafe in thy eſtate. Why ſhouldſt thou keepe a ſtirre, and trouble thy ſelfe for that, which to morrow is to be no more, and when it is at the moſt, is of no long continuance? What doeſt thou, or any man elſe know, is become of the *Mayor-Domo* to King *Don Pelayo*, or of the Chamberlain to *Conde Fernan Gonçales?* They had honour, and they held it, but neither of them, nor that, is any memory remaining. So ſhalt thou the next day be forgotten, as if thou hadſt neuer beene at all. Why then is there ſo much greedineſſe, ſo much thirſt, and ſo much coile; one for his belly, (for to ſo great a Vanitie are wee now growne, that to eate and waſte much, is held no ſmall reputation) another for his backe, and a third for honour?

No, no, theſe things are not for thee, and if thou offer to trouble thy thoughts with them, thou ſhalt not liue to be an old man, or elſe thou ſhalt be old before thy time. Leaue, leaue off, I ſay, the ſwelling pride of theſe huge Gyants, and thruſt them vp againſt the Walls; let them ſtand there, as Bugbeares to fright children, as being good for nothing elſe.

Cloath thy ſelfe in the winter, with that which may keepe thee Warme; and in the Summer, with that which may couer thee, not going too ſlouenly, nor too pompouſly, rather decently then richly; Eate no more then may ſuffice nature, preferring moderation before exceſſe, for whatſoeuer is more then neceſſary, is meerely ſuperfluous. For by it, neither the rich man liues, nor the poore man dies. But the diuerſitie and abundance of meates, is rather a diſeaſe then otherwiſe, breeding viſcous and ſlimy humours, whence ariſe grieuous ſickneſſes, and mortall Apoplexies.

Libertie, how pleaſant a thing it is.

Twice, thrice, nay foure times happy art thou, who riſeſt in the morning when thou wilt, and at what houre thy ſelfe liſteth, without once thinking of ſeruing, or being ſerued by any body; for although it be a trouble to haue a Maſter, it is alſo a trouble to haue a ſeruant, as you ſhall here by and by. At noone, feed freely, dine ſecurely, runne not vpon the ſcore with thy Cooke, nor be indebted to thy [a] *Diſpenſero*, ſend not for thy Coales from the Merchants Sellar, where they gather [b] wet and moiſture, in ſtead where of they will bring thee in duſt and ſtones, wherewith thou wilt be coozened; for there are more deceits in the world, then thou or any man elſe knowes, ſaue God alone. Seeke not to excell in brauerie, affect not too much neatnes, feare not euery ſpot that may fall vpon thy clothes, be not in loue with rich Imbroderies; be not too carefull to keepe, nor too fearefull to loſe. Bee not enuious nor ſuſpicious; Let no occaſion moue thee to lie; Doe not purchaſe preferment by vndermining of others, nor worke not another mans Ruine, to worke thy ſelfe into fauour. Thinke it fitter for thee to goe alone, then accompanied; a quicke, then a ſlow pace: rather laughing then weeping; eating then dancing; without being noted by any. That is the beſt Tauerne to thee, where thou meetſt with the beſt Wine: And that the beſt Cookes ſhop, where thou lighteſt on the beſt morſell: In the Market place, thou maiſt make choice of the beſt ſeat, and ſo thou maiſt the like at all publike Feaſts. In the Winter, get thee into the Sunne, in the Summer into the ſhade. Thou maiſt couer thy Boord according to thine owne minde: thou maiſt make thy Bed, according to thine owne liking; without paying one pennie either for the making or ſtanding of it: And maiſt chooſe, whether any man ſhall ſee thee, diſquiet thee, or contradict thee. Keepe thy ſelfe aloofe from Law-buſineſſes: liue a ſtranger to Sutes & Actions: free thy ſelfe from falſe Witneſſes, for feare they

[a] *A Cater, that makes proviſion for victuals.*

[b] *In Spaine they ſell their coales by the pound.*

they ſhould part thy goods amongſt them, and become maſters of all that thou haſt. Let no man be able to aske thee a penny; keepe thy ſelfe ſafe from Decrees; Beware how, and whom you truſt, and vpon what termes: but aboue all, (which will be no ſmall glory vnto thee) take heed, how thou becom'ſt a ſurety for any man. Giue no cauſe to haue any executions come out againſt thee; nor thou to doe the like againſt others: Shunne all contentions and debates, and all manner of ſuites in Law. Laſt of all, reſt thou ſatisfied and contented, ſo that nothing may oppreſſe thee, nor breake thy ſleepe, that thou maiſt riſe betimes in the morning to thinke vpon thoſe things that may turne to thy good, by reforming what is amiſſe.

The poore man may, ordering himſelfe well, liue happely.

All men can not doe all that they would; yet our good God is not forgetfull of the poore, hauing opened a way vnto him, whereby he may liue contented; not giuing him more cold, then his body is able to beare, ſuting his cõſtitution, according to his cloathes; ſo that he may paſſe in this world, as well as the rich, if he will but order and gouerne himſelfe aright. But this life is not made alike for all men: And vndoubtedly, the firſt inuenter muſt be a moſt famous Philoſopher; for ſo happy a repoſedneſſe, is to bee ſuppoſed to haue it's beginning from ſome ſingular wit. And to ſpeake truely, that which is not ſo, coſteth much trouble. And thoſe that doe not ſo paſſe through this life, are the men that ſuffer, and pay for all:

Walking through this world with many diſturbances, contentions, and moleſtations; flattering, idolatrizing, carrying things away with a ſtrong hand, plotting of tricks, violently haling by the haire, that, which neither ought to be ſuffered, nor is fit to be effected, or any way in the world to bee borne withall; ſhutting their eyes all this while againſt that, which it concernes them to ſee; but are very ſharpe-ſighted in looking to their profit, nothing ſhall paſſe by them then: They are *Linxes*, and Eagle-ey'd, when their prey is before them, though it were better for them in theſe things, to bee as blind as the Beetle, or the Mole: For then they begin to lay their Nets, to pitch their Hayes, fall a ſetting of Lime-twigges, watching how to put themſelues forward, by making of Pit-fals, wherein tô intrap men, thinking to raiſe themſelues, by the fall of others. For they doubt not of their owne comming forward, if they can but once come to thruſt others backe. Vanity of Vanities, and nothing but Vanity.

What a troubleſome thing Honour is?

O what a grieuous thing is it, that a man ſhould ſuffer ſuch a number of calamities, and for no other end onely, but to vphold his frayle and vnfortunate honour from falling? And he that thinkes he hath ſureſt poſſeſsion of it, liues but with ſo much the greater care to repayre and maintaine it. I returned againe and againe to conſider thereon, neuer ceaſing, nor neuer inough ſatisfied with the repeating of this ſaying: Happy, thrice happy thou, who haſt wrapt Honour in a Coffin of Lead, and with ſtrong cords, tying heauy ſtones therevnto, haſt buried it in the Sea, whence it may neuer riſe vp any more, nor appeare vnto the world.

Bad ſeruants, what a bane they are to a houſe.

I likewiſe beganne to thinke with my ſelfe, what a hurtfull thing in a Family, is a villanous, an vngratefull, a coozening, and a lying ſeruant: whereof now a-dayes, the world is too full. And if we ſhall briefely decipher forth vnto you ſuch a manner of ſeruant, you ſhall finde him to be a Foole; a Slouen; a careleſſe Companion; idle, lazie; a bagge, fill'd with nothing but malice, and roguery; a Funnell, to powre in all manner of diſcord, and diſſention; full of prattle, vpon euery ſlight occaſion; and dumbe, in thoſe things, that are of any moment; ignorant, in ſpeaking; and impudent, in grumbling.

The wickedneſſe of women-ſeruants, and their qualities.

Shall I character forth vnto you a Maid-ſeruant, or a Nurſe, that will ſerue for any thing? You ſhall haue her ſluttiſh, theeuiſh; with a Brother, a Parent, or a Kinſman, euer and anon asking for her, troubling thy houſe with

dayly

dayly visits; for, and with whom, she returnes so many nights, euery weeke, by retayle; diuiding that time amongst them in parcels, which shee should lay out in the grosse in thy seruice; deuoted onely to the loue and seruice of her Sweet-heart: earnestly desiring to see her selfe made Mistresse of a Mantle: shee will looke for good maintenance, and be her wages neuer so good, that proportion will not serue the turne, but as she sees occasion, she will still bee grating more and more vpon thee: And you must ouer and besides, allow her her wine into the bargaine, because forsooth her stomake is weake, and cannot digest her meat without it. If wee will but looke out into the street, which way so euer we turne our eye, we see euery thing want some-what in the fineness of it's Loy and true touch, all is false, and without law, nothing that is perfect, neither in weight, nor in measure.

Falsehood in selling of wares.

And that this is true, looke into your Shambles, your Hucksters, and other shops of retayle in the Market-place; and then you will tell mee what a deale of coozenage they vse in the venting of their wares, and with what gainefull cunning they vtter their commodities. Besides, to what desperation doth a false, or corrupted *Notary* driue a man vnto? Against whom, euen truth it selfe hath not the power to preuaile. For the Stemme onely of his Quill, and the very nib of his Pen, is more dangerous against whom it is bent, then a strong-steeled Launce, or a Canon of Brasse, with all his batteries.

Against Notaries, Scriueners, &c.

What thinke you of a lying Attourney? a wrangling Lawyer? Both men of an euill conscience, full of tricks and of quillets, skilfull in deceiuing, cunning in plotting, and aboue all, wonderfull louers of delayes, making it their maine study to put off and prolong suites, that they may licke their own fingers, and fill their hungry bellies, at other mens cost.

Against Attourneys & Lawiers.

What say you, to an obstinate and head-strong Iudge? one of those ignorant wilfull ones, who will not sticke perhaps to say of himselfe; I vnderstand my selfe well inough; I know what I speake; nor will I bee taught what to doe. When indeed, he neither vnderstandeth, nor knoweth, nor doth any thing that is fit, nor is well vnderstood by others. At the first, hee seemed milde and gentle (before hee was warme in his Office) like a Bull amidst a Heard of Cowes; but when he came forth, he appeared fierce, and full of rage, as if he had been stucke with darts, and his bloud drawne from him. He wore a garment, which for the shaping of it into fashion, setting the pieces handsomely together, and to make it fit for wearing, had need of more then a thousand Scedules, and as many Passe-ports, as also the thread of *Theseus*; for it is a Labyrinth to enter into. O with what hunger is he affected! he thinkes hee shall neuer be full inough. So that I must say, nothing escaped his hand, were it little or great; the bare fell, or the whole Fleece. I found he offended in all: In this by an I; in that, by a No: In some things; by doing, in some things by not doing: Offending, not only in matters of Omission, but in sinnes of Commission. Who, like the Lyoness, can with lowd roarings put life into these little Whelpes, (these dead truthes) to the end, that by taking breath, some remedy might be had?

Against Iudges.

Let vs runne through all occupations; Looke I pray into your Taylor, with whom it is now growne to a custome, that you must pay something to the setting vp of their (*a*) Signe, else your worke shall ne're be made an end of; or if it be, it shall be spoyled in the making, or they will filch so much of your stuffe from you, as shall lessen you Coat, and inlarge their Vailes.

Against Taylors.

Your, Mason, your Smith, your Carpenter, and all other Trades-men whatsoeuer, none excepted, doe all steale, all lye, all coozen: none of them deales truely, no not one. And which is worst of all, they take a glory therein, and thinke themselues, in so doing, to be iolly wise fellowes, and Masters of their craft; holding those that deale more honestly (if there be any such) to be simple men, and poore seely fooles, that want wit.

(a) The Spanish word is Pendon. *And so it may signifie something giuen to the Corporation.*

Against, Masons, Smithes, Carpenters, &c.

Let

Against Apothecaries.

Let vs looke a little backe, and ſee, if we ſhall not finde an Apothecarie in a blind corner, who becauſe he will not be ſaid to ſay I haue not ſuch a thing, or ſo, nor diſcredit his ſhop; will not ſtick to giue you contrary Syrrops, counterfet Oyles, falſify'd Waters; you ſhall not finde one Drugge that is of true and perfect goodnes, or any Compound made according vnto the rules of Art; they mingle, baptize, and make confections (according to their owne liking) of differing qualities, and diuers effects, thinking (in their poore diſcretion) that there is but little difference betwixt the one and the other, though it bee contrary to all truth and reaſon. And thus doe they kill many a man, making of their Boxes, and their Vyals, Dags and Piſtols; and of their Pils, Pellets; wherewith (as with ſo many Bullets) they lay vs dead on the ground.

Against Doctors of Phyſicke.

But you will ſay, Maſter Doctor ouer-ſees him, and that there is not an ingredient, but carries his eye, and direction with it, and therefore the danger is ſo much the leſſe.

True: But if you doe not fee him well, he forgoes the cure; and if you doe fee him well, hee prolongs it: And ſo by this meanes, ſome, nay, many times, his ſicke Patient miſ-carries, and is ſent vntimely to his graue.

And it is a thing worthy the noting, that Lawes being the Daughters of Reaſon, if you put a Caſe to a Lawyer, or aske his opinion, hee ſtudies it, and will not reſolue you, till he haue well and truely conſidered thereon, becauſe it is a matter of goods, or of Land, which may concerne a mans making, or marring.

But your Phyſician, no ſooner comes in to viſit you, but preſently by the touch of your Pulſe, as ſoone as euer his finger hath felt it, hee inſtantly knowes your diſeaſe, though it be vtterly vnknowne vnto him, and remoued as farre from his vnderſtanding, as earth, from heauen. And then, (that hee may not betray this his ignorance) hee forthwith preſcribes, and applyes ſuch remedies vnto you, as are more truely meanes to bring you to your laſt home, then to reſtore you to health. Shall it not bee fit (if that *Aphoriſme* of theirs bee true) that life is ſhort, the Art long, experience deceitfull, and the iudgement hard and difficult, to goe on by little and little, as it were by degrees, till they bee thorowly entred thereinto, and become Maſters of that which they would willingly cure, by ſtudying that which they ought to doe therein? To treat of this, would aske a long diſcourſe. All goes topſie-turuy; all Kim, Kam; all, is tricks and deuices; all Riddles and vnknowne Myſteries; you ſhall not finde man, with man; we all liue in ambuſh, lying in wait one for another, as the Cat, for the Mouſe, or the Spider for the Fly; who roming careleſſely vp and downe, ſuffers her ſelfe to be taken by a ſlender thread, whileſt that venemous vermine, ſeazing on her head, holds her faſt, neuer leauing her, till ſhee hath kill'd her with her poiſon.

CHAPTER V.

How Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cookes ſeruice, and with faire Sentences, and good Leſſons, ſheweth, what he ſhould be that ſerueth. He blameth gaming, and Gamſters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of* Deſpenſero's, *Cookes, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abuſed by their ſeruants. Of Kings, and their miſerable condition. Of the vanitie of Inferiours, conteſting with their Superiours. He condemneth thoſe Maſters, that ill intreate their ſeruants: And how they ought to carrie themſelues towards them.*

I Found my ſelfe free from all theſe things, as ſubiect to none of them, except infirmitie, and ſickneſſe. In regard whereof, I had a determination, to haue put my ſelfe into an Hoſpitall. I inioyed a free and flouriſhing kinde of liberty, praiſed by the wiſe, deſired of many, and ſo much applauded and re-applauded by the Poets. To whoſe true valuation, all the gold and riches of the earth, are not to bee compared, as things of to poore and meane a price. I had it once, but had not the wit to keepe it. For it being my courſe of life (as a thing whereunto I was accuſtomed) to play the Porter, and carry burthens, and being now as well truſted, as I was knowne, all my care was, to come acquainted with ſome one falſe Cater or other (Gods curſe and mine goe with him) that was the Purſer, Diſburſer, Diſtributer or Steward, or by what other ſtile or Title, in that kinde you ſhall call him. This *Deſpenſero*, or Cater (as you pleaſe) had a good confidence in me, truſted me very farre, and would often ſend me away alone by my ſelfe, to carry thoſe things home to his houſe, which he had bought in the Market. This my continued Conuerſation and daily commercement with him, did (which it ſhould not haue done) procure his good liking, and loue towards me; Inſomuch, that he remoued me from that Office, and preferred me to be Scullion of the Kitchen, which was as much as my ambition could then reach vnto.

Libertie, a great iewell.

Guzman, a Porter, or Basket-bearer.

Hee would often-times tell me, (and one day amongſt the reſt, and I remember it was in the morning; he made me a long Oration, flouriſhed ouer with a great many of faire Promiſes, ſo that by climing from one round to another, I began to conceiue with my ſelfe, that I ſhould come at laſt to be a * *Corregidor* at leaſt.) That if I would apply my ſelfe to that Office, and take paines therein, behauing my ſelfe well and honeſtly, when I was growne fit and perfect, he would be a meanes to place me in Court, and put me into the Kings ſeruice; where when I had ſeru'd ſo many yeeres in the Kitchen, I ſhould be well rewarded, and might afterwards liue richly of my ſelfe, and be mine owne man.

O how quickly did this vaine blaſt puffe vp my emptie Pate; This giddy-winde mill of mine was ſet aworke, and turnd quite round with the breath of his words. The aduenture I ſaw was ſmall, and the gaine might be great.

Well, he brought me to the Cooke my maſter (we being well knowne to each other.) When I came thither, (as if it had beene the firſt time that wee had ſeene one another) he ſpake to me in a proud commanding manner. How now (*Sennor* ſeruy-clothes) what winde draue you hither? What make you here, goodman Shag-rag,) you *Cauallero de* * *Illeſcas*? Haue you any buſineſſe here? or doe you come to abide with me? Sure I was ill aduiſed; for when I ſaw he began in ſo high a key, I was about to ſhew him my backe, and to leaue him to himſelfe, and his flie; (for Summer was now fully in.) I ſtarted, and ſtood as one aſtonied, not knowing what anſwer to make him, but when I ſaw there was no remedie, I replide; yes Sir. Come your wayes then (quoth he) in

* *A Ruler or Gouernour of a City, or Towne.*

* Illeſcas, *is a certaine Towne neere vnto* Toledo. *King* Don Alonſo. *Anno Domini.* 1176. *made a Donation thereof to the Church of* Toledo. *But it is now reuerted againe to the Crowne.* Illeſcas *is an Arabicke word, and ſignifies, laſciuious & diſhoneſt loue.* Cauallero de Illeſcas, *is a word vſed in ſcorne.*

Couarruuias.

Guzman goes to serue a Cooke. The dutie of a seruant. Guzman his readinesse in seruing his Master.

in with me; And if thou dost thy dutie (said he) and shalt deserue well at my hands, thou shalt not lose thy labour.

I told him, I was very well assured, that in seruing his Worshipp, I might gaine by the bargaine, but lose nothing, because I had nothing to lose. Then he ask'd me; Doe you know (sirrah) what you are to doe? All that (I mildly replide) that you shall be pleased to command me; or my selfe either know, or am able to performe. For he that sets himselfe to serue, must not refuse (when need is) to doe any thing, but that which more properly belongs to the dutie of his place, he ought cheerefully to vndergoe it; and to applie himselfe as well to the one as the other.

He seemed to like well both of my speech and vnderstanding; and I hoping to be well rewarded, flew in like a Hawke for the prey. At my first comming, I behaued my selfe very respectfully towards him, and serued him as punctually as I could; and he againe made much of me, and vs'd me as kindly as heart could wish. But I did not only seeke to please my Master (who was a married man) and his wife my Mistris, euen in the meanest seruices, seruing them in all things else besides, both in Towne and Countrie, at home and abroad; taking vpon me the Office both of Man-seruant and Maid-seruant, (saue only that I had neuer a Gowne to put on, nor a Mantle to couer me withall, to waite vpon my Mistris when she went abroad;) But for all other seruices of the house, as sweeping, rubbing, scowring, setting the Pot ouer the fire, dressing of meate, making of Beds, laying the (b) *Estrado* in order, smoothing and plaining it, that not a wrinckle was to be seene, and other the like seruices were my ordinary exercise; (And for that I was the only man, all this was committed to my charge:) But I laboured besides to giue good contentment to all the rest of my Masters seruants. So that my heeles were as nimble to runne vpon the least boyes errand in the house, as the Stewards, the Pages, as the *Mayor-Domos*; for him that rub'd the Horses heeles, as for him that was Vsher of the Hall. One would haue me to buy such and such necessaries for him; another, that I would brush, and make cleane his clothes; This man, that I would get his band washt and starcht for him; that, that I would carrie some * prouision home to his wife; A third, to his Wench. And all this I did without grumbling, or muttring, or any the least vnwillingnesse in the world. I was neuer any Tale-carrier nor sower of sedition; nor did I euer discouer any secret, or report againe what I had heard, though it were not deliuered vnder the seale of Silence vnto me, or that the relators had laid their finger on my mouth. For I was not so ill bred, but that I knew very well, what, and when it was lawfull for me to speake, and when to hold my peace. Hee therefore, (whosoeuer he be) that serues, must haue an especiall care to obserue these two things; VVherein if he faile, he will quickly ruine himselfe, by drawing all mens ill will vpon him, and making himselfe the most hated man in the world. VVhereas nothing doth more recommend a man, then a faire carriage, and a faithfull heart. When I was chidden, I neuer replide: and made it my studie, to giue them as little cause as I could, to finde fault with me. I would not willingly haue any mans displeasure; And all my care was, to doe what I was commanded. And when there was need of my seruice, or that my helping hand might doe any good, I was seldome or neuer wanting; I was *Jacke* at a pinch, I was here, and there, and euery where. And albeit these diligences of mine cost me a great deale of labour and painestaking, yet I lost nothing by it; for the good commendations that they gaue mee, and the kinde words that they spake of me behinde my backe, and the hopes that I had to be well rewarded, when time should serue, seemed to me a sufficient paiment, and I was well contented therewith.

b Estrado, *is a kinde of halfe pace, couered with Turkie Carpets, and furnished with faire long Cushions, whereon your great Ladies and Gentlewomen sit, when they receiue any* Visits. *But now adayes, your ordinary women in* Spaine *are growne into this fashion, taking more state vpon them, then suites with their conditions.*

* *The Spanish word is,* Raçion, *i.* rata portio; *a set allowance.*

A silent tongue, and a true heart, did neuer hurt any seruant.

The good vsage of the Master is a spurre to the seruant.

Good vsage, is a great heartening to him that serueth: It is the spurre which pricks on the Will, and makes it goe forward; it is the finger, that beckens

beckens our affections, it is the Lure, that calls our desires, it is a Charriot, wherein our forces (like strong Iades) draw on without wearinesse, and tugg, stoutly thorow thicke and thinne; it is good seruing of some men, and they deserue to haue seruice done them *Gratis*; And there are some men againe, that a man would not serue for any money. But of all others, I disclaime that Master as vnworthy to bee waighted on, that will neither giue his seruant good wages, nor good words. Kinde vsage will make a man worke out his heart, but high language and poore paiment, will kill any spirit liuing, and make a seruant grow neglectfull, if not weary of his Masters seruice.

The commendation of a roguish life.

Then might I affirme, that leauing my roguish kinde of life, this *Picardia* of mine, (as a Queene, whose name I am not worthy to take in my mouth, and whereunto any other politicke course of life is not to be compared) all the brauerie and gallantrie of the curious method of liuing happily, and passing well away the time, which the world solemnizeth so much, must yeeld, and giue place thereunto. But this, (though accompanied with much care) was exceeding good, good in the highest degree, for such a one (I meane) as my selfe, who had beene daintily bred vp in the midst of delights. So that me thought, I was in a manner reduced and brought backe againe to my old bias, and naturall course of life, as farre as it concernd the Bucolicks: for my (c) *Bocados* were of another kinde of qualitie and relliſh, then those of the *Bodegon*, or a Pie-corner Tripe-wiues shop; they were otherwise drest, otherwise season'd. And in this, those of *St. Gil*, (d) *Santo Domingo*, *Puerta del Sol*, *Placa Mayor*, and *Calle de Toledo*, must pardon me, and hold me excused; howbeit I cannot denie, but that their Liuer-slices, and their rashers on the coales, ran still in my head, and were hard things for me to forget.

(c) *The morsels I did eate.*

(d) *The principall victualing places in Madrid, and what poore kinde of things they be.*

I did nothing, were it neuer so small a thing, neuer so little, for the which I had not something. All did giue me one thing or other; one a (e) *Tarja*, which is a matter of pennie halfe-pennie, another a Royall, a third a Doublet, a fourth an old Iacket to couer this poore flesh of mine: I did not goe so like a tattred Rogue as I did before; my meales were sure and certaine; and though I had not had any other thing to sustaine my selfe withall, I might haue liu'd very well vpon the skimmings of the pot, and vpon the triall of my taste, by essaying whether my boild meates were sod enough, and so likewise for my roste, reseruing still mine owne allowance whole and intire, I had no need to touch vpon that that I made profit of. This good did me much hurt, as also did my Gaming, which I had learned in my looser daies; For looke whatsoeuer I got by meanes of my Place, for that I had no houses to repaire, nor rents to buy in, I plaid it all away. So that I may very well say, My good did me hurt. For, see how much increase it bringeth to the good, (because they know how to turne it to their best benefit;) so it worketh as much hurt in the bad, for (when they fall once a losing what they haue got) they lose a great deale more with it, it being with them, as it is with your venemous beasts; who draw poison from that, from which your Bees sucke honie.

(e) Quædam moneta Hispanica, valoris 9. Marauedis, sic dicta, ab Tarja; i. scuti similitudinem, quam habet.

A piece of three halfe-pence.

Gaming, a hurtfull thing.

Goodnesse is like vnto your sweet Waters, which if they be kept in cleane Vessels, grow still the better, but in bad, are straightway corrupted, and quite spoiled. I was a learned Doctor in that Science, but yet I consumed my Estate in following that Trade. Within a few daies, I grew a refined Gamester, and could play well with my hands too, I had learned to filch and steale finely, which was the worse Occupation of the two. Gaming, is a terrible vice; And as all Riuers haue recourse vnto the Sea; So is there not that vice, which is not to be found in a Gamester. He neuer does well, and alwaies thinkes ill. He neuer tels truth, but still lies; He hath no man to friend; Hee keepes no good quarter with his Kindred; He esteemes not his credit, but ouerthroweth the honour of his house; He leadeth a lewd life; Hee desires the death of his Parents; He sweares without cause; He blasphemes vpon euery little losse;

Goodnesse, what it is like vnto.

All manner of vices are in a Gamester.

loſſe. He neither feares God, nor regards his own ſoule. If he leeſe his money, he loſeth all ſhame to get it againe, and ſo he may haue it, hee cares not with what infamy; He liues gaming, and he dyes gaming. In ſtead of a holy Taper, he holds a pack of Cards in his hand, as one that is reſolu'd to loſe ſoule, life, and all that he hath at one dealing. I had very good experience hereof from others, but I ſpeake not that, which was told me by others, but what my ſelfe ſaw with mine owne eyes.

When my Vailes would not ſerue my turne, (that I might not want wherewithall to game) I would caſt mine eyes, like burning Torches, about the houſe, where, and out of what I might make my prouiſion. For thoſe things, that belong'd to the Kitchen, I could make purchaſe there in the turning of a hand, but euer had a care to doe it ſo handſomely, and to carry it ſo cleanely, that they might not haue the leaſt ſuſpition of me in the world. Many things which I ſtole, I hid in the ſelfe-ſame roome, where I found them, with purpoſe, (if they ſhould chance to ſuſpect mee) to pull them out in publike, gaining thereby credit to my ſelfe for after-times, vpon the like occaſion. And in caſe the ſuſpition fell vpon another, I preſently tooke hold vpon that aduantage; and putting it from my ſelfe, transferred it on him. Once I remember, I lighted on a happy encounter, which was this:

A pretty theft done by Guzman.

My Maſter on a time brought certaine friends of his home to his houſe, good-fellowes, ſworne brothers to *Bacchus*, Pylots for (a) *Guadalcana*, and (b) *Coca*, and he would needs for ſooth in kindneſſe beſtow a Beuer vpon them, all of them playd well vpon the Keyes of this Organ; the Iacks went vp liuely, but my Maſter he tickled it notably, hee was an excellent Muſician vpon a iarre of Wine: he was a braue bottle-banger, a ſingular toſſe-pot. Hee tooke me out of one of the cup-boords of his Ambry (which were euer ſtored with cold meates) a delicate piece of Bacon finely inter-larded, or (to ſpeake more properly) inter-laced with fat and leane, which look't as freſh and as ruddy, as the bloud of a Lambe, that is newly kill'd. The game growing now hot, and the Vyes ſeene on all ſides, they were all *thirty* (c) *apiece in Kings*, merry, rich, and contented: And with this new Shooing-horne to draw down their drinke, they fell a-freſh to their former play, drinking Healths Helter Skelter, till at laſt (and my Miſtris had her ſhare too, who did mince and gyg it in this round, with as much metall, and as nimbly, as the beſt dancer of them all) they grew ſo fine and ſo mellow, that you might haue ſtript them (like Rabbets) out of their Caſes, and left them ſtarke naked as euer they were borne, and yet they neuer haue knowne who had done them this harme. Their Peeces were ouercharged, the powder ſtrong, the charge too great; ſo that when the fire tooke them, the ſmoke and fume thereof flew vp to the higheſt part of all the chimney, wherewith the whole houſe was ſo ſhaken, that ſome fell downe flat, others reeled to and fro; ſome tript both in their tongue & feet; other were full of their gamboll-tricks, each man hauing his ſeuerall Poſture.

My Maſter & my Miſtreſſe (as one of the neighbours told me) ſcrambled (as well as they could) to bed, leauing all the doores of the houſe open, the Table vn-taken away, and the ſiluer Gobblet, wherein they drunke their Healths, tumbled downe on the ground, all which made much for the benefit of the Inuentorie.

I was by chance at that time in my Maſters Kitchen, ſcowring of the Panns and the Spits, pyling vp the wood, laying it handſomely together, and doing other things belonging to my office. When that taske was done, and I had made an end of all my worke, I got me to my lodging, and as I paſt along, I found all out of order, euery thing out of his proper place, all the doores open; the Cup that was falne downe on the floore, I fortunately ſtumbled on; it ſilently ſeeming to intreat me, that I would doe it the courteſie to take it vp. I ſtooped downe vnto it, to doe it that friendly office, looking in the meane while

(a) Guadalcana, *ſignifies* rio de la recreacion: *a Riuer of recreation.*

(b) Coca, *is a Drugge ſo called, wherewith Fiſhermen are wont to make the Fiſh drunke, and to turne vp their bellies vpon the water, as if they were dead.*

(c) A tryenta con-Rey, *is the Spaniſh word, which is a game at Cards common amongſt them.*

It is good ſticking at thirty, for feare of being out. Alluſiue. *A drunken Deſcription.*

while round about me, to see whether any mans eye were vpon mee, to spy what I was a doing; but when I saw the coast was cleere, that there was not any body liuing there-abouts, so that no man could detect me, I put it vp, and softly stole away. But I had scarce gone foure steps from the place, when my heart began to beat a false alarme.

Then I began to thinke with my selfe, whether I had heard any noise stirring either within or without the house, for I could not be too secure, and it did much concerne me, to haue a care to keepe my skinne whole, and not to indanger the losing of much, for the gaining of a little, and so in the end get a whipping by the bargaine. I got me in, I called twice or thrice vpon this, then that man, but not a word of answere that I had from any of them.

I went to my Masters bed-chamber, where I found him and his Wife in that case, that they seemed to be dead, and sure they were little better, for they were deepely buried in Wine.

The snores and snorts that came from them, and other the like puffings and blowings, which they breathed forth, made me to imagine, that I had beene newly entred into some famous drinking-schoole. I had a great mind to haue bound them with some whip-cord by the feet to the bed-post, and to haue playd the knaue with them in that manner, to haue made a little sport with them. But I did not like so well of that iest, a greater businesse was now in hand, and I thought it the better iest of the two, to content my selfe vvith that siluer piece of Plate: Whereupon, I made safe worke with that. And hauing now secured this theft, away went I back againe to the Kitchen, where I found worke inough to doe till it was night, about which time my Master came thither, terribly pained in his belly, & his temples. And finding there but one only fire-brand lying on the Harth, he would needs cudgell my coat therewith, scolding & railing at me, telling me that I wasted too much wood, and that I would neuer leaue, till I had fired his house. That night, was not a night of profit; it was worth nothing vnto me; yet I supply'd (as well as I could) what was wanting, and couering my Masters defect, supper was made readie, and orderly serued in, which being ended, and all things done that should be done, we went to bed. But I found my Mistris in an ill taking, her countenance sad and heauy; her eyes cast downe to the ground, and full of teares, her heart swolne with griefe, all was out of tune with her, and not so much as one word, that came from her, till my Master was gone to bed. And then I made bold to aske her, what was the matter that she was so melancholly. She answered, O my *Guzmanico*, (sonne of my soule) a great euill, a great misfortune hath befalne me, wretched woman that I am, curst was that houre, wherein I vvas borne, and in an vnlucky time did my mother bring me forth. By this time I knew where her shoo did wring her; My pocket was her Pothecaries shop. There lay the restoratiue: And my good will had been the best Physician, she could haue gotten for her griefe. But all her pittifull complaints, and whatsoeuer else might worke compassion, being all put together, could not moue me awhit. For I haue heard say; Let a woman weepe neuer so much, though she should seeme to weepe her heart out, there is no more pitie to be taken of her, then to see a goose goe bare-foote. All her lamentations, her wringing of her hands, and other her demonstrations of her sorrow, could not stirre vp pitie in me, or take hold on the least haire of a fellow-kinde of feeling.

But feigning my selfe to be very sensible of her affliction, & that it grieu'd me much to see her so surprized with griefe, I began to comfort her, and to perswade her (al that I could) that her impatience might not force such words from her, as I heard her but now vtter, requesting her, that she would lay open the wound, and tell me what she ayld, and make mee a sharer in this her misery; promising (in all that little, that I was able to do) to doe as much for her, as I would for mine owne Mother. O sonne (quoth she) your Master (in

an ill houre) brought hither certaine of his friends to make merry this afternoone, and amongſt other things, my ſiluer Gobblet is wanting, and I know not in the world what to doe. What will thy Maſter ſay, or doe, when he ſhall know it? O he will kill me (ſonne of my bowels, mine owne deare child) he will kill me, that is the leaſt he can doe vnto me. And what I pray can he doe more, ſaid I with my ſelfe? Well, I put on a mourning-face, looke ſad, ſhewing how much I was diſpleaſed with this roguiſh dealing, and how much it did vexe me for her ſake. And then calling my wits together, I told her, that there was no other way in the world to ſalue this ſore, but that ſhe ſhould be ſtirring very early in the morning, and get her to the Gold-ſmiths, and buy another like vnto it, and then tell her Husband, that becauſe the ſiluer cup was old, and ſtained with many ſpots, ſhe had cauſ'd it to be new burniſh't ouer, and made as bright as it was the firſt day it was bought.

And by this meanes, this cloud, that threatens ſuch a foule ſtorme, will quickly be ouer-blowne, and all be faire weather againe with you.

I offred her withall, that if ſhe wanted money, ſhee ſhould make ſhift to take it vp vpon credit, ſhe ſhould haue my allowance and my Vailes, till all was paid, if ſhee did not finde meanes before of her owne to diſcharge the debt. She did with a great deale of thankefulneſſe entertaine what I had ſpoken, as well for my good counſels, as the ſpeedy remedy. But it ſeemed vnto her, that it would bee very vnfitting for her to goe from home, and that all alone, and ſo early in the morning, fearing leſt her Husband might chance to know it, who was very iealous of her, and would thinke, ſhee had gone a gadding to ſome worſer purpoſe. Wherevpon, ſhe intreated me of all Loues, euen for Gods ſake, that I would goe my ſelfe to ſee and I could get ſuch another as that was; and as for the money, ſhe had inough of her own ſtore to pay for it. This was e'ne as I would haue it, it hit as pat as a pudding to a Fryers mouth, I could not haue wiſht it to haue falne out better; for I had already begun to deuiſe and caſt with my ſelfe, to whom, or how I might ſell it, and what chapman I might beſt finde out to buy it of mee; for if they ſhould come to ſcanne my perſon, they might eaſily be induced to beleeue, that I had ſtolne it.

But this buſineſſe falling out ſo luckily, and all things ſorting ſo well with me, I went amongſt the Gold-ſmiths, & ſpake to one of them, that he would make cleane this plate, take out the ſtaines, and beat out the dents, for it had taken ſome knocks in the fall; I agreed with him for two Royals, for which price he finiſhed his worke, and made it looke as freſh and as new, as if it had beene newly bought out of the ſhop; I tooke my cup, and carried it home with me to my Miſtris, telling her, that I had met with this piece at the *puerta de (a) Guadaxara*, and that it amounted in weight to ſeuen and fifty Royals, and for the faſhion he would not abate a farthing of eight Royals.

(a) *A place ſo called in* Madrid.

All this ſeemed to her, as if it had been but one poore Blanke, conſidering the great deſire which ſhe had to be freed from that trouble wherein ſhe was. She told me out the money vpon a table, ſo that I ſold her her owne againe, as if it had not been the ſame, or that I had beene the man that had ſtolne it from her. Wherewith ſhe remained contented, and I ſatisfied. But lightly come, lightly gone: Two incounters carried it cleane away from me.

Theſe petty thefts of wit, I reckned as things of nothing, and occaſion taught me the way: Theſe were naturall vnto mee. But thoſe of permiſsion, and of greater moment, I took great care in the managing of them, when need did require: it was a common thing with me, to come neere to the Butchers chopping-blocke, where the portions allotted to euery man for their allowance, were cut out and diuided. I did diligently obſerue that which paſſed, I learned the trick of the finger, the bounding of the ballance, and al the tricks of weighing, & many would ſay, I weigh'd paſsing well, yet ſo for mine own aduantage, that euery mans part ſhould dayly come ſhort two ounces in weight.

Your Caters, your Cookes, and your Butlers, a company of cozening knaues.

The

The *Deſpenſero*, he would anſwer for himſelfe, that the fleſh did ſhrinke and drie away, and though he receiued full weight, and the Scales true, yet there could not chooſe but be ſome loſſe therein, by cutting it out afterwards into ſo many ſeuerall pieces for Commons, which might very well take vp a ſixt part. Your *Deſpenſero*, your Cooke, your Butler, your Purueyour, and moſt of all your Officers, they doe all of them filch and ſteale, and ſticke not to ſay, it is their Fees, and that it belongs of right vnto them, and this they ſo openly and impudently maintaine, as if they had the Kings Letters (*b*) Patents to ſhew for it.

(b) *The Spaniſh word is* Eſecutoria. i. el Inſtrumento y auto de lo determinado en juizio, por tres Sententias. Couarruuias. Ver. Eſec.

There was neuer yet any Kitchen-boy ſo fooliſh or ſo vnluckie, but that he would make a ſhift to meet with the giblets of your Geeſe, your Hens, and your Capons, with the hocks of a gammon of Bacon, your flaps, Kidnies, and fat of the ſhoulders and loines of Mutton, your Pigs-pettitoes, your Calues-feet, Liuars, Giſards, Sweet-breads, Sauces, Spices, Snow, Wine, Sugar, Oyle, Honie, Candles, Coles, and Wood, not ſparing the very Aſhes, nor any thing elſe, (were it Vineger, Muſtard, Annis-ſeede, Carrowaies,) from that which was moſt neceſſarie, euen to thoſe of ſmalleſt moment, which are daily ſpent in a great mans houſe.

When I came thither firſt, I confeſſe, there was no man would truſt mee farther then he ſaw me, they had no great confidence of me; but by little and little, I got into credit by degrees, firſt pleaſing this man, then contenting that man, and in fine, being willing to ſerue them all, in all that I was able: for he muſt haue a care to pleaſe all, that will haue all men to pleaſure him. To gaine friends, is a putting forth of money to Intereſt, and the ſowing of ſeed in a fruitfull ſoyle. A man ought to venture his life, for the keeping of a friend, and the ſpending of his wealth, for the vn-procuring of an enemie. For ſuch a one is a Sentinell, that ſees with a hundred eies; hee is like a Dragon, that ſtands vpon the Tower of his malice, to looke into our actions from afarre, and to watch vs a miſchiefe, if we doe amiſſe. It importeth much, not to haue an enemie, and he that hath, let him carrie himſelfe ſo towards him, as though he were by and by readie to become his friend.

He muſt doe, that will receiue a pleaſure.
Friends and foes, how to be kept, or auoyded.

Wouldſt thou know who this is? Behold his name, and thou ſhalt finde him to be all one with the Deuill, our mortall enemy, and both of them, to be one, and the ſelfe-ſame thing. Doe thou ſowe good workes, and thou ſhalt reape the fruit of them. For the firſt (whoſoeuer hee were) that did a benefit, wrought chaines therewith to impriſon noble ſpirits, and to binde their hearts vnto him in the bonds of loue. In thoſe things, wherein I might put my ſelfe forward, I was neuer ſlothfull; I did neuer giue way to any iuſt complaints to come againſt mee; nor was I euer giuen to faction, or to the raiſing of calumnies and euill reports vpon any; I did abhorre all colours of this nature, and aboue all, your ſcandalous and offenſiue perſons, whom wee properly compare vnto Sponges, who what they ſucke in one place, haue it wrung from them in another, if they doe not drop it out of themſelues, which is too vſuall with them. Such men as theſe, ſee thou truſt them not, ſhunne their fellowſhip, abhorre their company, though thou wert ſure to get by them. For in the end, thou ſhalt ſit downe with loſſe, and ſhame enough.

How a man ſhould behaue himſelfe towards his enemie.

Scandalous perſons, what they are like vnto?

A priuate houſe cannot ſuffer a greater calamitie; nor a Common-wealth a more contagious peſtilence, then theſe make-bates, theſe ſowers of diſcord, theſe Court-chamblets, that are ſprinkled ouer with holy water, whoſe gloſſe of words makes a very faire ſhew, but vnder that print (which is quickly gone) lies the deuill, and his foule deeds.

It was euer-more my chiefe ſtudie, to haue peace with all men, becauſe it is the daughter of *Humilitie*; And the humble minded man, that loueth peace, loueth, and is beloued of the Author thereof, which is God: if ill company had not done me harme, I had begun well, and gone on better; I had

Peace, the daughter of Humilitie.

had had wherewith-all to eate, to drinke, to laugh, and to bee merry, and might haue paſſed this carreere of my life with a great deale of content. Many times (when I had ended my buſineſſe) I would take a nap in the ſweetneſſe of that Sunne, which ſhew'd it ſelfe after dinner, and ſome-times I made my ſleepes by Moone-ſhine, remaining in the view of that faire light vntill the morning.

The Pages waggery with Guzman.

But when there was nothing to be done at home, your Lackies and Pages of the Court, being a company of Crack-ropes and notable Wags, would make me free of the frying-Pan, fright me with Snakes, hang on my back, & weigh me downe, crying, More ſackes to the Mill; If by chance they found me aſleepe, then would they clap a Flie made of Waxe vpon the inſtep of my ſhoo, and letting it burne there, till ſhoo and skinne were both ſcorched, and when I began to ſtir and ſtretch, then would their knauery breake forth, & cry, Fire, fire, fire. Other-while they would roll vp a Carde, or a piece of Paper, Tunnel-wiſe, & then ſetting it a fire, (blowing out the flame) they would put it directly vnder my noſe, till the pillars of ſmoake that aſcended to my noſtrils, had not only awak'd me, but almoſt choakt me. I remember they vs'd me ſo once in this manner, that I knew not in the world where I was, whether ſleeping, waking, ſtanding, or ſitting; I was eene mad, I had loſt my wits amongſt them; and if I had not beene held faſt, I had falne againſt one of the corner ſtones of the houſe, and daſht out my braines in a thouſand pieces: yet I tooke all patiently, neuer opened my mouth againſt them, pocketting theſe and many other the like wrongs, which I paſſed ouer.

All which I did, that by correcting my ſelfe, I might conſerue my ſelfe: chooſing rather to kill my choller, then choller ſhould kill me. *Proverb.* *Que el que todo lo quiere Vengar, preſtò quiere acabar.* Hee that will reuenge all wrongs, ſhall ſooner end himſelfe, then them. *Larga ſe deueder à mucho, ſi no ſe quiere viuir poco.* The man, that would liue long, muſt not be too ſhort. This cuttedneſſe, hath cut off many a mans life before his time. But by ſlighting of iniuries, and letting them quietly goe by, he that does them, growes in the end both wearie, and aſhamed; Whereas if thou ſhouldſt reſent them, and take them to heart, they would neuer leaue perſecuting thee, but be vexing thee ſtill more and more. For mine owne part, if I ſhould haue complain'd of theſe Wags, or but made any ſtirre in the buſineſſe, I am ſure they would haue made an Anatomie of me. I (poore Scullion) muſt haue turned *Skellidon*; There had beene no other way with me. Sometimes, to make triall of mee, they would lay baits for me, putting money in ſome ſuch place, where I could not chooſe but finde it; and then would they watch me, to ſee, whether I were light-fingerd or no, and had, the art of taking vp, and were in the number of thoſe that ſtill take vp, and ne're lay downe? But becauſe I knew their meaning, and had found out the tricke, that they would faine put vpon mee; I ſaid with my ſelfe, It will not ſerue your turne, *Proverb.* *A otro perro, con eſſe hueſſo*; I am too craftie a curre, to be taken with this bone; you muſt throw it out to ſome other dogge, you ſhall doe no good with it on mee: you haue miſt your marke (my Maſters) you haue leapt a little too ſhort, you ſhall not goe beyond mee, nor ſhall you make your ſelues merry with my miſeries, nor make merchandize of my credit, nor furniſh your (a) *Almoneda* with my infamies. Therefore, it ſhould reſt there for me; till he that had laid it there, ſhould come himſelfe and fetch it away. Still hauing an eie, that another ſhould not take it thence, leſt afterwards it might be ſaid, I was the man that did it.

(a) Almoneda, *is an open ſale at an Out-crie.* Guzmans *craft to preſerue his credit.*

Otherwhiles I would take it vp my ſelfe, and come and bring it to my Maſter and giue it him; hauing alwaies a great care to keepe my wounds cleane, and like a good Fencer, to come fairely off, without the leaſt Vennie or touch in the world: For to giue another man a cut in the legge, or a ſlaſh on the arme, and to receiue a home-thruſt, and full *Stocada* in his owne boſome,

ſome, ſhewes himſelfe to bee but a foole in his Science. I filcht and ſtole whatſoeuer came in my way, but ſtill carried it ſo cunningly, that no man could haue cauſe to ſuſpect me.

For thoſe things that appertained to my charge, I was wonderfull prompt and diligent, albeit my Maſter had beene careleſſe in willing me to doe this, or that; And when there was any worke to be done, I neuer ſtood looking, when my Maſter would bid me goe about it; I would ſaue him that labour. I was the formoſt of all my fellowes, when Birds were brought in, to fall to plucking of their feathers, to ſcowre the Spits, to make cleane the Veſſell, to ſweepe the houſe, to make, and blow the fire, without ſaying to another, Doe it you. For I did conſider with my ſelfe; that ſeeing I was not to take my pleaſure; nor to ſtand like a Loyterer, with my thumbes vnder my girdle; one was as much trouble to me as the other; And me thought, it was a fine kinde of deceiuing of the time; to doe that by faire meanes, which I muſt otherwiſe haue done perforce. And this made me indifferent (ſo as I were a doing) whether it were this worke, or that worke, all was one to me, ſince firſt or laſt, it muſt be done by one of vs.

Guzmans *diligence in doing his Office.*

I did euermore doe my vttermoſt indeuour, as farre as my abilitie and knowledge would lead me, reſeruing alwaies the *Decorum* due to my Office. I was euer in Action; I had ſcarce made an end of pulling my Birds, but I preſently runne me to the Morter, and fall a pounding of Sawces, ſome for my Boyld meates, ſome for my Roaſt; all my Iron Vtenſels about the Kitchin, as Spits, Andiornes, Tongs, Fire-ſhouell, Pot-hookes, and the like, I kept ſo neat and ſo cleere, that they lookt like ſo many Sword-blades, whereon the Cuttlers hand had ſet a delicate Glaſſe; my Pots and my Pans, why you might haue wiped them with a Cloake of Veluet; my Skimmers, my Ladles, and my fleſh-Hookes, were (like Barbers Looking-glaſſes) curiouſly kept in their Caſes, and hung vp vpon ſeuerall Nailes, as all things elſe that were of vſe, had their peculiar places appointed for them, that they might be ready ſtill at hand, when need ſhould ſerue, without being driuen to ſeeke for one thing in one corner, and another in another, bearing ſtill in my minde, how and where I had plaſt them.

In a word, euery thing had it's deputed place, with much diligence, and very good order. At my ſpare houres, when I had nothing to doe (which were likely in the Euening,) for then I was vſually moſt at leiſure; the Officers of the houſe would giue me their [a] Vailes, that I might goe abroad, and ſell them for them. I went with them to the Gate that belongs to the Shambles, which was our ſet place for that buſineſſe, whither came ſuch to buy, as had need thereof; Sometimes that which I brought, was good; ſometimes ſo ſo; and at other times, ſtinking and ſtarke naught. And all did ariſe out of that, which they call *Prouechos y Derechos*, Fees, and Duties, which is two, out of euery ten: a great deale better paiment I am ſure, then that of the [b] *Almoxarifaſgo* of *Seuilla*; Seldome or neuer were wanting vnto vs the *Menudillos* or entrailes of your Birds, the mammocks of Veale, Partridges and Hens, which were ſpoiled or loſt in the ſpitting or the roaſting, or had clung in the boiling to the Pots ſide, or falne in ſunder by being ouer-ſod; in the ſtripping and vncaſing of Rabbets and Conies, and the Lard beſtow'd vpon them, being bordered about, and imbroydered as it were with Bacon, like

[a] *The Spaniſh word is* Percances. *i.* Quicquid acquiritur à ſeruis præter Salarium. Dict: à perquirendo. *Your Officers in great houſes challenge their Fees, as a Tribute due vnto them.*
How the Cookes licke their owne fingers.

[b] Almoxarifaſgo, *comes of* Almozarife; *i.* Exactor portoriorum. *He that takes vp all the Kings rents vpon all merchandize, either imported, or exported. It is an Arabicke word, and ſignifies an Officer, that recouers all Rights and Duties, belonging to the King, bee it vpon Cuſtomes, Tenths, or payment of Rents. Father* Guadix *ſaies, this name by corruption, is borrowed from* Al-Muxuiph, *that is to ſay, a Teller, a Changer, a Banker, a Renter.* Diego de Vrrea, *That in it's Arabicke termination, it is learned* Muxerifun, *of the Verbe* Xerefe, *which ſignifies to ſee, to diſcouer. And ſo* Almoxarife *may be taken for a Seer or Diſcouerer. And the reaſon of it is, for that he ſees and diſcouers all the Merchandize that paſſeth to and fro, to recouer what is due to the King, and to let the other paſſe free. This in ancient time, was a generall name to all Treaſurers, till the daies of King* Alonſo 11. *who diſcarded it, becauſe it was Mooriſh, and changed the Title into* Teſorero generall. *i.* Lord high Treaſurer. Couarruuias.

vnto one of your Gabardines of *Sayago*, ſcarce leauing ſo much white as the bredth of my naile, through which their larding-Needles had not paſt. There were ſome other commodities, which being kept too long, before they came to be ſold, beganne to ſtinke; theſe they had a tricke to diſguiſe in that handſome manner, that they ſhould ſeeme to be freſh and ſweet. Euery one did ſet forth his own ware, as well as he could. I ſold likewiſe Neats-tongues, Hogs-cheeks, powdred peſſels of Porke, Engliſh Paſties of Veniſon, and pieces of Bacon, three fingers thicke of fat. Behold, what vndue duties, what vnprofitable profits, and what hurtfull and vngaineful gaines theſe were; things able to vndoe a Noble man, to make him waſte his Wealth, morgage his Lands, and ſell his Vaſſals.

I pity ye (poore Lords, ye Gentlemen that keep good Houſes) who either can not, or know not, (or to ſpeake truely) will not conſume this Locuſt, this Caterpiller, by deſtroying ſo harmfull a moth. And thrice vnhappy they, who for oſtentations ſake, will offer to throw the Barre, with thoſe that are able to out-fling them, and ſtriue in a brauery to ouer-doe their ſtrength, vvhich may cauſe a ſpraine, if not a Rupture in their Eſtates.

(c) *The Spaniſh word is*, Ganapan, quaſi ganar el pan. Acquirere panem & victum ſudore faciej.

The (c) Porter, as well as the Trades-man; the Trades-man, as the Merchant; the Merchant, as the Gentleman; the Gentleman, as the Knight; the Knight, as a *Grande*; and the *Grande*, as a King; all deſire to bee in-throaned, and to out-ſtrip one another, by liuing aboue their compaſſe, and ſpending beyond their means. But in troth, the Office of a King, that is no good Place, there is no ſport in it, no mirth no iollity. For a King neither ſleepeth ſo ſoundly, nor reſteth ſo quietly as the poore Porter doth; neither doth hee eate his meat with that merry heart, and free from all care, as doth the Trades-man. The care of one Crowne afflicts him more, then that of many doth the Merchant. He is troubled more in making prouiſion for his Armies, then a Gentleman in preparing his Armes: Nor is there any Knight or *Titulado* ſo much impawned, or ſo deepely in debt, but that his King is much more: Nor any *Grande* ſo great, but that the troubles and griefes which attend a King, are farre greater. He muſt keepe watch and ward, when others ſecurely ſleepe. His eyes (like your ſhops on worky-dayes) muſt be ſtill open, that thoſe of his Subiects may be ſhut vp, and keepe Holy-day. And therefore the *Egyptians*, when they would Hieroglyffe a King, and by ſome myſtical Cyphers, expreſſe his vigilancy; they did put a Scepter in his hand, with an eye on the top of it. Hee trauels hard, when all others take their eaſe and laugh; for he is both Coach, and Coach-man. He ſighs, and groanes, when others, ſport, and play; yet few are they, that take pitie of him, or are ſenſible of his ſorrowes, vnleſſe it be for their owne priuate intereſt. Whereas indeed, onely for his owne ſake, and for that generall care that he hath of all, he ought of all, to be both loued, feared, and reſpected.

A vigilant King, how depainted by the Egyptians.

The wretched eſtate of a King.

Few informe him of the truth, for feare of drawing hatred vpō themſelues: Few, if he be in an errour, will ſeeke to put him out of it, and they know well inough, why, and wherefore they let him alone, and ſuffer him to goe on in't; and ſo doe we too: Onely forſooth to put themſelues forward, and that they may come to mount and ſoare the higher, and the ſooner, though it bee with waxen wings, and muſt in the end, like *Icarus*, come tumbling downe, and fall into the Sea, where they, and their fortunes, are to ſinke for euer, neuer to be ſeene more.

But what doe I talke of theſe tranſcendencies? I diuine nothing. They are things out of my element, and therefore I will let them alone. It is mens fooliſhneſſe, and their want of iudgement and diſcretion (as I told you before) that leades them thus along (deceiued with theſe vanities) to their deſtruction. and of all other, moſt miſerable are your great Lords, & other Noble Gentlemen, who ſpending where they need not, fall into need themſelues. For

The miſerable condition of your great Lords and Gentlemen.

euen

euen ſmall and ſlight expences, vſed often & too abundantly, conſume the ſubſtance, their feathers begin to faile them, they fall away by one and by one; heere loſe a principall, there a Sarcell, and ſo in the reſt: ſo that (hauing neuer a ſound feather left, neither in wing, or traine, wherewith to maintaine their flight:) they are called *Pelones*, or *Pelados*, peel'd Gentlemen, that haue had their Plumes pluckt. Whereupon they are forced to retire themſelues home into the Country, to liue vpon ſome poore Farme or other, where they muſt ſpend their time in breeding of Cattel, as Pigs, Hens, and Chickens, and the like, reckoning the Egges that are dayly laid, making account thereof, as of his chiefeſt liuing.

Hence therefore I ſet downe this as a ruled Caſe; That if a rich man will gouerne himſelfe, he ſhall neuer be poore. And if a poore man will be thriuing, he ſhall quickly be rich. Both of them applying themſelues in all things, according to the time, and as they ſee occaſion. For it is not alwayes fit for a Gentleman to ſaue; nor for a poore man to ſpend. There are entertainments to be had, but ſuch as are rather to be had for intertainment, then vndoing. *Profitable leſſons both for rich and poore.*

Vpon occaſion, euery man ought to ſhew himſelfe, like himſelfe, according to the meanes that God hath giuen him. For to this end hath hee beſtowed theſe his bleſsings vpon him. But not that all men ſhould walke cheeke by ioule, foote by foote, ſide by ſide one with another, as if they were all fellowes, and no difference of Eſtates, or Perſons.

If a Noble man ſhall be a great ſpender, let a meaner Gentleman hold his hand, and let him not be-foole himſelfe, to thinke, that hee can doe as much with three, as the other with thirty He doth not conſider that theſe are abortiue births; and things that are out of their naturall courſe: whereby he becomes a by-word, and laughing ſtocke among the people: and his wealth being waſted, turnes begger, and mewes himſelfe vp in a corner, and dares not be ſeene. That man doth not vnderſtand, (who is not of good ability) that he does ill; to ſeeme to be a Cocke, before hee be out of the ſhell, and to ſtretch out his throat, as if he would ouer-crow all the world. If hee be a Rauen, and can but croke at the beſt, why will he offer to ſing and put forth his voice? Or why, when ſome Flatterer ſhall tell him that hee hath an excellent ayre, and ſings exceeding ſweetly: doth he not perceiue, that he onely commends him, to make him (as it is in the Fable) let fall his Cheeſe, and then laugh at him when he ha's done? The ſelfe-ſame Leſſon I reade to all, that euery man would learne to know himſelfe: let him try the temper of his Steele, and let him not goe about to fyle iron with a fyle of wood, leſt hee finde it loſt labour. And when he heares a man murmure at another, let him ſhut the doore, leſt another may murmure at him.

It is fit, that wee ſhould all ſleepe vpon on foote (as the Crane doth) when our wealth, (which is the life of this world) lyes vpon it: caſting about (now that all is gone) how we may doe, that we may not be driuen to ſteale. For to let things runne to waſte, is not liberalitie, but looſeneſſe. And with that, which thy Carrer, thy Cooke, and thy *Deſpenſero*, ſhall ſteale from thee, and neuer thanke thee; (for theſe are your onely three (*b*) Cheaters,) thou maiſt reward halfe a doozen of thy other Seruants. *Good inſtructions for a Maſter of a Family.*

But I ſpeake no more of their theft, then others waſte; for they will all ſteale, all filch (ne're a barrell better Herring) looke what is vnder their charge, they will be ſure to nimme ſomewhat out of it. One a little, and another a little: and many a little makes a mickle. So that what with a little, and what with a mickle, it mounts to ſo much in the end, and makes ſuch a deepe hole in thy mayne eſtate, that thou art much maymed by it, if not wholly ſwallowed vp, and vtterly ſunke.

And heere I muſt not ſticke to tell the Maſters themſelues, That a great part of this fault is theirs; for that Seruants wages (vſually) are too ſhort, and ill

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Tres del mohino. *That is, when ſoure play at Dice, or Cards, two againſt two, (yet three of them Partners) thoſe three combine to cozen the fourth man of his money. Whence growes that Prouerbe,* Tres al Mohino.

ill payd. For, if they be ſerued by men, that are in neceſsitie, and conſtrained by want, they ſhall finde few of them faithfull. Thou wilt not ſticke ſometimes in a humour, to play away at one reſt, all thy whole yeares Reuenues. This is naught, giue it ouer. Pay thy ſeruants well, vſe them with courteſie, and ſpeake kindly vnto them; for the rewarding and recompencing of ſeruices, makes the Maſter to be eſteemed, and reſpected, according to his worth and qualitie, and incourageth the poore ſeruant, (by requiting him for his paines,) to ſerue him the better, and with the more alacritie. There are ſome Maſters, that will not beſtow a Royall on the beſt ſeruant they haue, thinking it inough, that they haue onely their bare wages, and that in giuing them that and their dyet, they are very well paid.

Reaſons, in fauour of ſeruants.

No (my Maſters) this may not ſerue your turne, it ſtand's not with reaſon to doe no more; for this is but their due, and deſerues but little, or no thankes at all. But by giuing that, which is not their due, thou bindeſt them to doe more then their due, and winneſt them to ſerue thee with the greater loue. Whereas, if thou (being a Maſter) ſhalt not inlarge thy hand, and bee better vnto him, then the bare bargaine that is driuen betweene yee, it is no great maruell, if thy ſeruant hold backe, and ſteppe not a foot farther then thoſe bounds, wherevnto his Couenant binds him:

A Tale of a miſerly Gentleman.

As it hapned to a cowardly Gentleman, who (preſuming too much on his wealth, and the greatneſſe of his meanes) fell at odds with another Gentleman that was very valiant; and finding himſelfe farre inferiour vnto him, both in ſtrength and in courage, was willing to intertaine a proper young fellow, of good metall, and approued Valour, to wait vpon his perſon.

Now it hapned, that this Enemy ſetting one day vpon him, this his ſeruant drew in his defence, and behau'd himſelfe ſo well, that he made his Aduerſarie retire with diſhonour, and held him play ſo long, till his Maſter was quite out of danger.

In this fray, the Yong man loſt his Cloake, and the ſcabberd of his Sword. When all was paſt, and this fray (whereof I told you) fully ended, my honeſt Seruing-man gets him home, but his vnthankefull Maſter did neither make good this his loſſe, nor returne him any requitall in the world. It was this Gentlemans hap afterwards, to meet with his Maſter againe, and hauing a good Cudgell in his hand, he affronted him, and gaue him the Baſtanado vpon the former quarrell: his ſeruant all the while ſtood ſtill, and was content to be a looker on, while the other did beat him. His Maſter cryde out vnto him, that he ſhould come in and helpe him. Your *Worſhip* (quoth his man) did agree with me to pay me my wages monethly, and I did couenant with you, to wait vpon you for it.

(*b*) Alba, quędam eſca, Hiſpanis in vſu. *A meate made of the breſt of an Hen, Milke, Sugar, Rice, beaten, and all mixed together. One of the daintieſt d ſhes they haue in* Spaine. *This* Manjar Blanco, *was anciently eaten in Princes Courts, and Noble mens Houſes, but now publikely ſold in the open Market.*

And for ought I know, neither of vs both are bound to any more. So that if thou mindeſt that they ſhould ſtrain themſelues for thee, and do thoſe things, that may aduance thy ſeruice; with that which thou ſo diſſolutely loſeſt, and vainely and idly throweſt away, gaine their good-wils, and thou ſhalt gaine this thereby, that they will not rob thee of thy wealth; that they defend thy Perſon, illuſtrate thy Fame, and deſire thy life. O how often haue I ſeene them carry away, and carried away my ſelfe, whole tartes of *Manjar (b) Blanco*, Pigs, Pidgeons, Stock-Doues, Cheeſes of a hundred ſundry ſorts, and other infinit things to ſell, which are too tedious to relate, and I feare me, both time, and memory would faile mee, if I ſhould goe about to recount them vnto thee! Onely I will tell thee, that theſe diſorders, beeing a generall diſeaſe, whereof all of them were ſicke, infected me alſo, and made mee become as bad as the beſt of them. I liu'd amongſt a company of Wolues, and I learned of them to howle, and deuoure Lambes, as they did. I was a reaſonable good Scholler for my time albeit in a different kinde of learning, but at laſt, I loſt all feare: I had learned now to ſwimme without Bladders; I was

ſhſh enough now to forſake the neſt; all did game and ſweare, all did ſteale and ( ) lurch, and I did, as I ſaw others doe before mee. From ſmall beginnings, great matters ariſe.

I began (as I told you before) to play a little, to lurch a little, and to ſteale a little; But at length, I began to inlarge my ſtrides like little children, when they haue beene taught awhile to goe alone. I was now perfect in my pace, and had the tricke to make one in the hundred. I no more held it ill (to ſuch paſſe was my innocencie come) but as a thing lawfull, and to bee permitted, I bought therewith ſome few neceſſaries, that I ſtood in need of; the reſt I threw away at play; for in my gaming, I alwaies made choice of thoſe games that were the moſt vertuous, either in Dice, (*b*) or Cardes, ſuch as were the nimbleſt to ridd a man of his money, that I might make an end of it quickly, and get me home to execute mine Office.

I once remember, that conteſting about a Chance with other young Lads about my pitch, we were ſo loud, in one of the Courts of the houſe where we plaid, that with the noiſe thereof, you would haue thought, the whole houſe would haue falne downe about our eares. Our Maſter ſpake to the Vſher of the Hall, that he would goe ſee what the matter was; who found vs together by the eares, which made the fault the greater. And (exceeding his Commiſſion) he baſted our ſhoulders with Cudgell-deaw, making the duſt flie out of our Coates, till he had beaten our bodies all blacke and blue; The markes whereof appeared afterwards, when we came to put off our Shirts; which likewiſe occaſioned the loſſe of my credit amongſt them; For, from that time forward, they had an eie ſtill ouer me; and lookt a little more narrowly into my water. And this was it, that gaue the firſt beginning to my vtter vndoing, as by and by I ſhall more plainely deliuer vnto you.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Siſar. *Now* Siſar, *is to take out of that which is bought, or ſpent, ſome ſmall part: As out of a ſixt part, one. And therefore it ought to be rather* Seiſar, *then* Siſar, *of the Hebrew word* Siſah, Sextare, *or to take out a ſixt part.*

(b) *The Spaniſh words, are* Bueltos, y Carteta: *Games much vſed amongſt the Spaniards.*

CHAPTER VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which paſt betwixt him and his Maſter, till being diſmiſt, he departed from him: And takes occaſion hereupon, to condemne Idleneſſe, and euill Companie, and thoſe inueterated vices in rich men. Hee recounteth the ſpoiles, and* Trophees *of Cookes; and tells a merry Story, that paſt betweene himſelfe, and the Cookes wife, his Miſtreſſe.*

THat man is much to be commended, who knowes to gaine by his labours: But much more ought hee to be eſteemed, who by his vertue knowes how to keepe that which he hath gotten. I did ſtriue all I could to pleaſe euery body, albeit the ill cuſtome of my former lewd life, did now and then lead me awry; ſo that whatſoeuer I did, was like forced earth, that fell in ſhort time to it's old leuell, and being all but counterfeite ſtuffe, were but Apiſh imitations, contrarie to mine owne nature, and that bent, whereunto I had beene vſed. For that Glory that is falſely gotten, indureth but a while, it is not permanent, but quickly paſſeth away; I was like vnto a drop of Oyle, that falls vpon a garment, which *Si freſca no paraçe, breuemente ſe deſcubre y crece*; If it be not preſently perceiu'd, and taken off in time, diſcouers it ſelfe, and goes increaſing. Now, they would no longer truſt me. One would call me, *Cedaçillo nueuo*, the new little Siue, or the youth of three daies ſtanding; For as your new married Wiues, that buy a little Siue, to ſtraine their Wine, or any other liquor, for ſome few daies, are very carefull of it, hang it vp vpon a Naile, or ſome woodden Pin, but anon after thinke no more of it, and let it lie tumbling on the ground; ſo is it with your new ſeruants: you

Prouerb.

you ſhall haue them at the firſt very diligent and carefull, and like new Broomes, ſweepe all cleane, but after a while they grow negligent and lazie, and are wearie of well doing. Another would call me *La Gata de Venus*, one of *Venus* Cats; A craftie knaue from the Cradle. But they were all deceiued; For I was naturally good, and in mine owne diſpoſition, I neither had read nor knew ſo much; but I depraued this good nature of mine, and did ill diſpoſe of it. Vice and want altred this my good inclination, and made me otherwiſe then I would haue beene. And what knauery I had in me, I learnt it of the Officers there, and other the ſeruants of the houſe. And theſe are they that I muſt thanke; for they were the only men that brought mee to it; I was but coorſe Sugar, till they refin'd me.

Ill companie, is the Author of all miſchiefe.

There are ſome happie theeues, that come to be old men before they die; others are ſo vnlucky, that for the very firſt robberie, that euer they committed, haue beene taken in the manner, and preſently hanged, without any more adoe. That which in others was but a veniall, was in me, a mortall ſinne. And it was fit it ſhould be ſo, becauſe I did degenerate from what I was, by doing that which I ought not to haue done. I did vndoe my ſelfe by ill company, which is Vices Ladder, Vertues Hangman; the Wine that makes drunke; the Smoake that choaketh; the Sorcereſſe that bewitcheth; Marches Sunſhine, a deafe Adder, and an intiſing Syrene.

Idleneſſe, what kinde of thing it is.
What euill effects it bringeth forth.

When I firſt began to ſerue, I applied my ſelfe to my worke, and ſought to pleaſe; but afterwards, my ill-acquaintance (bad friends as they were) did ſweetly vndoe me. Idleneſſe, was a great helpe thereunto, if not the ſole cauſe of all my hurt. For, as vnto him that is well occupied, no Vertue is wanting; ſo vnto him that is idle, there is no Vice, which is not his Companion. Idleneſſe is the high way to deſtruction; it is that ſpacious field, that opens to perdition; it is that Plough, wherewith bad thoughts are ſowne; It is the ſeed of Tares, caſt into the ground; it is that Woman-weeder that plucks vp goodneſſe by the roots; It is that Sickle, that cuts downe all our good works; It is that Flaile, which threſheth all honour out of vs: It is that Cart, which comes loaden home with miſchiefe; and it is that Barne, wherein all the Vices in the world are mowed, and ſtored vp. Mine eie was not ſet vpon my ſelfe, but on others; and looke what I ſaw them doe, that (me thought) was likewiſe lawfull for me: Not conſidering, that becauſe they were in places of credit, (that were able to beare them out) and being old-beaten ſoldiers in all manner of theeueries, it might become them well enough to doe as they did; for by this meanes, they were to make themſelues a Fortune, and to this end only doe they ſeeke to ſerue good Maſters. I was willing to be one of the number, and would faine ranke my ſelfe amongſt them, by doing as they did, being no way their equall, but a poore *Picaro*, a ragg-taild Rogue, out both of clothes and credit.

He that will not doe ill, muſt looke well into himſelfe.

But if excuſes may preuaile, and that I may ſay ſomething for my ſelfe; When I ſaw that euery man walkt ſo freely this way, without checke or controule; it ſeemed to me to be the land of (*a*) *Permiſsion*; and that I might paſſe vp and downe there as well as they: Being perſwaded, (as I told you before) that it was a worke of Vertue, a very good deed, and very iuſtifiable, howbeit afterwards I was beaten from that errour: My thought though was good, but my vnderſtanding was amiſſe: For the Grace and fauour of this *Bull*, did in eſpeciall words grant the vſe and exerciſe thereof to the elder brothers, that are free of the Incorporation of the Rich and Potent; to thoſe that are Fauorites to the Proud, to the Arrogant, to Flatterers, to thoſe that are neuer without Crocodils teares; to Scorpions, which bite not with the mouth, but ſting with the taile; to ſmooth-tongu'd Paraſites, who with ſweet words cheriſh the body, but with ſowre workes deſtroy the ſoule. Theſe were the men that might doe any thing, all was well done that they did;

(a) *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Terra de Xauxa.

The Brotherhood of the Rich, what it is. And the euils that it cauſeth.

did; but in ſuch as my ſelfe, it was falſhood and roguerie, I was in an errour, and together with this my error, I became ſo diſſolute, and liu'd ſo diſorderly, that my diſeaſe euen a farre off might eaſily be diſcerned: howbeit all was not worth a ſtraw, as being things not to be reckoned of, or ſcarce worthy the talking of. It is a common ſaying; *Que el poſtrero, que Sabe las deſgraçias, es el Marido.* That the good man, is the laſt that knowes, what things are amiſſe at home. *Proverb.*

Of all theſe my mad prankes, and croſſe fortunes that did befall me, ſcarce one of a thouſand came to my Maſters eares; Either becauſe being willing (as I was) to pleaſe them, and to get their good will, they would not haue my Maſter to conceiue hardly of me, and ſo put me away; Or elſe, becauſe (though now and then they would chide me, and tell me mine owne) ſeeing all the World was alike, and that it was euery mans Caſe as well as mine; they did not much wonder at it. But for ſome negligences of mine, and other things that were too tranſparent; my Maſter grew ſomewhat angrie with me, and ſpurr'd hard to ouertake me. It ſo fell out, that he was one day ſent for to prepare a Feaſt for a certaine Prince, that was a ſtranger, newly come to Court, and carried me along with him, that I might tranſplant the Onion; that is, take vp all the leauings, Reliques, Vailes, Profits, or Fees, (as the cuſtome is) belonging to his Office.

Wee were no ſooner come into the Kitchen, but all our prouiſion was brought in vnto vs. My Maſter fell preſently to worke; and very nimbly; and with a great deale of dexterity began to chop this, to deuide that, and breake that other thing aſunder, putting ſomethings apart by themſelues, others (eſpecially if they were all of a ſort) he heaped vp all together, taking the like order in all the reſt of thoſe things that appertained vnto him (as a lawfull taxe and due tribute, payable to his place) leſt he might, (being buſied about many other things) forget his owne right, and confuſedly intermixe one thing with another; it being meet and iuſt, to giue vnto *Cæſar*, that which is *Cæſars*, and that euery man ſhould take poſſeſsion of his owne, and quietly inioy what of right belonged vnto him. *The faſhion of your Cookes, when they are ſent for to worke.*

Now, about the ſhutting in of the Euening, when it began to be darke, my Maſter willed me to bring the Sackes. I brought them, and fell to filling; which (being well practiſed therein) I packt vp euery thing that was there, very handſomely, and very ſpeedily. And clapping them on my ſhoulder at ſuch a time, and in ſuch a manner, that I might not be ſeene, he made me make foure returnes, in which iournying to and fro, I could hardly fetch my breath, ſo heauily was I laden. All, and euery one of them ſeemed to me, to be like vnto *Noahs* Arke. And I doe not know, whether in it there were ſo many indiuiduall and ſeuerall *Species*, or whether God did afterwards create them? Now, when I had made an end of this buſineſſe, he will'd me to make a fire, hang ouer the Kettles, ſee the water ſeethe, pull Fowle, ſcald the Chickens, ſindge the Capons, ſcorch the Partridge; in which and the like I beſtowed a great part of that night. My Maſters Cake (good man) did not bake halfe currantly, the byas did not runne the right way, he was ſhrewdly out of tune, and much diſquieted in his minde; it ſtill running in his head, that his Wife was all alone; and that ſhe could not either well order ſuch a deale of wealth as he had ſent her in; or that happely ſome vnexpected ſtorme might befall him in his abſence.

Hereupon, whilſt his thoughts were thus troubled, he calls me vnto him, and ſaies vnto me; *Guzmanillo*, I prythee hie thee home, and haue a care to that which thou carriedſt hence, ſee that all be ſafe, nothing loſt, open thine eies, and looke about thee. Tell thy Miſtreſſe that I ſtay here; haue a care to the houſe, and as ſoone as it is day, haſten againe vnto me. I did ſo: I deliuer my meſſage to my Miſtreſſe. I call for Pinn's, and Pack-thread; I plaſte them vp *What are the Trophees of Cookes, whereof they make their Triumph.*

vp aboue in a Gallery, where they hung in a freſh and open ayre. There did I ſyle vpon ſtrings the Trophees of that Victory. It was a glorious and goodly ſight to ſee the ſeuerall plumage, and diuers-coloured feathers of Capons, Partridges, Turtles, Hennes, Peacocks, Thruſhes, Veldefares, Pidgeons, Quailes, Chickens, Doues, and Geeſe. And taking forth from amidſt all theſe the Conies heads, they lookt as if they had come peeping out of their berries. I hung vp in another part of the Gallery Gammons of Bacon, ioynts of Veale, Red Deere, wilde Bore, Mutton, Neats-tongues, Pigs, and Kids.

Thus all the Gallery was hung round with this kinde of Tapiſtry, vpon very good Nailes & ſtrong Pins that I had put vp for that purpoſe. So that I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, according to that faire ſhow that it made there, I had brought home two parts of fiue: nor was this Conqueſt yet fully ended; for there were yet wanting thoſe ſeuen * *Infantes de Lara*, to make the feaſt complete. All the reſt was very well fitted, and I very vveary, for I had wrought very hard, though little notice vvas taken of it, and my requitall leſſe.

My Miſtris lodged in a lower roome, who like an idle Drone, left all the burthen on my ſhoulders, and got her to bed. It ſeemed ſhe had ſupt vpon ſalt meates, for ſhe had her (a) fore-head full charged, which was no new thing with her. I, when I had made an end of my worke, did the like, and went to bed. But the weather was ſo hot, that for a good while I lay ſcratching, and toſsing to and fro, till at laſt, (though ſome-what, I confeſſe, againſt my will) I let looſe the reines, that I might goe ſoftly onward on my way to ſleepe. In the end I fell a galloping, that I might the quicklier come to my iourneis end, and take my reſt. And lapping my ſelfe in my Blanket, which God knowes was a ſorry one, (for in that Countrey, they doe not vſe to allow Sheetes, nor any more ſaue an old Straw-bed, to ſuch poore boyes as my ſelfe) I was very carefull to riſe betimes, according as my Maſter had commanded me. When behold, (God bleſſe me) about three of the Clocke in the morning, it beeing then the time betweene the two Lights, when it was neither night nor day, I heard beneath in the Court a cruell skirmiſh amongſt the Cats, which were making of a banquet vpon a piece of *Poore Iohn*, a dry kinde of Fiſh, which they had drawne out by chance through the Tyles of one of our neighbours houſes.

Cats and old Folkes alike.

And for that they are naturally of an ill condition, (nor ſhal you euer know, when they are contented, no more then ye ſhall, when old men are well pleaſed) you ſhall neuer ſee them eate their meat quietly, and without noiſe, but ſtill purring and growling, though they haue neuer ſo much. Whether it were, that their Fiſh was good, and ſo lik't it too well; or whether it were ouer-ſalted, and ſo made them angry, or what a Diuell the matter was, that they differ'd about, I know not: but ſure I am, that with the noiſe of this their Warre, they did awake me, and made mee to liſten after them, ſaying with my ſelfe, Sure the Diuell is in it, his hand is in this buſineſſe, if the quarrell that was riſen amongſt theſe honeſt Cats, ſhould fall vpon the true [b] mans Cloake, and make him ſmart for't, that is not in fault: and ſhould quarrell now at this houre, in ſo vnſeaſonable a time, about the partition of my goods, and then my bones to pay for the meat that they ſhould eate; making my Maſter thereby to miſ-doubt my care, and ſo breed a difference betweene vs.

I lay in my bed, as naked as euer I was when I firſt came from my Mothers wombe: I did not thinke, that any body ſhould haue ſeene me; I ſtarted vp in a trice; and as if the (c) *Moores* had been come to haue carried away all my kindred Captiues, and this diligence of mine would haue ſeru'd to ſet them free. I hye me with all the haſte I can, and come running downe the ſtayres amaine, that I might bee there in time, and might preuent that miſchiefe, which is wont to grow, when ſuccours are too ſlow.

In

* *Theſe ſeuen ſonnes of* Lara *were braue Warriours, and conquered all where they came. And their name is vſed by way of Prouerb, when ſomething is wanting yet to be done.*

(a) *When a man has drunke hard, it is a vſuall phraſe in Spaine:* Cargò Delantero, *He hath charg'd his forepeece.*

(b) Sobre la capa dei juſto. Si dize; quando paga el, que no tiene culpa. Couarruuia. verb. juſto.

(c) *It is vſuall in Spaine to haue the Moores come in vpon their coaſts, and carry away many Captiues.*

The ridiculous ieſt that paſt between Guzman *and his Miſtris.*

In a buſineſſe of that importance, I thought all delayes were dangerous. My Miſtreſſe as ſhee was gone to bed before mee, ſo ſhe had got vp before mee. Which ſhee might the better doe, becauſe ſhee had nothing to trouble her head, and had taken foure ſound ſleepes, was lapt vp warme like the Silke-worme, ſo that ſhe had no more to doe, but to rub her eyes, and ariſe. She heard this ſtirre as well as I, and thought perhaps vvith her ſelfe (as very well ſhe might) that I was faſt aſleepe, and did not heare the noiſe. She, though ſhe vvent to bed in her Smocke, yet as her faſhion vvas, ſhe vvould put it off before ſhe ſlept, and lye all night ſtarke-naked; and ſo vvas ſhe now, hauing not ſo much vpon her to couer her nakedneſſe, as the inheritance of her Grannam *Eue*, neither Smocke, nor any other couering in the world.

And thus ſtarke naked as euer ſhe vvas borne, forgetting through her haſte; to clap any thing vpon her body, ſhe came running downe like one out of her wits, with a light in her hand, to ſaue her goods. Her thought, and mine, iumpt both alike; the broyle equall; the diligence, in *cauſa propria*, in a buſineſſe that did neerely concerne vs both; and the noiſe on either ſide but little, for wee both came thither bare-foote.

Now (if it will pleaſe you to behold vs) we both of vs meet in the Gallery, ſhe ſtrucken with wonder, to ſee mee there; and I almoſt frighted out of my wits, in looking on her. She ſuſpected that I was ſome *Phantaſma*, ſome Hob-goblin, or wandring Ghoſt, and letting the light fall out of her hand for feare, ſhe gaue withall a great ſchriche. And I that was affrighted as much vvith ſo ſtrange and foule an Apparition, and ſeeing her to make towards me with a Candle in her hand, I gaue a greater ſchriche then ſhe, thinking it had been the ſoule of the Steward of our Houſe, vvho dy'd but ſome two daies before, and that he vvas come thither to leuell his Accounts vvith my Maſter. She ſhrik't out ſo lowd on the one ſide, that the neighbors might heare her all ouer the ſtreet, and mine were ſo ſhrill, that they might almoſt haue bin heard all ouer the Towne. She fled as faſt as ſhe could driue to her Chamber, as if the Diuell had been at the tayle of her; I ſtroue to make as much haſte to mine; the Cats they began to fly, and as glad as we to be gone. But to ſee the ill lucke of it, vpon the very firſt ſtayre as I was going vp, I ſtumbled vpon the Cat of the houſe, and treading vpon her in the darke, ſhe ſcratcht me by the legges with her nayles: then did I verily thinke with my ſelfe, that ſome Ghoſt or other followed me at the heeles, and was come to carry me away; and that he was now catching at my ſoule, and ready to teare it out of my body: wherewith being ſcarred, I fell, and brake my ſhinnes againſt the ſtayres, hauing grated off the skinne euen almoſt to the bone, nor did my noſe ſcape free, that vvas broken as well as the reſt. Neither of vs two could vnderſtand, or certainly ſuſpect, who the other ſhould be, all did ſucceed ſo in an inſtant, and were both called out, at the ſound of one and the ſame Bell; till that I hauing falne on the ground, and ſhe hauing hid her ſelfe between her ſheetes, we began to know one another by the lamentation and mourning that we made. With this fright that ſhe had taken (if the freſhneſſe of the morning did not occaſion it) my Miſtreſſe retentiue faculty had ſhrewdly failed her, and the locke of her belly being looſe, and the bolts of her breech none of the faſteſt, her Poſterne doore flew wide open, and before ſhe could recouer her Chāber, flirted the excrements of her intrailes, part in the Portal, & part in the open Court; that White-pot of hers, being ſtucke full of Cherry-ſtones, which it ſhould ſeeme ſhe had ſwallowed downe whole. I was a good while, ere I could make all cleane, I ſwept it, and waſht it, and did all that I could to make all handſome againe; for the keeping cleane of the houſe did properly belong to my charge, as a thing wholly committed to my care.

Then did I begin to know that the Ordure and filthy ſauour of ſuch acci-

dentall Stooles as theſe, doe ſtinke more, and vvorſe by farre, then thoſe that are naturall and ordinary with vs. But the cauſe and reaſon hereof, I leaue it to the Philoſophers to ſeeke it out: It ſufficeth, that it coſt me a great deale of labour, to the detriment of my ſmelling faculty, and the great annoyance of my Noſe: and this I dare be bold to make good vnto you out of mine owne experience.

My Miſtreſſe vvas much aſhamed of this foule accident, and I more: for albeit I did vvrite man, yet I was but a young Lad to ſpeake of, and a meere child in the knowledge of theſe things; I was as modeſt, as any Maid of them all, and as tender-ſtomak't; and had I beene more man then I was, I ſhould haue been aſhamed for her ſhame, and haue bluſht, if not for mine owne, yet for her ſake. It did grieue me very much, that I had ſeene her in this manner, as I haue told you; for as I liue, I would not willingly for all the world haue lighted vpon ſuch an vncouth caſualty as this was: But (doe all that I could) ſhe could neuer be perſwaded, but it was my knauery, and my roguery, and that I did it of purpoſe; nor all the oathes that I vſed vnto her, could make her to alter her minde, reduce her to reaſon, make her capable how and by what meanes this hapned, or giue her any the leaſt aſſurance of my innocencie.

From that day forward, I vtterly loſt her good-will; and I knew ſo much afterwards by a neighbour of hers; whom ſhee acquainted with all that had hapned. For that which did trouble her moſt, and did euen vexe her to the heart, was, not for my finding of her naked, and vn-array'd; but becauſe ſhe had beray'd her ſelfe. As for all the reſt ſhee did not care a pin; for moſt women deſire nothing more, eſpecially thoſe that haue a good opinion of themſelues, haue conſulted with the cleereneſſe of their skinnes, and are priuy to their owne perfections.

When I ſaw that nothing would ſerue the turne, and that neither perſwaſions, nor proteſtations would perſwade with her; I tooke it for an ill ſigne, and beganne to thinke with my ſelfe, that ſome falſe witneſſe or other would bee raiſed vp againſt mee, to caſt mee out of doores, putting her Husband into an euill opinion of me, as if this (poore innocent ſoule as I was) had been meerely my fault. Neuer did ſhe looke ſtraight vpon me afterwards, nor euer exchanged word with me, good or bad.

When it was broad day, backe went I to my Mill againe, as I was commanded, that I might fall there afreſh to my drudgery. But vvhen I came to my Maſter, not a word of what had paſt. I was Mum-budget, and durſt not open my lips to him (for my life) in that buſineſſe. He askt me vvhether all thoſe things were ſafe at home? and vvhether I had ſet them handſomely in order? I told him, all vvas vvell, and well ordred. Hee imploy'd me in ſome things. And I can aſſure you, that my Maſter & his Companions, and I and mine, ſuch as were helpers, and wrought there for him, had more adoe, to gather together, and hide what he had ſtolne, then we had in the dreſſing and ſeaſoning of all the reſt of our meates. And how was it poſsible, that it ſhould be otherwiſe, where there vvas no order taken, no agreement made, no account to be call'd vnto? What did not we call for vvithout controule; what vvas not giuen vs vvithout grudging; what did vve not receiue with a great deale of glory; how little vvas ſpent, and how much was ſtolne? Sugar vvas demanded for our Tarts; and for our Tarts, Sugar. So as we had for euery thing twice or thrice ouer. Theſe kinde of banquets, wee termed *Iubilees*; becauſe the waters vvere troubled, and there were ſtore of Fiſh to be taken. The poiſon vvas throwne in, and they began to float.

This made me to thinke, ſeeing (as the common phraſe is) that this [a] vvas my Goſsips bread, but at other folkes coſt; that my fore-teeth were no leſſe able then other mens, to gaine this Indulgence. For I likewiſe had a Soule in my

(a) Pan demi compadre el duelo ageno.

my body, as well as the beſt of them; I wanted not a iot of any thing, that ſhould make me a man; My Armour was not without it's Riuets, to buckle all cloſe. And if I had a minde to the Crums that were falne vnder the Table, (yet ſo, as not to ſeeke, to make my ſelfe equall to my fellowes, or to enter into comparison with them.) it might (me thought) be lawfull for me, to make ſome profit of other mens liberalitie, and though I were no Gameſter, yet I might receiue (b) *Barato*, as a ſtander by. I waxed wearie with pulling Fowle, blanching of Almonds, and the kernels of Pine-apples, with prouiding of ſcalding waters, and other things: I had then on at that time, an old Shirt, and a Doublet that was all torne.

(b) Barato, *is that mony, which at play a man takes out of his heape, when he winnes, and giues it to this or that ſtander by, that he may wiſh him good lucke. Giuing leſſe, or more, as their hand is good, or their game great or ſmall.* Prou.

Amongſt other things that came to my Maſters ſhare, was a Pannier of Eggs; I made thither, and tooke out a good companie of them, ſome few of them I clapt in my boſome, betwixt my body and my ſhirt, the reſt I thruſt into my Pockets, and the linings of my Breeches. Now you ſee, I laid my hand vpon that which wrought my woe. But (to ſpeake the truth) I did not doe this ſo much for mine owne priuate intereſt, but that I might ſay another day (if I liſt) that I kiſt the Bride; and that it might not be ſaid, that ſhee came forth a Maid: Or that it ſhould be tit in my teeth; that I had beene at the Court, and not ſeene the King. The craftie Rogue my Maſter had found me out; and that he might ſanctifie himſelfe by my ſinne, and iuſtifie his honeſtie by my theft, the *Mayor-Domo* being preſent, and other principall ſeruants of the houſe, when I was about to goe forth to put this poore purchaſe of mine in ſome ſafe place out of ſight, he fell vpon me like a Lyon, and laying hold on my Coller, he began to play *Rex* with me, taking me to *Coram nobis*, haling me by the haire of the head, and treading me vnder his feet.

Guzman *ſteales Eggs, and is taken in the maner.*

You may very well imagine, how well conditioned this Merchandize was like to come home, being with his beating of me, he had broke them all to pieces, making both the Whites and the Yolkes, thus batterd both together to drop out at my knees. I could not but ſay to my ſelfe; Sure, ſome Poulterers Planet doth purſue me, & my Choller had almoſt mou'd me to ſpeake it out aloud. But ô (thou notorious theefe) how canſt thou haue thy houſe hang'd with that, which thou ſtol'ſt, and I carried away, and yet keepe ſuch a coile, and make ſuch a deale of doe, for halfe a doozen paltrie eggs that thou foundſt about me? Doeſt thou not ſee, that thou wrongeſt thy ſelfe, in wronging of me? But I thought it my beſt courſe, to hold my peace. For, in iniuries, the beſt remedie is to neglect them. It did grieue me ſo much the more, that my Maſter ſhould vſe me thus hardly; had it beene done by a ſtranger, or ſo, I could better haue borne it. But I muſt be contented with my hard fortune; I ſaw I was to ſuffer, and therefore I paſt it ouer without any alteration of countenance, or replying otherwiſe vnto him, then by lifting vp mine eies vnto heauen, which were brimme full of teares, and ready to runne ouer.

Now the heate and furie of the Feaſt was paſt, and we were going home; but as we were vpon the way, my Maſter ſaid vnto me, What I ſhall now tell thee (*Guzmanillo*) hearken vnto it, and weigh it well, it is worth the noting; That beating which I beſtowed on thee to day, did concerne me more then thou art aware: I know I had no reaſon to vſe thee as I did; but to morrow, I will giue thee a new paire of ſhooes, which ſhall be better worth to thee, then thy eggs would haue beene. This was welcome newes, and pleas'd me very well; for thoſe I then wore were old, and all to fitters. But I ſhrewdly ſuſpect, that my Miſtreſſe, after we were come home, had made her complaint vnto him, and ſpoken ſome ill language of me; for from that time that wee entred in adoores, my Maſter did euer after caſt ſuch a ſowre looke vpon me, as if he had beene newly taſting of Wine-vineger, ſo ſharp a countenance did hee ſet vpon me; ſo that now we heare no more words of our new ſhooes, they are forgot, and I muſt be content to goe without them. When I ſaw hee

Faire words and Large promiſes, pacifie anger.

lookt awry vpon me, and that I found his fauour to bee with-drawne from me; I ſought to remoue all rubs, and to giue him all the content I could, ſeruing him with more care then euer; without committing any the leaſt offence, or being wanting in any thing that belonged to the buſineſſes of the Kitchin; I was not faultie in an hayre, becauſe he ſhould haue no iuſt cauſe againſt me.

Guzman *tries his wit to get ſome money.*

Vpon a Feſtiuall day, (as our faſhion was) we had made certaine Pies and Paſties, ſome of one ſort, ſome of another; whereof there was ſome (though not very much) of the Paſte left; And the Munday following, was the Running of the Bulls. In the duſt-Basket, amongſt other refuſe-things out of the ſweepings of the houſe, it was my hap to meet with the ſhanke-bone of a Heyſer, which was in a manner whole; I had need of a few of Blankes to make merry with, and preſently (a toy taking me in the head) in the turning of a hand, I had lapt vp my Shanker in the Paſte that remained; which (as I had handled the matter) was to the outward ſhow a goodly faire Conie, that you could not diſtinguiſh the one from the other. Away went I with it to the wonted place, where I vs'd to vent my other things, with a purpoſe to coozen ſome ſtranger with it; But becauſe I was in haſte, and could not ſtay long, I might not wait to make choice of my Merchant. There comes me to buy it of me a goodly graue Gentleman-Vſher, (his head and beard as white as Milke) to doe him a pleaſure, I was willing he ſhould haue it. We agreed vpon the price, and he was to giue me for it three Royals and a halfe. Me thought I ſaw the heauens opened, in hauing made ſo quicke a market. But the more was my haſte, the greater was his fleame.

He puts me firſt vnder his arme a Reportorie or little Regiſter booke, about the bigneſſe of an Almanacke, which he had in his hand; Then he hangs me at his Girdle, his Gloues and his hand-Kercher; with a great deale of deliberation; After that, he takes me a caſe out of his pocket, wherein were his Spectacles: he puls them forth, wipes them, and puts them on, wherein hee ſpent two long houres. Then he went diſtilling out of a little leather Purſe, one *Quarte* after another, and putting them in his hand, euery halfe *Quarte*, ſeemed to be a *Quartile*, giuing euery one of them halfe a doozen turnes at the leaſt, holding them againſt the Sunne. I had ſcarce receiued my money of him, when lo, my Maſter was at my backe, who miſsing me at home, came forth to ſeeke me. And hauing thus found me napping, he tooke me faſt by the arme, and when he had me ſure, hee ſaid vnto mee, What Pawne (my youth) haue you redeemed here? My Gentleman-Vſher was preſent at all this paſſage: the Deuill (I thinke) kept him there all this while, for the diſcloſing of this my ſecret.

Guzman *taken in a fault by his Maſter.*

I ſaw my ſelfe now in the ſuds, and knew not which way to get out; (I could not quote my Author, nor yeeld any good reaſon for what I had done; ſo that it ſtood with me, as with prohibited bookes, or merchandize forbidden to be ſold: and puniſhing me for my fault, he afterwards diues me into my pocket; and when he had fiſht out the money, hee cries; Let goe you rogue; Let goe, I ſay: Are you the man, that ſo many haue commended vnto me? Are you that dead Flie, that would doe no hurt? Are you that faithfull ſeruant forſooth, whom I truſted with my goods, and all that I had? Haue I kept thee in my houſe? giuen thee of my bread? cheriſht, and made ſo much of thee, and all for this? I will no more be troubled with ſuch a rogue as thou art. See thou com'ſt no more in my houſe, and come not, I aduiſe thee, neere my doore; for he that will be falſe in a little, will (if occaſion be offred) bee falſe in greater matters.

Guzman *thruſt out of his Maſters ſeruice.*

And ſo giuing me a cuffe on the eare, and a kicke on the breech, both at one inſtant, in the preſence of my Merchant, (whoſe dull fleame, (the worſe lucke mine) would not diſmiſſe him thence) hee had almoſt laid me flat on the ground.

ground. I was ſo aſhamed, that I knew not what anſwer to make him; though I had ſtuffe enough in ſtore for him; But not holding it fit ſo to doe, becauſe he had beene my Maſter. I hung downe my head, held my peace, and went my waies. For it is a greater glory to auoid iniuries by ſilence, then to ouercome them by replying.

CHAP. VII.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *being put from the Cooke his Maſter, turnes* Picaro, *and proues a notable cunning Rogue. How he hauing a great deſire to ſee* Italie, *occaſion was offred vnto him to effect his purpoſe, by the helpe of a theft, done vpon a Grocer, and how he went ſheere away with it, and left* Madrid.

IN all chances whatſoeuer that may befall vs in this world, *Mas vale Saber, que auer*; it is better to be wiſe, then to be rich; For though Fortune ſhould play the Rebell, yet Knowledge neuer forſakes a man. Wealth may be waſted, but Knowledge increaſeth; and of more worth is that little, which a wiſe man knowes; then all that which a rich man inioyeth. There is no man (I thinke) makes any queſtion that Wiſdome excelleth Fortune; though both of them put forward, and haſten to one and the ſame end; which is, to adorne and ſet forth men, and to raiſe them to honour.

Wiſdome better then Riches.

Diuers Philoſophers, did diuerſly paint forth Fortune, becauſe in all things ſhe is her ſelfe ſo diuerſe. Euery one did draw her forth in that forme, as hee found it did accord with himſelfe, or as hee did conſider it in another. If ſhe be good, ſhe is the Step-dame to all Vertue; if bad, the Mother to all Vice. And him, whom ſhe moſt fauoureth, ſhe reſerueth for moſt miſerie: her courteſies euer ending in diſgraces. She is brittle, vnſtable, reſtleſſe, *Tanquam Figura ſpharica in corpore plano*; like a Spherical Figure, in a plaine body. That, which ſhe giues to day, ſhe takes away to morow: ſhe is the flowing of the Sea, toſsing and tumbling vs to and fro, till ſhe leaue vs at laſt vpon drie land, on Deaths ſhore, from which ſhe neuer returnes to recouer vs; And while we liue, inioyning vs (like Players to con ouer our parts, and to learne daily new toyes & deuices, to preſent them vpon the ſtage of this World. Euery various accident doth diſorder her, & ſteale Wiſdomes praiſe from her. But Wiſdome doth quickly repaire that which ſhe ruineth: And redreſſeth thoſe things, which ſhe deſpaireth of; ſhee is a moſt rich open Mine, from whence, they that will, may exhauſt great treaſure, like vnto the waters of a huge Riuer, which can neuer be drawne drie. She honoureth a good fortune, and helpeth a bad. She is ſiluer in the poore, gold in the rich, and a precious ſtone in a Prince. In the perillous paſſages, and in the troubleſome chances of Fortune, the wiſe man treads ſafely, and walkes ſecurely; but the Foole ſtumbles and falls, though the way be neuer ſo plaine.

Fortune, how decyphred by the Philoſophers?

There is no trouble ſo great on the land; no tempeſt ſo terrible on the Sea; no ſtorme ſo violent in the aire, that is able to withſtand Wiſdome, ſo that euery man ought to deſire to liue to be wiſe; and deſire to be wiſe, that he may liue happily; Her riches are perpetuall, permanent, conſtant, and certaine. But thou wilt aske me; Whither away, *Guzman*, ſo laden with Knowledge? What thinkſt thou to doe with it? To what end doſt thou commend it with ſuch large eloquence? Why doſt thou ſo earneſtly indeare it vnto vs? What doeſt thou meane by it? Whether doth it tend? Since you aske me, I will tell you. All this ſpeech hath reference to my Basket, which was the Knowledge that I did ſtudie, for to get meat to my mouth, which is a good

What man ſhould doe, to liue happily.

point of Wiſedome: For, *Quien à Oficio, à beneficio*, He that hath a good Office, hath a good Liuing. And he that hath no other meanes to liue in this world, and to paſſe ouer the neceſsities of this life, ſhall for me bee eſteemed as much in theſe dayes, as *Demoſthenes* was in thoſe, for his eloquence, and *Vliſſes* for his wit.

Guzman *complaines of his mis-fortunes.*

My naturall diſpoſition was good; I was deſcended both by Father and Mother of a Noble and Honourable Stocke. This I could neither hide, nor loſe. And therefore I could not chooſe but ſhew of what houſe I came, by ſuffering iniuries with patience, the onely tryall of valiant minds. And as badde men, by good things, become worſe; ſo good men, by bad things, are made better; eſpecially, if they know how to make true vſe of the things of this world.

Who would haue thought, that ſo good ſeruice as I had done, ſhould haue receiu'd ſo bad a reward? And that vpon ſo light an occaſion, and when I did leaſt expect, I ſhould be thruſt out of all? But in anſwere hereof, thou vvilt happely ſay vnto me; Such is the world now a-dayes, that for the ſame very action, for the which at this preſent, a man is accounted a good ſeruant, an able Miniſter well ſeene in his Office, and to haue behaued himſelfe therein as he ought, ſhall againe at another time, for doing the very ſame thing, be neglected, ill thought of, diſgraced, and vndone. And all to this end, that either herein we may ſee the worlds incertainty, and vvhat errours it doth dayly runne into; or elſe be brought to confeſſe, That God, to thoſe, whom he hath predeſtinated to ſaluation, after ſinning, ſends repentance. O would to God, that I might be ſo happy, as to receiue onely a corporall puniſhment heere vpon earth.

My Maſter was now bent againſt me, his Wife had ſet him on, and he thereby ſo incenſed, and ſo apt to take hold of any occaſion, that euery the leaſt ſhutting of the eye, or but the wagging of a Straw, would haue beene matter inough of exception againſt me; and though I ſhould haue ſeru'd him neuer ſo vvell, neuer ſo truely, and laboured (as if my life had layne vpon it) not to giue him any the leaſt cauſe of diſlike, yet all would not ſerue the turne, hee was minded to put me from him, and I muſt be packing; faulty, or not faulty, all was one. Now I am throwne out into the ſtreet, perſecuted, and put away: What ſhall I doe? Whither ſhall I goe? Or what vvill become of me? Seeing I am thruſt out of doores for a Thiefe; who will now intertaine mee in his ſeruice? Who admit me into his houſe? Then did I begin to think of my former troubles; & how well I bore them out, by bearing of a Basket. I was wont to be a *Bunnolero*, a maker of Fritters, Bunnes, and Cracknels, and was now faine to follow mine old trade afreſh. It did not repent me, that I had bin in-vred to troubles; for from them I receiu'd my reliefe; and it is good ſometimes to take them patiently, and willingly, to the end that they that are driuen to neceſsity, may the better indure them, and not ſinke vnder the burthen of them, as many doe, becauſe they haue not been formerly vſ'd vnto them.

And becauſe they can neuer faile vs in this life, but doe ſtill wait vpon vs, it is fit that we ſhould be taught how to entertaine them, that wee may be the better able to beare them when they come. Beſides, they make a man ſubmit himſelfe to thoſe things, wherein afterwards he findes a great deale of good. There is no affliction ſo bitter, from which (if thou wilt) thou maiſt not in the end ſuck ſome ſweet iuice; nor no pleaſure ſo ſweet, whereof thou mayſt not feare ſome bitter end, ſaue onely in that of vertue. If vvhen I was ſo vvell accommodated to mine owne content, I had not before indured ſome ſtormes of Aduerſity, neuer in that faire weather of my Scullion-ſhip, ſhould I haue knowne how to Sayle in my putting forth from the Kitchen, but haue ſhewne my ſelfe a raw Mariner, and freſh-water-Pylot, nor haue found things ſo ready at hand, where-withall to helpe my ſelfe in time of need.

What

What vvould then haue become of me? Doeſt thou not ſee how troubled, how afflicted I ſhould haue been? and vvhat hard ſhifts I ſhould (poore wretch) haue been put to, when my Office vvas taken from me, not knowing which vvay to turne my ſelfe, what courſe to take, nor where to put my head? All that I got, I either plaid it away, or vniuſtly ſtole it. I had bought me neither goods nor land with it, neither houſe, nor cloathes, nor any thing wherewithall to couer me. All was ſpent and gone; As it came, ſo it went; in at one doore, and out at another; what I gain'd, that I loſt; vvhat I ſeru'd for, that I vvaſted: And as the Prouerbe is; I had *frutos (a) por penſion*, my fruits allotted me. Of euils, whereof the leaſt is the beſt, for all theſe mis-fortunes that befell me, my mayne ſtocke vvas ſtill remaining with me, to vvit, my loſt ſhame. For vvhat ſhould a poore man doe vvith ſhame? Baſhfulneſſe brings in no benefit. And the leſſe ſhame I had, the leſſe did thoſe errors grieue me, which I committed. I was now well knowne to all the Towne, and I had money in my purſe to buy me a Basket; but before I would reſolue to ſaddle it to my backe, I did night and day viſit my Maſters friends and acquaintance, to ſee if any of them vvould haue pity of me, and take me into their ſeruice. For I had learned now a little skill, and vvould haue beene glad to haue better'd my knowledge, that I might know how to liue another day. Some of them did relieue me a little, intertaining me with a piece of bread, or ſo.

But it ſeemed, they had heard ſuch things of mee, that they quickly diſmiſt me, hauing no minde in the vvorld to receiue mee into their ſeruice. Might ouercomes Right: And where force preuaileth, there the Law goes to vvracke.

With theſe diligences that I vſ'd, I had performed my duty, and complyde with that, vvherevnto I was bound, that I might not accuſe my ſelfe hereafter, of returning to my former courſe of life, out of meere idleneſſe, and for the auoyding of labour, and that I might not vvorke and take paines for my liuing. But I aſſure thee, that I lou'd it then, as one that had experience what Vice vvas; and knew very vvell, that by ſo much one man is more man then another, by how much the more he labours in ſome honeſt courſe of life. As the contrary may be ſaid of him that is idle. But a man can doe no more then he can doe; I did my endeuour. Nor doe I know how it comes to paſſe, that we deſiring to be good, yet we neuer come to be ſo; and though we propoſe it dayly and hourely vnto our ſelues, yet we doe not put it in execution in many yeeres; nay, not in all our life-time are we able to reach vnto it. And the reaſon is, becauſe, we either will not, or we do not think vpon any thing but the preſent. I began to beare my burthens, I did eate what was needfull, (for I neuer made my belly, my God) and a man ought not to eate more, then vvhat may ſuffice for the preſeruing of life. The exceſſe vvhereof is brutiſhneſſe. For it is the Beaſt that gluts himſelfe to grow fat.

By this my orderly dyet, and moderate feeding, my minde vvas not dull'd, my body was not weakened, I did nouriſh no ill humours, I did breed no diſeaſes, I had my health, I vvas ſound & luſty, and neuer wanted money to play.

In my drinking, I was very temperate, neuer vſing it but when I muſt needs, and then too very ſparingly; ſeeking to proportion my ſelfe to what was neceſſary; and to moderate my ſelfe in ſome meaſurable manner, as well, for that it was a thing naturall vnto me, and agreeable to my diſpoſition; as alſo for that drunkenneſſe, did (me thought) very ill become my Companions: Who depriuing themſelues of the ſence and reaſon of men, fall ſicke and ill: their heads turne to aking; their tongues, to hoarſeneſſe; their breathes, to ſhortneſſe, if not to noyſomeneſſe; their eyes, to a ſwolne ſettledneſſe, & dulneſſe of look; their legges, to making of Congees and Honours; their feet, to tripping of it this way, and that way, vvith countet-paces, now backward, then forward, as the Morris-bels in their braines ſhould deuiſe them their tune. But (which

(a) Frutos, por penſion: Quando del beneficio que vno tiene, da todos los frutos al penſionario, aviendole Sennalado la congrua. *Couarruuias verb. Fruto.*

(b) Donde la Fuerça oprime, La Ley ſe quiebra.

We ſtill deſire to be good, but neuer are good. And the reaſon why?

Orderly dyet, a wholeſome thing.

Moderate drinking, healthfull. The contrary, hurtfull.

Porters, and Basket-bearers, are for the moſt part, a baſe and brutiſh kinde of people.

(which exceedeth all other miſchiefes) this inhumane and ſottiſh Vice makes them a May-game to children, a laughing ſtocke to men, and a ſcorne to all the world. Such as theſe are Rogues, and for ſuch, let them goe, for they are no better then Rogues. And I doe not wonder at it. For all baſeneſſe whatſoeuer is ingrauen on their fore-heads, and is made iuſt fit to their meaſure, as being the off-ſcumme and refuſe of men.

A leſſon for Noble men, and Gentlemen.

But for men of worth, and ſuch as ſtand vpon their credit, as great and noble Perſons, and Gentlemen of qualitie, who ought to abſtaine from theſe diſorders; let them take heed, how they giue any ſuch ſcandall, to vvrong their Reputation.

The like for Church-men.

But for a Church-man to diſorder himſelfe, nay, but to goe a haires-breadth awry in this kinde: for ſuch a one (I ſay) it is not onely a diſorder, but hee comes within the compaſſe of being noted for a ſcandalous perſon, & a wronger of his profeſsion, which cannot but reſound much to his reproach. Let them themſelues be their owne Iudges, and ſpeake what they thinke of it, when they ſee themſelues thus ouer-taken. Doe they not, for to maintaine their abſurdities, ſeeke to excuſe themſelues by idle and fooliſh reaſons, and make, I know not what vn-ioynted ſequels, by which after one errour granted, they runne into a thouſand: and yet perſwade themſelues, that they, and none but they, are in the right? It is a ſhame to treat of it; infamy to vſe it; villany to cloake it, and a thing vnworthy men, not to hate, and abhorre it.

The Market-place, the Rogues burſe.

We had in the Place neere vnto *Santa Cruz*, our proper Manſion, bought, and repaired at other mens coſt. There were all the meetings and the Feaſts. I was vp with the Sunne, I diligently waited on thoſe Shops, and attended often on the Bakers; and if I wanted imploiment there, I got me into the Shãbles, to ſee what good I could do there. I made my harueſt in the morning, to ſerue me all the whole day after. The Pariſhioners there-abouts, that had no ſeruants of their owne for theſe buſineſſes, would hyre me to carry home their prouiſion for them. Which I did faithfully, and diligently, without wronging them the leaſt hayre of my head. No man of my place had more credit amongſt them, or was better truſted then my ſelfe. So that my Companions vvanted worke, whileſt I had inough for my ſelfe; and ſome other good-fellow my friend, whom I would make choyſe of to helpe me; who would be ſure to follow me cloſe at the elbow. Then we were but a few of vs, and wee went vp and downe from place to place: but now there are very many, the number is much increaſed, and all of them haue their hands full, and glad is he that can catch them vp firſt. And I can aſſure you, that there is not any Eſtate, that hath more inlarged it ſelfe, then that of the *Picaro's*; for all your Rogues apply themſelues to the bearing of Baskets, and carrying of Burthens, they count it a very good Trade, and theſe Rogues grow proud of it. And to this paſſe doth mis-fortune bring a man, that his Infamy, he makes his glory; his Baſeneſſe, he counts his Honour; and earneſt, he turnes to ieſt.

It ſo fell out, that there were certaine Companies of Souldiers to be raiſed, and Captaines appointed for the conducting of them. Now, when any ſuch thing happeneth, it is preſently ſpred abroad ouer all the Towne, euery corner of the ſtreet is full of it, and euery priuate houſe is made a Councell of State.

Porters, and Car-men, & the like baſe Rogues will not ſticke to talke of State-buſineſſes.

Nor doth that of your *Picaro's* ſleepe in the meane vvhile; euery Porter, and Basket-bearer will haue a hand in the Gouernment of the Common-wealth as well as other men; they will fall into diſcourſe of the buſineſſe, vent their opinions, and conclude, what things ought be done, how carried, and vvho fitteſt for the managing of theſe great affaires. Nor doe not thou thinke, that becauſe they are baſe in their qualitie and condition, that therefore they are the farther off from the Truth, or their intelligence the leſſe certaine. If thou doe, thou art much deceiued; for it is rather the quite contrary vvith them.

For

For it often-times ſo comes to paſſe, that they know the eſſentiall points of things, and participate of the ſecrets of State; and there is a great deale of reaſon for it. For, in regard of the vnderſtanding, ſome there are, nay, very many of them, who if they would applie it well, and accommodate it, as others doe, making the like vſe of it, haue it ſtrong and good. Beſides, ſithence that they goe all day long from one place to another, through diuers ſtreets, and into ſundry houſes, and being that they be ſo many, and ſo ſcattered and deuided ouer all the Towne; of many, they heare many things; and though it be vſually ſaid amongſt vs; (a) *Quot capita, tot ſenſus.* So many men, ſo many mindes. And though happily one, or ſay a hundred, ſhould ſhoot wide of the marke, and diſcharge the follies of their idle braines; yet doubtleſſe, there are others againe, that diſcourſe wiſely, and will come very neere vnto, if not hit the Pinne.

(a) Quantas Cabeças tantos pareceres.

Now we (hauing raked together all the newes of the whole Towne) when we are met together, and are ſitting at our ſupper, euery man opens his ſtore, and tels what hath paſt in Court, ſome relating one thing, and ſome another. Beſides, there is not that Victualing-houſe or Tauerne, but whatſoeuer hath beene talked of there, is brought to our eares. For there likewiſe are held your open Courts, and publike Aſſemblies, where all queſtions and doubts are winowed and ſifted to the full, nothing eſcapes their ſearch and inquirie; There they limit the Turks power, reforme Councels, and taxe your Miniſters of State.

In a word, there all things are made knowne, there all things are treated of, and they are the Law-giuers, that preſcribe rules to all; for they ſpeake all out of *Bacchus* his owne mouth, hauing *Ceres* for their Aſcendent, conuerſing with a full belly, and a free heart, and if the Wine (a) bee new, the Veſſell will runne ouer, it muſt needs worke, and can no longer hold. With that then, which we haue learned from others, wee come afterwards to ſit and determine of euery particular paſſage, euery man according to his ſeuerall opinion, ſetting downe his ſeuerall cenſure. One while we reſolue, that theſe Companies are to march towards *Italy*; and that went for good, and paſt the more currant amongſt vs, becauſe their Banners were aduanced towards *Mancha*, and were now farre entred into that Countrie, paſsing from *Almodouar* and *Argamaſilla*, along the skirts of the Kingdome of *Toledo*, till they had got to *Alcala de Henares*, and *Guadalajara*, compaſsing all the way as they went, the *Mediterranean* Sea.

In Vino veritas.
(a) Si el Vino es nueuo, hierue la tinaja.

Me thought, this was a very good occaſion for me to take hold on, for the executing of my former deſires, which with earneſt longings did mightily ſpurre me on to vndergoe this Voyage, that I might know mine owne blood, and whence I was deſcended, how I was alli'd, and of what qualitie my Parents and Kindred were. But I was ſo totter'd and torne, and ſo vtterly vnprouided of all things for this my intended iourney, that the bridle of Reaſon made me ſtop vpon my courſe, and held me backe from going farther forward, it ſeeming vnto me (vpon better deliberation) a thing impoſsible to be effected. But notwithſtanding, my minde ranne ſtill on nothing elſe.

Guzman, *deſirous to paſſe out of* Spaine *into* Italie.

This was ſtill in my head, and I could not beate it out. In the day time it was my ſtudie; and in the night I dream'd ſtill on that, and nothing but that. And if that Romane Prouerbe taketh place (*Si quieres ſer Papa, eſtampalo en la teſta*) if thou mindeſt to bee Pope, thou muſt haue him writ in thy forehead: it was truly verified in mee. For, as I was beating my braines about this buſineſſe, toſsing them a thouſand times to and fro, full of this ſolicitous care, I ſate me dovvne on the one ſide of the Place, neere vnto one of the Shops, vvhere my ſelfe, and this my other Aſſociate vvere vvont to make our *Rendeuous*; And leaning my cheeke (in a melancholy manner) vpon my hand, being fully reſolued to goe, though it vvere but in the place of a ſtragler,

Proverb.

ler, to vvaite vpon the Soldiers, and to carry their luggage for them, thinking this vvould be place good enough for me, if I could not light on a better.

Whileſt I was deuiſing this with my ſelfe, on the ſodaine I heard a voice, which ſaid; *Guzman, Guzmanillo?* I lookt about, and turned my face towards the place, from whence the voice came. And I perceiu'd at laſt, it was a Grocer, that ſtood vnder the walking place vnderſet with Pillars, that cal'd me vnto him, neere adioyning to the Butcher-row. I held vp my hand, and made a ſigne vnto him, that I would haſten thither. I got me vp, and came to ſee, what he would with me. He ſpake vnto me, and bid me open my Basket. I did ſo. That no ſooner done, but he throwes me into it, about ſome two thouſand fiue hundred *Royals* in Siluer and Gold, and in ſome few *Quartes*. I ask'd him; To what Braſier I ſhould carry this Copper? Copper, you rogue? Come, vp, and away with it, for I muſt goe pay it to a Merchant a ſtranger, that hath ſold me ſome Wares at my ſhop.

Guzman *reſolues to ſteale a ſumme of money, and puts it in execution.*

He ſaid one thing, and I thought another; which was, to ſhew him a tricke at the next turning. And beleeue me, the ioyfull newes of a deſired birth, did neuer come more welcome to the eares of a louing Father: Nor the Mariner beaten by tempeſt, did with more ioy diſcouer on the ſodaine the Harbour, that he ſought to put into: Nor any rendred Towne, to that famous Captaine that beſieg'd it, gaue ſo much content, nor had ſo ſweet a ſound with it, or afforded ſo pleaſing an Accent; as I conceiued then in my ſoule, hearing that ſweet and melodious voice of my Grocer, when he ſaid, (*b*) Open thy Basket. Me thought it was a braue word, they were letters of Gold ingrauen in my heart, leauing it full of ioy, but much more when they had qualifi'd themſelues, by actually putting me into a quiet and peaceable poſſeſsion of that, which I was perſwaded would be my beſt remedie.

(b) *The Spaniſh word is* Capacha: à Capacitate.

Vpon this luckie incounter, I began alreadie to diſpoſe of this money, and to change my courſe of life. I laded my ſhoulders with it, fayning; that it did weigh very heauie, but my heauines was the more, that there was no more of it. My honeſt Grocer, he (good man) goes afore, and I follow after, but with a wondrous deſire to meet with ſome throng, or preſſe of people in ſome ſtreet or other, or to ſlip aſide into ſome houſe, where I might effect my purpoſe. Fortune (as good lucke was) had, in the very nicke, fitted me with one, iuſt according to the meaſure of my deſire. For if I would haue wiſht for an opportunitie, I could not haue deſired a fairer. For as I was entring into the principall Gate, I got me away ſome three ſtreets from thence by a blinde Poſterne doore, and fetching boords from one corner to another, with ſomewhat a quicke, but not diſcompoſed pace, that I might the better auoid all ſuſpition, I went away gallantly, winding this way, and turning that way, till I had got to (*c*) *Puerta la Rega*, where I eaſed my ſelfe of my load, and made downe to the Riuer. From thence I croſt ouer to (*d*) *Caſa del Campo*, and being holpen by the night, I walkt (through a little thicket of Alder trees, Poplars, and other well-growne buſhes of thorne) a League farther: in the thickeſt part whereof I caſt Ankor, and had now pitcht my Standard, that I might with mature counſell thinke vpon things to come, and what fruit and benefit I might make of my late purchaſe. For it is not enough to begin well, nor to goe on well, but to end well. For to little vſe ſerue good beginnings, and better proceedings, vnleſſe they be crowned with proſperous endings. What good would this theft haue done me, if I had beene taken with it, but to loſe that, and with it, perhaps my eares, if not to haue beene (*e*) hang'd for my labour, if I had beene of yeeres? There I entred into conſultation with my ſelfe, what I were beſt to doe: I made triall where the water was deepeſt, and there where the buſhes were thickeſt, I made a deepe hole; and wrapping the money in the linings of my breeches and my doublet,

(c) *A chiefe Gate ſo called.*
(d) *A houſe of pleaſure belonging to the King of* Spaine, *not far from* Madrid.
(e) *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, auer comprado vn cabo de anno-i. La memoria y ſufragios, que ſe hazen por el difunto, cumplido el anno que muriò. *That is, the memoriall & ſuffrages, which are made for the dead, the yeere being fully ended after his death.* Couarruuias. Verb. Cabo.

doublet, I put it in, couering it ouer very handſomely with ſand and ſtones; ſetting vp a marke, that I might not forget the place where I had hid it, hankering there-abouts, that I might euer and anon haue an eie vpon it, for the ſpace of almoſt fifteene daies: And all becauſe I would not trouble my ſelfe hereafter in ſeeking for it ſome two foot neerer or farther off, which would haue beene as bad as death vnto me, if I ſhould not haue hapned to light vpon it, as ſoone as euer I had thruſt in my hand. And the rather, for that ſome nights I went from thence to the neighbouring places there-abouts, to get me ſome victuals for three or foure daies, returning preſently backe againe to my old haunt, keeping my ſelfe cloſe, after the Sunne once began to peepe forth, in that Wood adioyning to the (a) *Pardo*.

Hither, in this manner as you ſee, had I with-drawne my ſelfe, till the Hue and Crie were paſt and gone, which vndoubtedly was made after mee. Now by this time, they had loſt my footing, and I conceiuing with my ſelfe, that the Coaſt was now cleere, and that I might ſafely paſſe, that I might remoue my Tent, and march forward, I made me vp a little fardle of the old linings that were left of my Ierkin, wherein I had cloſely lapt vp this my heart-blood. So that I had nothing now left me, ſaue the old linings of my Breeches, a poore ragged Doublet, and a Shirt all torne and full of holes, but alas white and cleane as a curd, for I had lately waſht them. So that I was apparelled all in white, being wonderfull well fitted for to make vp one in a (b) Morris-dance. I got me two delicate fine walking Cudgels, which I had cut my ſelfe, and pill'd off the Rinde, and made as ſmooth and neat as could be deuiſed. On the one, I hung the precious bundle, which I bare at my backe; the other I made a Truncheon of it, to carrie in my hand. I was now fat and full fed, and began to grow wearie of being any longer a Conie in that Warren, fearing leſt one of the Keepers, or ſome other Ferreter, ſhould finde me there in the Berrie, and pull me out as a ſuſpicious perſon; To preuent that, I began to take my iourney by night, when it was darke, going out of the rode-way, taking croſſe, pathes, by-places, and vntrodden tracks, paſsing thorow *La Sagra de Toledo*, a certaine Territorie belonging to that kingdome, till I came two leagues beyond it, to a little place that ſtood in a bottome called *Açuqueica*, ; whither I had reached betimes in the morning. There I reſted my ſelfe vnder the ſhadow of certaine Quince-trees, where I meant to ſpend that day. Where e're I was aware, I found hard by me a prettie young ſtripling, much about my pitch. He ſeemed to be ſome Citizens ſonne, who out of ſome vn-aduiſed conſideration as mine was, had forſaken his Parents to trauell abroad, and goe ſee the world; He carried his Fardle at his backe, and being but a young nouice, bred vp daintily, and newly taken from his mothers teat, the Milke yet hanging on his lips, was wearie of his burthen, and himſelfe ſeemed heauie, in hauing ſo heauie a load: ſure, he had no great minde to returne home againe to his friends; and as little, that they ſhould finde him out. He walk't as I did, in the day thorow Groues and thickets, and in the night along the high-way, ſeeking couert, where to ſhrowde himſelfe. Which the rather I gheſſe to be ſo, for that, from our arriuall there, vntill it were night, that we were to depart, he did not budge a foot from the place where I was. When we were to goe our waies, taking vp his Fardle very heauily, he let it fall againe to the ground, ſaying, Gods curſe goe with thee, a little thing would make mee to leaue thee here behinde mee.

Now, I muſt tell you by the way, that we had had ſome talke together before, and exchanged (as occaſion offred) good ſtore of words, taking account one of another of our Voyages, and what, and whence we were; He did not deale truly with me, and I would not confeſſe my ſelfe to him; For by mine owne lies, I knew thoſe that he told me. And ſo wee were both payd in our owne

(a) Pardo *is a houſe of pleaſure, ſeated in a Wood, belonging to the King of* Spaine, *neere to* Madrid. *It comes from the word* Pardes, Paradiſus, id eſt, hortus domeſticus arboribus conſitus, Pomarium. *And amongſt other ſignifications, it is taken for a Parke.* Genebrard *vpon the* Cantic. *ſaith*, Pards vocabulum eſt Perſicum, quod in omnes fere linguas manauit pro horto pretioſo & delicioſo omnium arborum genere conſito. Couarruuias. Verb. Pardo.

(b) *The Spaniſh phraſe, is* Danſa de eſpadas. *A dance much vſed in the Kingdome of* Toledo; *they dance it in their ſhirts, and Breeches of Linnen, and night-Caps on their heads, & bright Swords; it is full of changes, and one amongſt the reſt, which they call* Degollada; proque cercan el cuello del que los quia con las eſpadas, y quando pareçe que ſe la van à cortar por todos partes, ſe les eſcurre de entre ellas. Ξιφισμὸς ſiue, βαλλιμαχία. Couarru.

owne coyne. All that I could ſucke from him, was; that he acquainted me with his wants.

Now finding the coniuncture good, and the diſtaſte great, which he had taken at that heauy burthen which he bore at his backe; but much more, that his purſe was ſo light, I began to coniecture with my ſelfe, that it might haply be a ſute of cloathes: Wherevpon, I askt him, what luggage was that he carried, which did giue him ſo much trouble, and made him ſo weary? Hee told me it was a ſute of apparell. This ſuted well with my deſires; the induction (me thought) was good. Therevpon, I proceeded farther, and told him; Sir, I could giue you reaſonable good counſell, if you would bee willing to accept of it. He intreated me to giue it him, and that finding it to be ſuch, he ſhould be very thankefull vnto me for it.

My aduice then vnto him, was; That ſince he went laden with that, which as yet he had no great need of, nor would it much import him, if he had, that he ſhould rid himſelfe of it, and haue recourſe to that, which might be more neceſſary for him. Heere you carry a wardrop, or what elſe ſo euer it be, about you; I would wiſh to ſell it, and put it in your purſe; for beſides that it will weigh leſſe, you ſhall make your profit of the money you ſhall receiue for it.

The yong Youth diſcreetiy replyde, (for your *Toledanos* haue paſsing good wits:) This aduice of yours I like well, and would follow it; but I hold it impertinent for the preſent. And *Conſejo, ſin remedio, es cuerpo ſin alma.* Counſell, without a cure, is a body, without a Soule. What doth it import me to ſell it, if I want a Chapman to buy it? I haue no occaſion to goe into any Town, either to truck for it, or to ſell it, and no body will buy it of mee, that does not know me.

Prouerb.

Then I demanded of him; what pieces they were that hee had in his packe? He told, they were certaine cloathes for change, when he was minded to ſhift thoſe others that hee had on his backe. I askt him of the colour, and whether it had beene much worne? He anſwered mee, that it vvas a mingled colour, and reaſonable good. This pleaſ'd me better and better, I could not diſlike of it: Therevpon, I offred him preſent paiment, if the cloathes did fit me.

The Youth beganne to looke ſadly vpon me, as one that had beene ſtrooke into a muze, and fell to eye me from top to toe; for all that I had on my back, was not worth ſo much thred as would ſerue to binde vp a farthing-worth of Saffron, it was not worth one poore ſmall Comin-ſeed, and yet I ſhould haue the face to offer him money for his cloathes.

This imagination was mine owne; and it may be, it entred into his conceit, that I was a little young thiefe, and that I would put ſome tricke or other vpon him. For he ſtood in ſuſpence, conſulting with himſelfe, whether hee vvere beſt to ſhew them vnto me, or no? For hee knew not how to truſt me. And my faſhion vvas then ſuch, that he could not hope, nor ſurmize, that any good thing ſhould come from me. So much difference is there betweene good and bad cloathes, that it giues either a good or a badde preſumption of a mans perſon, according to that old Adage; *Qual te hallo, tal te juzgo.* As I find you, ſo I take you. For where knowledge doth not informe, there the habit doth qualifie. But this Prouerbe is oft checkt: *Que debaxo de mala capa, ſuele auer buen vinidor.* Vnder a thred-bare cloake, lyes many times much learning. And beggerly bottles oftentimes hold rich Wines. I did preſently apprehend his thought, as if I had been within him; And that I might reduce him to a better opinion of me, and alter his conceit, I ſaid vnto him; My pretty little Youth, I would haue you know, that I am as good a man as your ſelfe, and euery way as well borne, though I haue forborne till now to giue you account what I am; but becauſe thou mayſt lay aſide all feares and

Prou.

iealou-

iealoufies, I am now minded thou ſhalt haue it. My natiue ſoyle is *Burgos*; there was I borne, and thence did I ſet forth, (as thou doeſt now,) reaſonable well acoutred. I haue already done that, which I now aduiſe thee vnto: I ſold my cloathes, as hauing then no need of them, and with that money which I had for them, together with that which I brought from home, I will buy me other, when I ſhall come, where I haue occaſion to vſe them. And by being carefull in looking well to my money, (hiding it in ſome ſecret place about me,) and by trauelling vpon the way in theſe totter'd ragges, (which I now haue on) I ſecure my life, and paſſe freely to and fro.

A poore man liues ſecure from harme.

For no man will ſet vpon him that is poore. Hee liues ſafely, and dwels in places vn-peopled, and diſ-inhabited, without any feare at all of theeues that ſhould come to robbe him, or murderers to aſſault him on the way, and take his life from him. If therefore you haue any minde to it, ſell mee what you haue no need of, and doubt not my paiment, for I am well able to doe it. I am neere to *Toledo*, whither I am bound; I would gladly goe in a little handſomer, and not in this baſe and vile habit that I haue now about mee. The Youth vndid his Fardle, takes me out a Cloake, a payre of Breeches, a Caſſocke, two Shirts, and a paire of Silke Stockins, all as fit for me, as if they had been made of purpoſe for me.

I agreed with him for a hundred *Royals*, nor were they worth any more; for although the cloathes were well vſ'd, and little worne, yet the cloth was none of the fineſt. I ript open the one ſide of my bundle, and tooke out thence as many *Quartes* as ſeru'd the turne; which gaue him no ſmall trouble, when he perceiu'd the baſeneſſe of the money; for though it went againſt his ſtomake to beare any more burthens, yet he could by no meanes excuſe it. But he comforted himſelfe with this, that it was lighter then the other, and more vſe-full vpon all occaſions. The bargaine ended, we ſhooke hands, and parted. He went to ſeeke his fortune, I know not whither. And I that night, though late, entred *Toledo*.

CHAPTER VIII.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *cloathing himſelfe like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes loue to certaine Gentle-women: He telleth how things paſt with them, and how there, and in* Malagon *they ſcorned him; He diſcourſeth of youthfull iollity, and of the craft and ſubtilty of your Spaniſh Women; Which may ſerue for an Inſtruction, and Warning to all yong men.*

Prou.

IT is a common ſaying; *Que aunque viſtan a la mona de ſeda, mona ſe queda.* An Ape, though he bee cladde in gold, will be an Ape ſtill. And this is ſo infallibly true, that it admitteth no exception. A man may eaſily alter his Habit, but hardly change his euill conditions. Hee may intertaine and deceiue folkes with his cloathes, though hee himſelfe be ſtarke naked, and ſtript of all goodneſſe. I will preſently turne Gallant, and as ſoone returne againe to my old trade; bee a Gentleman to day to morrow a Porter. For, hee that knowes not how to liue by the ſweat of his browes, muſt quickly fall into pouerty, as you ſhall ſee in the ſequell of this Story.

Guzman *comes to* Toledo, *and puts himſelfe into handſome apparel*

The firſt thing that I did the next morning, was the altring of my Doublet, my Shooes, and my Hat; I tooke off that Taffata, that was on the Cape of my Cloake, and put on other of another colour; I clapt new buttons vpon my Caſſock; I tooke off the ſleeues that were of Cloth, and in their ſtead ſet to others, that were of Silke: ſo that with a little coſt, I had quite altred the fa-

ſhion of thoſe cloathes I had lately bought; fearing leſt for my ſinnes-ſake, or by ſome other mis-fortune, I might be taken in ſome trap, and ſo come to pay both for this, and the laſt yeeres reckning. For if (by chance) this young Youths friends ſhould ſend after him, and make inquiry for him; and ſhould hap to light vpon me, and finde his cloathes on my backe, they would preſently ſuſpect, that I had kill'd him to get his cloathes, and ſo demand their loſt child of me, and driue me to giue them an account, what was become of him.

When I had fitted my ſelfe to my minde, I walked vp and downe the City ſome two dayes together, making inquiry, where, or in what place were any Companies of Souldiers, that were to goe vpon ſeruice, but could not of any heare any certaine newes. Thus I went beating the ayre, as one that was idle, and had nothing elſe to doe.

And as I paſt by (a) *Socodouer*, (which I croſt but ſeldome, and that with feare: and if I went out of my lodging, it was againſt my will, and that late, not ſleeping three nights in one place, leſt, if any man ſhould chance to know me, I might be apprehended and carried to priſon:) it was my hap to ſee a Gentleman, mounted on a Mule, to croſſe the way, going (as it ſhould ſeeme) to the Court, ſo handſomely clad, and ſo well ſuted, that I did enuy his gallantry. His breeches were of Murry Veluet, cut with ſome-what a long, but delicate fine cut, drawne out vpon Cloth of Siluer: His doublet of Cloth of Gold, vpon which he had a Buffe Ierkin, laid on with a coſtly Milane-Lace, ſome three fingers broad. Hee had a braue Hat, anſwerable to the reſt; imbroidered about the brimmes, and well ſet forth with it's Feather, and vvas not a little graced by the Hat-band, which was ſet thicke with Gold-Buttons, inammeled with blacke.

This Gentleman rode [b] *en cuerpo*, in his Hoſe and Doublet. But in his *Port-Manteau* he had a Cloake, which (if I be not deceiued) was of Raſh, or elſe of fine Cloth, of like colour to his Hoſe, rounded about, with a broad Parchment Gold Lace, ſutable to that of his Ierkin. Theſe good cloathes of his ſet an edge on my appetite. And ſeeing I had not got my money by Thraſhing, but came by it ſo eaſily, it began to laugh and tighie in my purſe, it geered and it fleered, and (like a little yong Diuell) went gingle, gingle, gingle.

When I ſaw my purſe was ſet vpon this merry pin, I could hold no longer for my heart, but brake preſently with him, and told him in good earneſt, If you haue a minde to dance, I ſhall not ſticke to pype vnto you: And if you will not leade on merrily of your owne accord, I ſhall be as loth to keepe you any longer company. And therefore I vvould wiſh you to accompliſh this my deſire, ſatisfying mee herein, and that quickly, without any farther delay.

Heerevpon I vvent forth-with to a Merchants ſhop, bought all things fitting, called a Taylor vnto me, and cauſed him to cut out my cloathes, who made ſuch good haſte, that he was (as the phraſe is) *ni oydo, ni viſto*; neither heard, nor ſeene. It was finiſhed in a trice, before any words vvere made of it, or any eye had ſeene it. For in three dayes, he brought it me home, and put it on my backe; being iuſt the ſame with the other, and as like, as like could be, all ſaue the Buffe Ierkin, which becauſe I could not meet with a good one according to my minde, I made me one of Murrey Sattin, trimm'd with trenſils of Gold. My Garters were of Straw-colour, fringed about with Gold Lace, and purled with Spangles. So that now I did ſcarce know my ſelfe; I vvas growne ſo fine on the ſudden; all was in very good order, and my ſelfe not a little proud of it.

Now I had no more to doe, but to ſet a good face on the matter: and to ſay the truth, for a good face; when I was a Boy, there were few that had a better. For I was very vvell-fauour'd, my eye quicke, and my countenance throughout very pleaſing. When I ſaw what a gallant Souldier I was growne, I did

(a) Socodouer *is the great Market-place in* Toledo. *Compounded of* Saca, *that is a place; and* dequeuir, *which ſignifies, great; which put together, makes* Sacadqueuir, *and by corruption* Socodouer. Diego de Vrrea *ſaith, it comes from* Sacud de vatr. *A word compounded of* Scicun, *which is, a place; and of the Verbe* Saca, *which is to draw; & from* deuair, *which ſignifieth all kind of foure-footed Beaſts for burthen. So that* Socodouer, *is as it were a place, where beaſts are brought laden with victuals, and other prouiſion, to ſell in the open Market.* Couarruuias.

(b) *A man is ſaid to be* en Cuerpo, *when he goes without a Cloake, being in his bare Hoſe and Doublet.* Guzmans *vaine and idle humour.*

I did proudly iet it about the ſtreets of *Toledo*, in a very good Equipage, as if I had beene the ſonne of ſome principall Man of note. I likewiſe entertained to attend on my perſon, a pretie handſome Page, and well clad; and I fell into acquaintance with one that was well skill'd in the faſhions of that Countrie, and ſpake excellent language.

I conceited then with my ſelfe (ſeeing my ſelfe thus inthronized, and ſo well accoutred) that my Father was aliue againe, and that I was reſtored to thoſe proſperous times, wherein I was borne: I thought my ſelfe the happieſt man in the world, and tooke ſuch delight in my gay clothes, that a nights I was loth to put them off, and a daies, I left no ſtreet vntrodden, to the end that all might ſee me; though I would not, that any ſhould know me. I got me vp betimes one Sunday morning, put on a proud and ſtately gate, and in all this my gallantrie ſtept me with a iolly preſence into the Cathedrall Church, for to heare Maſſe, though (let me whiſper it in your eare) I went thither more (I feare me) for oſtentation, then deuotion; not ſo much to heare, as to be ſeene. I walkt round about the Church ſome three or foure times at leaſt; I viſited the Chappels, (which were moſt reſorted vnto) till at laſt I came betweene the two Quires, where I ſtaid: There I ſaw many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and a great many of Gallants. But I did ſtrut and ſet forth my ſelfe, as if I had beene the only Cocke of the game, and all the reſt Crauens; none of their combes nor feathers were ſo goodly (me thought) as mine owne. I did put them downe all for a braue ſuit of clothes. And like a bonny-Shepheard, made ſhow of all the whole fleece, as one that was very willing, that they ſhould take a generall ſuruey both of my perſon, and Apparell, not debarring their eies of thoſe leſſer obiects, as my girdle, garters, and ſhoo-ties, which were all *del Tudeſco*, curious and delicate worke, right *Flanders*.

The Spaniard hath naturally a proud kinde of gate.

I ſtretcht forth my necke, bore out my breſt, ſtood ſtiffe vpon my legs, aduancing one while this, and then that other foot; carrying my ſelfe in that vaine and idle faſhion, that euery one at laſt had found me out, and obſeruing the ſtrangeneſſe of my looks my Mimick geſtures, and often change of Poſtures, they began to ieſt and ſcoffe at my folly. But as long as they lookt vpon me, I ne're lookt into that; nor did I ſo much as once perceiue, that my faults were the ſtrings whereon their laughter plaid. But I rather thought with my ſelfe, that they did admire my curioſitie, and my gallantrie.

And this is all, that offers it ſelfe to be ſpoken of concerning the men. But a prettie accident hapned vnto me amongſt the women, not vnworthy ſuch fooles as my ſelfe; and this it was: Two amongſt the reſt were preſent there at that time, one of the which (being borne in that Citie, and of extraordinarie beautie) fixed her eies vpon my perſon, (or to ſpeake more truly) vpon my purſe; perſwading her ſelfe, that I that had ſuch good clothes, could not chooſe but haue good ſtore of money. But for the preſent, I tooke no notice of that, nor did I care to caſt an eye towards her, becauſe I had ſwallowed the others baite, that ſate on the other ſide. Who hauing made (as children vſe to doe) ſome ſignes vnto her with my finger, ſmild vpon me, and caſt a kinde of ſlie looke towards me. I thought that was enough, and that the goale was already gotten. I perſeuered in my ignorance, and ſhe in her cunning carriage, till that going out of the Church, ſhe went home to her houſe, and I after her, walking leiſurely along. I ventur'd vpon her, and falling into diſcourſe with her, vented ſome of my fooleries: But ſhe, (as if ſhe had beene made of ſtone) anſwered me not a word, nor riſented nothing that I ſaid vnto her: yet for all this ſhe did not ſticke now and then to turne her head aſide towards me, and to diſcouer her face vnto me, which was the fire, that did burne me aliue. At laſt we come to a ſtreet, neere vnto the (a) *Solana* of *St. Cyprian*, where ſhee dwelt. And as ſhe entred into her houſe, it ſeemed (ſtooping to goe in) that ſhee

Guzman *caught with a looke, and a ſmile.*

(a) Solana, Corredor de Sol. Solarium. Verb. Solana. Couarruuias

ſhee made me a kinde of reuerence and courtſie with her head; and me thought her eies laughed as it were vpon me, and her countenance ſhewd it ſelfe very cheerefull. With this (for this time) I left her, and returned backe to my lodging the ſame way I came. But I had not gone many ſteps, but it was my hap to ſpie a young Wench that had taken vp her ſtanding at the corner of the ſtreet, who had wrapt her ſelfe vp ſo cloſe in her Mantle, that you could ſcarce perceiue the eyes of her. This Wench had dogg'd me, and putting only forth thoſe her two leſſer fingers of her faire hand, with them and her head, ſhe call'd and beckned me vnto her. I came vnto her, to know what ſhe would be pleaſed to command me. Who made a long diſcourſe vnto me, telling me that ſhe was ſeruant to ſuch a married Gentlewoman, a woman of very good faſhion, and principall qualitie, to whom I was much obliged, and could not out of nobleneſſe, but thinke my ſelfe much bound vnto her, for the extraordinarie loue which ſhe bare vnto me.

The cunning of your Spaniſh women.

And therefore, as well in regard of this her good affection towards my ſelfe, as alſo in reſpect of her owne condition, (being ſo great and ſo worthy) and the ſtrength of her Alliance and Kindred, which were men of no meane power and eſtimation in thoſe parts; that I would be pleaſed to acquaint her where I lodged, becauſe ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſſe to treat with me, and muſt needs ſpeake with me, for it did much concerne her ſo to doe. I was ſo taken with this, that I had much adoe (as they ſay) to keepe my ſelfe from leaping out of mine owne skinne; nor would I haue chang'd this good fortune of mine, with the beſt that euer befell *Alexander* the Great: Soothing and flattering my ſelfe with this vaine conceit, that all the Ladies and Gentlewomen in the Towne were falne in loue with me, and now began to ſtriue who ſhould inioy me firſt.

To this her meſſage, I returned a very graue & demure anſwer, with a gratefull acknowledgement of this her offred (though vndeſerued) fauour, which when ſhe ſhall be pleaſed to make me worthie thereof, I ſhall thinke my ſelfe not only the moſt graced, but the moſt fortunate, and happieſt man in the world. In this conuerſation, by little and little, we draw neere to my Lodging. She tooke notice of it, and leaue being taken each of other, I get me in to dinner, for it was more then time.

Now, for that I knew not what this Gentlewoman was, and had neuer ſeene her heretofore (to my knowledge) my longing was not ſo great to looke after her, as was my deſire to ſee this other. I thought euery houre a thouſand yeere, till I might come to ſee her againe; Time (me thought) was too ſlow of wing, his Glaſſe did not runne faſt enough, his Sithe did not ſweepe away the loytring houres halfe ſo ſpeedily, as I could haue wiſhed. Yet at laſt I hie me to the ſtreet where ſhe dwelt, beſtowing there more turnes, and circling more rounds about her houſe, then a Mill-horſe, or a Mule that drawes in an (a) *Anoria*; yet at laſt, when it grew ſomewhat late, and the day ſhut vp, ſhe came forth (as by ſtealth) to talke with me from her window. Then did we enter diſcourſe, and exchang'd many words; at laſt ſhe told me, that I muſt needs that night come and ſup with her. I commanded my ſeruant to prouide me a good fat Capon, a brace of Partridge, a baked Conie, a bottle of the Wine (b) *del Santo*, and as good bread as could be got for money, fruits and other the like things for the latter courſe, and that he ſhould make haſte, and bring them away with him.

(a) Anoria, *is an engine that goes with wheeles, to draw water out of a Well.*
Some would haue it to come from Anno, *a yeere. For as the Sunne paſſing thorow the twelue Signes, cauſeth the yeere, and brings it about anew: So that Wheele, when it is downe at the loweſt, comes about againe.*

Some ſay it is compounded of am, circum; *and* haurio, *taking vp the water as it turnes about. Others, of* ava, ſurſum *and* ρέω, fluo, *becauſe it cauſeth the water below, to come vp. Others from the word* Annuere, *To incline. Others, from* ἀναφύσας, Reſtauro, reſtituo, renouo. *Becauſe when they are emptie, they come to be fill'd afreſh. Others of the word,* ἀντλία, Hauſtoria, *which ſignifieth* Anoria, quaſi Antloria. *Of the Verbe* Antlo, antlas. Diego de Vrrea *ſaies, it is an Arabicke word, of the Verbe* Neuare, *to goe round, making a noiſe, as* Anoria *doth.* Padre Guadix, *that it is called* Noria, *from* Naura, *which is as much as a wheeling, or turning about.* Couarru. (b) Vino del Santo, *a rich kinde of Wine, as famous about* Toledo; *as that of* Ayon Nantueil *in* France.

After

After that the night was well in, thinking it was now high time, I went to the place appointed, where I was kindly receiued, and entertained with all the kindeneſſe and courteſie that could be deuiſed. It was now a fit houre for ſupper, and therefore intreated her, that ſhe would command the Table to be couered. But ſhe finding out freſh matter to worke vpon, and ſpending the time in new entertainements, ſpunne out the thred ſtill longer and longer, adding one delay to another; I maruail'd a God what ſhe meant by it; I knew not in the world what to make of it.

At laſt, whileſt I was muſing vpon it, ſhe puts me into a Labyrinth, beginning to tell me that ſhe was a Virgin, her deſcent Noble, her condition and qualitie, of thoſe of the beſt ranke, and that ſhe had a brother, an vnruly young fellow, ill gouern'd, and worſe-condition'd, ſubiect to ſwaggering, and to quarrelling; a kinde of roaring-Boy; one that neuer came within doores, vnleſſe it were ſometimes to his dinner or his ſupper, and all the reſt both day and night, hee ſpent in play, and other youthfull pleaſures.

Whileſt we were in this deepe diſcourſe, behold, one knocks aloud at the doore. Shee cries out, Ay me! what ſhall I doe? I am vndone, I am vndone. So much was ſhe moued, ſo diſtractedly troubled with this feigned perturbation, ſo good a face did ſhe ſet vpon this falſhood, and did diſſemble this her paſsion ſo handſomely, that ſhe might haue therewith deceiued a wiſer, and better experienced man then my ſelfe. And though this Gentlewoman knew very well, both the end and the meanes, whereby all this buſineſſe was to bee carried, yet did ſhe play her part ſo well, that ſhe ſeemed to be mightily afflicted, as one that knew not which way to turne her ſelfe. And as if then preſently that remedie had occurr'd vnto her, (as a thing ſuddenly thought vpon) ſhe deſired me of all loues to put my ſelfe for a while into a (a) *Tinaja*, that had no water in it, yet was it not without ſome droppings, and a kinde of ſlimineſſe hanging about the ſides of it, and that none of the cleaneſt. This earthen Veſſell ſtood in the outward Court vnder the Porch. I got in as well as I could, as willing to doe what ſhe would haue me; ſhe claps a Lid ouer it, and when ſhe had ſo done, ſhe returnes to her *Eſtrado*, ſhee was ſcarce ſet, but her brother comes in; who ſeeing ſuch a great ſmoake in the houſe, ſaid vnto her; Why how now ſiſter, what meane you by this? are you turn'd Gallant, and thinke to out-braue me with this ſmoake? it is maruell you doe not let the raine drip in to driue mee hence. What haue wee to ſupper? ſo much ſmoake muſt promiſe much good cheere. It is not I trow, a great deale of fire (as they ſay) and a little roaſt.

And as he went thus talking along, he entred into the Kitchen; where he had no ſooner ſeene our prouiſion, but he gets him out againe, ſaying; Here's braue doings indeed; it is newes to ſee this, Siſter. Which of vs two, I pray, is to be married this night? How came this hither into the houſe, and when? What curious banquet is this, or who the gueſts that are inuited vnto it? Is this the confidence I haue had of you? Is this the honour which I maintaine? and this the reputation, that you giue to your Fathers houſe, and to me your vnfortunate brother? I muſt know the truth of this buſineſſe, or elſe it is like to be a blacke night. She excuſed her ſelfe vnto him, but how or which way, I cannot tell you; for partly through feare, and partly becauſe the *Tinaja* was couered, I could not well either heare or vnderſtand more then the noiſe which her words ſent forth. And in this chollericke humour of his, being much offended with her, he willed her to ſit downe at boord. And when they had ſupt, he in his owne perſon went downe with a Candle, and fell to ſearching of the houſe, and had made faſt the doore, that opened out into the ſtreet: And they two entring together into their priuat chambers, remained there within, and I without in the *Tinaja*. All this while I was very attentiue to whatſoeuer was ſaid or done, and earneſtly betooke my ſelfe to my deuotions,

(a) Tinaja, *a large wide Veſſell of earth, as big as a Tunne.* Antonius *drawes it's Etymologie from* Tinea. Alio nomine, Dolium. *In* Spaine *they vſually fill them with water, with Oyle, with Wine, or the like.*

deuotions, insomuch, that there was not any one prayer that I had learned all my life-time, that I did not runne ouer and ouer, that God might blind his eyes, and that he might not see where I was.

And finding my selfe out of danger, lifting vp the couer, I thrust out my head a little to see whether my Mistresse were comming, or that I could heare her either cough, or spet, whether any Cat were stirring about the house, or any thing else whatsoeuer. Euery thing that mou'd, my minde still gaue mee that it should be she. But seeing that she staid so long away, and that the house was wonderfull quiet, I leapt out of the belly of my *Tinaja*, like another *Ionas* out of the Whales, though not so cleane as I could wish.

But it was my good hap, that for feare of such mischances, which are wont to happen, especially to young-men, I had reserued my better cloathes for the day, making vse a nights of that old Sute, which I had bought before, so that the care I tooke was not great, and it did so much the lesse grieue me. I ranged round about the house, and went from lodging to lodging, till I came at last to her Chamber, where I beganne with my finger to scratch the doore, like a dogge; and did the like vpon the floore, and all that she might heare me: but this deafe Adder, was of that euill condition, that she had stopt her eares.

In this kinde of language the night wore away, and the day beganne to appeare: which when I perceiued, inraged, afflicted, desperate, and ready to freeze for cold, opening the street doore, and pulling it after mee, I went forth (like a foole as I was) cursing and blaspheming, (a) fretting and fuming, and making crosses on the wall, with a purpose neuer to come there any more.

Musing vpon my mis-fortunes, I drew neere to mine owne lodging, finding not farre from thence a Cookes shop open, where I fill'd my belly with Pyes, such as are eaten by such *Picaros* and Rogues, as my selfe, which were to mee more sauoury, then any other. And with them, that rage, and wrathfull choller descended downe into my stomake, which stucke before in my throat, and was ready to choke me. My lodging was neere at hand, I called to my seruant, who (waiting there for me) opened the doore; I came in, put off my cloathes, and got me to bed. But the remembrance of the wrong that I had receiued, would not suffer me to sleepe, nor to take any rest. One while I condemn'd my selfe, another while my Mistresse, and by fits would lay the blame vpon mine owne ill fortune.

And while I was debating these things with my selfe, it being now broad day, behold, one knockes at my Chamber doore, and it was the Maid that had dogg'd me the day before, and her Mistresse with her, who was no sooner come in, but she sets her selfe downe in a Chaire, close by my bed-side, and her seruant that waited on her, sate vpon the ground neere vnto the doore. The Gentle-woman askt me a long Story of my life; Who I was? what my business? and how long I stayd in Towne? But the Diuell a word of truth, that she could get from my mouth. All that I told her, were arrant lyes; for I was made of nothing else. And thinking to deceiue her, she caught me in the trap. I went satisfying of her demands, but fell short (I know not how) in that part of mine account, which concerned me most. For, whereas I should haue said, That I was to reside there some certaine moneths. I told her that I past as a Traueller, and was shortly to be gone. She, that she might not lose the aduantage of the Dice, and to shew what a poore gamester I was, in seeking after such transitorie sport, that was to last so little awhile, (but a cast, and away) made sure account, if I would but set out her hand liuely, to put a tricke vpon mee. And thereupon, she presently began to pitch the Hay, wherewith shee meant to catch the Conie.

Thus resolued, she careleslely, (or rather with a great deale of careless care) went discouering her brauery in her cloathes, which was neat and delicate, with rich abilliments of Gold, with other things vnder her gowne, which was

(a) *The Spanish phrase is*, Echando mantas, y no de lano. *Casting abroad Couerlets, but not of Woall: i. vsing bayry and harsh words, not milde and soft words, like woall.*

This is an ordinarie fashion in Spaine.

was of Naples Grogram, choyſer Silke all *Italy* was not able to afford.

And taking out certaine Beads of Corall out of her pocket, ſhe made ſhew of playing with them in her hand, toſsing them to and fro; and within a little while after, ſhe feigned that ſhe miſt a Relicke, which was faſtened therevnto. She ſeemed to be much afflicted for the loſſe of it, ſaying, that it vvas her husbands. And therewithall ſhe ſuddenly roſe vp, as if it did import her to goe backe againe preſently to her owne houſe, that ſhe might loſe no time for the finding of it againe, if by chance ſhe had there let it fall. And albeit I promiſed to giue her ſuch another, and perſwaded her all that I could, and made her large offers, I could not winne her to ſtay any longer.

Away ſhe went, yet paſsing her vvord vnto me, that ſhe would come again to viſit me, and ſend her Maid backe againe vnto mee, as ſoone as ſhee came home, to aduiſe me, if ſhe had found her loſt Iewell. It made me very melancholly, and grieu'd me much, that ſhe ſhould in this faſhion go away from me; for that (as I told you before) ſhee was maruellous beautifull, exceeding gallant, and wonderfull diſcreet. I had a great minde to ſleepe, and ſettled my ſelfe to take ſome reſt, but I could not continue it for aboue two houres. I had too many cares in my head to take any eaſe, and therefore I aroſe, that I might thinke the better of them, vvhen I was vp.

By that time I had made my ſelfe ready, dinner came in; & while I vvas yet ſitting at the table, her Maid entred the roome. Who (being a witty Wench as ſhe vvas) intertain'd me till dinner vvas ended. And then ſhe told me, that ſhe was once more come back againe to ſee, whether her Miſtris, playing there with her *Roſario* in her hand, had by chance let fall that piece? Wee were all downe vpon our knees, to ſee if we could haue the good lucke to finde it; but it could not be found, becauſe it was neuer loſt.

When we had giuen ouer looking, I complemented with her, and told her, that I did not grieue ſo much for the worth of the thing it ſelfe, as for her ſake, whoſe it was.

Then did ſhe figure forth vnto me the bigneſſe, the proportion, and the true faſhion of it, obliging mee with good words, to buy her ſuch another; promiſing, that her Miſtreſſe ſhould not fayle to be with me the next day following betimes, making ſome faire excuſe (the better to colour the buſineſſe,) to goe on Pilgrimage to our Ladyes Shrine, or ſome other the like Viſit.

Vpon this I went along with her to the Gold-ſmithes, and bought her a dainty fine little golden booke, curiouſly wrought, which her Maid had made choyſe of; and it may be ſhe had her direction from her Miſtreſſe, as hauing had her ſight of this pretty toy but lately before. Howſoeuer I am ſure they went cleane away with it, for I could neuer after ſee either Miſtreſſe, or Maid.

Many leaue Matches are made in Spaine, vnder theſe holy pretences.

Now was it about three in the afternoone, and I had not yet digeſted the bread that lay in my ſtomake; I was ready to dye out of a longing deſire that I had to know the occaſion, and to ſearch out the true reaſon of the laſt nights paſſage, and whether it were a matter of earneſt, or a tricke put vpon mee? And ſo putting this affront out of minde, as if there had neuer beene any ſuch matter, I returned to former walke: Where I found my Miſtreſſe looking very heauily on the matter, her countenance was ſad and melancholly; and making ſhew, as if ſhe had ſtayd there for me, ſhe beckned vnto mee with her hand to come vnto her, putting her fore-finger vpon her mouth, and caſting her eye behinde her, (as if ſhe were afrayd leſt ſome body ſhould watch her,) ſhe drew neere vnto the doore, and whiſpered ſoftly vnto mee, that I ſhould goe gently on a-fore to the great Church, and ſo I did. She takes her Mantle, and haſtens after me, meeting both, as it were at one inſtant betweene the two Quires; and ſhe paſsing quite through them, went directly

out

out of the Church, into the *Calle de la (a) Chapineria*, the ſtreet where all your womens *Chapines* are ſold; and ſmiling vpon me, and intiſing mee vnto her, with a louely caſt of her eye, ſhe ſeemed to wiſh me to follow her. I made after her; ſhe entred into a Merchants ſhop, in the (b) *Alcana*, and I with her. There ſhe gaue me ſatisfaction, vowing with a thouſand oathes, that it vvas no fault of hers, and that ſhe had no hand in that buſineſſe. Shee fill'd my head with this winde: I beleeued her well-compoſed lyes, ſhee promiſed this next night to make me amends; and though ſhe were ſure to loſe her life, ſhe would not ſpare it, to giue me content. She made me ſo plyable, that ſhee might now worke me like Waxe. She bought ſome things, which came to about ſome hundred and fifty *Royals*; and when ſhe was to pay for it, ſhee ſaid vnto the Mercer; What ſhall I pay you weekely till this debt be out? Hee anſwered, Miſtris, ſee Ware, ſee Money. I doe not vſe to part with my Wares at this price, nor doe I ſell vpon truſt. If you deliuer me my money, you may carry away what you haue bought; if not, I muſt intreat you to pardon me.

Then I told him, Sir, This Gentle-woman is diſpoſed to ieſt with you, for ſhe has money ſufficient to ſatisfie for a greater matter then this. I am her Purſe-bearer, and the Steward of her houſe. So taking ſome Crownes out of my pocket, for to ſhew my greatneſſe the more, I freed my ſelfe from baſeneſſe, and her from her debt: Apprehending then at that inſtant, that this was but a ſtratagem of hers, to be paid before-hand, and that ſhee might not be mockt withall, as it often befalleth many women; nor did I repent mee of what I had done; it ſeeming vnto me, that by my faire proceeding, I had bound her vnto me. Nor would I haue giuen my two imploiments of that one day, in the purſuite of theſe two Dames, for all the wealth of *Mexico*, and *Peru*. So I askt her, whether ſhe would keepe true touch with me or no? And whether I might take ſure hold of her promiſe? And at what houre I ſhould come? She aſſur'd me that I might, and for the houre, ſhe would not faile mee at ten in the night. She went home to her houſe, and I to intertaine the time abroad; Thinking with my ſelfe, that I had ſeazed on two preyes at one flight, and tooke two Troutes at one ſtroke.

At the houre appointed, I put on my old diſguiſe, and got mee to the Mill againe. I gaue the ſigne agreed vpon betweene vs, which was, to ſtrike certain ſtrokes, with a ſtone vnderneath her window. But it was all one, as if I had beſtow'd thoſe blowes vpon the Bridge of (c) *Alcantara*.

I conceiued with my ſelfe, that the houre was not yet come, or that it was little more then ten of the clocke, which made mee dance attendance a little longer. And ſo houre after houre, I ſtayd waiting there, till it was twelue of the night, now and then making the wonted ſignes.

But what ſhould a man ſpend his time in talking to Saint *Iuan de los Reyes*, being it is a *Statua* of Stone? It was but loſt labour, a wearying out of my ſelfe in vaine, and a meere mockery. For he, whom ſhee termed her brother, was her Gallant, and her Sweet-hart: and did maintaine themſelues by theſe kinde of cheating tricks, and conſorted both together in all that they did.

They vvere of (d) *Cordoua*, proper in their perſons, and well accommodated; and amongſt other yong Thruſhes, that they had brought into the Net, was a young Scriuener, but newly married, who being whetted on by this Gentlewoman, and tolled on by ſuch traines as ſhe had cunningly laid for him, had giuen her certaine Iewels; and as ſhe dealt with me, ſo did ſhe lead him along with delayes, making him to wait vpon her pleaſure, putting him to fine after fine to purchaſe his deſire. But when he found all was coozenage and Roguery, he reſolued to be reuenged on her.

That night I was quite tyred out with a tedious expectation, (as you haue already heard.) And when I was about to goe my way, lo, I might diſcerne a great troope of people making towards mee, and ſuppoſing it to bee the Iuſtice,

(a) *They haue an old Tale in* Spaine; *That the men, to keepe their wiues from gadding abroad, did perſwade them to vſe* Chapines, *that they might ſeeme as tall & handſome as the men, and they made them of a very heauy kinde of wood. They made vſe of this inuention of their Husbands, but made them at firſt hollow within, and afterwards of Corke, to lighten the loade, & that they might be able to walke more nimbly.* Couarruuias verb. Chapin.

(b) Alcana: *A knowne ſtreet in* Toledo, *where all your Mercers dwell. Of the* Hebrew *word* Chana, *to buy.* Guadix *ſayes it is an Arabick word, of* alquina, *which ſignifies Gaine.* Couarruuias.

(c) Alcantara: *A Bridge ſo called in* Toledo. *In the yeere* 1258. *a great part of it was carried away with a Flood; but the yeere following, it was repaired and new built.*

(d) Cordoua, *is a Noble and famous Citie in* Andaluzia.

Iuſtice, I got me a little aſide. At laſt I perceiued, that they knockt at that doore; I returned backe, drawing neerer and neerer, a little and a little, to ſee what all this company did ſeeke for. And one of the *Alguazils* (telling them within who they were) cauſed the doore to bee opened. When they were all gone in, I got me to the doore, that I might the better vnderſtand how all things paſſed. The *Alguazil* ſearched all the houſe ouer & ouer, but could not finde that he came for. I was about to call vnto them, to looke into the *Tinaja*, and to haue betooke me to my heeles when I had done. But the Scriuener preſently tooke that taske vpon him, and ſaued me a labour, and had a care that no corner ſhould be left vnſearcht.

But, as theſe things cannot be carried ſo cloſe, but that they will ſoone be brought to light, if they be well followed, one by chance lighted vpon a ſingle hand Cuffe that lay vpon the ground, which at the time of the hiding of her brothers clothes, was let fall and left behinde out of haſte; and becauſe this was a buſineſſe vndertaken for a friend, and euery one was willing to doe his beſt, one of the *Alguazils* ſaid, This Cuffe muſt haue a Maſter, who euer it bee.

The Gentlewoman would faine haue ſalu'd vp this matter: but hauing prickt the Hare, theſe Hounds began to take a little more paines, and to hunt with more metall, in hope to haue their game. And one of the *Alguazils*, ſeeing a great Coffer there, which (as he thought) might very well containe a man, commanded it to be opened: where they found my Gallant. Whereupon, they were both will'd to put on their cloathes, and to make themſelues readie; which done, they were both for companie carried to priſon together. I was both contented therewith and aſhamed. Contented, that it was my good hap not to be found there; and aſhamed that ſhe had gull'd me, and made a foole of me. All the remainder of that night, I could not ſleepe one winke, for, thinking partly on this, and partly on that other Gentlewoman, vpon whom, I thought to make my ſelfe whole, I did conceit vvith my ſelfe, that ſhe vvas a vvoman of another kinde of qualitie, and of a differing faſhion from the former.

All that day I ſtaid vvaiting for her, but ſhe did not ſo much as ſend me any meſſage by her maid, nor did I knovv vvhere ſhe liu'd, nor vvhat ſhe vvas. You ſee here hovv vvell I imploi'd my paines, and my Purſe vpon theſe tvvo, and vvhether it had not beene better for me to haue laid out my money in the buying of ſome fiftie young Lambes of a yeere old. I vvas novv grovvne deſperate, and for my greater comfort amidſt theſe my troubles, at night vvhen I came to my lodging, I met vvith an *Alguazil* there, a ſtranger, making inquirie for I knovv not vvhat perſon. Novv by this time you may imagine, in what poore caſe I tooke my ſelfe to be, and hovv the vvorld vvas like to goe with me. I will'd my ſeruant to tell him, that if he had any thing to ſay to me, he ſhould be ſure to finde me there the next morning.

In the meane-while I walked out by the Gate (*a*) *del Cambron*, where muſing, and walking, I continued almoſt till it was day, framing Diſcourſes to my ſelfe, what, or whom it ſhould be, that this *Alguazill* ſought for. But when the morning was come, I thought it a ſafe houre to goe home, with purpoſe to change both my apparell and my Lodging.

But by this time, my care was ſecur'd; for I was not he that he looked for, as I afterwards vnderſtood. I went forth to the Place of *Socodouer*, where I heard two Mules cri'd for to goe for (*b*) *Almagro*; I was ſlower in the hearing, then the agreeing for them, or in my departing from *Toledo*. For euery thing there me thought ſmelt of Broome, and the ſoles of old ſhooes. That night I reached to (*c*) *Orgaz*, the next to *Malagon*. But being not able, out of the feare I had taken thoſe nights before, to take any reſt, I came thither ſo drowzy, and ſo ſleepy, that I was not able to hold vp my head: But another new

(*a*) *A gate ſo called in* Toledo, *becauſe the entrance thereinto, is hard and difficult, it is an Arabicke word, and ſignifies a thorny place, and full of buſhes.* Couarru.

(*b*) Almagro, *a principall Towne belonging to the Order de* Calatraua. Padre Guadix *would haue it come from* Alma-agua, *and of* agro. *Becauſe thoſe waters there-abouts haue a ſowre taſte, though they be wholſome. Others from the colour of the ſoyle, which is red.* Vide Couarru. Verb. Almagre.

(*c*) *A Towne in the Kingdome of* Toledo, *intitled with a Condeſhip.* Tierra vmbroſa. Guzman *leaues* Toledo.

new occaſion did awaken me, and made me to rowze vp my ſpirits; which was; That as ſoone as I was entred into my Lodging, there came to take charge of my clothes, and ſuch other things as I brought in with me, a young Wench, ſeeming to be ſomething more then a ſeruant, and yet ſome-what leſſe then a daughter; She had a good face of her owne, a hanſome feature, a pleaſant behauiour, and had both wit and tongue at will. Which ſort of creatures, (to draw both cuſtome and credit to ſuch kinde of houſes) your honeſt Inne-holders will be ſure to lay wait for, and ſeldome or neuer ſhall you ſee them vnprouided of ſuch pretty Commodities to welcome, and cheere vp their Gueſts. I talkt to her, and ſhe anſwered mee; I could not ſpurre her that queſtion, whereunto ſhe did not kicke me an anſwer. One diſcourſe drew on another, and we continued our conuerſation ſo farre forth, that ſhe conſented vnto me, and had peremptorily giuen me her promiſe, that ſhe would come and paſſe away the time with me, when her Maſter and Miſtreſſe were gone to bed and aſleepe. She couered the boord; I gaue her the brawne of the Capon. I dranke a Health to her, and ſhee did pledge me; I would haue held her faſt by the arme; ſhe flies off; I ſeeking to catch hold of her, and ſhe to get away from me: reaching at her, I fell downe vpon th'one ſide to the ground. The Chaire was of Wood, and had ſome turn'd pieces in it rib-wiſe, it tooke me iuſt athwart the midſt of my body, whereby I receiued a ſhrewd blow. And it was a faire gift of God, that it was not farre worſe; for if the Dagger that I had at my backe, had by chance falne out of the ſheathe, and pitcht with the Pommell on the ground, and the point haue beene vpward, and had lighted betweene one of thoſe barres or ribbs in the Chaire, a thouſand pound to a pennie, but that I had beene ſlaine out-right in the place; and ſo there being an end of me, my Creditours had beene paid. When I was vp, and all was well, I put the queſtion againe vnto her, whether I ſhould depend vpon her comming? She told me I ſhould ſee, whether ſhe meant to faile me or no? Vttering ſome other idle fooliſh ſpeeches, and ſo went her waies.

A pleaſant ieſt, that paſt betwixt Guzman *and a pretie Wench at the Inne in* Malagon.

You haue heard already how ill I paſt thoſe nights before, which made me now ſo heauy-headed, that it was impoſsible, that I ſhould any longer beare vp, and abſtaine from ſleeping. But I was deſirous to riſe betimes, whether I ſlept or no. And therefore I will'd my ſeruants, that they ſhould get them ſtraw and Barley, ſo much as our Mules were to be allowed the next morning, and that they ſhould bring it, and put it in the chamber where I lay. Which being done, hauing ſet it neere vnto the doore, they pull'd it after them, & leauing it vnſhut, they went to bed. And albeit ſleep would faine haue ſeazed vpon me, yet my deſire kept me waking; but not being able to hold out any longer, I was forced to yeeld my ſelfe vnder the arreſt of *Morpheus* his Mace, in whoſe ſilken bands I was faſt, though ſoftly bound.

About mid-night a little ſhe-Aſſe had ſlipt her halter in the Stable, and got looſe (if ſhe were not left looſe before, as I verily perſwade my ſelfe it was mine Hoſts, and went about the houſe to ſeeke her Prouant;) This Aſſe came to my lodging, and hauing ſmelt out the Barley, the little foole thruſt in her head, thinking to haue met with a good mouth-full, and in preſsing to come where the Prouender was in the Sieue, ſhe wagged, and wagg'd, this way, and that way, and ſtriuing to get in, the doore began to creake, I that was mindfull of the buſineſſe, a little thing would ſuffice to reuiue my remembrance: And now I was fully perſwaded, that I had the Bulls ſure enough in the Place, and that they could by no meanes get from me. And becauſe I was all this while very ſleepie, and ſcarce halfe awake, I imagined with my ſelfe, that ſhe could not finde the way to the bed, whereupon I raiſed my ſelfe, and ſitting vp in my bed, I call'd her vnto me. When the Aſſe heard my voice, ſhe was afraid, and ſtood ſtill, ſaue only that ſhe did put one of her fore-

fore-feet in the fraile wherein the ſtraw was. I thinking that it was the Wench, and that ſhe had ſtumbled by chance vpon it, leapt out of my bed, and ſaid vnto her, Come hither, my Loue, come to bed, giue me thy hand. And becauſe ſhe ſhould reach me, I ſtretcht out my body at large vnto her, and lifting vp my legge, I hit her with my knee on the ſnout; with that ſhee lifted vp her head, and ſmote me ſuch a blow with hers on the noddle, that ſhe almoſt ſet me on my breech; ſo much was I aſtonied therewith. And when ſhe had done, ſhe fled away from me, as faſt as her legges would giue her leaue. For if ſhe had ſtaid, I ſhould haue had much adoe (conſidering the paine I was in) to haue forborne to thruſt my Dagger vp to the hilts in her guttes.

I bled mainly, both at mouth and noſe; and curſing Loue, and all his cunning tricks to the pit of hell; I knew, that all this hapned deſeruedly vnto me; becauſe, being a wilde ſimple Ladde as I was, I was ſo eaſie of beliefe. But I quickly made faſt my doore, and got me to bed.

CHAP. IX.

How Guzman de Alfarache *liſts himſelfe for a Soldier. Hee telleth, whence that ill phraſe grew.* En Malagon, en cada caſa vn ladron; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre. *In* Malagon, *euery houſe a thiefe; And in that of the* Alcalde *two: The father and the ſonne. How in a ſhort time, through ill gouernment, all* Guzmans *money is gone; How to his griefe he is forced to ſerue a Captaine. Some leſſons are giuen to young men. To theſe are added the faults of bad Miniſters in matters of War-fare.*

AS if Loue had not beene a deſire of Immortalitie, bred in an idle minde; without any beginning of Reaſon, without any ſubiection to Law, which is entertained by the Will; but with it, cannot not be put off; eaſie in it's entrance to the heart, but hard to be thruſt out againe; I began to ſweare, that I would neuer more follow his colours, nor be of his Company. But I was aſleepe when I made this proteſtation, and knew not what I ſaid. My ſleepineſſe was ſo great then at that time, that all my paine could not keepe me waking.

Which drowzineſſe of mine was the cauſe, that I could not riſe ſo early as I thought, but kept my bed till nine of the clocke that morning. At which houre comes me in this my Fiddle-faddle of the Inne, to giue me ſatisfaction, vowing and ſwearing vnto me, that ſhe lay within her Maſter and Miſtris, and that they had ſhut her vp, and kept the key themſelues, that ſhe could by no meanes get forth: Though for mine owne part, I did verily beleeue, that ſhe did purpoſely play the Wag with me, and had neuer any ſuch meaning, but did lie in all that ſhe ſaid. Whereupon I told her; O friend *Luçia*, your loue hath done me a great deale of hurt: it began in the Chaire, and ended in the ſaddle. I ſhall looke hereafter a little better to your water. Take me with that fault againe, and I will giue you leaue to hang me. Goe about your buſineſſe, goe, I haue no more to ſay to you. Make haſte, and bring in break-faſt, for I will preſently be gone. So ſhe roſted vs out of hand a brace of Partridge, ſerued in with a ſlice or two of Bacon, which ſerued both for our breake-faſt, and our dinner, becauſe the day was farre ſpent, and our iourney but ſhort.

Well, I was now vpon going, my Mules were ready, and ſtaid for my comming. The (*a*) Mule that I rode on, was an ill-condition'd Iade, and ſomewhat skittiſh. When I was readie to put foot in the ſtirrop, I got me vp vpon a bench, thinking from thence to get with the greater eaſe into my Saddle; but by her going backe, ſhe ſeemed to tell me, that I ſhould not doe it ſo

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word, is* Mohina. *To wit, a Mule that is begotten of an Horſe, and a ſhe Aſſe, commonly with a blacke Muzzle, a ſwolling noſtrill, and hauing iad ſh tricks.*

ſo eaſily as I thought; or elſe her meaning was, that I ſhould quickly get mee thence, or elſe ſhee would ſet mee going with a vvitneſſe. And becauſe ſhe could not ſpeake my language, that ſhe might make me vnderſtand her by ſignes, ierking out her hinder legges, ſhe flings me out her heeles, and doubling her ſyles, with two kicks, that ſhe made at me, ſhe threw mee a good wayes from her: But ſhe did me no harme, for I recouered my ſelfe by and by, and got vp vpon my legges. After this, I was a little more wary, and tooke better heed. And with a-loud voice I beganne to cry out: There is not any female (I thinke) in this Inne, euen to the very Mules, which hath not her iadiſh tricks.

Well, I was ſeated in my Saddle, and my Mule was quiet, and being vpon the way, (ſeeing what mis-fortunes I had ſuffered) I acquainted my ſeruants what had hapned vnto me, with the Aſſe that came into my Chamber. They laught exceedingly, as if they would haue burſt their hearts, and the more, at my weake and childiſh vnderſtanding, that I would giue credit to a Wench in an Inne, who are neuer good, but at their firſt comming, and euer after proue arrant Iades, that a man can not tell how to truſt to them.

We had now gone two long Leagues, and the Boy that went a-foote by vs to looke vnto our Mules, would needs drinke. I call'd, Bring hither the (*a*) Bottle, giue me the Bottle: but no Bottle appeares; for wee had left it behinde vs. Peraduenture mine Hoſteſſe (ſaid the Boy) hath ſeazed vpon it, and laid it aſide in waggery, becauſe we might ride the lighter, or be paid for her care in keeping it ſafe for vs.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is*, Bota: Quaſi imbuta, *of the Latine word*, imbuo, de in *and* Bibo. *It is made of a Goats-skinne, the mouth of it being Horne, with a ſtopple to it, and the ſides ſtrongly ſowne & Rozend within, that it may not leake. Your Trauellers on the way neuer goe without one, by reaſon the countrey is ſo hot, which cauſeth much thirſt.*

Nay (quoth my Page) I rather beleeue, that they amongſt them haue ſtolne it from vs, for to adde more fame to this towne, that they may not loſe that good name they haue gotten.

Then was I very deſirous to know, how this bad report came firſt to bee raiſed, and whence it grew. And becauſe they that vſe to carry Merchandize from place to place, and trauell often on the way, and now and then heare diuers men diſcourſe of ſuch things as theſe; I thought with my ſelfe, I were beſt to aske the reaſon of it of our Foot-man, imagining he (if any man) could beſt informe vs of it.

Therevpon I call'd vnto him, and ſaid; Friend *Andres*; Since thou haſt beene a piece of a Scholler, a Wane-man, and now a *Moço de Mulas*, one that Lackey'ſt along with Mules, and lookeſt vnto them, I prethee tell mee (if happely thou haſt heard of it) how this Towne came to haue this ill name, and wherefore it is commonly ſaid as a by-word, or by way of a Prouerbe in euery mans mouth: *En Malagon, en cada caſa, ay vn ladron: y en la del Alcalde, hijo, y padre.* Euery houſe in *Malagon* hath a thiefe of his owne: And in that of the *Alcalde*, there are twaine; the father, and the Sonne, both knaues in graine.

A Spaniſh Prouerbe.

The Muleter made anſwere, ſaying, Sir, your Worſhip askes me of a thing, which I haue been told of diuers times, and that diuers wayes, euery one following his owne opinion: Which if I ſhould recount them all vnto you, the way too is ſhort, & the Story too long, and the deſire that I haue to drink, beyond them both. For I am ſo dry, that I am ſcarce able to ſpeake a word. But be it as it may bee, I will doe my beſt to ſatisfie your longing. Laying that therefore aſide, which hath no colour nor ſhadow of truth, and conforming my ſelfe according to the opinion of ſome, of whom I haue heard it; vpon whoſe iudgement, I ground mine, as more agreeable vnto reaſon: For in that, for which we haue no naturall reaſon, nor by tradition left vnto vs in writing, when time ſhal haue buried theſe things, a good & a ſound iudgment muſt be the Law, which we muſt obey, and where-vnto wee ought to conforme our ſelues. And ſo this had it's beginning, (which is now long ſince, time out of minde) in this manner, as I ſhall now deliuer vnto you.

In

In the yeere of our Lord, 1236. King *Don Fernando*, sur-named the *Holy*, raigning in *Castilla*, and *Leon*, who gained *Seuill*, the second yeere after the death of King *Don Alfonso* his father, stayd one day at dinner in (a) *Benauente*, where he receiued newes, that the Christians had entred the Citie of *Cordoua*; and had made themselues Masters of the Towers and Castles belonging to the Suburbs, which they call (b) *Axarquia*, together vvith that gate and the wall. And for that the Moores were many, and the Christians few, they were driuen to great necessities for want of succour.

The like aduice was dispatcht by Post, to *Don Aluar Perez de Castro*; who was in (c) *Martos*, and to *Don Ordonno Aluarez*, principall Gentlemen of *Castile*, men of great power and strength; and to many other persons, to giue them their best aide and assistance. Euery one of these, that had notice of it, presently raised Forces, and hasted thither with all the speed they could; the King likewise marched forward on his way, without any delay, or protraction at all; albeit, that this newes was brought vnto him, on the 28. of *Ianuary*, and that the season was very bad, and painefull to trauell, by reason of the great Snowes, and the extreme coldnesse of the weather. But nothing could hinder him from this his designe, for hee hasted away to their succour, leauing order that the rest of his Army should follow him, carrying no more along with him to attend his person, then a hundred Gentlemen of good quality.

The King had likewise giuen order to all Cities, Townes, & other places, that were able to afford ayde, to send their Souldiers to those Frontiers and Borders, whither he himselfe was to goe: Great store of raine fell, the Riuers and other Foords, by which they were to passe, were so mightily risen, that his men were not able to goe forward.

There met together at that time in *Malagon* a great multitude of Souldiers sent from diuers and sundry parts, beeing in number so many, that though that place were very well peopled, and of great receipt, being one of the best Townes in all that quarter; yet in euery house there was lodged one Souldier at the least; and in some, two, or three.

The *Alcalde* did lodge one of the Captaines of a Company, and a sonne of his, that he brought along with him, and was his (d) *Alferez*. Their prouision grew short, the wayes bad, there was no comming to Market; so that for want of reliefe, euery one suffered necessitie, euery one was put to his shifts, and not a man amongst them, but sought to maintaine and preserue his life by filching and stealing, robbing heere and there; whence, or from whom it made no matter all vvas one to them: Life was sweet: Let others hang and starue; so as they had where-withall, all was well.

A conceited Clowne of that very Place, a shrewd witty fellow for a plaine Husband-man, departed thence, to goe to *Toledo*: And meeting in *Orgaz* with a braue troope of Gentlemen, they demanded of him, whence he was? Hee answered; Of *Malagon*. They further askt him, What's the newes there? He told them; Gentlemen, all the newes in *Malagon*, is; In euery house, a thiefe; and in the *Alcaldes*, two; the sonne, and the father.

And this was the true Originall of that false report, which men put vpon that Towne, as not knowing any other certaine ground, whence this brute should be raised; and is now, in these our times, a notorious wrong done vnto them, as being a fault whereof they are not guilty, and yet are most vniustly charged therewith. For in all this way, that we haue come and gone, or vvhither so euer else it shall be your hap to trauell, I doubt me, you will hardly finde either better intertainment (I meane for Innes) or more ciuill and better behau'd people (taking euery man according to his condition and breeding,) then are in this towne. Yet, Sir, withall, I could likewise tell you, of many notable thefts, and very famous ones, that haue been committed in

Malagon. Q Whilst

The story concerning the occasion of this prouerbe, En Malagon &c.

(a) Benauente, *is a towne in the Kingdome of* Leon. *There is a Land of that name.*

(b) Axarquia, *the suburbs adioyning to* Cordoua. Padre Guadix *saies, it is so called, because it stands towards the East which is termed in the Arabick tongue,* Xarquia

(c) Martos, *a famous towne in* Andaluzia, *antiently called,* Tucci, *and* Augusta Gemella. Couarruuias.

(d) Alferez, *is he to whom the Captaine recommends his Ensigne, that he may gather his Company together, & bring them all to their* rendeuous. *The Captaine should cary the Ancient. But by reason of his diuers imployments, he substitutes one in his place, whom they call* Alferez, *who is subordinate vnto him & stirs not without his direction. And all that are vnder that Ensine are to follow his Colours. And therefore they haue this varietie of names, as* Signiferos, Vexiliferos, Primipilarios, duces, &c. Couarruuias pag. 44.

Whilſt we were thus diſcourſing on the way to paſſe away the time, and make our iourney ſeeme the eaſier, I lighted on a Traueller, of whom I learn'd, That in *Almagro*, I ſhould meet with a Company of Souldiers. Whereof hauing throughly inform'd my ſelfe, and well aſſured of their being there, I was vvonderfull glad of it; for this vvas the onely thing that I did deſire, and ſeeke after for to caſt off all care, and to giue a farewell to all my former troubles.

Guzman *comes to* Almagro.

In my comming into the Towne, I was no ſooner entred, but I might perceiue in the High-ſtreet a Banner, hanging out at a Window; I paſt along by it, and vvent to lodge at one of the Innes there in the Market-place, where I ſupt betimes, and got me quickly to bed, that I might recouer ſome of my loſt ſleepes, and repaire the wrongs of ſo many ill-paſſed nights, as I had lately indured.

Guzman *takes on him a feigned name.*

Mine Hoſt, and thoſe his Gueſts that he had in the houſe, ſeeing me come in ſo vvell accommodated, and ſo well waited on, made inquirie of my ſeruants, who I was. And they, (as not knowing any thing, but what they heard from my ſelfe) told them; That my name was *Don Iuan de Guzman*: Sonne to a principall Gentleman of the houſe of *Toral*. On the morning very early, my Page brought me my cloathes; I put them on, ſetting my ſelfe forth in all my braueſt gallantry, and after that I had beene abroad and heard Maſſe, I went to viſit the Captaine, telling him, that I was come in ſearch of him, to tender my ſeruice vnto him. He receiu'd me with a great deale of courteſie, and with a cheerefull looke; which vvas no more then my reſpect vnto him might challenge; beſides, the good faſhion, that I came to him in, and the moneys, which I brought along with mee in my purſe, (which were little leſſe then a thouſand *Royals*) might merit ſome reſpect; for the reſt of the birds were flowne, and like *Noahs* Crow, were neuer to returne againe; they were ſpent and gone in gay cloathes, in courting of Wenches, and in good-fellowſhip vpon the way. He admitted me into his owne Squadron, made me ſit and eate with him at his owne Table, vſing me euermore with much loue and kindneſſe.

Guzman *entertained by the Captaine for a Souldier, and in what he did exerciſe himſelfe.*

In requitall whereof, I began to (*a*) *Regalar* him, and to ſerue him; preſenting him ſtill with one thing or other, inlarging my hand like a Prince, as if I had for euery * Tueſday a new payre of eares; or were ſure to meet (whereſoeuer I came) vvith another Grocer, another Riuer, and another Groue of Trees, wherein to hide my ſelfe. So faſt did I ſpend my money without feare or vvit, threw it away with ſo prodigall a hand, taking ames-Ace againſt ſeuen, and deux-Ace, againſt eleuen; I did ſo often viſit the Drum-head, that at laſt, getting little, and loſing much, I was almoſt quite blowne vp.

(*a*) Regalar: *Is to afford a man all the delights and dainties that are to bee had for loue, or money. The word is deriued* à Rege: *That is, ſo much that a King can not deſire more.*

In theſe kinde of intertainments did I conſume my ſelfe, and my time, till we vvere to march away: And for to fill vp the Company, vve were all of vs put into a Church, vvhence we came forth one by one, and when they came to call me, the Pay-Maſter lookt vpon me, in vvhoſe eye I ſeemed ſomewhat too yong, inſomuch that he durſt not inroll me amongſt the reſt, according to the inſtructions that were giuen him. Whereat I grew exceeding angry, and was ſo inflamed with choller, that I had much adoe to containe my ſelfe, but was ready to breake forth into paſsion, and to haue laſht out into ſome liberty of language, whereof afterwards I might haue repented my ſelfe; becauſe it might haue forced me to vtter that, which would not haue vvell beſeemed me, nor indeed had beene lawfull for mee to vent, conſidering the time, and place.

Guzman *paſſeth not for a Souldier, as being vnder age.*

* *A Spaniſh Proverb.*

Good cloathes put a man in heart.

O what good cloathes can doe! I knew the time, when men would kicke me, and cuffe me about the eares, and could be content to hang my head in my boſome, hold my peace, and take all patiently. But now I made reckning, as if all heauen had layne at the ſtake, of that which to ſpeake of, was

was not worth a ſtraw, waxing mad with anger. Then I began to know by mine owne experience that no Wine can make a man ſo drunke, as the firſt fit of anger. And it much more blindeth the vnderſtanding, not leauing it any the leaſt light of reaſon. And if that heat ſhould not preſently paſſe away, I know not what fierceneſſe or brutiſhneſſe may be compared to this furie of ours. I did quickly quench this flame, and my Hat being come againe to his colour, and my choller pacifi'd, I ſaid vnto him, Sir, you that are Pay-Maſter, my yeeres (I confeſſe) are few, but my courage as great as any mans. It is the heart that commands, and this arme knowes how to brandiſh a blade, there is bloud and marrow enough in it, for to vndertake great matters.

Anger, and it's euill effects.

Hee anſwered mee very grauely and wiſely, It may bee ſo, Sir, and I doe verily beleeue it, and with much more willingneſſe, then your ſelfe can ſpeake it: but the Order that I haue giuen me in charge is thus and thus, wherein if I ſhould exceed my Commiſsion, my Purſe muſt ſoundly pay for it. No body ſhall ſmart for it, but my ſelfe. I knew not what to replie to ſo faire an Anſwer, though the bloud that boyled in my breſt, and the colour that ſhew'd it ſelfe in my cheekes, could not ſo eaſily be alaid, till my choller were a little better ſettled. My captaine was very ſenſible of this affront of mine, and tooke it as tenderly as if the caſe had beene his owne.

For being quitted of my place, he was perſwaded I ſhould then preſently forſake his Companie. And taking part with me againſt the Pay-Maſter, hee was ſomewhat round with him, inſomuch, that neither of them hauing the patience to beare one with another, they grew to high words, and much adoe there was.

This ſtorme was laid, the Sea had done roaring, their ſtrife was ended, and the Company was fully made vp. The Captaine came to viſit me at my lodging; telling me in braue and gallant tearmes, how much this griefe of mine did trouble him, and how ſorrie he was for my heauineſſe; and with honourable both words and promiſes, he gaue me that good ſatisfaction, that I reſted very well contented. Such force hath Eloquence, that as horſes ſuffer themſelues to be ruled with good Bridles and bitts; ſo the fierce rage, and chollericke humours of men, are bridled and gouerned by mannerly reaſons, and are brought to winde and turne their head-ſtrong wils, changing their violent reſolutions, being eaſily reduced in the end to a ſettled pace, and are well content to goe forward faire and ſoftly on their way.

Eloquence preuaileth much.

Whereupon, albeit I was reſolued to leaue him, yet notwithſtanding his words were ſo powerfull with me, that he ſtopt me in my courſe, and ſuddenly tooke me vp, when I was in the heat and height of my Carreere. Wee continued in this kinde of conuerſation a prètie while, and a great deale of good talke we had together; And if it be not dangerous to ſpeake the truth, (for feare of being called in queſtion) we did murmure and mutine at the ſmall reckning, and ſlight acknowledgement of Soldiers, and men of true worth and valour, and the baſe eſteeme that was made of militarie diſcipline and profeſsion of Armes; then did we raile at the ſlight remuneration of Seruices, and with how little truth ſome Miniſters did informe the State thereof, for their owne proper ends: How things are quite out of order, and vtterly miſcarrie, becauſe buſineſſes are not well carried, & are not in a courſe, that ſhould direct them to a good end, euery man tending his particular profit, preferring priuate, before publike good.

A digreſſion againſt bad Miniſters, touching Martiall men.

And though ſuch a one know, that another man, with a very good zeale and loue to his Countrie, doth gouerne his Armie well, and lead them on brauely, he wreſts all his good ſeruices to the worſt ſence, and ſeekes to ouerthrow his well-deſerued reputation, laying Nets to intrap him, that he may be the only Commander, ioyning with his enemies, and falling croſſe with his

his friends, that he may bring the dance before his owne doore, and raiſe himſelfe by the others ruine, propoſing to himſelfe, by this prepoſterous dealing, to put himſelfe into a better fortune.

And to effect this his vnruly deſire, he will ſeeke out a thouſand fetches, and as many winding Pipes will he lay before hand, to bring the water to his owne Conduict. He would make himſelfe like vnto the higheſt, and place his throne in the North, and ſuffer no man to ſit by him, or to be his equall. Such men as theſe exerciſe their voice only in the ſeruice of the King, not ſticking to crie out, This and this will make much for his Maieſties ſeruice; but their workes, and their actions, are directed to their owne good. Like vnto that day-labourer, who lifts vp his armes to heauen, but ſtrikes his Mattocke into the ground. Theſe make warres at their pleaſure, breake Leagues when they liſt, failing in their Obligation, ruining the Commonwealth, robbing men of their Eſtates, and in the end damning their owne ſoules.

How many errors haue beene committed? How many braue Commanders loſt? how many Armies vtterly ouerthrowne? the fault whereof is laid vpon him, that doth leaſt deſerue the blame. And the ſole cauſe of this is, becauſe theſe men will forſooth haue it ſo, that this ill ſhall make for their good. For if things ſhould ſucceed well, why then it ſhould goe ill with them.

(a) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Se pone de lodo. *Now* Poner lo de lodo, es, eſtragar, O errar el negoçio.

This is the common courſe now adaies, and this makes (a) all out of ioynt, and cauſes ſuch confuſion in the world. Will you ſee (Sir) to what poore paſſe our ill fortune hath brought vs, that thoſe braue cloathes, gallant Feathers, and glorious colours; things that put life and ſpirit into a Soldiers heart, to make him venture couragiouſly vpon all difficulties, to hew out his way with his Sword, and to vndertake any braue and noble enterprize, in ſeeing vs thus adorned, we are diſgraced in *Spaine*, our Habit ſcorned, and our ſelues flouted at? Thinking forſooth that we muſt walke the ſtreets in blacke, like a companie of Soliciters, or like ſome Scruitour, or poore Scholler, that waites vpon another, and hath not a Gowne to his backe to hide his pittifull raggs, or to couer our totterd cloathes, (as your Students vſe to doe) with blacke foot-cloathes, that the old rotten Saddle vnderneath may not be ſeene.

Now are we quite downe the winde, and neuer ſo much as now; For thoſe that ſhould moſt honour vs, doe leaſt fauour vs. The only bare name of a Spaniard, which heretofore did affright the enemie, & with the reputation of that one word, made the whole world to tremble; now (for our ſinnes-ſake) the glorie of that is in a manner loſt and gone. And we are ſo falne off from what we were, that we are not able to doe that now with our ſwords, which before we might haue carried with our words. Yet ſuch as wee haue beene, we are, and ſhall be ſtill. It is God, that muſt make vs to acknowledge theſe our errours, and that muſt worke amendment in thoſe that are the cauſe thereof; going (in that courſe wherein now they runne) againſt their King, againſt the Lawes of the Land, againſt their Countrie, and againſt themſelues.

I need not (*Senior Don Juan*) to produce any other witneſſe, then the preſent times, for the truth of what I haue ſpoken, and to proue vnto you, that the maine cauſe of all your great miſchiefes in a State, is a Fauorites inwardneſſe with his King, ſuffring no man to *Priuar*, or to be able to doe any thing but himſelfe, led on with the greedineſſe of his owne priuate gaine. From this his ill-imployd Greatneſſe, groweth hatred; from hatred, enuie; from enuie, diſſention; and from diſſention, euill order: from whence you may inferre thoſe other inconueniences, that may follow thereupon. Let it not trouble you, Sir, that we are now to march hence. In *Italie*, you ſhall finde another kinde of world; and here I paſſe my word vnto you, that I will make you an Ancient. Which albeit, it be a meaner place, then your merits may

may challenge, yet it may ſerue as a ſtep to aduance you higher. I gaue him many thankes for this his friendly offer. We tooke our leaues, hee was very deſirous to goe home alone, I earneſtly intreated him, that I might waite vpon him to his Lodging, but he would by no meanes conſent thereunto. The next day following the Companie marched away without any ſtay, till they came neere vnto the Sea-coaſt; (the Captaine ſpending liberally vpon my Purſe.) We ſtaid waiting there for the comming of the Gallies, but three moneths were almoſt ſpent, before we could haue any newes of them. In which time, and that which was already paſt, my Purſe had ſpit his venome, and my rents began to faile me. My continuance at play, did likewiſe put a helping hand to my ſpeedier diſpatch; ſo that I was now quite out of Caſh, and all my money was gone; not all in one day, but all, at all theſe ſeuerall times. I was (as your old prattling Goſsips vſe to ſay) reduced backe againe to my former ſtate, and might walke (as I did before) with a white Cudgell vnder mine arme. How much did I then riſent my former follies? How angrie was I growne with my ſelfe? What amendment did I propoſe vnto my ſelfe, now that I had not ſo much as one ſingle pennie left me in my Purſe? How many ſhifts did I vſe to conſerue my ſelfe, when I did not know againſt what tree to leane? Who forced me to fall in loue without diſcretion? Who made me turne Gallant, without moderation? Who taught me to ſpend without gouernment? To what end was I ſo free in my play, ſo franke in my Lodging? and ſo prodigall with my Captaine? *Quanto ſe halla traſero, quien enſilla muy delantero?* How often is he caſt behinde, that is firſt in the Saddle? What a ſhame is it for a man to follow his delights? What a baſeneſſe, to be captiuated by his pleaſures? I was readie to run beſides my ſelfe, and was almoſt out of my little wits, that when I had put my ſelfe in ſo good a Predicament, I could not hold me there, and keepe my ſelfe well, while it was well with me.

Guzmans money is all gone, and now begins to lament his follie.

Good Inſtructions for young men.

Spaniſh Prouerb.

Now, in regard as well of my youth, as theſe my youthfull vanities, I was no more eſteemed, or reſpected of any. The friends that I had in my proſperitie, the free table that I kept with the Captaine, the *Alferez* place, and the enſigne, that he told me he would beſtow vpon me, it ſeemed, that they were all ſtrooken with a ſudden lightening, which had burnt and conſum'd them. They paſt as an arrow, that makes his quick-feathered-flight thorow the aire; like a Thunder-bolt, that ſtrikes to death, before it be diſcerned; or to the twinkling of the eye, which opens and ſhuts in an inſtant.

When my moneyes fell ſhort, all fell away from me: as long as I had that, I had them; That gone, they ſhooke hands with me, and bid me farewell. Thus by little and little, piece after piece, all my ornaments were taken off, and poore *Don Iuan de Guzman* was degraded. I was like that *Obiſpillo de San Nicholas*, that prettie little Biſhop *St. Nicholas*, reſpected only for his Holy-day; and ſo I, while I had money in my Purſe, and no longer.

Proverb,

Thoſe that heretofore did me honour, did viſit me, did entertaine me, came to feaſt and banquet with me, the heart-ſtrings of my Purſe being broken, they forſooke me, as being no man of this world; Not a man that would talke with me, or conuerſe with me. And not only ſo, but they would not ſo much as vouchſafe to looke vpon me, or once ſuffer me to come in their company. The perfume that did once ſmell ſweet, doth now ſtinke in their noſes. They that knew not before how to be vnkinde, doe now take all things in ſnuffe. And I that honoured them, am requited by them with diſhonour, and all becauſe I am become poore. And as if pouertie had beene a great and heynous offence, I was conſigned ouer to the Secular power. My dealing and conuerſation was wholly now with the ſtraggling Boyes about the Campe, ſuch as carried Wallets and Knap-ſacks for the Soldiers, and on this had I now ſet vp my reſt. And it is good Iuſtice, *Que quien tal haze, que aſsi lo pague.* As a man Brewes, ſo let him bake.

Proverb.

CHAPTER X.

Guzman de Alfarache *declareth the mis-fortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how hee followed a Captaine, till he came into* Italy; *Exerciſing himſelfe in all kinde of thefts great and ſmall; for the reliefe and helpe of his Maſter.*

Misfortunes, are burthens that are hard to be borne.

HOw bitter vvas it vnto me to beginne; how troubleſome to goe on; how grieuous to indure this new diſ-aduenture? But I had been vvell acquainted heretofore vvith theſe kinde of mis-fortunes, and had learned them long ſince to my great coſt. And becauſe theſe things were not new vnto me, I preſently fell to my vvorke, and liuely beſtir'd my ſelfe about my buſineſſe. And I can aſſure you, it is a great happineſſe for a man to ſute himſelfe to all occaſions, and to know how to turne his hand to all kinde of labour, not relying on theſe tranſitory goods of the world, which like Buckets in a Well, are now full, and then empty; and no ſooner vp, but they are downe againe.

But this one thing was my chiefe comfort, That in the time of my Proſperitie, I gained credit againſt the day of Aduerſitie. And I did not count it my leaſt riches, ſeeing I was to become poore, that I had left a ſtampe & impreſsion in all mens minds, that I vvas of a noble and free diſpoſition, by thoſe my former actions, vvhich were able to ſpeake themſelues, though my ſelfe ſhould be ſilent.

My Captaine made ſome reckoning of me, acknowledging the courteſies, that I had vſed towards him, & vvas more vvilling, then able to help me. For (poore man) he had ſcarce inough to ſerue his owne turne. But he conſeru'd me at leaſt in that *buen punto* and good eſteeme, which he had at his firſt knowledge of me, anon after that we vvere acquainted, bearing a kinde of reſpect to the houſe whereof I came, and to thoſe my ſuppoſed Parents.

I vvas inforced to ſtripp my ſelfe; and laying aſide all my gallantry, I began to cloath my ſelfe againe in a meaner and poorer faſhion, and to put on that rich, (though vn-regarded) Roabe of Humilitie, which I did not thinke on in my brauery, and ſcorned (as a thing of nought) vvhen I vvas fluſh, and full of money:

The rich man that is vaine, and the poore man that is proud, both condemned.

Conſidering vvith my ſelfe, that *Vanitie* and *Neceſsitie* could not vvell ſute together. And that one Chaire was not able to hold them both. For the rich man, if he braue it, he is to be borne withall, for he hath where-withall. But that a poore man ſhould be ſo vaine, is to be but like the *Cameleon*; who, whatſoeuer he drawes and ſucks into him, is but ayre, without ſubſtance. And therefore, as the rich man that is vaine, ought to be abhorred; So the poore man that is proud, is not to be indured: It is inſupportable in the one, and ſcandalous in the other.

Guzman *ſets himſelfe to ſerue his Captaine.*

I ſaw, that I was not able to liue of my ſelfe, and therefore got to ſerue my Captaine, making him now my Maſter, vvho but a little before vvas my Companion. And I waited on him with that care, as I did on the Cooke. Howbeit, he commanded me with a kinde of reſpect, as conſidering who I vvas, and that my exceſſes, my childiſhneſſe, and ill-gouerned Youth, had brought me to this low ebbe, that I vvas driuen to ſerue him. And hee did thus farre aſſure himſelfe of me, that I vvould not doe any thing vnworthy a Gentleman, and vn-beſeeming my birth and Parentage, for any intereſt in the world.

What a man ſhould doe, that would riſe by his ſeruice.

He held me to be as faithfull, and as ſecret, as I was patient. Hee made me Treaſurer of all his ſecrets; for which affiance I alwayes ſhew'd my ſelfe thanke-

thankefull vnto him. Hee manifeſted his neceſsities, and made knowne his vvants vnto me, and what he had ſpent in his pretenſions; beſides, the prolixe time, and the exceſsiue trauell and paines, whereby hee at laſt obtained them; as by intreating, bribing, flattering, ſeruing, attending, crouching, creeping, making of legges, bowing the head to the ground, with cap in hand, and a quicke and nimble pace, trotting vp and downe the ſtreets from morning to night; early, and late, without intermiſsion.

I remember he told me, That going out of the Palace with the Kings Fauourite, becauſe he put on his Hat, whileſt he was entring into his Coach, he lookt vpon him, as if he would haue eaten him; and ſhortly after, gaue him to vnderſtand as much, by delaying his diſpatch, making him daunce attendance at Court many a faire day, till he thought hee had ſufficiently puniſhed both his Purſe, & his Patience. It ſhall euer be in my *Letany*, *Good Lord deliuer vs*, when Power and Malice meet.

A trick of a proud Courtier.

It is a miſerable thing, and much to be pittied, that ſuch an Idoll as one of theſe, ſhould affect particular adoration; not conſidering, that he is but a man, a repreſentant, a poore kinde of Comedian, that acts his part vpon the Stage of this World, and comes forth with this or that Office, thus and thus attended, or at leaſt reſembling ſuch a perſon, and that when the play is done, (which can not be long) he muſt preſently enter into the Tyring-houſe of the graue, and be turned to duſt and aſhes, as one of the ſonnes of the Earth, which is the common Mother of vs all.

Behold (brother) and ſee the Enterlude of our life is ended; our diſguizes laid aſide; and thou art as I; I, as thou; and all of vs as one another. Some doe ſo ſtrut and ſtretch out their bodies, and are ſwolne ſo bigge vvith the puffing winde of pride, as if they were able to ſwallow the whole Sea into their bellie. They ſport, and play, and follow their pleaſures, as if their aboade on earth, were to be eternall. They ſet themſelues aloft, and in-throane themſelues on high, as if they would get them out of Deaths reach, and that it ſhould not be in his power to tumble them downe. Bleſſed bee God, that there is a God. And bleſſed be his mercy, that he hath prouided one equall day of Iuſtice for vs all.

I did much grieue at my Captaines pouerty, becauſe I did not know how to remedy it. And by how much the more is the vvant and neceſsitie of him that is Noble, by ſo much the more doth the poore man pitie it, then the rich. He had ſome Iewels left, vvhich he might ſell, if need vvere, but thoſe were things to doe him honour; and being that he was vpon his departure, ready to imbarke himſelfe, where he ſhould haue occaſion to vſe them, it went againſt the very heart of him, to marre much, to mend a little.

Want in a great perſon, is a thing that moueth much compaſſion.

Now, while theſe Gallies were ſo ſlow in comming, wee vvere faine in the meane while to goe from one towne to another, to quarter our ſelues with the beſt conueniency we could. By that confeſsion, which my Maſter had made vnto me, I vnderſtood his minde, and the end wherefore he did it.

I told him, Sir, I know by good experience, both good and bad fortune; proſperitie, and aduerſitie, and wot well what they are.

In my yonger yeeres I haue trauelled farre and neere, and haue ſeen ſomewhat of the world. I ſhall to the vttermoſt of my power expreſſe that loyaltie & faithfulnes which I owe vnto my Maſter, and to the Stock vvhereof I come.

Take you, Sir, no care, aſſuring your ſelfe, that I will hazzard my life in your ſeruice, and will ſo order the buſineſſe (till better times ſhall befriend vs) that for the preſent, you ſhall paſſe ouer the trouble you now are in, with a great deale more eaſe. Thus did I take a taske vpon mee, that was farre greater then my ſtrength or wit could promiſe.

From that time forward, I did in this Office that I had vndertaken, per-

performe things of admiration, and ſuch as vvere beyond beliefe.

In euery place, where vve were to lodge our Souldiers, I had gotten a doozen (a) Billets, vvhereof the leaſt affoorded no leſſe then twelue *Royals*, and ſome did contribute fifty. My entrance was free into all thoſe houſes, where nothing was ſafe from my hands, no not ſo much as the vvater that was in their Wels.

I neuer ſuffered my Maſter to be without a Hen, a Chicken, a Capon, or a Pidgeon, both at dinner and ſupper, and a vvholé Gammon of Bacon euery Sunday boyl'd in Wine. Neuer did I reſerue any thing for my ſelfe of all theſe booties that I made. But looke vvhatſoeuer I got, I put it all into his hands.

If by chance the Maſter of the houſe ſhould take mee napping, if it vvere of ſmall value, it vvas paſſed ouer as a thing of nothing, and accounted onely a waggiſh tricke; but if it were of any moment, my puniſhment was, to be brought by my Maſter before him that had complained of me, and cauſing my hands to be bound, with the thinne ſole of a ſhoo hee vvould giue me my payment; which being of a hollow kinde of graine, it ſounded loud, but did ſmart but little; the noiſe vvas more then the paine. Sometimes I ſhould haue the lucke to get me Sureties, that ſhould paſſe their word for me, that I ſhould not doe ſo any more, and then I vvas pardon'd. But though they ſhould chance to faile me, the chaſtiſement vvas not rigorous, it did not raiſe any Wheales or Bliſters, nor left any marke of the ſtripes vpon my body. And becauſe I knew, they vvere giuen mee more for faſhion ſake, then any ill vvill; and rather to ſatisfie others, then to hurt me, before euer the blow came neere mee, I would cry out, as if I had beene kill'd; and ſet out ſuch a throat, as if I would haue rent the very walles of the houſe aſunder.

Thus did my Maſter and I giue good ſatisfaction; he, by complying with his obligation; and I, by ſupplying of his neceſsities: By killing firſt his hunger, and afterwards by giuing life to his Honour.

I would ſometimes get me out into the High-wayes, and ſeyze vpon all ſorts of baggages; then would I ſeeme to ſhew them the fauour of the Schoole, in ſelling them their owne againe; in-dearing to the owners of them, that it coſt me thus and thus much out of mine owne purſe, to get theſe their goods to be returned vnto them, ſo that I had both money, and thankes for my paines.

Thoſe commodities which wee lighted on in the Villages where wee lay, thoſe that vvere able, might chance to ſee them againe, and redeeme them for their money; but thoſe that had not where-withall, their goods were inuiſible, not a ragge to be ſeene; they that had taken them from them, were fled and gone, and no more newes to be heard of them. At the Muſters, when the Muſter-maſter was to ſee if the Company were full, I would thruſt in amongſt the Souldiers fiue or ſixe yong fellowes of the Towne, well appointed, and made them to paſſe. Sometimes I would ſo handle the matter, that putting one ſingle man into the Church, vp aboue in the Charnell houſe that is made for dead mens bones, fiue times one after another, I receiued fiue payes. And for him, that was to come laſt, I would clap a plaiſter vpon his noſe, that he might not be knowne. And euery ſeuerall time, I did change his cloathes, becauſe my knauery ſhould not be found out, and my tricke diſcouered.

With theſe Gigs, & other the like gulleries, mine own perſon was as good as foure mens payes. My Maſter lou'd me as his life for theſe good ſeruices that I did him, but he was a great ſpender; and therefore both this, and all beſides that I could doe for him, vvas all too little.

When we were come to (b) *Barçelona*, and ready to imbarke our ſelues in the Gallies, I found my Maſter much troubled, as being in a great ſtraight, for that

(a) *The Spaniſh word, is* Boleta. i. Scedula, quæ dabatur militibus in bello, vt properent ad hoſpitium. Dicitur autem Buleta, quaſi Bula pequenna; à diminutiuo Buleta. Et erat Scriptura breuis mandatoria, qualis eſt bulla Pontificis. Guzmans *cunning, whil' hee ſerui'd the Captaine.*

(b) *The chiefe Citie in* Catalunna, *founded* 230. *yeeres before the Incarnation of Chriſt. It was firſt called* Barzino; *of a great Image that builded it, of which deſcended the great* Amilcar. *Preſently vpon that,* Barzi-noua. *And now* Barçelona. *The Romanes afterwards called it* Fauentia: *But came in time to recouer it's old name.* Vid. Abr. Hort. Verb. Barcino. & Ant. Auguſtin. Dialogo. 70. de nummis antiquis. Guzman *comes to* Barçelona.

that he had receiued no pay from the King, and how to procure moneyes, he knew no way in the world; nor could mine that I brought him in, steal him to any purpose. I saw he was melancholly, sad, and heauy; I knew streight what disease he was sicke of, as being the Phisician, that had often cured him thereof heretofore. I offred him to apply a sudden remedie for this sore. He had with him diuers Iewels, I knew not well what my selfe, and amongst the rest an (a) *Agnus Dei* of gold, a very rich one: it grieued him to part with it. But I told him; Sir, if you dare to trust me, put this *Agnus Dei* into my hands, and I will promise you to returne it againe vnto you within these two dayes much improued, and make it better worth vnto you, then now it is. He was glad to heare me say so; and iestingly said vnto me; What tricke haue you now in store *Guzmanillo?* Hast thou lighted peraduenture (as thou wast wont) vpon some new roguish plot, some feate villanie or other, and canst come finely off with it? Now because he knew, that he might trust his profit, with my sufficiencie; his honour, with my secresie; and that his Iewel was sure enough, without farther questioning me, what I would doe with it; he gaue it me, telling me withall, God grant thou bring it me safe backe againe, and that thy wishes may take good successe.

Loe, there it is, take it, and doe what thou wilt with it. I tooke it of him, put it in my bosome, lapt it vp safe in a little Purse, knit it fast, and ty'd it sure to one of the button-holes of my Doublet. With it I went directly to a * Goldsmiths shoppe; One that vvas a rich man, and a great Vsurer; I made a large relation vnto him of my person, and how and by what meanes I came to this Companie, and what a deale of money I had spent in a short time, reseruing (vvhen I should see my selfe in some need) a very rich Iewell, for the supplying of my vvants: And that if he would buy it of me, he should haue it reasonable cheape, so as he did not offer me too little, and too much vnderualew the worth of it. But withall, I aduised him, that hee should first informe himselfe of my person, and my qualitie, who, and whence I was; and in knowing of it, (without rendring any reason why hee was so inquisitiue, taking that for a sufficient satisfaction to himselfe) he should walke forth and meet me at the Sea-side, for there I would stay for him, and there hee should finde me all alone, wishing him to make as much haste as he could.

This man, who had a great minde to this Peece, and was greedy of gaine, inform'd himselfe of me from the Captaine, the Officers, and some other of the Soldiers; receiuing so much satisfaction, as was sufficient to content him. For they did all of them witnesse one and the same thing; That I was the sonne of a principall *Cauallero*, rich, and nobly descended, and that being desirous to see *Italy*, I came to their Company with a couple of seruants attending on me, well clad, and with good store of Crownes in my Purse; that I had spent it all (as young men vse to doe) which was the cause, that I vvas now in that poore case, as himselfe might well see.

All this made as well for me, as my selfe could wish it; it fell out pat, as I would haue it. My honest Vsurer told me what they said, that hee was very well satisfied therewith, and that he might safely deale vvith me for any thing that I should sell him. He desired my Iewell of me, that he might looke vpon it, and that he would giue me as much for it, as it was worth. I told him, that

(a) Agnus Dei, *Is Christ our Redeemer called a Lambe; not* proprietate, *sed* similitudine. *As in many places, he is called a Vine, a Rocke, a Doore, a Shepheard, a Lyon, &c. But in regard of his meeknesse, vnspottednesse, chastitie, innocence and obedience; as also, for that he was sacrificed vp to his heauenly Father, for the sinnes of mankinde, with a great deale of proprietie, hee is called the Lambe. And the Romane Church, in the Sacrifice of the Masse, before the holy Communion was instituted, did say or sing this Prayer:* Agnus Dei, qui tollis peccata mundi, &c. *And* Iohn Baptist *did signe it with this name.* Ecce Agnus Dei, &c. Agnus Dei, *is likewise a holy relicke, which the Pope blesses, and consecrates the first yeere of his Papacie, and so afterwards from seuen yeeres to seuen yeeres. It belongeth to the Sexton and the Chaplaine to order and dispose the Waxe, where-into they put* Los cirios Pascuales *the yeere before. And with great curiositie, neatnesse, and reuerence, and in different Moldes, they take forth these Agnos, of different bignesse, and diuers Figures; both on the one and the other side, they haue the Lambe, whence this relicke takes it's name. And being presented to his Holinesse, he blesses them in the Chappell, and consecrates them with great Ceremonie, throwing them into Vessels of Holy-water, which he hath blessed, powring vpon them Balme, and the Crisme, or holy Oyle, saying many Prayers ouer them. It is said, that* Pope Vrban *the fift; sent an* Agnus Dei *to the Emperour of* Greece, *with certaine deuout Verses, wherein he declareth the excellencie of this holy Relicke; as that, it is good against tempest, Fire, Lightning, Thunder, and Pestilence; and against the assaults of the Deuill, and therefore ought to bee had in great reuerence;* Vide Couarruuias. Verb. Agnus Dei: * *A fine tricke, put by* Guzman *vpon a Gold-smith in* Barçelona, *that was a great Vsurer.*

vve would goe aſide by our ſelues into ſome ſecret place, and there he ſhould haue a ſight of it.

We vvent a pretie waies off, and when I had found out a fit place to my minde, I put my hand in my boſome, and tooke out my *Agnus Dei*, of whoſe price I was well informed, as one that knew what it coſt. The Gold-ſmith lik't it well, and had a great deſire to buy it. For, beſides that the gold-worke was very well wrought and curiouſly enameled, it had diuers ſtones in it of great value. I demanded of him for it two hundred Crownes, which was little leſſe then the price that was paid for it, when it was firſt bought. He began to turne and winde it this way and that way, holding it one while vpward, another downward, to ſee which vvay it ſhew'd it ſelfe beſt, and gaue the brighteſt luſtre.

He found a hundred faults in it (only to bring downe the price) offering me a thouſand Royals at the firſt word. I was reſolued, that hee ſhould not haue it vnder a hundred and fiftie Crownes, and it was as well vvorth that, as one Royall; and vnder that I vvould not part with it. And here vpon the By, let this ſerue by way of aduice to him that is to ſell, that he muſt neuer deſcend ſo low as the price for which he meanes to ſell it, but that he ſhould driue his bargaine ſo, that the buyer may riſe to his price; looking ſtill, when he ſhal come higher and higher, and ſo by ſtanding off, get as much for it as you can. We giue and take; I offer, and he bids; At laſt, my cunning Merchant comes vp to a hundred and twentie Crownes; I thought with my ſelfe I ſhould neuer draw him higher, and that it was enough (if not too much) for that which I pretended; and for ſo much I ſold it him. He was loth to leaue me, till he had paid me; and I would faine haue had me to haue gone with him: but I told him, Honeſt ſir, God bleſſe your life, and ſend you well to doe; if I ſhould goe hence alone with you, I am afraid, leſt that money would bee taken from me, which I purpoſe to keepe till I come to *Italy*, to furniſh mee vvith clothes, that I may come in ſome good faſhion, when I make my ſelfe knowne there to my Kinſmen, and friends.

And if ſome Soldier or other ſhould hap to ſee mee goe with you, they would preſently ſuſpect, that it is rather to ſell, then buy any thing of you. And if they ſhall perceiue, that I haue any ſtore of Copper or ſiluer money about me (being but a Boy as I am) they vvill take it from me, and I ſhall haue no remedie againſt them. And therefore God be your good ſpeed, goe your waies, I will ſtay for you here till you come, bring your gold with you, ſo many Crownes, as we haue agreed vpon, and you ſhall haue the Iewell away vvith you, and God ſend you as good lucke vvith it, as I ſhall wiſh you.

Hee well approu'd my reaſon, and haſted home (like a young Colt in his full gallop) for to fetch them. I had giuen notice to a Companion of mine, (a confident ſeruant of my Maſters) that he ſhould ſtay there waiting for me; And that vvhen I had giuen him ſuch a ſigne, he ſhould as ſecretly as he could haſte in vnto me. Hee lay cloſe in ambuſh; The Goldſmith by this time is come, he counts me out my Crownes in the Palme of my hand: I had the Iewell in my purſe, I ſought to vntie it: but becauſe the knots were knit ſo faſt, I could not ſo eaſily doe it. My Vſuring Merchant had hanging at his girdle a paire of kniues in an old greaſie ſheathe; I deſired him, that he would lend me one of them. Hee (not knowing vvhy I borrow'd it) pulls me out his knife, and giues it me. I cut the ſtring aſunder, leauing the knot faſt knit to my Doublet, as it was before, and I gaue it into his hand together with the *Agnus Dei*. The man began to maruell; and askt me vvhy I did ſo, and wherefore I had put it there? I told him, that becauſe I had neuer a Boxe, nor no Paper to lap it vp in, I had done as I did, and that the matter was not great, for the Purſe was old and little worth, and I had no great need of it: and as for thoſe Crownes that I had of him, I ſhould make a ſhift to ſew them

them vp in ſome one ragge or other about my cloaths, where no body ſhould come at them.

He tooke the Iewell of me, iuſt in the ſame manner as I had giuen it him, and after that he had put it in his boſome, we tooke our leaue, and he went his way. I gaue the ſigne to my Companion : hee comes; I giue him the Crownes, and aduiſed him, that he ſhould hie him home with them, and giue them to my Maſter, and tell him, that I would be with him by and by.

That done, I made after my Goldſmith, and though by reaſon of his large ſtrides, he had the aduantage of me, and got ground vpon me, yet I ran after him, till the occaſion I expected, did fairely offer it ſelfe vnto mee. And ſo watching my time, when he was iumpe euen with a Company of Souldiers, that were ſtanding together, I tooke faſt hold of him with both my hands, crying out, A thiefe, a thiefe, helpe, honeſt Souldiers, for Gods ſake come in and helpe me, for this Rogue hath robb'd me, hold him faſt if you loue mee, let him not goe, take (and you be good men) ô take, take quickly the Iewell from him, for my Maſter will kill me, if I come home without it, and this Villaine hath violently taken it from me.

I was well knowne to all the Souldiers, and as ſoone as they heard me, and ſaw the pittifull moane that I made, they beleeued I ſaid truth. Hereupon they laid hold on the man, to know vvhat the matter was. And becauſe hee that complaines firſt, the Iuſtice commonly goes on his ſide; and that whining and crying out of wrongs receiued, many times ouercome the right, more by clamour, then any good claime that they can make; I cry'd out more and more, and kept ſuch a ſtirre and ſuch a noiſe, that I would not ſuffer him to ſpeake, and if he did, then I was ſo loud againe and ſo clamorous, that they could not heare him; putting this tricke (*a*) vpon him in the playing of my game. I did implore their helpe with great exclamations, with my hands linked one within another, and lifted vp to heau'n, and with my knees, creeping and crawling on the ground, crying out vnto them; As yee be Gentlemen, good my Maſters, take pittie and compaſsion of me; for the Captaine my Maſter will ſurely kill me. This tribulation of mine did much trouble them, it did grieue them to ſee me in this pittifull plight.

At laſt, they began to aske me what the matter was? and how, and wherein I had beene wronged? Nor was I herein vvanting to play my part; now I had the hand of him, I would be ſure to hold it; gracing my lie with all the credit I could, that I might leaue the leſſe roome for his truth to enter. For, mans *Hearing*, contracting Matrimonie on the ſudden, vpon the firſt word that is giuen, will hardly be diuorced from it, but let it alone, and liue and ſticke thereunto during life, be it for better or worſe. So that all the reſt that come after, are but as Concubines, that come now and then to the *Hearing*, but haue no ſettled abode there: They may perhaps, like gadding Girles, touch at this eare, and that eare, and the t'other, (as at ſo many doores, or other folkes houſes,) but there is no dwelling for them, they muſt packe and be gone.

Hauing this ſtring to my bowe, (ſetting a good face on the matter) I vp, and told them; This morning, my Maſter left his *Agnus Dei* at his beds-head vpon his pillow; he willed me to keepe it, and to looke ſafe vnto it; I tooke it, and firſt put it in my Purſe, and then in my boſome, (thinking I had made all ſure enough) but meeting with this good man (you here ſee) by the Sea-ſide, I pull'd it forth to ſhew it him; And becauſe he was a Gold-ſmith, I askt him, what it might be worth? He told me, that the body of the Iewell was but Copper double-gilt, and that the Stones were counterfeit, no better then Glaſſe. Yet askt me withall, whether I would ſell it? I told him no; it was my Maſters. Hee demanded then of me, if my Maſter would ſell it? My anſwer was; Sir, I know not: you were beſt aske him, for hee can beſt tell

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe, is* haziendole el juego Manna. *That is, when one goes deferring the concluſion of a buſineſſe, becauſe he knowes it will goe againſt him, for that his cauſe is not good.* Couarruuias. Verb. Manna.

tell you. After this, he proceeded farther in talke with me, asking me, who I was, whence I came, and whither I would; And so held me on in such idle discourse, till we were both alone, out of sight of any; and drawing a knife out of that sheath of his that hangs there at his girdle, hee willed me to make no words, for if I did but offer to squeake, though ne're so little, or but wagge a foote from that place, there was no way but one with me, he would presently cut my throat. I stood shaking and quiuering, while hee was taking the iewell out of my bosome, and because he could not readily vnty the knots, I had knit them so fast, he made no more adoe, but cut the string asunder, and so went away with it. And I thinke he hath it still about him; search him, I beseech you (good honest Souldiers) for Gods sake search him.

The Souldiers seeing that the purse was cut indeed, turn'd towards my Goldsmith, and look't some-what strangely vpon him, who was strooke therewith so dead, that he had not a word to say for himselfe. They took the *Agnus Dei* out of his bosome, which he had carried away in the purse; as I had before informed them, so did they iust finde it about him.

Then did he begin to fall a cursing & swearing, vowing by no small oaths, that I had sold it vnto him, and that I with mine owne hand, with that very knife, cut the purse my selfe, and afterwards deliuered it vnto him, and that I had of him for it a hundred and fifty Crownes in very good gold. But for all his swearing and staring, they would neuer a whit the sooner beleeue him; Thinking in good discretion, that it was not likely, that he would venture to buy any such piece of me, for hee might very well thinke that it vvas stolne Ware. Besides (which made much for me) they had searcht mee all ouer, from top to toe, but could not finde one penny of money about me.

Making this to serue as a strong proofe against him, they vs'd him very homely, both in words and deeds. And whatsoeuer he said vnto them to iustifie himselfe, it was all one, he had been as good to haue held his tongue, for after that, they would neither beleeue, nor heare him. They had forcibly taken the iewell from him; Hee complaines thereof vnto the Iustice; I vvas brought before him; There I opened the case anew, (as before you haue heard) not failing so much as one syllable in the relating of that, which I had formerly deliuered.

The Witnesses were sworne, and iustified what they had both seene and heard. And in the end, the businesse was brought so about, that it was concluded, the Goldsmith should be seuerely punished. But vpon intreaty, hee had a brotherly correction, and so sent packing. And as for me, I had my Iewell giuen me in open Court, with charge to carry it home to my Master. I went with it to his lodging, and there in the presence of all his people, I deliuered it vnto him.

Amo proditionem, proditorem odi.

There are many that loue treason; but few that like the Traitor. Well may an ill man, by working ill, please that ill man that sets him a-worke, for the working of his ends. But when the deed is done, it can not be, but that in the brest of that man, there is so much mischiefe imprinted, and such knowne Characters of Villany written in the fore-head of him, that none of those that imploy him, will trust him, either any farther or longer, then they haue vse of him to bring their purposes to passe. What I had done did nothing displease my Master. At that time he lik't it vvell, yet it troubled him somewhat, and he could not well tell what to thinke of it. These tricks of mine did him good seruice, (and that he knew well inough) but he was afraid both of them, and me.

With these kinde of Cordials, I kept my Master in heart, till hee came to *Genoa*; where, (hauing dis-imbarkt) and hauing now but little need of my seruice, he shifted me off. Your Traitors, and other such like wicked Villaines, are like vnto Vipers, or your Scorpions; which when you haue taken

ken the ſubſtance of that from them, which you ſeeke for, you take them, and throw them vpon the dunghill. Onely they are nouriſhed by all ſorts of men (eſpecially your Great-ones) who make exceeding much of them, all the while they vſe them as inſtruments of their pretended ends; but thoſe once effected, they bid you farewell, they will haue no more to doe with you, vnleſſe it be to vndoe you, as you haue others; and ſo let you goe, for ſuch a one as you are; caring rather to vſe, then to keepe a Knaue.

Some few dayes after our arriuall, my Maſter call'd me aſide, and ſaid vnto me; Youth, you are now in *Italy*, your ſeruice will be of little vſe to me; and your Rogueries may doe me much wrong: Heere is ſome-what for you to helpe you on your iourney, diſpatch quickly, and be gone, for you haue free liberty to goe whither you will. He gaue me ſome moneys of ſmall value, and ſome few Spaniſh *Royals*; all was a matter of nothing, ſcarce worth God a mercy; and with this poore pittance, I tooke my leaue of him and left him. I walked along with my head in my boſome, muſing in the ſtreet as I went, on the great force of Vertue, which did neuer leaue any man vn-rewarded; whereas Vice did neuer ſuffer any man to eſcape vvithout puniſhment, and ſhame.

I would faine haue ſpoken then vnto my Maſter, and haue told him, that he might be pleaſed to remember, that I had relieu'd him in his wants, ſupplyde his neceſsities, taken a great deale of paines in his ſeruice, to my great coſt and hinderance. But I thought with my ſelfe, that he would twit me in the teeth with thoſe things, and lay them to my charge, and that therefore he was the willinger to rid himſelfe of me, as of a rotten member, good for nothing, but to infect all the reſt. And ſo I reſted from that. Now ſeeing in what diſgrace I was, and hoping to finde out my kindred there, I made the leſſe reckning of it. So I went dayly vp and downe the Citie, ſeeking by that meanes to learne the language, which as yet I neither vnderſtood, nor knew, out of the deſire that I had to know, and to be knowne.

THE

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The third Booke.

Wherein, he treateth of his beggerly course of life, and what therein hapned vnto him, whilst he was in *Italy*.

CHAP. I.

Guzman *discourseth of Pouertie, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man indureth; As also of Riches, and of the honours that are done vnto the Rich: As likewise of the naughtinesse of this present world: And how not finding his Kindred, which he sought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome; *and of a iest that was put vpon him, before he left that Citie.*

Ith Flatterers, no rich man is a foole; nor no Poore man wise. For they still weare Spectacles of the largest sight; by reason whereof, things represent them selues far greater then indeed they are. It may truly bee called, Wealths-Moth, and Truths-Worme. Flatterie resideth most with the Poore, being the greatest enemie that he hath: For that Pouertie, which is not the Daughter of the Spirit, is but the Mother of shame and reproach; it is a dis-reputation, that drownes all the other good parts that are in man; it is a Disposition to all kinde of euill; it is mans most Foe; it is a Leprosie, full of anguish; it is a way that leads vnto Hell; it is a Sea, wherein our Patience is ouerwhelmed, our honour is consumed, our liues are ended, and our soules vtterly lost and cast away for euer.

The nature of flatterers.

The Poore man is a kinde of money, that is not currant; the subiect of euery idle Huswiues chat; the off-scumme of the people; the dust of the street, first

The Poore mans Epithites, and his wretched condition.

firſt trampled vnder foot, and then throwne on the dung-hill; In concluſion, the Poore man is the Rich mans Aſſe. He dineth with the laſt, fareth of the worſt, and payeth deareſt: His Six-pence will not goe ſo farre, as a Rich mans three-pence; His opinion is Ignorance; His diſcretion fooliſhneſſe; His ſuffrage, ſcorne; His Stocke vpon the Common; abuſed by many, and abhorred of all. If he come in Companie, he is not heard; If any chance to meet him, they ſeeke to ſhunne him; If he aduiſe (though neuer ſo wiſely) they grudge and murmure at him; If he worke Miracles, they ſay, he is a Witch; If vertuous, that he goeth about to deceiue; His veniall ſinne, is a blaſphemie; His thought, is made treaſon; His cauſe, be it neuer ſo iuſt, it is not regarded; and to haue his wrongs righted, he muſt appeale to that other life. All men cruſh him; no man fauoureth him; There is no man, that will relieue his wants; No man that will comfort him in his miſeries; nor no man, that will beare him Companie, when he is all alone, and oppreſſed with griefe. None helpe him, all hinder him; none giue him, all take from him; he is Debtour to none, and yet muſt make payment to all. O the vnfortunate and poore condition of him that is poore, to whom euen the very houres are ſold, which the Clocke ſtriketh, and paies Cuſtome for the Sun-ſhine in Auguſt!

The rich mans Epithites, and his condition.

And as your rotten and refuſe-fleſh, comes to be meat for dogs; ſo, as an vnprofitable piece of fleſh, the diſcreet poore man comes to be eaten vp and deuoured by a company of ignorant Chuffes. But it is quite otherwiſe with the rich: How ſmooth doth the Wool goe on their ſide? What a freſh gale of winde is ſtill in the poope of them? In how calme a Sea doe they ſaile? What faire weather, free from the leaſt cloud of care? And what careleſneſſe in thoſe ſtormes, which other men ſuffer? Their Granaries are full of corne; their (a) Butts of Wine; their iarres of Oyle; their Cheſts of money. In the Summer, he keepes himſelfe from the heats; And in the Winter he clothes himſelfe warme to defend him from the cold. Of all men he is well receiued. His fantaſticall tricks, are gentleman-like carriage; His fooliſh ſpeeches, are wiſe ſentences; If he be malicious and hath a peſtilent pate to plot miſchiefe, then is he ſaid to be ſubtill, and to haue a ſhrewd head of his owne; If he be prodigall, they ſtile him liberall; if couetous, a warie wiſe fellow; if giuen to rayling, he is a wittie Gentleman; if foole-hardie, of a braue daring ſpirit; if impudent and full of ribaldrie, he is a merry man, and a fine Companion; if bitter in his taunts, and giuen to detraction, an admirable Courtier; if incorrigible, all metall; if ſcoffing, pleaſant-witted; if babbling and full of prate, they tearme him ſociable; if vicious, affable; if a Tyrant, a powerfull man; if obſtinate, conſtant; if blaſphemous and full of oathes, a very valiant fellow; if dull, graue and fit to make a Counſellour. His errours the earth couereth; all are afraid of him; none dare offend him; Euery mans eare is ty'd to his tongue, ſeeking by their attention to pleaſe his palate; and not a word that comes from him, but is entertained by them with as much ſolemnitie, as if an Oracle had ſpoken vnto them. He will not be ſaid nay, but will haue what he liſt, making himſelfe both Partie, Iudge, and Witneſſe. When he will countenance a lie, his power makes it to paſſe for a truth, and, as if it were ſo indeed, it is ſo receiued. How is he accompanied, how viſited, how feaſted, how magnified of all men?

(a) *The Spaniſh word is*, Cuba. i. el vaſo hecho de coſtillas de Madera del gada, que ſe çinne con aros y cercos y communemente ſe hazen las cubas, para echar en ellas el Vino. Couarruuias.

In a word, Pouertie is the poore mans portion, and riches, that of the rich. And therfore, where good bloud boyleth, & the Pulſe of honour beats ſtrongly, want is held a greater loſſe then life; death is not ſo hurtfull, nor ſeemeth halfe ſo terrible vnto him, as Neceſsitie. For money warmeth the bloud, and makes it quicke and actiue: Whereas he that is without it, is but a dead body that walkes vp and downe like a ghoſt amongſt the liuing. A man cannot without it doe any thing in it's opportune and fit time, he cannot execute his deſires, nor accompliſh any thing, whereunto he hath a liking.

A man without money, is a body without life.

This

This is the courſe of the world, it hath alwaies kept this tracke, it is no new thing, but euen from the beginning, to ſee (a) men of baſe birth, and meaner parts, to waxe proud and arrogant. There is no helpe nor remedie for it; So we found it, and ſo we ſhall leaue it; we muſt not looke for a better time, nor thinke that it was otherwiſe heretofore. All whatſoeuer, either hath bin, is, or ſhall be, is ſtill one and the ſelfe-ſame thing. Our firſt Father was credulous and light of beliefe; our firſt mother a Lyer, and falſe of her word; The firſt ſonne that was borne into the world, a thiefe and a *Fratricide*, one that kild his owne and only brother.

What is there now, that was not heretofore? Or what can we hope for in that which is to come? If what is paſt ſeemeth better vnto vs, it conſiſteth only in this, that we are more ſenſible of the ill that is preſent; and call to remembrance thoſe good things of old, which being ſo farre off, are quite abſented from vs: yet when our troubles are once ouer-paſſed, we are ſo glad, when we finde our ſelues to be well rid of them, as if they had neuer beene. So your Medowes beheld from a farr, are very pleaſant to the eye, and delightfull to looke vpon, but when thou draweſt neerer vnto them, thou doeſt not finde ſo much as one hands breadth of ground, where thou mayſt conueniently fit thee downe, all that thou ſeeſt, being nothing elſe but bogs, pits, and ſtones. We ſee the one, but neuer thinke on the other: it is as common, as ancient in the world, for euery man to loue proſperitie, to follow after riches, to ſeeke for fulneſſe, to procure preferment, to purſue plentie, and to hazard our liues to get wherewithall to liue, and to grow into money (which is the mother of abundance;) For where that is wanting, the father towards the ſonne, the ſonne towards the father, brother towards brother, and I my ſelfe, euen towards my ſelfe, breake my faith and my word, and abhorre mine owne ſelfe.

This leſſon, time hath taught me, out of the diſcipline of his experimentall diſcourſes, hauing puniſhed me with an infinite number of miſeries and afflictions.

I plainely now perceiue, that if (when I arriued at *Genoa*,) I had conſidered what I was, and but looked well into my ſelfe, I would not haue ventured ſo farre as I did. And if I had had but the wit to haue reſerued that occaſion to ſome better fortune, I ſhould not happely haue beene ruin'd and vndone by it, as you ſhall heare here-after.

As ſoone then as I had left the Captaine my Maſter, hauing made of all my totter'd rags and other old clouts, a kinde of Scar-crow (for they would ſcarce ſerue for any other vſe) to fray away birds from the Fig-trees, I would needs boaſt my ſelfe to be deſcended of the (b) *Gothes*, an ancient Gentleman, and neerely ally'd to moſt of the Nobilitie of that Citie, giuing out, that I was ſuch a one, and come of ſuch a houſe; and making farther inquirie of my Fathers ancient Familie, and his great Alliance in that Citie, it cauſed ſuch diſtaſtefulnes, & ſuch a loathing in them towards me, that they did hate me to the death. And it is to be ſuppoſed, that if they could haue done it without any preiudice to themſelues, they would haue giuen it me; And thou alſo wouldſt haue done the like, if ſuch a gueſt ſhould haue come within thy doores. But they manifeſted their good meaning by thoſe actions, which they vſed

(a) *The Spaniſh phraſe, is,* Que de atras le viene al garbanço el pico. *Which is rendred as I haue here ſet it downe.* Vide Couarruuias. Verb: Garbanço.

(b) *The etymologie of this word* Godo, *or* Gothe *is diuers: and comes of* Gathia, *a Prouince ſo called* Got, *alſo ſignifies a Father, which is a phraſe properly belonging vnto God. If from hence we deriue the name of* Gothes, *they muſt be men of eſteeme, as* Heroes, *or good men.* Goet, *is as much as* Good, *from* Got; qua voce Deum vocamus, quia bonum à Deo deſcendit, & ad Deum deducit. *It is not amiſſe to thinke that* Godo *in it's Language, ſignifies Good. Some would haue it come of the Hebrew word* Goi, *which is by interpretation,* Gens, *or* Natio. *But fetch it whence you will, I am ſure of this, that the* Gothes *were Lords of innumerable Prouinces, and particularly of* Spaine, *where they ruled a long time, till the vnfortunate raigne of* Don Rodrigo, *and of the Reliques of thoſe, which had retyred themſelues into the Mountaines, the Nobilitie of* Spaine *began anew to liſt vp their heads, which continueth to this day; and is ſtill in ſuch eſtimation amongſt them, that when they will ſet forth the preſumption of ſome vaineglorious fellow, they will aske him,* Si deciende de la caſta de los Godos. *Whether he bee lineally deſcended of the race of the* Gothes.

towards me. There was not that man to whom I made my ſelfe knowne, that did not relieue me with a boxe on the eare, a flirt on the lips, a kicke on the breech; and he that did leaſt hurt or diſgrace me, did not ſticke to ſpit in my face, vpbraiding me with the name of Villaine, Rogue, (a) Moore, and the like. Art thou a *Genoues*? Thou art the ſonne of ſome vile lewd woman, no better can be conceiued of thee. And as if my father had beene *terræ filius*, a ſonne of the earth, a mis-begotten Baſtard, or as if he had been dead ſome two hundred yeeres agoe, I could not finde ſo much as a foot-ſtep of any friend or kinſman of his. Nor could I diſcouer any thing, till one came vnto me, and greeting me with a Serpents tayle, like a crafty old Scabbe; (O that accurſed old Villaine, that ſonne of a Whore; O how did he coozen me!) clozing fairely with me, vp and told me:

(a) Couarruu. *The Spaniſh word is*, Marrano. *i.* Porcus vnius anni. Et Iudęus recenter conuerſus ad Chriſtianiſmum, cum Hiſpanis, vocatur Marrano. *A notable pleaſant trick put vpon* Guzman, *by a* Genoes.

I haue heard much talke (my Boy) of your Father, and I can bring you acquainted with thoſe that ſhall render you a large relation of your Parents, and thoſe none of the meaneſt; but (if I be not deceiued) euen the beſt, and nobleſt in all the Citie.

And becauſe I ſuppoſe you haue ſupt already, come and take a bed with me at my houſe, (for now the time is fit for nothing elſe) and to morrow morning we will walke a turne or two about the Towne, and I ſhall bring you to thoſe (as I told you) that knew him very well, and had long conuerſed with him. The good preſence that he carried, the grauitie wherewith he vttered his words, his good proportion of body, his decent attire, his bald-head, his white Beard, which reached almoſt downe to his Girdle, and the Staffe which he bare in his hand, repreſented (me thought) vnto me another Saint *Paul*. I truſted my ſelfe with him, I followed him to his houſe, with a great deale more deſire to ſup, then to ſleepe: for that day I had made but a bad dinner, as well for that I had beene chafte and angred; as alſo that it muſt haue been at mine owne coſt, which made me to quake, as oft as I did but thinke vpon ſpending but a farthing.

But becauſe that which the rich giue vs, is but little, and what we call for, muſt coſt vs money, we eate but little bread, and that (God knowes) ſtale, and hard; though to vs, that are almoſt hunger-ſtaru'd, it ſeemes a great deale, and ſoft inough. Beſides, I was now growne a pinch-belly, and a very miſer to my ſelfe.

I went along, but with feeble legges, ready to faint for hunger, after that I ſaw what an Hoſt I was like to haue, & how (like a *Cordoueſe*) he told me by way of preuention, that I had already ſupt: And had it not bin out of the feare that I had to loſe ſo faire an opportunity, I would not haue gone with him, vntill I had firſt viſited ſome tippling houſe. But the hope of that good which ſeemed to weight for me, made me too leaue the Bird that I had in my hand, for to follow the Oxe, which fled too faſt from me, for me to catch him. As ſoone as we were come into his houſe, a ſeruant came to take off his Cloake; he will'd him to let it alone; and they twaine hauing talked together a while in their owne language, he ſent him forth: So that now being left all alone to our ſelues, we walked many a turne, and ſometimes talked of one thing, ſometimes of another. At laſt, he drew neerer vnto me, asking me diuers queſtions concerning Spaine; and amongſt the reſt, more particularly of my Mother, as how ſhe was left, what was her Eſtate, how many brothers ſhe had, and in what ſtreet ſhe liu'd? I gaue him a full account of all, as wiſely, and as aduiſedly as I could for my life.

In this diſcourſe I intertain'd my ſelfe the better part of an houre, vntill ſuch time as his ſeruant was returned. I know not what was his arrand, nor what meſſage he brought him backe; but my old Foxe turn'd about vnto me, and ſaid vnto me; So, it is well, inough for this bout, it is time for you to take your reſt, get you to bed, and to morrow we ſhall ſee one another againe, and

then

then we ſhall inlarge our minds more freely to each other. Then he cals, *O la Antonio, Maria,* doe you heare there? Come away, and conduct this Gentleman to his lodging. I went along with him from lodging to lodging, through this roome, and that roome, I know not whither my ſelfe; it was a great large houſe, wrought with many goodly faire Pillars, whoſe pauement was all of Alabaſter, hewne foure-ſquare.

At laſt we croſſe through a Court, and enter into a lodging, that ſtood at the one end thereof, which was very well furniſhed, and fairely hung vvith Hangings of ſundry ſorts of colours, like vnto your (a) *Arambales*, but that they ſeemed to be ſome-what better then they. The Beds-head lean'd againſt the wall, and cloſe adioyning therevnto ſtood a little low Stoole. And as if he would haue me to make my ſelfe vnready, the ſeruant that was appointed to attend me, offred his ſeruice to pull off my cloathes. But they were ſuch, and ſo ragged, that my ſelfe knew not very vvell how to put them either off, or on, vnleſſe I tooke a great deale of care, diſpoſing of one piece after another, for there was not any one part that was whole, or put in it's proper place, ſo that it was impoſsible to diſcern or know, which was the Ierkin, or the Breeches, when you ſaw them layd abroad, and ſtretched out vpon the ground. So that I hauing vndone ſome few knots, with the which I had faſtened them together for want of points, I let them ſlide off from me at the beds feet. And thus foule and ſlouenly as I was, and ſo lowſie, as no man could well be worſe, I crept me in between the ſheetes. The Bed was ſoft & good, the ſheetes cleane and ſweet. And when I was laid, I began to think with my ſelfe, ſure, this good old man is my kinſman, that he vſes me thus kindly, but will not make himſelfe knowne vnto me, till to morrow morning. It is a good beginning, it cannot be, but that he will giue me new Cloathes, and deale kindly with me, ſince being in that poore and miſerable eſtate as I was, he had giuen me ſuch good entertainment. Queſtionleſſe it is ſo, & now wil ſome faire fortune befall me. I was but yong, I did not diue to the bottome of his drift, I only lookt vpon the *Superficies*, I went no farther then the outward appearance. For, if I had had either wit or experience, I might haue conſidered with my ſelfe, that great offers, haue great ends, and that he that is full of courteſie, is full of craft. For ſuch kindneſſes as theſe, are not done for nothing, there is ſome myſterie more in it, then a man is aware of. And alwaies obſerue this for a *Maxime*, or generall rule, That when a man ſhall offer the courteſies of an extraordinary nature, and ſuch as heretofore he hath not been accuſtomed to doe, eyther he meanes to put a tricke vpon thee, or elſe he ſtands in neede of thee. The Seruant, when he had me to bed, went forth of the Chamber, leauing a candle burning by me, I ſpake vnto him, wiſhing him to put it out. He told me, I muſt hold him excuſed, and that he would not doe ſo, for in the night time, there flye vp and downe in that Countrey (almoſt in euerie corner) certaine Bats, or Reare-Miſe of an extraordinarie bigneſſe to thoſe in other places, which are very offenſiue, and doe much hurt, and that the only remedy againſt them, is to haue a light ſtanding by ones bed ſide, for they can by no meanes indure it, but ſeeke to auoid it by flying away from it into ſome blind corner or other.

He likewiſe told me, that this their Country was full of Hob-gobblins, and Robin-good-fellowes, which were all great enemies to the light, but in your dark lodgings, they did now and then play their parts, and do many a ſhrewd turne. All which I did beleeue with the greateſt ſimplicitie in the world.

This ſaid, he went his wayes; and he was no ſooner gone, but I preſently got me vp, and made faſt the doore, not that I was afraid of robbing (for I had nothing to loſe) but out of a ſuſpition and iealouſie that I had, that ſome one miſchance or other might befall me; being yong, vnfriended, vnknowne, and in a ſtrange place, where I neuer was before.

Hauing

(a) Arambal: *Is a Mooriſh word: and is a courſer ſort of Hangings.*

A grande offerta, grande penſamiento.

Hauing (as I thought) made all ſure, I returned back againe to my bed, fell preſently aſleepe, inioying (to my great content) a ſweet and quiet reſt; for the Pillowes, the (a) *Colchones*, the Couerlets, and the Sheetes did drinke a Health vnto me, and I (with a very good will) did ſoundly pledge them.

(a) *Your Spaniſh* Colchones, *are like our finer ſort of Engliſh Matreſſes; quilted with Wooll, or Flaxe; for in your hot Countries they vſe no feather-beds.*

The better part of the night was now ouer-paſt, the beame of mid-nights ballance began to decline, and leaned a little towards the breake of day, whileſt I, being in a dead ſleepe, was wakened on the ſudden with a confuſed noiſe of foure parts: Diuels they ſeemed to be by their ſhape, their habit, their blacke curled haire, and by thoſe fearefull vgly vizards, which they had vpon their faces.

Hauing walkt their Stations a while about the Chamber, they came at laſt vnto the bed, vvherein I lay, putting me in ſuch a fright, that I loſt my ſences for a time, and vvithout any vword ſpeaking, off they plucke the Couerlets from me, anon after the Sheetes. I wondred what a Gods name would become of me; I fell as faſt as I could for my life, to croſsing and bleſsing of my ſelfe; I ranne ouer my prayers, I called a thouſand times vpon the name of IESVS; but they vvere *Dæmonij baptiZati, Chriſten Diuels*, and therefore drew ſtill neerer and neerer vnto me; They had put vpon the *Colchone*, vnder the nether ſheet, a Blanket; euery one tooke hold of his corner, and haled me forth into the middle of the roome. I was much amazed, and extremely troubled, when I ſaw that my prayers could not preuaile; inſomuch, that I did neither dare; and if I durſt, yet I was not able to open my mouth, nor to ſpeake ſo much as one word, if I might haue all the world for my labour.

The roome was high-roofed, and fitted for their purpoſe; where, when they had me out amongſt them, they began to blanket me, and to toſſe me vp in the aire, as they vſe to doe dogges at Shroue-tide, till growing ſo weary, that they could hold out no longer, they left winnowing of me (being ſufficiently fanned already) and laid me downe there againe, where they found me; and leauing me for dead, they couered me with the cloathes, and went out that way they came in, hauing firſt put out the light. I was ſo diſ-ioynted, and ſo broken as it were in pieces, and ſo beſide my ſelfe, that when it was day, I did not know, whether I were in heauen, or heere vpon earth: God, who was pleaſed to preſerue me, knew for what end he did it.

It vvas now about eight of the Morning, and I was vvilling to riſe, for that I found my ſelfe reaſonably able to get vp. Me thought, I did not ſmell ſo ſweet as I ſhould, my body cleauing to the Sheetes, no clay could be more clammy, nor any plaiſter cling cloſer.

This put me in minde of my old Maſters Wife, the Cooke. And although there are no perturbations, vvithout ſome one diſorder or other, yet this did much afflict me. But now the Crow could bee no blacker, then vvere his vvings: And therefore I rubb'd ouer all my body with the cleaneſt places, that I could meet vvithall in the ſheetes; vvhich vvhen, I had done, I beganne to buckle my harneys vnto me, and fall a knitting of my old knots, to my older cloathes. And the longer I vvas in making of me ready, the more I did conſider vvith my ſelfe, vvhat a Diuell that ſhould be, that had befalne mee this laſt night: And if when I roſe vp, I had not found my limm's almoſt ſhaken in pieces, my bones bruized, and in a manner out of ioynt, I ſhould verily haue thought, that it had beene but a dreame. I look't round about the roome, but could by no meanes finde vvhich vvay they ſhould come in. By the doore it vvas impoſsible, for I had ſhut that ſure vvith mine owne hands, and found it faſt lockt, as I left it.

Then I began to caſt with my ſelfe, vvhether they might not be thoſe Hobgobblins, and Robin-good-fellowes, vvhich the Yong-man told mee of ouer-night. But that (me thought) could not be; for if it vvere ſo, then had hee done very ill, that he did not aduiſe me before-hand, that there vvere ſome

of

of theſe ſame mad merry ſprites, that delighted as much in light, as other more melancholly Diuels did in darkneſſe.

Whileſt I was muſing on this buſineſſe, and deuiſing with my ſelfe, how or vvhich way they could get in; I lifted vp the Hangings, to ſee, if behind them I could eſpy any little out-let; at laſt I lighted on an open window, which did butt out vpon the Court, thorow which we croſt. Then I preſently ſaid with my ſelfe; This way were the Bulls brought in, my hurt came in at this Window; And albeit euery rib in my bodie, and all my bones throughout, did rattle in my skinne, making ſuch a noiſe for all the world as your Cheſſe-men doe, when you ſhake them together in the bag, yet I did diſſemble it all that I could (in regard of that ſlouenly part, which I had plaid againſt my will) till I ſhould ſee my ſelfe quite cleare of the houſe: I threw vp the bed as handſomely as I could, couering all as cloſe as might be, that if any ſhould come in, they might not ſmell out my fault, and finde out the feebleneſſe of my retentiue faculties, and ſo the ſame Deuils be brought in againe, and torment me anew.

The ſeruant, that brought me thither, came to mee towards nine of the clocke, and told me, that his Maſter expected me in the Church, and that I muſt goe thither vnto him; And becauſe I would not willingly haue his man ſtay behinde in the chamber, that I might get the ſtart of him, I intreated him that he would doe me the kindneſſe to bring me to the doore, becauſe I was vnacquainted with the houſe, and knew not the way out. So he brought me forth into the ſtreet, and returned backe againe.

When I ſaw I was come off cleere from him, as if I had beene borne with wings at my feet, and my body had been ſound & whole, I tooke (a) *Villa diego* his Breeches, and tript away ſo nimbly, that he that had runne Poſt, ſhould hardly haue ouertaken me. Hee runnes faſt that flies: Feare addeth wings and ſtrength; thought was not ſwifter then my flight. I bought ſomething by the way to ſatisfie hunger, and for to gaine time, I eate as I went, and made no ſtay, till I was out of the Citie. Where in a Tauerne I call'd for a Cup of Wine, where-with I refreſht my ſelfe, that I might walke the ſtronger towards *Rome*, whither I had directed my iourney, thinking all the way as I went vpon that groſſe ſcorne, whereby they ſought to baniſh me out of *Genoa*, to the end that my pouertie might not diſgrace them; but I did not remaine their Debtor, nor had they any great cauſe to bragge thereof in the end, as you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part.

(a) Tomar las calças de Villa diego. Vale huyr mas que de paſſo, *This Prouerbe is in* Celeſtine, *but it's originall vnknowne: But it ſhould ſeeme* Villa Diego *was driuen to his ſhifts, and not hauing time to put on his breeches, was forced to flye away with them in his hand.* Couarr. verb. Calças. Guzman, *leaues* Genoa, *and goes for* Rome.

CHAPTER II.

Guzman *diſcourſeth of the vnhappineſſe, greatneſſe, and commendation of Neceſsitie and Want; And how after hee was gone from* Genoa, *he fell a begging. And how keeping Companie with other poore beggers, he was inſtructed by them, of their Statutes, and Lawes.*

I Fled ſo faſt out of *Genoa*, that if *Lots* wife had but done that, which I did, ſhe had neuer beene turned into a Pillar of Salt. I neuer offred to looke backe, my Anger ſpurd me on, and put me vp to the height of my ſpeed; for when choller once begins to boyle, we hardly feele the wounds that are giuen vs, though they be neuer ſo mortall, neuer ſo deadly. Beſides, by how much the more a man re-bringeth as it were himſelfe, to himſelfe, and looketh home into his owne boſome, by ſo much the more hee comes neerer to the recognition and knowledge of his hurt.

Anger and it's effects.

I escaped from the ouerthrow giuen at (a) *Ronçes valles, como perro* (b) *con bexiga*; like a Dog, that claps his taile betweene his legs, and through too much haste to be gone as farre as his feet will carry him, growes sur-bated, and stiffe in his ioynts. There was not one firme ligament in all the whole Fabricke of my body. But I did not much feele it, till I came to rest my selfe; When I drew neere to a little Village some ten miles off from *Genoa*, where I sate me downe, not knowing whither to goe, being bruised in my body, naked of cloathes, without money in my Purse, and blacke and blue all ouer, as if I had beene beaten with a Cudgell.

(c) O *Necessitie*; how doest thou abate mans courage? How doest thou take off his Metall? How doest thou dis-hearten his bodie? And howbeit it be true, that thou doest sharpen the wit, and refine the vnderstanding, yet thou destroyest the faculties therof, by diminishing and taking off so much from the senses, that they are readie to bee flaw'd and crackt in pieces through too much sufferance, and that intolerable patience, whereunto they be put.

There are two sorts of (d) *Necessitie*; The one shamelesse and impudent, which (like an vnmannerly guest) comes of it selfe, without being called. The other, which being inuited, straines a little curtsie, but comes vpon intreatie at the first bidding. That which vnrequested, (e) bids it selfe, God deliuer vs from it; And this is that, of which I treat. This is like a powerfull guest in a poore mans house, who out of his greatnesse brings a thousand followers along with him; it is that man of Warre, wherein a multitude of mischiefes, (like so many Pyrats) stand readie armed, wayting to doe hurt. It is the framer and plotter of all kinde of trecheries and villanies; hard to be indured, and worse to be corrected. It is that *Lucerna Nauis Prætoriæ*, that Lanterne in the Admirals Ship, which all couzenages and deceits attend and follow; it is the sport of Boyes and children; a foolish dance, a ridiculous Comedie, the sad and direfull Tragedie of honour and of vertue. It is fierce, foule, fantasticke, furious, fastidious, faint, facile, feeble, false: only she failes of being a *Franciscan*. And it is a wonder, if she afford any other fruit but infamie.

That other, which we bid & inuite, (f) & comes not but when she is called, is Lady-like, liberall, rich, franke, powerfull, affable, generous, sociable, gracious, acceptable, and welcome to all. She leaues vs a full and plentifull house, feeds vs at her costs, and defraies all recknings; she is a firme defence, an inexpugnable Tower, true riches indeed, and good, without hurt; That (g) Necessitie (I say) which necessitates it selfe, but is not necessitated, is the place of perpetuall rest, the house of God, and the way to heauen. It lifteth vp mens mindes, it addes strength vnto their bodies, it doth innoble their fame, it cheereth their hearts, it magnifieth their Actions, and makes their names immortall.

Let renowned *Cortes*, her truest Louer, sing forth her praises. Her legges and feet are of Diamonds, her body of Saphires, and her countenance of Carbuncles, it shineth, it cheereth, and it quickneth, it is full of pleasure, lustre, and life. But that other neighbour of hers, lookes like a filthy old sluttish Laundresse, where you shall see nothing but a heape of Spittle ragges, full of matter'd stuffe, and the soiles of vlcerous sores, which no eye is able to indure, it is so loathsome to looke vpon, and therefore (with a great deale of reason) abhorred of all. Behold and view me well, for I am one of those, with whom Necessitie fell in loue, she neuer left following me, but kept me company at bed and at boord, liuing in deadly sinne, by being bound to seeke out meanes to maintaine her. And to this end, she made me studie the (h) Briuiatick Art.

(a) Ronçes valles, *is a Monasterie, built by King* Don Sancho de Nauarra, *which he indowed with great Rents; it is a Couent of Canons Regular, who beare in their brests an Azure Crosse, hauing the forme of a shepheards Crooke, or Crosier staffe. Heere was a great battell fought. The said King lies buried in this Monasterie, his body being brought from* Tudela, *where he died.*

(b) Vexigas, *are certaine Blisters, which rise vpon the flesh, through heate, or some other accident, and commonly grow on the feet of men or beasts, with ouer-much trauaile.* Couarruuias. Bexiga.

(c) *Necessitie and it's effects.*

(d) *Two sorts of Necessitie.*

(e) *Necessitie, that inuites it selfe, and the miserie thereof.*

(f) *Necessitie, that comes not before shee bee inuited; and the greatnesse thereof.*

(g) *Necessitie, not necessited, and the commendation thereof.*

(h) Briuion, *a loytring fellow that will not worke, but goe from Towne to Towne, from house to house, to begge a piece of bread, and a Dish of drinke. It is a French word,* Bribeur, Mendicus. Briber Mendicare. Couarruuias.

This

This was the courſe I ran, I was to day in one place, and to morrow in another, begging an almes of all that I met with.

It is fit, that we ſhould giue euery man his due. And therefore I muſt confeſſe vnto thee, that there is much charitie vſed in *Italy*, and indeed ſo much, that this new Trade, that I had betaken my ſelfe vnto, made me loth to leaue it, I found ſo much ſweetneſſe in it. For in a few daies I grew fluſh, and able to make wing to maintaine my flight; So that from *Genoa*, whence I came, till I ſaw *Rome*, where I ſtayd, I performed all that Voyage, without ſpending ſo much as one farthing. The money that was giuen, I kept that whole and intire, and for victuals, I had euer ſufficient, and more then would ſerue my turne. I was yet but a Nouice, and therefore threw that away many times to the dogges, which afterwards, when I had more iudgement, I ſold for money, which brought me in no ſmall gaines.

Italie, *a charitable Countrie.*

I had a great minde (as ſoone as I came thither) to put my ſelfe into new cloaths, that I might be ſome-what againe like my ſelfe; but this counſell of mine (me thought) was not ſo good; and therefore repenting my ſelfe of it, I ſaid thus with my ſelfe; Friend *Guzman*; take heed, leſt this other doe not proue like that of *Toledo*. And if being well clad, thou ſhouldſt not chance to meet with a Maſter, how wilt thou haue bread to put in thy mouth? Content thy ſelfe, and continue ſtill as thou art; For, if being well apparelled, thou ſhalt beg an almes, they will giue thee nothing; Keepe that which thou haſt, and leaue off theſe thy vaine and idle humours.

This deliberation tooke place: and hauing now ſet vp my reſt, I knit another knot vpon my Purſe-ſtrings, and then I ſpake vnto my money, and ſaid, Here reſt you quiet, for I know not what need I may haue of your helpe. I began then in theſe my old raggs, that were not good enough to make waſte Paper, hanging thoſe totterd ſtreamers as handſomely as I could about mee, (which ſeemed like ſo many little pieces of rauell'd Flannell, ſo full they were of liggs and iaggs) to beg for my liuing.

Hauing recourſe ſtill at noone to thoſe places, where there was either bread, or porrage to be had; and ſometimes it would ſo fall out, that I ſhould get as much at once, as might very well ſerue three more beſides my ſelfe. I viſited your Cardinals, your Embaſſadours, your Princes, your Biſhops, and other great mens houſes, not ouer-skipping any one of them. I was directed vnto them by another young Youth of that Countrie, he was my Guide, who was well skill'd in that craft, and was the firſt Tutor that euer read any Lectures vnto me in this kinde. Hee taught me the firſt grounds and Principles of this learned Science, and the different *Species* and formes of begging, how this man was to be ſought vnto, how that; what phraſe of language to be vſed towards ſuch a ſort of people, and what a differing faſhion to thoſe of another kinde. For we muſt not haue all one tone, for all ſorts of perſons, but muſt varie our note, alter our ſtraine, and applie our ſelues to that ſtile, which we ſhall thinke will take beſt, and moſt moue and affect the partie, whoſe deuotion we craue.

Men doe not care for curious words and choyſe phraſes, they loue not the ſmoothneſſe of flatterie, and as little can they abide to be beaten about the eares with loud exclamations; that which they like beſt, is an honeſt plaine kinde of begging, *Por amor de Dios*; Good Sir, for Gods ſake, beſtow one poore pennie vpon me.

Your women, they are wonderfully deuoted to the Virgin *Mary*, to our Lady *del Roſario*, and the like; with theſe you may be a little more liberall of your Language, beſeeching God, that he will direct all their Actions to his holy ſeruice, that he would deliuer them from all deadly ſinne, from the accuſation of falſe Witneſſes, from the power of Traytors, and the malice of euill tongues.

This

This being well pronounced, and repeated ouer and ouer; with a great deale of vehemency of vvords, and a ſtrong and earneſt deliuery, makes their purſes preſently fly open, and happy is ſhe who can firſt ſupply thee with an Almes. He taught me how to vvorke the rich to compaſsion, how to moone the poorer ſort to pitie, and how to oblige the religious deuout man, that he ſhould not be able to get from me, before he had giuen me an Almes. He inſtructed me ſo vvell in ſuch a company of fine cunning tricks in this kinde, that I got a great deale in a little time.

Conoçia deſde el Papa, haſta el que eſtaua ſin capa. *Prouerb.*

There was not that man, but I did know, euen from the very *Pope*, to him that had ne're a Cloake: that is, from the higheſt to the loweſt. I did runne ouer all the ſtreetes of *Rome*, and that I might not bee too troubleſome by begging too often in one place, or of one perſon, I did diuide the whole City into certaine quarters, euery vvorking-day vvalking my ſeuerall Station; but on Sundayes and Holy-dayes, I was wholly for your Churches, I neuer miſt, but punctually kept my houres, and there I made good purchaſe. But that which I made moſt profit of, were the pieces of bread, that vvere giuen me: Theſe I ſold, and they yeelded me many a faire penny. Part vvhereof thoſe poore men did buy, which did not goe vp and downe a begging, but * were faire for it, being (as they ſay) the next doore to it, who out of their pouerty, were faine to trade vvith me, becauſe I could affoord them a good bargaine.

(*) *The Spaniſh word is,* Tenian la bola en el embogue.

And ſome I ſold to poore Country-folkes, ſuch as make a liuing of feeding Pigs, and fatting of Poultry. But thoſe that vvere my beſt pay-maſters, were your (*a*) *Turroneros*, for to make their *Alaxur* or (*b*) *Alfaxor*, as they call it in *Caſtile*. I did helpe my ſelfe beſides, with ſome old houſ-hold ragges, who, for that they ſaw I vvas young, and naked, did in pitie beſtow them vpon mee, which were ſomething vvorth to mee, though to them they were things of nothing.

(*a*) Qui coquit & facit turrones Turron. Copta Cruſtulum. *A Bisket made with Honey, Almonds, ſmall Nuts, Walnuts, Kernels of Pine-Apples, &c.*

Afterwards, I fell in company with ſome other of more ancient ſtanding in that faculty (for they had their diſtinction of degrees, & prioritie of formes, as in Schooles) for the better increaſing of my knowledge, & that from them I might learne how to gouerne my ſelfe wiſely and diſcreetly. Theſe Rogues had beene admitted into the Liuery long agoe, and had borne Office of Renters and Wardens, men that had held preeminence amongſt them, and deſeru'd to be Maſters of their company. With theſe I went to ſome knowne Doles; there being ſome men that did dayly (out of meere deuotion) diſtribute almes euery morning to the poore in their particular houſes. Going once to receiue this Dole in the French Embaſſadors houſe, I might heare other poore Beggers, that were behinde me, begin to murmure, ſaying; This Spaniſh vnhappy Boy, which beggeth heere now in *Rome*, is newly come, and a meere ſtranger in this place, he is not acquainted with this courſe of life, and for vvant of knowledge, (by that which I haue obſerued in him) he is likely to beat downe the market, and if ſome order be not quickly taken with him, he will vndoe vs all. For hauing once fill'd his belly, in the moſt places where he comes, if they giue him any victuals, he refuſes to take them, and tels them (God be thanked) he hath dined well inough already. He will quite ouerthrow the Art of begging, by giuing the world by this meanes to vnderſtand, that we poore Rogues haue more giuen vs, then we can well tell what to doe withall. So that if he runne this courſe a little longer, he will hurt vs, and doe himſelfe no good.

(*b*) Alfaxor is a *Mooriſh word*; *And is a kinde of Conſerue, made of Hony, Spices, and crummes of bread.* Couarr. verb. Alaxu.

Another of their Comrags, that was there with them, Tuſh (quoth he) hold ye your peace, let me alone with this Lad, I will take him to taske, and yee ſhall ſee how I will worke him. I will inſtruct him how to vnderſtand himſelfe, & how he may not eaſily be vnderſtood by others. Leaue him (I ſay) to me. With that, ſpeaking ſoftly vnto me, he called me vnto him, and we went out alone by our ſelues from all the reſt of the Company. He was an excellent

cellent Proficient, and a very ready and dextrous man in all that appertained to that Art.

The firſt thing that he did (as if he had been the *Protopobre*, or Prince of Beggers) was, to examine my life, asking me, Whence I was? What was my name? When, and to what end I vvas come thither? Then did he deliuer vnto me the great obligation, that Beggers had to keepe a *decorum* in all their actions, to hold correſpondence one with another, and to linke in loue together like ſworne (a) brothers, and that I ſhould informe my ſelfe of certaine curioſities, and ſecrets, and ſome Principles, which I did not as yet know. For in very truth, that which I learned of my Youth afore-mentioned, and of other poore Rogues of leſſe talent, and farre inferiour both in knowledge and experience, were all triuiall things, and of no eſteeme, in compariſon of thoſe precepts, which I receiued from this Grand-Maſter of his faculty. He gaue me certaine Rules, which I ſhall neuer forget as long as I liue.

Amongſt the which, one was, that I ſhould vnfold three or foure leaues of my ſtomake, and open the booke to a plaine vomit, yet to be ſo well read therein, that it ſhould not appeare to the vvorld, that it proceeded from any ſurfet, or that I had ouer-charged my ſtomake. He taught me a tricke how to turne vp my ſtomake in ſome by-corner, which wrought two good effects.

Firſt, it moued the people to compaſsion, thinking that I was ſicke: Secondly, though afterwards I ſhould ſwallow downe two Platters of vvarme pottage, there would be roome inough ſtill for more. And ſo by this meanes the infamy and miſery that the poore indured, would the bettter be publiſhed and ſpred abroad. I knew how many bits I was to eate, and how I was to looke vpon the bread that they gaue me, how to kiſſe it, and how often, and vvhat kinde of countenance to caſt vpon it: What faſhion of behauiour I was to vſe, and how to carry my ſelfe vpon all occaſions, differing the forme, according to the diuerſitie of mens diſpoſitions. I knew the true tone of my voice, vvhen I was to riſe, and when to fall with it. I knew the ſet houres wherein I was to repaire to ſuch or ſuch a place; In what houſes, I might enter in euen to the bed-ſide, and in what, I might not preſſe no farther then the doore. I knew whom I might bee bold to importune, and be earneſt withall in my crauing; and whom againe I ought not to ſollicite or ſpeake vnto aboue once. In concluſion, he gaue me in writing all the Statute-Lawes, and Orders, ordained by that free Common-wealth of beggers, inſtructing me in the obſeruation of them, for the auoiding of ſcandall, and the better informing of my vnderſtanding And theſe are they that follow.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Hermano de meſta. *A certaine iuriſdiction belonging to Heards-men and Shepheards. The Etymology thereof is not ſo eaſie; but I will deliuer what I thinke, remitting my ſelfe to others better opinion. It is termed* Meſta, quaſi mixta. *By reaſon of the concurrency and mixture of diuers Herds and Flocks one amongſt another. And becauſe they make reſtitution of thoſe that are thus inter-mingled one with another, which are knowne by ſome Markes branded with hot irons. Or it is ſaid to be* Meſta, *of* amiſta, *becauſe of the great conformitie and friendſhip betweene theſe kinde of people, who are very obſeruant of their Lawes. Thus the Idiome of Aragon doth confirme, who name that, which the Spaniards call* Meſta, Ligallo, *which is as much as* Liga, *and* Liga, *a confederation, or friendſhip.*

The Lawes and Ordinances, that are inuiolably to be obſerued amongſt Beggers.

FOraſmuch as all Nations haue their proper method of Begging, and are diſtinguiſhed and knowne by their ſound, and by a differing forme from all others; as are your *Almanes* by their ſinging, and going in troopes; your *French-men*, by their praying; your *Flemmings*, by their making of legges, and their low and frequent Congies; your *Gypſies*, by their importuning; your *Portugals*, by their weeping; your *Italians*, by their long Circumlocutions; and your *Spaniards*, by their bigge lookes, and high language, as if they would ſwagger a man out of an Almes whether he will or no; whereby they make themſelues hatefull to their owne hurt, being held no better then vaine babblers, and a kinde of inſufferable proud Rogues; theſe therefore we more eſpecially will & command, that they reform this diſorder, beare themſelues ciuilly, that they doe not curſe, nor blaſpheme, (as too commonly they vſe to doe) but that they keepe good order, according to our Statutes and Ordinances in that caſe prouided.

Item, we vvill and command; That none of our brother Rogues, or begger vvhat-ſoeuer, either wounded, or lame, of any of theſe Nations, whence, or vvhatſoeuer, ſhall ioyne and vnite himſelfe vvith thoſe of another Country, and that not any perſon or perſons of all, or any one particular, ſhall make any Couenant, Compact, or Alliance, vvith any blind men, that goe ſaying their prayers, from doore to doore; nor with any Mounty-bankes, Muſicians, nor Poets, nor with Slaues ſet at libertie, though our Lady her ſelfe ſhould haue releaſed and ſet them free from the power and tyranny of the Turkes; nor with old Souldiers, which being totter'd and torne, haue forſaken their colours, and fled from their Captaines; nor with Mariners, that with one ſtorme are diſ-heartened, and haue no more minde to goe to Sea. For howbeit all and euery one of them doe ſute and agree well together in all kinde of cheating, and roguiſh tricks, and would make excellent beggers, yet the Art it ſelfe of Begging, and the language are much differing. And therefore we will and command euery one of theſe to keepe his owne quarter, and ſtrictly to obſerue ſuch Orders as are ſet downe and ordained in that caſe.

Item, We will and command, that the poore of euery Nation, eſpecially in their owne Countries, haue certaine Tauernes, and knowne victualling houſes, where ſhall ordinarily preſide and gouerne, three or foure of the more ancient amongſt them, hauing Staues in their hands, as Enſignes of their precedencie, and authoritie: Whom wee depute, to treat in thoſe places of all ſuch Accidents and other things that ſhall happen there, or ſhall otherwiſe be brought to their knowledge. That they ſhall ſit in Councell, and giue their opinion therevpon. And when they haue ſo done, they may afterwards play at Foxe mine Hoſt, or ſome other drinking (a) Game, at Cards or Dice for their recreation, and to waſh away care. They may ſit ouer the Cup, and tell old Stories: they may recount the famous Acts, done either by themſelues, or others, as alſo of their Anceſtors, and boaſt of thoſe warres, wherein they haue ſerued, and what-ſoeuer elſe they ſhall thinke fit for intertainment.

Item, We will and command; That euery Begger carry a good Bat or Cudgell in his hand, and thoſe that are able, to put a good Pike at the end of it, that they may be armed and prouided againſt all caſualties, that may befall either their Purſe, or their Perſons. Which they are to doe vpon penalty of their own hurt.

Item, That no Begger may, or doe weare any new garment, or but halfe worne out, ſaue ſuch as is rent and thred-bare, and full of patches, by reaſon of the ill example that may grow thereby, & the generall hurt that may come of it. Alwayes prouided, that if any ſuch Coat or Cloake bee giuen by way of Almes, that then it ſhall bee lawfull for him to weare it that day onely wherein it was giuen him, vvithout any farther limitation of licence, but the next day following to put it off, and neuer weare it more, but forthwith to alter the propertie, vpon paine of our generall diſpleaſure, and his owne particular hinderance.

Item, We will and command, That in the taking of their places, and their ſeates, they doe all and euery one of them obſerue, *antiquitatem poſſeſſionis, & non perſonæ* the antiquitie of poſſeſsion, and not of the perſon; preferring the ancienter in ſtanding, before the elder in yeeres. And that no man ſhall dare or preſume, to vſurpe or defraud one another in this kinde.

Item, We will and command, That two ſicke, or two lame perſons may ioyne and goe together, and call Brothers, but with this condition, that they begge by turnes, and ſtraine their voices as high as they can reach; the one ſtill beginning, where the other leaueth, obſeruing equall time, and tune, euery one keeping his one ſide of the ſtreet; and not vſing any artificiall phraſes, or affected forme of ſpeeches let each of them expreſſe, as ſignificantly as he can, his parti-

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Rentilla: *The Italian*, Gattacieca. *It is ſome Toſſe-pots game, wherein your Ale-Knights, and idle Rogues ſit ouer their Cups, and cenſure and deride all eſtates.*

particular griefe; and let them afterwards part and ſhare the gaines betweene them, vpon paine of our Worſhips diſpleaſure.

Item, we will and commaund, That no Begger carrie from the knife vpwards, any armes, either offenſiue or defenſiue. That he weare no Gloues, Pantofles, Spectacles, his hoſe truſſed or his ſtockings gartered, vpon paine of forfeiting of all his temporalties.

Item, it is farther enacted, That they may weare a foule filthy clowt knit about their heads in ſtead of a Kerchieffe.

They may alſo beare about them a paire of Sizars, a knife, an Awle, Needle and thred, a Thimble, a woodden Diſh, a (*a*) Gourd, a little Hand-basket, a Scrip, a Wallet. Be it alwaies prouided, that they beare no Sacke at their backe, no basket of burthen, no (*b*) *Alforjas* or Knap-ſacke, which Trauellers vſe to put their prouiſion in, when they are to goe ſome great iourney, nor any ſuch like kinde of things as theſe be. But it ſhall be only lawfull for them to walke with two Crutches, and a ſore legge, with a long and deepe tent in it.

Item, We will and command, That all beggers beare two purſes about them; one little one, and another of a bigger ſize, beſides certaine priuate pockets for cloſer conueyance, that may ſafely indure a ſearch; and that they put the almes that is giuen them into their Hat. And Wee further will and command, that they neither may make, nor doe make any Pouch or Budget, in Coate, Cloake, Frocke, Gabardine, Caſſocke, or Mandillion, vpon forfeiture, it being once eſpi'd and found out, they may chance to loſe it, and ſtand regiſtred euer after for fooles vpon record.

Item, We will and command, that no man diſcouer the ſecrets and myſteries of our Trade, nor diuulge and publiſh them abroad, ſaue only to thoſe that are Profeſſors of the ſaid Arte. And he that ſhall inuent or finde out any new tricke or cunning deuice for the common good, ſhall be bound to manifeſt the ſame to the incorporation of beggers; to the end, that it may be vnderſtood and knowne of all, for as much as ſuch good things as theſe, are to be accounted as common, there being no prohibition to the contrarie; and more eſpecially, not to be concealed from thoſe that are our Country-men, and naturals of the ſame Kingdome. But for the better incouraging of others, and that notice may be taken of our good gouernment; We giue priuiledge, and plenary power to the firſt inuentor and Author thereof, that for the ſpace of one whole & complete yeere, he make his beſt benefit of the firſt impreſsion, not ſuffring or permitting any, without his eſpeciall and particular Licence, to vſe or exerciſe the ſame, vpon paine of our heauie diſpleaſure.

Item, We will and command, That all beggers ſhall manifeſt and make knowne to one another, all thoſe houſes, where any almes are to be had, eſpecially thoſe, where there is any Gaming, as alſo ſuch places, where your Gallants vſe to meet, and court their Miſtreſſes; for that is a certaine rent, and ſeldome faileth.

Item, We will and command, That no begger breed any hunting Hounds, Greyhounds, or bloud-Hounds, nor may in his owne houſe haue any more then one little Mungril-curre; for the which wee giue free libertie and licence, and that he lead him along with him either ty'de in a ſtring, or otherwiſe faſtened to his girdle.

Item, We will and command, That none ſhall carry a dog about with him, making him to dance and leape thorow a Hoope: nor ſhall it be lawfull for him to haue or hold any place to begge at the doore of any Church, any ſtation, or Iubilee, only he ſhall haue free leaue to begge as he paſſes along by the ſtreet, vpon paine of being counted contumacious and rebellious to our Lawes and Ordinances.

Item, Wee will and command, That no begger preſume to come to the

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word, is* Calabaça: *wherein Pilgrims and beggers carry their beuerage.*
(*b*) Alforjas, *is a Wallet deuided into two parts, that it may the more eaſily be borne vpon a mans beaſt. It is an Arabicke word, to wit,* Alhfodja, *of the Verbe* Alhfad, *which ſignifies to keepe: becauſe in it Trauellers keepe their prouiſion.*

Butchers ſhambles, or to the Fiſh-market, to buy either fiſh or fleſh, ſaue in caſe of extreme neceſsitie, and licence of the Phiſician; nor that he ſing, play vpon any Inſtrument, leape, or dance, by reaſon of the ſcandall that may ariſe by ſo doing.

Item, We licence and permit, that ſuch beggers as are ſo diſpoſed, may rent certaine children, to the number of foure (but not aboue) their ages being firſt examined; and if two of them be taken for twinnes, borne of one wombe, at one and the ſelfe-ſame time, it ſhall not be thought amiſſe of, in caſe that the elder of the two be not aboue fiue yeere old. And if it bee a woman that goes about with theſe children, ſhe ſhall beare one of them ſucking at her breſt; and if a man, he ſhall carry one of them in his armes, and lead the other along by the hand, and not otherwiſe.

Item, We will and command, That thoſe Beggers that haue any children, they make ſetting dogges of them, to lie watching cloſe at your Churches, and haue ſtill an eye vpon thoſe that come in and out, for whom it ſhall be lawfull to begge an almes for their poore father or mother, that lie very ſicke and keepe their beds, and haue nothing to helpe themſelues withall, hauing foure or fiue ſmall children, that are ready to ſtarue for want of food. Alwaies prouided, that it be ſo taken and vnderſtood, that this Patent extends not to any that is aboue ſixe yeeres of age; for if they ſhall once exceed and paſſe thoſe yeeres, then are they to ſhift for themſelues, and like birds that are fluſh, to forſake the neſt, and like Hounds that are readie to be entred, noſe out their owne liuing, and goe abroad, and bring home their prey at vſuall and ordinarie houres.

Item, We will and command, That no begger giue conſent, or ſuffer his children to ſerue, to be bound Prentice to any Trade, or to waite vpon any man, whom he ſhall acknowledge for his Maſter. For their gaines will be little, and their labour much: And therein they ſhall greatly offend, by not following the ſteps of their forefathers, and running a courſe quite contrary to that good way, wherein they haue beene borne and bred.

Item, We will and command, That by ſeuen of the morning in the Winter, and at fiue in the Summer, no begger be in his bed, or keepe his lodging, but by breake of day, as ſoone as the Sunne ſhall be ready to peepe forth, or ſome halfe houre before they goe abroad to gather honey for their hiue. And likewiſe, that ſome halfe an houre before the ſhutting in of the Euening, he by all meanes, and at all times retire himſelfe, and get him home; ſaue only in ſome caſes reſerued, and that with our eſpeciall leaue and licence.

Item, We permit and giue leaue, that they may breake their faſt in the morning, eating a morſell of ſome thing or other, if they haue laboured for their liuing, and gotten any thing the ſame morning, and not otherwiſe. For therein they loſe time (which is a precious thing) and ſpend vpon the ſtocke, by diminiſhing the principall. But with condition, that he waſh and clenſe his mouth, that the ſent thereof be not perceiued; As likewiſe, that he paſſe not vp and downe the ſtreets, or by any mans houſe, playing with a cloue of Garlicke in his hand, a ſliced Onion, or that his breath ſmell of Wine; vpon paine of being held incapable and vnfit to begge.

Item, We will and command, that no man dare to play the Impoſtor, or commit any groſſe villanie, as to ſteale houſhold-ſtuffe, or helpe to conuey it away, or exchange it for other, or to vntyle houſes, or ſtrip children of their cloathes, or to commit any the like baſe action, vpon paine of being excluded from our brotherhood, and put out of our incorporation, and to be remitted ouer to the ſecular power.

Item, Our will and pleaſure is, that euery begger, when he ſhall be of full age; that is, (three yeeres after twelue, being fully complete and ended) hauing legally and worthily laboured in that courſe of life, and attained to the

the true arte of this our free and noble Profeſsion, he be held, taken, knowne, and vnderſtood (be it any ſuch manner of perſon or perſons) to haue fulfilled the Law, and comply'd with the Statute: notwithſtanding, that two other yeeres to gaine experience, and to learne how to driue the (a) fiſh into the net, haue alwaies to this very day and preſent houre, beene thought very neceſſarie and expedient; and euer after to be held as a Graduate, that hath performed his exerciſe, and taken Degree amongſt vs. And hauing thus profeſt himſelfe, and made proofe of his learning and manners, we farther will and command, that he haue, hold, and inioy all the Liberties, Priuiledges, and exemptions granted by vs vnder our great Seale; but with this condition, that he neither may, nor at any time doe forſake our ſeruice, and that hee ſhew his obedience vnto vs, by obſeruing our Lawes and Statutes, and by ſubmitting himſelfe to our Cenſure, in caſe he ſhall offend againſt them.

(a) Xauega *is the Spaniſh word, which is a Fiſhers net at Sea, wherewith by little and little, they goe drawing and haling the fiſh to the ſhore, where certaine* Picaros *and Rogues are ſtill waiting for to pull and tugge at the cordes of the net, whom they call* Los de la Xauega. *It is an Arabick word, which in it's owne termination is ſaid to bee* Xibquetum, *of the Verbe* Xebque, *which ſignifieth, to intrap, or bring into the Net.*

Chapter III.

How Guzman de Alfarache, *was not only reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his facultie; but likewiſe how he learned of him ſome new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguiſh kinde of life, and that which happned vnto him in this his vpright courſe; And of many Precepts and leſſons, deliuered vnto him vpon this point by a* Cordoueſe, *an old cunning Croſſebiter.*

BEſides theſe Ordinances, they had many other which they duly kept and obſerued, not worthy at this time to be ſpoken of, which were preſcribed and compiled by the aduice and counſell of the famouſeſt Rogues in *Italy*, euery one (in his time) ſetting downe ſuch Lawes, as then ſeemed moſt conuenient. So that it might be ſaid of them, that they were another new Recopilation, or gathering together of thoſe of *Caſtile*. Theſe were much illuſtrated in thoſe daies by one, whoſe proper name was *Alberto*, whoſe ſurname *Mizer Morcon*: Whom in *Rome*, we had made choyce of for our Generall; Who, for his ſtature, ſhape, proportion of body, his faſhion, conuerſation, and commendable carriage, deſerued to haue the Imperiall Crowne ſet vpon his head. For he farre ſurpaſſed all his Predeceſſours, who were no way to be compared vnto him, ſo farre did he outſtrip all them that had gone before him. He might deſeruedly be ſtiled the Prince of Roguerie, and the Arch-begger of Chriſtendome. Hee would deuoure you at one meale, all the tripes and intrailes of two good ſheepe, together with the puddings that were made of them, beſides the Trotters, a whole Cowes Vdder, ten pound of bread, vnboulted and vnſifted, betweene the beginning and end of dinner, allowing himſelfe thereunto in drinke, two (b) *Açumbres* of Wine. And albeit he himſelfe alone got more almes in one day then any ſixe of thoſe ordinarie beggers, which gained moſt; yet had he neuer any ouerplus left, nor did ſell any of thoſe ſcraps, that were giuen him, nor did receiue any money, which he did not preſently drinke out. And he did goe ſo farre beyond vs, and was euery way ſo much our ſuperiour, that we muſt of force (as Vaſſals to his good or bad fortune) ſuccour and relieue him all that wee could. I neuer ſaw him buttond, nor couered from the girdle vpward, neuer to weare any girdle, nor ſo much as halfe a hoſe or ſhoe vpon foot or legge; His head was euermore bare, his beard cloſe ſhauen, and his skinne all ouer his body did ſhine and gliſter, as if it had beene anointed and baſted with Bacon. This Vpright-man did ordaine, that euery poore body ſhould carry about with him a woodden diſh in the crowne of his hat, or ſome other conuenient

Mizer Morcon, *Generall and Superintendent ouer the beggers.*

(b) *Euery A-çumbre, we deuide into foure meaſures, which we call in* Spaine, quartillos. *An* Açumbre, *may be ſaid alſo to be a great big Iarre, or Pitcher filled with Wine.*

uenient place, and the dried rinde of a Pumpion, wherein to put his Wine, clapping it in ſome cloſe place, where it might not be ſeene.

Orders, ſet downe by Morcon, King of Beggers.

That no begger ſhould carry any iarre or pot about him, wherein to drinke his water. But when he came to drinke, he ſhould ſup it out of a Caldron, a Kettle, a great earthen Pan, ſome broad Tub, or huge Vatte, or the like, and then too, to thruſt in his head like a beaſt, and not in any other manner.

That he, that ſhould not drinke a ſound draught after his Sallet, ſhould bee made incapable to drinke afterwards, as long as that ſupper, or dinner laſted, and to riſe vp a thirſt.

That no begging Rogue ſhould buy, or eate any Comfits, Conſerues, or the like ſweet things.

That euery one ſhould eate either Salt, or Pepper with his meat, vnleſſe it haue beene therewith ſeaſoned before. In that caſe, the doing, or not doing of it, ſhall be left to his owne liberty.

That your poore Rogues ſhall be bound to ſleepe vpon the ground in their cloathes, without Pillow or Bolſter, lying vpon their backs, with their faces vp to heauen.

That hauing gotten inough to ſpend that day he goes a begging, hee ſhall trouble himſelfe no farther, nor begge any more for that day, but giue way to others to gleane, where he left off.

This our *Mizer Morcon*, when he did eate, would lye lazing all along vpon the ground, and would ſleepe both Winter & Summer, without any couering of Sheet, Blanket, or any thing elſe that might keepe him warme.

Ten moneths of the yeere, he neuer went out of Tauernes, and victualling houſes; We had (as you haue heard) our Lawes and Orders amongſt vs, all which I committed to memory, and was perfect in them, but did obſerue no more of them, ſaue ſuch as appertained to good gouernment, and of theſe I was euery way as religious, and obſeruant, as if my ſaluation had depended vpon the true keeping of them. I made it my chiefe happineſſe, and placed a kinde of felicitie therein, that my Actions might credit my Profeſsion, and become abſolute in my calling. For things, that are once imitated & begun by vs, when we haue taken them in hand, are not eaſily to be forgotten, nor to be giuen ouer, till they be fully finiſhed, and ended. For it is a note of ſmall prudence, to enter vpon many things, and to end none of them.

I did not put my hand to any thing, that euer I tooke it away, till I ſaw my labour ended, and had fully effected what I had vnder-taken. But becauſe as yet I was but greene fruit, and not come to my full ripeneſſe, whereby I wanted much of my true relliſh, I failed much in the practicke part of my profeſsion, and fell ſhort dayly in ſuch caſualties as did vſually offer themſelues vnto me, and in many of them I did much erre.

a *In* Italy *in that moneth it is hot at that time of day.*

Vpon a Feaſt-day, about the beginning of (a) *September*, towards one of the clock in the afternoone, I went forth into the Citie in that great heat, and ſuch a ſcorching Sunne, that I am not able to expreſſe it, perſwading my ſelfe, that whoſoeuer ſhould heare me begge at that time of day, would verily thinke, that I was wondrous hungry, and taking pitie of me, would relieue me with ſome thing or other.

Guzman recounts the tricks vſed by Beggers: And a ieſt that was put vpon him.

I would needs (meerely out of curioſitie, and no other end elſe in the world) ſee what I could get at theſe vnſeaſonable houres. I walkt my Stations through ſome ſtreets, & viſited many houſes, but could get nothing frō them, ſaue euill words, giuing me foule language, and many a bitter curſe, asking me in a Diuels name what I made there? And ſo roming about from houſe to houſe, I came at laſt to one, where I knockt at the doore with my Staffe, but no body would anſwere me. I knockt the ſecond time, and the third, but all was one. Then I inlarged my voice, and began in the higheſt key I could reach, to ſet out my throat, and to begge as loud as I could for my life. For the houſe was very

very great, and ſtood farre within, and therefore ſuppoſed they could hardly heare me, vnleſſe I ſtrained my note a little higher. Whileſt I was thus balling at the doore, a roguiſh Boy of the Kitchen, who (as it ſhould ſeeme) was ſcouring of Diſhes, came iuſt to the ſame window, vnder which I directly ſtood, and threw downe vpon me a great bucket of ſcalding water; and when hee ſaw it had fairely lighted vpon me, he leiſurely vtters: *Aqua va, quardaos debaxo.* Ware water, looke to your ſelues there below. With that I began to cry out, that all the ſtreet did ring of me, grieuouſly complaining, that I vvas kill'd by ſome of that houſe, and that it was impoſsible I ſhould liue. True it is, that I was ſcalded, but not in that cruell manner as I made my crimination.

With this vociferation of mine, and the lamentable exclamation that I made, the people flockt about me, and euery one ſpake what he thought: One ſaid, it was ill done; another, that it was mine owne fault; and that, though my ſelfe had no minde to ſleepe, yet I ought in good manners to ſuffer others to take their reſt.

There were ſome others, that did comfort me the beſt they could, and of thoſe that were ſome-what more tender-hearted then the reſt, I made a ſhift to picke vp ſome money amongſt them, and with the helpe of that, I went firſt where I might dry my ſelfe, & afterwards got me home to take my reſt; muttering to my ſelfe, as I went along, Who (with a pocks) made me ſo curious, as to goe about to remoue the Riuer out of his bed? When ſhall I bee able to containe my ſelfe? When ſhall I learne to content my ſelfe with that, which ſhal be fit and neceſſarie for me, without incroaching vpon that, which is not conuenient for me? What Diuell did deceiue me, and drew mee out of that ordinarie tracke, which I was wont to tread, by making mee to be more forward then the reſt of my fellowes? I drew neere at laſt to mine owne lodging, and there hard by dwelt an old poore man, about ſome threeſcore and ten yeeres of age; who was borne of beggerly Parents, that had borne Office in our Incorporation, and had left this trade of begging vnto him by inheritance, wherewith he made a ſhift to liue, and to paſſe his life away heere vpon earth.

He was of *Cordoua*, there was he borne: Which I the rather tell you, that you may know that he was dy'de in his wooll, a notable Rogue in graine, whom his Mother brought to *Rome* ſucking at her breſt, in the yere of *Iubilee*.

A Begger that was a Cordoueſe, *teacheth* Guzman *many leſſons concerning the Art of begging.*

When he ſaw me paſſe by in that miſerable pickle, looking for all the world like a diſh-clout, all wet, all to be-moyl'd, foule and full of greaſe, and all to beſpatter'd with the refuſe leaues of Coleworts, and the ouer-ſodden empty Husks of Peaſe, wherewith my garments were imbroidered all ouer; he askt me what had hapned vnto me? I acquainted him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe. He was ready to burſt himſelfe with laughing, and hauing made himſelfe merry a while at my mis-fortune, compoſing his countenance, with a ſettled kinde of grauity, in the end he ſaid thus vnto me:

I feare me (my friend *Guzman*) that you will proue another *Benitillo*, you are ſuch a Hot-ſpurre, and your young bloud boyles ſo faſt within you, that you would faine come to be a Maſter, before you haue attain'd to be a Scholler. Doeſt thou not now perceiue, that thou haſt done ill, in exceeding thy Commiſsion, and in breaking thoſe cuſtomes, that are ordered and ordained by the Company? Yet, becauſe thou art my Country-man, and a yong Lad (and therfore apt to erre) I will teach and inſtruct thee, what thou oughteſt to doe, and how to behaue thy ſelfe. Sit thee downe by mee, and hearken well to that which I ſhall ſay vnto thee.

(a) Seſtear, i. repoſar ala Sombra en la hora de Sexta. Que es la del medio dia. *Your Spaniards generally ſleepe after dinner all the Summer time.*

And firſt of all, I would haue thee to conſider, That you muſt not goe a begging in the Summer time preſently after dinner, when moſt men are diſpoſed to (a) *Seſtear*, and to lye downe and take a Nap, in ſome place of ſhade, or

or ſome coole roome; and leſſe at Noble mens houſes, then thoſe of your Trades-men, and Cittizens. The houre is im-proper, and vnfit, and all of them then either doe, or at leaſt are deſirous to take their reſt. And it would be as ſtrange, as troubleſome vnto them, that any ſhould then offer to wake them; And importunities, at that time of all other, are moſt irkeſome, and vnpleaſing vnto them.

Next, I would haue thee take this Rule of me, (and it is a true one) That when you haue call'd or knock't at one doore twice, either there is no body within, or they will not be within, becauſe they are not willing to anſwere. When thou perceiu'ſt that, get thee gone, and ſtay there no longer; for thou maiſt well loſe thy time, but thou ſhalt get no money.

Neuer offer to draw a Latch, or to thruſt open a doore that is put to, nor to enter within the houſe. For it hapneth ſometime in the opening of a doore, that (without the knowledge of thoſe of the houſe, not once dreaming of any ſuch accident) a dogge may ſuddenly ruſh fiercely forth vpon thee, and carry away halfe a Buttocke at a bit. Nor doe I know how theſe ſcuruy Curs ſhould come to know vs, ſo well as they doe, but I am ſure we are hated by them, and they wil neuer let vs paſſe by them, without barking, or biting. And if the Dog ſhould be miſsing, ſome deſperate roguiſh Boy or other will not faile to fall vpon thee, telling thee that, which thou wouldſt be loth to heare. And it is well if thou ſcape him ſo.

When thou beggeſt for an Almes, thou muſt not laugh, nor change thy note, but ſo tune thy voice, that it may carry the ſhow of one that is ſicke, though thou haue health inough for thy ſelfe, and ſome to ſpare for thy neighbours; hauing a ſpeciall care, that your face keepe an euen correſpondence with your eyes; your mouth it's equall and iuſt compaſſe, and your head bending towards your boſome.

Rubbe thy face a mornings, when thou riſeſt, with a cloth that is rather dankiſh, then dung-wet, that when thou goeſt abroad, thou maiſt ſeeme neither faire, nor foule. And on thy cloathes, clap many patches, though they bee neuer ſo hole; and let them be of diuers colours. For it much importeth, that a poore mans cloathes ſhould be rather patch't, then neat and cleanely; yet ſo, that they be not ſo ſlouenly, as to cauſe loathſomeneſſe.

It will ſometimes ſo fall out, that comming to a man to begge an Almes, hee will take off his Gloue, and put his hand into his pocket, whereof thou wilt be glad, and laugh to thy ſelfe, thinking that he hath a purpoſe to beſtow an Almes vpon thee, whē as in the end thou ſhalt ſee him only pull out his Handkerchiefe to blow his Noſe. But for all this, thou muſt not bee angry, nor ſeeme to grumble at the matter, for it may be ſome other may bee by him, which will giue thee ſome-what, though he doe not. Whereas, if he ſhall perceiue thy proud and ſullen carriage, he will giue thee nothing.

Where, thou ſhalt finde thy ſelfe well vſed, ſee thou repaire thither dayly: For as Deuotion ſhall abound, ſo ſhall thy Stocke increaſe. But ſee, that thou neuer depart from his doore, till thou haue pray'd for his friends that are deceaſed, and to intreat of God, that he will be pleaſed to bleſſe and proſper him in all his Actions.

Anſwere euill language, with milde words, and to rough ſpeech, apply ſoft tearmes; For thou art a Spaniard, and for our pride (being ill belou'd) we are abhorred of all, whereſoeuer we come; And he that will draw money out of another mans purſe, muſt rather begge, then brawle; craue, then curſe; pray, then blaſpheme. For a gentle Calfe ſucks milke from a ſtrange teat, as well as from his damm's.

Prou. La bezerra manſa, mama de madre agena, y dela ſuya.

When they ſhall not giue thee an Almes, anſwere with deuotion, God bee thanked: God bleſſe your Worſhip, and grant much health, peace, and content to this houſe, for the great good, and mercy, that you daily doe, & ſhew

vnto

vnto the poore. This tricke got mee a great deale of money ; for anſwering them ſo gently and ſo mildly, holding vp my hands, and lifting vp my eyes vnto heauen, they would call me backe againe, and giue me of that they had.

Beſides all this, he taught me how to faigne my ſelfe a Leaper, to make wounds in my fleſh, to raiſe a ſwelling in my legge, to benumme an arme, to ſet a counterfeit colour on the face, to alter the whole body, and other curious principles of his Art ; to the end that ſome might not twit vs in the teeth, and vpbraidingly ſay vnto vs; that our limmes were ſound, and our ſelues ſtrong and healthy, that wee ſhould worke for our liuing, and that it were no charitie, to relieue ſuch luſty ſtout young Rogues. He did me many friendly Offices, he had many curious ſecrets of nature, wherof he made good vſe; Nor did he hide any thing from me; for he found me very capable, and apt to receiue whatſoeuer he ſhould put into me ; And then he began to ſay vnto me, You ſee my foot is already in the ſtirrop to goe vnto my graue, and I would willingly leaue a Chaplaine behinde me to pray vnto God for me. And it fell out true as he ſaid ; for within a ſhort time after he died.

Wee did ſome of vs meet many times together, to repeate our parts, and to make ſhew, what manner of exclamations would beſt become vs, and make moſt for our profit ; Theſe we ſtudied by night, inuenting diuers methodes and formes of benediction. There was a poore man that got his liuing only by making theſe formes for vs, and did ſell them vnto vs, at the rate of ſo many Comedies or Tragedies. And all was little enough, and no more then needed, to moue mens mindes, and to ſtirre them vp to compaſsion.

On feſtiuall dayes we would be vp betimes, where the Pardons and Indulgences were ſtirring, that we might prouide vs ſome good place in the Church; for it was no ſmall benefit vnto him, that could get neere vnto the Font where the Holy-water was, or to that little Chappell, whither they were to make their ſtation.

Wee would now and then goe a Progreſſe, and runne ouer all the Countrie, not leauing out a Village, nor ſo much as a Cottage bordering there-abouts, which we did not goe vnto; Whence, we came very well furniſht: For they would giue vs Bacon, Cheeſe, Bread, and Eggs in great abundance, beſides cloathes to couer our nakedneſſe, pittying very much our poore and miſerable condition.

Wee would many times begge a draught of Wine for Gods ſake, complayning much of the paine and weakeneſſe of our ſtomacke. As much as you will, would they ſay, if you haue any thing wherein to put it.

Wee alwaies carried a little Iarre with vs, vnder colour of drinking water in it, which held ſomewhat leſſe then halfe an *Açumbre* ; They would euermore fill it brim-full, before they gaue it vs; But we were no ſooner gone from that doore, but we did preſently empty it into a (*a*) *Bota*, which one of our Company carried behinde him at his girdle, which would well hold ſome foure *Açumbres*. And I remember it was once our hap to fill it full in one ſtreet alone, ſo that we were inforced to goe home, and powre it forth into a little earthen veſſell (which they call a *Tinajuela*) and then came backe againe to get more.

We vſually went ſhod, but as good haue beene vnſhod, our heads couered, but as good haue gone bare; So that we had ſhooes, and no ſhooes ; hats, and no hats ; For our ſhooes were ſandal-faſhion, old enough, and torne enough, and our hats were ſutable vnto them ; the one would ſcarce hang on our feet, the other ſcarce ſit on our heads.

Wee ſeldome wore any ſhirt at all. For, when (according to our accuſtomed humilitie) we ſhould craue an almes at ſuch a doore, they would ordinarily ſay, Pardon me (my friend;) I haue not for you. God helpe you. I will giue you ſomething at another time. Then we begin anew, and cry ; An old paire of

This word is margented before (*a*) Bota, quaſi imbuta, *of the Latine Verbe,* Imbuo. *It is in briefe, a Bottle or Boracha made of Lether, to carry Wine in.*

of ſhooes, or an old hat (good Maſter) for this poore ſoule, that hath neuer a ſhoo to his foot to beare him out of the durt, nor neuer a hat to defend his head from the Sunne and the raine; Gods holy name be praiſed. The Lord bleſſe your Worſhip; and deliuer your good Worſhip from ſuch a deale of miſerie and wretchednesſe, as we poore creatures indure. God multiply his bleſsings vpon you, and free you and yours, and all that you haue, from the power of Traitors and Villaines; Chriſt Ieſus guard your Worſhip, and giue you health both of body and ſoule, which is the greateſt wealth of all, and the trueſt riches.

The faſhions of Beggers in begging an almes.

If after this he ſhall reply: Indeed (brother) I haue not for you, I can not pleaſure you at this time, excuſe me.

Then, vpon the necke of that comes another replicant, and he laies about him, beſeeching him to beſtow vpon him ſome old ſhirt, though neuer ſo ragged and torne, for to couer the fleſh, and to cure the wounds of this poore miſerable man, and that he ſhall finde it againe in heauen, and that God will one day couer him againe with the cloathing of his mercy, and put vpon him a newer and a whiter ſtole of innocencie and righteouſneſſe, that ſhall neuer weare out. I begge it of you for Ieſus Chriſt his ſake, he knowes my wants, and that I am not able to worke and labour for my liuing. The Lord helpe me; And the Lord reward you. And praiſed be that pure vnſpottednesſe of our bleſſed Lady the Virgin *Mary*.

Now tell me, what heart is there in the world, though of Iaſper, and what bowels, though as tough as Iron, and as hard as ſteele, which will not bee made malleable with this hammer, and melt into compaſsion with the heat and warmth of ſo many good words?

Few houſes did eſcape vs, without ſome one purchaſe or other. And neuer a paire of ſhooes could be ſo bad, no hat ſo vile, and no ſhirt ſo old, that was giuen vs, but yeeld vs more then a piece of three pence. To vs it was much, but to him that parted with it, of no profit, and leſſe reckning. It was to vs a mine in the (a) *Serro de Potoſi*: We had Merchants and Brokers for euery one of theſe things, who would lay vs downe money for them on the boord, perfumed and waſht ouer with the water (b) of Angels.

We had vpon the way certaine little Aſſes, whereon we did ride by turnes, when any ſtore of raine fell, that we might the better paſſe ouer the Riuers, when the waters were riſen. And if we did light by chance vpon any perſon, that ſeemed to beare the face of authoritie, we began to call vpon him a farre off, many a large ſtep before we came at him, to the end that he might haue leiſure enough to pull out his Purſe, and take forth an almes; for if we ſhould ſtay our begging till we did iuſt incounter each other, many would forbeare to giue vs, leſt they might be hindred in their iourney, and ſo we ſhould goe without it. And taking this courſe, we did ſeldome miſſe.

Other-whiles, when we ſaw fit occaſion and time for it, vpon diſcouerie of ſome companie of people that came trooping together, we would prepare our ſelues to put on a counterfeit lameneſſe, to fall a halting, and betake vs to our Crutches: we would change our lookes, alter our countenances, take one another vp vpon our backs, writhe our mouthes, turne the lids and balls of our eyes vp to heauen, ſome feigning themſelues dumbe, other-ſome crippled, and blinde, making ſhew that wee could not goe but vpon Stilts, when as indeed we were as nimble and light-footed as the Bucke. We would clap our feet in a trice in certaine Swathes, that hung at our necks for that purpoſe, and carry our armes in a ſtring, ſo that with theſe counterfeit tricks, and the helpe of good language, deſiring God to ſend them well on their iourney, and that he would preſerue their limmes, and bleſſe their eye-ſight, and bring them ſafe to their iournies end, did alwaies bring vs in money. And theſe we did call our Aduentures, becauſe theſe good fortunes befell vs abroad in ſtrange

(a) *I conceiue this*, Serro de Potoſi, *to bee ſome hill or mountaine in the Weſt Indies, being a principall Mine among the reſt, that yeelded great ſtore of treaſure.*

(b) *The Spaniſh word which is*, Aqua de los Angeles, *is ſo called by the Spaniards, becauſe it is of an extraordinary ſweetnes, diſtilled out of diuers different flowers, and Aromaticall drugges.*

ſtrange Countries, in places that were deſart and vnpeopled, and becauſe commonly it ſucceeded well with vs. But otherwiſe, we did goe no farther then what was preciſely ſet downe vnto vs, and was held to be neceſſarie for the performance of our Progreſſe.

We had one excellent gift aboue all the reſt, That there was not any Feaſt, where we were not preſent, getting vs ſome one good place or other; nor any Banquet, whereof we had not a part; Our noſes were ſo good, that wee could ſmell ſuch things ſome ten ſtreets off.

Wee had no houſe at all, yet euery houſe was ours; For either a Cardinals, an Embaſſadours, or ſome Nobie-mans Porch or other did neuer faile vs; And if all, or any of theſe did faile vs, the Church Porches were free, and no body could there put vs out. So that hauing no proprietie in any thing, wee did notwithſtanding poſſeſſe euery thing.

There were ſome likewiſe, that had old ruinous Caſtles, decayed buildings, and other poore lodgings not worth any thing, where we did make our *Rendevous:* For all were not permitted to be Aduenturers, nor all allowed (a) Pipkins to boyle their meat in; But I (who was but a young ſtrippling) looke where I was ouer-night, I would be ſure to be there againe the next day; So that albeit I had many times bad lodging, yet my youth bore it out, and it ſeemed to me as good as the beſt.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Puchero: *An earthen Pot, or Pipkin, wherein they boyle* las Puches. *Now* Puches, *is a kinde of dreſſing and ſeething of meale and Oyle together. Which in ancient time, was much vſed before the inuention of baking bread was found out.* Latinè, Pultes. Couarruuias. *Verbe* Puches, y Puchero.

Chap. IIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the Charitie, that we are to vſe towards our neighbour; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great libertie which a Begger inioyes.*

ONe true ſigne, and aſſured token of our predeſtination, is the Pitie and Compaſsion which wee haue of our neighbour. For, to haue a fellow-feeling of another mans miſerie, (as if the caſe were our owne) is a deed of Charitie, which couereth a multitude of ſinnes; and where there is loue, there is God; and he euermore plentifully dwelleth in thoſe hearts by his holy Spirit, where Charitie and mercy aboundeth. All things, with it, haue life and being; without it, dye, and come to nothing. For, neither the gift of Prophecie, nor the vnderſtanding of Myſteries, nor the knowledge of God, no nor Faith it ſelfe, without charitie, is any thing at all, but is all as nothing. To loue my neighbour, as I loue my ſelfe, is of all other, the richeſt and the greateſt Sacrifice; becauſe it is offred vp in the Temple of the euer-liuing God. And the merit is as great (through the mercy of our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt) to be truly ſenſible of our brothers miſerie and vndoing; as is the pleaſure that we take, that our ſelues ſhould bee ſaued.

A good marke of Predeſtination.

Charity, of what force it is.

To loue our neighbour, is a great Sacrifice.

Charitie is the end of the Commandements, it is the only marke, whereat the precepts of the Law doe ſhoot. And hee that ſhall be charitable, ſhall finde the Lord mercifull vnto him in the day of his tryall. And becauſe without God, we are not able to merit any thing of our ſelues, and for that Charitie is the gift of God, it is very fit and neceſſarie, that we ſhould begge it at his hands with teares, and doe workes worthy the obtaining of it, moyſtning with thoſe precious drops, the great drought that we ſuffer in our ſoules, and mollifying therewith the hardneſſe of our hearts, that they may bring forth the fruits of good Workes, which are the effects of a true and liuely faith. For, the humble and contrite ſpirit ſhall neuer be forſaken, but God will rather ſtill ſuccour and ſupply him with his grace, beſtowing his beſt fauours vpon

The charitable man is fauoured of God.

vpon him, and inriching him with many notable and knowne benefits.

And albeit Riches (being ſo neere a neighbour as it is vnto Pride) be an occaſion of Vice, weakning, and infeebling thoſe our other Vertues, though it bee dangerous to it's Owner; though it be a tyrannizing Lord, and a trayterous Slaue; yet notwithſtanding it is of the nature of Sugar, which hath this condition and propertie belonging vnto it, that (if it be ſweet and good, and hath not loſt his ſauour) with warme things, it warmeth and giueth heat, and with cold things, it cooleth and refreſheth. To the rich, it ſerues as an Inſtrument and meanes (by the helping hand of Charitie) to buy eternall bleſſedneſſe. And that man ſhall be charitable, and truely rich, who making the poore man rich, ſhall make himſelfe, of a rich man, poore. For thereby, hee ſhall make the world to know, that hee is a true Diſciple of his Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt.

Riches, compared to Sugar.

I ſtood one day in the outward Court of a Cardinals houſe, hard by the Porch, cloſely wrapt and muffled vp in a great Ruſſet Cloake, iuſt of the ſame colour as it came from the Sheepes backe, without any other Dye in the world: which was ſo full of Patches, one clapt vpon another, which I had ſowne ſo of purpoſe, that (where it had leaſt) it was no leſſe then of three threds, ſo that you could not at all, or very hardly diſcerne the ground of it's owne true colour. It was as hard, and as ſtiffe as any boord, and for all weathers, farre better then your faſteſt Felt, or your cloſeſt-wrought Rugge, or any other frized cloth in the world; for it was wondrous warme, and no ayre, water, nor cold would paſſe thorow it, and I was about to ſay (pleaſe it you to excuſe the exceſſe of the phraſe) that no arrow was able to pierce it.

What manner of Cloake Guzman *had?*

Whilſt I was thus waiting, there comes mee in a Cauallero to viſit the Cardinall, ſeeming both by his Perſon, and his Attendants, to bee a Gentleman of principall ranke and quality. Who, when he ſaw mee ſtanding there in this manner, thought verily with himſelfe, that I was ſicke of an Ague, and that I had then my cold fit vpon me: when as indeed the cauſe that I lookt ſo pittifull was, that I had layen there in the Porch the night before; and becauſe it was winter time, and that the ayre was freſh, and the winde blew cold, I was willing to keep me where I was, till the day had aduanced it ſelfe a little more forward.

He look't earneſtly vpon me, and after he had well view'd me, he ſtood ſtill, and beckned me vnto him. I ſneak't out my head, when I came neere vnto him, and being amazed on the ſudden, and much aſtoniſhed, to ſee a man of his worth approche ſo neere vnto mee, my countenance did come and goe, and began ſtrangely to change and alter it ſelfe, not knowing why, or wherefore, or what ſhould be the cauſe of this ſudden alteration.

A Gentleman ſees Guzman, *he lookes vpon him, pities him, giues him an almes, and praiſeth God.*

He (good Gentleman) thought that I did ſhake and tremble, and kindely ſaid vnto me; Put on thy Hat, my Boy, put on, I ſay, and couer thy head; God comfort thee, and ſend thee well: And with that putting his hand into his pocket, he tooke out all that he had, which vvas a matter of ſome thirteene *Royals* and a halfe, and gaue them mee. I tooke them, and was ſo rauiſhed therewith, that I was almoſt beſide my ſelfe, as well in regard of the liberalneſſe of the Almes, as to ſee how he went away from me, lifting vp his eyes vnto heauen.

And, I verily beleeue, that he ſaid to himſelfe, as he went along; Let (O Lord) the Angels bleſſe thee, and all thoſe Courtiers, that wait on thee in thy heauenly Kingdome; Let all the ſpirits of heauen praiſe and magnifie thy holy name, for men doe not know how to honour thee, they are rude and ignorant creatures. O Lord, how much am I bound vnto thee! that I beeing made of no better metall then this poore man, and perhaps borne of no better bloud then he, ſhould ſleepe and take my reſt in my ſoft bed, whileſt he is forced to lye on the hard ground; ſhould goe thus well clad as I doe, whileſt he

A worthy conſideration.

he remaines naked, and comfortleſſe; ſhould be thus rich, as I am, and hee ſo poore; that I ſhould be ſound, and he ſicke; I admitted, and he deſpiſed: And whereas thou mightſt (by exchanging only of our places) haue beſtow'd all that vpon him, which thou haſt conferr'd on me; Yet (O Lord) thou haſt been pleaſed to deale otherwiſe with me; and thou thy ſelfe beſt knoweſt why, and wherefore. Saue me (ſweet Ieſu) by that precious bloud, which thou ſheddeſt for my ſinnes. For this ſhall be my true riches, to lay faſt hold vpon thee: for hauing thee, I haue all things; and not hauing thee, I haue nothing. I ſay, that this Gentleman knew very well how to imploy thoſe Talents, vvhich God had put into his hands; not conſidering ſo much to whom he gaue, as for whoſe ſake he gaue. Looking well vpon me, and looking well into himſelfe, weighing my wretched, and his happy condition, he gaue me all that he had, with a franke hand, and a free heart; the one being as full of bounty, as the other of compaſsion.

Such good ſoules as theſe, did (in the exerciſing of their Charity) gaine heauen by our hands, and we (wicked Villaines) haue loſt it by theirs; ſince, through the greedy deſire that we haue to receiue, being ſtill crauing & begging when we haue no need, we rob thoſe thereof that are in true want, ſuffering this Vice of ours to vſurpe vpon anothers Office. We went ſtill full gorg'd, greater gluttons and drunkards the world did not affoord; our ſides were ready to cracke with gurmandizing, and our braines to burſt with bowzing; your Senators of *Rome* could not liue more merrily then we did, for wee were as tall trencher-men, and as good Epicures as the beſt of them. And albeit vve are not ſo much reſpected, nor liue not in that repute and eſteeme as they doe; yet our manner of life hath a great deale more eaſe in it, and I am ſure, a great deale leſſe trouble.

To begge without need, may get vs money, but loſe vs heauen.

And we haue beſides two ſuch Priuiledges, as none of them all, no not the beſt man in *Rome* hath the like. The one is a kinde of liberty that wee haue in begging; yet neuertheleſſe doe not looſe our liberty, which is not ſo with your better ſort of men. For miſery hath no greater miſery with it, then when a man is forced to be beholding to ſuch or ſuch a friend to ſuccour and relieue his wants, though this helpe ſhould come from the free hand of his owne naturall brother. For hee buyes at a deare rate, that receiues this kindneſſe; and farre more dearely does he ſell, who giues to him that is of a thankefull nature. And if on this point of begging, I might boldly ſpeake my opinion, it is the worſt mis-fortune, that can befall a poore mans life, when he once comes to be driuen to beg out of meere neceſsity. For although it be freely giuen, yet the very crauing therof doth coſt him much. Moreouer, I ſhal tell thee what is the cauſe, that begging doth ſo much vexe a man, and why it goes ſo much againſt his ſtomake, which is; That man beeing a perfect reaſonable creature, like vnto God himſelfe (as himſelfe ſaith) for when he was to make man (the moſt bleſſed Trinity aſsiſting at that Creation) God ſaid; Let vs make Man after our owne Image and likeneſſe. (And I could alſo tell thee, how this is to be vnderſtood, but it is not proper for this time and place.) Well, Man was made, and comming forth into the world, we are all of vs naturally inclined to deifie our ſelues, ſeeking as much as in vs lyeth, to come neere vnto God; nay, (if it were poſsible) to be gods. And with this thirſt, we ſtill grow dryer and dryer; and with this hunger, waxe weaker and weaker.

The great priuiledges belonging vnto Beggers.

Why it grieues a mans heart to begge.

Man, whereunto he is inclined.

We ſee, that God created all things: we would faine doe the like. And ſeeing we can not doe it, as his diuine Maieſtie did, of nothing, we would doe it of ſomething, as farre forth as our ability hath power to ſtretch, ſeeking to conſerue *indiuidua Specierum*, the indiuiduals of euery *Species*, or ſeuerall kinds vpon earth. The bruit beaſts in the Fields; the Fiſhes, in the Waters; the Plants, in the Earth: And ſo euery thing in it's nature, that is in the world. He beheld thoſe workes, which he had made with his owne hands, and they ſeemed

med to him very good, as proceeding from thoſe bleſſed and powerfull hands of his. He tooke delight in looking vpon them, for they were made to his minde. This paſſeth currant at this day, as it is ſet downe in the letter. And we likewiſe are deſirous to doe, or at leaſt to counterfet the like; ſtriuing to imitate him all that we may.

Euery man loues his owne.

How well doe I like that Bird, that I haue bred vp in mine owne houſe? That Lambe, which hath beene reared in mine owne Farme? That Tree, which hath been planted in mine owne Orchard? That Flower, which hath ſprung vp in mine owne Garden? What comfort doe I take in looking vpon them? how does it ioy me, to ſee them to thriue and proſper? Inſomuch, that what my ſelfe haue not bred, made, or planted with mine own hands, although it be otherwiſe very good in it ſelfe, I wil not ſtick to pluck it vp by the roots, & caſt it away from me, & neuer grieue therat, it ſhal neuer trouble me: whereas that, which is the work of mine own hands; the deare child of my induſtry; the fruit of my labours, though it be not ſo good as the other; yet becauſe it is my own handy-work, I like it, & I loue it. From my neighbours or my friends Tree, I will not onely take away the Flower, and the fruit, but I will not ſo much as leaue a leafe, or a ſprigge therevpon, and if I haue a minde thereunto, I will not greatly care to cut it downe to the ground. But if it be mine owne, and that I haue planted it with mine owne hands, it would grieue my very ſoule, if I ſhould finde but a *Piſmire*, or a *Caterpiller* vpon it, to doe it any hurt, or to ſee a Bird but to pecke at it; and all becauſe it is mine. In a word, we doe all of vs loue our owne workes. And ſo, in wiſhing well vnto them, I am like to him that made me, and haue it from him by inheritance.

Gods greatneſſe, and mans baſeneſſe.

The like is true in all other actions. It is very proper in God to giue; and very improper, to craue. Vnleſſe, when he requireth ſomething of vs for our owne good. For that which he asketh of vs, it is not for himſelfe, neither hath he any need thereof; for he is *Remedium totius neceſsitatis*: The onely relieuer of all our wants, and the onely ſatisfier of the hungry. He hath much, and therefore is able to giue much; and nothing can be wanting vnto him. He doth communicate and impart vnto all according to their ſeuerall neceſsities, eaſilier then thou canſt take water out of the Sea, and with a farre larger hand; ſo great an in-equalitie is there betwixt thy miſery, and his mercy.

We would likewiſe be like to him in this: He made me according to his owne likeneſſe, and I ought accordingly to be like vnto him; euen as the thing inſtamped ought to be like vnto the Stampe. How mad, how eager, how deſirous and how fooliſhly are we all bent vpon giuing? The Couetous, the ſauing man, the Rich, the Vſurer, the Begger, all doe keepe and hoord vp for to giue. But the moſt of theſe men vnderſtand leaſt (as I told you before) when they are to giue, for they doe not giue, till they be dead. If thou aske theſe men, why they maſſe vp money, and why in their life-time they bury it vnder ground, and to what end they doe it? Some will anſwere thee, that they lay it vp for their heires; others, for their ſoules; others, that they may leaue ſomething behinde them, and all of them ſure that they carry none of it away with them. Thou ſeeſt then, how they are willing to giue, and how out of its due time and ſeaſon; like an vntimely birth, which comes not to perfection. But in the end, this is our end, this our deſire.

To haue wherewith to giue, is a great comfort to a man.

How God-like does a man finde himſelfe, when with a generous minde he hath wherewith to giue, and doth giue? How ſweet and pleaſing is his hand vnto him; how cheerefull his countenance; how quiet his heart; how contented his Soule? His gray haires are remoued; his bloud is refreſhed; his life is inlarged. And (queſtionles) ſo much the more, by how much he knows, that he hath ability to do it, & is not afraid that he ſhall euer want. If wee be willing therefore to doe that, which he did; (for ſo did he with vs) let vs take as much pleaſure to giue, as it would grieue vs at the heart to aske.

And thoſe, towards whom Gods hand hath beene ſo franke and liberall, and hauing made them (which likewiſe is another particular gift of his) of a noble minde, if they finde themſelues oppreſſed with want, and depriued of theſe their worldly goods, they will rather indure any miſery whatſoeuer, then begge of another to relieue their wretched eſtates.

A noble ſpirit cannot begge.

Theſe are the men, of whom there is great pittie to be had, and theſe the whole world ought to relieue with a full hand. For by this it is knowne, who does them friendſhip, and ſhewes them any kindeneſſe, when ſeeing them in neceſsitie, they ſuccour them, before they craue their helpe. For, if they ſhould be put to that puſh, and be driuen to ſue vnto them, they will neither giue, nor lend them. It is a debt which they pay them, and yet put it forth to Vſurie with aduantage. This is a friend indeed, which ſuccours his friend in time of need: And this I call ſuccour, * when I concurre and run along with him. It becomes me to giue, but beſeemes not him to aske. I am to runne equall fortunes with him. I muſt keepe an euen pace with him, neither be too farre behinde him, nor too much before him.

What kinde of almes is nobly beſtowed.

* *The Spaniſh phraſe*, Eſſe llamo ſocorro, con el que corro.

If I haue entertained thee too long in this ſubiect, and haue not giuen thee ſatisfaction, pardon my ignorance, and accept my good will. So that the libertie of crauing, is permitted only to the poore; And in this we are equall with Kings and Princes, whoſe particular priuiledge it is, to demaund Subſedies, and Ayde-money, which is no baſeneſſe in them, howſoeuer it may be in others. But the difference is, that Kings craue of the Commons, for the Common good, and for to ſupply their neceſſarie occaſions; But the poore, for themſelues only, out of an euill cuſtome, which they haue gotten.

A poore begger, to whom he may be compared.

That other Priuiledge, which I told you of, is that of the fiue Senſes. Who is he now adaies in the world, that with larger licence, and freer libertie doth inioy them, then the poore man, or with greater ſecuritie, or more content? Who doth ſo thorowly and ſo feelingly taſte them as he? And becauſe I haue named the word Taſte, I will begin firſt with that.

The libertie of the fiue Senſes, by whom moſt inioyed.

There is not that pot, which we doe not skimme; nor that meat, which wee doe not proue; nor that banquet, wherein wee haue not a ſhare. Whither did that poore man euer come, that the houſe that deny'd him to day, did not giue him to morrow? He runnes thorow all mens houſes, hee begs of them all, and he taſtes of all: and he is beſt able to ſay, which houſe hath the beſt meat, and the beſt dreſt.

The Taſte.

For the *Hearing*; Who heares more then the poore man doth? For being dis-intereſſed in all kinde of things, none are iealous that hee ſhould heare them; in the open ſtreets, in priuate houſes, in publike Churches, in the Market-place, and in euery place, euery man treats freely of his buſineſſe, without any ſuſpition of him, though the matter be neuer ſo important. Sleeping beſides a nights, vpon ſome bulke or ſtall in the ſtreets, what muſicke haue they beſtowed vpon them, which we heare not? What Loue-tricks are they priuy to, which we know not? Nothing is kept ſecret from ſuch poore beggerly Raſcals as we bee. And for publike affaires, we haue by a thouſand parts better intelligence, then all the world beſides. For we heare that treated of in more parts, then all men elſe beſides put all together.

The Hearing.

For your ſeeing likewiſe: how freely may we inioy it, without being noted? nor aske vs the queſtion why we gaze vpon them, nor offer to hinder vs from looking here, or looking there. How often haue I accuſed and condemned my ſelfe, when begging in the Church, mine eye hath beene wandring and rouing about? and chuckt and hugg'd my ſelfe, with the delight and pleaſure that I haue taken therein? Or to ſpeake downe-right Engliſh, and to declare my ſelfe more plainely, feeding mine eyes greedily on thoſe Angelicall faces of your fineſt Ladyes, whoſe Louers did not dare to looke vpon them for feare of being noted: all which was freely permitted vnto vs.

The Seeing.

The Smelling.

For matter of ſmelling; Who can ſmell better then we, who are called by the name of Smell-Feaſts? Beſides, if any ſmell bee ſo much the better, by how much it is the more profitable; to vs, our owne Amber, and our owne Muske, is better and truer then all the reſt, which is a cloue of Garlicke, which ordinarily we neuer goe without; as being a Preſeruatiue againſt all contagious corruption whatſoeuer. And if we be deſirous of any other odours, we then get vs to the corner of ſome one ſtreet or other, where theſe things are commonly ſold, and there we ſatisfie our ſenſe of ſmelling with the ſweet perfume of Ierkins, and of Gloues, ſome ciuited, and ſome powdred, that are there laid out for ſhow, till the duſt and powder of them come flying into our eyes, and our noſtrils.

The Toutbing.

Will you happely ſay, that the ſenſe of Touching is wanting vnto vs? And that neuer any good thing came yet to our hands? Lament your ignorance. What ſuch difference I pray, is there betwixt pouertie and beautie? Wee poore beggers touch and handle as good ware as the rich, and inioy as prettie Commodities; but all men doe not vnderſtand this Myſterie. There be ſome poore men, which for all their beggerie and pouertie, maintaine ſuch a handſome *Doxy* as many a great rich man would be glad to inioy with all his heart. And yet ſhe had rather haue this poore man, that doth truly pay her her Tribute, and is not wanting vnto her in his loue, then a rich man, that ſhall defame, and miſuſe her. And how often haue ſome women giuen mee an almes with their owne hand (I know not what others haue done) but I out of my youth, would make bold to take hold of hers with mine; and in a kinde of deuout acknowledgement, would neuer let it goe, till I had kiſt it?

To haue money, to pay it againe away, is not the inioying of money.

But theſe are but toyes to ſpeake of, and meere fooleries, but aboue all theſe things the taſte, the ſight, ſmelling, hearing, and touching, the chiefeſt and trueſt of all the fiue Senſes, put them all together, was that of thoſe ruddy cheeks of your golden Ruddocks, your Spaniſh Piſtolets, your plumpe and full-fac't *Portugueſe*, and your cleere-skinn'd pieces of eight of *Caſtile*, which we kept ſecret to our ſelues, and did priuately inioy in a plentifull manner; For to haue them, for to pay them away is not to inioy them; To inioy them, is to haue them lying by vs, hauing no other need of them, then to vſe them for the cleering of the eye ſight, and the comforting of our ſenſes. Howbeit, ſome ſticke not to ſay, *Que el dinero, nunca ſe goza, haſta que ſe gaſta.* That he inioyes not his money, that does not ſpend it. Theſe we did carry about with vs, ſewing them in ſome patches of our doublets neere vnto the heart, and as cloſe to the skinne, as we could handſomely quilt them in, holding them to be reſtoratiue. There was not any one piece of a patch about vs, were it neuer ſo foule, and neuer ſo vile, which was not worth a reaſonable good ſute of cloathes. We were all fluſh and full of gold; For, hauing our dyet *gratis*, and feeding on free coſt, the money which we got, we neuer ſpent. And as the Prouerbe is; *Eſſe te rizo vico, que te hizo el pico*; He made thee rich, who gaue thee whereon to picke. And *grano à grano, hincha la gallina el Papa.* Graine after graine, the Hen fils her craw. We grew many of vs to increaſe our Talent, till it came to a good round ſumme, wherewith many an honeſt man might haue lifted his feet from the ground, & not haue ſtucke in the mire.

Prouerb. Petit à petit l'oſſeau faict ſon nid.

Reſt thy ſelfe awhile in this Inne; for in that our iourney, which we are to make to the Chapter following, you ſhall heare what hapned in *Florence* to a poore man that died there, of the ſame time and ſtanding with my ſelfe. Wherein you ſhall know, whether our Touching be not as good as other mens.

CHAPTER V.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the quality of mens Consciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heire. Hee treats of the ambitious man; And deliuers in the end, how he was thrust out of* Gaeta *for his counterfeiting.*

IT is a very ordinary thing with your poorer sort of people, to become Plotters and Contriuers, watching night and day, and beating their braines, to seeke out some poore meanes how to liue, that they may not goe a begging from doore to doore, and still to lie (like *Lazarus*) at rich mens gates for relieſe, and yet starue perhaps in the end for want of a morsell of bread. This euery where befalls poore folkes. They (poore soules) are put to their shifts. And albeit it be said; that in matter of cruelty, *Italy* beares the bell; and in *Italy*, those more particularly that are in, and about *Genoa*; yet I am not of beliefe, that the fault lies so much in the soyle of that place, as in the necessitie, and couetousnesse of the people. I meane those, that are of the right stampe, your miserable and hard-hearted Vsurers, whom they that are the natiue Citizens, and naturall Inhabitants of those parts, call by way of Nick-name, *Moros blancos*, white Moores. Now they, to reuenge themselues of them, and to returne it (*a*) home vpon them againe, say, *Que quien descubre la* (*b*) *alcanala, esse la paga.* Let him pay the toll, that first inuented it. For this was not (say they) spoken of them, nor is it so to be vnderstood; but of those great Dealers and Negociators of *Genoa*, who carrie their consciences in torne pockets, that are ript and vnsewed, whereby they quickly come to be lost, and scarce one amongst them all, that hath a good and a sound conscience. But one said, that this was not so, but would needs fetch the water a little farther off, that should driue this Mill; And therefore (said he) it was thus: That when the *Genoueses* send forth their children to schoole, they carry their consciences along with them, there at first they begin to play with them, then to wrangle and fall out about them; some forgetting that euer they brought any thither with them; and others (hauing lost them there at play) leaue them behinde them, and neuer thinke on them after.

Now, when the schoole comes to be swept, and these Consciences be found againe, they giue them to the Master, who carefully laies them vp in a Chest, and there locks them vp close, that they may no more be lost. And hee that hereafter shall haue need of one (if he can call to minde where he either left it, or laid it aside) he were best goe seeke it out himselfe, to see if he can light on the right one.

Now, because the Schoole-master hath the keeping of so many, and so mixed one amongst another, that he doth not know which is which, he giues him that which comes first to hand, and so the party goes away with it, thinking verily that it is his owne Conscience, that he carries thus away with him, when as indeed it is not his, but either his friends Conscience, or his kinsmans, or some one or other of his acquaintance. And hence it comes to passe, that no man, bearing his owne Conscience in his owne bosome, euery man lookes and pries into that of another mans. And euer since that time, hath this ill report runne of them.

The proudest, and hardest-harted people in Italy, *are your* Genoueses.

(*a*) *The Spanish phrase is,* Echarles las cabras. *Now,* Echar las cabras, *is; when many hauing plaid together, who should win or lose, when they did rifle for any thing, there should be two losers, and that they might not part or deuide, but that one should pay all, and the other scape scot-free, they returne againe to play. And this they cal* Echar las cabras. *Alluding to that which shepheards vse to doe, when they make a merry-meeting, and haue kill'd some Goats to make a feast; who play who shall pay for all, laying the losse vpon the two last.* Couarruuias.

Verbe Cabra. *Conscience lost by whom, and how?* (*b*) Alcauala *is a Tribute, Taxe, Tole, or Subsedie. The common people haue a tale, That King* Don Alonso *the Wise, holding a Parliament at* Burgos, *said vnto the Procurators,* Dadme gente, delque vala. *And from thence comes* Alcauala, *A supply of monies, which they gaue him.*

O *Spaine, Spaine*, my beloued Countrey, Faith's true keeper, God vphold thee with his hand: And as thou haſt much of this in thee; ſo likewiſe, thou haſt thy Schoole-Maſters too, that truck one conſcience for another; and men, as well as they, that hauing chopt conſciences, goe away well contented, preſuming all is right and ſtreight, and that that which they haue is their owne.

Wholeſome leſſons for our Conſciences.

How many forgetfull of themſelues, buſie themſelues in thoſe things, which appertaine not vnto them? How vnaduiſedly reprehend, ſollicite, and cenſure another mans conſcience? My friend, this ought not to bee ſo; Looke well into thy ſelfe, with-draw this chopping and changing: Firſt, throughly examine thine owne, doe not ſeeke for a mote in another mans eye, till thou haſt pull'd the beame out of thine owne: and then thou wilt tell me another tale.

To let other mens conſciences alone, and to looke into our owne.

That which thou thinkeſt is a diſcharge to thy conſcience, is a meere ieſt, and an idle toy, & therin thou doeſt but put a ieſt vpon thy ſelfe. Do not cloake thy ſinne (thou Vſurer) ſaying; Such a one is a greater Vſurer then I am: Nor ſeeke to excuſe thy ſelfe, by ſaying; Such a man is a worſe thiefe then my ſelfe. Meddle not thou with another mans conſcience; let that alone, and looke well into thine owne. This is that which concernes thee; This is that which imports thee moſt. Let euery man put that away from him, that is not his owne; and wherewith he hath nothing to doe. Let him not meddle nor make with it. Let him not ſettle his eyes vpon other mens ſins, but caſt them aſide off. For it is neither the Idolatry of *Salomon*, nor the Sacriledge of *Iudas*, that ſhall excuſe the like in thee: But euery man ſhall beare his owne burthen, and receiue ſuch puniſhment, as his owne ſinne hath deſerued. Why doeſt thou incline, and leane vnto that, which is not onely ill, but alſo hurtfull vnto thee? Why doeſt thou not rather imitate that, which is good, and vertuous? following the example of him that faſteth, confeſſeth, communicateth, repenteth him of his ſinnes, and performeth many other actions of holineſſe, and of a good and honeſt life? Is he peraduenture more man then thou art? Thou forbeareſt (like him that is ſicke) to take that, which ſhould cure thy ſickneſſe, and doe thee good; and feedeſt on that, which impaireth thy health and doth thee hurt. I therefore aſſure thee, and giue thee my honeſt word, that it will make much for thy ſaluation, *acordarte de ti, y oluidarte de mi*, to forget me, and to thinke on thy ſelfe.

Seuill, of all other Cities, the richeſt for Conſciences.

Amongſt thoſe many Schooles for little children, and thoſe many Schoole-Maſters, which haue the keeping of Conſciences, (howbeit, as I ſay, no City, Towne, nor Village eſcapes them in all the world) *Seuill* is the onely place for my money; and therein, thoſe that imbarke themſelues to paſſe the Seas. For, the moſt part of them, as if their Conſciences, were of that great burthen and extraordinary weight, that they were able to ſinke both the Ship and themſelues, doe either leaue their conſciences at home in their own houſes, or with their Hoſts, to keepe them for them till their returne. And if afterwards they chance to recouer them againe, (which in my opinion is a hard matter, for that the Countrey is very ſpacious and large, where there is no ſuch great reckoning made of theſe things) it is well and good; if not, they doe not greatly care; or if they take them with them, and leaue them there behinde them, as little, if not leſſe. And for this reaſon, Conſcience goes a begging in that Citie, in regard of the great ſtore and plenty of that commodity; becauſe thoſe that left them there behinde them, when they went away to the *Indies*, or ſome other farre place, did neuer returne backe againe to fetch them.

I will not offer to walke in the Exchange, nor the Burſe, nor haue any thing to doe in the ſtreet of *San Françiſco*, nor hazzard a drowning in the Sea. Let all trafficke (for my part) be laid aſide; Let there be no trade driuen, no commerce

merce had, no buying nor selling, nor exchanging of commodities. For I feare me, if I should once begin to be a dealer therein, I should neuer be able to giue it ouer. But let me heare make a full point, taking this onely as but a note by the way, and not thinke so much on what I say, as what I would haue said, and shall perhaps say hereafter when I see my time. And so I will proceed to my promised Story.

The Story of Pantalon, Casteleto, *a* Genouese, *and poore Begger in* Florence.

There was a certaine man, that was borne neere vnto *Genoa*, a person of great account, for his rare inuention, and subtlenesse of wit. His name vvas *Pantalon Casteleto*, a poore Begger, who, for that he was married in *Florence*, and his Wife had borne him a sonne, after that the Mother was deliuered of this child, the Father went plotting and deuising, how hee might leaue him well to liue, without tying him to serue any man, or to binde him prentice to any trade or occupation.

(a) Dichoso el hijo, que tiene à su padre en el infierno. De malè quęsitis, vix gaudet tertius hæres.

It is commonly spoken there amongst them by way of Prouerbe: (a) *Happy is that sonne, Whose father goes to Hell.* Howbeit, I count him vnhappy. For it is not possible, that should thriue with him, which he left him, nor that it should come to the inioying of a third Heire. This is my opinion. For, to leaue his child well prouided for, he prouides ill for himselfe; and to make him, marres himselfe. For he can not but runne his soules hazzard, who hunts after vngodly gaine.

And albeit he were married, and had the charge of a Wife, (but this is a particular benefit, and a large Theame to treat of, that one Begger should marry with another, and be both of one profession) they had (God be thanked) reasonable well wherewithall to liue; they wanted nothing, that they had need of, and sufficient store of wealth they had besides, to leaue vnto their heire, in some competent measure, especially for one, that was of so meane a condition as he was.

The cruelty of a Father.

But this man would not put himselfe vpon Fortune. But had intertained in his imagination, one of the greatest and most vnnaturall cruelties, that the wit of man could deuise. He maimes me this his poore innocent Infant, (as many more of all Nations doe in those parts:) where, when they be yong and tender, they writhe their ioynts, and breake their bones, making them as plyable as Waxe; then taking them in hand anew, molding them after this, or that manner, as they haue most minde vnto, forming and fashioning of them (I know not) into how many monstrous shapes, and vgly postures, onely to moue the people to take the more pitie and compassion of them.

With these abused Babes, whilest they are little, they get where-withall to liue in their old age; and afterwards, thus maymed and mangled as you see, they leaue them a good patrimonie. But this wicked Rogue, for his greater increase of gaine, would martyrize this poore tender Infant, with new kinde of torments; He did not put him to these cruell tortures all at once; but still as he grew in yeeres, so did he vary and change them, as men shift their Shirts, or change their Bathes, one dry, and the other wet; till he had left him thus carued and ingrauen, as I haue painted him forth vnto you.

Some naturall gifts hee had, that his father either did not, or could not touch. So that notwithstanding this his vnhappinesse, hee had a very happy wit, and was a good Speaker, and his words became him very well. But that which he had from his Father, which was his outward flesh, to begin first with his head, he had writh'd it in that sort, that it seemed to bee set quite backwards, his face falling on t'one side vpon his right shoulder. That both beneath, and aboue the lids of his eyes, was all one ouer-growne lumpe of flesh: the fore-head and the eye-browes scorch't and burned with a thousand wrinkles: He vvas crooke-back't, his whole body like a Bottom of Yarne, all one lumpe, vvithout any shape or fashion, of any one part, that might stile him man: His feet turned backwards, and perching vp ouer his shoulders, being

ing diſ-ioynted, and vvithered. The onely ſound parts that were about him, vvere his armes, and his tongue. The one left him to talke, the other to take. He went, as if he had beene clapt into a Cage, being thruſt into a little kinde of woodden Cheſt, ſet and made faſt to a little Aſſes backe, which he did rule and guide with his hands; ſaue that to get vp or downe, he vvas faine ſtill to ſeeke for ſome helpe, which he did ſeldome or neuer miſſe of, hauing one or other euer at hand for that purpoſe.

He was, (as I told you before) a pleaſant conceited fellow, had a good wit of his owne, and many good things ſhould you heare to come from him. Beſides, he went ſo totter'd, ſo torne, and in that ragged and wretched manner, that all *Florence* tooke pitie of him, and as well for his pouerties ſake, as for thoſe good parts that were in him, they gaue him much Almes, wherewith he was well relieued.

After this manner, he liued ſome ſeuenty and two yeeres, or much thereabouts, at the end whereof he fell into a grieuous ſickneſſe, whereof hee certainly knew, that he ſhould dye.

Seeing himſelfe at this point, and that he now ſtood vpon the iumpe of his Saluation, or Condemnation; being (as he was) very diſcreet, hee began to conſider a little better of the matter, thinking with himſelfe, that it vvas no time now to ieſt, but rather to confeſſe his ſinnes, and to ſend for the Parſon of the Pariſh and to make his Will. Which as it was to be the laſt that euer he vvas to make ſo was he careſull to make it as ſtrong & as good as the ſtrength of his wit could deuiſe. He deſired, that a knowne Confeſſor of his might be ſent for; one, that was a very learned man, & in very good eſteeme, as well for the honeſty of his life and conuerſation, as for his learning and manners. With him he treated touching his ſinnes, and fully imparted his minde vnto him. And when he had communicated what he thought fit vnto him, hee was very deſirous to haue his Will made, but with the ſhorteſt, and moſt compendious words, that poſsibly could be imagined. And the beginning being drawne, (which belonged to the publike Notary to doe) what was fit on his part, he briefely thus ſets it downe.

Pantalons *laſt Will and Teſtament.*

Inprimis, I recommend my Soule vnto God, vvho created it, and my body to the earth, to be buried in mine owne Pariſh.

The Duke made his ſole heire and Executor.

Item, My Will is, that my Aſſe be ſold; which money ſhall bee beſtowed vpon my buriall. But the Pack-Saddle I bequeath vnto the great Duke my Lord and Maſter, to whom it rightly appertaineth, and properly belongs, whom I nomirate to be my ſole Executor, and make my generall and vniuerſall Heire.

Pantalon *dyes.*

This done after that he had ſettled and ſealed this his laſt Will and Teſtament of that his indiſpoſition anon after he dyed. And becauſe euery man held him to be a merry-conceited fellow, and one that was full of his witty ieſts, they did all verily thinke, that he would make his death equall with his life, and ſhut vp his laſt breath with ſome odde ieſt or other for a farewell, as it vſually befals ſuch kinde of giddy-headed fooles, when they once take a toy in the head, and are wedded to their humour.

The Duke ſends for his Legacy.

But when the great Duke vnderſtood of this Will, (which was not long kept from his knowledge) hauing formerly heard of the Teſtator, and that he was held to be a wiſe and diſcreet man, he did from thence collect, that this Clauſe was not without it's myſterie. Wherevpon hee gaue order that this Legacy he had left him, ſhould forthwith be brought vnto the Palace, and when he had it before him he commanded it to be ript in ſunder, piece after piece, and ſtill as they went along, they tooke forth diuers different ſorts of coyne; and when they had ſorted out theſe ſeuerall kindes of moneys (which were all in good gold) they amounted in the whole to three thouſand and fiue hundred Spaniſh Crownes, euery Crowne bearing the full value of foure

hundred

hundred *Maranedis*. This poore man, whether he had consulted with his Confessor or no, I know not; or aduised with himselfe, which is not vnlikely; It seemed he thought with himselfe, that that was none of his, and that hee had no other meanes to make restitution, then to leaue it to the naturall Lord of that Signorie, who had the charge of all the poore committed to his care, and with this he conceiued he had discharged his Conscience. The great Duke being so powerfull and so noble a minded Prince as he was, gaue order to haue this Will entred, and to remaine vpon record to after-ages, and that the Legacie that he had giuen him, should be imployed for the good of his soules health; Wherein he shew'd himselfe a worthy Executor, but a farre more worthy Gentleman.

What say you now to the feeling of this poore Begger? What thinke you of his sense of Touching? Thine is farre short of it, nor halfe so good and delightfull as this, though thou shouldest inioy the imbracements of another *Venus*. Of these two Priuiledges (before specified) we were the sole and only Lords, for none besides vs, did inioy them so freely, as we did; together with many other liberties and immunities which (if I list) I were able to relate vnto thee.

When I doe but thinke vpon those times, which I inioyed heretofore, and the merry life that I then led, which is all now past and gone with me, (not that I either long or looke for any more such happy dayes or that I would call them to minde, to make me forget my miseries,) or whether the recordation of them did make those sorrowes seeme either greater or lesse, which I suffred in the Gallies, I will not now dispute; but sure I am, that I take great delight in the remembrance of them: As that hauing of our Table still prouided for vs; our bed ready made to our hands; our Chamber without incombrance; our Scrip well furnish'd; our goods about vs; our stocks sure on foot, without feare of theeues, or any dread of raine, without Aprill's care, or May's fearfull iealousie, which two are the husband-mans moth: Not troubling our heads with new fashions, with the pompe of apparell, with ceremonious complements, and the like froth of fooleries, scum'd out of forraine Countries: Liuing without the preuention of flatteries, without the composing of Lies, scorning to get either money, or to seeke to grow into credit by such base insinuations.

Artifices to winne Opinion.

How would we suffer that men might the better esteeme of vs? How visit them, that they might not forget vs? How attend them, for to binde them vnto vs? What occasions would we not seeke out, that we might come to speake with them, and be seene by them? How early would we be stirring, to the end they might thinke we were carefull and sollicitous how to liue? And euermore the more early vp, the colder and sharper the weather was. And euery one of these had it's pleasure and delight, for the ends for which they were done.

How often would my selfe fall a discoursing of other mens houses and their gentilitie, only of purpose to set my owne Pedigree afoot, and to shew that I was a Gentleman well descended? How often would I discouer another mans defect, and finde fault with it, and only to this end, that by taxing such a vice in another, I might be thought to be free from the same my selfe? How often would I hold conuersation, only for ostentations sake, and no other end in the world? How would I wheele about, and fetch in things a farre off, only to vent my wit, and to make my words to take place? To what good meetings did not I goe? I was the only Cocke there that crow'd lowdest; and when I went away from them, and left their companie, they would not censure me, as I would them, but let me alone.

O these conuenticles of lewd Company, these meetings, where mens mouthes fall a murmuring and traducing of others! ô how large a Historie would

would it require? Who is able to expreſſe, how ill it beſeemes a Gentleman, to be the Taylour that muſt cut out ſuch ill worke? There is no Clergie man, whoſe (a) Surplice they will not cut; Nor honeſt woman, whoſe (b) Kirtle they will not make a hole in. They cloath the Saint and the ſinner after a large kinde of faſhion. But let it reſt as it is; if we liue, we ſhall be ſeru'd with the like ſawce. By how ſtraight a Rule, by how euen a Line, and by how iuſt a Compaſſe, muſt that Pretender carry himſelfe, who is to ſaile thorow the ſea of this world, hoping for a fortune from another mans hand? If it be good, how ſlowly doth it come? if bad, how ſoone doth it light vpon vs? And the Scale can neuer be made ſo vpright and euen, but that there will be ſomething wanting of it's true weight. And the better a man deſerues, often-times hee fares the worſe. If a man haue not a minde to doe him good, euery Mole-hill is made a mountaine, and euery the leaſt obliquitie, is obſerued and noted in him. If he ſpeake much, (though neuer ſo well,) he is too lauiſh of his words; If little, he is too ſhort and obſcure, and knowes not how to expreſſe himſelfe. If of high and dainty things indeed, he is too raſh, and too preſumptuous; and vndertakes to diſcuſſe thoſe things, that are too deepe for his vnderſtanding. If of things of leſſer conſequence, and of a lower ſtraine, he is too ſhallow, and hath no ſtuffe in him. If he humble himſelfe, he is baſe; if ſtand vpon his worth, he is proud: if he will fight and take no wrong, hee is ill gouern'd, and a Royſter; if pocket a wrong, and hold his hands, he is a coward: if he haue a bold looke, he is impudent; if a modeſt countenance, he is an hypocrite; if he laugh, he is condemned of leuitie; if graue, hee is counted a *Saturniſt*: if affable, ſlightly regarded; if auſtere, mightily abhorred: If iuſt, cruell; if mercifull, a ſilly ſheepe.

Now againſt all theſe and the like cauils (which are no ſmall misfortunes) the poore haue a Paſſe-port, as being Lords of themſelues, free from all taxes and tallage. They are out of the Gun-ſhot of their Competitors, they quietly inioy their life, without being troubled with Promooting Knaues to informe againſt them; ſnipping Tailours to take them ſhort; or ſnarling dogs to ſnap at their good name.

Such was my happy condition, if Time and Fortune (conſumers of all things on earth, who ſuffer not things to continue in one and the ſelfe-ſame eſtate) had not tumbled me downe from this height of my happineſſe; declaring by the colour of my countenance, and the Soundneſſe of my limmes, that I was rich in health, and not ſo maymed, nor ſo poore, as I made my ſelfe to be, by my pitifull moanes and lamentations.

For, as I was ſitting one day a begging of almes, in the Citie of *Gaeta*, hard by the Church porch, whither (out of curioſitie) I would needs goe to ſee if their charitie and deuotion did equall that of *Rome?* There I ſate bare, made ſhew of my head vnto them, (for I was but newly come thither, and had not as yet fitted my ſelfe with neceſſaries) ſo that I was forced on the ſudden to make vſe of a kinde of ſcurfe, that I had clapt thereon; in the counterfeiting whereof, I was excellent cunning. The Gouernour of the Towne comming to Church, as he paſt along by me, caſts his eye vpon me, & gaue me an almes. With this tricke, I paſt reaſonable well for a while. But becauſe, *la Codiçia, rompe el ſaco*, too much couetouſneſſe makes the bag to breake; and I had not the wit to ſee when I was well; I thought fitt vpon a Feſtiuall day to appeare in publike with ſome new inuention. I had my preparatiues ready, my prouiſion at hand, I ſet them before me, and then dreſt me ſuch a legge, that was very well worth more, then a very good Vine-yard. This was the farme that I meant then to liue vpon.

Well, away goe I to Church with it; there I began to ſtretch my throate, and to thunder out my voyce, euer and anon lifting vp the cloth with a tender finger, to ſhew vnto them, what a grieuous ſore legge I had, wherein I was

(a) *The Spaniſh word is* Loba: *that is*, Veſtidura clerical, talar, que llega al ſuelo, cortada à todo ruedo con golpes para ſacar los braços. Es veſtidura honorifica. Eſte vſo ſe conſerua en la Capilla real. Han le dado varias etimologias, y entre las demas, vna, que por comer tanta tela, la llamaron, Loba. Però ſu etimologia trae Origen del nombre Griego λοπη genero de veſtidura, quæ hominem ambit, vt cortex, & tunica arborem. y puede ſer Hebreo, del verbo labas, induere y aſsi Valdra, indumentum. Couarruuias.

(b) *The Spaniſh word is*, Saya, *which is that garment, which a woman weares from her girdle downeward.*

The wretched condition of Pretenders.

Guzman *playes the Counterfeit in* Gaeta.

Proverb.

was ſo ready and ſo perfect, that I had need of no body to teach me my leſſon. But whether it were my ill lucke, or mine owne indiſcretion, (for from ignorance and fooliſhneſſe, all your miſchances for the moſt part proceed) I cannot tell which to impute it to: But certaine I am, I ſhould not haue ſought to haue eate better bread then is made of Wheat, nor haue gone a chopping of horſes in ſo ſmall a Village. I might haue kept me ſtill to my ſcabbed head, and haue paſt well with it, (for it found me meat to put in my mouth) and not haue gone ſeeking after new tricks, and new inuentions.

The Gouernour of Gaeta cures Guzman of his ſore legge, and how he did it.

The Gouernour came that day vnto the Church to heare Maſſe, and becauſe he knew me, he will'd me to riſe, ſaying vnto me: Come along with me, and I will beſtow a ſhirt on thee to put on thy backe. I did beleeue him, and went along with him to his Lodging. If I had but knowne before how he would haue vs'd me, he ſhould not haue reach't me with the beſt Culuerine he had, nor haue made me to come within his clutches, with all his faire words, nor all the wit in his head. But when he had me there, and ſaw I was ſafe for getting from him, he lookt me ſteadily in the face, and ſaid vnto me; Thy colour being ſo freſh, thy skinne ſo cleere, thy body ſo ſound (for thou art fat, plumpe, and faire, thy complexion good, thy limmes ſtrong, and the reſt of thy skinne ſmooth and ſleeke) how comes it to paſſe that this thy legge is as it is? Me thinkes this doth not ſute and hang well together with the reſt.

I anſwered him, but with a troubled kinde of deliuery: Sir, I know not; it hath pleaſed God it ſhould be ſo. Preſently he knew thereupon vpon what legge I halted, he had found me out; whereupon I had an eye to the doore, to ſee if I could ſhew him my heeles, and get away from him. But I could not, for the doore was made faſt. He willed a Surgeon to be ſent for, that hee ſhould ſearch my wound, and ſee what I ayled. He came and lookt, and lookt vpon it againe and againe, and at laſt very leiſurely and tenderly went to worke with me, with a ſoft and gentle hand, as neuer a Lady in the land could more handſomely haue gone about it. At the firſt it did ſomewhat puzzle him, for he knew not what to make of it, but within a little while after he ſaw his error, & then he told the Gouernour; Sir, this Youth hath no more hurt in his legge, then I in mine eye; and that you may perceiue it is ſo, I will plainely demonſtrate it vnto you. With that he began to vnſwathe me, and taking off ragge after ragge, and ſuch ſlibber-ſlabbers as I had bedawbed it withall, he made my legge to appeare as whole as any fiſh, as indeed it was.

The Gouernour bleſt himſelfe, and ſtood amazed to ſee me in that maner, but that which did aſtoniſh him moſt, was how I ſhould haue the aptitude and wit to doe ſuch a thing as this. I was in a trance, and ready to ſwoune, not knowing what either to ſay or doe. And if my youth had not borne me out, none but God could haue freed me from exemplary puniſhment.

But this youth of mine did reſerue me for greater chaſtiſement. And in ſtead of the ſhirt which hee promiſed mee, he ſent for the Beadle of beggers, and there (in his preſence) willed him to giue me a ſtrip't Doublet, which I was to weare vnder that torne one which I had to my backe. Commanding me, that I ſhould preſently packe out of the Citie, and come there no more. Which command, though he had not layd it vpon me, I ſhould haue beene carefull to ſee it performed my ſelfe; for I would not haue ſtayd there, if he would haue made me Lord of *Gaeta*. I got me away full of feare, trembling and quaking, ſhrinking vp my ſhoulders, looking euer and anon behinde me, being iealous and ſuſpicious, that if they ſhould chance to bethinke themſelues, that they had not giuen me ſufficient paiment, they would make after me, and bring me to a ſtricter account.

Rome commended by Guzman.

Herevpon I haſtned away as faſt as my legges would carry me, making no ſtay, till I came into the *Popes* Territories: Calling my *Rome* ſtill to minde, and throwing a thouſand bleſsings vpon it; for there, they did not ſticke vpon trifles,

trifles, nor did not buſie themſelues to examine colours, but let euery man (without more adoe) make the beſt of his liuing. To conclude, *Tierra larga*: a large Country for my money. Let me liue (to chooſe) in a ſpacious Countrey, where a man may haue Sea-roome inough, and not be driuen to runne through narrow Streights and Creekes, ſayling ſtill in the Channell, where there is few fetching of boords, nor any danger of being caſt away vpon the Coaſt: Whereas, in your narrow Seas, euery little guſt of winde, euery ſmall flawe, or leaſt tempeſt in the world, will caſt you vpon Quick-ſands, or throw you vpon the Rocks, till you be either ſwallowed vp, or daſht in pieces.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Almes: And being returned to* Rome, *hee fals afreſh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himſelfe to haue a ſore legge. A Cardinall taking compaſſion of him, takes order, to haue him cured in his owne houſe, and to be laid in his owne bed. He diſcouers the knauery of Surgeons, hauing a bad conſcience: And how being cured, he becomes the Cardinals Page.*

Wiſedome, gotten by Time.

IT is a knowne and naturall truth; That thoſe that are yong, are very ſhort-ſighted in your choyſer ſort of things, which require grauity, and carry any weight with them: Not for any defect of vnderſtanding, but for want of Wiſedome, which requireth experience; and that experience, Time. As your greene fruit, that is not come to it's ripeneſſe, hath not any perfect relliſh, but is tart, and ſowre; ſo a young man, before he come to his maturitie, lacks his true taſte, and failes in the ſpeculation of things, and comes ſhort of the true knowledge of them. And therefore, it is no wonder if he erre; but 'twere rather a wonder, if he ſhould not erre. Notwithſtanding, he that hath good naturall parts, is commonly more capable of theſe conſiderations, and readier to receiue the impreſsion of them.

A great wonder if youth ſhould not erre.

This I know by my ſelfe; for many times, the greatneſſe of my Spirit did tranſport me farre beyond that which ſorted with my yeeres; ſetting (as the Eagle doth with her young ones) my eyes fully fixt againſt the Sun of Truth; conſidering with my ſelfe, that all my cunning tricks, and ſundry manner of deceiuings, was but a kinde of coozening my ſelfe, by ſeeking to rob him, that was truely poore and in need, maymed, and not able to worke, to whom thoſe Almes did of right belong. For the poore man indeed neuer deceiueth, nor can he ſo doe, though it be his end ſo to doe. For he that giueth, regardeth not to whom he giueth; and he that beggeth, is that Quayle-pipe or whiſtle, that cals thoſe Birds vnto him, whileſt he ſits ſecurely on his perch. The Begger, with the Call and cry of his lamentations, receiueth the Almes, which he conuerteth to his profit, taking God in his mouth, whereby he makes him the debtor, binding him to repay it. On the one ſide I was glad, when they gaue me any thing; On the other ſide, I did quake and tremble, when I tooke account of mine owne life. For I aſſuredly knowing, that that was the way to my condemnation, I was bound to make reſtitution, as did that *Florentine*. But when I did ſometimes ſee and obſerue, that ſome powerfull and rich men would curiouſly put themſelues to ſearch in euery corner of their purſe, for to look out a poore Blanke, a ſingle-ſol'd piece of money (God he knowes) and had there beene a leſſe coyne, I thinke they would haue beene well inough contented with it to giue vnto the poore, I could by no meanes indure it, my bloud would riſe at it, and I was ready to loſe all patience. And euen now (me thinkes) whileſt I am now ſpeaking of it, my buttons ſwell; the coales

A poore man neither doth, nor can deceiue.

What kinde of poore are bound to make reſtitution.

of

of my choller; reuiue and quicken afreſh, and ſuch a furie of rage aſſayleth me, and ſets me on againſt them, that I cannot containe my ſelfe, but muſt needs ſay ſomething, though I know what, nor where to begin.

An admonition to the rich to be liberall in their Almes.

Hear'ſt thou me (thou my rich friend) art thou not yet wearied out, or waxen deafe, with ſo often hearing what hath been ſaid vnto thee, (it hauing beene ſo often beaten in thine eares, and inculcated vnto thee) that whatſoeuer thou ſhalt doe for any poore body, that ſhall begge an Almes of thee for Gods ſake, thou doeſt it for God himſelfe, and he is ty'de vnto thee for the ſame, and ſtands bound for the payment, by taking the debt vpon him, and making that his owne, which is another mans? Wee that are poore, are like a Cipher in Arithmeticke, vvhich of it ſelfe is nothing, but vvith the addition of a figure is ſomething, and the number is ſtill the more, the more Ciphers are ſet before thoſe figures. If thou wilt ſtand for ten, ſet a poore man by thee, and ſee how many the more poore men thou ſhalt relieue, & how many the more Almes-deeds thou ſhalt doe, they are as ſo many figures, to make vp a greater reckoning for thee with God, when thou ſhalt be called before him to make thine account.

What ſhouldſt thou ſticke vpon the matter, and begin to debate and conſider with thy ſelfe, whether I get or not get, vvhether men giue me, or giue me not? But doe thou giue me that which I aske thee, if thou haſt wherewithall and art able to doe it. And if not for Gods ſake, which commands thee to doe it, yet out of that naturall affection, which thou oweſt vnto me. And doe not flatter thy ſelfe, or ſo much as offer to thinke, that the wealth vvhich thou inioyeſt, and the riches that God hath giuen thee, is; That thou art better Wooll then we; but that thou art better carded. And he that made thee thus fine, and me thus courſe; by giuing to thee, and taking from mee, may change hands, and may beſtowe his bleſsings vpon vvhom he pleaſe, and on ſuch as hee ſhall thinke worthy thereof, and ſhall doe more good vvith it; then thou doeſt. Be not a pryer into the poore, nor too ſtrict an examinant: demurre not vvhat thou ſhalt doe for him, ſtand not a hinching and a crinching with him; for if thou looke well into thy ſelfe, thou wilt finde Couetouſneſſe to be the cauſe of all this, and that they are but meere excuſes, becauſe thou would'ſt not giue him any thing, and ſo ſhift him off from thee: I know it is ſo; and therefore let me perſwade thee (for thine owne good) to inlarge thy minde, and that will make thee to inlarge thine Almes. And for this end, as alſo that thou maiſt ſee the good effect of Almes, heare that, which *Sofronius* rrecounteth, cited by *Caniſius*, a very learned man.

The Emperour Zenon, a great Almes-giuer.

A Widow-woman, hauing one onely Daughter, being a very faire and beautifull Damzell, *Zenon* the Emperour fell mightily in loue with her, and was exceedingly inamoured of her; and by force (quite againſt her will, and vtterly with her diſlike) he deflowred her; and with a ſtrong and tyrannous hand, kept her, and enioyed her.

The effect of Almes-deeds.

The Mother of this Maiden, finding her ſelfe much afflicted for this her ſo much wronged and abuſed Daughter, bearing great deuotion to a particuler Image of our Lady, as often as ſhe preſented her ſelfe there before it, ſhe would ſtill recommend this her cauſe vnto her, ſaying; O bleſſed *Mary*, O ſweet Virgin, I heere vpon my knees begge reuenge and puniſhment for this force and affront, which that Tyrant *Zenon* the Emperour hath, and doth ſtill offer vs. It is ſaid, that ſhe heard a voice, which ſpake thus vnto her; Thou hadſt beene long agoe e're this reuenged on him, if the Almes-deeds of the Emperour had not bound our hands.

Looſe thou thy hands, that are too faſt bound; ſtretch them out to the poore, and helpe them therewith (as well as thou canſt) out of the miſery, vvherein they lye. For it is thy duty ſo to doe, it is required at thy hands; and it much more concerneth thee to giue an Almes, then the other to receiue it. God did

not ſo much make the rich man for the poore, as the poore man for the rich. Not ſo much for his, as for thy good. And therefore doe not thou ſtand off, and intertaine thy ſelfe with ſaying, One man merits more then another; This deſerues ſome-what, and this not. There is but one God, and they aske of thee in his name; to him thou doeſt giue it. All is one, thou art to make no difference. Thou canſt not vnderſtand, how much another mans neceſsitie doth wring him, nor is it poſsible that thou ſhouldſt come to knowe it. It is the outward man onely, that thou canſt iudge of. And thou thinking, that ſuch a man is ſound and in health, it is not fit (as thou ſuppoſeſt) that thou ſhouldeſt giue him an Almes.

The neceſsities of the poore cannot be truely knowne by vs

Doe not ſeeke ſtarting holes, to hide away thy Deuotion; ſeeke not excuſes, to put away the poore from thee; leaue that to their Lord and Maſter, thou haſt no Commiſsion to examine them; it is not giuen thee in charge. There are other Iudges, to whom this ſcrutinie belongeth. And if, looking vpon me, thou wilt let thy iudgement ſlip, and ſay, that God hath been too ſlacke and negligent in puniſhing of me; Conſider, that the ſelfe-ſame God hath done the like by others.

Do not (O thou man of euill bowels, thou vnmercifull-minded man) doe not thou, I ſay, lye in waite to doe miſchiefe. The Ambuſh is diſcouered, and I ſee thy meaning. I ſay then, that Charity, and diſtribution of Almes, hath it's method and order, as in other things. Nor doe I ſay, that thou ſhouldeſt not order thy Charitie; but I ſay, that thou ſhouldeſt exerciſe thy Charitie; That thou ſhouldſt giue freely, and not pinchingly; That thou ſhouldſt not make ſuch a deale of ſcrupuloſitie with thy ſelfe; whether he ſhould haue an Almes or not haue an Almes? whether hee haue need, or not need? Troubling thy ſelfe with this, and with that, and I know not what. If thou wilt giue it him, giue it him quickly; if thou canſt not, ſay thou canſt not, and ther's an end. Yet let me tell thee by the way; if a poore man begge of thee, then, euen then, doſt thou owe him an Almes, and it coſts him deare too, as I told thee before.

who are to iudge of the poore.

And let me farther tell thee, That thy Office is onely to giue. Let the Rulers and Magiſtrates, the Biſhops and their Vicars, open that doore to looke into, it is their eyes that muſt ſee who is poore, and who not, and accordingly appoint the puniſhment.

What manner of man he ought to be, that is in authority.

This is for men of Office; this, for men of authority; yet it is a croſſe vnto them; yet is it a trouble vnto them. Nor were they made Gouernours, or Heads ouer others, for to eate the beſt morſels, or to feede on the daintieſt diſhes, but to take more paines and cares then other men. Not to laugh and make themſelues merry with their Fooles and Ieſters, but to lament and bewayle the wretched eſtate of the poore: Not for to ſleepe and ſnort, but to watch and ſigh, hauing continually (like vnto the Dragon) the eye-ſight of the Spirit cleere. So that, it onely appertaines vnto thee to giue an Almes: And doe not thinke, that thou doeſt then performe that dutey, when thou giueſt that thou canſt not vvell tell what to doe withall, and haſt kept it ſo long in ſome corner a moulding, that it is fitter to be throwne out vpon the dunghill, then any thing elſe. And as if the poore were that dunghill, thou giu'ſt him thy mouldy and thy ſtinking meate; not ſo much out of Charitie, or any deuotion thou haſt to giue it to the poore, as becauſe thou canſt not eate it thy ſelfe, and wouldſt haue thy houſe faine rid of it. But this, I tell thee, is the ſacrifice of *Cain*. That which thou wilt offer, muſt be of the beſt things that thou haſt, as did that good and iuſt man *Abel*, with a deſire and will that it were much better, wiſhing it may doe him much good. Not, as though thou didſt giue by conſtraint and compulſion, nor yet for oſtentation, hauing (like the Phariſee) the trumpet to go before thee, to ſound foorth thy praiſe; but only out of meere charitie, that thou maiſt reape thereby that fruit that is promiſed thee, God accepting of thy ſacrifice.

I was

I was now a pretie waies off from *Rome*, whither I was bending my steps. But I no sooner came thither, but my teares trickled downe my cheekes for ioy. I did wish in my heart, that mine armes had beene so large, as that they might haue beene able to haue imbraced those sacred Walls. The first step that I set within those holy gates, I fell downe on my face, and kist that hallowed ground. And because that Country, which a man knowes, and where he hath his meanes, the same is to be accounted his Mother, I did much ioy to see it. I knew the Citie well, and was as well knowne in it. I began (as I had done before) to seeke some course to liue, and to maintaine this life of mine: I falsely call it life, being it was my death, though it seemed vnto me, to be my proper Center.

Guzman *with much ioy arriues at* Rome.

O alas, how strangely are we wedded to our passions, and how strange doth that seeme vnto vs, which doth not answer thereunto, be it neuer so true, neuer so certaine! This seemed to me, to be my only happinesse; holding (in comparison thereof) euery other thing as a misfortune. And though I did see all, yet I inclined still to the worst, thinking still, that that was the best.

Video meliora, &c.

I was stirring one morning betimes, according as I had formerly beene accustomed, and trugg'd along with my sore legge, with which I sate me downe to begge at one of the Cardinals gates. And he comming forth for to goe to the Palace, stay'd to heare me, in how loud a voice and extrauagant a tune, I besought his pitie: not vsing those plainer notes of eight, but saying; *Giue mee somewhat (noble Christian; friend of Iesus Christ) take pitie of this sore afflicted sinner, maimed and pained in his members; Looke vpon these wretched limmes: consider my vnfortunate yeeres, and take some compassion of this miserable creature! O my most reuerend Father, my most noble Lord, shew some sense of sorrow, haue some little feeling, I beseech your most illustrous Lordship, of this poooe young wretched Youth, and powre forth your fatherly compassion vpon such a pittifull piece of miserie and wretchednesse, as you see here before you. I begge it at your noble and charitable hands, in that glorious name of the blessed (though most painefull) passion of our deare Master and Redeemer Iesus Christ.*

Guzman *falls a begging anew with his counterfeit sore legge.*

A forme of begging vsed by some beggers.

My Lord Cardinal (after that he had heard me with a great deale of attention) was extremely moued therewith, and conceiued an extraordinary pitie towards me, insomuch that I did not seeme vnto him to be a man, but that I represented vnto him euen God himselfe. Thereupon hee forthwith gaue order to his seruants, that they should take me vp in their armes, and carry me into the house, and that stripping me of those old and rotten ragges, they should lay me in his owne bed, and in another chamber adioyning thereunto, they should make his. All which was done in a moment.

The Cardinall takes pitie of Guzman.

What effect his pitie brings forth.

O the great goodnesse of God! ô the largenesse of his noble condition! They stript me naked, for to cloath mee; they would not let me begge, but were ready to giue me; and to make me likewise able to giue vnto others. God neuer takes any thing away from vs, but when hee meanes to bestow greater blessings vpon vs. When God will giue thee any thing, he will first aske something of thee. He comes weary about noone to the Fountaine, sits him downe, askes thee a little water whereof the beasts of the field doe drinke. Thou giu'st it him: In exchange whereof, he giues thee the water of the Well of Life, the drinke of Angels, whereof he that drinketh, shall neuer thirst any more. This holy man made him his patterne, who sending presently for two skilfull Surgeons, and promising to see them well rewarded, committed my cure to their charge, and that they should doe their best to make me a sound man. This care being taken, leauing me in the hands of these two hangmen, and in the power of my enemies, hee gets him away to the Palace.

Gods goodnesse.

His readinesse to requite vs.

Physicians, and Surgeons, no friends to beggers.

Although we vs'd many, and sundrie counterfeitings of sores, yet that

which I had then made me, was rubb'd ouer with a certaine Herbe, which caus'd it to looke ſo ill and ſo vile, that whoſoeuer had ſeene it, would haue thought the ſore incurable, and that great remedies muſt bee vſed, as to a thing that was ſhrewdly feſtred, and growne to a Canker; yet if the vſe of this roguiſh Herbe be but left off for three whole daies, nature it ſelfe, without any other helpe, will reduce the fleſh to that perfection and ſoundneſſe, that it was in before. To theſe two Surgeons, it ſeemed at the firſt ſight a thing of much moment. They threw off their Cloakes, they call'd for a Panne of coales, freſh butter and other things; and when they had all that they would in a readineſſe, they vnſwathed me, and vnbound the clouts that were about my legge, which they performed very neatly and handſomely. That done, they askt me how long I had had this ſore, if I could gheſſe whence it ſhould come; if I did vſe to drinke Wine, what meates I did moſt vſually feed on, and ſuch other queſtions as theſe. Which thoſe that are skilfull in that art, are wont to doe on the like occaſions.

Guzman would not anſwer to the queſtions that the Surgeons askt him.

All theſe I anſwered with ſilence, lying all along as if I had beene dead, for I was not almoſt my ſelfe, nor was I indeed for a pretie while, ſeeing ſuch a deale of preparation to cut, to cauterize and the like; and in caſe I ſhould eſcape all this, I was at my wits end, to thinke that my maladie would bee found out, and ſo my roguerie be diſcouered. That which I ſuffered in *Gaeta*, ſeemed but a flea-biting vnto me. But now I liued in feare, that the Cardinall would inflict ſome notable puniſhment vpon me, for this cheating tricke that I had put vpon him. I knew not how to helpe my ſelfe, nor what to doe, nor whom to make vſe of in this my extremitie. For, neither in all the *Letanie*, nor in *Flos Sanctorum*, could I finde any Saint, that was a Defender and Protector of Villanes, or that would ſeeke to excuſe me.

By this time they had viewd me againe and againe, a hundred and a hundred times, and turnd me to and fro, this way and that way, that I thought they would neuer haue made an end; when at laſt I brake forth and ſaid; I am vndone, I am vndone; yet there is ſome life left in me: I die if you aske me any more queſtions, or if you meddle with me any more. Two houres of trouble haue I alreadie indured vnder their hands, if they doe not burie me now in *Tyber*, (thought I) I will paſſe ouer the reſt as well as I can. And ſay they ſhould agree to cut off my legge, the condition were better, and the gaine more certaine, ſo as I did not die in the doing of it. But ſuppoſe alſo that this ſhould befall me, I ſhould then be before handwith Death, and I ſhall not be put to indure that brunt another time. What can I doe more? (vnfortunate man as I am) I was borne into the world, here I muſt ſuffer, patience muſt be my beſt comfort, ſhuffle the Cardes therefore anew, and ſee whether we ſhall haue any better lucke. For my reſt is vp, and the care is already taken.

Surgeons of an euill conſcience, what kinde of men they be.

While I was thus doubtfull what would become of me, the couetouſneſſe of theſe Surgeons, and their greedineſſe of gaine, opened the doore to my remedie. The one of them, (who was better experienced then the other) came to know at laſt, that this ſore was a counterfeit ſore, and that by the ſignes and Symptomes of it, it proceeded from the effects of that very ſelfe-ſame Herbe which I had vſed. But this he kept cloſe to himſelfe, telling his fellow, This fleſh is canker'd all ouer, and therefore it is neceſſarie, that to hinder it from ſpreading any farther, and that other new fleſh may come vp in its place, to cut it all away to the quicke, and then there was no doubt of the well curing of it.

The other ſaid vnto him; This cure will aske a great deale of time; all this filthy matter muſt be taken away, till we come to the very belly, as it were, wherein the very pith and Core of it lies, before we can well tell what to ſay to it. Howſoeuer, we haue here a faire occaſion offred to ſhew our skill, and to

picke

picke out ſomething of it, for the better paſsing ouer of this hard yeere. He that was the more expert man of the two, tooke the other by the hand, and led him forth aſide into a withdrawing roome, that ioyned cloſe to the chamber. I, when I ſaw them thus goe forth together (ſuſpecting ſome ſecret conſultation) I ſtole me out of my bed after them, that I might liſten to their talke, and it was my hap at laſt to heare the one of them ſay to the other; Maſter Doctor, I doe thinke (be it ſpoken vnder correction) that your Worſhip doth not rightly and truly vnderſtand this young mans maladie; for you ſhall ſeldome meet with the like kinde of cures, and there is ſcarce one of a hundred, when they doe meet with them, that doth know them, or can tell what to make of them, yet ſhall I acquaint you with what I know: we are Partners in this buſineſſe, and therefore I will hide nothing from you; but it is a great ſecret, that I haue to communicate vnto you. What (for Gods ſake) ſaid the other? I ſhall tell you, ſir: and with that he ſaid; This begger is a notable diſſembling Rogue, a ſubtill Villaine; theſe ſores that you ſee, are feigned ware, counterfeit ſtuffe. What ſhall we doe in this caſe? Let me be aduiſed by you. If we leaue him off thus, the bird will eſcape our hands, and ſo we ſhall loſe both the credit and profit of this Cure. If take vpon vs to cure him, we haue no cure to worke vpon, and then this Raſcall will befoole vs, and laugh at our ignorance: and if we cannot one way or other come off fairely to our beſt aduantage, the beſt courſe will be (in my opinion) to acquaint the Cardinall how the caſe ſtandeth, and what a counterfeit Knaue we haue vnder our hands.

The wicked counſell of two Surgeons, about Guzmans *ſore legge.*

No ſir (ſaid the other) I hold not that ſo fit. Let vs hold the Bird faſt, while we haue him: it is a leſſe euill, that vpon this young fellow (that is no better then a *Picaro*, and an errant Rogue) we ſhould gaine vs a little reputation, and come off with ſome good opinion, then to let ſlip ſo fine and ſo faire an occaſion. Let vs therefore take no notice of theſe his counterfeit ſores, but rather lay ſome Playſters thereunto, that may entertaine and delay the time: And if need be, we ſhall afterwards apply ſome Corroſiues, that ſhall eate into the ſound fleſh, in the cure whereof, we will ſpend ſome few daies. Nay then (quoth the other) the beſt way will be, Sir, (as I take it) to begin firſt with fire, cauterizing that part which appeares thus infected.

Now, which of theſe two remedies they ſhould firſt begin withall, as alſo, how they were to ſhare the gaines betweene them, a great quarrell there was, they could not agree vpon the point; for he that firſt found out the nature of my ſore, would haue the greater ſhare, or elſe he would acquaint the Cardinall with the whole buſineſſe.

When I ſaw vpon what they ſtucke, and that it was a matter of little or no moment, and that vpon their difference, which was occaſioned by my miſerable pouertie, I might runne the hazzard of my vtter ruine, I ruſht in betweene them, and throwing my ſelfe downe at their feet, I ſaid thus vnto them, Gentlemen; on your hands, and tongues, depends my life, or death: my remedy, or my ruine. From my hurt no good can come to you; but from my good, you may reape aſſured both profit, and credit.

Guzman *ſpeaks to the Surgeons. They agree together to abuſe the charitie of this good Prelate.*

I know you are not ignorant of the neceſsitie and want which the poore ſuffer, and of the hardneſſe of rich mens hearts, inſomuch, that to mooue them to the more compaſsion and the eaſilier to get an Almes from them, we are inforced to wound our fleſh, with theſe kinde of ſores and martyrdomes, indu ring much trouble, and ſuffering much paine, yet neither theſe, nor greater miſeries that we abide, are of power to preuaile with them. It were a great mis-fortune in others to indure that out of neceſsitie which wee willingly ſuffer, for that poore and miſerable maintenance, which we draw from thence. I beſeech you (for Gods ſake) to take pitie on me, ſeeing that you are men that runne through the troubleſome ſtreet of this world, and are made

of fleſh and blood, as well as my ſelfe; and that, which hath driuen me to this hard exigent, may likewiſe light vpon your ſelues.

Doe not (I beſeech you) bewray me, worke your will vpon me, and wherein I may ſerue and helpe you, I will not be wanting to do as you will haue me, and in all things to be ſo ruled by you, that you may gaine much by this your cure. You may be confident of me, and truſt me as you would your owne liues; for if there were no other meanes to make me ſure vnto you, the feare of mine owne puniſhment is ſufficient of it ſelfe, to binde me to be ſecret. Nor let not the reſpect of gaine reſtraine your kindneſſe; for it is better to get, then to loſe. We are three of vs, let vs all play booty, and ioyne together to coozen the Cardinall; for he is rich, and ſomething is better then nothing.

Theſe intreaties, ſeaſoned with a few teares, and vttered with that earneſtneſſe as I deliuered them vnto them, were ſufficient to make them approue of my counſell; and ſo much the rather, for that they ſaw that I had hit the nayle right on the head. Wherewith they were ſo well pleaſed, that they were ready for ioy to take me vp vpon their ſhoulders, to carry mee to my bed. And ſo they and my ſelfe grew fully agreed to play euery man his part as well as we could.

Whileſt this buſineſſe was in debating, they were ſo long before they could agree vpon the matter, that I vvas ſcarce put into my bed, and the cloathes caſt vpon me; but that my Lord Cardinall was come to the Chamber doore; who when he was entred, one of the Surgeons ſaid vnto him:

The Surgeons diſſemble this counterfet ſore with the Cardinall.

This yong-mans malady (may it pleaſe your Lordſhip) is a very grieuous one, and we muſt neceſſarily apply, great remedies therevnto. For the fleſh is feſtred and canker'd in many places, and it hath taken ſuch deepe roote, that it is impoſsible for the plaiſters that we are to apply to worke any good effect, without ſome long tract of time; but I am very confident, and dare be bold to aſſure your Lordſhip, that (by the helpe of God) we ſhall make him as ſound a man, as euer he was in his life.

Then ſaid the other, If this Youth had not thus luckily falne into your Lordſhips pittifull and charitable hands, within a few dayes, theſe his ſores would haue been ſo putrified, and haue ſo corrupted the whole body, that all the world could not haue ſau'd his life, but he muſt haue periſhed, and dy'de. But we ſhall ſo ſtop this Canker, from ſpreading it ſelfe any farther, and vſe ſuch good meanes for his recouerie, that I make no queſtion but within ſixe moneths; if not ſooner, his fleſh ſhall come to bee as whole and as faire as mine.

The good Cardinall (whom Charitie had onely mooued herevnto) told them; Be it in ſixe, or in ten, let me haue it throughly healed and cured as it ought to be cured, and I ſhall take order that you be prouided of all things neceſſary for it, you ſhall want nothing. With this, he left them, and with-drew himſelfe into another roome. This did put new life into me; and as if they had drawne my heart out of the one ſide, and had thruſt it in on the other into my body againe, ſo did I then feele my ſelfe. For euen till that very inſtant, I did not reſt aſſured of theſe two traiterous Surgeons. I ſtil feared, they would haue wheeled about another way, and haue beene the cauſe of my vndoing. But by that which I had heard them treat in my preſence, I was ſome-what cheered, and began to be of good comfort.

Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, three things hard to be left.

But the cuſtome of Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, are things that are hard to be left off. It could not chooſe but grieue me very much, that I was hindred in my courſe, mew'd vp, debarr'd my liberty, and made vnable to inioy thoſe good and plentifull Almes, which I gain'd by begging. Which loſſe notwithſtanding did ſeeme the leſſe, in regard of that curious intertainment, choyſe dyet, and good lodging that I had, that mans deſire could not haue wiſht it to haue bin better. For I was waited on, like a Prince, and cured with

with that care, as if I had beene the Cardinall himſelfe. And ſo had he giuen commandement to the ſeruants of his houſe; beſides his dayly comming in his owne proper perſon to viſit me. And ſometimes he would ſit downe and make ſome ſtay with me, talking of ſuch things, wherein he tooke pleaſure to heare me.

At length, being healed of this infirmitie, (when the Surgeons ſaw their time,) they were diſmiſſed, receiuing a great deale of pay, for a little paines. And I was commanded to be new cloath'd, and to be liſted in the Roll of the Pages; that as one of them, from that time forward, I might attend, and wait vpon his Lordſhip.

Guzman is fully cured. He is made one of the Cardinals Pages.

CHAPTER VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth, how all things haue had their time of Empire. He deliuereth ſtrange things, touching Truth, and Lying. As being Page to the Cardinall; hee declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exerciſe themſelues. He relateth a pleaſant Story of his ſtealing of ſome Conſerues; and how he was puniſhed for it.*

OF all things created, none can complaine to haue paſt without it's Empire. They haue all of them had their day, and haue taken their turne. But becauſe Time changeth al things; theſe are paſt and gone; and thoſe haue finiſhed their courſe.

All things created haue had their time of ſway.

And firſt to begin with Poetry, it is apparent to all the world, how much that in it's time was celebrated.

Poetry.

Let ancient *Rome* report, in what reuerence were your Orators held, that were skill'd in the Art of *Rhetorick*, and had the gift of ſpeaking well and eloquently.

Oratory.

And let our *Spaine* ſpeake, what honour is now at this day giuen to thoſe ſacred letters of holy Writ, ſo many yeeres ſince, ſo well receiued by her; And in what eſteeme ſtand both the Lawes, Ciuill, and Canon.

Diuinitie.

Law.

The faſhion of Apparell, and wearing of cloathes in *Spaine*, cannot eſcape amongſt the reſt; wherein we dayly finde new changes, and new alterations, after which ſtrange faſhions all runne as faſt, as ſcatteringly, and as much out of order as Goates doe one after another; and as one Sheepe leapes after another; ſo doe men and women leape into faſhions. Hee is no body that is not in the new faſhion. And nothing now ſeemeth well, but what is in vſe; notwithſtanding that it hath been already vſed, and that lately, and approued for good: And that ſottiſh ignorance of the common rout, and baſer ſort of people, is come now to that paſſe, that they will all forſooth be alike; the tall man as the ſhort; the Quack-belly, as the *Scranio*; the fat, as the leane; the ſicke, as the ſound; the deformed, as the well-proportioned man, will haue (if not one & the ſelfe-ſame meaſure) at leaſt one and the ſelfe-ſame faſhion; putting themſelues into vgly and monſtrous ſhapes, and into an indecent and ill-becomming weare of cloathes, and onely becauſe they will follow the faſhion, and be in the ſame cut as others be, as if one kinde of Syrrop, or Purge, were fit for all diſeaſes.

Apparell.

The words likewiſe and phraſes of our ſpeech, haue been corrupted by vſe, and thoſe which once were ſyled phraſes, and pure language, are now accounted rude and barbarous.

Words & ſpeech.

Meates alſo haue their ſeaſon, and their time; For that doth not pleaſe vs in the Winter, which we haue a great deſire vnto in the Spring; nor that like vs in the Autumne, which we haue a minde vnto in the Summer.

Meats.

Your buildings, and your Engines of Warre are dayly renued. Your Manuall

Buildings. Warlike Engines.

nuall workes, and thoſe that are wrought with the hand, haue their turnings too; as your Seates, your Chaires, your Benches, your Cupboords, your Cabinets, your Tables, your low Stooles for women, your Lamps, your Candle-ſticks, and the like: Your ſports, your games and your Dances, haue alſo their changes. And euen in Muſicke, and in Songs, wee finde the like.

Manuall Arts.

Muſicke. Dancing.

For ſome are much taken with the (*a*) *Zarauanda*; and others may come hereafter, that will vtterly miſlike it, and make it grow out of date. Who haue ſeene your Mules in former times, how much Veluet they haue drawne along with them in their * Foot-cloathes, may now in theſe behold how incapable they are of any ſuch courteſie, being not ſuffered to haue any ornaments of Silke or Gold.

(*a*) Zarauanda: *a knowne Dance in* Spaine, *very wanton and laſciuious. The women of Cadiz inuented this Dance, and brought it to Rome, whereof* Martial *makes mention in ſome places. Eſpecially* lib. 5. Epig. 79. Nec de Gadibus improbis puellæ Vibrabunt ſine fine prurientes Laſciues docili tremore lumbos.

We are all witneſſes, when the time was, that my little pretty *Sardinian* Aſſe, was your womens onely *Regalo* and delightfull companion, when they performed their Stations, or went vpon their Viſits. But they are now all for their * *Sillas*, and eaſie Chaires carried with hands, which heretofore were well contented with good honeſt Pack-Saddles.

Let your Ladies now tell me, how eſſentiall a thing it is, and how much it importeth them, to haue little foyſting Hounds, Monkies, and Parrakitos, for to intertaine the time; who in times paſt did ſpend thoſe idler houres at the Reele and Spindle, and exerciſing their Needle in ſome curious, yet neceſſarie workes: But theſe are falne into diſgrace, they are growne out of faſhion, their time is paſt and gone, they haue their courſe, and are vaniſhed with the reſt.

Truth baniſhed.

** Foot cloathes.*

Aſſes.

** Pack-Saddles.*

Dogs. Monkies. Parrats. The Diſtaffe and Spindle.

The like hath hapned vnto Truth, that alſo hath had its time: Inſomuch that it was anciently much more vſed then now: And ſo much, that it was a generall ſaying in thoſe dayes, that it was reſpected aboue all other Vertues; and he that told any Lye, were it of more or leſſe importance, receiued puniſhment accordingly, euen to the loſſe of life, by being publikely ſtoned to death.

Truth, how much reſpected in old time.

But becauſe we are quickly weary of well-doing, and what is ill, will neuer be tyred out; men growing worſe and worſe, ſo holy a Law could not keepe it ſelfe afoot amongſt ſo many wicked perſons. Whereupon, it came to paſſe, that a great Plague and Peſtilence comming amongſt them, all thoſe that were touched with it (if they eſcaped with their life) remained with ſome offenſiue marke or other on their perſons: And as it befalleth, that one generation paſſeth, and another comes in the place, one ſucceeding another; they that were borne ſound and whole, reproched thoſe other with their faults and defects, wherewith they were notably grieued to ſee themſelues thus diſgraced, and tooke it very offenſiuely at their hands.

A ſhort Story of Truth.

Whence it came to paſſe by little and little, that Truth began to be heard with an vnwilling eare. And becauſe men were thus vnwilling to heare it, they grew at laſt to be vnwilling to tell it. For by the firſt round, we come vnto the ſecond, and by the ſecond, by degrees to the top of all. And a little ſparke, ſometimes ſets a whole Citie on fire.

At laſt they grew ſo bold as to breake this Statute, and not contented therewith, they baniſhed *Truth* at laſt into perpetuall Exile; and in her ſtead Lying was entertained, and ſeated in her throne.

Truth being thus condemned, ſhe went from among them to performe the tenor of her Sentence. She went all alone, poore, and naked; as it vſually hapneth vnto thoſe that are ſunke, and falne from their fortunes; (for euery man is valued according to that that he hath, or as his abilitie is; and thoſe which formerly haue beene our friends, in time of aduerſitie turne tayle, and become our enemies.) And hauing gone ſome few daies iourneyes from thence, ſtanding on a high Mountaine, ſhe might perceiue, paſsing ouer the edge

edge of a little Hill, a great companie comming along, and the neerer ſtill they drew, the greater did their number appeare. In the midſt of a Squadron, compaſſed about with an Armie, came Kings, Princes, Gouernours, Prieſts of that profeſsion, Men of command, and Rulers of thoſe Prouinces, euery one according to his qualitie, either more or leſſe, neere to this triumphant Chariot, which they had placed in the midſt, with a great deale of Maieſtie, which was wrought with admirable Arte, and extreme curioſitie.

Lyes *Triumph.*

In this Chariot, was there a high Throne erected, whoſe ſeate was of Iuory, Ebonie, and Gold; wherein were inchaſed many precious Stones, and a woman ſitting thereupon, with a Crowne vpon her head, like a Queene; her face moſt beautifull; but as you drew neerer and neerer vnto it, it did loſe much of it's faireneſſe, and at laſt appeared moſt foule and vgly. Her body, when ſhe ſate ſtill, and did not ſtirre, ſeemed luſtie, neate, and handſome; but when ſhe roſe vp, and ſtood vpon her feet, or walked vp and downe, ſhe diſcouered many defects. Her Robes were of changeable Taffaties, exceeding rich and glorious to the eye, and full of varietie of colours, ſtrangely diuerſified, and cunningly intermingled one with another, but the threds ſo ſlender, ſo ſubtill, and of that little or no ſubſtance, that the very ayre would puffe it in pieces, and euery the leaſt thing, either make bracks in it, or breake and teare it to fitters.

Truth, ſhe ſtood ſtill (poore ſoule) till this Squadron was paſt, admiring to ſee ſo much greatneſſe and State; but when the Charriot came right ouer againſt her, the Lady *Lye* tooke notice of this poore honeſt Dame *Truth*, and commanded thoſe about her to ſtay. And cauſing her to come neerer vnto her, ſhe began to aske her whence ſhe came, whither ſhe would, and what ſhe went about? And *Truth* plainly told her all.

Lye *meetes with* Truth.

The Lady *Lye* thought it fitting out of ſtate and greatnes, and for a farther addition of honour, to lead her along with her: For euery one is ſo much the more powerfull, by how much the greater are the enemies, whom he ouercommeth: and is by ſo much the more eſteemed and reputed of in the world, by how much the mightier the forces are, againſt which he makes reſiſtance.

Hereupon ſhe commands *Truth* to wait vpon her. There was no remedy, ſhe could not auoyd it, ſhe muſt along with her, whether ſhe would or no; but in the tayle of all the troope, being commanded to come laſt, for that was her knowne place, and at that time did (as it ſhould ſeeme) properly belong vnto her.

Truth, *where ſhe takes her place.*

He that will ſeeke for *Truth*, ſhal not finde her with this great Lady *Lye*, nor with any of her Miniſters, for ſhe comes in the Rere laſt of all, and there ſhe manifeſts her ſelfe to thoſe, that make inquirie after her.

The firſt daies iourney that ſhe march't, ſhe came to a goodly faire Citie, where *Fauour* went forth to receiue her, a very potent and powerfull Prince, who inuites both her and all her Traine to his houſe.

Fauour *goes forth to meet the Lady* Lye.

The Lady *Lye* accepted of this his kindeneſſe, giuing him many thankes for this his courteous offer, but would needs goe to lodge at the rich and ſumptuous Palace of *Wit*, where a great feaſt, and a curious banquet was prouided for her.

Wit *entertaines the Lady* Lye.

Afterwards, when ſhe was to goe from thence, and to paſſe on forward with her Troopes, my Lady *Lyes* Steward, which was *Oſtentation*, tall of perſon, with a long beard, a graue countenance, a ſettled gate, and words well plaſte, came to mine Hoſt, that had giuen them this good entertainment, & ask't him, what was to pay? The reckoning was ſumm'd vp; and the Steward, without contradiction, or abatement of any thing, told him it was wel.

Oſtentation *the Lady* Lyes *Steward.*

Then the Lady *Lye* called *Oſtentation* her Steward vnto her, ſaying; See you pay this man well, out of that money which you gaue him to keepe, when

The coyne, wherein the Lady Lye *makes her payments.*

when you came in hither. Mine Hoſt ſeemed to be amazed thereat, and began to wonder with himſelfe, what money this ſhould be, that they talked of; and thought at firſt, that they had but ſpoke in ieſt. But when he ſaw that they ſtood ſo ſtiffely in it, and that the ſame was affirmed by ſo many of good (as they ſeemed to be) condition and qualitie, he did very much complaine, ſaying; That till now, he had neuer beene ſo ill vs'd before in all his life.

Lyes *Witneſſes, who they be.*

Vpon that my Lady *Lye*, for the iuſtifying thereof, preſents theſe for Witneſſes; *Idleneſſe*, her Treaſurer; *Flattery*, her principall follower, and chiefe Attendant on her Perſon; *Vice* her Chamberlaine; And *Wily-beguile-you*, one of her maides of Honour, together with diuers other of her ſeruants. And that ſhe might conuince him the better, ſhe commanded *Intereſt*, mine Hoſts Sonne, and *Couetouſneſſe*, his Wife, to be brought forth before him: All which auouched to his face, that it was ſo.

Wit *complaines of his wrong.*

Wit ſeeing himſelfe in this ſtreight, did rend the ayre with his Exclamations, calling vpon the heauens, that they would make the Truth knowne; for they had not only deny'd him that which they ow'd him; but they demaunded that of him, which he ow'd them not.

Truth *ſpeakes in fauour of* Wit.

Truth, ſeeing him thus afflicted, as being one that euer wiſh't him well, came to him, and told him; My friend *Wit*, you haue reaſon on your ſide, but I know not how to helpe thee; for ſhe that denies this debt, is the Lady *Lye*, and here is no body on your part but my ſelfe, and all the ſeruice that I am able to doe you, is; to declare my ſelfe for you, as I doe.

The Lady Lye *giues ſentence on* Wits *ſide, but condemnes* Truth *in the charges.*

The Lady *Lye* was ſo ſtartled, and ſo abaſht at this her boldneſſe, that ſhe commanded her Miniſters, that *Wit* ſhould be pay'd, but with *Truths* wealth; which was accordingly done. And ſo they ſet forward, taking vp, as they went along, Innes and other lodgings, as ſuch kinde of people vſe to doe, letting no place ſcape, where they did not purloine and ſteale. For one wicked Villaine is commonly the hangman to another. And euermore, (take it for a generall rule) one thiefe, one blaſphemer, one ruffian, and one damn'd fellow, ends his life by the hands of one that is as bad as himſelfe: And theſe are a kinde of great Fiſhes, which feed vpon the leſſer Frie.

Murmuration.

They arriued afterwards at a place, whereof *Murmuration* was Miſtreſſe, a great friend to the Lady *Lye*, who came forth to meet her, cauſing all the great Perſons of her Kingdome, and her owne priuate ſeruants, to lead on the way afore. Amongſt the which went *Pride, Trecherie, Deceit, Gluttony, Ingratitude, Malice, Hatred, Negligence, Sloth, Obſtinacie, Reuenge, Enuie, Iniurie, Folly, Vain-glory, Madneſſe, Selfe-will*, beſides other her familiar friends and acquaintance. She inuited her to be her Gueſt, and that ſhe would be pleaſed to make her Palace her Inne, and with that freeneſſe, as if it were her owne. The Lady *Lye* accepted of her kindeneſſe, but with this condition, that ſhe might only haue the vſe of her lodgings, and in all the reſt, to be at her owne charge. *Murmuration* was very willing to haue ſhowne her greatneſſe, and withall to haue giuen her the beſt entertainment ſhe could; but becauſe it was *Lyes* pleaſure to haue it otherwiſe, ſhe reſted contented, and thanked her that ſhe would be pleaſed to doe her houſe that grace, which ſhe eſteemed as a great fauour; and ſo without any farther reply on either part, they went hand in hand together to the Palace. *Solicitude*, who was Steward; and *Inconſtancie* the Caterer, made prouiſion of victuals; the fame whereof was ſo great, that many came from all the bordering places thereabouts, with a world of all ſorts of dainties, and whatſoeuer elſe was neceſſarie for the ſetting forth of ſo great a Feaſt; all which was taken vp, without any hucking or ſticking vpon the price; Looke what they askt, that they were agreed withall to haue. But after dinner, when they were to depart, and goe their wayes, the Owners of theſe things demanded money for what they had ſold. The Treaſurer ſaid, that hee ow'd them nothing; and the

Murmurations *followers, who they be.*

The Lady Lye *dines at her houſe, and vpon what condition.*

Solicitude, *Steward of the houſe:* Inconſtancie, *the Caterer.*

Caterer,

Caterer, that hee had payd them all. Whereupon there was great ſtirre, and much adoe; inſomuch that the Lady *Lye* way faine to come foorth her ſelfe amongſt them, and ſaid vnto them; My friends, what is it you vvould haue? Are you mad? or what's the matter with you? Sure you are either out of your wits, or I doe not well vnderſtand my ſelfe. You are all of you payd alreadie for whatſoeuer you brought hither; and I my ſelfe ſaw with mine own eyes, when your moneys were payd you before *Truths* face, and in her preſence. Let her ſpeake, if ſhe may be taken for a witneſſe, whether it be ſo or no: I will be content to be tryde by her. They going then to ſeeke out *Truth*, to decide this difference, and to award what was to be done in this buſineſſe; ſhe feigned herſelfe to bee aſleepe. They call'd aloud vnto her. But ſhee bethinking her ſelfe, how ill ſhe had been dealt withall before, was in a doubt what ſhee ſhould doe: at laſt ſhe reſolued with her ſelfe to feigne her ſelfe dumbe, and had loſt her ſpeech, that ſhe might not pay for that, which others had bought, and were her profeſſed enemies: Whereupon ſhe hath continued that cuſtome euer ſince; And now truth is growne dumbe, for that ſhe had pay'd ſo ſoundly for not being mute before. And therefore hee that ſpeakes the *Truth*, let him pay for't by my conſent. For as the world now goes, hee is worthy ſo to doe.

Lyes *ſhift, that ſhe may not pay what ſhe owes.*

Truth *becomes dumbe, and the cauſe why.*

But it ſeemeth vnto me (as I haue painted it in mine Imagination) that *Truth* and *Lying* are like the ſtring, and the Wreſt or Peg in ſome Inſtrument. The ſtring hath a delicate ſound, ſweet, and pleaſing to the eare; But the Peg doth skreeke, ſqueake, and creake like a Cart-wheele, and can hardly be turn'd and wreſted. The ſtring gently yeelds, willingly ſtretching & inlarging it ſelfe, till you haue ſtrained it to your liking; But the Peg goes ſtill twirling and turning, being wrung, wrinched, and pinch't vpon by the ſtring. Iuſt ſo ſtands the caſe, for all the world, betwixt *Truth* and *Lying*. *Truth* is the Peg, and *Lying* the ſtring: Well may a *Lye* goe working and winding it ſelfe vpon *Truth*, which is the Peg, and leaue ſome print, or ſigne therein, making it to ſound harſh & vntuneable to the eare, but in the end, it goes (although with ſome difficulty) turning and winding a *Lye* ſo long, till *Truth* remaine whole and ſound, like the Peg; and *Lying* crack't and broken, like the String.

Truth *and* Lying *how compared.*

If I had treated *Truth*, all thoſe torments, affronts, and afflictions which I had runne thorow and indured, could not in the end but haue ſet me ſafe in ſome one good Port or other, and haue brought me with ioy to the fortunate Ilands. But the whole courſe of my life, was lying, coozenage, and roguerie, and ſoe like the ſtring of an Inſtrument, when it came to be put in tune, it could not indure any the leaſt ſtraining, and ſo preſently brake, it was not able (I ſay) to reſiſt and withſtand *Truthes* ſtretching hand, but went ſtill turning and twirling, from one miſchiefe to another, and from one euill into a worſe. So one Deepe calleth vp another, and one Waue comes head-longly tumbling in vpon the necke of his fellow.

Guzmans *courſe of life, what it was.*

The Pin is now turn'd, and I am raiſ'd vp to be a Page, God grant I may come downe no lower. That thing which receiueth violence and is ſtrained to a courſe contrary to its nature, it is impoſsible, but it muſt reuert and returne to it's center, be it low, or be it high; for that is the place, vvhich it doeth naturally affect and deſire. They tooke mee from the height of my glory, and brought me downe ſo lowe as to ſerue, which (being ſo oppoſite as it was to my diſpoſition) you ſhall ſee how long I continued in that courſe.

Guzman *turned Page.*

Hee that walkes too faſt, will be quickly weary; And to paſſe ſo ſuddenly from one extreme to another, as it cannot be done with ſafetie, ſo is it conſerued with difficultie. If a Tree take not deepe rooting, it will neuer beare any fruit, but quickly dries and withers away; So he that is newly put into an Office, cannot ſuddenly take any deepe rooting; and ſay hee ſhould be ſettled therin ſome yeeres, he will hardly thriue in a ſtrange ſoyle, that doth not ſort

Nullum violentum diuturnum.

ſort with his nature, and ſo will proue in the end as vnprofitable to himſelfe as vnfruitfull to others. It was too great a leape, to riſe from a *Picaro*, to be a Page, (though in a manner they are correlatiues, and haue a kinde of relation one to another, only their habit doth difference and diſtinguiſh them) and I could not chooſe but grieue, as oft as I thought vpon it. That which was common vvith others, fell out quite contrary with mee. For it is ſaid, *Que las honras, quanto mas creçen, mas hambre ponen.* That the more honour a man has, the more he deſires. But I was ſo farre from that liking, that it vvas rather to mee a loathing. Such high places did not pleaſe me; Thoſe that I had profeſt, thoſe were for mee. *Cada vno, en lo que ſe cria.* Let euery man betake himſelfe to that, wherein he hath beene traind and bred vp. Is it fit (thinke you) to take the fiſh out of the water, and to breed Peacocks therein? To put an Oxe to fly, and an Eagle to plough? To feede a Horſe vvith ſand? To ſup a Falcon with ſtraw? And to take from a man his Riſibilitie (to ſpeake like a Logician) and facultie of laughing? I was bred vp among the Fleſh-pots of Egypt; my Center vvas a good victualing houſe; my Circle, a good honeſt Tauerne; and my end, Vice; vvhereunto I did bend amaine; In that I tooke pleaſure, that was health and life to me; and vvhat was contrarie to that, I tooke no ioy in it, it vvas not for me, nor vvas I willing to make it mine.

Prouerb.

Prouerb.

What Guzman *did whilſt he was a Page.*

My mouth was now daintily fed; my backe delicately clad; my eyes ſwolne with too much ſleepe; my hands (for want of worke) as ſoft as ſilke; my belly, (vvith too much pampering) as hard brac't as any Drumme; my buttocks brawny, and thicke-skin'd with too much ſitting; and my chaps (like a Monkies) nimbly walking on both ſides, vvhen I was at my meat. Tell me, hovv was it poſsible for me to content my ſelfe; how indure to be put to a ſet Penſion, to ſtay waiting all day long at a doore, at nights to ſtand with a Torch in my hand, leaning againſt a wall, and ſtanding vpon one legge like a Crane, till it be almoſt day-breake? Sometimes, (if not for the moſt part) ſupper-leſſe, but frozen (I am ſure) with cold, expecting the Viſits that goe, out and come in, being like a Ladder for others to goe vp and down; or like a Smiths paire of Bellowes, aſcending, and deſcending, to beare others company, waiting vpon my Lords Caroche early and late; not onely at ſome ſet ſeaſons and certaine times, but at all houres both of day and night, being myred in the Winter vvith durt; and choaked in the Summer vvith duſt; holding a Trencher betweene my Thumbs at meales; my belly growing leane and lanke through a longing deſire, feeding on the beſt diſhes with my eyes, and wiſhing in my ſoule, that euery daintymorſell at the boord, had been meat for my mouth. Beſides, going vpon one meſſage, and returning with another, tyring out my legges, and wearing out my ſhooes, and being allowed but euery moneth a paire, vve were forced to goe fifteene dayes of the thirty bare-foote. Theſe are the things, that yeerely paſſe from the firſt of *Ianuary*, to the laſt of *December*. And he, who at the end thereof ſhould aske vs: How haue you thriu'd this yeere? What haue you got?

Pages gettings, what they be.

The anſwer is at hand, Sir, I reſt vpon my Lords loue and fauour, I referre my ſelfe to his diſcretion and goodnes. I eate of his meat, and drinke of his drinke; in Winter feeding on that which is cold; in Summer, that which is hot. And what I haue in that kinde, is but a poore pittance, and that little none of the beſt, and commonly ſome-what of the lateſt, that a man were as good goe without it. I weare what cloathes he giues me, ſuch as you ſee; as a Liuery rather of my ſeruitude, then of deuotion to cloath mee; not giuen me to keepe me warme, but to doe my Lord honour: And thoſe too muſt be made to their minde, and our coſt. So that our money payes for it, and they chooſe the colours.

The clocke of a Pages ſtomake, muſt goe ſtill an houer after his Maſters.

Our greater gaines did conſiſt in cold fare, for there was not one of vs that could

could finger a full Trencher: ſcraps, and picking of their teeth, wee had in ſome aboundance, and with theſe wee intertained our ſelues, and the like poore Relicks that they left, and ſome refuſe fruits, that were not worth the eating, and ſuch things as theſe, or worſe, were all the fruits of our labours.

When the winde blew freſh, and that wee had got a matter of ſome ten or twelue (a) *Quartes*, which with vs was a great ſumme, we raiſ'd this money out of ſo many drops and flakes of Waxe, which wee tooke off from our Torches, which we ſold to ſome old Cobler or other. Hee amongſt vs that could get vp a little ſtocke, that were worth any thing, though it were neuer ſo ſmall, this man had a ſufficient Patrimony, and did great things with it, he might buy him a penny-paſty at the Cookes, and other the like odde kinde of iunkets; but if he were taken in the manner, he was ſure to be whipt for his labour. This was his iudgement. Onely it was permitted vnto vs to ſteale. I ſay (if we had ſtolne) it was held the leſſe euill of the two. For if it had beene permitted, and that we might haue beene ſuffered ſo to doe, I would ſo cunningly haue imployd my wits in that kinde, that I would in a ſhort time haue beene able to ſet vp a Chandlers ſhop. But if I did make benefit of mine owne Torch, or filch now and then from my fellowes ſome of theirs, that was all that I did. But they were ſo baſe, and ſo crafty withall, that I neuer ſaw them buſie themſelues about any other thing, being more deſirous to loſe their meat, then that; for victuals are conſumed in the belly, and can not afterwards be ſold to profit; and yet for theſe things too, they had a thouſand ſhifts and rogueries.

(a) *A matter of ſome eight pence, or nine pence.*

For I ſaw one of them once take a Hony-combe from the table, and preſently wrapt it in his Handkerchiefe, and clapt it into his Pocket. But becauſe he waited at the table, and for that he could not carry it ſo ſpeedily as he would haue done to the Hauen of Safety, nor land it in ſo good a place as he deſired, it hapned that the heat of the weather, and the warmth of his pocket, melted the Honey, which in great haſte came trickling downe his Breeches, and dropt out at his knees. My Lord ſpide it, as he ſate at Table, who could ſcarce forbeare laughing; at laſt, to make himſelfe merry, he call'd him vnto him, and commanded him to put downe his Hoſe. The Page did ſo. And when his hands came to touch vpon the Honey, it clung faſt to his fingers ends, whereat they fell a laughing, and he went away aſhamed. But he had ſowre ſauce to his ſweet meat; for beſides that he neuer taſted of the Honey, hee was ſo ſoundly laſht, that his breech dropt Waxe, as faſt as the Combe did Honey. Which misfortune ſhould neuer haue befalne me, for I was perfect in all kind of roguerie, and would neuer haue beene to ſeeke of ſome ſlight or other for cleanely conueyance. And that my ſword might not ruſt in my ſcabberd, but that I might ſtill keepe my hand in vre, I was euermore a practiſing vpon ſome toyes and trifles, petty things, not worth the talking, onely to ſet my fellowes wits aworke, and to giue them a bone to gnaw vpon.

A Page ſteales a Hony-Combe, waiting at table; The Story of it, and his puniſhment.

The Diuell (I thinke) brought Fooles and Block-heads to the Court, who let euery good morſell ſlip beſides their mouthes: a troubleſome and wearieſome kinde of people to treat withall, vnfit for the managing of buſineſſe; inſupportable in their carriage, and tedious in their conuerſation. A man ſhould be like to a good Horſe, or a good Greyhound, vpon all occaſions to take his carreere, and to make his courſe; and moreouer hee muſt carry himſelfe in a coole and quiet manner.

Fooliſh Pages, not fit for Court.

There were Pages good ſtore; but I muſt tell you, that the moſt of them, nay, I will inlarge my ſpeech a little more, and ſay; That they were all Chips of one and the ſame blocke, a company of beetle-heads, dull-ſpirited fellowes, that had no wherry in them, not onely when they were in their Lords preſence; but likewiſe, when they were out of his ſight. They were as ſlow in

executing his will, as they were lazie in getting vp from their beds; they were idle, retchleſſe, careleſſe, all ſet vpon loytering, exerciſing neither their bodies, nor their braines, which made mee the more willing to play the Wagge with them, and for my better paſtime, to put one pretty tricke or other vpon them.

I did ſtore my ſelfe with Stockins, Garters, Bands, Hats, Handkerchiefes, Poynts, Cuffes, Shooes, and whatſoeuer I could rape or wring from them, which I hid betweene the Straw of one of my fellowes beds, becauſe, if any ſearch were made, they ſhould not finde them in mine. I altered the propertie of theſe things in an inſtant, they neuer lay long by me, I would chop them for old iron, rather then bee troubled with the keeping of them. It behooued them to looke vvell about them, and to ſee that they had all ſafe and ſure vnder locke and key, for if they ſhould careleſſely leaue any thing abroad, thoſe eyes that found it gone, did neuer ſee it returne againe.

Many of theſe waggiſh parts I plaid, which were but tricks of youth, and nothing elſe. But I fell afterwards into a fault, which I would haue ſworne of all others (ſo farre was it from my thought) I ſhould neuer haue offended in. It was a licoriſh ſinne, euen the ſinne of Gluttony. Which I doe not know, whether it proceeded from my eating by meaſure (as being ſtinted) or whether that my longing did prouoke and ſtirre vp my appetite? or whether it were now muing time with mee, and that I was to change my old feathers, and get me new; for they ſay, that men, while they liue heere in this world, doe at certaine times and ſeaſons, (as other creatures ſhead their haires, and recouer new coats) change and alter their manners and conditions.

I was now growne ſo licoriſh, and ſo ſharpe-ſet vpon ſweet meats, (for the pleaſant taſte they had, while they paſſed downe my throat) that neuer any blind man was halfe ſo forward to goe repeating his Letanies, and other his ſet prayers, from doore to doore, to get an Almes, as I was to pleaſe my palate: And looke whatſoeuer came within the (*a*) reach of mine eyes, were it as farre as they could ken, and ſafe inough (as it might be ſuppoſed) from catching, yet could it not eſcape my Eagles-talons.

And as the Hart, with his breathing, drawes your Snakes out of the bowels of the earth: So I, if I could but once come to ſet mine eyes vpon ſuch, or ſuch a dainty, it was ſure mine owne, they rendred themſelues at firſt into my hands; my hands, they turn'd them ouer to my mouth; and my mouth committed them cloſe priſoners to my belly, where theſe ſweets remained, till they were no longer ſweet.

My Lord Cardinall had a great Cheſt (which kinde of Cheſts are much vſed in *Italy*) of white Pine; and I haue likewiſe ſeene good ſtore of them in *Spaine*, which they vſually bring from thence, ſtuft with Merchandize, but eſpecially with glaſſes, and earthen cups and diſhes, the better to keepe them from breaking.

This Cheſt ſtood in a with-drawing Chamber, for to *regalar*, and cheere himſelfe withall, being full of diuers ſorts of Conſerues; there, I ſay, were your dry Suckets delicately candied, your (*b*) *Bergamota* Peare of (*c*) *Aranxues*, your *Genoa* Cherry, your Melon of *Granada*, your *Seuillian* Cytrons, your Oranges, and Pome-Citrons of *Plaſencia*, your Lemons of *Murçia*, your pretty little Cucumbers of *Valençia*, your budds of the Ilands, your (*d*) *Berengenas* of *Toledo*, your (*e*) *Orejones* of *Aragon*, your *Potatas* of *Malaga*: your Pippens, Parſneps, Carrets, Pompeons, beſides a thouſand ſeuerall ſorts of Comfits, and an infinit number more of ſundry different kinds of Sweet-meats, which did diſquiet my ſpirit within me, not ſuffering my ſoule to take any reſt.

As

Guzmans *tricks being a Page.*

Guzman *hath a licoriſh tooth.*

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is* Columbrar. *To diſcerne a thing a farre off, which can hardly be perceiued what it is. It ſeemeth to be borrowed from the Latine word* Collimare. Quod propriũ eſt oculorum, cùm eos in angulum retorquentes, obliquè aliquid aſpicimus, penituſque in rem aliquam defigimus, quemadmodum Sagittarij ſolent, cùm aliquid ſibi addictum deſignant.

(*b*) *A Peare of a delicate taſte, brought from the City of* Bergamo *in* Italy, *whence it hath the name.*

(*c*) *A garden of great both circuit, and pleaſure, full of all ſorts of fruits, ſome few Leagues from* Madrid; *It is the Kings garden.*

(*d*) *A kinde of fruit growing on the ground like a Melon. Alſo they are called* Amoris poma. *Loue-Apples, becauſe they prouoke a man to Luſt.* Vid. Couarru. Ver. Berengena.

(*e*) *A kinde of dryed Peaches, which ſteeped ſome foure and twenty houres in wine, are good meat.*

As often as he made any Colation, or did eate any of theſe things, he gaue me the Key, himſelfe ſtanding by, while I tooke them out, neuer truſting mee with them alone by my ſelfe.

This diſtruſt of his, begot anger in me; and this anger, a deſire of reuenge. This (though I were broad awake) did I ſtill dreame on. I thought with my ſelfe (God forgiue me for it) how I might poſsibly come to haue a fling at this Cheſt, and open this Myne, which was more precious vnto me, then all the gold in the *Indies*.

I told you already, that the Cheſt was a very great one, beeing to my ſeeming two yards and a halfe in length, one in depth, and another in breadth: it was as white (if not more) then any Paper; the Barres and all the reſt of the Iron-worke about it, as ſmall as your fineſt threds of Cambricke, curiouſly wrought, ſmooth and neatly poliſhed, ſtrengthened with good ſtrong plates at the corners, ſet with ſtuds very handſomely; the Locke ſtood in the midſt, there being but one Key to open to this ſweet Paradiſe, and that was in my Lords cuſtodie. If thou know'ſt what it is to ſteale, or haſt euer heard tell of it; or would'ſt faine learne how to rob a Cheſt, and to take what thou wilt out of it, without either falſifying of a Key, ripping open of a Locke, taking off the Hindges, or breaking vp the Boards; Liſten but to me, and I will tell thee how it may be done.

When it was my turne to waite, and that there were any Viſits, or other neceſſarie buſineſſes at home, whoſe preſent being in action, might promiſe me ſecuritie; I had certaine Iron tooles in a readineſſe, which I had prepared of purpoſe, with the helpe whereof I did by little and little heaue vp the lid of the Cheſt, till I could thruſt in a pretty little wedge of wood, and then heauing it vp a little more, I did put in a round ſticke, about the bigneſſe of the head of a reaſonable good big Hammer, and this I went wreſting in by degrees, turning and winding it faire and ſoftly towards the locke, whereunto, the neerer and neerer ſtill that it grew, the more and the more did it ſtill heaue vp my corner, ſo that being (as I was) but a Youth, and hauing a ſlender hand, and a ſmall arme, I tooke out ſuch Sweet-meats, as I had moſt minde vnto, wherewith I fill'd my pockets as full as euer I could ſtuffe them. But when I could not reach now and then to thoſe that were farther off, that I might meet at laſt with this their contumacie and rebellion, I did clap vpon the end of a Cane, or ſome little ſticke, two Pinn's, one hauing a ſharpe point, and the other made crooked like a hooke, and by the helpe of theſe two, I brought them to their due obedience.

Guzman *ſteales his Lords ſweet-meates.*

And thus I became Lord and Maſter of what-ſoeuer was within the Cheſt, without the helpe of any key. In which theft, I carried my ſelfe ſo cunningly, that though I had ſtolne much, yet there was nothing found to be miſsing. At laſt I lighted vpon a *Melacotone* of *Caſtile*, which being as faire, and as goodly a one (for it's greatneſſe) as euer I ſaw in all my life, and gilded all ouer, my appetite was much prouoked therewith, it ſeeming to be one intire piece of Gold, when I firſt taſted it: the reliſh whereof (me thinkes) remaineth yet ſtill in my mouth; me thought I neuer taſted any thing better, nor had I euer ſeene the like before.

Now, becauſe this was a knowne Piece, when it was once diſcouered, that this curioſitie was wanting, there was preſently a generall ſuſpition conceiued; but not any the leaſt thought or iealouſie, that it had beene taken out ſo, as indeed it was, but was rather imagined, that it was done by ſome counterfeit key. And this did much trouble my Lord the Cardinall, that he ſhould haue any in his houſe, that ſhould dare to falſifie his locks, eſpecially in ſo priuate and ſecret a roome as this was, which he reſerued for his owne vſe. Whereupon he forthwith called vnto him his principall ſeruants, to the end that he might ſearch out the truth of this buſineſſe. But as good lucke would

haue, it fell out so happily, that all that I had stolne thence, was downe my throat, and thorowly digested, not any the least remembrance thereof remaining any more in my possession. Now my Lord had to his Steward a melancholy Chaplaine, a fellow of an ill concoction, who wisht my Lord, that all his seruants should be call'd together, and afterwards haue them shut vp in one chamber, where they should be thorowly examined, one by one, to see what could be got out of them, and that their chambers likewise be searcht; for such a piece of worke as this could not proceed from any man of reason, but from the lickorish mouth of some of his Pages, or some other his younger boyes about the house, which had a sweet tooth in their head.

Well, we were all lockt vp close, like birds in a cage, but to no end and purpose in the world; for they found vs to be all true ( )blades, not one false one amongst vs all, but according to the right marke, iust and euen to a hayre. This storme was ouer-past with vs, but not my Lords care; For, I can assure you, our Master was wonderfull desirous to come to the true knowledge hereof; And by reason of the great stirre that was made about it, I did refraine for some few daies, till this businesse might be ouer-blowne, and that the mater was in a manner quite forgotten, *y hunieſſe otro aſno verda*; And that I might haue some faire occasion to haue another fling at them.

(a) *In Spain, all your Sword-blades, are of one length, otherwise they be held vnlawfull, and are forfeited to the Iustice. Proverb.*

Well, I durst not for a prettie while after put my hand to the Chest, nor once offer to cast so much as an eye towards it. But that crookednesse, which a tree once taketh in it's tender growth, the bigger it growes, the crookeder it is, waxing still worse and worse; And therefore those Knauish trickes, which I had learned in my youth, were so deepely imprinted in me, that they could not be blotted out. So that I was as well able to liue without them, as without drawing ayre, and fetching of my breath: Especially in those things, whereunto I had beene accustomed from a childe; for I had beene long practised in them, and they pleas'd me passing well, and I tooke such delight and pleasure in them, as in nothing more.

In a word, I must vp into the Saddle againe, though it cost me another fall. I could not choose but goe visit my sweet friends, to see how they did; I got me againe to my old haunt, to see what good game I could finde.

One day then amongst the rest, when my Master was at play, I thought with my selfe, that my master could not (would he neuer so faine shift them off) but keepe those Cardinals companie, that were come in kindenesse to see him. This Chest stood in a by-roome, within his bed-Chamber, much after the manner of a Closet.

Now, I had no sooner trust vp my doublet, and tuckt vp the sleeue of my shirt, and thrust in mine arme as farre I could reach, but my Lord had list to make water. Whereupon he rose vp, and came into his Chamber, and not finding any of his Pages there, he went and tooke the Vrinal himselfe, which stood at his beds head, and whilest he was making water, it was my ill hap to heare him: which sudden and vnexpected accident did so startle me, and affright me, that going about to get out mine arme quickly (that I might not be taken in the manner) making (as it seemed) more haste then good speed, my round Rouler fel rumbling on the floore, the Chest, that presently shuts it selfe vpon me, while mine arme, like a Sparrow in a Pit-fall, or a Mouse in a Trap, is taken prisoner betwixt the locke and the lid, where it was held too fast to get forth in haste. At the noyse of the fall, my Lord askt, Who's there? I could doe no lesse then make answer to his call, but the Diuell a foot that I could stirre to come forth vnto him. Thereupon he comes in, finding me vpon my knees, stealing the Hony-combes out of his Hiue. He demanded of me, what I made there? I confest the whole matter how it was, and without any more adoe (for I saw there was no fence for it) I told him the whole truth of the businesse. But when he saw how prettily I was taken, the more he look't

vpon

vpon me, the more desire he had to laugh; and to make his mirth the fuller, he call'd to those, that were in the next roome at play, that they likewise might come & see, how the bird hung by the wing, & could not get loose. When they saw how I was caught, they all fell a laughing, as though their hearts would haue burst for want of breath; yet had they so much left at last, as to intreat his Lordship, that this fault might be forgiuen me, as being the first that I had offended him in; & the rather, for that it is giuen to al Youth, to haue a likorish tooth. My Lord stood off, and would by no meanes be brought to yeeld; no intreatie would serue the turne, I must be whipt, there was no remedie, but I must be brought to the blocke.

Well, when they saw they could not procure my pardon, then they grew to a new Consultation, touching the number of the stripes; whereon they were so long a deuising, as if it had beene a thing contained in the Decretals, or some Pontificiall Act, that they had seriously sate on. In the end, the number concluded on in this Conclaue of Cardinals, was twelue, a full doozen I was to haue, neither more nor lesse. And the care of this paiment was committed to Sir *Nicholas*, my Lords Secretary, my mortall enemie, who presently carried me away to his Chamber, and layd them on so soundly, and with so good a will, that for a fortnight after I was not able to sit vpon my breech; but he did not goe so cleare away with this businesse as he thought he should, for it was not long e're I did cry quittance with him, and returned this payment seuen-fold into his owne bosome; so that he had no great cause, by that time I had done with him, to brag of his bargaine. And that I may not delay you any longer, this tricke anon after I put vpon him.

My gentleman was much troubled with (*a*) *Mosquitos*, which did so persecute him, that he could not sleepe for them, they did so disquiet and torment him; All *Rome* did swarme with them, and in our house we had reasonable good store.

Whereupon, (hearing him complaine much of them, and how hee was bitten and vexed by them) I told him I would giue him a remedy, which we did vse in *Spaine*, wherewithall to destroy this troublesome Vermine. Hee thankt me for it, and intreated me very earnestly, that I would doe him the kindenesse to giue it him. I told him, that he should get him a good bundle of (*b*) *Petroselinum*, and hauing steept it well in good Wine-Vineger, hee should put it at his beds head, to the smell whereof all the *Mosquitos* would come; whereupon, as soone as euer they lighted, they would presently fall downe dead. He beleeued me, and presently puts it in practice. But when he was gone to bed, and had laid himselfe downe to sleepe, such a swarme of these buzzing busie Flyes came flying about his eares all the night long, and did so plague and torment him, as if they had pull'd out his eyes with Pincers, and held him by the nose with corne-tongs, as Saint *Dunstan* did the Diuell.

Whil'st they were thus nibbling on his nose, eyes, and all the other parts of his face; he bestow'd a thousand buffets on his cheekes, thinking with those smart claps to kill these angry creatures; and perswading himselfe that they would die at last, when they lighted vpon the receipt, that was prepared for them, he past away the time as well as he could vntill the morning.

But the next night after (because this remedy had not drawne onely those of the house thither; but all the rest of the *Mosquitos*, that were bordering there-about) they did so be-peps him, that not onely his face was most vilely dis-figured therewith, but all the rest of the parts of his body, wher-vnto they were able to reach, (for some they could not come at for the cloathes,) were taken in that excessiue manner, so be-pimpled, and so be-spotted, that hee was forced to forsake his lodging, and to get him gone with all the speed he could.

(*a*) Lat: Culex. *A Gnat, which the Spaniards call by the name of* Mosquito. *They bumme more, and sting and bite worse in that Countrie, then here with vs, leauing knobs and bunches in the face.*

(*b*) *The Spanish words,* Peregil. del nombre. Lat: Petroselinum. Apio minudo, que se cria entre las penas; Deste se haze la sal. sa, que llamamos, Peregil. y se echa en los quisados, y en las ensaladas. *It is taken diuersly, sometimes for Parsley, sometimes for Smallage, and sometimes for Sampiere.* Guzman *eyes quittance with the Secretary.*

The Secretary was madded at the matter, and could haue found in his heart to haue kill'd me.

But my Lord, when hee look't vpon this ill-fauour'd faced knaue, and ſaw that he ſeemed ſo like a Leper (for he had not one free place about him, but like a Leopard ſpotted all ouer) and that I durſt not appeare for feare, but playd leaſt in ſight, he was ready to burſt himſelfe with laughing, when hee heard that I had put this ieſt vpon him.

Wherevpon, commanding me to be called in, when I came, hee askt me, why I had offered the Secretarie ſo great an affront, and had thus playd the wagge with him?

Whereunto I anſwered; Your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to remember that you commanded him to giue me a doozen laſhes about the buſineſſe of the Sweet-meats. His Commiſsion reach't no further. But I remember very well, how he then vſ'd me. For what he gaue me in groſſe, I told out by retayle, one by one, as a matter much importing my *poſteriors*. Beſides, I know it was not your Lordſhips pleaſure (as a thing contrary to your mild and gentle diſpoſition) that they ſhould be the ſtripes of death: but ſuch as my tender yeeres were able to beare. But *el Domine Nicolao*, my Worſhipfull good friend Sir *Nicholas*, that he might not be taxed for a bad pay-maſter, gaue me twenty good ſound laſhes, the laſt being more cruell then the firſt. And ſo hauing exceeded not onely his Commiſsion, but common humanitie, I thought I had iuſt cauſe to cry quittance with him: And thus as you ſee (whereat I hope your Lordſhip will not bee offended) I haue reuenged the Wheales on my breech, by returning them on his face. He was the man that ſtung me, and I got others to ſting him. And I hope, my Lord, this is but one for another. Onely the difference is, that he did proſecute this ſute againſt me in his owne perſon, and I againſt him by my Attourney.

Guzman baniſhed the Cardinals Chamber.

This was paſt ouer as a ieſt, and I heard no more of it. And for that, by reaſon of my former bold attempt, I was not onely beaten, but baniſhed from the ſeruice of his Lordſhips Chamber; I waited in the meane while (during this his diſpleaſure) vpon his Lordſhips Chamberlaine.

CHAPTER VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *reuenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put vpon the Chamberlayne, whom he then attended. He tels a tale of Shame and Feare; What it is, and how painted forth. Hee is receiued againe into the Cardinals ſeruice. And how finely he cooZened him of a Barrell of Conſerues.*

MY new Maſter was a merry pleaſant Gentleman, without any gall or malice in the world, ſet all vpon ſport and good fellowſhip, there was no harme in him in the earth, no fraud, no deceit; but was a man of the old making, an honeſt true *Troiane*, without any tricks or Iiggs, iuſt in his dealings, and as plaine as any Pack-ſtaffe. I knew no fault in him, vnleſſe it were a little choller; hee was ſome-what too touchy, and would (which was the tenderneſſe of his nature) quickly be tinded. Whereunto I may adde his ouer-iealous and ſuſpitious nature, which would make him many times to imagine things to be otherwiſe then they were meant, it beeing the condition of ſuch diſpoſitions to interpret all things to the worſt. Quit him of theſe two qualities, (which were not ouer-much inherent in him) and there was not a fairer condition'd man to conuerſe withall; if you would haue ſought a whole Countrey, you could not haue met with his fellow.

This

This *Bonus Socius* had but poore Parents, to whom he dayly ſent his owne allowance, and now and then he would either dine or ſup with them, as he did the night before that hapned vnto him, which you ſhall heare by and by.

What with his drinking of water, and eating certaine *Taxarinas* (which is a kinde of meat made of Paſte, cut out into ſlices, boyled with the fat of Birds, and ſeaſoned with Pepper) he came not home halfe well, and complaining of the crazineſſe of his ſtomake, he went directly to his Chamber, and got him forthwith to bed.

Now his Lord, miſsing him at ſupper, asked for him: They told him how it was with him. He ſent one of his Gentlemen to viſit him, and to bring him word how he did.

To which meſſage hee made anſwere, that he did not finde himſelfe well, but he hop'd in God, he ſhould be well the next morning, being much comforted that his Lordſhip had been pleaſed ſo farre forth to grace his ſeruant, as to ſend vnto him, to know how hee did, for which fauour hee reſted much bound vnto his Lordſhip, returning the Meſſenger, with all humble thankes, and the beſt remembrance of his loue and ſeruice.

Thus this matter paſſed for the preſent. The morrow after I went to the houſe of his Parents, with ſome prouiſion for their dinner, one of my fellowes remaining with him, who was bruſhing of his cloathes againſt his Maſter ſhould riſe.

The ieſt that the Secretary put vpõ Guzman's Maſter.

He, and the Secretary vſ'd to breake many ieſts one vpon another, and many merry paſſages paſt betweene them; And, becauſe they were harmeleſſe, and without any preiudice to either, my Lord was ſo farre from miſliking them, that he tooke much delight and pleaſure in them.

The Secretarie, as ſoone as he was vp and ready, went towards his Chamber, and meeting with my fellow, who was there ready at hand, waiting when he ſhould be call'd for, askt him; How his Maſter did? He made anſwere, That his Maſter was newly falne aſleepe, and that he had not taken one houres reſt all that night, but that now (God be thanked) he ſlept ſoundly, and well hoped that the worſt was paſt.

It is well (ſaid the Secretarie) and ſeeing it is ſo, its pitie to wake him; but in the meane while, till he be ready to riſe, (which I preſume will not bee with the ſooneſt) I prethee let me intreat thee to goe a little way with a ſeruant of mine, to helpe him to bring home a certain commodity for me, which he cannot well doe alone, and make all the haſte I pray that you can, for I will tarry heere till you come, leſt your Maſter might chance to wake and call for you. The yong Lad did as he deſired, and went his way.

Now the Secretary, taking hold on this occaſion, that his friend had that night ſupt abroad, and was not in his Lordſhips preſence, (as he was wont to be) that he might haue him in his eye, as he ſate at ſupper: deuiſed with himſelfe how he might put ſome pretty ieſt vpon him: and at laſt the conception of his braine, brought forth this merry Babe. He dreſſes me a pretty Youth in womans apparell, attired in the habit of a Curtizan, and places this Boy ſoftly and ſecretly behinde his bed. Now this honeſt man was all this while faſt aſleepe, and the entrance was free and open vnto him, whileſt the Secretarie, for the more ſurety, went in firſt himſelfe without being heard; and afterwards taking this Youth by the hand, led him ſoftly along, and there hee hid himſelfe cloſe behinde the bed, as he had beene before inſtructed, and there he remained quiet, not ſo much as offering once to ſtirre.

This being done, the Secretarie went forth, and going to ſeek out his Lord, he found him a walking, ſaying of ſome prayers to himſelfe, as his maner was; who as ſoone as he ſaw him, his Lordſhip demanded of him, how the Chamberlaine did? Who told him; I inquired thereof but now, and his ſeruant told me, that he hath not been well all this night; And I doe not much mar-

uell

uell at it; for being with him laſt night, before I went to bed to ſee how hee did, I talkt vnto him, but me thought he anſwered me with an ill will. What ayles him, I know not. There is ſomething in it more then ordinarie, what euer it be; farther I cannot informe your Lordſhip.

The Cardinall (who was charitie it ſelfe) preſently therevpon made haſte to viſit him. And when he had ſet himſelfe downe by him, cloſe to his beds head, the Youth comes me out from behinde the Hangings of the bed, and cryes out; Woe is me, moſt wretched and vnfortunate Woman; What ſhall I doe? Pardon me (good Sir) for I muſt be gone, for it is late, and I am afraid my husband will miſſe me. And with that, ſhe went her way, paſsing through the midſt of all the Cardinals ſeruants, attending there vpon his Lordſhip.

The Cardinall, who thought him to be a Saint, began to bleſſe himſelfe, and was much amazed thereat. And the Chamberlaine, he on the other ſide, was as much aſtoniſhed, taking it to haue beene ſome Viſion, or ſtrange Apparition. He firſt croſſes himſelfe, then cryes out, IESVS! The Diuell, the Diuell: and therewith lept out of his bed in his Shirt, running vp and downe the roome, as if he had beene out of his wits.

The Secretarie, and ſome other, that were priuy thereunto, fell a ſmiling, and had much adoe to forbeare laughing out-right; whereby the Cardinall perceiu'd, that it was meerely a ieſt, and they did not ſticke to confeſſe as much, telling the whole truth of the matter, and how it was carried.

But the Chamberleine could not ſtand ſtill, but ranne vp and downe from place to place, not knowing which way to turne himſelfe. And albeit they did all labour to quiet him, yet for all that they could doe, they could not in haſte bring him to himſelfe againe: but was much abaſhed, and mightily aſhamed of this ſcoffe and ieſt that was put vpon him; and the more, for that it was in the preſence of his Lord. But in the end (like a good Courtier) hee diſſembled it as well as hee could. And the Cardinall went away bleſsing himſelfe, and laughed heartily as he went along at this conceited merriment.

Now, by that time I was come backe, all this buſineſſe was ouer-paſt: But I was as ſenſible of it, as if they had giuen me ſo many ſtripes. And the Chamberlaine would with all his heart haue parted with the beſt eye in his head, to be fully reuenged on him.

But when he ſaw, that I looked ſome-what ſad vpon the matter (himſelfe being likewiſe no leſſe heauy) he ſaid vnto me; What thinkeſt thou (*Guzmanillo*) of the wrong that theſe Villaines haue done me? To whom I made anſwere; They haue done well, Sir, and plaid their parts with you very finely, what would you more? But if they had vſ'd me ſo ſcuruily as they haue done you, I verily perſwade my ſelfe, that his *Holineſſe* ſhould not neede to inioyne them any penance for this offence; nor would I leaue it to mine Heires in my laſt Will and Teſtament to repay this debt, but I would quit ſcores with them my ſelfe, and pay them home with aduantage: And ere I had done with them, they ſhould very vvell put that in their eye, which they ſhould get by the reckoning. They all knew me to be a notable Wagge, and that I had an vnhappy wit of mine owne for all kinde of knauery.

But why doe I ſpend the time in talke, when my Lungs are ready to leape out at my throat, and ſwell with fulneſſe of breath, out of the deſire they to haue vent ſomething? But I kept my ſelfe aloofe, and was tender to touch vpon that ſtring, as being loth to aduiſe and counſell him what to doe, not holding it lawfull for a Page to reuenge the iniuries of a graue Miniſter vpon another that is his equall, *Ande cada oueja con ſu pareja*. Like with like doth well. For it is no good ieſting with a mans betters. One was enough for me, which might the better be borne withall, becauſe it was in *cauſa propria*; I was toucht in mine owne perſon, and therefore had the more reaſon to right my ſelfe.

Prouerb. Let euery man meddle with his match.

But

But in this particular, why ſhould I wilfully intangle my ſelfe in that net, whence I ſhould not afterwards be able to eſcape, with leſſe then the laying on of many a ſound laſh; or to come forth with mine eares foure fingers longer then they went in, or with the loſſe of the haire of my head? I therefore held my peace, and kept me quiet. But I, who was naturally of a hot and boyling ſpirit, being often importuned by him, hee making me great offers and large promiſes, giuing me beſides to vnderſtand, that the Cardinall ſhould know, that it was a childe of mine owne begetting, and the workemanſhip of mine owne hands, in defence of him who was then my Maſter, I reſolued with my ſelfe to enter into the Action, and to vndertake this buſineſſe in his behalfe, and to be the ſole Plotter and contriuer thereof my ſelfe. And ſo I let ſome few dayes paſſe ouer, waiting for ſome faire occaſion that might giue warmth for the hatching of this bird.

When I had found (as I thought) a fit time, and that the Ordinary Poſt of *Spaine* was to depart, the Secretary was very buſie about his diſpatches, which required haſte. I bought me then a little Roſin, Frankincenſe, and Maſticke, I pounded it, and ſifted it all together, till I had wrought it fine, and as ſmall as any Meale. The Secretaries ſeruant was that morning buſied about his Maſters cloathes, bruſhing and making of them cleane with all the ſpeed he could. To him goe I, telling him; Doeſt thou heare (honeſt *Iacobo*) I am come to tell thee, that I haue a dainty piece of Bacon on the Spit, it is now ready, Bread I haue likewiſe prouided, there is nothing wanting but Wine, if thou wilt finde that, thou ſhalt ſhare with me; if not, pardon me, for I ſhall ſeeke out one that will. He quickly replyde: No, (good *Guzman*) no, doe not ſo, for I will giue thee Wine to it. Goe to then (quoth I) ſtay thou here; for I will preſently be with both it, and thee.

Guzmans *ieſt that he put vpon the Secretary, to reuenge his Maſters quarrell.*

Whileſt that he went to the (a) *Diſpenſe* for wine, I tooke forth my paper of Powders, & turning the inſide of the Breeches outward, I beſprinkled them with a little wine, which I carried about me in a little round glaſſe Vial, and threw good ſtore of theſe my prepared Powders vpon them: which when I had done according to my minde, I turned the Breeches againe, putting them iuſt in the ſame order they were in, when the Youth left them. He returned anon after with a good Iarre of Wine, and before he could ſpeake vnto me, his Maſter call'd for him to come in, and bring him his cloathes, for he would riſe. He left the Wine with me, and I him within. Where they were both ſo buſie about their Papers, that it was noone before they had diſpatch't, & were ready to come forth. The Secretary was a very hayrie man of his body; & the Powders began to play their part, & to work their effect. The Dog-dayes were then come in, and with the extremitie of thoſe heates, they wrought ſo vpon his body, that from the girdle downwards he was as if it had beene a Seare-cloth of Pitch, which clung ſo cloſe vnto him, and was growne ſo ſtiffe withall, that he was terribly tormented therewith, for euery hayre did giue him ſuch a twinge when he did but moue, or when with ſome ſudden reach they did rend and vnroot themſelues from the fleſh, that the tearing of euery ſeuerall hayre ſeemed vnto him, the plucking out of ſo many eyes out of his head.

(a) Deſpenſa. El lugar, donde ſe ponen las coſas, que ſe traen para comer, y beuer. *Such places properly belong only to Embaſſadours of Princes, or to great Dukes, and not to ordinary perſons.*

When he ſaw in what caſe he was, he began to call his people about him, to know the cauſe thereof, but none of them could tell, nor were able to anſwer to that account, till that the Chamberlaine came in, and told him; Sir, this is *Quid pro quo*; one for another; *Qui moccat, moccabitur.* Harme watch, harme catch.

This, ſir, is call'd, The beating of the Fencer out of his Schoole. You ſee for all your cunning, you may take a knocke as well as another man. It is but blow for blow; you haue giuen me one Venew, and I haue giuen you another. And ſo let vs ſhake hands and be friends.

Well

Well, (to be briefe) the ieſt ended in this, that they were faine to get a paire of Sizars, and goe cutting hayre after hayre, which was worke enough for two of his ſeruants, and yet were forced in the end to vnrip his Breeches, that they might come the better to clip away the hayres.

This Ieſt tooke better then the former, becauſe it was a little tarter then the other, and ſtucke cloſer vnto him. By vertue of this, I receiued the confirmation of my Knauerie, and was taken euer after for the ſame man I was; So that all did ſeeke to flye from my ieſts, as they would flye from the *Plague*.

Guzman *receiued againe into the Cardinals ſeruice.*

Two moneths of my baniſhment were now paſt and gone. After which expiration of time, I returned againe to my former Office; but with the ſame little Modeſtie, and feare of doing euill, as before. You may haply haue heard tell of that tale, when *Modeſtie*, the *Ayre* and the *Water* tooke leaue one of another. Who at their parting, asking where they ſhould meet againe and ſee each other: the *Ayre* ſaid, that they ſhould finde her on the tops of Hills; The *Water*, that they ſhould be ſure of her, in the bowels of the Earth. But *Modeſty*, that ſhe being once gone from them, it was impoſsible to meet with her any more. I haue loſt her, ſhe is quite gone from me, and without any hope of euer returning. But it makes no matter. *A quien le falta, la Villa es ſuya*, Where ſhe is away, the Towne is ours.

A Fable touching Modeſtie.

Proverb.

Who would not haue beene feared with thoſe former proceedings, and fully reſolued with himſelfe neuer to doe the like againe? But what my amendment was, I ſhall deliuer vnto you, and what hapned vnto me thereupon. I had certaine ſweet guts in my belly, and ſo made and accuſtomed thereunto, that thoſe dayes that I miſt of my ſweet-meates, was a taking of water from the ſicke, or Wine from a Drunkard. I would haue ventured the breaking of my necke from the top of (a) *Santo Angelo*, rather then I would not downe to ſteale them, if they were to be had vpon the face of the earth. And hence is it; *Que quien teme la muerte, no goza la vida*. That he that feares Death, does not inioy his life. If feare would haue made me turne coward, I had neuer taſted that ſo ſweet a life. I caſt vp my account, and made this reckning with my ſelfe; Suppoſe they ſhould take me againe with the like? What can they doe vnto me? or what hurt can come of it? I haue alwaies obſerued, that Feare is painted feeble, leane-viſag'd, ſtaring-hayr'd, pale-coloured, ſad-countenanced, heauy, melancholy, naked, fearefull, and not daring either to ſay, or doe that, which it fayne would, and moſt of all deſireth.

(a) *A Caſtle in* Rome.

Proverb.

Feare, how painted: And what manner of thing it is?

Feare is a ſeruill Act, only proper vnto ſlaues; it enterpriſeth nothing; nor doth any thing ſucceed well, that it vndertaketh; and is like vnto a cowardly curre, which knoweth better to barke then to bite. Feare is the ſoules hang-man; and it is but fooliſhneſſe, to feare that which cannot bee auoyded.

In a word, it was impoſsible for me (ſuch was my condition) to abſtaine from being in Action; I was not able to containe my ſelfe. Happen what may happen; Come what will come; all was one to me. I ſaid to my ſelfe; *Audaces fortuna iuuat*; Fortune befriends braue ſpirits. Let the worſt come to the worſt; fall backe, or fall edge, I was ſure to pay for it only in my perſon, and not in my goods, either moueable, or vnmoueable; for it was not Gods will, that I ſhould haue any land of mine owne, whereon to ſettle my ſelfe, and make my certaine abode; nor any *Se-mouentes*, ſuch things as could moue of themſelues, and keep me company, whither-ſoeuer I ſhould goe. My Lord was a great louer of your moyſt Suckets, and ſuch liquid Conſerues, as they vſe to bring from the *Canaries* in little Barrels, or from the Ilands of the *Terçeras*; Which Barrels, when they were emptie, were throwne aſide, and no reckoning made of them, lying here and there in euery corner as good for nothing.

nothing. I had got me one of these, containing about halfe an (a) *Arroba*, which seru'd me in stead of a Trunke, wherein I kept my Cardes, my Dice, Garters, Points, Cuffes, Handkerchiefes, and other things befitting a poore Page.

The Cardinall (as he was sitting one day at dinner,) commanded his Steward, that he should goe amongst the Merchants, and buy him some three or foure (b) *Quintals*, of those that were the newest and the freshest, and but lately brought in. When I heard him say so, I began presently to cast about with my selfe, how I might make my selfe Master of one of these Barrels. The Cloth was taken away, the Cardinall risen, all gone to dinner: and whilest they were busie at their victuals, I got me into my Chamber, and in the twinkling of an eye, before you could well say This, I clapt me within that Barrell which I had, as many old rags, dust, grauell, or whatsoeuer other trash came first to hand, till I had fill'd it brim-full, and thrust it downe as hard as I could for my life to make it lie the closer. This done, on went the head, then the hoopes, making all fast and sure, so that it was now as handsomely fitted vp as heart could wish, and no man that should haue seene it, but would haue sworne (it was so artificially handled) that it had beene newly brought from the Indies stuft with roots of (c) *Tragopogum*, or Goates beard, (as some call it) which is good against poyson.

When I had trimm'd it vp, and made it feat and fit, I let it alone, hauing still an eye, and standing as Sentinell, to watch what successe this proiect of mine might take.

Now, (as good lucke would haue it) behold, about the Euening I did descry two (d) *Azemilas* which came along laden with Conserues, who were no sooner entred within doores, but they were eased presently of their burthen. The Steward commanded the Pages to carry them into the Cardinals lodgings.

I had now a sight of Fortunes foretop, and boldly told her, You shall not goe from me, till I haue taken hold of your hayre. And as I was speaking, I tooke vp one of the Barrels and layd it vpon my shoulders, as the rest of my fellowes did, but lagging a little behinde, giuing them leaue to goe before me: as soone as I was come right ouer against mine owne chamber doore, I suddenly slipt in, when I saw the coast was cleere, and tooke out that other which I bare to my Lords lodging; and so I made my three returnes, giuing a good account of all my lading.

When the last was come vp, I stood very soberly in the Hall, where my Lord Cardinall was, who said vnto me: What thinke you of this fruit (*Guzmanillo?*) you cannot put in your hand here, your Wedges will not serue your turne. I reply'd to that point, & told him; My good Lord; *Donde no valen cunnas, aprouechom vnnas*. Where the Wedge nought preuailes, wee must make vse of our nayles; if one thing will not doe the deed, another must. And though mine arme cannot get in, my hand may, and that's enough for me, I will desire no more.

Very good Sir (said my Lord) but as they are now, neither your arme, nor your hand will stand you in stead.

There lyes the skill, quoth I to my Lord; for if they were otherwise easie to be opened, I would not care a button for them, there is no pleasure in such a purchase. In matters of difficultie, your good wits come to their tryall, which onely shew themselues in things of great importance, and not in driuing a nayle into the wall, or in pulling on of a paire of shooes, things easie to be done, and which naturally offer themselues vnto vs at the first sight.

Saist thou me so (quoth my Lord?) well, I will once set your wits a worke. If within these eight dayes you shall shew your selfe so nimble-witted, as to steale one of these from me, I will bestow it on thee for thy labour, and thou

(a) Arroba, *Is fiue and twentie pound weight. It is an Arabicke word*, Errubun, *which is a fourth part of the Verbe* Rebbea, *To part into foure parts. And according to this, an* Arroba *must be in weight, the fourth part of a hundred. It hath it's root from the Heb*: Rubaat. Quadrum vel quarta pars. In liquidis, est apud Hispanos, octo açumbres. i. 8. ænophororum.

(b) Quintal, *A hundred pound weight.* Centipondium.

(c) *The Spanish word is*, Escorzonera. *This Herbe the Latines call* Riperina. *Of this you may reade at large in* Couarruuias. *Verbe* Escorzonera.

Guzman *plots to play the thiefe. His craftie and cunning carriage.*

(d) Mulo grande, y de hueso para litera, ò carga de repuesto. Couar, p. 108.

thou ſhalt haue another beſides into the bargaine: But if thou ſhalt faile therein, thou ſhalt then binde thy ſelfe to receiue ſuch puniſhment, as ſhall bee agreed vpon.

My Lord, ſaid I; eight dayes, why, eight dayes is a mans life; it is time inough of conſcience. The buſineſſe will be too long a doing; and it may be, by putting it off to ſo large a time, we may either grow cold in the bargaine, or the memory of it dye, and be no more thought vpon.

I accept the fauour offered mee by your Lordſhip, and if to morrow by this time I ſhall not finiſh this buſineſſe, I ſhal willingly reſigne vp my ſelfe into the Secretaries hands, to be puniſhed at his diſcretion; Becauſe I aſſure my ſelfe, that he would willingly haue the tawing of me, that he might reuenge himſelfe vpon me for the late paſſage that I put vpon him to his great griefe: for the ſent of the Pitch is not yet gone from him, nor his haires come againe.

My Lord laught, and ſo did they that were about him. And thus the bargaine was driuen betweene vs for the next day following. But becauſe I was already on the fore-hand, and was well aſſured of the buſineſſe, I could, if I would, haue preſently cleered my ſelfe of this debt, but I was willing to let the bond runne on, till the time it was due.

The boord was couered, and my Lord was now ſet downe to dinner, feeding on ſuch things at firſt, which I brought in, to procure him the better appetite to his meate; and looking me in the face, he ſmilingly ſaid vnto mee, *Guzmanillo*, it is but a little now to night; That come, your time is paſt. What will you giue me now to be freed of your bargain? Maſter *Nicolao* hath rods in piſſe for you, and is prouided for your paiment. And me thinks that he is plotting, how he may be reuenged of thee, and thou, how thou maiſt ſatisfie thy ſelfe vpon him. If I might aduiſe, my counſell ſhould be, that hee ſhould not deale with thee, not ſo much for thy ſake, as his owne. Whereunto I anſwered; I am ſure (my Lord) that my puniſhment is in the Secretaries hands: But I am not yet ſure that the Conſerues are in mine. Yet if I had ſtore of money to ſet vpon this caſt, and had ought to loſe more then the poorenеſſe of my perſon, I would venture it all for this once, becauſe I am very confident of my Chance.

Thus dinner paſt on till the laſt courſe was almoſt ended, and ready to bee taken away; at which time, I went to the Court-cupboord, and taking from thence a Siluer-plate, I fill'd it with the Conſerues of that barrell which I had ſtolne, and therewith I came to the Table, and ſet them downe before his Lordſhip.

When my Lord ſaw, what I had brought him, he bleſt himſelfe, and began to wonder much at the matter, for he himſelfe had the barrels in his owne cuſtodie, they were within his owne lodgings, and there he kept them (as he thought) ſafe inough. He would truſt no body with them, in regard of the bargaine that was driuen betweene vs: He kept the key himſelfe; he bore it alwaies about him. At laſt he cals the Chamberlaine vnto him, and wils him to goe in, and to count the Barrels, and to ſee if any of them were opened, or ill-conditioned.

He went in, and finding them both in number and place, to be iuſt the ſame as at their firſt putting in, he came forth againe, and told his Lordſhip the tale was whole and intire, not a barrell that was miſsing, and that they were ſound and well-conditioned, and not the leaſt ſuſpition to be had (for ought that hee could perceiue) amongſt them all, no not ſo much as the leaſt hayre of his head. Ah, ah, ah, ſaid my Lord, this tricke will not ſerue your turne; this is a very poore one. Thou would'ſt make vs beleeue, that thou haſt taken that out of one of the Barrels, which thou haſt bought with thy money.

With that he turned himſelfe towards the Secretarie, and told him, *Domine Nicolao*, I aſsigne *Guzmanillo* ouer vnto you, to doe what you liſt vvith him,

him, and to punish him as you thinke fit, for that he hath lost his wager.

The Secretary made answere, May it please your Lordship to take the correction of him into your owne hands, and to dispose of him as you please; for I for my part will haue no more to doe with him, I will not come neere him, nor his shadow, I dare not; I haue had too much of him already: And if I should now tickle vpon a new score, and make him pay for the old and this together, I should gaine nothing by the reckoning; for I hold him to bee of that vnhappy and dangerous, both wit and nature, that he would in reuenge conuey the next time a nest of Hornets into my breeches, or some other venemous vermine, that should either poison me, or sting me to death. And therefore if your Lordship put him ouer vnto me, and leaue his punishment to my discretion, I freely absolue him thereof, and am willing to imbrace his friendship.

I haue not as yet (said I) offended in that degree, that I had need of absolution. Where there is no matter to worke vpon, it is needlesse to seeke to introduce a forme. I am as good as my word, and haue performed what I promised; the wager is mine, I haue wonne it. And if this bee not true that I speake, and that I make it not plainly to appeare vnto you, punish me at your pleasure, I aske no fauour at your hands. *De que sirven las palabras, donde ay obras?* What need words, where there are Workes? I say, and say it againe, and that confidently, that this Conserue is of that which was brought in yesterday; and not onely this, but a whole Barrell thereof is now at this present whole and vntoucht in my chamber, saue this little that I haue set before his Lordship. *Prouerb.*

The Cardinall crost himselfe, and wondred how this should be. And vntill dinner was done, and the table taken away, he did nothing else but blesse himselfe with both his hands. And being desirous to bee certified of the truth thereof, he rose vp, and went into his lodging to bee an eye-witnesse of it himselfe. He lookt vpon all the Barrels, whereon he had set certaine markes, he found them faithfull and true, the number full and iust, the key in his owne custody, and could not deuise how this should be.

Herevpon he did verily beleeue, that I had bought a barrell of the very same Conserues, as his were, and said vnto me; *Guzmanillo*, doest not thou thy selfe know, that thou broughtest in thus many hither? count them now, and see if they be not right. I did so; And when I had done telling, I told him; My Lord, heere is the full number. *Pero de lo contado, come el lobo.* But it is like the Shepheards numbring of his Sheepe; whereof, when he hath cast vp his reckoning, he shall finde that the Woolfe hath met with one of them by the way. I see they are well, but not all so well as they should be. And that you may see I tell you no lye, let that be brought hither which is in my Chamber, and let this be opened that stands there, and you shall finde that I haue changed the one for the other. *Prouerb.*

They opened it, whereby they discouered as well the truth, as the vvit I had vsed therein. For the dust, the grauell, the old ragges, and the like trumperie which I had fill'd it withall, did manifest as much.

They remained all, as men amazed, not knowing what to thinke of it, nor being able for their liues, to imagine how this should be brought about. They did all aske me the question, but I would not acquaint any of them with it: But presently besought his Lordship, that he would be pleased to performe his promise with me. He did so. So that I had that and one more, which vvere two in the whole.

And because they should know that I carried a Noble minde, as it was deliuered to me with the one hand, so I gaue it with another to my fellow-Pages, who diuided it amongst them. And howbeit my Lord was some-what offended at the fineneſſe of my theft, yet he did much more wonder at my liberalitie,

litie, and thought the better of me for this my free diſpoſition. He was much afrayd of theſe cunning and ſubtill tricks of mine, and queſtionleſſe would haue then put me away, but that he was ſo good and holy a man; and therefore conſidered with himſelfe; If I ſhould now caſt off this yong fellow, ſome great mis-fortune will befall him, by reaſon of his miſ-demeanour. Theſe things that he hath done heere in mine owne houſe, are but idle tricks of his youth, and I am ne're a whit the poorer for them. It is leſſe harme that hee ſhould hurt me in a little, then through want, offend others in much. And out of this apprehenſion, he did (the better to diſſemble what was paſt) make of this Vice a Vertue. And it is great wiſedome in any man, when a hurt may be healed, for to cure it; and to remedy thoſe things that may bee remedied: if not, to diſſemble it the beſt he can. He made himſelfe merry with it: And as often as any Princes and great Lords came to viſit him, as occaſion was offered, he would not ſticke to make report thereof vnto them.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charitie: Diſcourſeth of Maſters, kinde, and vnkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conſerues. His exerciſes, and diſtaſtes, being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he vſed at* Primera. *That it is good to know play; but better not to vſe any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals ſeruice. And how proud-ignorance is the cauſe of all euill.*

Charity, and its diuiſion.

HE Ordination of Charitie (howbeit I haue pointed at it heretofore) had its firſt beginning from God. Next in order follows that of Fathers and Mothers, then of children, and after them of ſeruants; who if they be good, are more to be made of, and to be better beloued, then children that are bad. And becauſe my Lord had no children, he did dearely loue thoſe that ſeru'd him, and was very tender ouer them; placing (next after God, and his Image, which is the poore) all his loue vpon them.

The poore are Gods own image. The fruits of Charitie.

He was generally charitable towards all men; as being the firſt fruit of the Holy Ghoſt, and the firſt fire that inflameth mans ſoule. It is the prime good of all other goodneſſe, that flowes from our actions; it is the firſt beginning of a happy ending. It containes in it Faith and Hope; it is the way that leades to Heauen; it is the bond that binds God vnto Man; it is the worker of Miracles; it is the ſcourge of Pride; and the fountaine of Wiſedome.

My Lord did deſire ſo much my amendment, as if his owne had lyen vpon it. He ſought to oblige me vnto him by loue, that he might not affright mee with feare. And for to try, if he could reduce me to a vertuous courſe of life, he did (that he might remoue from me all occaſion of longing) *regalar* me at his owne Table, feeding me from his owne Plate with all the choyſeſt dainties and delicacies, and with all manner of ſweet Meates: there was not the thing that he did eate of, whereof I had not my ſhare, telling mee in gentle tearmes; *Guzmanillo*, I giue thee this, to be at truce with thee, in token of peace and amitie: Behold that I, as well as my Secretarie, will hold no contention with thee. Content thy ſelfe with this morſell, whereby I acknowledge my ſelfe to be thy Vaſſall, beſtowing this vpon thee by way of Tribute. This would he ſmilingly vtter, and with a pleaſing countenance, without reſpect of whoſoeuer ſate at Table with him, were they neuer ſo great perſons, or of what qualitie or condition ſoeuer. Hee was a marueious kinde Gentleman, he treated, and eſteemed his ſeruants well, he fauoured,

Louing Maſters.

and

and lou'd them exceedingly, doing for them as farre as his abilitie would reach, ſo that all of them did loue him with their very heart and ſoule, and did doe him all true and faithfull ſeruice. For without all doubt, the Maſter that reſpecteth his ſeruants, is wel ſerued by thoſe ſeruants: and if he pay them well, they will deſerue their payment: but if he be louing and kinde withall, they adore him as a God. Whereas on the contrary, if a Maſter be proud, a bad Pay-maſter, & vnthankfull to his ſeruants, he ſhall neither haue truth, nor loue from them. They neither ſerue him with feare, nor entertaine him with their loue. He is abhorred, hated, ſcorned, made a common by-word in the Market-place, in the ſtreets, in the Tribunals, and euery publike Aſſembly, diſcredited by all men, and defended by none.

Bad Maſters.

If Maſters did but know, how much it did import them, to haue good and honeſt ſeruants, they would ſpare the meat out of their owne bellies, to beſtow it vpon them; for they are true riches indeed; and hee that hath a good ſeruant, hath a great Iewell. And it is impoſsible, that a ſeruant ſhould be diligent, with that Maſter that is not louing vnto him.

Guzmans other theft of Conſerues, with the ſtory thereof.

There were brought to my Lord from *Genoa* certaine Boxes of Conſerues, very great and large, they were richly gilded, and curiouſly wrought vpon the top, as poſsibly could be deſired, they were freſh and faire to looke to, as being but newly finiſhed; which Boxes vpon the way had taken a little wet. When they were brought before him, it did me good to looke vpon them, and the rather, for that they were made and ſent him by a kinſ-woman of his, who did ordinarily vſe to ſend him ſuch kinde of dainties. I was not in the houſe when they came, and while I was lacking, they entred before my returne into a conſultation, what they ſhould doe with them, and how, and vvhere they were beſt to drie them, that they might haue a ſafe conduct from my perſon, that I might not ſeaze vpon them: And the rather, for they muſt be forced to lay them abroad in the Sunne, which would haue runne ſome danger, if they had clapt them vp cloſe in that (a) *Vrne*, wherein *Iulius Cæſars* aſhes were put. Euery one broached his opinion, but not one good one amongſt them all. My Lord himſelfe lighted vpon one, and ſaid; It matters not much, to ſtudie for a place, where to keepe them ſafe; if we giue the keeping of them to one, that will looke well vnto them, they will that way be ſafe, and no way elſe.

(a) *An* Vrne *is an earthen Pitcher, wherein the Romanes incloſed as in a Coffin the Aſhes of the dead.*

They did all allow of my Lords reaſon; And as ſoone as I came in, his Lordſhip call'd me vnto him, and ſaid; *Guzmanillo*, what were we beſt to doe vvith theſe Conſerues, vvhich are come thus vvet, that vve may preſerue them from being ſpoyl'd? The beſt courſe (my Lord) ſaid I, in my poore opinion, is to eate them preſently.

And durſt thou aduenture (quoth he) to eate them all? I anſwered; It were no great matter ſo to doe, if a man had time enough. But I am not ſo great a glutton, that now at this preſent I dare to venture alone vpon ſo great and honourable a Muſter as is here made before me.

My pleaſure then is (ſaid he) that thou looke vnto them, and keepe a true reckning of them, laying them out euery day abroad in the Sunne. And here is no euaſion for you, for they ſhall be deliuered vnto you by tale, and by tale I will looke you ſhall returne them vnto me. Here you ſee them layd open before you, and how faire and full they be; and if any harme come vnto them, or ought be miſsing, I ſhall eaſily know where the fault lies, and call you to account for it.

I told him, that I was neither maſter of my ſelfe, nor them: I knew not what to doe in this caſe, I was not mine owne man; I had not power ouer my ſelfe; and that I was one of *Eue's* ſonnes; and that being put into ſuch a Paradiſe of Conſerues, the Serpent of the fleſh might tempt me to eate of this forbidden fruit.

His Lordſhip reply'd then againe, and told me; See (ſirrah) that you looke well to your charge; for I will expect, that you giue them me, as I giue them you: I muſt not haue a piece miſsing, neither in number nor in weight, qualitie for qualitie, quantitie for quantitie, all whole and ſound, or elſe you ſhall ſee what will come of it, and therefore I would wiſh you to looke well what you doe, and to vſe your beſt care.

I then made bold to tell him; The Plea (my Lord) that is betweene vs, depends not on this point; this is not the hinge, whereon it hangeth; For to returne them vnto you as they are, without finding any miſsing, or perceiuing any hurt they haue taken, that is a very eaſie thing, I can doe that preſently. But it is another point (my Lord) that I ſtand vpon. What point I pray (ſay's my Lord?) I told him; I put my ſelfe into great perill; for I am priuy to mine owne inclination and weakneſſe, no man ſhould better know mine owne abilitie and ſtrength then my ſelfe, and therefore (to deale plainely with your Lordſhip) if you will haue me to comply with your Lordſhips command, if my life lay on it, I ſhall not be able to hold my hands, I muſt needs taſte of them, if not fill my belly.

My Lord maruelling much at me, Well (quoth he) ſeeing it will be no otherwiſe, I will for once make tryall how diſcreetly you will behaue your ſelfe; I ſhall ſee by this, what manner of man you be. I giue thee therefore free liberty, that thou eate as much as thou haſt a minde to for once, and no more, and that one time, I allow thee to fill thy belly as full as thou wilt thy ſelfe; but with this condition, that thou deliuer them vp afterwards vnto me, without any defect or fault; and in caſe the contrary ſhall appeare, thou ſhalt make me ſatisfaction in ſuch payment, as I ſhall be pleaſed to appoint.

I accepted of the condition of this Obligation; and thereupon they were all deliuered vp into my hands.

The next day following, I layd them out in the Sunne, in an open walke, and amongſt the reſt of theſe ſweet-meates, there was one of the flowers of Oranges and Limons, which offred it ſelfe to my view, it lookt very louingly vpon me, as if it did deſire to be better acquainted with me, and I who was loth to be behinde hand in matter of courteſie, made towards it, tooke it in my hand, & with a little knife that I had about me, looſening thoſe little tacks with which it was faſtened beneath, and heauing it vp daintily by degrees, till I had turn'd it vp-ſide downe, and that the lid lay downward, with that very knife, I tooke out almoſt the one halfe, from forth the bottome of it, returning to make it faſt againe as before, putting in place of the Conſerues ſo much waſte Paper, cut out ſo iuſt to the ſame meaſure and proportion, that no man was able to perceiue it.

My Lord that night being minded to make a collation, I brought to his boord foure of the ſaid Boxes, and asked him when I ſet them downe, whether I had not looked well vnto them? He told me; if the reſt be like vnto theſe, he was well contented with them. Whereupon I brought them all before him, and he was very well pleaſed when he ſaw them, becauſe they were much dryer then they were before, and better conditioned. With that I preſently ſtept aſide, to goe fetch a Plate, and on it I brought him all that I had ſtolne; for in very deed I had not taſted thereof the quantitie of a Nut, hauing only done it for the oſtentation of my wit.

When he lookt vpon it, he ask't me; What's this? I told him; I now deuide with your Lordſhip, part of my theft. He reply'd; I will'd thee, that thou ſhouldſt fill thy ſelfe, and not filch: And therefore now you haue loſt.

I anſwered, I haue neither fill'd my ſelfe with it, nor ſo much as taſted what it is, nor doe I thinke that I haue loſt by doing of this; for this is that, wherewith I meane to fill my belly. Beſides, all that was ſtolne out of the Box, is yet whole, and intire, as you may very well perceiue; but if, becauſe

I haue shew'd my selfe honest, I must suffer for it, which way shall I walke to goe right, if you barre me of the path wherein I ought to tread? My punishment does not trouble me, nor does it grieue me that I haue lost, as long as I am perswaded I haue wonne, howsoeuer I may be ouer-borne. But I will be wiser the next time, and be sure to lose no more vpon the like match.

Nay (*Guzmanillo*) bee not angry (said my Lord) I would not thou shouldst grieue or complaine for this, I confesse I haue done thee wrong, and haue blamed thee without a cause; but I prythee tell me (said hee) out of which of all these Boxes didst thou take this forth? I put forth my hand, and told him; This is it (my Lord) and I shew'd him how and which way I did it.

Hee was well pleased with the subtilnesse of my wit, but hee could haue wisht that I had not had so much fineneſſe in me, for he was afraid, lest one time or other, I would mis-imploy it to my greater hurt. Hee willed me to take the Boxe notwithstanding for my paines, and to carry it away with mee.

Many such things as these came from me; and he tooke pleasure both in them and me, as being sleights of the hand, vsing these iuggling trickes more for sport then harme. If any of my fellowes should chance to fall asleepe, when he should waite and giue attendance; they might the next day goe buy them new shooes and stockings, for (*a*) Flyes of waxe were sure to be their Cocks to wake them. Our exercise, was euery day two houres in the morning, and two in the Euening, to heare our Schoole-master reade vnto vs, of whom I learned (for the time that I studied there) the Latine tongue; which I had reasonably perfect, I had a little Greeke too, and some Hebrew. The rest of that vacant time, which wee had from seruing of our Master (which vvas, God knowes, very little) wee bestowd in reading of bookes, telling of tales, and in gaming. If we went forth a doores at any tine, it was only to coozen the (*b*) *Buñoleros*; and amongst the Cookes our credit was very good for Pye-meate. We would goe a-nights to play the waggs with the Curtizans, and to exercise our wits vpon them; and to sing songs at their doores. And thus did I spend my time, till my beard began to bud.

And howbeit it may seeme perhaps to thee, a life of entertainment; and full of mirth, yet it was to me as if I had beene ty'de to a stake, with a collar of iron about my necke, exposed to shame. All this was as a stinke in my nose; none of these things could content me; night and day I did sigh for the losse of my former delights.

But when I once began to write Man; and was able to girt a Sword to my side, I would haue beene glad of any augmentation of honour, whereby I might haue gained some hope to haue proceeded farther. And I verily perswade my selfe; that if my Actions had deseru'd it; I should not haue wanted the meanes.

But in stead of getting iudgement, and doing things that were vertuous, for to gaine mens good wils, and thereby to binde them vnto me, I fell to gaming, euen to the losse of my cloathes from my backe; and as I was somewhat of the freest, so was I too liberall in my play.

I made it my study, to benefit my selfe by all tricks and cheating deuices, that I could inuent or learne; and especially when I plaid at *Primera*. How often when I went vpon two Cards, would I take three, and conueying fiue now and then into my hand, would set vp my rest vpon the three best? How often would I take the last Card, and clapping it vnderneath, would see whether it were good for me or no, and in an instant looke on the other already seene, and then make my best aduantage of them, which was all one, as if I should haue robb'd a man vpon the high-way? How often would I haue a (*c*) friend sit by me, which should seeme as if he were asleep, and should supply me

(*a*) *The Spanish word is*, Libramiento de çera. *A Flye made of Waxe burning, which Pages put on the shooes of those that sleepe.*

(*b*) *What a* Buñolero *is, I haue margented elsewhere.* Guzmans *exercises being a Page.*
The disasters that Guzman *had, whilest he was a Page.*

Guzmans *tricks at Primera.*
(*c*) *The Spanish word is* Diacono, *which though it properly signifie a Deacon, yet it is taken more largely for any one that ministers helpe to a man.*
Couarruuias verb. Diacono

me with Cards vnder the boord to ſerue my turne? How often had I a Copes-mate that ſtood by, looking vpon the others games, who would tell mee what Cards they went vpon, and what their game was? all which he ſignified vnto me by ſuch ſecret and cunning ſignes, that it was impoſsible for them to finde it out. How often would I ſo ſet and packe the Cards, that I vvould deale to him that playd againſt me two and fifty, and hauing an Ace to helpe me, would make my ſelfe fiue and fifty, or elſe with a fiue incounter foure and fifty, and ſo either winne the Game by one peepe, or by the elder hand?

Now when we were two againſt one, and plaid bootie, and dealt the Cards one to another, how often taking the diſcarding Card, and clapping it on the top, would we play on till we could make our aduantage of it? how by a beck or a nod, did we know how the world went? how to ſhuffle and mixe the Cards ſo, as to make our game ſure? how to ſet ſome priuy marke or ſigne vpon them, whereby to know them? how to know them by the corners, being bigger or leſſe, and a thouſand the like, which wee made good vſe of either by the helpe of a ſtander by that ſhared with vs, or by corrupting him that ſold the Cards, which are ordinarie things? O how many lewd prankes did I play in that kinde? how many rogueries? how many villanies? there was not that cheating or coozening tricke, which I was not acquainted withall, and had at my fingers ends. And as I was perfect in the knowledge of them, ſo did I put them in practiſe when time ſerued. For ſuch is the blindneſſe of play, that thoſe that are crafty and cunning in their gaming, haue a large field wherein to expatiate themſelues, and to ſhew their skill.

And if it might be lawfull (I ſay, lawfull) that as in the Common-wealth, houſes of ſinne are permitted, for the auoiding of greater inconueniences; there were appointed in euery principall Citie or Towne, Maſters of this coozening and cheating Science, of whom, thoſe that are addicted and giuen to play, might be taught and inſtructed, it were very good for the auoiding of deceit, and many a Gentleman would not be ſo eaſily fool'd out of their money and meanes, as now they dayly are. For our Senſualitie ſuffers it ſelfe eaſily to be ouercome by Vice, and that is turn'd to an ill habit, and becomes a bad cuſtome in the end, which at firſt was inuented for a lawfull exereiſe, and to paſſe away the time. And with reaſon may it be called a bad cuſtome, when it ſhall be diſorderly followed, and that men are too much wedded to gaming, altering the true intent and meaning thereof, and putting it out of its right byas.

Gaming, made onely for recreation.

Gaming was firſt of all inuented for the recreation of mans minde, and for the refreſhing of him himſelfe, when he found himſelfe wearied with the troubles and turmoyles which accompany this life; and when it breaketh this rule, and paſſeth beyond its due bounds, it is wickedneſſe, infamy, and theft. For it ſeldome hapneth, that it is not attended with theſe Attributes.

Gaming, to be ſhun'd by Noblemen and Gentlemen; and wherefore?

I ſpeake of thoſe that are profeſt Gameſters, who make their liuing of it, as a man would doe of an Office or a Trade, and make a continuall practiſe of it. Notwithſtanding, I could heartily wiſh, and it is one of my moſt earneſt deſires, that thoſe would leaue it off, and giue ouer this exceſſe of play, which are of the nobler ſort, conſidering the hurt which may inſue thereupon, eſpecially ſeeing that ill is ballanced with good; and that if hee winne, and the other loſe, he is bound to giue the loſer leaue to ſpeake; to indure many bold and intemperate actions; to beare with many indiſcreet both words and deeds, and other ſtrange kinde of geſtures, and vnciuill behauiour, which he is tyde to ſuffer, onely as he is a winner, not as he is a man of honour, who in things of another nature, will reſent the leaſt wrong that is done vnto him. Other things there are of like qualitie with theſe, which I dare not preſume to preſſe any farther, that not onely for them, and thoſe already mentioned,

ned, they ought to abhorre gaming, but euen thoſe houſes and Ordinaries, where Play is maintained.

But being that our appetite is ſo vnbridled, and our naturall inclination there-vnto ſo exorbitant, that it cannot in this kinde altogether containe it ſelfe, it ſhall not be amiſſe, but rather good and fitting, that a yong man ſhould know the Lawes of play, learne the skill thereof, and vnderſtand all the tricks, and cheatings that are vſed therein, that he may perceiue when he meets with a Cony-catcher. And if ſuch cheating companions once begin to loſe, and that their metall melts away from them, let him powre the reſt of his owne moneys into his Bootes, Breeches, Hand-wreſt, Collar, Girdle, Boſome, Sleeues, or any other part about him, whether he can cleanlieſt conuey it, that he may not loſe his money like a beaſt. For beſides the getting of it from him, they will laugh at him when they haue done. One thing I was euer carefull to obſerue; I would neuer ſit downe to play with a little money, nor for a little, nor with that man that would not aduenture to get much, playing my mony freely, without either offering, or taking of wrong.

It is good to know play. And why?

Well, I was ſo wholly giuen to gaming, and ſpent ſo much time therein, that I committed many faults. Nor is it poſsible, that a Gameſter ſhould performe thoſe duties which belong vnto him, much leſſe he that ſerues, and is ty'de to attendance. Neither doe I know that Maſter that will giue bread to that ſeruant that is a Gameſter. For if he manage his Maſters affaires, and haue either moneys of his in his hands, or other his goods committed to his charge, and that he chance to loſe his owne, hee will play then vpon his Maſters purſe, hoping to recouer himſelfe; and if peraduenture hee continue ſtill on the loſing hand, and hath not afterwards wherewithall to pay, hee runnes himſelfe into greater danger then before, thinking that lucke will turne, and ſo come to relieue his loſſes. But ſay, he is not truſted with any thing of his Maſters, nor hath any thing of his to looſe; yet is it not poſsible, that he ſhould aſsiſt at thoſe houres, when he ought to doe him ſeruice, nor will he be in the way to be found, when need ſhall require, as it hapned to my ſelfe.

A Gameſter cannot ſerue and attend his Maſter as he ſhould.

My Lord was greiued thereat to the very ſoule, nothing could preuaile with me, neither admonitions, nor perſwaſions, nor words, nor promiſes, to remoue this euill cuſtome from me. And being one day (in my abſence) with his houſhold-ſeruants about him, he told them, how well he wiſht mee, and the great deſire that he had of my good. And ſeeing that I could not be reclaimed by faire means, his purpoſe was by ſome one deuice or other to bring me to be a reformed man. And the plot was, that by diſcharging me from his ſeruice, and putting me out of his houſe for ſome certaine dayes, it might be, that calling my lewd courſes to minde, and ſeeing mine owne errours in the end, I might còme to a truer feeling of my miſery, and by that meanes bee drawne to amendment of life: yet would he not, that my allowance ſhould be taken from me, leſt for want of meanes, I might through neceſsitie be driuen to doe ſome diſhoneſt act or other. O how ſingular a vertue was this in ſo great a Prince! how worthy of eternall praiſe, & how fit to be imitated by all thoſe, that deſire to be well and truely ſerued! And certainly, it is impoſsible, but that ſeruants (vnleſſe they be ſuch as I was) would be willing to lay down a thouſand liues (if they were Maſters of ſo many) to giue but any the leaſt content to ſuch kinde and louing Maſters.

The Cardinall ſhewes himſelfe a good and louing Maſter.

Well, I was driuen by this meanes to my ſhifts, and wanted meat to put in my mouth. O Lord, let it euer be in my *Letany*, that thou wilt deliuer mee from this euill. Other wants haue ſome trouble with them. But when a man hath a good ſtomake, and wanteth meat, is extreme hungry, and hath not where-withall to fill his Maw; to ſee the houre of eating come, and he to remaine faſting; to paſſe ouer the day from morning to night, and not to finde whereon to feed; theſe (I ſay) are ſuch things, as would make a man doe any thing,

Want of food cauſeth much euill.

thing, be it neuer ſo diſhoneſt; Cloakes, Hats, and all walke then, (though it be but for halfe they are worth, what ſhift ſo euer we make to come by other.

Guzman playes away his cloathes.

This miſerie befell me, and that in a very troubleſome time: For hauing ſpent a whole day and night in play, and hauing loſt all the money that I had, and when that was gone, all my cloathes, hauing nothing left me to couer my nakednesſe, but a poore thin Doublet, and a paire of white linnen Drawers, when I ſaw my ſelfe in this poore taking, I retyred my ſelfe into my Chamber, not daring for ſhame to come abroad.

And albeit I would willingly haue faign'd my ſelfe ſicke, I could not doe it; for my Lord was ſo carefull of his ſeruants health, and that they ſhould haue all things neceſſarie and fitting for them, that hee would preſently haue ſent for Phyſicians to ſee what I ayled. Beſides, I ſaw it was a needleſſe remedy, to vſe any ſuch diſsimulation; for by this time it had paſt from mouth to mouth, how, and in what caſe I was, and what was the cauſe of my griefe.

Now though that I had beene wanting ſo many dayes from the ſeruice of his Table, yet would he ſtill aske and inquire what vvas become of me, and where I was that I did not wait? He could not indure Tale-carriers, nor ſuch as would complaine of their fellowes, and make things worſe then perhaps they were, by mis-reporting of them; he did hate it to the death, to haue his houſe, like your Lawyers Courts, full of clamours, and vntruths; and therefore that they might not grieue or diſquiet him, they would mildly tell him: Hee is heere (Sir) about the houſe, I ſaw him but now, or ſome ſuch like excuſiue anſwere. But this would not ſerue the turne. For now he began ſhrewdly to ſuſpect, leſt ſome mis-fortune had befalne me. And therefore preſsing them hard to acquaint him where I was, and how I ſpent my time, they were forced (for the giuing of his Lordſhip ſatisfaction) to deliuer vnto him the truth of the buſineſſe.

This euill inclination of mine did much afflict his Lordſhip, when he ſaw how diſſolutely, without either feare or ſhame, I proceeded on in my lewd courſes. Whereupon, to put his former proiect in practiſe, he gaue order that I ſhould haue ſome new cloathes made me, and that then they ſhould preſently diſmiſſe me, and rid me out of both his houſe and ſeruice, accordingly as he had formerly ordered the buſineſſe.

Guzman hath new cloathes giuen him, and is turn'd out of doores.

So his Steward cloathed me, and then turn'd me out of doores. Which I tooke in that foule ſcorne (holding it as a due debt, that my Maſter was ſtill bound to keepe and maintaine me, and to beare with all faults) that in a kind of ſullen and dogged faſhion, (ſhewing more ſtomake, then wit) I left the houſe, with a full reſolution neuer, (come what would come) to returne thither againe, of all other places in the world; notwithſtanding that I had receiued many meſſages from the Cardinall, at ſundry times, and by ſeuerall meſſengers, with many goodly offers, and faire promiſes, deliuering vnto me the end why all this was done, and that there was no other drift in it in the world, ſaue onely what ſhould make for mine owne good; thinking by this meanes, when I had champt a little vpon the bit, and taſted what hardneſſe was, and known the loſſe of ſo good a Maſter, I would haue reform'd my manners, reclaim'd my ſelfe from my lewd courſes, and proued afterwards a better ſeruant, then euer I had beene before. They alſo ſignified vnto me, how much his Lordſhip lou'd me, and what he had ſpoken of me in my abſence. But all would not doe; they could neuer get me backe againe. For I was ſtiffe and obſtinate, and too fooliſhly ſelfe-will'd; thinking that I ſhould reuenge my ſelfe in ſo doing; and ſo as I might ſpight them, I did not care how I ſped my ſelfe. I brew'd ill, and bak't worſe; I began in pride, and ended in folly. And what could follow thereupon but my miſerie and ruine, ſeeing that I was vnthankfull for thoſe fauours and benefits, which God had been pleaſed to beſtow vpon me by the hands of that good and holy man my Maſter,

Proud ignorance, and ſelfe-will, much hurteth young men.

Maſter, who had iuſtly giuen me my doome, and pronounced this ſentence of expulſion againſt me. For he that cannot be wonne with good workes, nor moued with faire and gentle words, it is pitie but he ſhould ſmart for it, and that rigour and chaſtiſement ſhould worke that vpon him, which rewards and faire vſage, were not able to effect. I had now quite loſt thoſe little wits that I had, making little or no account of all theſe things, as if I had wanted nothing. How did I ſcorne and contemne thoſe many good things that were done for me, without any why or wherefore, being things beyond the reach of my capacitie, vnbefitting my ſeruice, and altogether vnworthy of me by reaſon of my vnthankfulneſſe? How vnwiſe was I in conſeruing that preſent good, and in ſeeking to increaſe the hope of farther fauours, which vndoubtedly I ſhould haue futurely receiued, if I had but indeuoured to deſerue them? How forgetfull was I of that kindeneſſe, wherewith I had beene cured? How vnmindefull of the care, that was taken about me? How vngratefull to that charity which was vſed towards me? How careleſſe of that diligence, wherewith I was taught? How ſtubbornly proud, againſt that mildeneſſe, wherewith I was admoniſhed? How peruerſe, againſt thoſe ſweet words, wherewith I was perſwaded? How deafe againſt thoſe graue yet louing tearmes, vvherewith I vvas reprehended? How ſurly againſt that patience, by vvhich I was ſupported? How incorrigible againſt that fauour, by vvhich I vvas defended? How rebellious againſt thoſe meanes, vvhich vvere ſought for my good? How vncapable of that good vſage, vvherewith I was treated? How neglectfull in amending thoſe faults, vvhich for my ſake vvere ſo kindely diſſembled? If any of thoſe two, that tooke me for their ſonne, had beene aliue, nay, if they vvere both now abiding here vpon earth, and might returne to their former proſperitie, they could not haue done more for me, or with more loue, or vvould haue borne halfe ſo much vvith my ſo many, and preiudiciall knauiſh prankes, vvhich I did ſo dayly, and ſo diſorderly play, and vvith that liberty and freeneſſe, as if I had not beene in my Lords, or my Fathers houſe, but in mine owne. I vvas more bold in his preſence, then I ſhould haue beene amongſt my equals, and he imitating God in the ſweetneſſe of his diſpoſition, had the patience to beare with me.

Certaine I am, that he that begat me, vvould haue abandoned and abhorred me, ſo vvearie vvould he haue growne of my ill gouernment. But my Lord vvas ſo good a man, that he vvas neuer vveary of me, neuer angry, neuer offended vvith me, and vvould not haue caſt me off (had not I caſt off my ſelfe) becauſe he lou'd me.

O the noble and Princely condition of this worthy Prelate, giuen him by inheritance from that true Father of loue and goodneſſe, that he could be ſo kinde-hearted, in doing ſtill more and more good to ſuch a one as I vvas! He looked ſtill vvhen I ſhould returne vnto him, he tarried for me, a day, a weeke a moneth, a yeere, nay many yeeres; in all which time, he vvas not vvanting to exerciſe his vvorkes of mercy towards me, to the end, that he might leaue me without excuſe: And that touch't at laſt with ſhame of mine owne folly, I might pronounce that ſentence againſt my ſelfe, which the heynouſneſſe of mine offences had deſerued.

But I for all this followed mine owne humour, vvhich vvas the rule by which I directed all my actions: To all that vvas ſaid vnto me, I put on Merchants eares, vvas ſtill deafe to all good counſell, appealing from good aduice, to mine owne fleſh, vvhich being ready ſtill at hand in fauour of my vices, I did vtterly vndoe my ſelfe, by following of her ill counſell. For to execute her ſuggeſtions, I had force enough; to ſeeke out occaſions of ſinne, abilitie ſufficient; to perſeuer in them, an vntyred conſtancie; and in not leauing them, a firmeneſſe not to be remoued. I was as vvell acquainted vvith all manner of Vice, as I vvas a ſtranger to all kinde of Vertue. And to lay the fault

Orejas de mercader. i. *Deafe eares. A Proverb.*

fault vpon Nature, I haue no reaſon for it in the world. For I had no leſſe abilitie for good, then inclination to euill. The fault was mine owne; for ſhee neuer did any thing out of reaſon. Shee was alwaies the Miſtreſſe of truth and modeſtie; ſhe was neuer defectiue in what was fitting, but as ſhee hath beene corrupted ſince through ſinne; and mine were ſo many, that I produced the cauſe of this bad effect, and became mine owne hangman.

CHAPTER X.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of ill Companie; of Hoſpitalitie; of Patience; And how being put out of the Cardinals houſe, he placed himſelfe with the Embaſſadour of France, where he playde ſome Knauiſh prankes. Hee relates a Storie, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he giues an end to the firſt part of his life.*

I Could not (as I told you before) iuſtly complaine; or finde fault with any body but my ſelfe, that my Lord had thus diſmiſt me, and turn'd me out of ſeruice. For the very truth was, he made earneſt ſute (through the importunitie of his ſeruants, who were very inſtant with me) to haue me to come backe againe vnto him; but becauſe my bloud (whoſe heat was not yet allay'd) ſtill boyled in my breſt, and was not come to its wonted cooleneſſe, I did ill conſider mine owne good: or ſhould rather haue ſayd, That I did well, ill, in not conſidering my ill, well.

The converſation of the wicked deſtroyeth the ſoule.

Being thus diſcarded, I wandred vp and downe at mine owne pleaſure, (as my fancie did lead me) thorow the ſtreetes of *Rome*. And becauſe in my proſperity, I had purchaſed ſome friends of mine owne profeſsion, they ſeeing me vn-prouided for, and that I went vp and downe like a Maſterleſſe-hound, here one would inuite me, and there another, howbeit it coſt mee deare; for that meale that is made in ill company, though it giue nouriſhment to the body, yet it filleth the ſoule with ill humours, to its vtter ouerthrow and deſtruction. Nor did thoſe good morſels ſo well ſatisfie hunger, as their ill counſell and lewd conuerſation did vndoe me; Whereof nothing now remaineth, but repentance. For I began then, (and neuer till then) to know in what danger I was, when I ſaw the water was come vp to my chinne, and ready to runne into my mouth.

Vices, come ſtealing in vpon a man, they enter with ſilence, they are a ſmooth ſtill File, that cuts without any noyſe; they are not heard, till they haue wrought mans ruine. They are as eaſie to be receiued, as they are hard to be reiected.

And ſuch kinde of friends as theſe, are thoſe Bellowes, which kindle that flame, which ſets the whole ſoule on fire, and with a little ſparke raiſeth a great blaze. I might very well haue recouered my allowance, and had meate of mine owne to put in my mouth; for the Steward told me, that my Lord had giuen him order, that I ſhould dayly come and fetch it, or ſend for it, as I would my ſelfe. But I was ſo obſtinate, that I would none of it. For I was ſo lewdly giuen, that I had rather indure hunger with ill company, then feed vpon the beſt meat with honeſt and ciuill people. But they quickly payd me home, who firſt gaue me counſell to refuſe my boord-wages, as I did, relying vpon them and their aduice; for they were ſoone weary of helping me any longer, and they did not only not relieue me, but becauſe they would not doe it, they did ſhunne and auoyd me. So that I might ſtarue for any ſuccour that I was to looke for from them.

Touching Hoſpitalitie.

This ſame thing, called Hoſpitality, and entertaining of friends and gueſts, carries

carries a kinde of myſterie with it; I euermore found in his mouth that inuiteth, honie, but in his hands gall; they promiſe liberally, but giue ſparingly; they bid with ioy, but eate with ſorrow. Hee that will bee another mans gueſt, muſt be content to be ordred, as he will haue him; beſides, he muſt be rich and well to paſſe, other-wiſe he ſhall not be welcome; he muſt not tread many ſteps in the houſe, his breech muſt ſcarce warme his Chayre, nor muſt he ſit long at boord, for feare of being too troubleſome. Doe not flatter thy ſelfe, that thou art liberally and freely welcome, becauſe a man giues thee good words, and ſpeakes kindely and louingly vnto thee, and tels thee thou art heartily welcome. For I haue euer obſerued it as a true rule amongſt other the Lawes of *Hoſpitalitie*, that a man may dyet with his kinſman a ſeuen-night, with his elder brother a moneth, with his friend a yeere, and with a bad Father all his life time.

Gueſts, what manner of men they ought to be?

The Lawes of Hoſpitalitie.

The Father only is not weary perhaps of entertaining his ſonne, but all the reſt take diſlike, if not a loathing of his company. If thou ſhalt ſtay with them beyond that time, they will hate thee to the death, and picke one quarrell or other againſt thee; and if that will not ſerue the turne to ſet thee packing; they will put crooked Pinnes in thy Bread, or lay baytes to poyſon thee, that they may once be rid of thee.

But admit, that thou art inuited by a married man, and that his wife bee cloſe-fiſted, a very Crib, her wealth her owne, and ſhe ſomewhat proud and ſcornefull, ſay ſhe be thy Mother, or thy Siſter, in fine ſhe is a woman, who for the moſt part are all of them greedy and couetous, ſo that they will whine for anger to ſee thee there, looke ſcuruily vpon thee, grudge thee thy meat; chafe with her husband for bringing thee thither, curſe both him and thee, and wiſh you both choakt. Better is a hard cruſt in thine owne houſe, then a cram'd Capon in another mans. It is a miſerable thing to ſet thy foot vnder another mans table.

Better is a little at home, then a great deale of good cheere abroad.

My friends growing now weary of me, I needed not out of ſhame to leaue them; for they had already caſt me off, ſtreightning more and more their hand towards me, who were ſo farre from giuing me any thing, that now they could ſhamefully deny me without bluſhing. They needed no maske nor diſguiſe for to diſſemble the buſineſſe. They could boldly bid me Goe by. I was therefore driuen to ſeeke out ſome Wall, where-againſt to leane, and betake my ſelfe to ſome Tree for ſhelter, vnder whoſe ſhadow I might quietly take my feeding. For I was now in that extreme want, that like the Prodigall ſonne, I would willingly haue returned home, and beene content with all my heart to be one of the meaneſt mercenary ſeruants in my Lords houſe. But ſuch was my misfortune, that he was now dead and gone.

Beaten with the rod of affliction, I began to be humbled, and was fully reſolued to turne ouer a new leafe, and betake my ſelfe to a better courſe of life: but it was all too late, I came a day after the faire; And fit it is, that he that will not when he may, when he would, he ſhould haue nay.

And it ſtands with very good reaſon, *Que pierda por el mal querer, el bien poder.* That through the badneſſe of will, we ſhould loſe the goodneſſe of power. There went the diſtance of ſome two moneths betweene my good and bad fortune. And if I had beene a ſtay'd, and well-gouern'd Youth, as I had a running head, and a giddy braine, the leaſt good that could haue befalne me, would haue beene (though the meaneſt of his ſeruants) an honeſt prouiſion during my life, and might haue runne the venture of ſome better fortune. But ſeeing it fell out as it did, yet muſt we thanke God as well for the bad, as the good. I cannot ſay, that my malignant Starre was the cauſe thereof, but that mine owne euill inclination was the worker of my woe; For the ſtarres *non compellunt, ſed inclinant*, they incline, but not conſtraine. They make men apt, but they doe not coact. Some ignorant fooles ſticke not

Want of patience, the cauſe of much euill.

The Starres doe not inforce a man to this or that.

not to ſay; O Sir, Deſtinie is not to be auoyded. That which ſhall be, ſhall be. And it is in vaine to ſtriue againſt it. I tell thee (my friend) it is a vaine thing to ſay ſo; and thou doeſt not vnderſtand the truth thereof aright; for there is no neceſsitie, that it is, or ſhould be ſo; it is thou thy ſelfe, that mak'ſt it ſo to be.

In theſe Morall and outward things, thou haſt a kinde of free-will conferred vpon thee, whereby thou maiſt (if thou wilt) gouerne both thy ſelfe, and thy actions. Thy ſtarre cannot conſtraine thee, nor all the heauens ioyned together with all the force and power that they haue, cannot compell thee againſt thy will.

All euill that befalls a man, is for the moſt part occaſioned by himſelfe.

It is thou that forceſt thy ſelfe to leaue what is good, and to apply thy ſelfe to that which is euill, following thy diſhoneſt deſires, whence theſe thy croſſes and calamities come vpon thee.

Guzman ſerues the French Embaſſadour.

I was now entred into the ſeruice of the French Embaſſadour, with whom my Lord (who is now in glory) held ſtrict amitie; who, in his life-time tooke likewiſe great pleaſure in my witty ieſts, and merry conceits. He would faine haue had me ſerue him before, but he was loth to intertaine mee, leſt it might be taken vnkindly to receiue another mans ſeruant, conſidering the good loue and friendſhip that was betweene them.

Maſters intertaine their ſeruants for diuers ends.

Well, I was now with him, and he vſ'd me well, but with a different end. For my Lord directed his actions to the profit and benefit of my perſon, but he onely for his owne priuate ends, and the pleaſure which he tooke in my ierkes of wit, the merry tales that I would tell him, and the pleaſing meſſages that I ſhould bring him now and then, from thoſe his Ladies and Miſtreſſes to whom he made loue. He did ſettle me in no ſet place, or office about him; I was his ſeruant at large; and he as largely paid me. For either hee would giue me my paiment himſelfe, or elſe I my ſelfe would take it in his preſence, with ſome pleaſant ieſt or other; or to ſpeake more plainely, I was his chiefe Minion and Fauorite, though it pleaſed ſome to call me his Buffone & Ieſter.

Gueſts how to be attended on by thoſe that wait at the table.

When we had any gueſts (as we ſeldome or neuer wanted) wee were very complementall with them, and waited punctually vpon them, our eyes ſtill attending on theirs: but if they were either impudent, fooliſh, or troubleſome gueſts, which came thither vnbidden, vpon ſuch as theſe we would put a thouſand ieſts. Some we would make to ſit all dinner time without drinke, that you would haue thought, that they had been ſo many Melones ſowne in a dry ground; to others we would giue very little, and that in pinching glaſſes; ſome had their Wine ouer-watered, other-ſome ouer-warme without any ſnow. When they were ready to eate their meat, we would take away their Plates from them, and ſet ſome ſalt-meats before them, ill ſeaſoned, with a little oyle that was none of the beſt. We would dayly inuent new deuices, to abuſe their palates, that they might take diſlike, and come there no more.

Fooliſh and preſumptuous perſons not to be obſerued by thoſe that attend.

Men of good and bad behauiour, to bee reſpected according as they are.

It hapned once vpon a time, that an Engliſh-man claiming kindred of the Embaſſador, and it being a common cuſtome with him, to come dayly to our houſe, my Maſter grew weary of him; for (beſides that hee was not his kinſman) he was neither Noble in his bloud, nor indued with good qualities, and aboue all, in his conuerſation full of impertinencies, that it was a kind of captiuitie, to keepe conuerſation with him.

A tale of an Engliſhman.

There are a certaine kinde of men, that a mans heart will riſe againſt them, and grow into a diſlike of them, though he neuer ſaw them before. And againe there are another ſort of men, that will ſteale thereinto, and thruſt themſelues into our affection, and good liking, vpon the firſt ſight, winning our good will from vs, and procuring our beſt wiſhes; this, either hatred, or loue, not being in the hands of the one, or the power of the other. But this was a meere lumpe of Lead, a man of no metall in the world, a dull and heauy piece of fleſh, in a word a meere block-head.

One

One night, when they were newly ſet at ſupper, hee began to lay open his vanitie, with telling a thouſand lyes one vpon the necke of another, wherewith the Embaſſador was much offended, and not being able to ſuffer ſuch a one, to goe on in his fooleries, he ſpake to me in Spaniſh, (which the other vnderſtood not) and ſaid vnto me, Would I could bee rid once of this foole; for I am as weary of him, as euer I can be. He did not ſpeake this to a Dolt or an Aſſe: I had his meaning in the winde. Whereupon I tooke my friend to taske; I followed him with ſalt-meats, that were ſmart and ſharpe, and left behinde them a kinde of tartneſſe or tang vpon the tongue; wherewith being bitten, he call'd for his coolers, which he tooke almoſt faſter then I could fill them.

The wine that he gulped downe, was the gulph that ſwallowed him vp. The glaſſe vvas great, his draughts anſwerable, and thoſe often, and this powder tooke ſo well, that at laſt he was powdred vvith a vvitneſſe, and quite blowne vp.

When I ſaw he had yeelded himſelfe priſoner to his pots, and that hee was aboue one and thirty, being many peepes out, I tooke off one of my Garters, and knit a ſliding knot vpon the inſtep of one of his feete, and faſtened it vnto the ſtoole whereon he ſate. And when the Table vvas taken away, and that he offered to riſe to take his leaue, and to goe home to his lodging, he vvas no ſooner riſen from his ſeat, but that he fell all along on the floore, his mouth, his teeth, and his noſe being ſhrewdly hurt, the bloud guſhing out amaine. So that when he vvas come to himſelfe the next day, and ſaw in vvhat ill caſe he vvas, and how his face was batterd vvith the fall, for very ſhame hee vvould neuer more come neere the houſe.

This buſineſſe was well carried, for it ſucceeded euen as I vvould haue it. But all darts doe not hit right; nor all Angle-rods ſtrike ſure. There are ſome fiſhes that bite and carry away the bait with them, leauing the Angler deluded, and the Hooke empty, as it hapned vnto me vvith a Spaniſh Souldier, that was longer then the marke.

A tale of a Spaniard, who ſcorneth Guzman, *and ſhewes himſelfe a craftier knaue, then hee.*

O the whoreſon traytor; how crafty and ſubtill a Rogue hee was! how full of his cunning ſhifts! Hearken well I pray vnto that which paſſed betweene vs.

This wily rascall came into the houſe about noone, when the Embaſſador was ready to ſit downe to dinner, and comming vnto him, he told his Lordſhip that he was a Souldier, and borne in *Cordoua*, and a principall Gentleman of that place, though now he were in want, and therefore beſought him, that he would fauour him ſo farre forth, as that he might taſte of his bounty. The Embaſſadour tooke out a little purſe, wherein were ſome Crownes, and without offering to open it, hee gaue him both the Purſe and the Gold that vvas within it, becauſe he ſeemed to be the ſame, he had expreſt himſelfe to be.

But not contenting himſelfe with this, he continued ſtill with him, recounting what he was, and the ſeruices wherein he had beene. And ſo running on from one thing to another, the Embaſſadour ſetting himſelfe downe to dinner, he makes me no more ado, but does the like. And pulling a ſtoole to him, ſets himſelfe cheeke by iole with his Lordſhip.

I was then gone to fetch in meat, when lo, by the vvay, I might perceiue two other Ier-Falcons like the former, which vvere newly entred within the Court; and vvhen they vnderſtood, that this other was at dinner vvith my Lord, the one ſaid to the other; As I am true Souldier, either the Diuell, or Sinne, hath clapt gyues vpon our legges; for this cheating Rascall ſtill gets the ſtart of vs, and winnes all that he playes for by the elder hand.

Court Ier-Falcons what they be.

When I heard them thus mutter and maunder againſt him, I came vnto them, and askt them; Whether they knew that Gentleman vvithin, or no? One of them told me, I know that Tauerne-haunter, whoſe father hath many

a time and oft pull'd on my Buskins in *Cordoua*, where hee keepes ſhop vnder the wall of the great Church.

This is our vnhappineſſe, that if ſome twenty Gentlemen of vs goe for *Italy*, there returne a hundred ſuch infamous fellowes as this is, that vvill equall themſelues vvith the beſt, and boaſt themſelues to be deſcended of the ancient *Gothes*: and vvhen they come where they are not knowne, they thinke that with the gumming of their Mouchatos, making them beare vp as ſtiffe as if they were ſtarcht, and with the wagging of three or foure feathers in their Hat, they are growne into nobleneſſe of bloud, and purchaſed the name of Valour, beeing no better then notorious Cowards. For it is not Feathers, and ſtarcht-beards that fight it out in the Field, but ſtout hearts, and men of ſtiffe courage. Come, let vs goe, I will make this effeminate Raskall next time I meet with him, leaue off comming in our quarter, and fyle himſelfe in ſome other ranke.

With that they went their wayes, vvhileſt I vvent conſidering vvith my ſelfe, what kinde of cattle theſe three were, that thus ſought to grace and ſet forth themſelues.

But I was ſome-what angry at thoſe other two, taking them to bee but Braggadoccios, and meere puffes, as well for the vaunts they made of themſelues, as for the ill language they vſ'd, in defaming him, vvho ſought to honour himſelfe, without any coſt or preiudice to others.

I vvas likewiſe not a little moued againſt this new-come gueſt for his bold and inſolent carriage, who might very vvell haue contented himſelfe vvith that vvhich was giuen him, and ſo gone his wayes, without being ſo impudent to ſit downe at table in that ſwaggering and vnciuill faſhion; I had a moneths minde to be at him, I long'd to breake one ieſt or other vpon him, and to put it ſo home, that he ſhould not be able to auoid it; but thinking to goe forth to fetch Wooll, I was forced to come back with my fleece ſhorne, failing very much in this my intent and purpoſe. He intreated mee to giue him ſome drinke. I made as if I did not vnderſtand him. He beckned vnto me with his hand. I drew neerer vnto him. He made me a third ſigne. I turn'd mine eyes another way, looking very demurely, and carrying with mee a ſober and compoſed countenance, (though I had much adoo to forbeare laughing.) He looking well vpon me, and perceiuing that I either plaid the foole, or the knaue with him, he would not ſpeake, or becken any more vnto me, but turning himſelfe towards the Embaſſador, he thus ſaid vnto him:

Sir, I beſeech your Lordſhip, that you will not thinke it ouer-boldneſſe, or too much preſumption in mee, that I haue offered (though vnbidden) to ſit downe at your Lordſhips Table, in regard of thoſe many excuſes which I can render to your Lordſhip, which may (if I haue offended therein, and broken the rule of good manners) plead ſome-what in my fauour.

Firſt, the qualitie of my Perſon, and the nobleneſſe of my Houſe, doth deſerue any common or ordinary courteſie.

Secondly, my being a Souldier, makes mee worthy of any Princes Table what-ſoeuer, becauſe I haue purchaſed that honour by my Sword and profeſsion.

And laſtly, I may adde there-vnto the neceſsitie I now am in, which is common to all, and may befall any man, as well as my ſelfe.

And I preſume that your Lordſhip keepes this ſo free and honourable a Table for to relieue ſuch as my ſelfe; and therefore conceiue, that your Lordſhip holds it not neceſſarie, that ſuch Souldiers as my ſelfe, hauing any worth, or good parts in them, ſhould expect to be inuited to your boord.

And therefore I ſhall deſire your Lordſhip to be pleaſed to command one of your ſeruants to giue me ſome drinke; for being a Spaniard, I perceiue they doe not vnderſtand me, though I haue often called for it.

My

My Lord there-upon commanded vs to giue him drinke, ſo that I could not otherwiſe chooſe but doe as I was bid; yet I would haue ſworne, hee ſhould not haue thus gone away with the Bucklers.

Well, I brought him drinke, but in ſo poore and penurious a glaſſe, and mixed ſo much water with his Wine, that I left him in a manner as dry as hee was before. But becauſe a little will ſerue a Spaniards turne, and that they are inured to ſuffer much hunger and thirſt, with that little pittance, which was rather a drop, then a draught, he paſſed therewith as well as he could, till dinner was done.

We that were Pages, hauing conſpired alltogether, not to looke him any more in the face while he was eating, leſt he ſhould ſpeake againe vnto vs by ſignes, to giue him more drinke, and ſo binde vs to bring it vnto him. But he was an old beaten Souldier, and knew well how to vſe the weapon of his wit, and being too hard for vs, did likewiſe beat vs from this ward, which we thought had beene too ſure a one, to bee put from. For when hee had fill'd his belly, and well ſatisfied himſelfe, and that the laſt courſe was ſerued in, And your Lordſhip will giue me leaue (quoth he) I will now goe drinke. And ſo riſing vp from boord, remouing his ſtoole from him, he went to the Court-Cupboord, and taking from thence the biggeſt Glaſſe that was there, he powr'd forth as much Wine and Water as himſelfe thought fit, and hauing quenched his thirſt, putting off his hat, and making a legge to his Lordſhip, got him out of the roome, and ſo went his way without ſpeaking any one word or other. My Lord was ready to burſt with laughing, to ſee how hee had put me beſide my tricke, and after that he had wondred awhile at the reſolution and boldneſſe of this fellow, he ſaid vnto me; *Guzmanillo*, this Souldier ſauours ſomewhat of thee, and thy countrie, where all is carried away with *Brauados*, and an impudent kinde of behauiour.

Now, whilſt we were talking at table of the libertie and free kinde of carriage, which the Spaniards aſſume vnto themſelues, there was newly come into the houſe a Gentleman of *Naples*, who had no ſooner ſaluted my Lord, but he told him, that he was purpoſely come vnto his Lordſhip to acquaint him with one of the cruelleſt, and ſtrangeſt accidents, that hath hapned in theſe our times, which now very lately fell out in *Rome*.

The Embaſſadour intreated him to relate it vnto him; And that I might the better heare it, I did deferre taking away, and brought him a Chayre, wherein, when he was ſet, he thus began to ſpeake.

A pitifull and lamentable Accident of two noble Louers in Rome.

In this Citie, there dwelt a young Gentleman of the age of twenty or one and twenty yeeres, more noble in bloud, then rich in wealth. He had a goodly preſence; he was vertuous, able, actiue, and in his owne perſon very valiant. This Gentleman fell in loue with a Damſell, a young Gentlewoman here in *Rome*, about the age of ſeuenteene; being wonderfull both faire and honeſt; they were both equall in ſtate and condition, but more in their good will and loue to each other. For if the one did loue, the other did burne. His name was *Dorido*, hers *Clorinia*. Her Parents bred her vp ſo retiredly, that they did not ſuffer her to treate or conuerſe with any, from whence any danger might ariſe vnto her; neither did ſhe ſo much as ſhew her ſelfe at the Window, and did ſeldome looke out, vnleſſe it were by chance. For ſuch was the exceſſe of her beauty, that it was able to be a loadſtone, to draw all the youthfull Nobilitie of *Rome* to deſire her loue. Her Parents, and one only brother that ſhe had, were very iealous of her honour; inſomuch that theſe two Louers could not inioy each other as they would.

Dorido *and* Clorinia, *a paire of faithfull Louers.*

True it is, that *Clorinia*, as one that was truly in loue, could by no meanes be hindred from ſhewing her ſelfe to *Dorido*, as oft as he paſt that way. For neere adioyning to her owne Window, there was another of a friend of hers; who (for that ſhe was marryed) might with more liberty ſtand there, when

ſhe was diſpoſed ſo to do. And for that ſhe had acquainted her with her loue, as often as *Dorido* paſt that way, ſhe would giue her ſome ſigne or token, thorow a little hole that they had made of purpoſe in a partition Wall that was betweene them, whereupon ſhe would preſently make haſte to the Window to ſee him; And ſo receiued from her Louer that ſhort, yet full content, which the couetouſneſſe and ſtrictneſſe of thoſe times could afford.

This continued thus a good while: for other comfort had they none, then what they tooke in this fugitiue pleaſure, ſeeing each other only *in tranſitu*, as he paſt along the ſtreet; which (like a ſhadow) was as ſoone gone, as ſeene. But *Dorido*, impatient of this poore content, and deſirous to improue theſe fauours he receiued from her, ſought meanes, how he might with more conueniencie inioy ſo ſweet a ſight, ſeeing he might not be permitted to proceed any further. Whereupon he began to enter into a ſtrict league of amitie with her brother, whoſe name was *Valerio*; into whoſe friendſhip he had wrought himſelfe, with that faſtneſſe and feruour, that *Valerio* could not liue without *Dorido*. Which was an occaſion that moued him many times to carry him home with him to his houſe, wiſhing him to be Maſter thereof, and to make as bold therewith (if he wanted any thing) as if it were his owne, and to command it with the ſame freeneſſe. So that by this meanes, he had both liberty and leiſure to contemplate the diuine beautie of his deareſt Loue.

Valerio, *brother to* Clorinia.

With theſe baytes, their loues were led along, gaining ſtill more ground, and gathering more ſtrength vnto them, manifeſting more and more their loues, by their lookes. But *Clorinia* being the weaker of the two, and peraduenture more inflamed, opened her minde to a maide of hers called *Scintila*; who deſirous to doe her Miſtreſſe ſeruice, went to ſeeke out *Dorido*; whom when ſhe had met with, ſhe ſaid thus vnto him.

Scintila, *Seruant to* Clorinia.

Dorido, it is bootleſſe to diſſemble the buſineſſe any longer, it is now no time to hide thy ſelfe from me, for it is not vnknowne vnto me what good liking there is betwixt you and my Miſtreſſe, and what good loue yee make each to other; And that you may ſee, that I doe not goe about to deceiue you, my Miſtreſſe her ſelfe hath reuealed ſo much vnto me, intreating me, that I would be a meanes to lay open her heart vnto you, and to ſignifie vnto you, how much ſhe loues you; and for farther declaration thereof, hath by mee ſent you this greene ſilke Riband, as a hopefull token, deſiring you for her ſake, that you will honour her ſo much, as to weare it about your arme. I aſſure my ſelfe you are perſwaded, that it comes recommended vnto you from her owne hand, for that your ſelfe haue ſeene it many a time hang in the dreſsing of her hayre. So that from hence-forward, you may reſt confident of my faithfulneſſe towards you, ſo great is the deſire that I haue to doe you ſeruice.

When *Dorido* heard this, it ſtrooke amazement into him, neither did he ſeeme to like well of it, for that he had neuer any great good conceipt of this Wench, as being iealous of her diſcretion, not holding her to be a fit inſtrument for a buſineſſe of that great truſt and conſequence as this was; fearing leſt their loues might, through her weakneſſe, come to be diſcouered; But ſeeing there was no other remedie, and that it was *Clorinias* owne Act, and none of his, he diſſembled his diſlike, and in the beſt manner that he could, made ſhew vnto her, in how much he did eſteeme this her loue and ſeruice; and how ready he would be vpon all occaſions, to deſerue this her free and voluntary offer.

Some few dayes being paſt, and *Dorido's* deſire increaſing to ſpeake face to face with his Miſtreſſe, and finding no meanes how to doe it, Loue, that can ouercome all difficulties, and make thoſe things facill that ſeeme almoſt impoſsible, opened a way thereunto: ſhewing the meanes vnto him, whereby he might come to compaſſe his deſire. There was faſtened to the Wall of that

that houſe where *Clorinia* dwelt (which butted on the open ſtreet) a piece of an old Wall, whereof the one halfe was falne downe, and runne into decay, being ſcarce ſo high, as to reach vp to the Window belonging to the houſe, and a little beneath that, was a hole ſtopt vp with a moueable ſtone that might be taken out, and put in againe at pleaſure. This did ſerue *Clorinia* ſometimes in ſtead of a Lattice, viewing thorow it, (without being ſeene) thoſe that did paſſe to and fro in the ſtreet.

This was well knowne to *Dorido*, for that he had often ſeene his Miſtreſſe peeping out at that hole. This opportunitie ſeemed to be fauourable to his deſire; whereupon he brake with *Scintila*, and intreated her, that ſhe would ſtand his friend; telling her: Since (*Scintila*) my good fortune hath beene ſuch, that I haue found you well affected to our Loues, and willing to pleaſure me all that you can, and to afford me your beſt furtherance therein; I will not refuſe to put my ſelfe into your hands, aſſuring my ſelfe, that you wil alwayes and in all things haue that care, which the loue you beare to your Miſtreſſe, and the deſire you haue to doe me any courteſie, doth oblige you vnto. You know, that ſince the time that I ſurrendred vp my ſoule to *Clorinia*, and put her into the poſſeſsion of my heart, making her the true Lord and Owner both of it, and of my life, I haue got no other thing thereby, ſaue a correſpondencie of affection expreſſed only by lookes, hauing as yet no other interpreters of our mindes, but the eyes, and all for lacke of better commoditie, and more fit and conuenient meanes. Which the more I am debarr'd of, the more it augmenteth my deſire. For euermore priuation ingendreth appetite.

Priuatio generat appetitum.

Now, there is a thing come into my head, how by your good helpe, my deſire may reſt honeſtly ſatisfied. You cannot but know the hole, that is vnderneath the Window; this muſt be the place, and thou the inſtrument of my good fortune. Thou ſhalt ſpeake vnto *Clorinia*, (intreating her as from me) that ſhe will be pleaſed to correſpond with me in this my iuſt requeſt; and in caſe ſhe ſhould refuſe, as not daring out of feare to venture ſo farre, thou mayſt then labour to perſwade with her, and ſo guide and rule her will, to be brought to yeeld to this ſo eaſie a condition; and that this night, ſeeing that the darkneſſe thereof is ſo much our friend, when all the people of the houſe ſhall be a bed and aſleepe, ſhe will be pleaſed but to ſpeake with me at that hole. As for any other thing, I neither intreat it, nor pretend it.

This ſuite ſeemed to *Scintila*, very eaſie, and without any danger in the world; ſhe puts him in good hope, promiſes him to ſollicite it, till ſhee had effected it; ſhe comply'de with her obligation, and pointed him the houre when he ſhould come; giuing him a certaine ſigne, what he ſhould doe, when he came to the Window.

Dorido, when night was come, diſguiſing himſelfe, went to the place appointed, where he ſtood waiting for a good occaſion.

When all thoſe of the houſe were ſure and ſafe enough, as ſleepe could make them, *Scintila* went to the Window and opened it, taking occaſion to throw out a little water. Which being ſeene by *Dorido*, who had got vpon the Wall, ſtanding there to wayte a good houre, and knowing that it was *Scintila*, he ſaid ſoftly vnto her, Here I am. Shee willed him to ſtay awhile, and ſhutting the Window, in ſhe goes.

Doridos heart in the meane while fell a leaping in his boſome, beating and thumping thereat as if it had ſought to get out, being ready to burſt with deſire, inflamed with the fire of loue, fearefull of the various ſucceſſe of things, leſt ſome croſſe accident might interpoſe it ſelfe betwixt him, and this his glory, whereunto he was now ſo neere, ſtudying with himſelfe what vvords he were beſt to vſe vnto her, and in what kinde of phraſe he ſhould begin his Court-ſhip. His thoughts ranne through a thouſand ſeuerall things, and his

eyes were neuer off from that hole, looking as farre there-into, as that ill-placed ſtone would permit him.

He might one while heare *Clorinia* talking with *Scintila*; another vvhile with her father and mother; now perceiue how ſhee roſe from the place where ſhe ſate, and by and by againe paſt to and fro, one while to this, another to that ſide of the houſe, till that (her Parents being abed) I ſaw her approching to the place appointed, whither ſhe came ſo troubled, (ſuch a conflict was there betwixt Loue, and Shame; Modeſtie, and Affection) that ſhe was about to goe backe. But inforced there-vnto by *Scintila*, at laſt ſhe came.

Now, when they were come to this inter-view, and ſaw themſelues thus happily met together, *Dorido* was ſo tranſported therewith, that although he had premeditated before-hand what he would ſay vnto her, he was ſtrucken quite dumbe, and had not a word to ſay. And ſhe no leſſe trembling, not hauing any by in that coniuncture, which might giue breath either to the one or the other, to bring them to pronounce but ſo much as one word either good, or bad; at laſt by little and little, when their frozen tongues had recouered a little warmth, they made a ſhift to exchange ſome few words on both ſides, where-with they ſaluted each other.

Dorido intreated her hand and ſhe willingly gaue it him; he tooke it, and kiſt it againe and againe, bleſsing and ſtroking his face therewith neuer ſuffering it to depart from his mouth. After he had thus taken his pleaſure of her faire hand, he ſtretcht forth his to her, pleaſing his touch with the delicate ſoftneſſe of her beautifull countenance, vnable to enioy any other pleaſure, nor could that place and time affoord him any farther content.

In this ſweet exchange of mutuall loue they intertained themſelues a great while. And whileſt their hands did ſpeake, themſelues were ſilent. For the talke of the one, did hinder the ſpeech of the other. And becauſe *Scintila* made haſte to part them, for feare of being diſcouered, if they ſhould dwell any longer vpon theſe complementall kindneſſes, *Dorido* with many indearings of his loue, tooke leaue of his *Clorima*, intreating her, that the next night following, at the ſame houre, and the ſame place, he might enioy the ſame *Regalo*, and ſweet comfort againe. She promiſt him he ſhould. And ſo for that time, they tooke leaue of each other, both of them remaining wonderfull well contented. But much more he, who was ready to leape out of his skinne for ioy. And wiſhing that night and the next day would poſt away apace, hee went home to his lodging.

Where offering to ſit downe, he could not reſt himſelfe there; and ſeeking to eaſe himſelfe by riſing vp, he ſought ſome place where-againſt to leane; and when there likewiſe he could not be at quiet, hee romed vp and downe the roome, walking to and fro on the vnſteddy legges of *Diſ-reſt*, and *Deſire*; ſo that nothing could giue him eaſe and content.

Thus did he ſuffer, and thus weare out that weariſome time, till the night following, and the time appointed, whoſe minutes he meaſured out by thoſe glaſſes which diſtinguiſh the houres, giuing himſelfe ouer to this idle curioſitie.

The houre being come, he went to the place appointed, expecting vvhen the ſigne ſhould be giuen; he had placed himſelfe in the hollow nooke of an old gate, which ioyned to the wall neere vnto the window; and being about to get vp to the hole, hee ſaw two Gallants paſſe by, which were in loue with a couple of Gentlewomen in the ſame ſtreete, who walked there vp & down, giuing many a turne to and fro, waiting when the ſtreet ſhould be cleere, that they might make benefit of the like occaſion. They were *Doridos* very good friends, and were not ignorant that he was inamoured of *Clorinia*. They were well acquainted the one with the other. But becauſe *Dorido* was ſome-what more reſerued in the loue that he made to *Clorinia*, he would not diſcouer himſelfe

ſelfe vnto them, for feare of giuing ſuſpition of that, which he was not yet Maſter of. And therefore whileſt they continued walking there, he durſt not mount the vvall, leſt haply they might chance to ſee him. For albeit that the night was very darke, yet the bulke of his body might, like a confuſed lumpe or maſſe, be diſcerned by thoſe that walkt vp and downe in that ſtill and prying faſhion, though by thoſe that walkt along the ſtreets at large, and minding no ſuch matters, it was not ſo eaſie to be perceiued. And therefore, becauſe they ſhould not know him, getting him thence, he remoued himſelfe a little farther off, looking ſtill when they would be gone, or elſe intertaine themſelues in their owne ſtandings, that he might betake himſelfe to his.

But when he ſaw that they ſtayd there ſtill, and that his houre vvas now come, he thought with himſelfe, that if his Miſtris ſhould come, and not finde him there, not knowing the cauſe thereof, ſhe might taxe him of too much careleſneſſe; or accuſe him of his lacke of loue.

This draue him, (holpen on by choller) into that deſperation, that he was fully reſolued to ſet vpon them, meaning to chaſe them away, if they did not make head againſt him; and if they did ſtand to it, and ſeeke to defend themſelues, then to kill them if he could. Which he might well haue done, as well in regard of the greatneſſe of his ſtrength and courage, as alſo for that he was euery way well prouided for them. Beſides, that his anger, which had now ſet him all on a raging fire, (being the whetſtone, that ſets an edge on Fortitude) would haue added greater force to his Valour, eſpecially when he ſhould ſet vpon them (which is no ſmall aduantage) vnawares.

But conſidering, not ſo much the perill of his owne perſon, as the preſent eſtate of his buſineſſes that he had now in hand, that they might not be ouerthrowne by being ill managed, and by raſh and inconſiderate courſes, he pawſed on the matter, and grew a little cooler, biting his lips, wringing his hands, caſting his eyes vp to heauen, and beating the ground with his feet like a madman.

And when he perceiued, that the time was paſt, he was now as ſad and melancholly, as the night before, he was merry and iocond.

The very next day after, theſe two Gentlemen went to looke out *Dorido*, whom they had no ſooner met withall, but they told him; You know, Sir, that we two are your friends, and that we truely loue you; and being ſuch, (as we vnfeignedly profeſſe our ſelues to be) it is neither fit, nor iuſt, that vvee ſhould conceale any thing from each other, but be free and open-hearted to one another: And it is likewiſe meet, (if you be the ſame to vs, as wee be to you) that you doe the like on your part, telling vs the truth of that which we ſhall aske you, if it be no way vnlawfull, or preiudiciall vnto you ſo to do.

Yeſterday, ſome foure houres after night was in, we two, walking through our ſtreet (for ſo we may tearme it) in regard that both our hearts haue there their abode: ſeeking, I ſay, our aduenture at that time of night, we might perceiue a third man, which dogged vs all the way, following vs almoſt cloſe at the heeles, ſcarce loſing ſight of vs all the while, ſo long as a man might ſay his *Pater-noſter*.

We had a great deſire to know who this ſhould be, but we let him alone, becauſe we would not cauſe any ſcandall. Wee could not ſo much as ſuſpect, much leſſe conceiue, who this ſhould be, till we were afterwards certified (by that which ſucceeded) that you were the man. And the aſſurance that vvee had thereof, was; that we hauing ſtaid awhile about your Miſtreſſes window, we might heare it open, and perceiue *Scintila* put forth her head, who ſeeing our outward Bulkes, and not knowing who we were, ſpake in a low voice, and ſaid:

Dorido, why do not you come vp? When we heard her ſay ſo, out of an impertinent curioſitie (relying on your friendſhip) I anſwered; Which way?

This

This word was no ſooner vttered, but without replying farther vnto me, ſhe clapt to the window, and away ſhe went. From whence we imagine you had made ſome ſet match, and becauſe we would not hinder you of your purpoſe, we preſently departed thence, and went to looke after you, but could not finde you. So that vvee could not till now acquaint you with what had paſt.

But becauſe we deſire to ſerue you, and that (by conſeruing this good loue and friendſhip betweene vs) our particular pretenſions may the better proceed, without any hinderance or impediment each to other, let vs diuide the night betweene vs.

We will take our time from mid-night, till it be day, leauing the former part of the night free to you; and if you will exchange turnes with vs, liking, perhaps, better of ours, then your owne, be it as you pleaſe, and take which of the two you haue moſt minde to, for to vs it is indifferent, being all one in the reckning.

Dorido would faine haue diſſembled the buſineſſe with them; but finding himſelfe by theſe pregnant proofes, and forcible reaſons, too faſt ty'de to get looſe from them, he could not ſo ſhift them of. And therefore accepting their friendly offer, he made choiſe of the former part of the night, according to their owne agreement.

And with this plaine proceeding, he proſecuted his Viſit the third night, though without hope of obtaining it, doubting ſhee would not doe him that fauour, in regard of that vnlucky accident that fell out the night before.

But for that *Clorinia* lou'd, (and that ſhe truely lou'd) nothing could detaine her from him, but with a great deale of care, was ſtill inquiring, whether her Gallant meant to come againe, to glad her heart with his cheerefull and comfortable lookes, being very inquiſitiue to know what ſhould bee the reaſon, that cauſed him ſo to faile the laſt night of his promiſe.

Now, whilſt her Father and Mother were at ſupper, riſing from the table, ſhe went to the fore-ſaid hole, which ſhe might ſafely doe, for that the chimney, neere where-vnto they ſupt, ſtood on the one ſide of the Hall, (being a very large one) and the window where the hole vvas, on the other ſide, neere adioyning to the corner; in the midſt whereof, were certaine things placed betweene, which did ſhadow and hinder the ſight from the one ſide to the other. Her father and her mother ſate ſo, that ſhe might eaſily goe thither, and ſpeake ſoftly, without being heard of any.

The truth is, ſhee watcht an occaſion (hauing well aduiſed with her ſelfe what might happen) to make quicke diſpatch, and to riſe from table as ſoone as poſsibly ſhe could. Who came thither ſo opportunely, & in ſo good a time, that *Dorido* was there ready expecting her comming; for from out the ſtreet, he might heare the footing of certaine ſteps in the Hall, which was a ſure ſigne vnto him, that thoſe paces were troden by his Miſtreſſe, ſo that he made all the haſte he could to get vp to ſee her. And becauſe this was the ſecond time of their meeting, they were a little better fleſh't, then they were before, & met not with thoſe ſtoppages, which heretofore had hindred their ſpeech. So that they now diſcourſed more boldly, and more freely, as farre forth as the time would giue them leaue, (which that night was but ſhort, and in a manner ſtolne) and afterwards they tooke their leaues with a great deale of tenderneſſe on either part, hauing agreed betweene themſelues, that as long as the Moone vvas in her wane, they would inioy the fulneſſe of their loues, which increaſed now apace, till ſome better meanes ſhould be found for their freer acceſſe.

In this *interim*, a yong Gentleman, a very great friend of *Dorido's*, called *Horatio*, fell in loue with *Clorinia*: He courted her, he ſeru'd her, and obſeru'd her, as became a Louer, notwithſtanding, that he knew, that ſhee was his friends

friends Miſtreſſe. But he knew withall, that hee did not treat with intent to take her to wife, but himſelfe did.

Relying therefore vpon this their great friendſhip, the iuſtneſſe of his requeſt, and the honeſty of his cauſe, he intreated him of all loues, that he would deſiſt from making loue to *Clorinia*, and giue way to him, ſeeing their endes were ſo different.

Horatio's affectionate words, and lawfull requeſt, were of that power, and preuailed ſo much vvith *Dorido*, that he told him, that for his part he was vvell contented therewith, promiſing him, that if his Miſtreſſe ſhould ſo like of it, and that ſhe could finde in her heart to fancy and affect him; hee would giue ouer his ſuite, leauing the field open vnto him to take his pleaſure, without any contradiction in the world; and that he ſhould reſt himſelfe aſſured, that he would no vvay ſtand in competition vvith him. For the better effecting vvhereof, he would doe two things: The one, to diſ-deceiue *Clorinia*, by deliuering plainely vnto her, that by reaſon of a certaine Vow, that hee had made to himſelfe, it was not in his power to be married vnto her, which he would not breake for all the world. The other; the better to make her forget him, he would goe about to make loue elſe-where. Yet, for that great friendſhip, that was betwixt himſelfe, and *Valerio*, he muſt hold him excuſed, if he did not forbeare now and then to viſit her, vvhich might turne much to his good, but no hurt at all; being that his true intent and purpoſe vvas, to fauour his pretenſion, vpon all occaſions that ſhould offer themſelues vnto him.

Herewith *Horatio* reſted content, and was wonderfull well ſatisfied, and gaue *Dorido* many thankes; not conſidering, that hauing left it to *Clorinias* choyſe, and putting himſelfe vpon her Election, till that he knew her minde, and had gained her good will, he had negotiated little, or nothing at all. And the offer made by *Dorido*, was vpon the confidence that he had, that to ſpeake thereof vnto *Clorinia*, was no other, then the tearing of her heart from forth her breſt. But *Horatio* carried away with vaine confidencies, and various hopes, intreated *Dorido*, that he would ſpeake a good word for him. He promiſed he would, that he might ſtill maintaine his friendſhip with *Horatio*, and not giue any note or ſcandall to their loue.

To comply therefore with his promiſe, and to make good his owne offer, when he met with his Miſtreſſe, he made a long diſcourſe vnto her of all that had paſſed betweene them; Telling her, that if ſhe could finde in her heart to loue *Horatio*, and be brought to ſettle her affection vpon him, God forbid that euer he ſhould goe about to hinder ſo honourable an intent. But in caſe ſhe could not, yet at leaſt was ſhe bound in thankfulneſſe to accept of this his good will, by not ſhewing her ſelfe coy and ſtrange vnto him; and if he paſt by the ſtreet where ſhe was, ſhee ſhould not ſcornfully ſhut the Window againſt him, and flie from his ſight, and ſhould ſhew him a cheerefull looke, though it were but feigned.

To this *Clorinia* anſwered betwixt anger and ſcorne, telling him; that hee ſhould ſurceaſe, to lay any ſuch command vpon her, and that he ſhould ſpeake no more thereof vnto her; for if for this cauſe, he ſhould leaue and forſake her, ſhe would rather be content to be hated and abhorred by him, then to wrong either him, or her ſelfe, by placing her loue elſe-where: Who as hee had beene the firſt, ſo he ſhould be the laſt as long as ſhe liu'd; which life of hers, ſhe would preſently ſacrifice vnto him, for to take away all occaſion from him of commanding her to loue another, or to forget him; as for the reſt, he might doe as he ſaw cauſe, ſhe would not hinder him, let him take what courſe it pleaſed him, ſo as it liked him, ſhe would not ſtand againſt it.

Dorido tooke wonderfull contentment in hearing this anſwer come from her; for theſe words of her, were that true Chriſole wherein the Gold of

their

their loues was refined, and that touchſtone that tryde the pureneſſe of their affections, and gaue aſſurance that it was not counterfeit metall. So he treated of this matter no more, but followed his wonted Viſits both day and night, hauing firſt giuen an account to *Horatio* of what he had done. Hee would not beleeue it, yet waxed wondrous ſad, when he heard it. But for all this, he did not leaue off to ſerue her, but could neuer finde her indiſpoſition to doe him the leaſt grace or fauour, but rather to vſe him with all ſharpneſſe and rigour.

Whence it came to paſſe, that ſeeing himſelfe diſdained, and *Dorido* preferred before him; furie prouoketh his patience, ſetting his heart on fire with an infernall rage; inſomuch that his loue was now turned into hatred. And whereas before he was alwayes deſirous to doe her ſeruice, from that time forward he laid waite to doe her a miſchiefe, beating his braines, and bending all his wits and ſtudie to worke her ouerthrow; or at leaſt to put ſome foule diſgrace vpon her. So that this *Horatio*, hauing dogg'd *Dorido* diuers times, till he had learned the houre, the place, and the meanes how he got vp vpon the Wall, and the manner of his carriage and faſhion when he came to ſpeake with her, and ſhe with him.

One night amongſt the reſt, he did anticipate and preuent the comming of the true Louer, and feigning himſelfe to be *Dorido*, he clambred vp to the place, and made a little noyſe, by iogging the ſtone that was in the hole of the Wall, as he had obſerued him to haue done the like diuers times heretofore. Now *Clorinia* taking notice of the ſigne, but not conſidering the great anticipation, and preuention of the time, came preſently at this call, and taking out the ſtone, with many ſweet and kinde words, ſhe receiued this feigned Louer, who remained ſilent all this while, which louing language of hers, did but the more incourage *Horatio* in his intended treaſon; and putting his hand into the hole, tooke hold on *Clorinias* faire hand, and tooke it forth, feigning that he much deſired to kiſſe the ſame. And holding her faſt thereby with his left hand, and with his right, plucking out a ſharpe Knife, which for that purpoſe he bare about him, with little difficulty, but a great deale of impiety, he cut it off, and carryed it away with him, leauing this poore afflicted Damſell lying in a ſwoune vpon the floore, by ſtriuing to ſuppreſſe her ſorrow, which ſhe ought to haue vented with her voyce, and with her cryes and lamentations; but ſhe did ſmother them, offring force as it were to this her womanly weakneſſe; and did ſhut them vp cloſe in her heart, and ſo offending the vitall ſpirits, ſhe remained in a manner dead. And there queſtionleſſe would ſhe haue breathed her laſt, if ſhe had not had preſent helpe; for her Father and her Mother miſsing her, and not ſeeing her in the roome where they were, they called vnto her, and becauſe ſhe returned no anſwer, they maruailing much thereat, went forth to ſeeke her: they found her weltering in her owne bloud vpon the ground, hard by that hole, which was left open in the Wall, and trickled downe with the bloud that came from her, which ſtreames of bloud were as ſo many proofes and euidences of the cauſe of her death; for ſo they deem'd her to be, becauſe they could not finde in her any ſigne of life.

Her ſorrowfull Parents, ſeeing this cruell and dolefull ſpectacle, and the trunke of her arme without a hand, being vnable to bridle their griefe, fell downe in a ſwoune cloſe by their vnfortunate Daughter, no leſſe breathleſſe then ſhe was. But comming preſently to themſelues againe, they began with the greateſt lamentations that were euer heard, to bewaile this ſo great a misfortune that had befalne them, being able to moue any other eye to pitie, and to powre forth teares in aboundance, to ſee ſo young and handſome a Gentlewoman ſo butcherly and ſo inhumanely abuſed. But in the midd'ſt of this their exceſſiue ſorrow, they began to conſider with themſelues, that if

the

the life of their Daughter ſhould be loſt, with it they ſhould likewiſe loſe their honour, which in their diſcretion, they held not fit to hazard together with her. They reſolued therefore with themſelues to keepe this deed ſecret, and ſo leauing off their lamenting, drying their eyes, and ſmothering their ſighs, they likewiſe quieted thoſe of the houſe, and bearing *Clorinia* from thence, after many remedies, which they applyed to her, they had ſomewhat brought her to her ſelfe: Who, when ſhe ſaw her ſelfe in the midſt of her mournefull Parents, and in that pitifull manner, her ſorrow redoubled vpon her, which receiuing increaſe from her ſhame, ſhee ſwouned anew. Wherewith her Parents griefe was a-freſh renewed in that terrible manner, as if their hearts had beene rent from their bodies by the roots. And with the tendreſt and kindeſt words they could vſe, they did ſeeke all they could to comfort her; ſpeaking vnto her in the ſweet and louing language of ſuch a Father and Mother, that ſo dearely lou'd a Daughter, indeuouring by thoſe ſoft and gentle phraſes, to cure the wound of her minde, which was more then that of her body. With this, poore wretched *Clorinia* began to gather breath, and bewailing her misfortune (which till then ſhe was not able to doe) ſhe did moue the very ſtones to compaſsion, and to take pitie of this her wofull and miſerable condition.

Then they preſently began with great ſecreſie to treate of her Cure. *Valerio* her brother went forth-with to fetch a Surgeon, a friend of his, of whoſe ſecreſie he was confidently aſſured. The night was exceeding darke, and therefore he tooke a Lanthorne along with him; and as he was croſsing the ſtreet, it was his hap to diſcry *Dorido* a farre off, who in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion was comming along the ſtreet, with purpoſe to goe ſee his Miſtreſſe, being ignorant of what had paſſed. He began to call vnto him with a ſad and mournfull voyce, and when he drew neere vnto him, with a heauy cheere hee ſayd; O my true friend! Whither art thou going? Goeſt thou peraduenture to condole with vs our great diſaſter, and that Tragick ſorrow, which muſt ſhorten our life? Haſt thou either ſeene, or heard of the like mis-hap vnto ours, and of the vnfortunate accident that hath befalne our deareſt ſiſter *Clorinia?* Woe is me; yet to thee, that art our true friend, I cannot conceale that, which we muſt hide from all the world beſides. For I know aſſuredly, that thou wilt beare a part in our ſorrow, and be a Companion of theſe our miſeries; nay I know thou wilt, as one of vs, vſe all diligence in reuenging this wrong, and labour all thou canſt to finde out him, that hath beene the cruell murtherer of my ſiſter. Wilt thou *Dorido?* I am ſure thou wilt.

Dorido, whileſt he was hearing this ſad ſtorie, ſtood amazed like a man, that had beene bereft of his ſenſes: And it was a wonder, that he was able to ſtand vpon his legs, being ſo word-ſtrooken to the heart as he was, but recollecting himſelfe by degrees, which was holpen on by the deſire which he had to vnderſtand how the world went, ſtriuing to fortifie himſelfe againſt this fierce aſſault, which had already ſhaken the very Walls of his hearr, with a troubled voyce he began to inquire what the matter was.

Valerio, from point to point deliuered vnto him all the particulars, and told him that he was now going to call a Surgeon; intreating him, that he would goe along with him, fearing leſt the life of *Clorinia*, through too much delay, might runne ſome hazard. *Dorido* accompanyed him; and albeit hee had more need of comfort himſelfe, then to giue comfort vnto others, yet notwithſtanding, framing himſelfe thereunto as well as he could, at length he brake thus with him; Friend *Valerio*, this dolefull misfortune of yours, and the lamentable caſe of your vnfortunate ſiſter *Clorinia*, doth ſo neerely touch me, and workes that true ſenſe of ſorrow in me, that no leſſe then to your ſelfe, they may giue me the *Peſame*: and come and condole with me this

diſaſtrous

diſaſtrous miſchance, for I am ſo truly ſenſible thereof, that I dare auow, you haue no aduantage of me, nor can your ſorrow exceed mine.

But ſeeing our griefe can doe vs but little good, and that it is to no end to weepe, and take on for that, vvhich cannot now be holpen; My aduice is, that you vvould conſult what is to be done in this caſe; and if I may perſwade, I would haue all diligence vſed for the finding out of that Traytor which hath done this villanous Act, to the end that vengeance and full reuenge may be taken of him, which was neuer yet executed vpon any other. This taske you ſhall put vpon me, I vvill take this charge to my ſelfe, and doubt not, but by one meanes or other I ſhall come to finde it out. Goe you, and call the Surgeon: For it is not fit, where ſo many things are to be done, we ſhould be all buſied about one and the ſame thing, eſpecially, that which belongs to my charge, being a buſineſſe, which vvill require much labour. Let euery man take his Qu, and perfect his owne part. Follow you yours, and I will follow mine; and ſo farewell; for I haue not the patience to deferre it any longer. And ſo they parted.

Now *Dorido* had a ſtrong beliefe, and did confidently aſſure himſelfe, that *Horatio*, and none but *Horatio*, could be the author of ſo great wickedneſſe and falſehood, induced there-vnto by thoſe many reaſons, which did concurre to confirme this perſwaſion, the leaſt vvhereof vvas a manifeſt token, and apparant euidence, that it vvas onely his Act, and none but his. Where-vpon he reſolued with himſelfe, to inflict ſuch a puniſhment vpon him, as ſhould be equall to that his iuſt diſdaine, and anſwerable to the heinouſneſſe of his offence.

With this determination he went home to his owne houſe; and being entred into his lodging, ſhutting the doore to him, he let looſe the reines to his teares, grieuouſly lamenting this ſad miſchance that had thus vnhappily befalne his Miſtris.

O *Clorinia* (ſaid he) the delight of my eyes, and the ioy of my heart, I ſee what harme thou haſt ſuffered for my ſake; I (vnfortunate I) was the cauſe thereof. It was that Traytor *Horatio*, that thus deceiu'd thee, whom thou ſuppoſedſt to haue been beloued *Dorido*.

O vnhappy Miſtris of my life, I haue brought thee to this miſerable paſſe, it is I that haue kill'd thee, and no body elſe; for it was I that did diſturbe thee of thy reſt; it was I, that drew thee out from thy retyred and reſerued courſe of life. O accurſed chinke! O accurſed eyes, that euer yee peep't thereinto! O accurſed tongue, that madeſt the motion, that we ſhould there meet, and talke together. O my deare *Clorinia*, *Clorinia*, my life; yet not my life, but my death: ſince that mine muſt follow thine: I was the cauſe of all this ill. Yet will I ſpare my ſelfe ſo much life, as to liue to reuenge this notorious wrong; and liue thou too, *Clorinia*, till thou ſee the vengeance that ſhal be done vpon this Traytor, which ſhall be as exemplary, as iuſt: that it may remaine as a memoriall to all ſucceeding Ages.

And I heere ſolemnely vow to ſacrifice to thy ſacred and innocent aſhes, the impious bloud of this vile Traytor *Horatio*. For that one hand, which he hath taken from thee, I will giue thee two of his. Hee cut off one, that vvas innocent and harmeleſſe, and I will cut off two, that were wicked and ſacrilegious. Let Heauen lengthen thy life ſo long, till I effect this my purpoſe, and ſuffer thee to enioy that recompence, which I doe owe vnto thy loue.

And thou (ſweet *Clorinia*) pardon ſo much of the fault, as was in me. And if my death will doe you any pleaſure, or that it ſtand with your liking, mine owne hands ere this, ſhould haue made vvay there-vnto, and laid it downe at your feet.

With theſe and other pittifull complaints, did he bewaile this heauy accident, worthy of eternall teares; and ſurely ſorrow would there and then haue made

made an end of him, ſo extremely had it ſeazed vpon him, and with that violence of paſsion, if his afflicted ſoule had not beene vnder-propt vvith the deſire of reuenge; and thus betweene death and life did hee ſpend that night.

The next day following he went to viſit *Clorinia*; whither when he was come, her Parents, and her Brother began afreſh to renew theit teares, imbracing and weeping one ouer another, till at laſt the father of *Clorinia* began, as well as his griefe would giue him leaue, to ſay; O ſonne *Dorido*, what misfortune can be ſo great, ſo miſerable as ours? What rigour of the heau'ns hath conſpired againſt vs? What infernall fury euer inuented the like miſchiefe? What thinkeſt thou of this ſad chance? What deem'ſt thou of our honour? What cloake will couer ſo foule a ſpot? And what reuenge may mitigate ſo great a wrong as this? and giue ſatisfaction anſwerable to theſe our ſorrows? Tell vs (I pray) what comfort can we looke for? Or how can we liue without her, who hath giuen vs life? *Dorido*, not being able to abſtaine from teares, comforting her afflicted Parents, and Brother, told them: Wee are not now to ſpend the time in teares and lamentations, but in that which may import vs moſt.

And albeit, that which I am willing to propoſe, ought rather to proceed from any body elſe, then my ſelfe, yet the occaſion, and the ſecreſie wherewith it is fit it ſhould be carried, obligeth me there-vnto:

You all know very well, and haue ſeene to your griefes, the generall misfortune that hath befalne vs all; being as well yours, as mine; and rather mine, then yours, for that your ſorrow is ioyned vnto mine; which addition makes but the heape of mine owne the bigger. Beſides, I ſee the thred of my life cut off before my face, that now I expect a death as bitter, as I thought it would haue beene pleaſant vnto me, if it had made an end of me, before *Clorinia*. Ye are not ignorant what I am; and I likewiſe know your great worth and quality; which if it ſhall not ouer-ſway mine, it is the ſingular loue and friendſhip ye haue borne me, that muſt equall the ſcales, laying an euerlaſting obligation vpon me to deſerue the ſame. This caſe then I make to be mine owne; I challenge it as a thing proper vnto me.

And that the world may ſo vnderſtand it, and ſo take it, that which hereafter I ſhal intreat you for by a third perſon, I will now demand of you by way of grace and requeſt: Which is; That you will be pleaſed to giue me *Clorinia* to wife. Wherein ye ſhall doe theſe two things: Firſt, ye ſhall thereby recouer your honour. Secondly, ye ſhall execute your reuenge by this hand of mine. If heauen ſhall be ſo propitious and fauourable vnto me to bleſſe me with her life, ſhe ſhall liue and remaine with me, though not according as her worth deſerueth, yet anſwerable to that deſire which I haue to ſerue her; making that vp in my loue, which is wanting in my meanes. And if ought ſucceed hereafter in the righting of this wrong, it is fit the world ſhould take notice, that her husband did that where-vnto he was obliged; and not *Dorido*, her parents friend. Make good therefore this my requeſt, for the good which from thence may redound to vs all.

To the Parents, as alſo to the Brother, this did ſeeme to be a very iuſt and honeſt motion, and gaue him many thankes for this true teſtimony of his loue, both to them, and their houſe. But becauſe there was one as yet vn-askt, which was to be a principall party in this buſines, which was *Clorinia*, they would ſee if they could draw her to conſent there-unto. Which when it was broken vnto her, the teares guſhed out of her eyes for very ioy, and ſhe ſaid vnto them:

This is that alone, which I hope, will keepe life in me: and if I ſhould buy it at as deare a rate, as death, yet I ſhould thinke it cheape inough, and that I had a good penny-worth of my bargaine. I truſt in God that I ſhall liue contentedly, and dye comfortably. And therefore, I beſeech you, that I may bee

eſpouſed to *Dorido*, according as he hath deſired. Preſently here-vpon they call'd him in, and (when they came to ſee each other) for a good while, they were neither of them able to ſpeake a word, both their hearts were ſo full, and their ſoules ſo ouerwhelmed; hers with ioy, and his with griefe.

That fit ouer-paſt, they plighted their trothes, and were made man and wife, vſing thoſe diligencies therein with the beſt ſecreſie they could, till the time ſhould come, that they might be openly eſpouſed in the Church.

Three dayes were ſpent in this Solemnity, and with this content *Clorinia* ſeemed to be vpon the mending hand. But it was but a lightening before death: for through the ſtore of bloud which ſhe loſt, ſhe liu'd not long after. *Dorido* perceiuing, that it was impoſsible that his Spouſe ſhould eſcape with life, to the end that ſhe might die fully contented and ſatisfied, (if there may be any ſuch thing in death:) on the fourth day, holding it now a fit and conuenient time, to put that in execution which he had deuiſed and plotted with himſelfe, on the fifth he inuited *Horatio* to his houſe, as he had done at other times heretofore. Who truſting in the ſecreſie wherewith he had committed this foule offence, and that there was no talke thereof in the Towne, nor ſo much as a word ſpoken of it, went thither as ſecurely and as boldly, as if he had done no ſuch matter, and without any ſuſpition or iealouſie at all.

Dorido, to lull him the more aſleepe, and to make him more ſecure, feigned, not to know of any ſuch thing, he entertain'd him with a cheerefull looke, laught, and was merry with him, that growing thereby the more confident, he might the willinger accept of his inuitation. *Dorido* had put ſuch a kinde of Confection into one of his Bottles of Wine, that it ſhould caſt him that drunke thereof, into a moſt deepe and profound ſleepe. Which he ſecretly commanded he ſhould be ſerued withall at the table, as oft as he call'd for any Wine. And as he had commanded, ſo was it ordred. And when he had euen now dined, the laſt morſell being ſcarce out of his mouth, he ſate me in his Chayre like one that had beene dead.

Dorido, when he ſaw he was ſure enough now in his hands, and that the Fowle could not eſcape the ſnare, binding his legges and armes as hard as he could for his life, to the legges and armes of the Chayre, and hauing made faſt all the doores of his houſe, he put to his noſe a kinde of little round ball (like a Pomander) made for that purpoſe, which he had no ſooner ſmelt vnto, and taken the ſent thereof vp into his head, but that he preſently awaked from that deepe ſleepe, wherein hee had before beene buryed. And finding himſelfe bound in that faſt manner, without being able to wag, he knew then that his puniſhment was at hand, for that hand which he had ſo cruelly cut off. *Dorido* was as quicke in cutting off both his hands, as he was nimble in vn-ioynting that of hers. That done, throwing a cord about his necke, making vſe of one of the corners of the Chayre, he gaue him the *Garrote*, wherewith he was ſtrangled to death. The next morning, before it was peepe of day, he droue him along before him in the Chayre vpon a Horſe, till he came to the houſe, where *Clorinia* dwelt, and putting a piece of Timber Gibbet-wiſe, into that hole in the Wall, where he had committed this odious and vn-manly act, he left him there hanging with his hands ty'd about his necke in a ſtring, (like a childes payre of Mittens,) and ſome Verſes hanging at his Hempen chayne, to giue ſatisfaction to the world, vpon what reaſon this was done. And ſo *Dorido*, when he had thus reuenged himſelfe vpon *Horatio*, left *Rome*, with purpoſe neuer to ſee it againe; thinking with himſelfe, that without his *Clorinia*, neither Countrie, nor life, nor any thing elſe could be comfortable vnto him. And about the breake of day, when this ſpectacle began to be ſeene, and talkt of, *Clorinia* within a little after finiſhed her life.

This lamentable Accident cauſed great both ſorrow and admiration in the Embaſſadour. But his houre was come, that he muſt to the Palace, which made

made them breake off for that preſent, and to take their leaues. I thanke God a thouſand times, that he made me not a Louer : And if I had not beene a Gameſter, peraduenture I ſhould haue done worſe, as you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part of my life, whereunto (if my firſt haue pleas'd thee) I inuite thee.

The Verſes, which were hung about *Horatios* necke, turned into our vulgar tongue, ſound thus:

I Was raſh Hee ; blinded with iealous loue,
Seeing my friend, preferr'd in my Loues choyſe,
(Counterfeiting his Signall, cloathes and voyce)
Whom deepe Diſdaine did to foule Hatred moue,

To Heau'n and Men, I cruell Traytor grew ;
Faire Clorinia *(with innocence bedeckt)*
I wrong'd, (vrg'd by my Loue, and her Neglect.)
Whoſe Storie, may all eyes with teares bedew.

Her Hand and Life (that on her might wrecke
Reuenge) I did cut off : Cauſe of her end,
Her Hate to mee, and Loue vnto my friend,
Hee hung theſe hands of mine about my necke.

Was Party, Witneſſe, and Iudge : Whoſe ſentence
Was too ſmall a puniſhment for my Offence.

FINIS.

THE

THE ROGVE:

OR

THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE.*

WRITTEN IN SPANISH

by MATHEO ALEMAN,

Seruant to his Catholike Maieſtie, and borne in SEVILL.

LONDON,
Printed by G. E. *for* EDWARD BLOVNT.
1623.

The Rogue:

OR

THE SECOND

PART OF THE LIFE

OF GUZMAN D'

ALFARACHE.

TO THE CVRIOVS READER.

ALbeit I was ſtill afraid to expoſe this my Second Part to the light, after it had beene ſome yeares finiſhed and peruſed, (though more had beene too few, for the preſuming to publiſh it) and that it were better for me to vphold the good opinion gotten by my firſt, (which with open armes was generally ſo kindly embraced by all) then to hazard their good wils by this ſecond; I was in doubt with my ſelfe, whether I were beſt to put my reputation vpon ſo tickliſh a pin; either becauſe it ſhould not perhaps be ſo well accepted; or that I might chance to fall ſhort of my deſire, miſſing the marke whereat I aymed: For commonly where the greateſt care is taken, thoſe that are vnfortunate, are wont to faile moſt. Yet notwithſtanding, it being with me, as with that bad ſeruant, who with blowes and kicks, is awaked out of his deepe ſleepe; being rouzed vp by ſo violent a ſtroake; that hapned to my ſelfe, which is wont to befall lazie and ſlothfull perſons; to doe one thing twice ouer. For hauing beene too prodigall in communicating my papers, and the conceptions of my braine, they caught me when I was vpon my wings. So that ſeeing my ſelfe (if I may lawfully vſe that phraſe) robbed, and defrauded, I was enforced to fall a-freſh to my labour, ſeeking out ſome new ſupply of moneys, wherewithall to pay my debts, and to diſ-ingage my word, which I had formerly paſt. So that by this meanes I was driuen to differ, as much as poſſibly I could, from that which I had written before. Surely it was *Eſaus*

 owne

owne ouer-ſight, ſome peculiar ſlip or fault of his, that being tyred out in the chaſe, and killing of his game, gaue occaſion to *Iacob* to ſteale away his bleſſing from him.

Truly, I muſt ingeniouſly acknowledge in this my Competitor, Concurrent, or Corriuall (who ere he be) his great learning, his nimble wit, his deepe iudgement, his pleaſant conceits, and his generall knowledge in all humane and diuine letters, and that his diſcourſes throughout, are of that qualitie and condition, that I doe much enuie them, and ſhould be proud that they were mine. But by the way, let him giue me leaue to tell him (which is no more then what others ſay) that if vpon any other occaſion ſauing this, hee would haue beene pleaſed to make vſe of theſe his good parts, ſo honourable would his paines haue therein appeared, that the graueſt perſon that is, need not to haue beene aſhamed to diſcouer both his name, and his face; but to deale after this manner, was to foyſt into *Caſtile*, the coyne of *Aragon*. But herein, that ſucceeded vnto him, which vſually (we ſee) befalleth many women, whoſe parts and members, conſidered ſeuerally by them-ſelues and apart, are of that rare and ſingular perfection, that deſire cannot wiſh it more, nor the penſill expreſſe it better. But afterwards, when all theſe diſtinct parts ſhall be conioyned, made one whole peece, and examined together, they fall ſhort in the making vp of a faire and well-fauour'd face. But he proceeded therein diſcreetly; taking that courſe, which they vſe to doe, who goe (preſuming on the actiueneſſe of their perſon) with their Lance in their wreſt, masked and diſguiſed, to encounter their aduerſarie. But becauſe theſe are things of aduenture, and depend much vpon fortune, if they hit right, they make them-ſelues knowne, but if they miſſe, they goe away aſhamed, and you ſhall neuer ſee the face of them. Well, whatſoeuer hath beene done in this kinde, or howſoeuer carryed by him, he hath enforced me to defend my ſelfe. For that he argueth; That the great paines that he had taken, and ſo worthy of excuſe, in following the tracke of my ſteps, and the imitation of my workes, grew firſt from this, that hee eſteemed them to be good. I pay him againe in the ſame money,

money, by following of him. Onely we differ in this; That he hath made a second part out of my first; and I onely imitated his second. And shall doe the like in the third, if being elder hand, he shall vye vpon me. Whereunto if I be put, I shall not refuse to see it. Assuring my selfe, that I shall not be shut out, but haue a place amongst the rest. For the field being so large, through the pleasantnesse of the subiect, whereunto the sharpnesse of the appetite will likewise giue some helpe, more parts will daily come out of this booke, then Conies out of their Berryes, and more glosses made thereupon, then on the faire *Angelica* in the dayes of *Castilejo*. But I aduise in this case, that they would not be too nimble fingerd in taking pen in hand, till they haue wearyed their eyes with perusing, and inlarged their vnderstanding, that it may bee made capable to receiue whatsoeuer shall bee brought vnto it. Nor would I haue them to write, till they be well read, if they will attaine to hit the white, and not shoot beside the butt. For our *Guzman* hauing purposed to play the good Student in the Latine and Greeke tongues, and in the studie of Rhetoricke, and hauing gone forward in his studies with a full purpose to profesle Religion; to take him now out of *Alcala*, thus on the sodaine, so quite alienated from his former inclination, and so bad a Proficient, were *cortar el hilo a la tela*, to cut the thread before the web were wouen; contrary to that which is pretended in this Historie of his Life; which was onely to serue as a sentinell, to discouer all sorts of Vices, & to draw treacle out of diuers poysons: That is to say; To describe vnto you a man, perfect in his parts and person, punished with troubles, and afflicted with miseries, and falling afterwards into (of all other) the basest roguerie, is put into the Gallies, where his wings were clipt, that he could not get thence in haste. Let vs slip it ouer, That he could not be called a most famous theefe, for the stealing of three cloakes, howbeit two of them were very faire ones, and of much value, but the other a poore one: Let vs likewise omit, That it is improper to fabulous Histories, to introduce publike and knowne persons, naming them by their proper names: And let vs come to

that

that obligation, which he had to returne to *Genoa* to reuenge the wrong wherewith he threatned his kindred in the laſt chapter of the firſt Part: And many other things, which without giuing ſatisfaction, hee paſſeth ouer in diuers different faſhions, altering, & reiterating not only the accident it ſelfe, but euen the very words vſed therein. So that vndoubtedly I am of opinion, that it is a thing of more difficultie, then euery man is aware of, to vndertake the purſuit of another mans diſcourſe. For it leadeth its vndertaker along euen from his purpoſed, and firſt intended courſe, to thoſe things, whoſe chaſe he cannot chooſe but follow. Nay ſhould he come to confer mouth to mouth, with the partie him-ſelfe, it is impoſſible but he ſhould goe out of the way: For there are many conceits, that are thruſt into by-corners, and there hid; wherewith euen its owne proper Author is much troubled, vpon a ſudden and preſent occaſion, with calling them to minde, time hauing worne them almoſt out; whereby men may fall into miſtakes; quoting *K. Don Fernando* of *Zamora*, in ſtead of the *Infanta Dona Vrraca*, his daughter. This doth not argue want in the vnderſtanding, nor is it a defect, that another ſhould iump vpon my conceit, & think my thoughts. But I ſay it is raſhnes in him, that will offer to run with that man, who muſt needs out-ſtrip him, through the others ſlowneſſe of footmanſhip, or that he runnes not right vpon the marke. If here the phraſe be not ſo ſignificant, the ſtile not ſo loftie, the language not ſo ſweet, the prouerbs not ſo pithie, the ſtories not ſo pleaſant, nor ſo cleanly carryed as I could wiſh; My excuſe muſt be; Many ouerſights cannot be auoyded in the writing but of a little; which will aske a larger time to correct and amend them. But hauing finiſhed my third Part, and following *Horace* his counſell therein, that I may be the better able to offer it to your view (which ſhall be ſhortly) I could not excuſe this paſſage, as being very neceſſarie for thoſe ends which I pretend. Accept of my good will, which is to ſerue thee. For the

This 3d part was never ſeen Published.

times are not ſtill alike; nor the ſtarres alwayes
fauourable; nor *Calliope* continually
ſet vpon the merry pin.

ANCI-

ANCIANT LVYS DE VALDES HIS ELOGIVM To *Mateo Aleman.*

AS if Armes, and Learning were not Sisters, some pratling Sophister seemeth (me thinkes) to tell me, That I should doe well to follow my military profession, and let Elogiums *alone, leauing them to Schollers; it seeming vnto him, that these two, are of too different a nature, to consort together. But I shall be able to point forth vnto him, not one, but many* Cæsars, *as dextrous in Letters, as disciplin'd in Armes. And that I may take away all occasion from such Cauillers, of alledging against me, That I am too forward in vsurping the office of an* Orator, *taxing mee of too much boldnesse and inconsiderate rashnesse, I will march as farre off as I can, from their dangerous style of* flattery *and* ostentation, *safely retiring my selfe into mine owne Trenches, and there to defend and maintaine the truth, a thing as proper to a Souldier, as is his Sword and Target, or his Pike and Corslet.*

I will be but the Eccho, not the Chronicler, of what I haue seene, heard, treated, and knowne abroad in the world; for I haue beene in my time in many, and different Nations, and Countries. I will goe on, and cumply with my desire, not fearing the face of Calumniation, *because I know my selfe to be dis-interessed, and a free-man. For loue, interest, and feare, are those three ropes, that halter Iustice.*

And for that it is so iust a thing, to reward mens labours, encouraging the vertuous with a shout, as they doe in warre, giuing it them as a thankfull pay, which being truly deserued, is a true treasure. I haue therefore beene willing, seeing so many so drouzy in the businesse, to take vp the pen for them, though least of all obliged thereunto in the common opinion of the world, by reason of my profession. But no man shall out-strip me herein. We are all beholding to Mateo Aleman, *wee are all indebted vnto him, and of all he doth iustly deserue condigne commendation. For wee must acknowledge him to be the first, that till this very day, hath in such a kind of style as his, come to discouer and excommunicate Vice: (with such a sweetnesse and softnesse) which being to them a venemous Aspe, robs them of their liues, when they are in their sweetest sleepe.*

ELOGIVM.

Many Phyſitians miniſter to their ſicke Patients, pils of Aloes for to purge the head, but few or none of them haue taken pleaſure in chewing of them, nor ſo much as to touch them with their tongue, neyther haue they beene able ſo to ſweeten them, that mouing a deſire to eate them, they ſhould procure a generall appetite. Only Mateo Aleman, *hath taught vs the way to taſte things with delight, inſtructing vs by other mens actions how to gouerne ours: with no ſmall hurt to his health and eſtate, hauing much waſted both the one and the other by his painfull ſtudies. And we may very well ſay of him, That neuer Souldier had a poorer purſe, and a richer minde, nor a life more vnquiet, and full of trouble, then was his; and only, becauſe hee accounted it a greater honor vnto him, to be held a poore Philoſopher then a rich flatterer. He left (as it is well knowne to the world) voluntarily, and of his owne accord, the Kings palace, where hee ſerued almoſt twenty yeares, being the beſt, and as it were the very creame of his age, in the Office of* Contador de reſultas, *to King* Philip *the* 2. *and in many other waighty buſineſſes, beſides viſitations and ſuruayes, which were committed vnto him, in all which hee behaued himſelfe ſo well, that hee euermore gaue wonderfull good ſatisfaction, proceeding ſo vprightly, that he grew to be ſo poore, that not being able any longer, by reaſon of his wants and neceſsities, to continue theſe his ſeruices, he retyred himſelfe from that courſe of life, to one of leſſer both oſtentation and attendance. And though he wanted the goods of fortune, yet was he rich in the endowments of the ſoule, which are of much more eſtimation and price, then worldly pelfe, whereof no man could more truly boaſt himſelfe.*

Let the tongues of men be liſtned vnto, and yee ſhall heare nothing ſo common as the publiſhing of his praiſe: no leſſe in Spaine *(where it is no ſmall wonder to haue a Prophet liked in his owne Countrey) then in* Italy, France, Flanders, *and* Germany, *which mine owne eares and eyes can truly teſtifie and avow. And I might (if need were) boldly ſweare, That I neuer heard his name mentioned, but with the addition of ſome honourable Epithite, euen to the giuing of him this noble Attribute,* El Eſpañol divino, The diuine Spaniard.

Who, like him, in leſſe then three yeares, and in his owne life time, ſaw his owne workes tranſlated into ſo many ſundry languages, that like your Cartillas *in* Caſtile, *his bookes ran poſting for* Italy *and* France? *What Author euer writ, who at the very time when he was willing to bring forth his Labours to the light, they haue ſcarce come forth of the wombe of the Preſſe, but that they were ſtrangled in the mid-wifes hands, and left for dead. And thoſe his workes, that came forth into the world aliue, and did breathe, and inioy their life, as theſe of this our Author, they flew abroad with ſuch ſwift and nimble wings, holpen by thoſe of Fame, that with extraordinary ſpeed they paſt through all parts of* Chriſtendome, *inſomuch that there was not any one Prouince, whereinto they haue not flowen, and receiued, where-euer they came, moſt honorable entertainment?*

What workes can ye inſtance in, that in ſo ſhort a time, haue had ſo many Impreſsions? The whole number of thoſe bookes that haue been printed amounting to more then fifty thouſand volumes. There haue beene (of my knowledge) ſix and twenty ſeuerall Impreſsions, whereof he was rob'd,

whereby

whereby others became rich and the Owner of them, poore. Against whom but him, did ye euer finde the gates of Murmuration *ſhut? Who, but he, had ſo perfectly learnd the way to beat Malice out of the field, and to put her to flight? If this be ſo; or if (as by euident Mathematicall demonſtrations) it ſhall require a neceſſary proofe of witneſſes, let the beſt of the world be brought forth, I meane the famous Vniuerſity of* Salamanca, *where being celebrated there, by the beſt wits of that Academy, I haue heard many ſpeake of him, as the* Grecians *of their* Demoſthenes, *and the* Romanes *of their* Cicero; *reputing* Mateo Aleman *as the Prince of eloquence in the Spaniſh tongue, as well for the modeſty, & dextrouſnes of his ſtyle, as for his elegancies, and choice phraſes. Of which opinion, was a religious* Auguſtine, *as diſcreet, as learned; who maintained in that Vniuerſity, in a publike Act, that there was not from the beginning of the world, to this preſent day, that the firſt Part of this was printed, any booke of like nature to this, (being no diuine ſubiect) of greater eyther profit or pleaſure.*

Valençiano *teſtifieth this truth; who (denying his name) falſly ſtyles himſelfe* Mateo Lujan, *that he might be taken for* Mateo Aleman. *And albeit he might parallel him in his name, and Country, yet that he ſhould be the ſame man in his workes, it was not poßible. Only therein his malice may be diſcouered, and that he did that he did, moued thereunto out of the benefit that he ſhould reape therby: which if it had fallen out (as he expected) had been no ſmall matter; But it fell out, (as fit it was) contrary to his expectation. For in that very ſelf-ſame yeare that it came forth, I bought one in* Flanders, *which in the Frontiſpice, had its Impreßion in* Caſtile, *taking it to be authenticall and good, till I had read a little of it, and then it was not long, that his eares* [a] *ſhot out of his skin, and ſo came to be knowne what he was.*

But to let this paſſe, and to ſpeake of thoſe that admiring ſuch a deale of depth and profoundnes both of wit and learning, being wonderfull willing to haue ſome learned and graue Fathers to adopt this childe of his begetting, they all laboured to ſeeke out ſome one, who for his quicknes of wit, greatnes of Schollerſhip, and ſingularity of eloquence, might be able to vndertake ſo rare and admirable a peece of worke; all which doth argue the worth thereof, and redound to the greater glory of the true Author. And then ſhall they free themſelues of this doubt, when they ſhall haue peruſed his St. Antonio de Padua, *which out of a vow that he had made, to ſet forth his life & miracles, made him ſo ſlow in publiſhing this his ſecond Part. They ſhall ſee how miraculouſly he treateth of them, and it may almoſt be counted a miracle, if we will but conſider how wonderfully he carryed himſelfe in the printing of them. For putting his papers from hand to hand to the Preſſe, and wanting matter for that dayes worke, I knew for certaine, that ouer-night he compoſed ſo much ſtuffe, as did ſerue to keepe the Preſſe going all the next day following: for he was troubled at that time with diuers other buſineſſes, which did neceſſarily require his help and aßiſtance. And in thoſe ſhort houres of the night, he was ſeene to imploy him-ſelfe with a great deale of diligence, as well in the affayres of his other buſineſſes, as in the ordering and ſorting of papers to ſend them to the Printers, as alſo, in the compoſing of more matter for the Preſſe, beſides*

[a] Moſtrar las orejas fuera del pellejo, *is metaphorically an Aſſe.*

ſides his attendance vpon other things, importing his owne perſon and houſe. Euery one of which would haue well required a whole man, free from all other incumbrances. And that, which he wrote in this manner, was all the whole third Booke. And though euery-where through-out in all the reſt of his writings, he hath ſhow'd the Ocean of his wit, being that therein they ſhall find a moſt rich treaſure of diuers Hiſtories moraliz̃ed, and expreſſed with all the elegancie that can be deuiſed, yet this is that enamelling, that beautifies that Iewell, and ſets it beſt forth. As all thoſe haue affirmed, who had the good hap to haue a ſight thereof.

What ſhall I ſay of this his Second Part of Guzman de Alfarache, *and in how ſhort a time he made it? Which ſeemeth almoſt a thing impoſsible, being ſo differing from his former, which he was forced to change and to alter, caſting it in a new molde, for the reaſons before deliuered. This will render ſufficient teſtimony of his worth, & bridle thoſe raſh tongues and head-ſtrong ſpirits, which ſhall kick againſt him, and vainly and fooliſhly runne on to the wronging of their iudgements. If all that I haue ſaid be truth, if the learned approue it, the vulgar deny it not, if the world confeſſeth it; (for here euery one may meet with that, which ſhall pleaſe his appetite, which* Horace *holds ſo difficult a thing,) if vnder a prophane name he doth write ſo diuinely, that he may ſerue for a bridle to the bad, for a ſpurre to the good, for ſtudy to the learned, for entertainment to ordinary capacities, and in generall, for a fine Politicall, Ethicall, and Oeconomicall Schoole, and ſo full of ſweetneſſe and pleaſure, that it may inuite any man to looke thereinto, and to dwell vpon that, which he ſhall finde there ſet downe, both for pleaſure, and for profit. What doe I throw vpon him? or what doe I in this, more then to pay him that, which he ſo iuſtly deſerueth? O happy* Sevill, *that maiſt amongſt thy many Greatneſſes, nay one of thy greateſt, glory in this thy Sonne, whoſe laborious endeuors, and indefatigable ſtudies, (equalling the very beſt both* Latines *and* Grecians,) *haue thus truly merited and deſerued, that all the nations of the world, crowning his head with Bayes, and celebrating his name, ſhould willingly, and with a great deale of triumph, ſing forth his due prayſe.*

VPON

VPON THE BOOKE,
and the Author thereof.

POore *Guzmans* life, the mapp of Vice and Sinne,
Story'ed by *Aleman*, is as a Voyce
From Heau'en, ſhewing how thou ſhouldſt make thy choiſe.
The word, *Shunne thou to bee what I haue bin.*
Who ſtands here as a Marke; that thou maiſt ſee
Where his ſhip was drown'd; How the ſame was ſplit,
More through lacke of Wiſedome, then want of Wit.
Which was the cauſe of all his Miſery.
The dainty ſtyle of this his pleaſing quill
By *Guzmans* roguiſh life, aduiſeth thee
What an vpright and honeſt life ſhould be.
How this, doth leade to good; how that, to ill.
How ſlight ſo e're this fiction ſeeme to be,
None, can be fuller, of Morality.

FRATRIS CVSTODII LVPI, LVSITANI,
Ordinis Sanctiſſimæ Trinitatis de libri vtilitate,

EPIGRAMMA.

SVnt duo quæ pariter virtus perfecta requirit:
Quòd prauè nunquam, quòd benè ſemper agas.
Hæc tibi, ſi cupias, vllo ne tempore deſint.
Auctoris geminum perlege, Lector, opus.
Antoni *nunquam ponat tua dextera librum.*
Nec tibi Guzmani *pagina diſpliceat.*
Si referas diui mores: infanda prophani
Si ſcelera abÿcias: omnia puncta feres.
Reddite Matthæo *grato pro munere grates:*
Quo duce conſpicuum ſit pietatis iter.
Planius hoc fiet, poſtquam ex incudibus Auctor
Suſtulerit plenos vtilitate libros.

AD MATTHÆVM ALEMANVM
de ſuo GVZMANO,
ΤΕΤΡΑΔΙΣΤΙΧΟΝ.
Ruy Fernandez de Almada.

VIlibus exemplis Pharÿ quid grandia celant?
Planaq́ cur ſimulant abditiore typo?
Nempè vetant Sophiæ myſteria prodere vulgo
Intimiuſq́ animo preſſa figura manet.
His ducibus Guzmane *geris, ceu* Proteus *alter,*
Plana ſub obſcuro, magna minore typo.
Ergò cum ſcitè Μαϑησει μαϑηματα *dones*
Te ſibi μαϑητην, *Hiſpalis alma canat.*

IOAN-

IOANNIS RIBERII LVSITANI ad AVTHOREM, ENCOMIASTICHON.

LAus, Matthæe, *tibi supereſt poſt fata perennis,*
Quam nullo minuet tempore, tempus edax.
Orbe pererrato virtutem extendere factis,
Factum ingens : opus eſt Martis, *&* Artis *opus,*
Fortunam maior variam ſuperare labore,
Herculeis *maior* Quiribus *iſte labor.*
Maius opus, maior labor eſt coluiſſe Mineruam:
Maior & ex proprio condere Marte *libros.*
Heroas decorare ſolent duo nomina, Mars, Ars:
Munera tu pariter Martis *&* Artis *habes.*
Mars *dedit inuictum, quo tendis ad ardua, pectus :*
Excoluit mentem docta Minerua *tuam.*
Ingenij monumenta tui ſuper æthera nota,
Teſtantur larga præſtita dona manu.
Multa Hiſpana canit Muſa : atqui nullus libera
Dogmata pinxit adhuc φερτερος ἐς μιδοδο.
Teſtis hic eſt codex modico qui venditur ære,
Attalicas ſuperant, quas dabit emptus, opes.
Cuius ab aſpectu morſus compreſſit inanos,
Inuidia, heu multis iniurioſa nimis.
Zoile tranſuerſo calamo, qui vulnera figis,
I procul, en contra numina bella paras.
Contra Mercurium, Phœbum, *contraq;* Mineruam,
Mortalis poterit tela mouere manus?
Quiſquis auarus ades, redimis qui ſanguine gemma,
Gemma tibi paruo venditur ære, veni.
Hauris ab effoſſa pretioſa pericula terra :
Hic liber arcanas fundet, & addet opes.
Decolor eſt diues, fuluo quod pallet in auro,
Non ſunt diuitiæ delitiæq; ſimul.
At liber hic auri venis qui pulcher abundat,
Nunc tibi delitias, diuitiaſq; dabit.
Aureus hic certe gemma eſt pretioſa libellus,
Quis tenui gemmam reſpnas ære datam?

TO

To the Tranſlator.

LIue (*Guzman*) to a Caueat; Liue to praiſe
This languag'd Man; who hath renew'd thy dayes
By a new birth. Tranſlating thee, as tho
The *Engliſh Rogue*, were not the *Picaro*,
But a more liuely peece. Loe, what Art hath done.
Here the *Reflection's* brighter then the *Sunne*.
One Language is too narrow to containe
The boundleſſe-raſcall-froath of *Guzmans* braine.
It cry'd for more. This Author, hearing it,
Imployes his Penſill, drawes it to the quick
In Engliſh colours: and ſo ſets it forth,
As *Guzmans* ſhame, and furtherer of worth.
For me, to *Guzman*-it in Rime, or to rehearſe
His Proſe; were but to ſpoyle a *Rogue* in Verſe.
No: Let the Proſe remaine: Let it commend
Him, (whom I dare not praiſe) becauſe a Friend.

E. B.

To the Tranſlator.

BVt is the *Rogue* reuiu'd? Is *Guzman* made
A Spaniſh-Engliſh Raſcall by his Trade?
Tis ſo. And (as our home-bred *Spaniards* gueſſe)
Hee's printed liueliеſt in the Engliſh Preſſe.
Tongues, haue but one *Horizon*, if they proue
Each others true Interpreters; and moue
Alike to all the world. But if they feare
To ioyne; each Language has his *Hemiſpheare*.
And ſo had *Guzman*. But this Engliſh ſtraine,
Makes it appeare to Vs, as well as *Spaine*.
Thus, like a blazing Starre, each Author is
Stretcht to a ſtreaming length of Languages.

E. B.

To the Tranſlator.

WOuld any man ſit ſtill, and yet ſuruay
The world at large? Or ſtudy to betray
All humane *Quiddities*? Or would he view
All men vnmaskt, diſcerning falſe from true?
Would any man ſee *Proteus*? Would hee ſee
Proteus againe, and ſay; That this is hee?
Or ſee the Moone? And when ſhe waxes light,
Know her to be the ſame, at ſecond ſight?
In this ſame Optick-Art, who ſtriues to thriue,
Let him vſe *Guzman* as a *Perſpective*.

Guzman

Guzman, is all the World; know him alone,
And then yee know a Multitude in One.
The *Spaniſh*, lim's him: But this *Engliſh* phraſe,
Adds life and colour; and prolongs his dayes.
The *Spaniſh*, was too ſmall a Mapp: But this
Drawes him at large; and ſhewes him as hee is.
Nor let the ſubiect of this Booke ſeeme ill,
Becauſe tis *Guzman*. Painters, ſhew their skill
No more in *Beauty* then *Deformity*:
No leſſe in *Deuils* then a *Deity*.
All's one to them. Nor doe they thinke it more
To draw fayre *Virgins*, then a *Blackamore*.
Why then, ſhould not a *Raſcall* honour thoſe,
Whoſe Language ſhowes him to the life in Proſe?
Reade him: and as his Labour ſhall appeare,
Commend his Pen by which he landed here.

Edw: Burton.

To the worthy Gentleman the Tranſlator.

SIR, I embrace th'occaſion, and am glad,
After that worthy mention I haue had
From both our equall Friends, of you, I finde
A meanes to know the perſon with the minde.
By what you giue vs here, you, from a wrong
Wherewith ſhe trauel'd, vindicate our Tongue.
The *Spaniſh Rogue*? Why twas a *Ladd* ſo hye,
So full of *Nationall proprietie*,
Sententious and *Prouerbiall*; that his *Nation*
Would ſooner ſheathe them in the *Iriſh* faſhion
Then he could put on *Engliſh*. As if here
Our Language were but iuſt as one poore Shire
For one of his profeſſion to walke in.
This Miſt, wherein ſo many men haue bin,
You haue diſperſ'd. And till an *Engliſh ſtraine*
Be taught (as well as this) the tongue of *Spaine*,
Our Nephewes ſhall reproach it to their Heyres,
This way our *Wits* haue ouer-maſter'd theirs.

W. BROVVNE.

THE PRINTER
To the curious Reader.

IT were a hard taske and rarely to be performed, for any Printer to vndertake the printing of a Booke of this bulke and nature, without ſome faults; yea, were his Copy neuer ſo fayre, or his Apprehenſion ſo quicke. It is a decorum *in* Guzman *to commit many Solaciſmes, whoſe life was ſo full of diſorders. This life of his being 26. ſeuerall times printed in the Spaniſh Tongue in a few years, did neuer appeare to the world, but with* Errata's: *which makes me the more preſuming on your humane courteſie: And as in the firſt, ſo in this Second Part, vouchſafe with your pen, the amendment of theſe few faults, before you begin to read the reſt of his life.*

EDVV: BLOVNT.

Page.	Line.	Fault.	correct.	Page.	Line.	Fault.	correct.
32.	15.	will apply	apply.	227	36	the would not	they would not.
39.	38.	diſcourſes	diſcourſe.	*ibid.*	54.	when I come	when I came.
110.	*marg.*	*quandem*	*quando.*	269.	44.	ſhoot at	ſhoot.
118.	20.	ſhould him ſay	ſhould one ſay.	273.	51	in out	it out.
154.	34.	turning himſelfe.	turning my ſelfe	293.	21.	ad ebbe	an ebbe.
ibid.	35.	he ſayed	I ſayed.	335.	16.	herd meaſure.	hard meaſure.

The Contents of the Second Part.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GVzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craueth attention, giues notice of his intent; ſheweth that Lying of all other things is the worſt. He treats of the ill gouernment of great men; Of Courtiers, and their vices: Of the* Spaniards *loue to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of this Worke.*

CHAP. II. Guzman *tells what place he ſerued in, in the houſe of his Lord Embaſſador: And that Fooles and Ieſters, are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

CHAP. III. Guzman *recounteth that which hapned vnto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embaſſadour his Lord made.*

CHAP. IV. *The Doctor finding himſelfe aggrieued, that* Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the preſence of ſo many Gentle-men, would be reuenged of him. The Spaniſh Embaſſador takes vp the quarrell: The French cauſing another of the gueſts, that was there at table, to relate an accident that befell the Conſtable of* Caſtile, Don Aluaro de Luna.

CHAP. V. *A Romane Matron, not knowing how to free her-ſelfe (without ſuffering in her honour) from the perſwaſions of* Guzman, *who ſollicited her in his Lords behalfe the French Embaſſador, put a ieſt vpon him, which was the occaſion of a ſecond diſgrace that afterwards befell him.*

CHAP. VI. Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, whereinto he had withdrawne him-ſelfe, to make him-ſelfe cleane, another diſgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embaſſadour, with whom he diſcourſed of politike and graue matters.*

CHAP. VII. *The ieſt being publikely knowne through* Rome, *which befell* Guzman, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that he had with the* Boore; *for very ſhame he departs from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which iourney, a theefe enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better vnder that colour, rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſes of Deceit. He departs from* Rome. *He deſires to ſee* Siena, *where certaine theeues meet with his trunks, which he had ſent away before, and rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache, *not recouering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complaines of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid vpon theeues. Wherein he deliuereth many things worthy the noting.*

THE SECOND BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GVzman de Alfarache, *leaues* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *He meets with* Sayavedra, *whom he takes into his ſeruice. And before he comes to* Florence, *he recounts vnto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arriued there, he ſhewes him all, that was worth the ſeeing.*

CHAP. II. Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in purſuit of* Alexandro, *who had ſtolne his trunkes from him; Whither, when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himſelfe was clapt vp.*

CHAP. III. Guzman de Alfarache, *diſcourſeth on the iniuſtice, which ſome Iudges doe, blinded by gaine, or by paſſion.*

CHAP.

CHAP. IV. Guzman de Alfarache, *being freed out of prison, falls to gaming, gets money; Whereupon, he resolues with himself to goe to* Milan.
CHAP. V. Guzman de Alfarache *trauelling towards* Milan, Sayavedra *vpon the way, recounts his owne life vnto him.*
CHAP. VI. Sayavedra *meets in* Milan *with a friend of his that seru'd a Merchant*; Guzman de Alfarache *layes a witty plot how to rob him.*
CHAP. VII. *The robbing of the Merchant of* Milan, *as* Guzman de Alfarache *could haue wisht it.* Aguilera *shares so much with him, as of right belonged vnto him: And he and his seruant* Sayavedra *goe for* Genoa.
CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being knowne by his kindred, he is feasted by them. He perswades euery one to liue vertuously; And showes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and false Witnesses, bring to mens soules, honours, and riches: He deliuereth the great profit, we shall gaine, by auoyding such venemous* Basiliskes. *And concludes with telling vs, who are true theeues indeed.*
CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache *robs his Vncle and Kinsmen in* Genoa, *and imbarkes him-selfe in the Gallies that were to goe for* Spaine.
CHAP. X. Guzman *sayling toward* Spaine, Sayavedra *by reason of a great storme, growes Sea-sicke. He falls into a Calenture, or burning feuer. He waxes light-headed, and loseth his wits. He cryes out, that he is* Guzman, *and growing mad, throwes him-selfe into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

THE THIRD BOOKE.

CHAP. I. GVzman de Alfarache, *hauing taken his leaue of Captaine* Favelo, *telling him that he was to goe for* Sevill, *makes for* Saragoça, *where he peruses the statutes of* Gotam Colledge, *otherwise called,* The Hospitall of Fooles.
CHAP. II. Guzman de Alfarache *goes from* Saragoça, *and comes to* Madrid; *where he turnes Merchant, and is marryed. Hee breakes his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens subtle tricks. And of the inconuenience of counter-writings; and of their remedie.*
CHAP. III. Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes the successe of his mariage, till such time as his wife dyed. And how her dowry returned backe to his father in Law. He discourseth of bad wiues, and the hurt they doe their husbands.*
CHAP. IV. Guzman *being now a widower, resolues to goe to* Alcala de Henarez, *to studie the Arts, and Diuinitie, that he might make him-selfe fit to say Masse. And hauing fulfilled all his tearmes, and duely heard his Lectures, he leaues all and marries againe.*
CHAP. V. Guzman de Alfarache *leaues off his studies; he goes to liue at* Madrid; *he carries his wife with him; from whence they were both banished.*
CHAP. VI. Guzman *and his wife come to* Sevill: *He findes his mother to be now somewhat ancient, and well stricken in yeeres. His wife gets her away to* Italy *with one of the Captaines of the Gallies, leauing him alone to him-selfe, and exceeding poore: whereupon he falls to his old trade of theeuing.*
CHAP. VII. Guzman *being preferred to a Gentle-womans seruice, robs her: Vpon this theft he is apprehended, & condemned to the Gallies during life.*
CHAP. VIII. Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the prison of* Sevill, *to be carryed to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. He recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewise in the Gallies.*
CHAP. IX. Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which hapned vnto him in the Galleys: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence.*

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GVZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

The first Booke.

Wherein, he recounteth what befell him, from the time that he ſerued his Maſter the Lord Embaſſadour, till hee left *Rome*.

CHAP. I.

Guzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craueth attention, giues notice of his intent; ſheweth, that Lying, of all other things is the worſt. He treats of the ill gouernment of Great men; Of Courtiers, and their Vices. Of the Spaniards loue to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of this Worke.*

COME, let vs away. Thou haſt now bayted and refreſht thy ſelfe in thy Inne; Come, I ſay: Ariſe, and let vs be gone, if thou beeſt willing to haue my Company, and that I ſhould doe thee ſeruice in this iourney; though there is another iourney that I muſt goe through with, for whoſe happy end I goe trauelling through theſe ſtony and deſart places.

Cõpany makes the way leſſe tedious.

Through theſe craggy Rocks, and vneuen wayes, beſet with Buſhes and Bryers, I doubt not but I ſhall make this iourney ſeeme eaſie vnto thee, with that aſſured promiſe which I ſhal be able to make vnto thee, of bringing thee ſafe to the end of thy deſire.

The Author goes excuſing himſelfe.

Pardon my bold proceeding, and taxe me not of inciuilitie, that I treat with thee in this manner; I confeſſe that I faile in that reſpect, which is due vnto ſuch a one as thou art.

But conſider, I pray', that what I ſay, it is not ſpoken to thee, but that thou ſhould'ſt reprehend others, who perhaps haue as much need of reproofe as my ſelfe.

I goe talking at randome, (like thoſe that play at blind-man-buffe) and thou maiſt very well tell me, that my tongue runnes ryot, and that I talke like a foole, or a mad-man, becauſe I ſhoot my bolts without feare or wit, and vnaduiſedly throw the ſtone out of my hand, not knowing where it may light, or the harme it may doe.

But I ſhall anſwer this, with that which a foole once ſaid, that fell a throwing of ſtones, who as oft as he threw, would cry out aloud, ſaying, Take heed, take heed, my Maſters, for it cannot fall amiſſe; where-euer it light, it muſt needs hit right. So I likewiſe tell thee, *Que como tengo las hechas, tengo ſoſpechas*. That if I haue ſate vpon any bodies skirts, or ſhall chance to ſit cloſer vnto them, I haue reaſon to ſuſpect, that they will pay me home if they can. For he that reprehends other mens faults, cannot but liue in feare of being told his owne.

Prouerb.

Chi riprende l'altrui diffeto, viue con ſoſpetto.

I imagine with my ſelfe, that all men are iuſt ſuch as I am; weake, facill, and full of naturall paſsions; nay, ſometimes ſtrange and extrauagant humours. But it were a thouſand pities, that all (*a*) Sacks ſhould be alike. But being bad my ſelfe, I thinke no man good: ſuch is my wretched condition, and of as many as beare the ſame minde. I conuert Violets into poyſon; throw durt vpon Snow; and in my thought, trample the freſh and fragrant Roſe vnder my feete. It might in ſome ſort haue beene happy for mee, that I had ſtayd when I was well, and had not gone on with this my diſcourſe.

Prouerb.
(*a*) Mal ſeria, ſi todos los Coſtales fueſſen tales.

I know, that albeit I haue beene troubleſome vnto thee, thou wilt hold me excuſed, and therefore I ſhall not need to craue thy pardon, and to begge thy good word and attention; the purchaſing whereof, is that which I principally pretend: And albeit many, and peraduenture all thoſe that haue taſted of the Apple, will deeme it to be impertinent and ſuperfluous.

But mee thinkes it is not poſsible that it ſhould bee ſo. For albeit I ſhould be as bad as thou wouldſt make me to be, or that I were ſuch an arrant Aſſe and Coxe-combe, as you forſooth in your *Idea* would forme me to be; yet cannot I perſwade my ſelfe, that thou hadſt ſet thy figure right, or that thy iudgement were truely grounded. For no man thinkes himſelfe to be the ſame man, that other men would make him to be; nor iudges himſelfe by anothers opinion. I thinke of my ſelfe, as thou thinkeſt of thy ſelfe. Euery man holds his owne faſhion the beſt; his owne life, the vprighteſt; his owne cauſe, the iuſteſt; his owne honour, the greateſt; and his owne conceits, thoſe that hit righteſt. I tooke counſell of my pillow, it ſeeming vnto mee (which indeed is true) that a prudent conſideration doth euermore beget happy euents; and that too much haſte is the mother of various and vnfortunate iſſues; whoſe Handmaid is repentance. For doe you graunt but one abſurditie, and a thouſand will follow vpon it. And therefore, that the ends may not erre, (as too too vſually it hapneth,) it is fit, that wee make a faithfull examination of the principles; which being found out, and well choſen, they affoord vs that helpe, that wee may boldly ſay, that the better halfe of the vvorke is already finiſhed, reaching forth ſuch a reſplendour and fulneſſe of light vnto vs, that a farre off, by naturall ſignes and tokens, they diſcouer thoſe things vnto vs, which are likely to happen hereafter.

Principia prius quærenda.

And howbeit in themſelues, they are in ſubſtance ſmall, yet in their vertue and operation, they are great, and are in a diſpoſition to matters of much importance.

And therefore, when we will experiment them, we muſt propoſe all the dif-

difficulties, examining them with all diligence, seeking to draw all the good out of them that we can, and the soundest counsell; but when we are once resolued that they are actions of Prudence, and so generally taken and esteemed, they ought in all mens iudgements to be brauely followed, and put in execution: And by so much the more, by how much the more noble shall that enterprize be, which we pretend to vndertake.

And it is an imperfection, and a notable note of lightnesse, to enterprize those things, which we cannot effect, especially if they be not crost by some sudden and vnexpected accident, or some great impediment or other; for in their end, consisteth our glory.

My purpose only was (as I told thee before) to benefit thee, and to teach thee the way, how thou mightest with a great deale of content and safetie, passe thorow the gulph of that dangerous sea wherein thou saylest. The blowes I shall receiue, thou the good counsels; The hunger is mine, but the industry must be thine, that thou mayst not suffer hunger. I indure those affronts, from whence thy honour rises. And since thou hast heard it said, *Que à que se te hizo rico, que te hizo el pico.* That is, that he that made thee rich, made thee likewise to open thy beake, that thou mightest be ready to receiue a blessing.

And therefore thou must striue to imitate that discreet sonne in Law, who knowes by the sweetnesse of his behauiour and courteous carriage, how to gaine the good will of his hard-laced father in Law, and to draw him gently along, to pay his house-rent, to bestow vpon him his dyet, and his lodging, to put money in his Purse, and for an vp-shot, a faire wife in his bed; And these are those father in Lawes which (like slaues, and common iesters) breed, serue, and entertaine their children.

I am now imbark't, I haue set foot a Ship-boord, & I cannot goe backe. The Dice are throwne; my promise is past, and I cannot recall it. I haue begun, and I must goe on. The Subiect is meane and base; the beginning small; But that which I intend to treat of, if like the Oxe, thou wilt ruminate thereupon, and chew the Cud, suffring it to passe from thy stomacke to thy mouth, it may proue important, graue, and great. I will doe all that I can to satisfie thy desire; knowing, that I should haue rather giuen thee trouble, then content, in vnfolding one part of my life, and hyding the other from thee.

I perswade my selfe, that many will, or haue already said it; Better had it beene, that God had neuer giuen it thee, and by consequence, that thou hadst neuer spoke of it; for being notoriously bad and wicked, it had beene better for thy selfe to haue smothered it; and for others, that they had not knowne it. Thou art farre wide of the truth; thou hast no good ground for that thou say'st: much lesse therefore can I be perswaded, that thou meanest well, or that thy drift herein is so faire and honest, as thou wouldst seeme to make shew of; But I am rather afraid, and doe shrewdly suspect, that because they touch thee to the quicke, the very wagging of the rod doth (though it ne're come neere thee) much affright thee; thine owne guiltines makes thee to shrinke; and it is the gall'd backe, that makes the Horse winse, before the Saddle touch him.

There is no (a) *Disciplinante* that whips himselfe in the holy weeke, that doth at any time complaine of his owne lashing, nor doth halfe so much feele the smart of those stripes which he giues himselfe, as he doth the paine and anguish of anothers hand, when he comes to dresse and cure his wounds.

I either tell thee truthes or lyes. Not lyes. Would to God they were lyes. For I know, that out of thine owne naturall inclination, thou wouldst bee well content to heare them; nay, to play and champe vpon that bitt, it would make thee carry a white mouth, pleasing thy selfe with the fome and froth of vntruthes. But I deliuer truths vnto thee; and these are as bitter Pills

To begin things, and not to goe thorow with them, argues lightnesse. Prouerb.

How a good son in Law ought to carry himselfe towards his father in Law.

(a) *Mens whipping of themselues, is vs'd by religious persons, for to mortifie the flesh, and in remembrance of those stripes, which our Sauiour suffered for vs. There are some that lash themselues meerely out of Ostentation. These are fooles, and as abominable as Baals Priests. The Prelates of the Church, and other secular Magistrates should take order to debarre those to goe in Procession, that vse it so prophanely, and to punish them seuerely, for those their notorious excesses, which I am asham'd to speake of. In Germany, there was a Sect of Heretikes, called* Flagellantes, *that were notable Villaines, and Drunkards, and condemned for such.* Vide Covarruuias. Verb. Dicipplinarse. *Lyes haue euer the best attention.*

Pils vnto thy Palate. Thou findeſt fault with them, becauſe they lay open thy faults. Only diſpleaſed, becauſe they pleaſe thee not. If thou finde thy ſelfe ſound and in health, and thy neighbour ſicke and weake; if the Lightning ſhall light vpon another mans houſe, and thine owne ſcape the flame, thou wouldſt the better beare it, ſo as thou be left vntoucht, no morſell is vnſauory to thy mouth, all is Pheſant and Partridge, and I ſhall be well receiued, and kindely entertained by thee. But that thou mayſt not (like the Eele) ſlip out of my hands, I will ſeeke out ſome Fig-leaues againſt theſe your ſlippery tricks, I will hold you faſt while I haue you; you ſhall not for this once, ſo eaſily (as you thinke) eſcape my hands.

I tell thee, (if thou art willing to heare me, if thou wilt not, thou mayſt chooſe) that this generall confeſsion that I make; this publike opening of my Packe, laying before thee all my Knacks, and my Trinkets; I doe not therefore ſhew theſe things vnto thee, that thou ſhouldſt either imitate me, or my euill actions; but rather, that (when thou ſhalt come to know them) thou mayſt learne thereby to correct thine owne. If thou ſeeſt me falne, becauſe I was wilfull, and would not be ordred; looke thou ſo well to thy ſteps, that thou mayſt hate and auoyd thoſe occaſions, that wrought my fall. Set not thy foot, where thou haſt ſeene me ſlip before thee; but let my trippings and my ſtumblings, ſerue as ſo many markes to make thee more wary. For thou art a man, mortall as I am, and peraduenture neither ſtronger, nor wiſer then my ſelfe.

Take the good, and leaue the bad.

Looke well into thy ſelfe; runne ouer very leiſurely and carefully, the houſe of thy Soule, and ſee if thou haue not made there, euen in the greater and better part of it, Dung-hils of filth, and all manner of beaſtlineſſe; and doe not ſift and prie ſo narrowly into thy neighbours, to ſee if thou canſt finde but the feather of ſome bird at the foot of the Stayres, whereat thou mayſt picke a quarrell.

Looke well into thy ſelfe, and let others alone.

But heere I know thou wilt tell me, that I preach vnto thee, and that hee is a foole, that will ſeeke his cure, from a ſicke Phyſician. And that hee that cannot helpe himſelfe, can hardly giue health to others.

Medice, cura teipſum.

What wholſome Medicine, or good Cordiall, can a man haue from a Vipers tooth, or the ſting of a Scorpion? How ſhall he, that is ill himſelfe, aduiſe another not to be ill? I doe not denie, that I am ſuch a one as thou ſayſt: But that will befall me with thee, which betideth ſome nimble and cunning Caruer at his Lords table, who curiouſly cutteth vp the Brawne, the wing, or the legge of ſome dainty Fowle, and hauing reſpect to the qualitie of the Gueſts, whom he is to ſerue, giues euery man his ſeuerall Plate, ſtudying to pleaſe and content them all; They all eate, all reſt ſatisfied and well contented, whileſt he himſelfe goes away both weary and hungry.

At mine owne coſt and paines, I diſcouer ſhelfes, quick-ſands, and dangerous rockes vnto thee, to the end that thou mayſt not fall vpon them, and daſh thy ſelfe in pieces againſt them, or runne thy ſelfe on ground, where there is neuer any hope of comming off.

Your Arſenicke is not altogether vnprofitable, but that it will ſerue for ſome good vſe or other; it is worth money, and it is ſold in Apothecaries ſhops. And though it be bad to eate, as it may be applyed, it will proue good. In a word, with it thoſe Wormes and Vermine are poyſoned, which bring hurt and preiudice to mans body.

The hurt which ill gouernment, cauſes in great mens houſes.

My example might ſerue as Treacle to a Common-wealth, if theſe fierce beaſts that gouerne it were poyſoned; not excuſing houſe-keepers, though neuer ſo much in apparance, ſeeming familiar and friendly vnto vs, as being one of the worſt qualities that they haue. For, figuring forth our ſelues vnto them, to be men of fleſh and bloud, kinde-hearted, and ſubiect vnto paſsions, wee depoſit our ſecrets in their boſomes, and truſt them with all that

we

we haue, as relying on their faith and their loue, and they cunningly shed feigned teares in a seeming commiseration of our miseries, when in the meane while not-withstanding, they rend our flesh, & teare our very sinewes from the bone with their tyrannies, iniuries, and violencies.

Tricks of Courtship.

O that it were in my power to consume and destroy another sort of cruell beastes, as those that looke bigge, and grow proud of their ease and plenty, goe vaunting and boasting of their valour, tearing vp the stones in the streets, world-wandrers, Vagabonds from Countrie to Countrie, from Parish to Parish, and from house to house, making them-selues skimmers of other mens pottes; being no way of any profit, or seruing for any other vse, then the Porters in the *(a) Alhondiga* of *Seuilla*, to lay in one burthen, and to take out another; venting lyes in one place, and taking them vp in another; carrying newes to and fro, reporting those things, that he ought to haue silenced, being trusted therewith, and will'd to be secret, vttering them in preiudice of the person to whom he reuealeth them, who cannot but take it ill; maliciously causing differences, and relating things worse then they were meant; bearers of false witnesse, raysers of dissension, robbers of mens honours, defaming the good, persecuting the iust, stripping men of their wealth, and murthering and martyrizing the innocent. It were a pleasing sight to see all such perish, and to be made a publike spectacle to the world. Nor is there in all *Bruxels* any such goodly hangings, that doe either so much adorne, or halfe so well become any Noble mans house, as these would the Common-wealth, if they were hung vp one after another by the Common Hang-man.

(a) Alhondiga *is a house appointed for Country people, to bring their corne into the Citie, and there to lay it vp. It signifieth also a Ware house for merchandize, where some bring in, and some carry out.* Vid. Couarru. pag. 48.

For, it is very fit, that there should be *Pœna & præmium*; A punishment and a reward. For if all were good and honest, Lawes had beene superfluous and impertinent. And if all men should haue beene wise, Writers had beene fooles. Phisicke was made for the sicke; Honours for the vertuous; and the Gallowes for lewd liuers. And because I likewise know, that Vice is so powerfull, for that it rises out of a desire of libertie, without acknowledgement of any Superiour either humane or diuine, I am much afraid, that these my written labours, and my many indured misfortunes, will not be of force to bridle thy vnruly appetites, and to bring forth that good fruit which I could wish; Holding that paines vaine and fruitlesse, which is vndertaken vpon any respect whatsoeuer, if it doth not in that it pretendeth, obtaine it's desired end. But because that the Rhethorician doth not alwaies perswade; nor the Physician cure; nor the Pilot arriue safely at his Port; I must together with them comfort my selfe, in that I haue performed my dutie, by giuing thee good counsell, and by affording thee light, being therein like the Flint, which being strooken, giues fire to others, to bee kindled in this or that place, though it selfe remaine without: In like manner, the lewd liuer loseth his life, receiueth punishment, and indureth affronts, making himselfe an example to all those that shall looke vpon him.

Lawes were made for the wicked.

When a mans labour is lost.

But here I will betake me to that way, which presents it selfe vnto mee in this place; Imitating therein your rude Clownes, as also your nice Courtiers, who passing along by the *(b) Roperia* (which is a publike place where all sorts of cloathes are to bee sold;) if by chance they lift vp their eyes, and looke vpon them, those Merchants that sell these commodities, (like your *Birchen-Lane* men) fall presently a balling and plying of them; one drawes him this way, another that, and keepe such a calling, and such a tugging of them, that they know not well which way to turne or winde themselues, they are so distracted by them.

(b) Roperia .i. Locus Vestimentarius.

For they hauing an opinion (if not a thorow perswasion) that they doe all deceiue, all coozen, and lye, they goe warily to worke, when they buy any wares of them; & I well wot the cause why, which I need not to tell you, because

The knavery of some Tredes-men.

because that which they sell, will speake it out alowd, without any other bodies helpe.

Receiuers of stolne goods.

Well, let vs now giue them way, and suffer them to passe by, if for no other reason, at least for those fauours and courtesies which I haue had from them, in the buying of things that were neuer bought, giuing me good money for that which I brought, and sold vnto them; and for teaching mee from ouer-night against the next morning, how to make Cassocks of Cloakes, selling them the shreds for to foot Stockins, and to make soles to keepe the feet warme, and free from wet.

The case of a careless traueller.

Or shall I here tell thee, that the same is like to befall me, which vsually happens to the careless traueller; who not knowing the way, goes from home, neuer inquiring how he may hit it, which hand to take, or what turnings to make; so that when hee hath gone some halfe league on his iourney, he chanceth to come to the foot of a Crosse, where he meetes with three or foure seuerall wayes; and straining himselfe vpon his stirrops, writhing his body, he turnes his head about, to see if he can espy any body, that is able to direct him in his way?

But seeing none there at hand, he fals to a Cosmographicall consideration with himselfe, choosing either this, or that, which shall seeme likeliest vnto him, to leade directly towards that place, whither hee intended his iourney.

I see heere present before me so many diuers dispositions, and such various and sundry sorts of tasks, all of them hanging about mee, euery one striuing to hale and pull mee as it were by force, to come into their shop. But God he knowes, why, and wherefore they doe it.

The diuers gusts and palates of men.

One would haue sweet and pleasant things; another, those that are tart and sowre; this man will haue his Oliues fryde; that will no salt, no not with an Egge.

And if one man haue a minde to eate the legge of a (*a*) Larke rosted in the snuffe of a Candle, another would not be wanting, who shall make no bones to tell thee, that of all the pulse and rootes that God made, there was neuer any yet that could compare and come neere to the Radish for goodnesse.

The truth whereof vvas to bee seene in a certaine (*b*) *Papelisticall* Minister, a kinde of Officer (as I may so tearme him) betwixt a Clerke and a Scriuener that is conuersant in Paper-businesses; a fellow wonderfull ill beloued, a notorious lyer, and aboue all, extremely couetous; who remouing from one house to another, after that he had carried his houshold-stuffe, and other old moueables belonging there-vnto, he stayd there behinde alone by himselfe, searching and prying very diligently into euery nooke and corner thereof, rifling and ransaking it from the floore to the roofe, not so much as leauing a nayle to the walles, for to hang a Hat on, or the like necessary vse.

At last, it was his hap to come into the Kitchen, where hee lighted vpon an odde hole in the chimney, wherein were three or foure Radishes, which had lyen there a long time, being dry, tough, withered, and good for nothing. These hee charily tyes vp in one bunch, and very carefully brings them home to his Wife, and with a Black-Smithes face, looking frowningly vpon her, he said vnto her; Is this your good houf-wifery, this your care of my house and goods, to let things runne to spoyle? Is money so easily come by (thinke you) that you make no more reckning of sauing a penny? But as you brought me nothing in Dowry, so you care not (it seemes) which end goes forward; sinke, or swimme, all's one to you. See you this waste of yours? Looke I pray vpon these Radishes, they cost money I can tell you. You haue done well, haue you not, to looke no better vnto them? Keepe them I pray against I call for them. I thinke there is not a more wastefull woman

(*a*) *The Spanish word, is* pie de la perdis, *but the other fits better with our phraſe of ſpeach.*

(*b*) Papelistas; Los que son dados à entender en papeles. Couarruuias. *A ſhort tale of a couetous Spaniard.*

man in the world; but I am the worſe of the two, and may thanke my ſelfe, that I would be ſuch an vnthrift as to bring a whole bunch into the houſe at once, when as fewer would haue ſeru'd the turne.

His wife laid them vp ſafe, as he had willed her, and that very night (that they might not fall out any more about them) the crafty Hileding, very demurely and with a ſober countenance, without any the leaſt ſhew of choller, or diſlike, ſets them downe before him, when hee was ſitting downe to ſupper, vvho falling earneſtly vnto them, ſpake to his Wife, and ſaid:

Now in troth (Wench) I ſweare vnto thee, there is no meat in the world can relliſh better, or hath halfe ſo good a ſauour and taſte with it, as an old Radiſh. I proteſt vnto thee, I like them better a thouſand times, being thus lyther, and withered as you ſee, then when they are freſh and cripſie. I prethee Wife proue one of them, and then tell me if it bee not as I ſay.

The poore woman had as little fancie to make tryall thereof, as ſhee had faith to beleeue it; but my Spaniard (carrying as they doe all a kinde of high hand ouer their wiues) forcing her in a manner there-vnto, by his ſterne both lookes and words, made her to eate one ſore againſt her will, and much againſt her ſtomake.

The Spaniard generally carries a great command ouer his Wife.

There are a certaine kinde of men, which are not contented onely to commend that, which they themſelues like, (be it what it will) but they will (and are angry and offended if it bee otherwiſe) that others doe the ſame, preſsing them, as it were, to follow their humour, and contrarie to their owne will, ſeeme to approue it, at leaſt not ſticke to praiſe it.

The capriccious humours of ſome extrauagant perſons.

And there are likewiſe another ſort of people, which diſcommend other mens taſtes; not conſidering, that *de guſtibus non eſt diſputandum*, for that they are diuers and various, as are the conditions and countenances of men.

For though peraduenture two may bee found, that may reſemble one another, yet it is impoſsible that they ſhould be ſo like, that you may not perceiue ſome difference. And therefore I muſt be driuen to doe that heere, which was my hap once to doe at a Comedy; where, for that I was one of the firſt, it was my fortune to be one of the formoſt before the Stage.

Writers, whereunto they are likened.

Now thoſe that came after, being nothing ſo well fitted, ſpake vnto me, that I would leane a little on t'one ſide. I did ſo; but in this my mouing ſome-what aſide; others thought much of it, complaining that I hindred their ſight; for whom likewiſe to giue them content, I was forced to ſhift a foote. So that, both the one and the other, made me to ſtand where they would haue me. For they were all willing to ſee. Inſomuch, that not knowing how to accommodate my ſelfe for pleaſuring of them, I put on Merchants eares, not vouchſafing to giue them the hearing: and ſtanding ſtiffely on my right legge, gaue them leaue to ſhift for themſelues, to heare, and ſee, as well as they could.

Prouerb.

The Melancholly man, the Sanguine, the Cholericke, the Flegmaticke, the Ciuill, the Swaggerer, the Rhetorician, the Philoſopher, the Religious, the Reprobate, the Courtier, the Clowne, the rude, the Diſcreet, nay, euen my Lady *Ninny-hammer* would that I ſhould onely write for her pleaſure, words finely pleyted, and curiouſly folded, and that I ſhould apply my ſelfe to her conceit, and conforme my ſelfe according to her ſtile, making her Miſtreſſe both of my pate and Pen.

No writer can pleaſe all.

It is not poſsible for me to ſecond ſo many humours, and to ſatisfie ſuch different deſires: For then had I need (beſides the making for euery particular man his ſeuerall Booke,) to liue ſo many mens liues, as there are ſundry opinions.

The Author approueth this to be his true Second Part.

I haue liu'd but one onely; and that which they would falſely intitle mee withall,

withall, is a teſtimonie againſt ſome, of the great wrong they haue done me therein.

My true life, I ſhall onely ſet it downe my ſelfe. I will goe proſecuting of that, though they goe perſecuting of me. For there will not another (a) *Gil* be wanting for the third Part, to come forth againſt mee, as in the Second; and charge me with that, which I neuer either did, ſaid, or thought.

Prou. Nunca falta vn Gil, que nos perſigua. Dando à entender, que aunque deſiſta vn emulo no falta otro que ſe ſubſtituya enſu lugar. *No ſooner one corriuall gone, but another comes in his place.*

That, which I intreat at thy hands, is; That thou wilt neither feare mee ſo much, nor be angry with me in ſo high a meaſure; that (I know not out of what humour) thou ſhould'ſt wiſh me hang'd; for I finde not my ſelfe fit for it at this time, neither indeed doe I deſerue it. Suffer mee therefore to liue, ſince it hath pleaſed God to giue mee life, that I might correct my errours; and time, that I may amend my faults.

The' Authors end and purpoſe.

For my puniſhments, and my mis-fortunes, if thou wilt truely informe thy ſelfe of them, will ſerue thee in ſtead of a Looking-glaſſe, whereby thou may'ſt ſee how to linke a little better together the paſt, and the preſent, with that which is to come in the third Part; to the end, that thou making it all one continued piece of worke, weauing it well and handſomely, running along in euen threds, thou maiſt the better (which is no more then becomes thee) be inſtructed in the truth of things.

And this is that marke, whereat I haue aymed, and the white, which I ſeeke to hit. Nor am I dainty in diſcouering my conceits, to thoſe that will bee pleaſed to ſaue mee this labour: yet, let it bee ſo carried, that they may boaſt them of that's their owne. For I hold it as a thing vndecent, and vnſeemely, for a man to deny his owne name, and to put forth his workes vnder that of another, which hath, and ſhall vpon the like occaſion, oblige mee at any time, to write ſo much againe as this, that I may not be taken for a Foole, by taking vpon mee other mens ouer-ſights. But let this reſt, leſt I might ſeeme to ſome, to ſpeake more out of paſsion, then reaſon; though the iudicious (I am perſwaded) will excuſe this my iuſt complaint, and not thinke it in this place to be impertinent to the purpoſe.

Of the order and end of this Booke: And whereunto it is likened.

But to returne againe into the way, whence we haue ſtept a little aſide, I ſay; That I would haue euery man to make choyſe of his owne Plate, and to fall to that diſh (amongſt thoſe many, that we ſhall ſerue into this boord) which hee hath moſt minde vnto; Leauing that vnto others, vvhich ſhall not pleaſe his palate, or not agree with his ſtomake. Nor would I haue my gueſts to thinke, that this booke of mine ſhould bee like vnto *Heliogabalus* his banquet, whoſe boord was furniſhed with many and ſundry ſorts of meates, yet all of them only ſeruing for the food & ſuſtenance of man, whether they vvere Peacocks, Chickens, Pheſants, wilde Boare, Fiſh, Milke, Sallets, or Conſerues, it was one onely kinde of Vyand, but like Manna, differenced by mens ſeuerall taſts; howbeit thoſe of Manna, were as euery man would haue them to relliſh as himſelfe deſired; but theſe other, according as the Cooke was willing to ſeaſon them, ſeeking therein to pleaſe the filthy luxurious throat of his Maſter. With varietie, nature is adorned; this is that, that beautifies the Fields, to ſee heere Hils, there Vallies; in this place Brookes and Riuers; in that Fountaines ſprinkling and ſparkling forth their pearled drops.

Let not men be ſo couetouſly minded, as to deſire to haue all to themſelues. I haue ſeene the beſtowing of many Liueries in my life-time, and the little Page, (I haue perceiued) was as well contented with his, though it vvere not ſo full of Silke, as the talleſt man, that had twice as much as he, in regard of the largeneſſe of his ſtature. I am reſolued to follow that path, that ſhall ſeeme beſt vnto me, for the more direct bringing of me to the end of my deſire, and to that place, whereunto I intend my iourney. And thou (my diſcreet Hoſt) who ſtay'ſt looking for me, ſince thou doeſt ſo well vnderſtand

and

and know the miſeries, that he ſuffers and indures, who (like my ſelfe) goes trauelling abroad to ſee the world; doe not looke ſcornefully vpon me, when thou ſhalt meet with me in thine owne Countrie, and though I come to thy Gate like a Rogue, poore and pennileſſe, dis-fauoured by fortune, and forſaken of my friends, yet doe thou vouchſafe mee a cheerefull countenance, and giue me that kinde entertainment, which thou oweſt vnto thine owne worth. For my errand is only to thee, thee only doe I ſeeke after, and for thy ſake haue I vndergone this iourney, not for to put thee to any charge; nor with purpoſe to oblige thee to more then thy good will and affection, which thou naturally oweſt vnto him, who offers thee his loue: Which if I ſhall receiue from thee, I ſhall reſt fully ſatisfied, and remaine beſides, in requitall of thy good will, indebted vnto thee in an infinite number of thankes.

But if they which take pleaſure in hearing me talke, if they ſhall likewiſe be deſirous to ſee me, let them beware, that doe not befall them, which is wont to happen to thoſe that are ouer-curious, who watch and liſten, to heare what is ſaid of them; Which kinde of men doe alwayes *Malè audire*, heare no great good ſpoken of them. For with the fineſt gold, is the bittereſt Pill couered. And often-times, that moueth ſome to laughter, which indeed ought to draw teares from their eyes.

Proverb. Con oro fino, ſe cubre la pildora.

Beſides, if any man ſhall long to know the life that I lead, and the place where I liue, he ſhall therein bewray his owne needleſſe curioſitie, and giue me iuſt cauſe to ſuſpect the vniuſtneſſe of his intent, and the little good loue that he beares me.

Let him firſt apply himſelfe to conſider my ſtate and condition, and the great miſerie, whereunto my diſorder brought me. Let ſuch another as I am, be ſet before him, or let his owne imagination repreſent it vnto him, and then ſhall he preſently be able to goe diſcourſing with himſelfe, what paſſe-time may be made with him, who doth paſſe his time (being a Priſoner and laden with Irons) with a *Renegador*, or ſome ruffianly blaſpheming officer, that looks to the ſure chaining of the ſlaues in the Gallies; vnleſſe happely he will take pleaſure in my miſeries, and make himſelfe merry with them, as ſome doe with the Bull that is brought in the Market-place to be bayted, whoſe Dartes ſticking in his ſides, whoſe ſtroakes and wounds glad the beholders; though I for my part, hold it an inhumane act. And if thou ſhalt twit mee in the teeth, and tell me, that either I cauſe nauſeouſneſſe in this my Diſcourſe, or that I ſell it vnto thee at too deare a rate, ſeeking forſooth to be intreated, or that I ſtraine too much courtſie, or that I am a little too coy, and too nice with you, making my ſelfe more daintie then needeth, or that by my indearings and flatteries, I ſhould commend it for good vnto thee; it would grieue me, that thou ſhouldſt haue that conceit of me.

For albeit it be well knowne, that I alwayes ſeru'd my Lord Embaſſadour as a merry companion, and to make his Lordſhip laugh at my pleaſant and witty conceits; for I could then make him ſport, when I knew not ſo much as I doe now; and now that I know more, I can not doe it. For it is a thing that coſts a man deare, and the times are not ſtill alike.

But that thou mayſt well vnderſtand what I ſay, and know what my ieſts and merriments were then, and what now ſhall be thought neceſſary in that kinde, hearken, I beſeech you, with attention to that, which I ſhall deliuer vnto you in this inſuing Chapter.

CHAP.

Chap. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *tels what place he ſeru'd in, in the houſe of his Lord Embaſſadour: And that Fooles and Ieſters, are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

Why great men reſpect more a pleaſant conceited fellow, then a faithfull and painfull ſeruant?

FRom the great power, and little vertue now a-dayes in men, it ſo commeth to paſſe, that faithfull ſeruants are not ſo much rewarded for their good ſeruices, and perſonall paines-taking, as for the ſweet words, flowing from their vaine tongues; For the one, they thinke to bee due vnto them, out of their powerfulneſſe and their greatneſſe, and therefore are not pleaſed to accept it in good worth, or thankefully to eſteeme and acknowledge it. And for the other, they afford them, (for their wits ſake) many graces and fauours; and becauſe they want it themſelues, they buy out this default with their money. It is great pitie, that theſe men ſhould thinke, that Vertue ſhould derogate from Nobleneſſe; and by their ill-conceiued opinion of it, will not (as a thing abhorred by them) vſe and exerciſe the ſame.

Why great men ſtudy not vertue.

And for that it is likewiſe to be purchaſed and gotten with a great deale of difficultie, and by hard and ſharpe meanes, (things that are contrary to their ſenſualitie, and quite repugnant to their power and greatneſſe) they are neuer without flatterers at their eares and elbowes, ſmoothing vp vice, and ſtroaking their euill actions, with a ſoft and gentle hand.

This is that milke which they haue ſucked; theſe, thoſe ſwathing-cloathes wherein they were wrapped; They made it their naturall Center by vſe, and by abuſe it continueth ſtill with them. Hence ariſe thoſe ſuperfluous and exceſsiue expences, thoſe profuſe prodigalities, and thoſe vaine magnificencies, which are ſoone payd, and quickly told out, (when the money is powred forth on the table) but with a great many ſighes and teares, when they ſee how they haue fool'd it away.

Why great Lords fauour flatterers.

It is a lamentable caſe to ſee, that a Noble-man ſhould beſtow a rich ſuite of cloathes vpon a Foole and common Ieſter, and ſcarce giue a caſt hat to the vertuous to couer his head. But this is a reciprocall kinde of giuing, a chop and change, that runnes currant among them. For they apparell their bodies with good cloathes, and theſe in requitall, cloath their mindes with toyes, and idle vanities: They throw many fauours on thoſe, who ſoftly ſmooth their humours, with ſweet and pleaſing words, ſuch as ſhall ſound handſomely, and haue their cadence and conſonancie correſpondent to their diſpoſition.

But they buy this their pleaſure at too deare a rate, and not vniuſtly neither, for that their praiſe paſſeth thorow the mouthes of ſuch kinde of men, leauing the gate careleſly open, for the better ſort to publiſh their vanities; they falſely conceiuing, that that ſhall redound greatly to their honour and praiſe, which in truth and in very deed they ought to eſteeme as a reproch and ſhame vnto them. Yet will I not therefore ſay; that great Princes ſhould not haue their Paſtimes; it is fit, that they ſhould haue their entertainments and recreations; but withall, in their due place and ſeaſon: For all things haue their time and their reward.

Fooles and Ieſters, are ſometimes neceſſary. Prouerb. When money is well ſpent.

A witty Ieſter is ſometimes as neceſſary, and as vſe-full as a wiſe Counſellour. Nor doe I thinke it meet, that their hands ſhould be bound from giuing, gratifying, and fauouring of them; For money, (as I ſaid before) *Nunca ſe goza, ſi no quando ſe gaſta.* We neuer inioy it, but when we ſpend it. And it is neuer ſaid to be ſpent, when it is well and wiſely beſtowed. For I my ſelfe (in

(in punishment of my sinnes) haue had experience of the one and the other; and can make this good vnto you out of mine owne proper actions, the smart whereof I haue since soundly felt. For, at that time as I seru'd my Lord Embassadour (as you haue formerly vnderstood) I was his Fauourite, and as it were the apple of his eye; And I can assure thee, that any other corporall labour would haue beene of lesse trouble vnto me, and not haue laine halfe so heauily vpon my shoulders: For to vtter pleasant conceits, witty iests, and to giue a frumpe, or a flout with a grace, that it may take handsomely, there must many things concurre and iumpe well one with another.

A Iester, a painefull kinde of Trader.

Hereunto will be required a particular gift of nature, which shall giue credit and grace thereunto, with a ioynt coniuncture in the carriage of the countenance, shape, and motion of the body and eyes; So that the one may helpe the other, and euery one by it selfe, haue it's particular grace, that meeting all together, they may moue the more.

For one selfe-same thing may be deliuered by two different persons; The one after such a manner, that he will make thee vnbutton (*a*) thy doublet, and be ready to burst with laughing. The other, with that ill grace, that thou wilt thinke the doore too farre off, and too narrow to get out quickly, and be gone. And let such a one striue all that he can, to giue his iestes that life, and that grace, that is fit and necessary for them, yet it is not possible (if they doe not well become him, and come cleanely and nimbly from him) that hee should hit the marke he aimes at.

(*a*) *The Spanish phrase is,* Quitar el calçado, y desnudar la camisa.

There will likewise be required a continuall reading, to know how, and when; and from what hee is to forme his Conceits. Hee hath likewise need of a strong and able memorie, for the keeping in minde of all those accidents that haue, and doe daily happen abroad in the world; and the knowledge of all sorts of persons, that he may know how to apply and accommodate that which is to be said, with that, of whom it shall be said.

Necessary things for a Iester.

He must take a great deale of care in the inquiry of those things, that are most worthy the reprouing of other mens liues, and most of all, in those that are most noble. For, neither making of faces, freenesse of tongue, gestures of the body, life and quickenesse of the eye, sundry sorts of *Matachines*, and mimicke actions, nor all the skill and wit in the world shall bee auaylable to moue the minde of one that is vaine, if they be not seazoned with the Pepper and Salt of Murmuration.

That little touch of tartnesse, that corne of Salt, that drop of Vineger, is that which giues a good relish, and a pleasant farewell to all the rest, be it neuer so simple, neuer so vnsauorie. For what is otherwise, is accounted but a dull Picture, a course piece of worke, and the playne artifice of a poore wit.

Tart iests take best.

It will also much concerne him, to consider the opportunitie, and the time, when, and wherein he is to breake his iests. For, being deliuered out of season, and not to the purpose, they vtterly lose their grace. For men will not alwayes be willing to heare them, neither are they alwayes, and at all times to be vented; nor they themselues alwayes able to broach them. Aske but this question of him that hath the strongest and ablest wit amongst them; Take the best Iester of them all vpon the sudden, and put him to exercise his ierkes of wit, and to play his pleasant prankes, and you shall finde him frozen, and not able to open his mouth.

Iests must not bee vnseasonable.

This befell *Sisneros*, (a most famous Comedian) talking with *Manzanos*, (who was no lesse famous then himselfe, and both of *Toledo*) being a paire of wits, not to bee paralel'd in their time; to whom *Sisneros* said; Thou seest, *Manzanos*, that all the world doth take vs for two of the pleasantest and happiest wits that this present Age affordeth.

Sisneros, & Manzanos, *Two famous fellowes for their quicke wits.*

Tell me, doest thou thinke, that vpon this fame that goes of vs, the King our Master will cause vs to be sent for, and to come before him? But say it should

ſhould ſo fall out: then let you and I come in together; and when wee haue both done him that due reuerence that becomes vs, if we ſhall afterwards ſtand ſolemnely before him (hauing ſent for vs vpon the opinion of our wits) it is a thouſand to one, that the firſt queſtion that he will aske vs, will be this; Are you *Manҫanos* and *Ciſneros*? Then you ſhall make anſwere and ſay, Yea and it like your Maieſtie, for I will not ſpeake a word. Then will hee (as it is very likely) ſay againe vnto vs; Come, let vs heare ſome pleaſant conceits come from you.

Now, I would faine know of thee, what we ſhould doe in this caſe, and what anſwere we ſhall make him? *Manҫanos told* him; Brother *Ciſneros*, when it comes to that, (which God forbid) there is no other to bee made, but this; That they are not yet fryde. So that, neither to all, nor of all, nor at all times are they to be ſpoken, and when they are to be in requeſt, they are not worth a figge, nor the leaſt haire of thy head, vnleſſe they be nipping ones, and dipt in the ſawce of Murmuration. And I held this to be one of my greateſt vnhappineſſes, that like a ſetting dogge, I was driuen to winde out other mens weakeneſſes.

A Ieſter muſt apply himſelfe to pleaſe others.

But becauſe this was the fifth element, without the which thoſe other foure cannot well ſubſiſt: and that repugnancie and contrarietie doth conſerue them; I was continually careſull in ſeeking out that, which to that office which I now profeſſed, was neceſſarily required, that I might ſtill goe getting of ground, and accommodate other mens taſtes to mine owne. For the better and more eſſentiall part is, to winne the good-will of thoſe that heare him, that they may the more willingly commend that, which by him is eyther ſaid, or done. So that, thoſe indowments which Nature had deny'de me, I was forced to make good by tricks and deuices, aſſuming to my ſelfe illicit licence of language, and vſing preiudiciall darings and boldneſſe, which were much holpen by a particular kinde of viuacitie, liuelineſſe, and quickneſſe both of wit and ſpirit that I had in mee, hauing (God hee knowes) no learning at all. For then I had no more knowledge but of a few languages, which I had learned in my Lord Cardinals houſe; and thoſe too were as yet but rawe in mee, in regard of my greene yeeres.

Conſider therefore I pray' with mee (which you may eaſily gather out of that I haue told you) what I might haue in me, and what was wanting vnto me, being not left to mine owne liberty, and liuing in neceſsitie.

In thoſe my yonger dayes, and in that Spring-time (as I may ſo tearme it) of my flouriſhing yeeres, all went currantly with mee; all that I did, became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my ſelfe.

Guzman, the onely man with his Maſter.

For theſe, and other the like things annexed there-vnto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Fauorite, the familiar friend, the Maſter of my Maſter, as alſo of all thoſe that were intereſſed in his friendſhip.

I was the principall doore, whereby they entred into his grace and fauour, and onely I the Lord of his Will. I kept the golden key of his ſecrets. Hee had ſold his libertie vnto me, and I was bound to looke well vnto it, and to take care thereof, not onely out of that, but euen for charities ſake, and the reſpect I owe to the Law of Nature, as alſo for the particular loue, that hee bare to mee, and I to him. For hee was not ignorant, but had made often tryall of my ſecreſie, and vvith vvhat great ſufferance I did euer ſilence thoſe things that hee committed to my boſome; which I vvould none ſhould vnlocke but himſelfe, who onely had that key, to open and ſhut at his pleaſure.

It comes now into my minde, and ſo liuely repreſents it ſelfe to my thoughts, that me thinkes I was then like to a trumpe Card, which euery one vſes, vvhen, and how hee liſt; or as a common pack-Saddle, that ſerues for all Horſes. All did make vſe of mee, though after a diuers and different

fashion; some, of my actions, for their owne proper interest; and others, of my words, for their pleasure and delight; onely my Master drew in the same yoke with me, both in words, and deeds.

I haue taken occasion to speake thus much, that men may not conceiue this opinion of mee, that I goe about to taxe those Princes, that keepe Fooles and Iesters in their Palaces, for their intertainment, and pleasure.

Why Iesters are to be permitted in Princes Courts.

Nor shall it bee amisse that they intertaine them in their houses, not so much for sport and pastime, as by that conduit-pipe, to draw some-thing to their knowledge, which would not so well and so cleanely bee conuayed otherwise vnto their eares. And such occasions often offer themselues, whereof these kinde of men may make very good vse, by aduising, counselling, and reuealing graue and weighty matters, vnder the colour of foolery, which wiser men dare not aduenture to vtter in earnest.

There are some witty discreet Iesters, which speake Sentences, and are able so soundly to deliuer their opinions, that their Masters will not stoope to aske aduice of any of his other seruants, although it might much concerne them, and were great Statists, and very well able to giue counsell. Nor indeed vvill they consent, that they of all other, should giue them counsell, that they may not to their inferiours confesse their ignorance, or to seeme to vnderstand lesse then they. For euen in this, they would faine shew themselues to be Gods.

Why Princes refuse the aduice of their Counsellors.

And such kinde of seruants as these, are those Parrats, which *Iupiter* desired to haue shut vp in a Cage; Nor is this mischiefe of a day old, or vvas borne but yesterday, that great Persons should scorne and contemne the counsailes of wise, vnderstanding, and well qualified men. So great in these men is their pride, and ambition, that they seeke to aggregate and draw all things vnto themselues, making themselues Masters and absolute Lords, both of our spirituall, and temporall; good, and bad, without controulement. Insomuch that they thinke with themselues, that by their onely breath, they giue grace vnto others, and not doing them any good in the world, they looke to be praised and extolled, as if they were the onely men, of whom they did hold their life, their honour, their wealth, and also their vnderstanding, which is the vtmost blasphemie, whereunto in this case their folly can reach.

There is also another great inconuenience, which is this; That as in a chappell of Miracles, wee must hang vp, to sooth their vanitie, the spoiles, and Trophees of our miseries. For if wee recouer our lameneſſe, and bee once able to goe, we must offer vp our Crutches vnto them, whereof vvee made vse, when we were be-nummed, and oppressed with pouertie.

If we escape any dangerous sickneſſe, or mischance, we must sacrifice vnto them that winding sheete, which fortune had cut out for vs, burne Tapers, and set vp Images of Waxe, declaring to the world, that this miracle was wrought by them, and must hang vp those chaines in the Temple, wherewith vve came forth from out the captiuitie of our miseries, and were now brought home, and landed in a safe Hauen.

But this were not altogether so much to be blamed, if these things did onely occurre vpon vertuous occasions, and that they had truely done these men good.

A good turne requires thankefulneſſe.

For there is a kinde of thankefulneſſe, due to euery good turne that is done vs. And then we make it knowne that we haue receiued a benefit, when rendring thankes vnto God, we doe likewise publish the vertues of those men, that did doe these good deeds: because with an ardent zeale, and feruent affection, they did vse their best industry, imployed their persons, spent their friends, tooke hold of all occasions, let slip no time, and therein wasted

and conſumed their money. So that things being thus fairely carried, thoſe that are benefited by them, ſhall vvorthily deſerue much blame and reprehenſion, if they ſhall not render them all fitting and conuenient thankes. But they fall as ſhort of theſe good things, as they doe excell in all filthy and beaſtly vices; vvherein they ſtriue to exceede, and be counted the onely men:

A ſhort Tale of a Nobleman, that was much giuen to Lying.

As was to be ſeene in a certaine Noble-man, that was exceedingly giuen to Lying, and laſh out ſo vnreaſonably in that kinde, as no man could out-ſtrip him, who one day talking in conuerſation vvith diuers other Gentlemen of qualitie, told them that hee had killed a Stagge, bearing ſo many branches or antlets on his head, that it did plainely appeare to bee a Lye, though hee carried it very handſomely. They all admired it, they ſaid; (but not gaine-ſaid it) that it was one of the ſtrangeſt things, that euer was ſeene, or heard of.

This lik't the Noble-man well; But whileſt he and the reſt were thus wondring at it; Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a neere kinſman of his) that was there then in company, (after a pretty kinde of faſhion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordſhip and theſe Gentlemen make ſuch a vvonder at this? This is nothing, my Lord; For, vvithin theſe few dayes I my ſelfe did kill one in the ſame Forreſt, that had two more then this that you talke of.

When hee heard him ſay ſo, the Noble-man bleſt himſelfe, ſaying; It is not poſsible: and looking angerly vpon him, (ſcorning as it ſhould ſeeme to be out-lyde) ſaid vnto him; Sir, ſpeake no more of this, tell it no farther, for it is ſuch a thing, as was neuer yet ſeene, nor will I for my part euer beleeue it, though I hold it a courteſie ſo to doe.

The Gentleman, with a ſterne countenance, and vndaunted courage, (his Age and Alliance heartening him on) in a diſcompoſed kinde of voice, boldly brake forth, and told him; Zwounds (my Lord) me thinkes your Lordſhip ſhould content your ſelfe, that you haue [a] ſixty thouſand crownes a yeere comming in more then I, without ſeeking to out-ſtrip me in Lying, as you doe in Liuing. Let me (I pray) though I am a poore man) lye as I liſt: I begge nothing of you, nor any man elſe; nor doe I rob any man either of his wealth, or his honour.

(a) *The Spaniſh word is,* Seſenta quentos. *Now* vn quento, *is* diez vezez cien mil. *But that is not likely, he had ſo much: and therefore we ſet it* 60000. Couarruuias verb. Contar.

There are likewiſe a certaine kinde of witty-conceited fellowes, that are naturally ſimple and ignorant; from whoſe mouth, oftentimes, drop myſticall ſayings, and worthy the conſideration, which God (it ſeemes) permits them to bolt forth now and then, making them alſo to keepe in ſuch things as are fit to be ſilenced: who (though ſimple as they ſeeme) haue an extraordinarie grace in the deliuering of them. Which happineſſe lighted vpon one, that was a ſimple ignorant fellow from his cradle; in whom, one of the greateſt Princes in Chriſtendome tooke much pleaſure, who for ſome ſecret cauſes, beſt knowne to himſelfe, had diſcarded one of his graueſt, and chiefeſt Miniſters; And this ſimple fellow, comming one day into his preſence, (which was ſhortly after the other was diſmiſt the Court) hee was no ſooner entred in, but the King askt him: What newes in Court? Hee told him, That his Maieſtie had done very ill, in putting *N.D.* away: And that it was without any reaſon, or iuſtice in the world.

An anſwere of a ſimple Foole, to a great Prince.

The King imagined, (that cauſe hauing beene iuſtified by many other of his Miniſters) that this had proceeded ſimply out of his owne mouth, and told him, Thou ſpeakeſt thus for him, becauſe perhaps he was thy friend, not that thou haſt heard any man elſe ſay ſo beſides.

The Foole replyd. My friend? In faith thou lyeſt. Thou art more my friend then he: I ſay nothing, but what all men ſay. The King was offended, that any ſhould dare to queſtion his actions, or to examine his breſt. And being

being desirous to know, if any man of worth had presumed so farre to trench vpon what he had done. He replyde and said; Since thou professest that so many haue said it, and that thou art my friend, name one of those vnto me, of whom thou hast heard this complaint.

The Foole paus'd vpon the matter. And when the King thought that hee had beene calling to memory, whom he should name vnto him, hee angerly made answer; The blessed Trinitie told it me. Now see which of these three persons thou darest apprehend and punish. The King thereupon thought that it was a businesse of heauen, and so forbore to speake any more of it.

There are another kinde of pleasant Companions, which are good for nothing else but to dance, to play vpon Instruments, to sing, to murmure, to blaspheme, to swagger, to lye, and to deuoure victuals, good drinkers, (a) and bad liuers. And of these, some are only good at one of these qualities; other some at all. Wherein some great ones take such delight, that they shall haue what they will of them, doing them many extraordinary graces and fauours, which is a most grieuous sinne.

(a) Buenos beuedores, y malos viuidores.

The vanitie of some great Men in rewarding Fooles and Iesters

To these, (and only for these Iigges) they giue Iewels of great value, rich suits of cloathes, and hand-fuls of gold; which is more then they will doe for a wise, vertuous, and honest seruant, which shall treate with them of the ordering of their Estates and Persons, illustrating their names, and honouring their house with glorious Titles. But rather when it so falleth out, that these come vnto them about matters of importance, and which neerely concerne them, they reiect them, and will not be aduised by them.

Why Counsellors of State speake not their mindes truly to their Masters.

Your Presidents, Gouernours, Counsellors, and euery other Officer in Court, or that haue ought to doe in the Palace, being greedy of honour, and blinded with passion, if they bee called to speake their opinion, they often say that in publike, which their owne priuate opinion approues not, though it be neuer so good; because they conceiue that in so doing, they shall conforme theirs, to that of their Lord and Master, and so mannerly seeme to runne along in the pleasing of his humour; As also, for that it would grieue them to the very heart, that another should get the start of them, in gaining their Princes grace and fauour from them. So that many are not admitted thereunto, for that they had not this trumpe in their hand, and would not play the like tricks, these getting more by their foule, then they by their faire play. By reason whereof, many things remaine without remedie and redresse; and great businesses often-times ouerthrowne.

Plaine speaking speedes not alwaies best.

And if consultation shall be had of such things, whereof great profit may redound to themselues or to the State, they will tell the Author thereof coldly and dryly, because they will neither thanke him, nor reward him; Wee knew this before; but there are a thousand inconueniences in it.

Good labours ill requited.

But cursed be those Counsellours, who because they were not the first in deliuering that sound opinion in such a businesse, blame the Author thereof, and carried away with the winde of their vanitie, and greedinesse of gaine, send him away empty: but vsing them first as Apothecaries doe their Simples; who first distill or pund them in a Morter, and when they haue squeez'd all the iuyce, and wrung the substance out of them, throw out the cake on the dung-hill. They will first informe themselues thorowly of the busines, the best that they can; and when they finde they are well and fully informed, they take it to themselues, casting from them the true Author thereof; and that good counsell of his, they sell for their owne; and this they doe *cum priuilegio*.

Shallow heads neither good for themselues nor others.

Some there are, that are like vnto those glasses or other vessels, that haue great bellies and little mouthes, they vnderstand things amisse, and fill their stomacke with all that they heare, and whatsoeuer is said vnto them: But al-

though men tell, and powre into them neuer so much, and though they be as full as they can hold; yet because they know not how to conceiue things well, they cause others to apprehend as little. And for this reason their businesses miscarry, and take not so happily as they should; for they can not be so well informed of that they treated vpon, as those that were the proper Authors thereof, and had beaten their braines about it many dayes and nights, breaking their sleepes, and losing many a meale, for the better examining of all the contrary obiections, and for the aduancing of their pretended profitable ends. Much good may it doe them, let them goe beyond me this way and spare not; for I would be loth in the end to rent such kinde of gettings, or to farme them out of their hands.

For what services the Embassadour made much of Guzman.

My Master tooke pleasure in hearing me, and liked me for something else too besides my talke. For like a good Gardiner, he did gather those flowers together, which seemed fittest vnto him for the making vp of his Nose-gay, picking out the best and the choysest for his particular vse, and the rest (which were but as it were the riffe-raffe and refuse flowers,) he reserued only for entertainment.

The Embassadours noble disposition.

He treated with me of that in priuate, which others did not stick to speake in publike. And these his secrets he did not only communicate to me alone; but when he desired to know any thing, and to attaine to the true vnderstanding of businesses, that he might not erre, he would consult with men of wit, and those that had the best abilities, he would make very much of them, fauour and honour them; and if they were poore and needy, he would supply their wants as well as he could, and more particularly in those things whereof he knew they stood most in need. And this he fastned vpon them in that wise and discreet manner, that it should not seeme to be bestowed vpon them by the way of Almes, leauing them thereby well contented, fully satisfied, and aboue all, exceeding thankfull. It was his fashion, to haue two or three of these vsually at his table, where were propounded graue politicke questions, and businesses of State; and especially touching those things, which did presse and import him most, and neerest concerned his owne particular ends. By this meanes, without opening and discouering of himselfe, hee receiued their opinions, and reaped the chiefest fruits that their wits could afford him.

His course to come to know what was done abroad, and in Court.

The like course he tooke with the Officers in Court, particular Gentlemen, and some Citizens of the best esteeme in *Rome*; with whom he holding friendship, came to know the wrongs they receiued, the remedies to be applyed, and how and which way they stood affected. And then afterwards hauing a good iudgement of his owne, he did so dispose of things, as might make most for his aduantage, and the King his Masters seruice; so that hee did seldome erre or faile in those things that he vndertooke. Hee was very discreet, of a settled and well composed behauiour, vertuous, courteous, well studied, and a great louer of those that had in them such commendable parts of learning as were worthy the recommendation. Hee was indued with all those good qualities, which were to be required in a person of his place and imployment; he was like a goodly roome, furnished with all those rich ornaments which might set it forth, and make it appeare faire and beautifull in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midst thereof, euen in the very best part of all the roome, there was a (a) choake-Peare sowen and growne vp, which did much blemish it.

(a) *The Spanish* Refran. Estaua sembrado y nacido vn pero.
He had one ill qualitie, which did drowne all the rest. I take that to be the sense, though I haue not elsewhere met with the vnfolding of this phrase of speech.

This Apple was our generall ruine; this Peare the perdition of euery particular. Hee was an *Enamorado*; one that was ouer head and eares in loue. For there is no flesh so sound, that hath not some corruption; nor no body so free, that hath not some one infirmitie or other. And his was, that he did but loue too well; yea, euen to excesse. But in a matter of this nature, let euery man

man iudge, as ſhall ſeeme beſt to his owne liking. Howbeit, many wiſe men haue ſaid, that a man can not bee abſolutely perfect, vnleſſe he haue once in his life-time beene in loue.

And of this opinion, it ſeemeth, was that pleaſant-conceited Countrie fellow, that was the common Cryer in his Pariſh, who hauing often cry'd an Aſſe, that another Countrie fellow had loſt, and could by no meanes heare any newes of him, (for it ſhould ſeeme ſome Gypſies had ſtolne him, who that he might not be knowne againe, had put new markes and colours vpon him) did earneſtly intreat him, that he would doe him the kindeneſſe to cry him once more vpon the Sunday following, after high Maſſe was ended; and if he ſhould chance to heare any tydings of his Aſſe, he would for his labour giue him a little young fat Pig that he had at home. *A tale of a Cryer.*

The knaue Cryer greedy of the Pig, did as he had requeſted him. And all the people being met together in the Market place, hee ſtood in the midſt thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voyce; To all manner of people, that are dwellers in this Towne, or borderers thereabout, be it knowne, that if there be any man or woman, that hath neuer yet beene in loue, let them come in, and tell their name, and they ſhall haue a fine young Pig for their labour. And God ſaue the King.

There was placed right againſt the ſame, leaning himſelfe againſt the Wall of the Councell houſe, a lubberly-Lad of ſome two and twenty yeeres of age, with long ſhagge hayre, a ruſſet Caſſocke on his backe, welted with the ſame cloth, open about the ſhoulders, and cloſe before, Breeches of white cortond Bayes, gathered and playted beneath at the knees, a Shirt with a band thereunto, ſo hard quilted throughout the ſtocke, that a Turkiſh bow with a very ſharpe Arrow, was not able to pierce it, a poore thred-bare Cloake, a payre of high ſhooes of Neats-leather, knit together with two ſtrings of twiſted Hempe, and bare-legged, who comming in all haſte to the Cryer in his Clowniſh kinde of language, ſaid vnto him; Brother *Sanz*, giue mee the Pig: for by theſe ten bones I vow vnto you, that I was neuer yet in loue, neuer had my head puzled with it, nor euer payd any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Cryer calling the Owner of the beaſt in all haſte, and pointing to this Chop-loch with his finger, ſaid vnto him, *Anton Berrocal*, giue me my Pig, and take you here your Aſſe.

But that this may be proued, & that truly by ſome Preſident of theſe preſent times wherein we liue: There was in *Salamanca* a principall Doctor of the Chayre, one of the famouſeſt and graueſt Aduocates in all that Vniuerſitie; that often viſited (for his entertainment) a certaine Gentlewoman, that had profeſt her ſelfe a Nunne, very faire ſhe was, well deſcended, and wonderfull diſcreet. And he being inforced to abſent himſelfe from thence for ſome few dayes, he went his way without taking his leaue of her, thinking that he had now attained to the perfection of his loue, and that there was no need of theſe fineneſſes, and niceties betweene them. *Another tale of a Doctor of* Salamanca.

Afterwards, when he was returned from his iourney; hee vvent (as he was vvont) to viſit her. But vvhen hee ſaw, that ſhe would not admit of his Viſit, hee became very penſiue and ſad there-vpon; becauſe hee could not imagine what ſhould bee the cauſe of this ſudden ſtrangeneſſe, hauing alwayes heretofore ſhew'd her ſelfe very kinde and louing vnto him. But when hee came (by ſome diligences, that he had vſed) to know the reaſon of it, he was vvonderfull well contented therewith, it ſeeming vnto him, that this in ſome ſort was rather a kinde of grace and fauour of hers, then otherwiſe.

Well, he ſent vnto her to excuſe himſelfe, earneſtly intreating her, that he might bee ſo much beholding vnto her, as to ſee her, vſing therein the means of ſuch Ladies and Gentlewomen as were friends to them both.

At laſt (through much importunitie) ſore againſt her will, ſhe came forth to receiue his Viſit, but with that anger and diſdaine, that ſhe could not containe her ſelfe, but muſt needs ſhew it: for the very firſt words that ſhe let fly at him, were theſe:

Baſe, and ill-nurtur'd as thou art; for ſuch baſe thoughts, argue no leſſe then baſeneſſe of bloud; which is confirmed by thy vngentlemanly proceeding; whereof, to thy ſhame thou haſt made too open ſhow. For hauing thy being, as it were from me, and for my ſake, and hauing come thereby vnto that height, wherein now thou art, forgetting all the good I haue done thee, and all the charge that I haue beene at to qualifie thee, and put thee forward in the world, thou haſt loſt all that due reſpect and thankefulneſſe, which I deſerued at thy hands; but ſince the fault vvas mine in raiſing thee, it is no maruell, that mine ſhould be the puniſhment.

To theſe ſhe added many other more ſharpe and bitter words: ſo that the poore Gentleman being daſht quite out of countenance, becauſe many were there preſent when ſhe vſ'd him thus courſely, and gaue him ſuch a ſound rattling; incenſed with the exceſſe of this her rigour, he made her this ſhort and cutted reply:

Gentlewoman, touching this complaint of yours, be it with, or without any iuſt cauſe, I will not ſtand to diſpute it; And for your accuſing of my vn-mannerly proceeding, let that likewiſe paſſe; For, *Cada vno, ſiente como ama.* Euery man beſt knowes, how, and how much he loues. And I acknowledge, that all this ariſeth from the many and great fauours, that you haue been pleaſed to conferre vpon me.

But whereas you touch mee in my reputation, (being forced there-vnto by you,) it is fit and neceſſary that therein I ſhould ſatisfie thoſe that are heere preſent, I muſt be ſo bold with you as to tell you plainely; That ſince God hath been pleaſed to raiſe me to that I am, I come not thereto either by corruption, or fauour, but by mine owne great paines, and continuall ſtudies, haue I procured my preferment. She then interrupting him, and not ſuffering him to goe on, returned him, but with a great deale of choller, this quicke anſwere:

Thou lyeſt like a Villaine. Thou riſe by thy learning? Thou had'ſt not come to that great knowledge that thou haſt, nor hadſt euer had ſo much wit, as to learne to mend ſo much as an old ſhoo, if I had not put ſpirit into thee, quickned thy wit, and perfected thy vnderſtanding, by giuing thee leaue to make loue vnto me. This whetſtone put an edge vpon thy dull ſconce; and but for this, thou might'ſt haue ſunke, and neuer beene able to lift vp thy head.

Touching loue.

By this then wee may ſee, how much it may import a man to loue; and that it is not ſo great a fault as ſome would make it. Miſtake mee not; I meane, when the ends are good, and honeſt.

But in my Maſter it was taken in the worſer part; for his ends did exceed and paſſe their bounds; and the blame of all that ill was laid vpon me; euery man conceiuing, that I was the cauſe thereof: Complaining, that ſince I came to ſerue him, I had opened his ſcull, and put into his head nothing but Hawkes-bels and Rattles: All that he tooke delight in, were merry tales, idle ieſts, and the like vanities: which till then, he had neuer formerly been giuen vnto.

It might very well be, that with my heate I might cauſe ſome buds or little ſprigs to ſprout forth. But for to ſpeake the truth (ſeeing the Parties are not heere to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuſe) I aſſure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harme.

For when I entred into his ſeruice, and that hee came to put his cure in-

to

to my hands, the Phyſicians deſpayred of his recouerie, and had giuen him quite ouer, and would haue no more to doe with him; I vvill not deny, but that I might miniſter much thereof vnto him; for by reaſon I was in ſuch fauour with him, I had likewiſe the freedome to vſe many odde fooliſh ieſts, and preiudiciall liberties of ſpeech.

I was familiarly acquainted with all *Rome*, I had as free acceſſe into euery houſe, as into our owne; excuſing my pretenſions, that I onely repaired to ſuch and ſuch places, to giue leſſons to ſome to ſing to the Gitterne, and teach other ſome to dance. *Guzmans course of life in Rome.*

I did intertaine your young Wenches in good conuerſation with merry and pleaſant ieſts; and your widdowes, with whiſpering tales in their eares; and entring into a league of friendſhip with your married men, I got likewiſe the good will of their Wiues, to whom they would bring mee to laugh and make ſport, wherewith they were well pleaſed, for the good contentment they tooke in my harmeleſſe mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this good ground, my Maſter might take occaſion to declare and open himſelfe more freely to me. For I relating vnto him, what, and how things paſſed abroad, it was an eaſie matter for me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart, by blowing firſt away the aſhes from off thoſe coales, that were already throughly tinded, aliue, and very quicke within him. He was in a good diſpoſition there-vnto, and therefore any the leaſt occaſion would ſerue the turne. He was a kinde of houſe made all of thatch, ſo that a little ſparke was inough to raiſe a great flame, hauing ſuch combuſtible ſtuffe to worke vpon, being ſtill affectioned to that, which himſelfe had moſt minde to, without hauing reſpect to that diſcreet carriage, which he formerly obſerued in all his actions.

I doe ingeniouſly confeſſe, that I was an inſtrument of his exceſſes and flyings out, and that in regard of my being ſeene to walke here and there to and fro, to enter into this houſe, and to come out of that, many houſes, and women of good qualitie, were ſpotted and branded with infamy. *Guzman an ill inſtrument to his Maſters deſires.*

But let vs heere leaue my Maſter as a man, to whom albeit theſe things did cauſe him to be noted, and to haue his good name called in queſtion, yet was not he ſo much to be blamed, as thoſe who did know well inough, what manner of fellow I was.

I would many times demand of them, what honour or profit I did reape, by being intereſſed in theſe buſineſſes? Why ſhould Widdowes take delight in hearing of tales, and pleaſant ieſts? Why Parents bring ſuch ſtraggling wanderers home to their Daughters? Or why Husbands make their Wiues merry with ſuch dangerous intertainments? What other good can be expected from your neat Pages (ſuch as I then was) who doe ſcarce touch the ground that they tread on? What doe your Princes witty Ieſters, and your Great mens Dwarfes ſerue for, but to talke with Ladies and Gentle-women, and to indeare vnto them their Maſters loue? who againe inquire of them, what good tables they keepe, how gallantly they liue, how much they ſpend, what in Amber, and other odours and ſweet perfumes, what in the pompe of apparell, and what in Muſicke that they dayly beſtow vpon their friends and Miſtreſſes? *Pages & Dwarfs of what vſe.*

Why doe they talke and giue eare to ſuch things, whereby they afterwards giue occaſion to others to open their mouthes, and to vtter with their tongues all that they either know or imagine? Doe not they perceiue, that in ſo doing, they build but their owne priſon, and weaue that vvinding ſheete, wherein their good names muſt be winded and buryed? What benefit can the content they take in hearkening to merry tales bring them? which are to no other end in the world, but to giue way vnto them, that they may

report

report to their Maſters, what they take moſt pleaſure in, beſides the queſtioning of their good name amongſt their neighbours? Let theſe a Gods name make themſelues merry with the reward of their errours; and if they be louers of ieſts, it is no maruell if they bee ieſted withall. They deſire a life to haue muſicke play at their windowes, whileſt others in the meane while are making Ballads of them, to ſing forth their ſhame at euery mans doore.

A leſſon to Widdowes.

A Widdow, that reſpects her honour, and will haue a care of her credit, muſt keepe her doore ſhut, her daughter chamber'd vp, her caſement cloſe, and aboue all, not ſuffering her to haue her owne will, and to doe what ſhe liſt; that ſhee be viſited but ſeldome, but be alwayes occupied; for, of idleneſſe, (a) growes wantonneſſe. And it ſtands with good reaſon, *Que la madre holgazana, ſaque hija corteſana*: That a light mother, ſhould breed a looſe daughter. And if ſhe loue to haue her traine plaid withall, that her daughter will proue a Wagge-tayle. And if ſhe hap to be married, ſhe will turne ill huſwife, becauſe ſhe hath beene ill taught.

Prou. Del oçio naçe el negocio.

A leſſon to Parents.

By this you may ſee, vvhat obligations the Parents haue to looke well vnto their Children: Let them take away all occaſions of ſcandall; Let them weigh with themſelues, what (vpon the like occaſions) they murmure and whiſper of others. And then let them conſider, how much better it were, that their Wiues, Siſters, and Daughters, ſhould rather learne to handle their Needle, then to play on the Ghitterne; to gouerne well, rather then to dance well: For hence it commeth to paſſe, that many women, not knowing how to looke ſo well as they ſhould, into the corners of their owne houſes, buſie themſelues, in working ſtrange alterations in thoſe of others.

Speake I truth, or no? I know, ye will tell me that I doe. For ſuch truthes as theſe are not to be treated, or mentioned, but vpon neceſsitie, and vrgent occaſion.

I confeſſe it to be ſo, and for my part, I approue it. But becauſe that which I haue ſaid, toucheth none of thoſe that heare me; it is therefore well ſaid, to the end that when it ſhall be needfull, and men ſee their time, they may be the better able to giue good counſell vnto others, when they ſee them ſtep out of the way, and goe awry.

Proverb. *Malo es lo malo, que nunca puede ſer bueno.* Ill is that ill, that neuer can be good. It was not good, I confeſſe, that I ſhould bee a Bawd to my Maſter: But euery man would faine liue. And this Office I performed by thoſe tricks and deuices I told you of before, taking occaſion by my familiar and generall acquaintance in *Rome*, to goe as boldly into euery mans houſe, as I vvould into mine owne, excuſing this libertie of mine, by thoſe pretenſions I made, of teaching ſome to play vpon Inſtruments, and ſome to dance; intertaining in the meane while Maidens with merriments; Widdowes, with old wiues tales, and what was whiſpered abroad; and entring into amitie with married men, good honeſt kinde Cuckolds.

Guzman, his Maſters Bawd.

But I was in ſome ſort to be excuſed, (if not borne withall) for that my wants and neceſsitie draue me to doe as I did, and opened that doore vnto me, whereat I might get forth to ſeeke my liuing.

But what excuſe can they haue, who for the light toyes of this world, will venture the loſſe of their reputation vpon earth, and thoſe rich treaſures that are laid vp in heauen for thoſe that liue well? which two things euery man ought moſt to eſteeme, and haue euer before his eyes. But what I did herein, was to wedge my Maſters affection vnto me, and to worke my ſelfe into his fauour, both which I came to be poſſeſt of; and not with intent and purpoſe to reclaime him from this his weakneſſe, and to perſwade him vnto better courſes, but rather to ſpurre him on in this wretched race that he ran.

But he that would truſt me in ſuch like buſineſſes as theſe, and communi-

cate

care himselfe vnto me in this kinde, what could he looke or expect from me? I know there are many men, who thinke it is a great credit vnto them, that they doe nobly, and get a great deale of reputation and esteeme, by these their visits, their ingresses and their egresses, when indeed, it is quite contrary.

For your women that entertaine chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy-headed Poets, that neuer goe without a muske (a) Comfit in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon, with your flat-Capt Citizens, your countrie Lads, and the like; some perhaps may hold them discreet; but I am sure they lose the name of chaste, which as an inestimable Iewell they ought highly to esteeme, being for their labour euer after accounted fooles.

(a) *The Spanish word is*, Alcorça .i. vna costa de açucar refinado con mezcla de poluos cordiales. Alcorcillas, *we call* Pastillas de boca. Vid. Couarruuias. Verbo Alcorça.

Now the profit that I made by this my occupation, trading with this person, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my conuersation being so generall, it was the only meanes, that kept me from being discouered to be a Bawd.

But (to say the truth) they might very well haue put the implumed Hat vpon my head, which I haue seene worne by many others in my dayes, who did lesse deserue it then my selfe, in token they were Loue's Embassadours, whom he imployed in his chiefest and most secret affaires.

Here, in me, may you see how misfortunes fall to men by inheritance. Hitherto it hath beene deliuered without any disguise or masking, how I led my Master along, neuer suffring him to take any rest or quiet; and how hee made me another *Adonis*, in the neatnesse and gallantry of my cloathes, and delicacie of Perfumes, for the great care and diligences that I vsed in these and the like businesses.

But true and certaine it is, that murmurings and whisperings attend such Actions. And if a good man be now and then bitten, what wonder is it, that a bad man should be bruised and crusht therewith to pieces? *Y que aya sospechas, donde no faltan hechas*; And that there may well bee suspition, where deeds make confession.

False murmuration bites, true kills. Prouerb.

It were a great deale of simplicitie and ignorance in me, and other such as I am, for to seeke after any better name, or to goe about to make (as they say) a stone Wall of (b) mudde; thinking to stop mens mouthes, and to hinder their ill imaginations and bad conceits of vs, when as we our selues giue them such euident occasions to conceiue amisse of vs.

(b) *Prouerb.* Tapiar, a piedra lodo.

None can impose, or set any sessing or ratable fine vpon mens censures and opinions; for that were, *Poner puertas al campo*; to set vp gates to shut in such a vast circuit, as is *Salisburie*-Plaine.

Mens censures not to be auoyded.

Thou canst no more limit a mans thoughts, then thou canst number the sands of the Sea. It is not I that can make them to thinke, or not thinke as I would haue them; I cannot be master of their thoughts; nor will it boote any one man to deny that which all men affirme. It will be but trouble without profit, a needlesse and endlesse piece of worke; wherein we shall shew our selues as foolish as he was, who went about to locke vp the smoake, to make doores to shut it in, and to keepe it close prisoner.

But what shall we now say of our foolish Masters, who perswade themselues, that this their businesse passeth secretly and safely thorow our hands? Shall I deale truly with you? I will. Take it then from me, and I know it to be true, *Que no ay ciençia, que corrija vn enamorado*. There is no scourge of wit or learning, that will lash a wanton Louer out of his lust.

Prouerb.

For matters of Loue, there are no *Bartuli*, no *Aristotles*, no *Galens*; their counsels faile them; their wisdomes are too weake; and their Medicines can doe no good vpon them. Nor there is not any thing, that doth more publish and manifest this truth, then mens solicitude and care in these things, from the which none (that are taken therewith) can containe themselues. For with

Loue hardly remoued.

two

two Viſits of ours, and one intercourſe of theirs, or but a paſsing by their doore, make the little children (thoſe ſhrill trumpets of truth) to ſound forth their lightneſſe aloud thorow the ſtreets.

The greateſt puniſhment that lighted then vpon me was; that my hayres began to ſprout, and my Chinne to put on a beard, the which the more I ſhau'd, becauſe I would not haue it perceiu'd, the thicker it came, & grew the faſter. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handſome and witty Pages, to be *Venus* and *Cupids* chiefeſt Miniſters, the more diligence I vſed in tricking, adorning, trimming, and ſetting my ſelfe forth in laſciuious manner, the more occaſion I gaue the world thereby to talke and iudge of me accordingly. I ſtudied to be neat and handſome in my cloathes, but tooke no heed how foule the faſhion of my behauiour was; and therefore it was no maruell if they threw durt vpon me with their tongues. In a word, either actiuely or paſsiuely, euery one would beſtow vpon mee *El nombre de las paſquas*, and force me to weare their Liuery, you know what I meane; And though I told them they lyed like a company of Rogues and Villaines as they were, they would laugh, and hold their peace, giuing by this their myſtiçall kinde of ſilence, a more open way vnto the truth. Their taunts againſt me were true, and ſtrooke deepe, but whatſoeuer I reply'd vpon them, they made but a ieſt of it; my words were but as the pecking of ſtrawes, theirs as the piercing of Dartes.

Prouerb.

There are a kinde of conſiderate and diſcreet men, which take the ſayings of men, not as the words ſound in themſelues, but as they are, from whom they come; regarding more the ſpeaker, then the thing ſpoken. And this is a great point of wiſdome.

A cunning tricke to defame in this manner.

Againe on the contrary, there are ſome (I know not whether I may be ſo bold to call them fooles or no) who from ſome diſ-fauour of their Miſtreſſes, forme an iniury, and as if it either were, or might be ſo, they will be reuenged of them; and laying ſome imputation vpon their honour, ſeeke to ſcandall and defame them, without any reaſon or cauſe in the world. I was not able to ſtand againſt ſo many, nor could my Sword cut out his way thorow ſuch a multitude that ſet vpon me: I ſaw they had reaſon on their ſide, and therefore I was willing to bee-huſh, and to pocket vp theſe wrongs with patience.

And albeit it be an Act of true humilitie, patiently to ſuffer reproach; yet in me it was cowardize, and deiection of the minde. For that I held my peace and ſaid nothing, there was good cauſe why; becauſe I knew all the ſpeaking in the world could not helpe it. It might well haue made matters worſe, but neuer a whit the better. And ſeeing that I had not one ſparke of ſhame in mine owne houſe, I would not for ſhame goe ſeeke it elſe-where; the fire of my zeale to good was quite out, there was no recouering of it. And therefore (making a vertue of neceſsitie) I was forced to paſſe ouer all theſe bobs and ierkes they had at me, ſome-times with a ſmile, ſome-times a ieſt, and ſome-times with both.

Prouerb.
(a) Tenia como el melon la cama hecha.

In concluſion, howbeit I ought rather to haue indured any the greateſt hurt that could come vnto me, then ſubmit my ſelfe euen in the leaſt degree to baſe gaine; yet notwithſtanding, I had, like the *Melon*, (a) my bed made for me. I ſaw I could not well be worſe thought of then I was already, and therefore caſting aſide all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit vnto me, and tooke rather a pride in it then otherwiſe, and ſo making light of it, and ieſting it out, I did ſet a good face on the matter, when they ſaid any thing to me, that I might not ſeeme to be daſht out of countenance, or bound to giue them an anſwer, which would but haue made them to vexe me the more, and done my ſelfe no good. So that by this they perſecuted me the leſſe, and I paſt the more quietly along by them.

To paſſe things by with patience.

And

And why ſhould I take (ſeeing this did ſerue my turne, and that I paſt well enough with it) any other courſe with them? Which in theſe dangerous caſes, if I ſhould haue attempted any other way to pacifie them, I ſhould neuer haue beene able to doe it; and ſhould thereby haue but made the fire more to flame, by ſeeking to aſſwage it with Flaxe and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whoſoeuer will take vpon him to ſet open a ſhop to Vice, prouide himſelfe of a *Tortoyſe* ſhell, arme his backe with patience, and keepe his eares, and his mouth ſhut. And let not any man flatter himſelfe, that hauing foule conditions, he ſhall get him a faire report. For, *El nombre, ſigue al hombre*; As is the man, ſo is his good name. And as euery one deſerues, ſo ſhall he be eſteemed.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth that which hapned vnto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embaſſadour his Lord made.*

THere is ſo thinne a Pale put betwixt Deceiuing and Lying; and are ſo neere kinne the one to the other, that I know not who can tell, or is able to diſtinguiſh and difference the one from the other: for though they are different in name, they are one in identitie, and of the ſame paritie in effect, and in eſſence alike. For there is no Lye without Deceit, nor no Deceit without a Lye. *Of deceiuing and lying.*

He that will lye, doth deceiue; and he that will deceiue, doth lye. But becauſe they are commonly receiued after a different manner, and for different purpoſes, I will take them as they ſtand in vſe, and accordingly diſcourſe thereof.

Deceit then, in reſpect of Truth, is as Truth, in regard of a Lye: or as the ſhadow of a Glaſſe, and that naturall forme which it repreſenteth. It is as aptly diſpoſed, and is made as facill to effect whatſoeuer great hurt, as it is hard and difficult to be found out at the firſt; for that it is ſo like vnto good; that repreſenting the very ſelfe-ſame figure, faſhion, motion, and proportion, it doth the eaſier deſtroy it. It is a moſt ſubtill net, wrought of the ſlendreſt and ſmalleſt threds, in compariſon and likeneſſe whereof was framed that other, which the Poets feigne, was made by *Vulcane*, when hee caught him that cuckol'd him.

It is ſo imperceptible, and ſo fine, and thinne, that there is not any ſight ſo cleere, any iudgement ſo ſubtill, nor any diſcretion of that diſcerning, nor any wit of that nimble apprehenſion, that is able to diſcouer it, nay, ſcarce to perceiue it.

It is ſo artificially wrought, that though it bee ſpred out abroad, and laid forth as plaine as may be to our view, yet are wee not able to eſcape it, in regard wee walke on ſecurely, not ſo much as once dreaming of any fraud or deceit. And by this meanes it is ſo ſtrong, that few or none doe breake it, vvithout leauing ſome ſigne of the harme that they haue taken. And for this cauſe, it is iuſtly called *Maximum vitæ damnum*, the greateſt hurt that can happen vnto vs in this life. For vnder a tongue of Waxe, it carries a heart of Diamond; it cloathes it ſelfe with Hayre-cloth, though it neuer come neere the skinne; it keepes a chupping and ſucking in of the cheekes, for

for to make it ſeeme leane and meager, when its belly is ready to cracke with good cheere. And hauing ſtore of health to ſell to others, it ſpeakes pulingly, and pittifully; and onely that it may ſeeme to bee ſicke, it puts on a ſorrowfull countenance, powres out its teares, offers vs its boſome, and with open armes, runnes to receiue vs, but as *Ioab* did *Amaza*; imbrace, to kill.

Of all miſchiefes, deceit is the greateſt.

And as Birds giue the Empire to the Eagle; Beaſts, to the Lyon; Fiſhes, to the Whale; and Serpents, to the Baſiliske; ſo amongſt all other miſchiefes, there is none greater or more powerfull, then that of Deceit. As an Aſpe, it kils vs ſleeping; it is that *Syrens* voice, whoſe delight (like a Butchers Curre) firſt ſeazeth on the eare, and next, on the throat; its rauiſhing, is murthering; it offers a faire aſſurance of peace, and with a great deale of ſmoothneſſe, profeſſeth friendſhip; but neglecting all humane and diuine Lawes, breakes them at her pleaſure, leauing vs with as much wrong, as ſcorne.

She promiſeth cheerefull contentments, and certaine hopes, which ſhe neuer performeth, nor doe they euer come to paſſe, becauſe ſhe goes chopping and changing them from Fayre to Fayre, to make her owne market. And as a houſe is built of many ſtones; ſo one deceit is an addition of many other; and all of them ſerue for one and the ſame end. It is the Headsman of all goodneſſe, for with a ſeeming kinde of ſanctitie, it makes euery man ſecure, and there is none that are either aware of it, or feare it. It comes vnto vs in the habit of a Hermit, the better to execute its ill intents.

This contagious infirmitie is ſo generall, that not onely men, but Beaſts and Birds doe likewiſe therein ſuffer with them. Alſo the Fiſhes in the Waters exerciſe deceits; and this they doe, the better to preſerue themſelues. Trees and Plants doe deceiue, promiſing pleaſant flowers and fruits, which fayle vs at their time, paſsing brauely away with it. Stones, though they bee but ſtones, and without ſence, trouble our ſence, vvith their counterfet ſplendour, and lye, in that they ſeeme to be that they are not. Time, occaſions, and our ſences deceiue vs; and aboue all, our beſt and moſt conſiderate thoughts. In a word, all things deceiue, and we doe all deceiue, one of theſe foure manner of wayes.

Foure manner of wayes of deceiuing. The firſt.

The one is, when one vſeth a deceit, and goes cunningly away vvith it, leauing the other deceiued: As it hapned to a certaine Student of *Alcala de Henares*; who, when the Feaſt of Eaſter vvas drawing neere, and hauing nothing vvhere-with to make himſelfe merry againſt that good Time, hee called to minde a neighbour of his, who had a Court or yard, vvith great ſtore of Hens in it, vvith the vvhich hee did himſelfe no good at all.

A Tale of a Scholler of Alcala.

Hee was a poore beggerly fellow; and as hee was very poore, ſo vvas hee extreme couetous; an erranter mizer was there not in all the Country. He fed them with the bread that was giuen him of Almes; & a nights he ſhut them vp in the ſame lodging where he lay.

This Student vvent plotting with himſelfe, how hee might ſteale them away, but lighted vpon none that did yet like him. For in the day time it was impoſsible, and in the night they rooſted in the ſame roome where hee himſelfe lodg'd.

(a) *In Spaine, they doe not pay for the carriage of their Letters before-hand, but put ſo much Port vnder the Superſcription, to bee paid by him that receiues it.*

At laſt he bethought himſelfe of feigning a packet of Letters, and to put there-vpon two Ducats (*a*) Port, directing it to *Madrid* to a certaine principall Cauallero, and a Gentleman very well knowne: And before the breake of day, he very ſecretly laid it on the threſhold before his doore, that as ſoone as hee opened it, hee might preſently finde it. Hee got him vp in the morning, and as ſoone as he ſaw it, not knowing what it was, he tooke it vp.

This

This Student paſt that way in the meane while, as it were by chance. Whom this poore man eſpying, came vnto him, and intreated him to tell him what thoſe papers were. The Student told him; Marry ſuch (ſaid hee) as I vvould bee glad with all my heart I could light vpon the like.

Theſe (quoth hee) are Letters directed to *Madrid* with two Ducats Port vpon them, to a rich Gentleman that reſideth there, who ſhall no ſooner receiue them, but will ſee you truely paid for your paines.

The poore man beganne to looke vp, and was ſo ouer-ioyed therewith, that the teares did trickle downe his cheekes. Hee thought with himſelfe, that one dayes trauell was a thing of nothing; eſpecially being that he might performe this iourney by noone; and though he went thither afoot, he might in the euening, without any trouble, returne home in ſome one Cart or other that was to goe for *Alcala*. Where-vpon, he went and fed his Poultry, ſhut them vp ſafe, leauing out ſuch food as he thought ſufficient for them, and ſo hies him away with his Letters.

The Student that night made a ſhift, by getting ouer ſome back-ſides, and out-Courts, to get into that yard, where the poore mans houſe was, and heauing the doore off the hindges, hee gets mee in, taking nothing away thence but the Hens, leauing no more but one onely Cocke behinde, with a mourning-hood on his head, and a Mantle of blacke Bayes, ſo ſurely ſowed on, that they could not fall off; which done, hee with-drew himſelfe homeward to his lodging.

When the poore man was come home to his houſe the next morning, and ſaw the mis-fortune that had befalne him at home, and that hee had beſtow'd his labour in vaine; for there was no ſuch Gentleman to be found in all *Madrid*; hee, and his Cocke did bitterly bewayle this their ſolitude and widdow-hood, making lamentable moane each vnto other: the good man with his mournefull vvords; the poore Cocke, with his mourning weeds.

The ſecond.

Another kinde of deceit is: When together with the deceiued, the Deceiuer is alſo deceiued. As it hapned to this Student in this very caſe. For, he being not able to effect this buſineſſe alone by himſelfe, and that he muſt needs vſe the helpe of ſome body elſe, hee tooke vnto him one of his *Camrades*, whom he acquainted with the buſineſſe, promiſing if hee would aſſiſt him in this theft, he ſhould ſhare halfe with him.

This his Companion diſcouered it to a friend of his; he, to a third; ſo that the word paſt from one to another, till it came to the eares of certaine madde Waggs of *Andaluzia*; And for they were old *Caſtilians*, (and their Oppoſites for this cauſe) they agreed together to ſtrip them of their Hens, by another pretty deuice.

They knew the houſe from whence they were to come, and the ſtreetes, through which they were to paſſe; They fained themſelues to be the Iuſtice, and they watcht till they ſhould returne, at the turning of the ſtreet: whom they had no ſooner eſpyed, but they iſſued out (*a*) vpon them in forme of a Circle, hedging them in on euery ſide, with Lanternes, Swords and Bucklers, hauing appointed the formoſt man to aske, Who goes there? What are yee? Stand. Vpon this, they verily thinking, that hee was one of the Iuſtices ſeruants, and beeing loth to bee either knowne or taken with that badde vvord of bidding them Stand, they threw downe their Hens, and beganne to take them to their heeles, as hard as they could driue. So that there were not ſome vvanting, vvho did alſo coozen, and deceiue them.

(*a*) *This is the faſhion, and language of the Iuſtice in* Spaine, *when they walke the Round.*

The third.

The third kinde of deceit is; When it is without preiudice. Neither deceiuing others, together with themſelues; nor deceiued, when they goe about

to deceiue. And this may be done two manner of wayes; Either by Workes, orby Words. Words, by recounting Stories, telling of Tales and Fables, and other things of intertainment. Workes, as by iuggling, ſleights of the hand, tricks on the Cards, and other the like deuices, which are done without any harme or preiudice to any.

The fourth.

The fourth kinde is; When hee that thinkes to deceiue, is himſelfe deceiued; that tricke that he would put vpon another, being put vpon himſelfe: As it befell a great Prince of *Italy*, though ſome report the ſame of *Ceſar*: Who, that he might grace one of the famouſeſt Poets of his time, carried him home to his houſe, where at firſt he vſ'd him wonderfull kindely, made exceeding much of him, did him many fauours, and beſtow'd many gifts on him, as long as his humour was pleaſed with thoſe Poems that he preſented vnto him.

A pretty paſſage betwixt the Prince of Italy, *and a Poet.*

But this laſted not long, the Princes affection falling off by a little and a little, till at laſt the poore Poet was faine to content himſelfe with his bare lodging, and ſome ſhort allowance. So that he ſuffered much want and neceſſitie; and was growne ſo poore both in his purſe, and his apparell, that hee durſt not goe abroad for ſhame, becauſe he had not where-withall to couer his nakedneſſe.

The Poet weighing and conſidering this his vnhappineſſe; and ſeeing himſelfe ſhut vp as it were in a Cage, and that neither (which is permitted vnto Parrats) the Prince himſelfe, nor any about him, would vouchſafe to heare him ſpeake, hee reſolued with himſelfe to rowze vp the Princes long ſleeping fauour, and waiting an opportunitie to doe it, vnderſtanding ſuch a time, that hee was to goe abroad, hee attended at a certaine place, vvhich hee thought fitteſt for his purpoſe and vvhen the Prince drew neere, hee made toward him, and kneeling on his knees, when hee came at him, hee preſented him with a Poem that hee had made; which the Prince receiuing, hee thought by this meanes to reuiue that remembrance of him, which had ſo long lien dead. Hee continued in theſe kinde of diligencies ſo long, that the Prince beeing wearied out with theſe his importunities, was determined to put ſome ieſt or other vpon him, to make him to deſiſt from giuing him farther trouble in that kinde.

And hauing himſelfe made a Sonnet, and going out to walke one Euening, when he ſaw the Poet was comming towards him, preuenting him in the preſenting of his Poem, he drew the Sonnet out of his boſome, and clapt it in the Poets hand; the Poet vnderſtanding the tricke, as one that vvas diſcreet, feigning to haue read it, highly commending both the Verſe, and the Inuention, put his hand in his pocket, and pluckt out a (*a*) Royall of eight which he had there, and gaue it to the Prince, telling him withall; Such a good wit well deſerues a reward. I giue you all that I haue, had I more, you ſhould haue it.

A Royall of eight, is foure ſhillings Engliſh.

With this the Prince was faſt, being caught in the ſame ſnare, and paid with the ſame tricke that hee purpoſed to put vpon him. And from that time forward he fauoured him, as he had done before.

Many other dangerous deceits.

There are many other kindes of theſe deceits; and one aboue the reſt, which is a very dangerous one; which is that of thoſe, who would make vs to beleeue that for Goſpell, when as our owne eyes and knowledge doe both ſee, and know the contrary.

Proud fellowes.

A fellow that is baſely both bred and borne, and well enough knowne to be ſuch a one, will ſeeke by his hawtie carriage and proud lookes, to gaine vnto himſelfe the name of a great man, though (God he knowes) he is ſcarce worth foure *Maranedis*; giuing (by his ill proceeding) occaſions to others, to ſcoffe and laugh at him: And to ſay, what fellow is this? What was his begin-

beginning? Of what continuance his Aunceſtors? Whence doth he fetch his Pedigree? What did his Gentilitie or his Office coſt him? What trade was his Father of? and of what occupation his Mother? Theſe men thinke to deceiue others, and they deceiue themſelues. For not by this meanes (that is to ſay, by pride) but by humilitie, affabilitie, and faire behauiour, they goe by degrees, throwing in their earth, till they come in time to fill vp thoſe ditches, and to be leuell and equall with the beſt.

Others ſeeke to deceiue with their fierce lookes, thinking thereby to be counted valiant, as if wee did not know, that they are the only men, that dare not meddle with a Mouſe; or tread vpon a Worme, if hee ſhould but offer to turne tayle. *Swaggerers.*

Others with their too much prattle, and quoting of Authors, ſeeke to bee held wiſe men, and learned Clearkes, not conſidering that many Stationers haue farre more in number, who notwithſtanding in matter of knowledge are meerely ignorant men. For neither the long Gowne, nor the broad-brim'd Hat, nor the Mule, for all his graue Foot-cloth, ſhall bee ſufficient to couer the diſeaſe they are ſicke of, but at three or foure ſhakings of the Vrinall, wee ſhall diſcerne thoſe raggs, and cloudie ſtreakes that are in their Vrine, and then they will plainely bee diſcouered what they are. *Talking ſchollers.*

I haue ſaid of ſome, that they repute themſelues wiſe and learned, becauſe they haue ſtore of bookes, and that your Stationers haue many more then they; but many of them are worſe then theſe block-headed Doctors, who with a great deale of paines, and by tradition, vnderſtand the *Frontiſpices* of bookes, and yet notwithſtanding, being often therein deceiued, they fall headlong into the pit of ignorance; now would I haue thee to tell mee which of theſe two doe deceiue moſt? I ſhall tell it thee. They are both of one graine, ſowne and reaped vnder one and the ſame Moone, bread of the ſame meale whereof moſt men doe eate, and is their onely nouriſhment. *Stationers.*

But out of the number of theſe, doe I except *Paulus* and *Aldus Manutius*; *Henricus*, *Robertus*, and *Carolus Stephanus*; *Adrianus Turnebbius*, *Franciſcus Sanſouinus*, and many others like vnto them, not only meere Stationers, and Printers, but learned and famous Schollers, and of great note in the world, whoſe workes and labours doe and ſhall euer render thereof a perpetuall teſtimonie. There haue beene diuers other worthy vnderſtanding men in this their profeſsion; who in their life-time, haue publiſhed and brought to light many moſt noble and excellent Authors; who, if they had not by them beene reuiued, had beene buryed for euer in the Church-yard of obliuion. Whereas now many of them by theſe mens great paines and induſtrie, are rayſed from their graues to immortalitie. *Printers.*

Others are growne ſo fooliſh, (and indeed are accounted no better) who being now growne old, decrepit, and vnable for any kinde of vſe or exerciſe, and this their weakneſſe being notorious and well knowne to all the world, and this their rotten building ready to fall, yet are they willing to deceiue themſelues; and euery body elſe (if they could) contrary to all truth and reaſon, by dying the haires of their heads and beards, as if any man were ſo ignorant, and did not know that there are none of theſe changeable coloured beards, but at euery motion of the Sunne, and euery caſt of the eye they preſent a different colour, and neuer a one perfect, much like vnto thoſe in the necks of your Doues and Pigeons; for in euery haire of theſe old Cox-combes, you ſhall meet with three diuers and ſundry colours; white at the root, yellow in the middle, and blacke at the point, like vnto one of your Parrats feathers. *Old men.*

Old women.

When women doe the like, there is not any one haire of theirs, which hath not it's different colour. There was a certaine Gentlewoman in the world, that ſhall be nameleſſe, (which of mine owne knowledge, I am able to affirme) who did vſe this dying and colouring of her hoary haires, which one day I did diligently marke and obſerue; and beleeue me (for let me not liue if I lye vnto you) ſome of them ſeemed greene vnto me, ſome blue, ſome yellow, ſome vermilion, and others of diuers other colours; and in ſome one odde haire, all theſe colours did conioyne and meete together. So that ſeeking thus to deceiue Time, and to diſſemble her Age, ſhee diſcouered her folly, and became a laughing ſtocke to as many as lookt vpon her.

Young folkes.

That ſome young folkes ſhould vſe the like deceit, who by inheritance haue beene borne with gray haires, (who like the fruits that grow in the fields of *Placençia*, grow ripe before their time) it is no great maruell. Yet euen theſe too (though better to be borne withall) giue occaſion of hauing that freely ſpoken of them, which they willingly would auoyd, whereby it comes to paſſe, that as they increaſe in yeeres, they decreaſe in credit.

Old age, a venerable thing.
Old age neceſſary, yet not regarded.

O thou vnfortunate, miſerable, and wretched old Age, thou ſacred Temple; thou Sanctuarie of ſafety; thou ſtop to the deſperate carreeres of this life; thou Inne of reſt to our weary bones; How is it that thou art ſo much abhorred in this life, being that thou art the Hauen, which all men deſire to attaine vnto? How is it that they, who reſpect thee a farre off, when they come neerer vnto thee, ſticke not to prophane thee? How is it, that thou being the veſſell of Prudence, thou art derided as fooliſh? How is it, that thou that art honour it ſelfe, reſpect and reuerence, art by thoſe that are thy beſt friends reputed infamous? How is it, that thou being the Treaſurie of knowledge, art deſpiſed and contemned? Either there is ſome great defect in thee, or ſome euill diſpoſition in them; whereof the latter is moſt certaine. They come vnto thee (wanting the ballaſt of graue counſell and ſound aduice) like a Ship without ſand or grauell in the Keele of her, to keepe her ſteady; through lacke whereof the Barke goes roulling and tottering to and fro, becauſe their ſhallow braines want that due weight and counterpoyſe, that ſhould ballace their vnderſtanding, and keepe it ſtraight and vpright.

To this purpoſe I will tell you a tale, worthy of long conſideration, though the diſcourſe be ſhort, and feigned for this effect.

A pretty Tale.

When *Ioue* had made the fabricke of this Vniuerſe, it ſeeming vnto him, that all was faire & perfectly good, before he created man, he formed all other liuing creatures; amongſt the which, the Aſſe being deſirous to be the moſt remarkable and renowmed of all the reſt, (which had he not done, he had not beene an Aſſe) as ſoone as he had ſcarce newly opened his eyes, beholding this glorious and beautifull frame, he was wonderfull iocund and merry; began to leape & to skip from one place to another, and to bray (as they vſe to do) aloud (being the firſt trumpeter, that euer was in the world) till being quite wearied out, and glad to take his eaſe, being a little gentler and cooler then hee was before, it began to come in his minde; How, from whence, and when he was an Aſſe; for that he had not beene an Aſſe from the beginning, nor begotten by an Aſſe. Which made him to examine with himſelfe why, and to what end he was created, and what place ſhould be prouided for him, where hee might take his reſt; it being a thing proper vnto Aſſes, to take the ends of things into their conſideration, when they are already paſt all remedie, and (as we ſay) at the laſt caſt, when the iollitie of their youth is paſt, their merry dayes ſpent and gone, and their pleaſures at an end.

Iupiter and the Aſſe.

(a) Temprano ſe recoje, quien tarde ſe conuierte.

And yet would to God, that ſome would come to this amendment, and perſeuer therein, (a) *Que temprano ſe recoje, quien tarde ſe conuierte.* For he recals

recals himselfe in time, that returnes at last. In this melancholy humour, my honest Asse comes me to *Iupiter*, humbly beseeching him, that he would bee pleased to reueale vnto him, who he was, and for what end hee had created him? *Iupiter* told him, For the seruice of Man, and told him by piece-meale one after another, all those duties and seruices belonging to his charge, and what manner of burthens he was to beare.

Which newes was so vnpleasing vnto him, that vpon the very hearing of it, there suddenly came bruises and gallings vpon his backe, and hardnesse of hoofes, with his head and eyes hanging downe to the ground for very griefe. And out of a conceited feare of his future labour, (for euils not yet indured, out of the noyse and rumour that they make, doe, at the first nomination of them, feare vs more then when we afterwards proue them) he remained in that sad and melancholy dumpishnesse as we now vsually see him, conceiting that to be a most yerkesome and painefull kinde of life whereunto hee was destinated.

Whereupon he farther intreated of *Iupiter*, that hee would be pleased to tell him, how long he was to lead this miserable life? *Iupiter* told him, he was to continue therein, the full tearme of thirtie yeeres.

The Asse hereupon began to mourne and grieue anew, it seeming vnto him, to be as it were a perpetuall and eternall slauerie, if it should last so long: And therefore once more he humbly besought *Iupiter*, that hee would haue compassion of him, and not suffer him for so long a season, to indure so hard a seruitude. And being that he had not yet dis-merited of him, by any fault that he had committed against him, nor would (if otherwise he could choose,) euer offend him, that ten yeeres might suffice for his liuing in this base fashion; all which time he would faithfully promise vnto him, to serue man wel & truly, like an honest Asse, with all meeknesse and fidelitie. And those other twentie, which were ouer and aboue remaining vnto him, that he would bestow the ouer-plus of those yeeres vpon some one, that were better able to beare them.

Iupiter being moued with these his humble and earnest intreaties (looking, poore silly foole, most pitifully,) granted him his request. Whereupon the Asse was not al-together so sad as he was before.

Iupiter and the Dogge.

The Dogge, whose nature it is, to winde and sent out things, stood all this while attentiuely hearkening to all that had passed betwixt *Iupiter* and the Asse. And being desirous likewise to know something concerning his good or bad fortune; albeit hee carryed himselfe herein like a Dog, seeking to nose out that which was not lawfull for him; to wit, the secrets of the gods, which are only reserued to themselues, (of which nature are future things, and such as are to fall out hereafter;) yet notwithstanding his errour therein was worthy some excuse, because hee had the manners to craue this kindenesse of *Iupiter*, and did not, as some women doe, and some of those peraduenture that now heare me, who without God, (but not without the Deuill) seeke after Witches and Gypsies, to tell them their fortunes.

Witches and Gypsies, full of fraud and deceit.

But how can they tell thee any good, who them-selues are so bad? They tell them a thousand lyes, and fraudulent inuentions, and steale from them (be it good or bad) all that they can finger, leauing them afterwards amazed, ashamed, mocked, and deceiued, and laught at for fooles as long as they liue.

But to returne to our Story that wee haue in hand; The Dogge came to *Iupiter*, and besought him, (seeing that he had proceeded with the Asse, his Companion, so graciously, giuing him vpon the hearing of his Petition, satisfaction to his demaunds) that hee would likewise affoord him the like fauour.

The Dogs office.

Who made him this answere; that his Office must be to runne a hunting, and to kill Hares, and Conies, but not to touch or eate one bit of them, but with all faithfulnesse to resigne them vp vnto his Master. And afterwards, when he should returne home weary and stiffe with hunting, and following of his Game, he must be content to submit himselfe to be tyde to a post, to guard the house, where he should wait the eating of late and little suppers, feeding on a few cold scraps, and bee glad to gnaw vpon a bone, that had been already pickt and throwne away. And besides, (which was worse then all the rest) he should haue many a bang about the loynes with a Cudgell, and many a spurne and kicke with the foot.

Then did he aske him againe, for how long a time hee should indure all this paine? *Iupiter* told him, thirty yeeres.

The Dogge, when he heard this his doome, was very much daunted, and discontented, as thinking it too intolerable a thing to be indured; But relying on that grace and fauour, which *Iupiter* had shew'd the Asse (hoping that he should taste as much of his goodnesse, as his fellow before him) intreated him to take pitie of him, and that hee would not permit, that hee should receiue so much wrong, and bee so hard and coursely vsed; for hee was the workman-ship of his hands, and no lesse his creature then was the Asse; and besides, he was more louing and faithfull, then all the other beasts of the field. And that therefore hee would vouchsafe the fauour, if not to lessen the time of his troublesome life, yet at least to equall him with the Asse. *Iupiter* condescended. The Dogge, in token of his thankefulnesse, bowed his nose to the ground, remitting into his hands the remainder of those his other twenty yeeres.

Iupiter, and the Ape.

Whilest these things were a doing, the Ape did not sleepe, but lay close, and listened very diligently to all that had past, longing to see what would be the end and successe of these their supplications. And because it is a peculiar propertie belonging to the Ape, to imitate that, which others doe, he would likewise in this follow his fellowes, being desirous also to know, what should become of him? Perswading himselfe, that hee that had shewed so much mercy to the Asse, and the Dogge, would take no lesse pitie of him.

Here-vpon, he goes me to *Iupiter*, and humbly intreats him that hee would deigne to giue him some light of that, which was like to befall him in the passage of this his life, and for what end he had created him; for it was not a thing to be doubted, that he had made him in vaine.

The Apes office.

Iupiter signified vnto him, that it should for the present bee sufficient for him, onely to know, that he must goe trayling of a chaine vpon the ground, with a great clogge at the end of it, that should continually accompanie him, and be bound as a Surety for him, in case he were not ty'de fast to some Post, or the barre of a Window; where, in the Summer hee should suffer heate, and in the Winter, cold; indure hunger and thirst; eating his meat, leaping, and skipping, and fetching many a friscall. And that for euery bit they gaue him, he must first make a thousand chatterings with his teeth, and as many mowes and mops with his mouth, in requitall whereof he should receiue so many lashes with a whip, onely to prouoke others to laughter, and to make them merry.

He thought this was hard teaching, he did not halfe like it, it was too curst a Schoole for him to bee trayned vp in, and would then, (if he could) haue made show thereof by his many teares; but putting a good face on the matter (as your Apes can when they list) and patiently brooking his hard fortune, he would faine likewise know, how long he must be ty'de to this hard course of life? He receiued that answere from him, as the rest had before, to wit, thirty yeeres.

Grieued with this answere, but comforted with the hope that he had in the all-mercifull *Iupiter*, he besought him that they might not be more then those of other beasts, and euen those few, he thought were too many to be indured.

Iupiter made good his request, and granted him what he desired; and the Ape kissing his hand (as if hee had beene borne a Courtier) with a low Conge took his leaue, and went away with his other Companions & friends; the Asse, and the Dogge.

Iupiter and the Man.

After these things were thus finished and set in order, *Iupiter* at last created Man, making him a more perfect creature then any of the rest, giuing him an immortall and discursiue Soule; He gaue him power and dominion ouer all that he had created vpon earth; making him the vsu-fructuarie Lord thereof. Man was very well pleased therewith, and tooke great delight in beholding how goodly a creature he was; how faire and beautifull; how curiously organized; how handsomely shap't; how strongly set; how great and powerfull a Prince; insomuch that hee beganne to thinke with himselfe, that such an excellent fabricke, was worthy immortalitie. And therefore he intreated *Iupiter* to tell him; not, what should become of him hereafter, but onely, how long he was to liue? *Iupiter* replyde; That when he first determined the creation of all kinde of liuing creatures, and more particularly of Man, hee was then resolued to haue giuen euery one of them thirty yeeres of life apiece.

Man here-vpon, beganne much to maruell, and wonder at the matter, that for so short a time, he had made so admirable a piece of worke; for in the opening and shutting of the eye, like vnto a Flower, his life should passe away, and should scarce bring his feet from forth his mothers wombe, but that he is entring with his head into that of the earth, rendring vp his body to the graue, not inioying his age, nor that delightsome and pleasant seat, wherein he had been created.

How man should treat with God?

And therefore considering with himselfe what had lately passed betwixt *Iupiter* and those other three beasts before-mentioned, hee humbled himselfe before him; and vvith a lowly (but pleasing) countenance, bespake him thus:

Supreme *Iupiter*; if my demand shall not be troublesome vnto thee, and against thy diuine Orders and Decrees, (for my intent shall neuer extend it selfe to any the least breach of the least of them; nor shall I euer require any thing of thee, but what shall be fitting for me to craue, and shall stand with thy willingnesse to grant, alwayes conforming my will to thine) I humbly begge this boone at thy hands, that thou wilt bee pleased, (since that these brute beasts, vnworthy of these thy fauours, haue refused that life which thou gau'st them, the happinesse whereof, as being depriued of reason, they did not well vnderstand, in that they haue euery one of them surrendred twenty yeeres of those, which thou granted'st vnto them,) to bestow those yeeres vpon me, which they haue refused, that my life may thereby be inlarged; and thou, by me, the better serued.

Iupiter gaue eare to this his Petition; and granted vnto him, that (as Man) he should liue but his owne thirty yeeres. Marry when they were spent, hee should inherit those of the other three in their order.

First, he should enioy the Asses twenty, supplying his Office, in moyling and toyling in the world, tumbling and tossing to and fro, first to one place, and then to another, carrying and re-carrying home, and out againe, carking and caring to prouide for the necessaries of this life. This thou must doe, (if thou meane to liue another day) from thy thirty, to fifty.

Now from fifty to seuenty, thou shalt liue like a Dogge, barking at one, snarling at another; grumbling at this, and growling at that, vexing thy selfe, and offending others.

And

And laſtly, from ſeuenty to ninety, thou muſt play the Ape, counterfetting thoſe thy defects of Nature, and vſing of tricks and toyes, and I know not what fooliſh and fantaſticall deuices.

The folly of ſome old men.

And hence is it, that wee often ſee in thoſe that come to this Age (for all they be ſo old) would faine ſeeme young; Tricking themſelues vp ſo neatly and ſo ſprucely, ietting it (like yong Gallants) vp and downe the ſtreets in gay cloathes, viſiting this Lady, making loue to that Miſtreſſe, and vndertake, I know not what impoſsibilities, that they may be accounted iolly ſtout Gentlemen, repreſenting that, which indeed they are not, euen iuſt for all the world, as the Ape doth, who is neuer quiet, nor thinkes himſelfe well pleaſed, but when in his actions he is imitating man, though he can neuer come to be a man.

It is a terrible thing, and not to bee indured, that men will, in deſpight as it were of Time, (which diſcouers all deceits) and ought likewiſe to put them out of this their errour; will apply themſelues to runne a courſe contrarie to the truth, and that with their tinctures, playſtrings, lees, and ſlibberſlabbers, ſhould play as it were with a Iugglers boxe, to coozen others, and diſcredit themſelues.

As if by theſe Artifices, they could eate the more, ſleepe the ſounder, liue the longer; or be troubled with the fewer infirmities and diſeaſes; or that by this courſe they take, the teeth which they haue ſhed, would come againe, or to keepe thoſe from falling from them, which are yet remaining. Or as if by this meanes, they could repaire their feeble limmes; recouer their naturall heat; quicken anew their old and frozen bloud; or as if thereby they did thinke they had the power in their owne hands, to make themſelues what they liſt, and as luſty as they liſt: In a word, as if they were ignorant what the world talkes of them; when as they themſelues talke of nothing elſe, then which is the better lye, and which the better dye; which either this, or that other man makes. Nor is all this, which I haue now deliuered vnto you, much amiſſe from the purpoſe; being that I am to make my concluſion touching this point, the propoſitions conſiſting of two Gentlemen, both free-men of this fooliſh Company, for whoſe ſake you haue had the Premiſes.

A Tale of two Gentlemen, that dined with the French Embaſſador.

My Lord the Embaſſador (as you haue already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and tooke great pleaſure in keeping a good houſe. And becauſe all gueſts doe not alwayes giue content; it one day hapned, that hee made a feaſt for the Spaniſh Embaſſador: and amongſt diuers other Gentlemen, there came two to dinner vnto him, that were principall Perſons; the one a Captaine; the other, a Doctor of Law: But to his Lordſhip both troubleſome and weariſome alike, for the great pleaſure that they tooke to heare themſelues talke. Of whoſe impertinencies, and friuolous diſcourſes, my Lord had in priuate ſome ſpeech with me heretofore.

Lyers and Flatterers, hated of all good men.

For albeit he tooke great delight and contentment in hearing men of wit and learning, ſpeakers of truth, and ſuch as were diſcreet in their carriage and behauiour; ſo on the contrary, could he by no meanes indure any kinde of falſehood or lying, though it were but in ieſt and merriment.

He could not abide an Hypocrite, or a flatterer; plaine dealing with him was a iewell; He would, that mens words and workes ſhould be ſimple, without ſophiſtication, and truly noble, without any manner of doubling, and diſsimulation.

And howbeit in theſe two men, there were very good motiues and reaſons to cauſe men to hate and abhorre them, yet I am of the minde, and hold it infallibly true, that in the liking, or diſliking of this, or that man, one more then another, there is ſome Celeſtiall influence conſpiring there-withall; and on theſe two had it wrought with great efficacie, and ſtrong effects; for there was no man but did hate them.

My

My Maſter would faine haue rid his hands of them, and haue ſhak't them off, but he could not; for that they met him in the ſtreet in his way homeward, and would needs waite on him to his houſe, as men that did much honour his Lordſhip, and did owe him a great deale more ſeruice, then this their willing attendance vpon his perſon, whereunto they owed all reſpect. So that my Lord (being ſo noble a Gentleman as he was) was driuen by force to inuite them to ſtay dinner, who had as it were by force accompanied him to his houſe. Nor is there any vexation, that can vexe a man more, then ſuch petty vexations, which a man would faine put off, but knowes not handſomely how to doe it. O this incroaching kindeneſſe, what a croſſe it is, when it ſhall be inforced vpon a man whether he will or no, vnleſſe the one will be as vnciuill as the other is impudent!

As ſoone as I ſaw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceiued preſently by his countenance, that ſomething, what-euer it were, did trouble him. I looked earneſtly vpon him, and he vnderſtood my meaning. Hee told me what it was, (ſpeaking vnto me with his eyes, by caſting them vpon thoſe two Gentlemen;) and I needed no farther inſtruction to direct me, what I had to doe.

I held my peace for the preſent, and diſſembled my anger, beginning to caſt about with my ſelfe, what courſe I were beſt to take, to make theſe men, (who had ſo diſtaſted my Maſter) a ſport and laughing-ſtocke to all the reſt of the company, and ſo make them pay dearely for their dinner.

I had no ſooner entertained this thought, but there came preſently into my head a pretty odde pranke, that made fit for my purpoſe. Nor did I take much paines in the finding of it out; for they came thither handſomely interlarded, and the ieſt, themſelues had brought it along with them ready dreſt, and very well ſeazond. Only I expected a fit occaſion, to ſet it before them, which was now neere at hand. But I did deferre it, till the laſt courſe ſhould bee ſerued in, and al-moſt ended, that it might take the better. For the (a) mouth, that will be filled with laughter, muſt not haue it's bellie emptie. A merry heart, and a hungry maw, ſeldome meet. *Tanto ſe rie, quanto ſe come.* As a man likes his fare, ſo hee laughes; proportioning his mirth, according to his meat. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Gueſts were merry, healths went round, and when I ſaw their blouds grew warme, and that they were ſet vpon the merry pinne, talking and laughing on all hands, ſome of one thing, ſome of another, a little before they were to waſh, the Towell being not yet throwne on the boord, nor the Baſon and Ewer ſet downe, I came cloſe to the Captaines ſide, and rounding him in the eare, told him a notable *non ſequitur*; He laught heartily at it; and being bound to requite me with another, made me bend downe my head towards his boſome, that he might the better tell it me in mine eare; and ſo in ſecret, we made two or three paſſages one vpon another; and when I ſaw my time, and that it ſerued fit for my purpoſe, I began to raiſe my voyce a note higher, and with a cheerefull looke, ſmiling merrily vpon him, (as if we had talked all this while of that which I ſhall now tell you, when (God he knowes) we had neuer a word of any ſuch matter I told him, No, my *Señor Capitan*, no, you ſhall pardon me, I will not; if your Worſhip will vent it your ſelfe, you may better doe it then I, for you haue a good tongue to put it home, and a better arme to maintaine it. I will hatch none of your egges (good Captaine) forth with them your ſelfe. For theſe are no fit and ſauory Ieſts, for ſuch a poore Youth as I am, and being ſo great a ſeruant of Maſter Doctors, as no man in the world can be more.

With that, My maſter, and all the reſt of the Gueſts beſides, began to crie out vnto me at once, How now, *Guzmanillo*, what's the matter? I know not, Sir, vnleſſe my noble Captaine here long to ſee my crowne ſhauen, and to haue

Prouerb. (a) Que la boca ſe hincha de riſa, no ha de eſtar el vientre bazio de vianda.

Guzman *puts a tricke vpon the Doctor and the Captaine.*

haue me to take my Degrees, which it ſeemes, hee would faine haue me to doe, ſeeking to ſet the Doctor and mee together by the eares, and put vs to the paring of each others nayles, till wee bee both toucht to the quicke.

The Captaine, when he heard me ſay ſo, was froſt-bitten, and maruelling what the myſtery of this roguerie ſhould be, ſuſpected there was ſome knauerie in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to doe, fell a laughing, without ſpeaking any one word at all.

But the Spaniſh Embaſſadour call'd vnto me, and ſaid, Friend *Guzman*, now by my life, you ſhall not ſmother it; what's the matter, I prithee? Let vs know of thee, why at one and the ſelfe-ſame time, thou laugheſt, and yet ſeemeſt angry? It muſt needs be ſome good conceit or other, and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordſhip hath laid downe ſo great a pawne as your life, I ſhall (though loth, and much againſt my will) tell you what it is; and I proteſt vnto your Lordſhip, that I had rather haue held my peace; and had you not ſworne by your life, I would ſooner haue had my tongue drawne backwards out of the nape of my necke, then to vtter the leaſt ſillable of that which I ſhall now fully deliuer vnto you. Your Lordſhip ſhall therefore vnderſtand, that my Captaine here laid his Command vpon me, that I would breake a ieſt vpon this Doctor, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut of his beard; for he ſaith that the faſhion of his beard, is iuſt for all the world like one of thoſe vpon your Flemmiſh Iugges, and that a-nights he puts it in a Preſſe, made of two thinne Trenchers ſcru'de wonderfull cloſe, that no Ghitterne can be cloſer ſhut vp in it's Caſe, that it may come forth the next morning with euen corners, bearing in groſſe the forme of a Broome, narrow aboue, and broad beneath, his Muchatos, Ruler-wiſe, ſtraite and leuell as a line; and all the other haires, as iuſt and as euen, as a Priuet hedge, newly cut; anſwering each other in a vniforme manner, hauing the point thereof in forme of a Quadrant, drawne neatly out, that it might make the fairer and larger ſhow. For ſuch a goodly Beard accompanied with a Roman Bonnet, (like your Briefes and your Larg's in a Singing-mans Booke;) doth grace his leſſer and groſſer notes. As if this were ſufficient to make him be held a great Scholler; As if this faire out-ſide, were a qualification for him; as if men had not ſeene your *Canallos Argeles*, ſome horſes with one only white foot on the farre ſide behinde, hauing all the other parts of their body of another colour, and yet come of a very good race. And ſome great block-heads, (though bred vp in Vniuerſities,) whoſe ignorance is a great deale larger then their Gownes; being like herein vnto ſome kinde of Melons, which coozen vs with the glorioufneſſe of their colour, ſeeming to be good Melons to the ſhow, but indeed are worſe then Pompeons; no ſtuffe, no goodneſſe in them. And this is that, which my Captaine would haue had mee ſaid, as from my ſelfe. And this was it which made mee cry, No, no; and that he ſhould tell it himſelfe, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord: if there be more behinde, your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to lay your Command on the Captaine, who (I know) wil be ready in this, or any thing elſe, to doe your Lordſhip ſeruice.

The Captaine bleſt himſelfe, when he ſaw whither I had driuen the nayle, wondring at this my ſubtilneſſe of witt, and cunning conueyance, himſelfe and all the reſt of the company laughing at it, but none of them witting whether it were a truth or a lye, that had paſt thus betweene vs.

But my Doctor, hauing his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were beſt to be angrie, or to turne it to a ieſt? But becauſe they lookt ſtill more and more vpon him, and euery ones eye was fixed on him, he paw-

ſed

ſed a while, and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and ſhame, at laſt he vented himſelfe, and ſpoke thus vnto them:

My Lord, if my profeſsion would permit it, that I ſhould giue my ſelfe that ſatisfaction, which ſuch an impudencie as this deſerueth, your Lordſhip might eaſily beleeue, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I ſtand bound to my Progenitors, and the honour of my Houſe.

But being that your Lordſhips preſence doth priuiledge this inſolent boldneſſe, and that this place will afford me no other weapons then my tongue, your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to giue me leaue to demand of this Captaine, How old he is? For if that be true which he ſayes, that he ſerued the Emperour *Charles* the fifth in his warres, being with him at the battell of *Tunez*, how comes it to paſſe that he has neuer a white haire in all his beard, nor blacke one in his head? And if he be ſo young, as he would ſeeme to be, why doth he ſay, that he was preſent with him, at ſuch an ancient piece of ſeruice, and ſo long agoe as that was? Let him tell vs, I pray, in what *Iordan* hee hath waſhed, or to what Saint recommended himſelfe; to the end that we may all offer vp Tapers to his ſhrine, and haue recourſe vnto him for helpe, when we ſhall haue the like need? Let him firſt declare this, and then let him goe on with his game, and I will play mine as well as I can. And ſince he hath firſt trumped about, let vs trie, who can ſooneſt beate out one another and winne moſt Tricks. For there is no reaſon hee ſhould ſo carry it away, nor ſhall he get any thing by his croſsing of me, while I haue a trumpe in my hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing a-freſh, but eſpecially my Maſter, for that two things were then treated, which of all other he did hate and deteſt, and deſired the reformation of them, as no man more:

And hauing well obſerued all that had paſſed herein, hee ſaid vnto mee; Now tell me, *Guzmanillo*, what thou doeſt thinke of this? Since thou haſt propoſed the Argument, I will haue thee to reſolue the Queſtion.

I then told him, All the Anſwer that I can make your Lordſhip, is only this: That they haue both ſaid Truth, and yet both of them lye (a) in their beards.

The Conceit conſiſts in the word, Lye; for that they did colour the haires of their Beards, with lees made of purpoſe for that vſe.

Chapter IV.

The Doctor finding himselfe aggrieued, that Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the presence of so many Gentlemen, would bee reuenged of him. The Spanish Embassadour takes vp the quarrell: The French causing another of the guests, that was there at Table, to relate an accident that befell the Constable of* Castile, Don Aluaro de Luna.

THey did all highly commend the iest, and some did indeare it so farre, that the Doctor thereby was the more inraged, insomuch that they were sorry they had prest it so farre, and giuen it so great an applause.

But the Embassador of Spaine, through his great wisedome, threw in his (a) *Warder*, and tooke vp the quarrell, making it (by his discreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to bee taken at any thing that should merrily passe amongst them.

The Captaine was a good natur'd man, well behau'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow, who laught heartily at it, let it passe as a iest, and blessed himselfe, vowing and protesting, that hee neuer spake any one such word vnto mee, nor was it euer in his thought to touch vpon any such point. And though he were nipt, yet becauſe he was a discreet Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongst whom now and then iests are broken, as well as Lances) should the Doctor haue vs'd him worse then he did, he would either not haue heard it, or seeme to set light by it, for that he thought he had some reason so to doe, becauſe what he then spake, came from him, as one that had beene much iniur'd and abused.

The Doctor grows very angry with Guzman.

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had been the onely Author of all this mischiefe, he did set vpon mee in that fierce and terrible manner, that he did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plaine, through his too much eagernesse, and heat of choller. And hee would faine haue risen from the table to haue had me by the eares, and to haue pummeld me soundly about the head and the nose, and to haue buffeted my cheeks; but they would not suffer him so to doe.

And seeing he could not be reuenged of me as he would; and hauing no other weapon left him to beat me withall but his tongue, he roundly laid about him, and letting the reines loose to his rage, he bestow'd his Liuery vpon me, calling me by all the vile names, that hee was able to reckon vp; whereof I made little reckoning; but did rather helpe him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This madded him more then all the rest, to see mee thus mocke and scoffe at all that hee said, which made him breake out worse then before, and to grow farre more violent and outragious with me. For, as if this bitter iest had beene some Excommunication, that by a ioynt consent, and generall Councell as it were, had gone out against him, and that euery one of vs had a finger therein, he car'd not whom he paid; and almost, nay, more then almost, (if my Master had not stopt him in this his furious course, as one that knew well, what a huge dust, a foolish cholericke fellow will sometimes raise, both to his owne and others hurt) this businesse had growne exceeding foule.

The French Embassador seekes to pacifie the Doctor.

He sought to pacifie him with the best reasons hee could then vse vnto him, as one that would faine turne the water another way, and diuert these his

(a) *The Spanish word, is* meter el baston. *A metaphor borrowed from a Master of Defence, who when his Schollers grow hot and angry at play, throwes in his cudgell betweene them, whereupon they hold their hands. So that* meter el baston *signifies metaphorically, the reconciling of friends, when they begin to grow cholerick one with another.*

his euill intensions towards me; Which that hee might the better doe, hee beganne to shuffle the Cards anew, sundring the one from the other; and that hee might wholly cut off all that former offensiue conuersation, hee turned himselfe towards *Cæsar*, that Neapolitan Gentleman, who had told him of that sad accident, that had befalne *Dorido* and *Clorinia* (who was likewise one of his guests) and said vnto him:

Señor Cæsar, since the hard hap, and vntimely death of the faire *Clorinia* is now knowne to all *Rome*, and to these Gentlemen that are heere present, let vs intreat you to doe vs the fauour, to deliuer vnto vs, what became of constant *Dorido*; for I haue a great desire to know how hee sped. That, and it may please your Excellencie (said *Cæsar*) you shall heare in its due place and time; for this is no fit season for it; it being not meet to mingle such mis-fortunes amidst our merriments, nor will it sute so well with this day of feast and iollity, especially considering what hath passed heere already to the disturbance of this good company, that are met heere of purpose to bee merry.

But since that wee haue now dined, and the time of each mans taking his (a) nap, drawes on, I will recount another Story vnto you, which this present occasion represents vnto me: Which for that it is a true one, I doubt not but yee will bee much delighted therewith. They all kindely entertained his proffer; and when he saw they were attentiue to heare him, hee thus began:

(a) *The Spanish word is* Siesta.

A Tale of diuers and sundry accidents of Loue.

The Constable of *Castile*, *Don Aluaro de Luna*, in the time of his greatest Greatnesse (his Honours increasing dayly more and more) residing in *Valladolid*, tooke great pleasure in the Summer to rise betimes in the morning, to goe abroad to vse some exercise, and to take the fresh aire of the fields. And after that hee had beene walking thus abroad, hee vvould (before the Sunne should bee able to offend him) with-draw himselfe home to his house.

But hauing one day amongst the rest inlarged his Walke, and intertained himselfe longer then he was wont to doe, in a pleasant garden, neere adioyning to the Riuer *Pisuerga*, recreating himselfe in beholding the varietie of the Walkes, the beautifull Flowers, the delicate Arbours, the shadie Trees, and sauourie fruits, the heate entred in so farre, before hee was aware of it, that what out of his feare of not returning backe with conueniencie, and the content that hee tooke in this his sweet and delightfull recreation, hee was resolued to remaine there, and to take his full pleasure of that place, vntill such time of the euening, as the heates should bee ouer-past.

And whilest his other seruants were busie in prouiding all things necessarie for his dinner, that he might the better in the meane while passe away the time, he intreated two Gentlemen, that accompanied him thither, the one *Don Luys de Castro*; and the other, *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo*, that each of them would tell him some Loue-Story, whose successe had beene full of dangers, and full of cares, as none could bee greater. For, he very well knew, that these two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Louers of Ladies; being both of them, besides Noble in their Name and Blood, discreet, valiant, actiue in their persons, of faire both feature and behauiour, curious in their cloathes, witty in their iests, vn-offensiuely pleasant; in a word, so generally well qualified, and so adorned vvith all those ornaments, that might grace either their speech, or their actions, that they were very well able to giue him that satisfaction vpon this subiect, as more could not bee desired. And the better to animate them on, he promised, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, that hee then wore vpon his finger, to him, whose tale, for the strangenesse of the successe, should best

deſerue it. *Don Luys de Caſtro* vvas firſt to beginne, and thus hee proceeded:

It may bee (my Lord Conſtable) that other Louers, in the recounting of their misfortunes, goe painting and ſetting of them forth, with feined ſorrowes, Hyperbolicall amplifications, ſuch delicacie of phraſe, and tenderneſſe of words, to worke compaſsion; that with the ſmoothneſſe of their ſtile, and the meltingneſſe of their language, they moue many to pitie; and of theſe in this kinde much hath been written. But that really and truely ſtript naked of all kinde of dreſsing, and the neat cloathing of eloquence, there ſhould happen in theſe preſent times a buſineſſe of the like nature, as is mine, that I haue now in hand, is a thing impoſsible. For it is one of the ſtrangeſt, and the moſt to be wondred at, of all that euer I yet read, or heard of. And becauſe your Excellencie is to bee my Iudge in this caſe, I am very well perſwaded you will acknowledge as much, when you know my ſufferings.

Don Luys de Caſtro *his Loue-Story.*

I loued a certaine Lady of this Kingdome, that was a Virgin, and ful-filled with all thoſe laudable and noble qualities, which might be found in any other who-ſoeuer; being as faire and beautifull, as ſhe was diſcreet and honeſt: whereof, (and much more then I will now ſpeake,) I make *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo* heere preſent, my Witneſſe; as the onely friend, that bare mee company, and was thorowly acquainted with all that which paſt betweene vs; I ſeru'd her many, (and thoſe the beſt part of my yeeres) with that punctualitie and ſecreſie, that there was neuer any the leaſt notice taken of it, yet ſtill obſeruing her with that diligence, as the like was neuer knowne; and indeuouring alwayes to giue her all thoſe contents, which ſhe could poſsibly deſire from me. For her I ranne at the Ring, and euer made my ſelfe one, at the *juego de toros, y cañas*, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained Royall Feaſts, and Maskes; and what not? And for to quit all ſuſpition, and to carry the buſineſſe ſo handſomely, that none might finde me out, and diſcouer this my loue; nay, that they might not haue any the leaſt preſumption thereof; at all theſe great & ſolemn meetings, my eyes were neuer placed vpon her, but ſome other of the Ladies that were there, though ſhee notwithſtanding did really and truely know, that thoſe of my ſoule vvere neuer off on her, but ſtill waited vpon her, and that ſhee vvas the ſole Miſtris of my heart, and that for her ſake onely, and none but hers, I inuented all theſe honourable pleaſures, and delightfull intertainments for her.

Vpon theſe kinde of Feaſts and Sports, and other the like occaſions, directed onely to this end, I ſpent ſo much, that I waſted and conſumed a great deale of wealth, letting my money fly the faſter, in hope it might make her come the ſooner; and ſelling away my poſſeſsions, that I might compaſſe the poſſeſsing of her; which was to me a treaſure of more worth then all the world beſides.

My father (it is well knowne) left mee wonderfull rich, both in goods, and in lands, but in ſhort, I ſent it packing; and paſt away one thing after another, till in the end I became ſo poore, that your Lordſhips fauour is the onely prop that doth vphold mee, without the which I muſt haue falne. And though this (I muſt tell you) be none of the leaſt griefes, to ſee a Gentleman of ſuch parts and qualities as my ſelfe, to be outed of all that hee has, to become ſo poore and needy, that neceſsitie muſt tye him to ſerue, who was wont heretofore to be ſerued; (howbeit, I acknowledge it a happineſſe vnto me, that I am your Lordſhips ſeruant.) Though I muſt confeſſe withall, they are the happier men, and the more beholding to fortune, who leade a quiet and ſecure life, free from other mens commands, not beating their braines, nor breaking their ſleepes, in ſeeking meanes, how to creepe into

A free contented life the beſt.

into this mans fauour, or to ſerue himſelfe into that, or t'other Lords good grace and opinion.

But of all my misfortunes, the greateſt that euer befell me, and which ſits cloſeſt to my heart, and doth fret the very ſoule of me, and fill it with anguiſh, was, That my Miſtreſſe hauing intertained me with falſe hopes, and vaine promiſes, vowing, that ſhe would neuer beſtow her fauours vpon any other, but that in recompence of my conſtant loue, ſhe would be married vnto me, where-vnto ſhe plighted me her faith and troth. But whether theſe were the words of a woman, or the workes of my ſhort fortunes; now when ſhe ſaw my meanes were ſpent, and my ſelfe growne poore, vn-mindefull of all thoſe indearements, vowes and proteſtations that had paſt betweene vs, ſhee ſhooke off that hand of hers from mine, to whom ſhe had firſt giuen it, and gaue it to another, and forſaking me, married him; failing (falſe as ſhe was) in her faith, and qualitie: for ſcorning my poore condition, and not eſteeming thoſe my other good naturall parts, ſhe made choyſe of thoſe goods of fortune, taking a Husband farre vnequall to her ſelfe; for, as he exceeded in wealth, ſo he did in yeeres. But ſuch is the force of money, that it can ſupply all defects, and driue vnequall matches, to draw in one yoke.

Thus haue I briefely diſcourſed vnto your Lordſhip touching my loue, ſhewing you how happy the beginning was, and how diſaſtrous the end. And although (that I might not weary and tyre out your Lordſhip, I haue beene ſo briefe, that the ſhortneſſe of my Diſcourſe may ſeeme to leſſen my misfortunes, and the miſeries that I then indured;) yet I preſume, your Lordſhips diſcretion will ſupply that want, and fully conceiue what, and how great they were; As alſo take into your conſideration, how many troubles they haue ſuffred, and how many perils they dayly runne thorow, who wing their thoughts with ſuch high-flying feathers, and who vſe ſuch great diligence and ſecrecie in the carriage of their loue, to the end that nothing on their part ſhould be wanting, which they thought belonged to their dutie, in that behalfe. Which my ſelfe had ſpeciall care of.

I doe not thinke that either *Don Rodrigo*, or any other Gentleman whatſoeuer can inſtance in a ſucceſſe of more misfortune then this of mine; for that louing her with that firmeneſſe and conſtancie, (as I did) and ſeruing her with that loue and faithfulneſſe, (as none poſsibly could be more;) I loſt my time, I loſt my meanes, and laſt of all (to make the roll of my miſeries the fuller) I loſt my Miſtris. Only there is left vnto me by fortune, (in exchange of theſe my many miſchances) the receiuing of this Ring, by way of reward.

And here *Don Luys* made an end of his amorous diſcourſes, and *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo* entred vpon his, in manner following:

The Ring (*Don Luys*) is none of yours, you haue loſt it, and I ought of right to haue it. And turning himſelfe towards the Conſtable, he thus went on in his ſpeech:

Moſt noble Sir, Though I confeſſe that to be true, which *Don Luys* hath deliuered vnto your Lordſhip, for that I was an eye-witneſſe of all this buſineſſe, in regard of that great loue and friendſhip, which was euer betweene vs; yet now at this preſent, he hath no reaſon to pretend the Diamond; for if he would but free himſelfe of paſsion, and put on temperate conſideration of the paſſages in this his loue, and that he and I might but change places, I doe aſſure my ſelfe, that he would iudge this cauſe in my fauour, and giue ſentence againſt himſelfe. But being that he is now blinded ſo with paſsion, that he can not diſcerne things with indifferencie; your Excellencie may be pleaſed to iudge firſt of his Loue, and afterwards to cenſure the bad ſucceſſe of mine: which ſhall take it's beginning from the end of his, which your Excellencie hath already heard him recount. And thus (may it pleaſe you to giue me the hearing) did things paſſe.

It is not long agoe, that he and I went walking abroad neere to this Riuer side, where now we are, talking and discoursing of some things farre out of the reach of our hopes; when vnlooked for, there came to *Don Luys*, an ancient seruant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Mistresse, from whom he secretly deliuered him a Letter. Which he hauing opened, and read it ouer, when he had done, he gaue it me, that I likewise might peruse it. Which I did againe and againe, wondring very much at the Contents thereof. For which cause, (as also hauing a reasonable good memorie,) I carried it all away; which speaketh after this manner:

DEare Sir, you haue little reason to accuse me of ingratitude, only because it seemes vnto you, that you haue some iust cause so to doe. For it is not possible that any one should forget (as you haue thought of me) him, whom he truly loues. And since I know mine owne Obligation, and your constancie, I would haue you likewise to vnderstand (though perhaps you will not acknowledge so much) that I neither now doe, or haue heretofore committed any fault against you. And that my Actions did not correspond with your deserts, the reason was, because they could not stand with that Decorum, *which was due to my Mayden-state, and the danger that might insue thereupon. My Marriage with you (which I desired more, then I did mine owne life) the obedience of a Daughter did disturbe, and the Commands and earnest importunities of my Parents, who were violently carryed away, moued thereunto by vaine interest, and the Title of a Countesse, which I hold against my will, since they did force me to yeeld my body vnto him, to whom I could neuer surrender my soule, being in condition and yeeres so contrary vnto me, I haue beene yours, I am yours, and shall be yours all the dayes of my life. I shall giue you to vnderstand, that the Count my Husband is to vndertake a long iourney; hasten hither vnto me as soone as you can, and bring no other person along with you saue your friend* Don Rodrigo. *And when you shall come to this Towne, you shall finde in a Heremitage adioyning thereunto, order giuen you for that, which you are to doe. Loue me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I doe you. And liue you as happily, as I wish you; Concluding my Letter with deare imbracements, which attend your comming.*

These were the Contents of the Letter; which *Don Luys* hauing well seene and considered, did expect nothing lesse, then what was therein contained, which was the only thing he wished and desired aboue all other happinesse in this world. So that if I would, yet I should not be able to expresse vnto you, those amorous passions that he then felt. He read it ouer and ouer, dwelling vpon euery word and sillable of this Letter. He looked vpon euery line, more then once or twice, weigh'd them as a man would weigh gold; and when he had ballanced them in his iudgement, and found they were not light, but bare their full poyze, putting them to his mouth, hee kist them a thousand and a thousand times ouer. Hee first look't earnestly on the Letter, then on the bearer, and my selfe, as if he stood expecting that wee should speake our mindes, and with a loud voyce proclaime the certaintie of this his promised good, and the great content that he tooke in this fortunate, but vnexpected newes. For as yet he doubted thereof: but at last, when he had recollected his spirits, which had beene all this while a wool-gathering, with somewhat a troubled, but more cheerefull countenance, he said vnto me, What is this (*Don Rodrigo*) that we see? Am I out of my wits? Or is this a dreame? Art thou sure, that it is thee and I, that haue read this Letter? Is this happely the Countesses Letter, this her owne hand? and that, her old Seruant? Doth my iudgement peraduenture faile me? Or, as an afflicted Louer, growing on to desperation, doe I feigne imaginations to my selfe, to deceiue my phantasie?

After

After that he had thus continued a while, driuen to and fro with theſe diſtractions, as a Boat that waues this way and that way; hauing the tyde with it, but the winde againſt it; I aſſured him, that theſe were not illuſions, or idle apparitions, but things really true, and that carried along with them aſſured hopes of recouering and inioying his loſt Iewell. And thereupon I heartened him on, that he ſhould haſten his departure with all poſsible ſpeed, that he might comply with that, which his Miſtreſſe had giuen him in charge. This was preſently put in execution; for we ſtreight tooke horſe, and away we went. And when we came to the Heremitage, we found therein a very graue and reuerend Dame, who, for that ſhe had notice giuen her before hand, of the day and houre that we were to come thither, ſtayd there, expecting of our comming.

Now, when ſhe knew that we were the men ſhe looked for, ſhe deliuered vs a Meſſage, the effect whereof was this; That her Lord, the *Conde*, was gone forth vpon his iourney, but was now newly returned, by reaſon of a certaine indiſpoſition of body that ſeazed on him vpon the way: But intreated vs notwithſtanding, that we would haue the patience to ſtay there, till ſhe went to the Palace, to acquaint her Lady the Counteſſe, of our comming. She went; we ſtaid; I much amazed, and *Don Luys* quite out of heart: I for thoſe difficulties, which might offer themſelues; He in conſidering his croſſe fortune, which did neuer leaue off to perſecute him.

Now, while this good woman was gone vpon her errand, in the meane while, till ſhe ſhould make her returne, we ranne ouer many ſtories, and I know not what idle tales and diſcourſes, which being of different ſubiects, are not fit to be inter-ſerted with this that we haue now in hand.

Well, about eleuen a clocke at night, ſhee came backe againe vnto vs, and told vs, we muſt follow her. We did ſo. The darkeneſſe of the night did much befriend vs, ſo that by this good helpe, ſhe brought vs vnſeene, and with much ſecrecie, into a Lodging in the Palace, where we no ſooner were, but the Counteſſe comes forth, and receiues vs with extraordinary tokens of ioy and gladneſſe. And after that ſome few ceremonies were ended, and that the *Para-bienes* had paſt to and fro of this long deſired inter-view, which Compliments were very ſhort and briefe, the Counteſſe ſaid vnto mee, *Don Rodrigo*; the time, that is now offred vnto vs, to inioy this faire occaſion, you, in your owne diſcretion may iudge, how ſoone it will be gone. You know likewiſe the obligation of true friendſhip, and the firme affection, which you haue alwayes made ſhew to beare vnto *Don Luys*: but ſay, this ſhould faile (which I no way miſ-doubt,) yet for my ſake, who beg it at your hands, your are bound in courteſie to grant me my requeſt. You haue already vnderſtood, how the Count my husband not finding himſelfe halfe well, returned (being well aduanced on his way) backe from his iourney, who came home ſo weary, that he preſently got him to bed, where I haue left him faſt aſleepe. But becauſe it may ſo fall out, that in turning or waking, hee ſhould ſtretch out a legge or an arme, towards that ſide of the bed where I lye, and ſhould finde my place empty, and no body there, it muſt be a great deale of danger, that I muſt runne, beſides the great ſcandall, that would grow thereby to the houſe, that therefore, whileſt your friend *Don Luys* and my ſelfe ſhall entertaine the time in talke, (which at the moſt ſhall bee but ſome quarter of an houre, or there-abouts,) you would be pleaſed to goe lye downe in my place, and remaine there in bed, that I may in the meane-while abide the ſafer here. And I will aſſure you on my honeſt word, that you ſhall not thereby incurre any danger. For beſides that the Count is old, and that he neuer wakes a-nights, vntill it be broad day, and doth ſeldome or neuer turne aboue once, and then preſently fall aſleepe againe; Hee is ſo tyred with his iourney, and of that indiſpoſition of body at this preſent,

that there is no feare to be had, that hee will ſo much as but offer to ſtirre, or moue himſelfe at all. But ſay hee ſhould, and that he ſhould turne and touch you, for the foreſaid reaſons, he will not dreame of any bodies being there but my ſelfe.

God he knowes (and your Excellencie may conceiue) how much it troubled mee, that the Counteſſe ſhould put mee vpon ſuch a perilous piece of ſeruice. But becauſe the actions of cowardize are ſo foule in themſelues, and ſo ill-beſeeming a Gentleman, it ſeemed vnto mee, that if I ſhould now fly off, and refuſe to vndergoe this buſineſſe, I ſhould not giue ſatisfaction either to mine owne Honour, or my friends Loue, or the Counteſſes requeſt, I told her, I would very willingly, and with all my heart doe her this ſeruice: but withall, did very earneſtly intreat them, that they would not ſtay too long in the intertaining of their loues, ſeeing they were not ignorant of the danger, where-into for their ſakes I did thus voluntarily thruſt my ſelfe. They promiſed, nay ſwore vnto me, that they would not; and that at the moſt ſhe would not tarry away aboue halfe an houre.

The Counteſſe put mee into a night-dreſsing, and a Smocke: and when I had put off all my cloathes, ſhee led me along to her With-drawing chamber, and afterwards made me to lye downe in her bed. There was no light at all in the Chamber, all was as darke as hell, and in a ſtill ſilence. I ſoftly laid my ſelfe downe vpon the very edge and brimme, as it were of the bed, as farre from the Count, as I poſsibly could deuiſe, and in that manner, I remained there, not a quarter, or halfe part of an houre, but fiue good long houres and more, till it was breake of day.

Now let euery man conſider and thinke with himſelfe, in what a poore caſe I was, being in ſuch a place as this, and at ſuch a time; with vvhat a deale of care that I might not be knowne, and with what a deale of feare, leſt this deceit ſhould be diſcouered, and did leaſt of all thinke on that, which did moſt concerne me, which could bee no leſſe then death, if the Count ſhould chance to awake. For in regard that I went in thither naked, and vnarmed, I muſt fight it out with my fiſts onely, and try how the ſtrength of my armes would helpe me; and admit I ſhould haue ſtruggled with the Count, and had the fortune to eſcape his hands, yet could I not thoſe of the ſeruants of his houſe, becauſe I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But theſe were not all the griefes I then indured, they went on a little farther. For *Don Luys* and the Counteſſe, did laugh and talke ſo loud, that I might heare euery vvord almoſt that they ſaid, as I lay in the bed, where-with my feare was much increaſed, leſt happely their diſ-compoſed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vexe me, and almoſt mad mee, that I could not call vnto them to keepe leſſe noiſe, ſeeing they would not yet breake company, it grieuing me to the very ſoule, that they ſhould ſeeme as forgetfull of themſelues, as they were of mee. This made me to bite my fingers ends for very anger; as alſo, that I durſt not for mine eares ſtirre a iot from the place where I lay, for feare of ſpotting mine honour; and leſſe did I dare to call vnto them, for feare of waking the Count.

After all theſe lingrings, and fearefull paſſages, when they ſaw that day was now ſo nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds ſide, with a light in their hand, (I being frighted almoſt out of my little wits) where they ſportingly friſked and skipped about me, making a great noiſe, as well with their tongues, as their feet.

Then I beganne to imagine with my ſelfe, that through too much content, they had both runne madde. So that now, I was as ſorry for their misfortune, as mine owne; for that the infamie and puniſhment was like to be generall, and to light vpon vs all, not permitting any to eſcape; vpon them,

for

for offending; vpon me, for conſenting. I was in that pittifull taking, that within a very little ſpace, I had a thouſand imaginations in my head, but not one that could doe me any good, or ſtand me in ſtead.

And whileſt I was thus puzzled, in the midſt of my greateſt conflict, they drew neerer to the bed it ſelfe; and the *Counteſſe* drawing the Curtaine, that we might now plainely ſee one another, then was I quite out of my ſences; inſomuch that I would haue faine fledde away, had I well knowne whither: but I quickly came to my ſelfe againe. For I, who had hitherto thought, that I had the *Count* lying by me; the *Counteſſe* lifting vp the cloathes of the bed, cleered that errour, and gaue me to vnderſtand, that it was not hee, but the *Counteſſes* Siſter, a pure Virgin, yet as faire as *Venus*. Whereat, as likewiſe the ieſt, (which I now perceiued they had put vpon me) I was ſo aſhamed, and daſht out of countenance, that for my life I was not able to ſpeake a word, nor knew not what in the world to doe, but to riſe vp in my ſmocke (for in that caſe was I then) and to get me out to looke my cloathes; ſo that my feare before was not halfe ſo much, as my ſhame was now. Let your Excellencie therefore be pleaſed now to conſider into what danger I did put my ſelfe, and then to giue your iudgement, which of vs two doth beſt deſerue the Ring.

The Conſtable, laughing heartily hereat, ſaid in the end, That *Don Luys* had no reaſon to complaine of his Loue; ſeeing, though late, and vvith a great deale of coſt and trouble, yet at length hee had obtained his deſire; ſo that hee could not be a deſeruer of this promiſed reward. And *Don Rodrigo*, as little; for that hee was not in any danger by ſleeping with the *Count*; howbeit, the ieſt they had put vpon him, was a witty and a good one. And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deſerued the Diamond; yet, taking it off from his finger, he conſign'd it to *Don Rodrigo*, with condition that he ſhould ſend it as a token to this Gentlewoman, by whoſe ſide he lay; for that ſhee onely had incurred the danger, and had alſo runne the hazzard of her honour, if ſhe had beene knowne what ſhe was.

With this, they gaue an end to their Loue-Diſcourſes, they all remaining very well ſatisfied. And it being afterwards diſcuſſed, vvhether the Conſtables Sentence were diſcreet and iuſt; all the Courtiers highly commended it. And ſo euery mans buſineſſes, calling ſome one way, ſome another; this conuerſation was broken vp, and taking their leaue of my Lord Embaſſador, they went whither their occaſions call'd them.

CHAP.

Chapter V.

A Romane Matrone, not knowing how to free her selfe (without suffering in her Honour) from the perswasions of Guzman de Alfarache, *who sollicited her in his Lords behalfe, the French Embassador, put a iest vpon him, which was the occasion of a second disgrace that afterwards befell him.*

The nature of Lightening.

THey that write of Lightening, report, (and vvee see the same confirmed by experience,) that so great is its pride, that scorning the vveaker, it workes its effects on the strongest. It breakes the steely hardnesse of the Sword, and leaues the scabberd whole: it splits in sunder, and rendeth vp by the rootes the strong and sturdy Oake; and not once toucheth the feeble and yeelding Cane. It ouer-turnes the tops of your highest Towers, and leuelleth your stately buildings with the ground; and pardoneth your poore Shepheards humble Cottage, that is made of ill composed twigges. It killeth your biggest beasts, and cracketh man, as if hee were but Potters Clay in pieces; it bruiseth and breaketh the bones, and leaues the cloathes vntoucht; it melteth Siluer, Gold, Metall, and Money, and yet hurts not the Purse vvherein it is put. And albeit, it be of this proud nature, and haughty condition, yet is its force broken, in its comming to ground. This onely is that, which makes its resistance against it. And therefore, in such tempestuous times, those that doe feare its terrible effects, doe vse to get themselues into Caues, or to hide themselues deepe vnder ground, because that they know, they are there safe and free from danger.

The violence of youth, compared vnto Lightening.

The violence of Youth is such, that wee may truely compare it vnto *Lightening*; for it neuer bends its force against things that are fragile, soft, and gentle; but doth commonly aspire to things of greatest difficultie, and such as are beyond all reason of atchieuement; it obserueth no Law; it excuseth no kinde of Vice; it is a Horse that runnes on in his Carreere, without an eye to its way, or once thinking on the place, or the end, where he is to take vp himselfe, and make his stop. It alwayes followes its owne furie; and like an vntamed Colt, will not suffer himselfe to bee saddled by reason; and without it, disturbs both himselfe and others, not induring any burthen, bee it neuer so light: In such sort it flyes out, that it will not (no though you let it haue its owne will) be at quiet with it selfe. And yet this being so furious a beast, as wee haue heere set forth vnto you, it is onely corrected by humilitie; this (and nothing but this) tames and keepes it in order. This is that earth, against which its force cannot preuaile; this that Dock, that driues out the Nettle; and this that Fort, where it findes its safety. Insomuch, that there is not any good to bee hoped from that young man, who shall not be humble. For that youth in it selfe is the entrance to euill, and the doore that opens vnto sinne.

The defects and various effects of youth.

Ill education, the cause of all Vice.

I was wantonly bred vp, suffered too much to haue mine owne will: I would not indure reproofe, much lesse correction. And for that Wisedome is the Daughter of Experience, which is gotten by the transcursion of Time, it was not much, that I should erre as being a Youth. But that hauing befalne me (which you heard before) in the loue that I made at *Malagon*, (a) and *Toledo*: And being that I should, like the Dogge which is scalded

(a) *See the first Part.*

ded with hot, feare alſo cold water; after all theſe faire warnings, it may ſeeme ſomewhat ſtrange, you will ſay, that I ſhould giue any more credit vnto women, and that I ſhould ſuffer my ſelfe to be taken anew in their ſnares. That I ſhould be ſuch an Aſſe, as not to know, by my many the like experiences, that they alwayes goe ſubtilly to worke with vs, and deale deceitfully; which muſt either be imputed to our too much ſimplicitie, or muſt otherwiſe be attributed to the intemperate paſsion of our appetite. And would to God this fooliſhneſſe of mine might here make it's ſtop, and here in this Port ſet vp my *Plus vltra*, by erecting the pillars of my wofull proofes, and often skarrings, without (as you ſhall ſee here-after) my frequent fallings into the like weakneſſes; being vnable to make my vaunt, that I had once got of them by the hand, and made my party good with them. But becauſe he that loues, doth alwayes make a free donation to the partie, whom he loueth, of his will, and of his ſenſes, it is no maruell, if being ſtripped of them, multiplying my errours, I commit a thouſand fooleries.

He is a foole, that makes himſelfe a prey to Women.

My Lord Embaſſadour fell in loue with a principall Gentle-woman, nobly deſcended, whoſe name was *Fabia*; her husband, a Gentleman of *Rome*; before whoſe houſe I did often vſe to walke; whereof, no ſmall notice was taken, and he himſelfe began to conceiue ſome ſuſpition of me, though without any iuſt cauſe; for ſhe for her part neuer gaue conſent thereunto. But becauſe euery man may loue, proteſt, and runne his head, if he will, againſt a Wall, and none ſhall hinder him; my Maſter did that, which his paſsion did dictate vnto him, and ſhe, that which was befitting both her owne, and her husbands honour.

A ſtory of the French Embaſſadours loue.

True it is, that we were not ſo blinde, that we could not ſee thorow the holes of a (*a*) ſiue; for although we were depriued of the cleerer kinde of light, yet we had ſome glimpſe and glimmering thereof, though it were but little. Her husband was old, poore, and ill accoutred; three ſtrong and powerfull enemies againſt a woman, that was young faire, and well brought vp. For theſe reaſons, and by the helpe of a Maid of hers (which had beene a Virgin heretofore) but was now my ſweet-heart, and mine owne deare Loue, I was verily perſwaded, what by the meanes that ſhe, and what by thoſe, that my ſelfe ſhould vſe, as alſo by making benefit of the fore-ſaid occaſions, we ſhould eaſily get the game. But who, (ſaue ſuch an vnlucky and vnfortunate Rogue, as my ſelfe) could haue loſt ſo faire a ſet, hauing ſuch ſtore of ſound Trumpes, and other good Cardes in my hand? But I had wonderfull croſſe-Carding, and euery tricke that I plaid, fell out to the worſt; ſo that, *No es todo façil, quanto lo pareçe*; A man may be deceiu'd, when he thinkes himſelfe moſt ſure. Vertue will trip vp the heeles of Vice, and winne the Goale away from him, play he neuer ſo cunningly; Nor is there any thing in the world, that can make a vertuous woman to ſpot her honour.

Proverb.
(*a*) No eſtauamos tan çiegos, que dexaſſemos de ver por la tela de vn çedaço.
The greateſt enemies, that a faire woman hath.

Proverb.

When this Gentlewoman vnderſtood, what had paſſed betwixt my ſelfe and her ſeruant, ſhe began to deuiſe with her ſelfe, how ſhe might be reuenged on vs both, without any hurt to her ſelfe, but as much preiudice as might be, both to my perſon, and the plot that was laid betweene vs, for the effecting of my Lords deſires. And this ſhe did the rather, for that ſhe ſaw, that her waiting-Gentlewoman, for my ſake, did ſo earneſtly ſollicite this cauſe, and that for my intereſt, and to doe me a pleaſure, ſhe did follow this buſineſſe with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to put her often in minde thereof, not ſuffring a Card to paſſe without a Vie, and ſome-times making many falſe ones, vſing many other tricks, as ſhe was well skill'd in them, and knew handſomely how to put them home: Inſomuch, that when this honourable Matrone ſaw, ſhe could not be in quiet for her, but was thus hardly ſet vpon in her owne houſe, and barked at abroad in the ſtreet by a company of malicious

The wickednes of ſome ſeruants.

malicious mouthes, ſhe made no Vociferations, nor Out-cryes, no ſqueamiſh replies, no cunning impoſtures, which ſome women vſe to doe, for to qualifie their honeſtie, that vnder that ſhield, they may euer after the more ſafely offend. For, an honeſt woman will, by honeſt meanes, manage her affaires; not beating the ayre with her clapper, nor ringing out the bell that hangs in her mouth, ſo loud, that all men may heare the ſound thereof, and cenſure her accordingly, and giue euery one occaſion thereby to conſtrue her Actions, as they liſt themſelues. For in regard the good are the feweſt, the moſt doe iudge amiſſe: And the reaſon of this ill is, becauſe they themſelues bee ill. And this common voyce choaketh a good name, as your Tares doe corne.

The diſcreet carriage of a woman tempted to lewdneſſe.

Now, as this Gentle-woman was a Romane, ſo did ſhe performe a Romane Act. She knowing, that we went about to worke her ouerthrow, ſhe wiſely ſought to preuent it, feigning her ſelfe to be ſomewhat touched with Loues paſsion, and that ſhe was now vpon the point of yeelding, if not wholly ouercome.

One day, when as her Maid was making of her ready, and was inſtant with her in this buſineſſe, looking vpon her with a ſmiling and cheerefull countenance, ſhe ſaid vnto her, *Nicoleta*, (for ſo was ſhe called) I aſſure thee, that if thou hadſt not wrought vpon me, vſing ſo many ſtrange inuentions, and hadſt not ſpent ſo many elaborate and well ſtudied words in this ſuit of thine, thou hadſt e're this made that will of mine to yeeld, which hath hitherto ſtood out ſo long. For I wiſh well vnto *Guzman*, and approue his diſcreet proceeding in this buſineſſe. Beſides, his Maſter is of that merit, that any woman whatſoeuer, be ſhe of neuer ſo honourable qualitie, without being ſo much ſollicited, as I haue beene, ought to imbrace his loue and friendſhip, and offer her ſeruice vnto him. But as thou thy ſelfe both knoweſt, and ſeeſt, I doe not know how it will be poſsible, that this our Treaty ſhall be ſecure from ſcandalous tongues, being that now vpon no iuſt cauſe giuen, and I for my part hauing as yet yeelded no conſent vnto that, which perhaps I ſo much deſire, that is whiſpered already in euery corner, nay thorow all *Rome*, which neither in mine owne houſe, nor with thee, (which canſt only be the inſtrument of our pleaſures) did I euer yet communicate. And ſince it is now come to this paſſe, that the popular voyce runneth on with ſo great libertie, and that I am not able any longer to hold out in withſtanding the loue of this noble Gentleman, all that I will intreat at thy hands, is; that thou wilt diſpoſe and order it, with the greateſt ſecrecie that may be. Speake therefore to *Guzman*, that he waite and attend here-abouts for ſome few nights, for I will finde opportunitie ſome one night or other, to giue him entrance, that I may ſee him, and talke with him concerning the carriage of our loues.

Nicoleta fell downe vpon her knees to the ground, not knowing, which ſhe ſhould kiſſe firſt, her feet or her hands, with a face ſet all on fire with too much ioy: for a great while together, ſhe neuer left giuing of her thankes, qualifying the eaſineſſe of effecting it, and diſgracefully laying open the faults of her old Maſter. Then did ſhe reduce vnto her remembrance thoſe former diſtaſtes, which ſhe had receiued from him; in what wretched eſtate, through his miſerie, ſhe liu'd in; his baſe kinde of carriage, and what drie fodderings he did giue her, and all, that ſhe might incourage her the more to goe brauely on in this her reſolution, which ſhe did ſimply beleeue, ſhe had now entred into.

Hereupon ſhe came forth-with flying vnto me, flinging her armes abroad, and ſtrongly twining them about my necke, ſhe claſpt me as hard as ſhe could for her life, demanding (a) *Albriçias* at my hands. Which when ſhe had receiued, ſhe would relate vnto me what had paſt betweene her and her Miſtreſſe. I tooke her by the hand, leading her along with me, (as thoſe that carry with them the ſpoyles and trophees of ſome famous victorie) into my

(a) *A reward for good newes.*

Maſters

Maſters withdrawing Chamber, where, with a great deale of ioy wee celebrate this gladſome newes; plotting and contriuing with our ſelues touching the houre, how and where I might beſt finde entrance to ſpeake with *Fabia*. And my Maſter giuing to *Nicoleta* a little Purſe which he had in his Pocket, cramm'd with Spaniſh Piſtolets, ſhe made as if ſhe were vnwilling to take them of him, but did not all this while cloze her fiſt, nor pull backe her hand, but out of modeſtie held it betweene forward and backward like a Phiſician, when he is offred more then his fees, and with a iocund ſmile, gaue him thankes for this his courteous liberalitie; and with this, ſhe tooke her leaue both of him and me. But my Maſter continued with me, rendring me an account of his loue, and I giuing him the *Para-bien* thereof, in which kinde of diſcourſe, and the like, we ſpent all that Euening. And when it was night, at the appointed houre, I tooke vp my ſtanding, gaue the watch-word, and made ſuch ſignes, as were ordred betweene vs, but neither that night, nor ſome three or foure more following, could this agreement made betweene vs, take effect.

One day amongſt the reſt, there hapned to fall a ſmall, but withall a ſhrewd driuing raine, wherein at my wonted houre I was to make my accuſtomed walke, being dabbled (as they ſay) vp (*a*) to the girdle. I came thither reaſonable well wet, the night being very darke, which ſuited not amiſſe with my fortunes. It was my hap (but would to God it had neuer hapned) to haue the end of my deſires. And for that, in things of intereſt, and matters that concerne our pleaſure and content, it importeth much, to caſt off all feare, and to vndergoe all difficulties with a daring reſolution, I did ſhew more courage at that time, then became diſcretion, in that I was ſo forward to come to the Call, beating my fore-head againſt the Walls and corners of the houſe, when the raine powred downe on my head from heauen, and my feet ſtood vp to the ankles in durt. As ſoone as I had giuen the ſigne, it was knowne who was there, yet notwithſtanding they made me to waite a good while in the raine, till I was ſo thorow-wet, that the water that came in at my Pole, dropt out at my knees, and went guttring downe into my ſhooes: and then at laſt, after I had beene a long time in this cold bath, they called vnto me, and willed me to haue the patience to ſtay yet a little longer.

In the end, when all my cloathes and my ſelfe were dung-wet, and that I had not a drie thred about me, I might perceiue the doore to open very ſoftly, and *Nicoleta* to call vnto mee. And then (mee thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heate with it, that I was thorow-drie all ouer on the ſudden. Now did I no more thinke on my fore-paſſed troubles, being cheered vp with the ſight of the (*a*) *Fregonçilla* of my ſoule, and the comfortable hope of inioying the beloued *Fabia*. *Nicoleta* and I exchanged but a few words; for ſhe had ſcarce bid mee welcome, when lo, her Miſtreſſe came downe, and calling to her ſeruant, ſaid; Doe you heare (*Nicoleta?*) Get you vp, and ſee what your Maſter is a doing, and if he chance to aske for me, come and call me, whileſt I in the meane-while ſtay talking here with *Señor Guzman*.

Now, all this *interim* we were in the darke, ſo that we could ſcarce diſcerne one another, and if we did, it was as much as poſsibly we could doe. Then did ſhe begin to queſtion me concerning my health, and how it was with me, as if ſhe had ſeemed to wiſh very well vnto me, or as if my welfare had beene a matter of importance, and much to her contentment. I replyde vnto her with the like demand. That compliment performed, I deliuered her a large meſſage from my Maſter, in acknowledgement of thoſe many thankes which he did owe vnto her, for the vndeſerued fauours which ſhe had vouchſafed to ſhew vnto him, and how great a ſeruant hee was of hers; inlarging this Theame with an elegant Oration, which I had ſtudied of purpoſe only to this

Prouerb.
(*a*) Con lodos, haſta la cinta.

(*b*) *A Maid ſeruant, that waſhes and ſtarches, and does the like ſeruices of keeping all things cleane.*
Muger de buen fregado.
La diſhoneſta que ſe refriega con todos.
Couarruuias. p. 413.

this end. But before I was come to the concluſion thereof, and when I was in the greateſt force of this Argument, and my words began to gather ſtrength for the gaining of her good will, I could not faſten her farther attention, nor like Waxe, worke her as I would; becauſe ſhe ſeeming to be amazed and ſtartled with ſome ſudden perturbation, abruptly ſaid vnto me:

Guzman *notably mocked by* Fabia: *And in what manner.*

Señor Guzman, as you loue my life, let mee intreat you to hold me excuſed; for with a conceiued feare, that at this preſent inſtant hath ſeazed vpon mee, me thinkes, euery bodies eye is vpon mee, all in the houſe watch and obſerue me. And therefore for Gods ſake, let me intreat you to enter in heere this way, and there right ouer againſt you, you ſhall finde a lodging Chamber, get you quickly into that, and tarry there till I haue giuen a turne or two about the houſe, to ſee if the coaſt bee cleere, and all my people ſafe, and I ſhall preſently returne againe vnto you; but I pray haue an eſpeciall care in the meane while, that you ſtand ſtill, and make not any the leaſt noiſe in the world. I gaue credit vnto her, and went ſtraight on as ſhe had directed mee, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little open entry, making more haſte then good ſpeed, I lighted ere I was aware, into a huge beaſtly Hog-ſty, that ſtood in a filthy durty Court, where I had no ſooner gone ſome two or three ſteps, but I ſtumbled (through too much haſte) vpon a great dung mixen, and fell with my head iuſt againſt the wall, giuing my ſelfe ſuch a ſound knocke, that I lay there for a while ſenſeleſſe. But with that little life that was left me, by little and little I came to my ſelfe againe, and ſcrambling vp as well as I could, I went groping along the walles with my hands (as children doe that play at Blind-man-buffe) to ſee if I could finde out this appointed Chamber: but I could finde no other out-let, ſaue that whereby I had made my entrance. I rounded it once againe, imagining with my ſelfe, that by reaſon of my new receiued blow, I could not haply meet with it ſo vpon the ſudden.

The Spaniſh word, is patio. la parte de la caſa des cubierta. Couarru. verb. Patio.

And wandring thus vp and downe this Maze, it was my hap to light vpon a little narrow Lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, hauing a houſe of Office at the end of it, ill couered, and that not wholly neither ouer-head, where vvas onely the t'one halfe of an old broken great Pitcher, which was full of Ordure, beeing fixed faſt to the ground, and beaſtly berayd round about, yeelding no very ſweet ſent, whereby I began to conieƈture the danger I was in, and to conſider with my ſelfe the many mis-fortunes that had befalne me.

Well, when I ſaw how the world went, I ſought to get out where I came in: but I found the doore was ſhut faſt vpon mee, and that there was no hope of getting forth. It rained extremely, and ſhowred downe ſo faſt vpon me, that I was forced to ſhelter my ſelfe vnder that poore miſerable old ruinous open, I cannot tell whether I ſhould tearme it rather Houell, then Houſe, ſtanding vp to the knees in durt, whoſe perfume was none of the pleaſingeſt.

Theſe two misfortunes of his are mentioned in the firſt Part.

There did I paſſe ouer the remainder of that night, which vvas farre worſe, then that I indured at *Toledo*, and of no leſſe perill to my perſon, then that which I was put to in the houſe of the proud *Genoues*, my kinſman, Nor was it onely the falling of the raine, that did now afflict mee, which came not drizling or mizling downe vpon mee; but with a full and open gutter, and when at leaſt, with drops as bigge as Peaſe. But I beganne to thinke with my ſelfe what ſhould become of mee; for I could not but imagine, that ſhe that had made that Mouſe-trap for me ouer-night, would the next morning deliuer me ouer to the Cat.

After this conceit had runne a while in my head, I entred into other diſcourſes, wherewith I might comfort my ſelfe, ſaying; Free me (O God) from the ſtormy bluſtring Northerne windes of this tempeſtuous night, and

and giue me leaue to eſcape with life till it be day, that when the Maſter of the Ship ſhall finde mee heere, all that I will ſay vnto him, ſhall be, that his Maid brought me hither, and that I am her husband. For it would be the leſſer harme vnto mee of the two, to be married vnto her, then to ſee my bones marr'd with torment, to make mee to confeſſe what I made there; and I would rather ſeeke to content them with this anſwere, then that they ſhould kill me, and bury me afterwards in this ſtinking Church-yard, and ſo end my life in this miſerable manner.

Thus I went beating my braines about, diſcuſsing to and fro, what would be the iſſue in the end of this buſineſſe; when lo, anon after two of the clocke in the morning, I perceiued that the doore was opened; vvherewith all the miſery that I had ſuffered, was turned into ioy; and flowers of comfort, thinking that *Fabia* was now returned. But when I came to the doore, and found it vnlockt, and no body liuing there-abouts, I beganne to bee more afraid then I was before, and my heart beganne to misgiue me, conceiuing, that behinde ſome wall or doore of the houſe, they ſtaid waiting for my comming forth, that they might with more eaſe and ſafety rid me of life. I vnſheathed my ſword, and taking that in one hand, and my Dagger in the other, I went by little and little, taking notice (by that poore little mornings light) of all thoſe ſteps which I had trod (vvhich, were not many, nor very hard to bee hit againe) by which I entred. So that, with more feare, then ſhame, I got at laſt to the ſtreet doore, which I likewiſe found was open.

When I had once ſet my feete vpon the threſhold, I opened my eyes, and then plainely perceiued, that what had already paſt, was in puniſhment of my ouer-boldneſſe; and albeit this tricke that had beene put vpon mee, was not ſo eaſie to be digeſted, yet this ieſt might haue falne out far worſe. I comforted my ſelfe as well as I could, looked into my errour, & acknowledged my fault; and champing vpon theſe things; as I walked along the ſtreets, I came at laſt home to our owne houſe, and opening my Chamber doore, I put off my cloathes, and got me in betweene the Blankets to recouer ſome heat, which through the waters and the windes I had loſt.

In this manner did I lye, till it was about ten a clocke in the morning, tumbling and toſsing, not being able for very ſhame to fall aſleepe, thinking and deuiſing with my ſelfe, what anſwere I ſhould make vnto my Maſter. For if I ſhould deale plainely and truely with him, and acquaint him with the whole paſſage of this buſineſſe, it would be a great affront vnto mee, and that I ſhould be plaid vpon euery moment with whole Vollies of ieſts, and moue euen the very children of the ſtreet to ſcoffe and laugh at me. And to deny it, and intertaine his Lordſhip with vaine and idle hopes, me thought that likewiſe was not fitting. For *Nicoleta* had already recouered her *Albriçias*; and was well rewarded for her good newes; and therefore this might ſeeme vnto him to bee a meere inuention to defeat him of his money. (a) *Todos eran matas, por roçar.* All the fat I ſaw, was in the fire; and that this buſineſſe did not goe on well and handſomely, but had many inconueniences in it; it went ill on the one ſide, and worſe on the other. Which way ſo euer I ſought to winde me, was but a (b) leaping out of the Frying Pan into the fire.

And whileſt I was thus muſing with my ſelfe, how I might inuent ſome meanes to ſet all right, one of the ſeruants of the houſe came knocking at my doore, and told mee, that my Lord would haue me come to him. O vvretched and vnfortunate man that I am (ſaid I to my ſelfe) what ſhall I doe? For they haue now found me with my (c) finger in the Creame-Pot; they haue taken mee in the manner, the theft is diſcouered, I am put to my ſhifts, and muſt anſwere for my ſelfe as well as I can. *Coragio* then (quoth I) *Coragio*

Prouerb.
a Todo lo veo matas, y por rozar. Del negoçio, que no eſta bien compueſto, y tiene muchos inconuenientes. Couarru. verb. Mata.
(b) *Prouerb.* Saltar de la ſarten, y dar en las braſas.
(c) *Prou.* Traer las manos en la maſa. Andar metido en algun negocio.

I) *Coragio, Guzman!* When were thy ſpirits wont to faile thee in this manner? When wert thou euer as yet put to that plunge, from which at length thou didſt not fairely come off? The Sunne is as yet clouded; and Time will diſcouer the true path. And who tooke thee by night out of the yard, will bring thee as well out of my Lords with-drawing roome.

Well, I got mee vp, ſhifted my cloathes, and put on a freſh ſute, the beſt that I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no ſuch diſaſter had hapned vnto mee; I hy'de mee vp vnto my Lord, who expected my comming, and had no ſooner ſeene mee, but preſently askt mee, how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no ſooner come to giue an account of what had paſt betwixt *Fabia*, and my ſelfe? I told him; That they made mee ſtay waiting in the ſtreet vntill it was midnight, expecting a faire birth of this buſineſſe, but it prou'd in the end to bee a ſhitten-arſ'd Girle; ſo that I was diſmiſt with a *non licet*; telling me, that ſhe could not poſsibly either ſpeake with mee, or open the doore.

I alſo then ſignified vnto him, that I would goe and lye downe a while vpon my bed, to ſee if I could take ſome reſt, for I did not finde my ſelfe halfe well. Hee gaue me leaue ſo to doe. Where-vpon, I went to my Chamber, put off my cloathes, got mee to bed, and there fell to my victuals, where I remained till it was almoſt night, hatching a thouſand conceits in my head, waſting my wits, and Limbeking my braines, without drawing any iuice or ſubſtance thence at all. And becauſe, what in regard of my rage and anger, as alſo the ſundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my minde, I was not able to take any reſt on either ſide, but lay tumbling from t'one to t'other; If I lay on my backe, I ſtraight-way waxed weary; if I ſate vp in my bed, my Hips were too feeble to beare vp my bodie. Wherevpon, I reſolued with my ſelfe to riſe. And I had no ſooner taken my cloathes into my hands, and put my feet out of my bed, but one of the Groomes of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told mee; *Señor Guzman*; There are ſome pretty Wenches beneath at the ſtaires foot which inquire for you, and ſtay waiting your comming in the Portall within the gate. Apocks vpon them, quoth I: What haue I to doe with them? The Diuell take them for mee. Goe downe, and either bid them goe to the Stewes, or elſe tell them, that I am not within. For I imagined vvith my ſelfe, that all *Rome* by this time had rung of my diſgrace, and that theſe were ſome roguiſh harlotries, that came to laugh and ſcoffe at mee, and to make themſelues merry with my mis-fortunes. I was very iealous, that they came of purpoſe to play the Wags with mee, and therefore willed him to diſmiſſe them: and ſo they went their wayes.

That night my Maſter willed me to continue my wonted Station. I told him, that I found my ſelfe not halfe well; wherevpon he aduiſed mee to get mee betimes to my lodging, and that I ſhould call for any thing that I wanted; and if need were, he would ſend a Phyſician vnto mee. I kiſt his hands, thanking him in the beſt faſhion I could, for this his great fauour and loue towards mee; and got mee forthwith to my lodging, vvhere I remained retired, and all alone, as I had done the reſt of that day.

The next morning, I was no ſooner vp, but I receiued a Letter from my *Nicoleta*, complaining of mee, that hauing come to viſit mee the day before, I would not bee ſpoken withall, nor giue her notice of that, which had paſt the other night betwixt my ſelfe and her Miſtreſſe, and what gteat buſineſſe I had, that I did not round that ſtreet the next night following, telling mee that ſhee had waited there for my comming, till it was after mid-night.

Vnto theſe, ſhe added ſome other words, which left me no leſſe perplexed, then confounded. And that I might cleere all doubts, I wrote her an anſwere,

ſwere; telling her, that I would not faile ſometimes that Euening to come and viſit her in the back Lane, that was behinde the houſe. For *Fabia's* houſe ſtood as it were betweene two ſtreetes; on the back-ſide whereof, right againſt the principall gate, was a little Poſterne doore, and ouer that a pretty little lodging Chamber, with one little window belonging vnto it; from whence *Nicoleta* might very conueniently talke vnto me euen in the day time, for that the Lane was little frequented, as being ſcarce paſſable, for that it was very narrow, and full of durt and mire. And euen then at that time, it was ſo bad and ſo foule, that very hardly and with much adoe, (conſidering the late raine) could I get to that place, where I was to ſpeake with *Nicoleta*.

Well, when I was come thither, and ſhe ready to receiue me, ſhee began to aske mee; what was become of me? What great occaſions did hinder me, that I had not come and ſeene her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Miſtreſſes ſake, I might haue taken that paines. She formed many complaints againſt me, accuſing the inconſtancie of Men, who made loue vnto Women, not ſo much for any good affection that they bore them, as to get the conqueſt, and Maſtery of them; And when they had gotten what they deſired, and receiued ſome Pledge from them, they did quickly ſlight them, if not wholly forget them.

The inconſtancie of idle young men.

By this, as likewiſe by that profeſsion, which ſhe made of her loue vnto me, I knew her innocencie, and *Fabia's* ſubtiltie, who went about to deceiue vs both. Thereupon I told her; My *Nicoleta*, thou art quite out of the way, and ſo mightily deceiued, as no woman can bee more. For I would haue thee to know, that thy Miſtreſſe hath play'd the Iacke with vs both. Then I vp and told her all that had befalne me, and how vilely ſhe had vs'd me. Shee bleſt her ſelfe, croſsing and croſsing her ſelfe ouer and ouer, thinking it to be a thing impoſsible. I ſtood thus talking with her, being gallantly clad, and in my beſt brauery, ſtrutting my legs abroad, ſtretching out my necke, and diſcourſing of my misfortunes, being careleſſe of that preſent diſgrace, which my euill fortune had too neere at hand for me. For it ſo fell out, that whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with her, by that little Poſterne; (thorow which there was a way to goe in and out to the Stable) it hapned, that there entred in thereat (whileſt the Groomes had led the Horſes forth to water,) a huge big Bore; this Bore one of the Groomes found nuzzeling in the litter, which he had made ready for his Horſes, turning it topſie-turuy, and ſcattering it all abroad the Stable. He being much moued thereat, tooke vp a great bat in his hand, and belaboured his backe and ſides, as hard as he could lay on for his life. It was a fat rogue and a great; and like a Bull that is bayted, came running forth, as hard as he could driue. And for that theſe kinde of beaſts, either out of cuſtome, or nature, vſe to runne alwayes foreright, and ſeldome or neuer turne aſide, he came directly vpon me, and tooke me ſo on the ſudden, that I could by no meanes auoyd him, and perforce made his way iuſt betweene my legs; ſo that I rode as it were a-ſtride on horſe-backe, but the cleane contrary way; and to keepe my ſelfe from falling, I tooke hold on his tayle with both my hands, vſing that in ſtead of a Bridle, which I held as faſt as poſsibly I could. I was not able all this while to recouer my ſelfe, and had my life laine vpon it, I knew not for the preſent how to quit my ſelfe handſomely from his backe: and whileſt I was deuiſing with my ſelfe how I might come fairely off, he ranne with me thorow the midſt of a durtie puddle, that was nothing but myre and filth, ſo that for to ſaue my ſelfe from falling, and that he might the better beare me thorow the durt, I was forced to let goe his taile, and to claſpe my armes about the ſides of him, with all the might and force I could. And as if we had playd at binding of barrels, or (a) *à punta con cabeça*, giuing him many a rap at the

(a) Iuego de niños.

the wrong doore, flinging vp his ſnout, and huffing and puffing with his noſtrils, he carried me (in ſpight of my teeth, for I was forced to hold faſt, for feare of falling in the durt) in his hoggiſh kinde of gallop, ſome three or foure ſtreets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to ſee what he ayld, whileſt I perceiuing the ſhame and danger I was like to runne, fell off from his backe of mine owne accord, not regarding when, or where I ſhould light. And much better had it beene for me, had I done this before in mine owne little durty Lane; for beſides that, I ſhould not haue there receiued ſo much harme, the diſgrace would not haue beene ſo publike, and I ſhould haue met with a remedie for this miſchiefe neerer at hand.

Well, I got me vp as well as I could on my legs, but all bemyr'd, and berayd with durt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in *Rome*, my face being all beſmeared with durt, and my cloathes from top to toe, all playſtered ouer with myre, that I ſeemed to haue beene throwne out of the belly of ſome Whale. The people from out their doores and windowes ſhouted out ſo loud, and the boyes did ſo flocke about me, that as one that was out of his wits, and depriued of iudgement, I ſought where I might beſt hide my ſelfe. At laſt I ſpyde out a houſe hard by, where I thought I ſhould finde ſome good entertainment. I entred there-into, and made faſt the doore, and ſo barrocadoed my ſelfe vp cloſe againſt all that company, that were deſirous to ſee me. But it did not fall out ſo well with me, as I could haue wiſht; For it is not fit, that any thing *(a)* ſhould ſucceed well with the wicked. It is a puniſhment of his fault: and ſo it fell out with me, by that bad entertainment which I there receiued, as you ſhall heare more at full in the chapter following.

(a) Al malo, no es juſto, ſuçeder le coſa bien.

CHAPTER VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, where-into hee had withdrawne himſelfe, to make himſelfe cleane, another diſgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embaſſadour, with whom hee diſcourſed of politicke and graue matters.*

THe night was now darke, but much more my heart. Euery houſe was full of lights, but my ſad ſoule was fuller of darkeneſſe. I did not weigh and conſider with my ſelfe, that it was now late, nor that the Maſter of the houſe was not willing that I ſhould ſtay there, but reuiling me with odious tearmes, ſought to driue me out with euill language, thinking euery houre a yeere, till he had thruſt me out of doores. For, he was iealous of me, and began to ſuſpect, that this was but ſome tricke or ſtratagem of mine owne plotting, hauing taken hold on that occaſion to get into his houſe, and to bring my purpoſe more eaſily to paſſe. Nor was this my honeſt Gentleman much out of the way. For the Gentle-woman his wife wore the Breeches, ſhe was Maſter of the houſe, a friend to her owne will and pleaſure, very *(b)* head-ſtrong, and not ſure of foot. So that it was no wonder that her husband ſhould ſee Viſions, and dreame of ſtrange apparitions, taking euery ſhadow to be ſome fearefull ghoſt, and conceiuing, (out of his

Guzman *makes euery one ſuſpicious of him.*

(b) *The Spaniſh word is*, Serrada Sienes: *I would be glad to be informed of the propriety of this phraſe, if any can render it better.*

his iealous humour) that all the world went about to coozen him. So that euery the leaſt apprehenſion (though of neuer ſo farre-fetcht a ſuppoſition) made him preſently to take the Allarme. Whereupon, he no ſooner ſaw me within his doores, but he called all his people about him, and leauing me all alone in the outward Porch to the great Gate, would not ſuffer his ſeruants to doe me ſo much kindeneſſe, as to afford me a bucket of water to waſh my ſelfe withall. So that I (poore man) with my cloathes all to be-myrd, my hands all to be-durted, and my face ſo fouly beſmear'd, that there was not one white ſpot to be ſeene, I went intertaining my going forth with a great deale of feare, leſt ſome might chance to be ſtill waiting at the gate to looke vpon this my new Liuery, which might better beare the name of Leproſie. And for that they, who beheld this my misfortune, were not a few, the company increaſing, and ſtanding in a round thicke together, they related it afreſh to them that were newly come into their companie; and for that they had a generall diſlike of me, they detained all that paſt by, relating vnto them the diſgrace that had befalne me, whereat they all laughed out aloud, making great ſignes and tokens of ioy. And it may be, that moſt of them had reaſon ſo to do; and by this their reioycing, did reuenge them-ſelues of thoſe wrongs, which they had heretofore receiued from me. There might you ſee that verified of me, which is commonly ſung vp and downe the ſtreets.

Guzman *laughed at by common people.*

Romance.

Mas enemigos, que amigos, tienen
Su cuerpo cercado;
Dizen vnos, que lo entierren,
Y otros, que no ſea enterrado.

More foes then friends, his body haue
Incompaſt round about;
Some crie, to put it in the graue,
And ſome, t'ſhall lye without.

Guzman *hated and perſecuted.*

The ſtreet was full of men and boyes, which did perſecute mee with ſhrill ſhoutes, and lowd cryes, calling in a ſharpe and high key; Thruſt him out; Thruſt him out; Why doe yee let this foule beaſt abide vvith you? put out this ſame pickled pigge amongſt vs. O theſe baſe Raskals, how had they almoſt made mee to loſe my patience, and my iudgement! There were ſome honeſt folke amongſt them, that tooke part with mee; and all thoſe that were ſuch as I was, ſhew'd themſelues on my ſide. Theſe fought to defend me from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble with threats and menaces; for they were growne ſo ſhameleſſe, and ſo impudent, that they began to throw ſtones againſt the gate, being very deſirous to haue me come forth amongſt them.

Curioſitie admits no reſpect.

But I neither blame them, nor excuſe my ſelfe. For I would haue done the like my ſelfe, vpon the ſame occaſion, againſt mine owne father. For, thoſe things of curioſitie, which doe not (like Shroue-tide) come once a yeere, I doe not hold it any great exceſſe to bee deſirous to ſee them. And I aſſure thee (nor doe I ſpeake this, to make the matter ſeeme more then it is) that if for to make profit, I would haue ſuffered my ſelfe to bee ſeene, I might by this meanes haue got a good ſumme of money; For I was nothing all ouer, but a meere lumpe of durt, hauing like your *Negro's*; no more white about mee to be ſeene, ſaue onely my eyes, and teeth; this mis-fortune befalling me in the moſt liquid kennell, and rottenneſt mixen that was in all the ſtreet.

True it is, that with the knife that belonged to my Sword, I ſcrap't away as much of it as I could, but all was but as a thing of nothing, being

ing either little or nothing the better; for the myre, by reaſon of its liquidneſſe, had ſoked it ſelfe quite thorow my cloathes, ſo that they remained as wet about me, as if they had beene ſteeped in ſome bath. And I held it ſome happineſſe vnto me in this my miſery, that I did not goe dropping through the ſtreets, like a basket of Buck-cloathes, when they are taken from the waſhing-Bole, and carried forth to be dryed in the Sunne.

In this pittifull manner, it being now late, and all the people gone, I ſneaked out in that lamentable pickle, as I would haue wiſht them to haue beene in, who tooke moſt pleaſure therein. If there bee happineſſe in vnhappineſſe, in regard of the comfort which we receiue from thence; this day it ſhould ſeeme that fortune did play the wanton, and went ſporting her ſelfe at the *juego de Cañas* with me; for, though ſhee had diſfauour'd me with theſe the like troubles, that you haue heard; yet did ſhee afterward aſsiſt mee with the night; yea, and with ſuch a darke night, that the people went their way, giuing me leaue to depart thence, ſound, ſafe, and free, from the clamour of the boyes and children, which ſtayd watching for mee. I got me forth, throwing my Cloake ouer my face, without being knowne by any, and making large ſtrides, ſeeking (if it were poſsible) to fly from my ſelfe, in regard of that ſtore of durt, and that euill ſauour which I bare about me in my cloathes. But this could not be diſſembled; for which way ſo-euer I went, I left ſome ſigne thereof behinde mee, beſide the heat of the ſent, which might very well bee followed afarre off, it was ſo ſtrong. And none that paſt by mee, would turne backe to looke vpon me, becauſe they did ſuſpect no harme. And if any did chance to finde fault with me, others would excuſe me, and ſay; Let the poore fellow alone, it is but a little ſlipperineſſe of the Guts, a looſeneſſe of the Hilts, a little laxatiue oyle that is come from him, which vpon occaſion may bee euery mans caſe, as well as his: He would haue holpe it and he could, and therefore you muſt pardon him. Others would ſay; Inquire no farther into the matter, make no more doe about it, but giue ouer the haunt; for the Crow [a] cannot be blacker, then are his wings. Others, ſtopping their noſes as they went along by me, would cry out *Foh*; There hath more ſtore of raine falne, then we were aware of. Others, This *Diſciplinante* muſt needs haue giuen himſelfe ſome great wound, he ſtinkes ſo vildly, (for they ſaw mee muffled vp in my Cloake, like thoſe, which come from whipping themſelues in the Holy Weeke.) Let me aduiſe you, friend, to make all the haſte you can, and call quickly for ſome water, before you begin to ſwound.

I had matter enough for all of them to worke vpon, and there vvas not any that paſt by me, but had a fling at me. And ſome would not ſticke to aske me; Tell me (friend) how ſell you a pound of this Waxe? And others; What's the price of your Honey-combes? And a third; Sure this muſt needs be ſome perfumer or other, ſince he ſmels ſo ſweet. I anſwered them all with ſilence, and replyde not a word vnto them, by which meanes I paſt the better along by them, though euer and anon they would bee girding and ſcoffing at me. But for thoſe that cryde a pocks on mee, and bid the Diuell goe with me, calling me Pole-Cat, and the like ſtinking names; mumbling ſoftly to my ſelfe, as your young Nouices doe their Mattens in a Monaſterie, I payd them againe in their owne coyne: And ſo hanging my head in my boſome, I hy'de me homewards as faſt as my durt-loaden legges would carrie me.

That, which did moſt trouble me, was, to ſee the Dogges in euery ſtreet come barking after me, who the faſter I went, did ſo much the more fiercely ſet vpon me, and eſpecially your (*b*) Mongrell Curres, which followed me cloſe at the heeles, and vvould now and then giue me a nip at the Calues of my legges. I would faine haue fraid them away, but I durſt not, fearing leſt

Thoſe that are vnfortunate, ſeek to ſhun the ſight of all men. Prouerb.

[a] No puede ſer el Cueruo mas negro, que las alas.

(*b*) *The Spaniſh word is,* Gozquejo. *A kinde of Dogge, which at firſt was in great eſteeme, when they were brought out of* Gothland *into* Spaine, *a Country in* Europe, *which confineth vpon* Denmark *and* Norway, *called in the* Almane *tongue* Gott, *from whence came the* Gothes, *which came into* Caſtile. *This race of Dogs is now baſtardized, and in a manner loſt. So that now your* Gozques, *are a kinde of Mongrell Curs, which your poore and baſer ſort of people breed vp and keepe. They are ſhort-legged, long ſided & headed, balling and barking at their neighbours, troubleſome to your Gallants, and abhorred of theeues. They ſleepe all day, and this makes them wake, and barke all night long. And your Tradesmen and Shopkeepers, will rather indure that you ſhould ſtrike his Sonne, then kicke his Dogge.* Couarru. verb. Gozque.

leſt by making that defence, greater Dogges and more in number, hearing the noiſe that they would haue made, would thereby haue been drawne forth of doore, and come mainely running vpon me, and haue torne me (like another *Acteon*) all in pieces.

At laſt, after theſe my many mis-fortunes, like a Ship that comes from the Weſt-Indies, beaten at Sea, and rent and torne by Pyrats, I arriu'd ſafe at *Seuill*. I was now come to my old home, and being vnſeene and vnheard of any, had got me vp to my lodging. And I ſhould haue held it no ſmall happineſſe, if I could haue got in as ſoone as I came to my Chamber doore. I put my hand in my Pocket, to take out the Key, but could not finde it. Then did I feele for it in the other Pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or three capers in the ayre, hoping to heare it gingle; but all was one; then did I fall a ſearching of my breeches, to ſee if happely it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hoſe; but the Diuell a Key that was there. I rummaged euery corner about mee that I could ſuſpect it to be in, but all to no purpoſe. For queſtionleſſe I loſt it in that houſe, whither I had with-drawne my ſelfe, when I tooke out my Handkerchiefe to vvipe my face and my hands. This was a great griefe vnto mee, and did vexe mee more then all the reſt; in which agony and anguiſh of minde, lifting vp my eyes to Heauen, as a man in deſperation, I breathed forth theſe vvords of complaint.

Guzman *laments his misfortune.*

Poore, miſerable man, as I am; What ſhall I doe? or whither ſhall I goe? What will become of mee? What courſe ſhall I take, that my Maſters ſeruants, and other my Companions and fellowes of the houſe, may not come to the knowledge of this diſgrace that hath thus vnluckily befalne mee? How ſhall I cloake and diſſemble this buſineſſe, that I may not bee made a laughing ſtocke amongſt them? I may boldly tell all the world beſides, that they lye, but I cannot doe ſo to thoſe of the houſe, if they ſhould hap to ſee mee. To others I might deny it, either in part, or in whole, as ſhall ſeeme beſt vnto mee: But here, if they chance to light vpon me, I am openly taken in the manner, the theft found about mee, the cauſe opened, and my mouth ſhut, not being able to alledge any thing in mine owne defence, nor can I inuent that Lye, that will bee able to giue them ſatisfaction, and make good what I ſhall ſay in mine owne excuſe. Thoſe that enuy my inwardneſſe with my Maſter, will bathe themſelues herewith in Roſe-water; it will bee meat and drinke to them, and they will not ſticke to call their friends about them; vvho, like ſwarmes of Bees, vvill fly in preſently vpon mee, and come buzzing about mee, to vvorke my more ſhame and amazement. I am vtterly vndone, my Barke lyes all a t'one ſide, and is ready to bee drowned, becauſe it hath no Pylot to ſet her vpright, and to ſteere her in her true courſe, nor any Maſter that is able to gouerne her.

With theſe exclamations (wretched as I was) I rent the ayre, and was ready to runne out of my vvits: but was not ſo wiſe at that time to call to minde, what an ill name I had gotten in *Rome*, and yet vvith out-cryes and lamentations muſt thus pittifully bewayle an accident of fortune. O would to God, that (conſidering the great troubles of this world) wee would bee as ſenſible of the aduerſities of the minde, as wee are mooued vvith the afflictions of the body! But that doth happen vnto vs, which is vvont to befall thoſe, which ſweepe all cleane before the doore, and when they haue done, throw the duſt into the houſe. Thus did I ſtand, making funerall lamentations ouer my mis-fortunes, when lo, there came a thing into my minde, which had hapned ſome few dayes before, vvhich was of great comfort vnto mee, adding new courage and ſtrength vnto mee againſt all ſuch accidents as might hereafter ſucceed vnto mee. And thus it was:

There

The reuenge that a Romane Curtizan tooke of another woman, for being to lauish of her tongue.

There was a Curtizan of *Rome*, who cauſ'd another woman, becauſe ſhee had beene ſome-what too lauiſh of her tongue, to bee ſlaſht ouer the face, cutting her athwart the noſe, from one cheeke to the other, the cut running equally on either ſide of her face. And vvhile the Surgeon was a dreſsing of her, after that hee had giuen her ſome ſixteene or ſeuenteene ſtitches, ſhe weeping ſaid; O what an vnfortunate woman am I! Gentlemen, let me intreat you for Gods ſake, that my Husband may not know of this. A waggiſh fellow, that ſtood there by, told her, If this ſlaſh had beene vpon your buttocks, as it is vpon your face, it might haply haue been hidden from him; but ſeeing there is no Vayle to couer it; why doe you inioyne vs to keepe it ſecret?

In like ſort, it ſeemed ſimplicitie, and meere foolery in mee, to vſe ſuch a deale of nicety in the buſineſſe. And the rather, for that this miſchance was publike. And becauſe, (by reaſon of the generall knowledge thereof) it could not bee conceiled, I thought it the beſt vvay for mee, to get the Game by the hand, and to ſpeake of it firſt my ſelfe, telling as many of it, as I ſhould meet withall, making a ieſt of it, and recounting the vvhole Story thereof vnto them, before they ſhould receiue it from ſome other hand, and ſo at laſt come to know what a badde and long voyage I had made. Which if they ſhould haue done, it had beene better for mee, that I had beene out of this miſerable world.

The beſt way to ſhake off a nick-name, is to ſet light by it.

Let him indure the title of a badde name, that deſires to haue it dye quickly. For, with the more violence wee ſeeke to ſhake it off, ſo much the cloſer it cleaueth vnto vs. Inſomuch, that it continueth many times to the fifth generation; and then thoſe, which ſucceed them, doe glory and boaſt themſelues thereof, and blazon that for their Armes, which their Anceſtors held for an affront. The like hath befalne this my poore booke, which I hauing intituled with the name of (*a*) *Atalaya de la vida humana*; The Watch-Tower of mans life, they haue put the nick-name of (*b*) *Picaro* thereupon, and now it is knowne by no other name.

Haga nombre de mal nombres quien deſſea, que ſe le cayga preſto.

(*a*) Obſeruatio vitę humanæ.

(*b*) Picaro, *is a Rogue.*

I was much perplexed, and as yet vnreſolued what I were beſt to doe. And for that I thought with my ſelfe, that in our miſeries, there is no other Sanctuary on earth to flye vnto, but thoſe that are our friends; though I muſt confeſſe I had but a few, and amongſt thoſe neuer a true one, I held it not amiſſe, to haue recourſe to ſome one of my Companions, that had profeſt much loue vnto me, and had made me the faireſt ſhowes of friendſhip.

This being now concluded on, I got me to his lodging, and knockt at his doore, which he preſently opened vnto me: where I did remaine, while the locke was ript off from mine. You may conceiue with your ſelfe in what a wofull caſe I was, that I durſt not ſit downe vpon a trunke that was there in the roome, for feare of leauing therein the print of this my errour. This vnhappy Accident could not be kept ſo ſecret, but that it muſt needs be knowne. And it is a miſerie, that followes great mens houſes, that there is not a ſeruant therein, that doth not ſtriue and labour all that he can, to flatter and ſoothe vp his Lord and Maſter, although it be with merry ieſts, and fained tales, when as there is no ſuch matter. For they deale with him, as thoſe that play booty, ſeeking to ſerue one anothers turne, vſing all their art and skill to coozen and deceiue him: Whereby euery Maſter knowes, how and to what end his ſeruants loue him, and with what affection they ſerue him. And hee is a kinde of vnfortunate man, and in a miſerable and wretched taking, if he thinke to winne them by rigour, and to worke them to loue him for feare. For few or none haue euer beene able to bring this to paſſe. For the heart of man, is a noble thing, and muſt be wonne with gentle vſage; it muſt not be roughly dealt withall, but ſtroaked with a ſmooth and ſoft hand.

Seruants giuen to flatter their Maſters.

Loue, is gained by loue, and not by rigour.

Mans heart, a tender thing.

I had ſcarce ſhifted my cloathes, and waſht my ſelfe cleane, but that my Maſter

Maſter knew I was all bedurted. They had told him in what caſe I was, but none of them could tell him the cauſe of it. This was all they could ſay of me, and ſo they left me, as they found me; ſo that by this meanes, I had a faire white to ſhoot at, and might make my ayme as I would my ſelfe. Hee demanded firſt of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could informe him farther, then what they had ſeene.

Afterwards it was told me, (which was no more then I heard from his owne mouth) that he conceited with him-ſelfe, that they had caught me in *Fabia's* houſe, and that knowing my tricks, and cunning carriage, they had turned the keele of me vpwards, and had thus trimm'd and pitcht me ouer, as your Sea-men doe your ſhips: and that I ſeeking to eſcape their hands, fell by misfortune into ſome durty puddle, or filthy dung-hill: Or elſe, that wreſtling and ſtriuing with ſome of the ſeruants, that were ſent out after me to catch me, they had throwne me downe in the durt, bemoyling mee in that beaſtly manner, being more willing to doe me ſhame and reproach, then to take away my life. I likewiſe at the ſame time was caſting vp my Account with my ſelfe, making me a *(a)* wedge out of the ſame piece of wood, that I might driue this buſineſſe the better, and come home vnto him, by iumping with his conceit, and cleauing the ſame blocke, that hee had already entred vpon, hoping thereby to giue him the better ſatisfaction. And though his Cardes and mine were not the ſame, yet were they both of a ſute, and the Trumpe was turn'd vp right for either hand; and by different *(b)* wayes we hapt both to meet at one, and the ſame place: only wee did differ in this; that he by his wiſdome did coniecture, what was the moſt likely; and I, out of a vaine and idle humour, made report of that, which might be leaſt preiudiciall to my reputation. He had all that night beene buſie a writing, and making his Diſpatches for *France*; but laying his Papers awhile aſide, out of the great deſire that he had to know the truth of the matter, he preſently ſent for me in. But when I was come, and had preſented my ſelfe vnto him, he ſaid not a word vnto me, till he had retired himſelfe into his withdrawing Chamber, and diſmiſſed his ſeruants, and that we two were all alone.

(a) Haziendo cuña del miſmo pàlo. *Prouerb.*

(b) *Prouerb.* Por caminos diferentes, y bomos ambos à vn parador.

Then did he begin to aske me, how I came by my fall, and where? I told him; that I ſtood at a neighbours doore, that was right ouer againſt *Fabia's* houſe, watching very diligently, if I could haue the opportunitie to ſpeake with her; and whileſt I was carefully attending this buſineſſe, her Maid *Nicoleta* came forth, making ſignes vnto me, that I ſhould quickly come away. And being ouerioyed with this vnexpected good fortune, I would needs croſſe the Lane, where the way was worſt and fouleſt, (becauſe I would not loſe time in going about by that which was the cleaner) fetching a nimble leape, thinking to pitch ſure with my foot vpon a ſtone, that was not ſo firmely laid as it ſhould haue beene, it tottred aſide, and ſo my foot ſlipt; I ſought to recouer my ſelfe, but could not, and ſo fell into the durt, where I was moſt pittifully bemyred. Whereupon, *Nicoleta*, the people that paſſed by, beginning to flocke about me, with-drew her ſelfe, and went in. So that I was inforced to come home, without effecting what I went for; Which did much more grieue me then my fall. But all things doe not alwayes fall out as we would haue them. He then ſaid vnto me, I ſuffer more in this, then thy ſelfe. The harme is more mine, then thine.

This buſineſſe (*Guzmanillo*) goes not luckily along with thee. It was a worke of darkeneſſe, thou went'ſt about it late in the Euening, in an vnfortunate houre, and vpon a Tueſday: this diſgrace could not haue befalne thee, in any mans ſeruice, but mine, nor haue lighted ſo vnluckily vpon any but my ſelfe, ſuch is my misfortune.

Whereunto I reply'd; I would not that your Lordſhip ſhould make this ill conſtruction to your ſelfe, nor would I haue you to reckon this in the number;

ber; but I am rather perſwaded, that it would haue beene worſe with vs, if this mis-fortune had not befalne me. For we haue a Prouerb in *Caſtile*;(a) *Que breme vn pie, quiças por mejor.* I brake my legge, and it may be, it was all for the beſt. And I am the bolder to tell you ſo, for that her Husband was at that time at home in the houſe, and therefore it makes me to ſuſpect, that there was ſome trap laid for me, and that I was called into ſome ill end; but ſuppoſe it were otherwiſe, and that the winde had blowne faire in the Poope, and that I had entred into the Hauen; ſay, that the ſeruants of the houſe ſhould either haue ſpy'd me, or ouer-heard me talking with their Miſtreſſe, what doth your Excellencie thinke, would then haue become of me? Aſſure your ſelfe, they would haue cudgell'd me ſoundly, and haue vs'd me ſo hardly, that I ſhould not haue ſcap't their fingers, till they had broken all my bones, and ſent me home without a noſe. For my ſo often rounding of that houſe, hath cauſed ſome notice to be taken thereof; and albeit that ſome doe thinke that I only doe it for *Nicoleta's* ſake, yet many, that doe not know the good loue that is betweene vs, are apt to conceiue the worſt. And I haue of late obſerued, that the good old man, *Don Beltran*, hath lookt askew vpon me, as if he were not well pleaſed with me. Hee was wont heretofore to ſpeake kindely vnto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladyes, and Gentlewomen of this Court, and if I knew of any good Spaniſh ware in that kinde; but now he paſſes along by me, not ſo much as once offring to ſpeake to me: and if I put off my Hat and ſalute him, he lookes another way, as if he did not ſee me, and goes along by me like a logge, without any life or motion towards me at all.

(a) *Prouerb.*

This was the effect of that which I then ſaid vnto him; my Maſter all this while being very attentiue vnto me, and euer and anon knitting his brow, and caſting vp his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had ſtung him, and made him to ſit muſing, as one that had beene amazed vpon the report of ſome ſtrange and ſudden accident. I ſaw all his Cardes, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how he would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation, and his perſon, and that it would be little for his honour, if any diſgrace ſhould befall him in that houſe, in regard it was one of the greateſt, and the nobleſt allyed in all that Citie. I taking hold of this occaſion, came in a little cloſer vnto him, helping to turne the Key about, when I ſaw which way it was winding; and ſo thinking it fit to ſtrike the Iron whileſt it was hot, proſecuting my purpoſe, I ſpake thus vnto him; There is not any thing now in this world, that can worke aſtoniſhment in mee, nor make me to abate one haire of my courage; for I am well acquainted with misfortunes, know how farre Diſgrace can throw the barre, and the vtmoſt harme ſhe could doe me. For he that ſhall tread in my ſteps, and runne thoſe courſes that I haue done, ſhall hazard both the loſſe of his life, and honour. But I haue armed my ſelfe with patience, to indure any misfortune whatſoeuer. I haue learned long agoe couragiouſly to ſuffer and abide the changes of Fortune with an vndaunted minde, for I alwayes ſuſpect the worſt, looking for the hardeſt meaſure ſhe can giue me, and preuent her better vſage, by expecting no good at her hands. Her effects are neuer ſo great, as are her threatnings; and if I ſhould haue beene cowed with them, they would haue followed me ſtill cloſe at the heeles, as the Greyhound doth the Hare, and neuer giue mee ouer, as long as ſhee could wagge her taile, or fetch her breath.

From Fortune, we are to ſuſpect the worſt.

No great heed is to be giuen to that which hath ſucceeded in this buſineſſe, nor that I entred into it vpon a Tueſday; For I am neither wedded to ſuperſtitions, nor thinke that your Lordſhip is deſcended of the Houſe of the (b) *Mendoças*, that you ſhould be taken with theſe vaine and idle toyes of the Spaniards, as if all other dayes had a particular priuiledge, and Tueſday only

(b) *Tueſday obſerued to haue beene an vnfortunate day to the houſe of the* Mendoças.

only had receiu'd a curſe from heauen. And if Fortune ſhould fall vpon me, with all the forces ſhe can make, come what can come vnto me, be it neuer ſo bad, all her rigorous dealing towards me, ſhall not wring one word out of my mouth, that ſhall be preiudiciall to any man. Your Excellencie may doe well to diſſemble this buſineſſe, and to ſeeme to take no notice of what hath paſt, nor to care a pinne for it. For mine owne part, I ſhall euer truly ſerue you to the death, fall backe, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall, true it is, and I ſhall make bold to tell you ſo, that if the Caſe were mine, as it is yours, I would not only deſiſt there-fro, conſidering how croſſe things goe; for of a thouſand dayes, I cannot get one day of Audience; ſo that it is likely to proue an endleſſe piece of worke, and an immortall kinde of buſineſſe, like vnto that of your (a) *Mayoraſgos*, or Primo-genitureſhip, which your fathers ſettle vpon their eldeſt ſonnes, but ſhall not come to inioy their eſtate, till they be dead. Beſides, I may not well ſet my foot any more in thoſe parts, by reaſon that my haunting of that place is now generally noted, and ſome ſticke not to talke too liberally of it.

(a) Mayoraſgo, *is the heire of a houſe.*

There are not wanting in *Rome* as good, and better ware then ſhe, which may be had with leſſe danger, at an eaſier rate, and giue your Lordſhip more content, and leſſe trouble. I know not how it is with others, but my loue is not ſo feruent, as to loue for loue, but for faſhion ſake to laugh and be merry, and to make ſport, as they vſe to doe in my countrie. I am like a Melon-mongers Knife, cutting here a ſlice, and there a ſlice, now at this corner, then at that, changing and altering my markes, rouing ſometimes at one, ſometimes at another, here to day (as they ſay) and to morrow in *France*. I take thought for nothing, nor am I wedded to my will in any thing, nor am I conſtant in my purpoſes, eſpecially in matters of loue. For if one will not, another will. I eate, and ſleepe at my due houres; I ſigh not, when I am out of my Miſtreſſes ſight, but in her preſence, I fetch many a grieuous groane, and vtter my complaints. And this is that mill, where-with I grinde. But your Excellencie runn's a cleane contrary courſe. For you doe all that you doe, with a great deale of grauitie, and with a Lordly kinde of carriage and greatneſſe. And being a great and powerfull man, you haue thoſe things in chaſe, which are hardeſt to be atchieued, and like the Falcon flye at the Hearne, making wing after her, till ſhe be quite out of ſight; purſuing your game to the vtmoſt you are able, coſt it what it will coſt, or come what will come of it, you care not. For as you haue force and ſtrength to make reſiſtance, ſo you accommodate all things handſomely by your diſcretion and wiſdome; you haue a good ſtaffe to truſt to; and good legges to beare you vp.

You doe not well vnderſtand (*Guzmanillo*) what you ſay, ſaid my Maſter vnto mee; but is rather all quite contrary to that, which thou haſt ſpoken. For there is nothing now at this preſent more preiudiciall, nor more noted and obſerued, then any the leaſt ſpot or weakeneſſe in a publike perſon. For men of my qualitie are bound to weare ſuch cloathes as befit ſuch Miniſters, and not as ſhall fit beſt with our owne fancy. Otherwiſe, wee ſhall bee taxed by thoſe that caſt an eye vpon them. And euery little indecencie in them, turnes to a ſtaine at leaſt, if not a foule blot. A little breath (you know) will make the biggeſt Organs goe. And your greateſt men ſound lowdeſt in the eares of the world, when the noiſe of their actions are blowne abroad by the bellowes of the peoples breath. And I ſwear vnto thee, that if I had not ingaged my ſelfe by my word, and more particularly im-pawned my credit to *Nicoleta*, by giuing my faithfull promiſe, that I would come and viſit *Fabia* in perſon (beſides it would grieue mee, to bee accounted inconſtant, or cowardly, blaming mee of lightneſſe, that my loue ſhould be like that of children, or like vvater in a Siue, or that I went about but to try of what metall ſhe was made, and then

Euery little ſpot, a foule blemiſh in a publike perſon.

then to laugh and ſcoffe at her coozening of both her and my ſelfe of theſe our good hopes, and that it ſhould bee ſaid of mee, that I did then turne tayle, when I might haue ſeazed on my game, and had the Partridge in foote, which I might haue truſſed, if I vvould my ſelfe) I would not haue car'd a button. Beſides, being (as thou ſaiſt) that this buſineſſe goes on ſo ſlowly, and ſo coldly, I doe not finde my ſelfe ſo faſt intangled in her loue, and ſo tranſported with paſsion, that I doe not vnderſtand and conſider with my ſelfe, that ſhee hath a husband, that is one of the principall, and chiefeſt in *Rome*, rich, and noble, out of which reſpect vvee ought to vvalke very warily, as profeſsing to haue ſome honourable beginning, and not to diſ-honour the houſe wee come of, for which cauſe I ought to keepe a good *Decorum*, vvithout doing vvrong or iniury to any. And although ſhee be young and faire, (and as ſuch a one obliged to take hold on thoſe faire occaſions that are offered) yet ought I not to follow her blandiſhments, and perhaps to my too great coſt, but with a great deale of caution and heed; as ſhall beſt ſtand with that duty which I owe to my nobleneſſe of bloud, and to the honour of their houſe and kindred.

Many times, without due conſideration, wee vn-aduiſedly will ſee a mans game, and vpon badde Cards (though wee haue little reaſon for it) ſet vp our reſt, and when wee are once in, we cannot giue ouer the Vye, vnleſſe wee will be accounted ſimple, cowardly, and weake.

But ſince that on our part, wee haue vſed all poſsible diligencies, and that they preuaile ſo little, and coſt vs ſo much, (as the caſe ſtandeth now vvith the honour of this Gentle-woman;) if my ſenſuall appetite, like Gunne-powder, hath vvith its fire ſcorched, if not burnt my reaſon, by acknowledging now the ill, which I haue taken in hand, that furie is now ouer-paſt, and proſtrating my ſelfe on the earth, I confeſſe my fault. I will goe no more (as thou ſayſt) following of that, which flyeth from mee. But with this Lady, which was in a manner in my hands, I will deale with her, as doth the generous Hawke, by letting this Bird goe; by which nobleneſſe of mine, that ill name ſhall bee quite buried vnder-ground, which for my ſake hath beene raiſed of her; taking therein the beſt courſe that I can, that may make moſt for both our reputations.

This was that hee ſaid vnto mee. And mee thought that this his reſolution vvas my ſaluation. For therein, I found the Paradiſe of my deſires opened vnto mee; and praiſing this his good purpoſe, the iſſue vvas the eaſier, not ſo much for his intention, as for my reputation. And therefore I ſaid vnto him, Your Excellencie ſhall herein doe like your ſelfe, and proceed in that which you both ſay, and doe, with that correſpondencie, which is moſt agreeable to your wiſedome. For albeit it bee a great happineſſe, to obtaine that which wee deſire; yet I hold it a greater, not to deſire that, vvhich our ſenſualitie ſuggeſteth vnto vs; much leſſe, if it incite vs to the hurt of others, and more eſpecially towards perſons of qualitie.

What a ſeruant ought to doe to maintaine himſelfe in his Maſters fauour.

This is a Chriſtian conſideration, and a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordſhips braine; and therefore fit that you ſhould father it, and not caſt it off. And for the manner how you ſhall come off from this buſineſſe, leaue that to me. For a faithfull ſeruant, although for to maintaine himſelfe in his Maſters loue and fauour, hee is wont to giue a heat vnto that appetite which he findes to bee in him, yet is he bound, when hee ſhall ſee this humour corrected in him, to turne the reines, incouraging him to continue in this his good purpoſe. This being ſaid, he licenſed mee from him, ſaying; Farewell (*Guzman*) and thinke vpon this buſineſſe, which I put into thy hands, as I haue already done mine honour. And ſo we parted.

CHAP. VII.

The ieſt being publikely knowne through Rome, *which befell* Guzman de Alfarache, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that hee had with the* Boore; *for very ſhame he departs from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which iourney, a Thiefe enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better vnder that colour, rob him of all that he had.*

I Haue often conſidered with my ſelfe, how much Paſsion blindeth him, that is in Loue. And I begin now to thinke vpon my Maſter, that hee ſhould recommend his honour vnto me, as if I knew how to handle it, without ſoyling it. It comes likewiſe vnto my remembrance, (nor can I chooſe but laugh, when I thinke vpon it) how it was poſsible for me, beeing ſo notorious and offenſiue a Lyer, as I was, to ſtand in ſuch fauour as I did with my Lord: and that his Excellency ſhould treat with mee, more then any other, of matters of importance; as alſo, that he ſhould truſt mee with his ſecrets, and his ſubſtance, admit of my opinion, and giue credit to all that I ſhould ſay; and that I being ſuch a one as I was, from whoſe mouth neuer came any Truth, vvhich vvas not adulterated by mee in its going forth, yet I could not indure a Lye in another.

Paſsion blindeth Louers.

And for that very cauſe did I hate that man to the death, and could neuer afterwards abide him, that ſhould abuſe me (though but once) in that kinde. Nor was this any wonder in mee, beeing that it is naturall to all thoſe that negotiate buſineſſes, to be much offended, if they be not in all things punctually dealt withall; when as they themſelues know not how to ſpeake a true word, and are neuer weary of lying. They begin with the higheſt, and end with the loweſt. For what can bee more noble then Truth? and vvhat more baſe then Lying? If you are to receiue any courteſie from them; or that you would haue them to doe you a fauour (though this kindneſſe ſhall coſt them nothing) how many ſleights; how many tricks; how many delayes, and puttings off from one day to another, and from this, to the next morning, which morning neuer comes; beeing like vnto that of the Crow, which cryes ſtill *Cras*, promiſing that which ſhe neuer performeth?

A Lyer loues not a Lye in another.

The effects of a Lyer.

But if you are to giue them any thing, and that you doe not keepe touch with them at the time appointed, (and which is the fault now and then of your beſt Watches) that you miſſe but one minute, if you faile neuer ſo little of your promiſe, if you doe not iuſtly make payment, and delay them but one houre, you are no man of your word, nor doe you know what belongs to good dealing, nor are ſo honeſt as you ſhould bee. I did the like with thoſe that I had to doe withall. I did conſider (but fooliſhly I muſt confeſſe) with my ſelfe; What will it benefit mee to tell truth? What does it concerne mee, that it is the Vice of thoſe that are vile and baſe, and the repaſt and food of beaſts? What harme ſhall I receiue, if men will not giue credit vnto me, if I haue got the ſame already, although they apparantly ſee that I lye, and that ſuch is their paſsion, that they will not diſ-deceiue themſelues of my deceit? What honour haue I to loſe? How can I faile in my credit? I am well inough knowne, and the world is now come to that paſſe, that onely for this cauſe of my lying, they vphold, maintaine, fauour, and eſteeme me.

Lying, the food of beaſts.

Notable inſtructions for great Princes, & men of qualitie.

Lying, and Flatterie, is meat alone for gr[illegible] men, it is the onely diſh that pleaſeth

pleaſeth their palate, the onely muſicke that delighteth their eares. But you are no welcome man vnto them, if you come and tell them, that it is time for them to leaue off gaming, that they haue waſted and conſumed their eſtate, and that their Vaſſals and Tenants are growne poore and beggerly. That they ſhould not play the *Fanfarrones*, royſting and ſwaggering where e're they come: nor ſhew themſelues diſſolute, and looſe in their behauiour, either in the open ſtreets, or in the Church, which muſt needs giue occaſion of much both hurt and ſcandall. That they ſhould not bee ſuch lauiſh and prodigall ſpenders, as to ruine themſelues, and to breake their neckes through too much haſte, by taking Poſt-horſes, as it were to runne out of their eſtates. And ſeeing that they can finde in their hearts, and make no bones of it, to foole away ſuch a deale of money as they doe, and that ſo vainely, and ſo idly, that they vvould yet make a conſcience to pay their ſeruants their vvages, and not to let them goe totter'd and torne, and ready to ſtarue for hunger. That if they bee rich, and in fauour vvith their Prince, that they diſpence a part of theſe their good fortunes to the poore. That if they haue their Kings eare, and are inward vvith him, that they ſhould make benefit of this their priuacie, by procuring themſelues good and ſure friends; for there is no firmeneſſe in Fortune; nor no Princes fauour ſo fixed, but it may fall off. That at leaſt, on Feſtiuall dayes, they ſhould riſe betimes and get them to Church to heare Maſſe. And that they ſhould truely and ſincerely make confeſsion of their ſinnes, and not onely for faſhion ſake, to cumply with the Pariſh, being therein onely nominall, but not reall Chriſtians, hauing the name, but not the nature of true Chriſtians; for there are a kinde of men, that make a ſhow of hauing faith, and that obſerue the precepts of the Church, but for no other end, leaſt they ſhould bee puniſhed, if they ſhould doe otherwiſe. That they ſhould looke well into themſelues, and learne to know that they were but men.

Deaths ſentence what manner of thing it is?

And in caſe that they ſhould bee old and ſtrooken in yeeres, that they are now wreſtling with death, who is ready to trip vp their heeles, and throw them into the graue, which lyes ready open to receiue them; Their ſentence is already notified vnto them; and as they that are to be executed, take leaue of their friends, and haue thoſe Enſignes borne before them, which are prepared for that conflict; So muſt they at laſt take their farewell of all thoſe things, where-vnto they liuing bare moſt affection: As their taſte, their ſleepe, their ſeeing, their hearing, & the like; To which ſweet Sences ſentence of death is dayly, if not hourely notified, by the Reynes, the Kidneys, the Liuer, the leſſer Guts, and our Vrine: The ſtomake begins to languiſh, the ſtrength of it waxes weake, its naturall heat begins to faile; heere the eye-teeth drop away, there the gumm's fall on aking: all which are as a mouldring away of theſe our clods of earth, and that the timber of this our houſe is rotten, and the roofe ready to fall about our eares, and that there are no buttreſſes to vphold this tottering wall; from the foundation to the very top, it is wholly runne to decay, and the ruine thereof is at hand.

Neceſſary leſſons for yong Gallants.

Admoniſh a young man of theſe, and the like things; or ſome rich yong Gallant, who is as daring, as hee is indiſcreet, and ſo head-ſtrong, that hee will not bee ruled; repreſent, I ſay, vnto him, that hee doth not know his friends from his foes, that for ſpeaking thus, looking there, commending that, and peraduenture for but walking by, if not entring where hee ſhould not, hee will bee ſuddenly ſtab'd at one time or other, not hauing ſo much time as to receiue the bleſſed Sacraments, nor to call vpon God, to helpe him in this his extremitie; or to aduiſe him to conſider, that his bloud is corrupted, ill humours abound in him, that hee liues diſorderly,

as

as giuen to all exceſſe and ryot, that he vſeth little exerciſe, and that his often ſurfeitings will bring him to an Apoplexie, or ſome other dangerous diſeaſe, that will quickly make an end of him, or that the Lambe goes as ſoone to the Shambles as the ſheepe; and that he ſhould not flatter himſelfe, becauſe hee findes himſelfe ſtrong in his armes, ſound in his feet, luſty in his legges, able in his body, and free from all aches, either in his head, or thoſe his other parts, that therefore he is ſafe, is priuiledg'd from ſickneſſe, hath an eſtabliſhed health, and aſſurance of long life.

And here (me thinkes) I heare this young gallant ſay; Such poore Raſcals as thou art, muſt come to die, and ſuffer ſuch miſ-fortunes as theſe; For I am rich, ſtrong, valiant, diſcreet, and nobly deſcended. I haue a faire houſe to dwell in, a ſoft bed to lie in, I eate what I liſt, I want nothing that my heart can deſire, I liue at pleaſure, and doe what I will, with-out controlement; and where there are no troubles, nor no care-taking, there is no ſickeneſſe, there no doore open for old age to enter. Ah, poore ſilly foole that thou art! *Samſon*, *Dauid*, *Salomon*, and *Lazarus*, were more good, more diſcreet, more valiant, more gallant, and more rich then thou, and yet they dy'd, when their time was come.

The poore reaſons that the rich alledge againſt the poore.

There haue beene many millions of men from *Adams* time to thine, and yet there was not any one of them that liu'd for euer in this world. He then that ſhall tell them this Truth, or any thing elſe that may be for their good, they will take him to be a foole. Who then will aduenture to tell them their faults? Or who dare ſpeake their minde freely vnto them? Let (a) *Vargas* ſpeake to this point. He muſt be either deſperate or fooliſh, that ſhall preſume to tell Princes and great Perſons of theſe things; for if thou be a man of vnderſtanding, and haue any thing in thee worthy commendation, they will preſently call thee into the Court, and frame a bill againſt thee, executing that Statute vpon thee, of *Scandalum magnatum*. And if thou beeſt a *Buffone* and common Ieſter, they will ſend thee to the Porters Lodge, and there haue thee whipt. Therefore thou muſt neither ieſt with thoſe that are rich and mightie, nor yet be ſo plaine with them, as to tell them the truth. For, I am not bound to ſpeake the truth, where I know it will not bee accepted, and whence I am ſure I ſhall get great hatred, if not harme, for my good will. It ſhall be ſufficient for my vnderſtanding, and all ſuch as I am, to know that all things in this world paſſe away, and that we ſhall paſſe away likewiſe with them. I could be content to ſay this ouer and ouer a thouſand times together, and repeat no other leſſon; For, to vnderſtand this truth alone, is that which moſt importeth vs, and doth moſt neerely concerne vs. And why ſhould we promiſe that vnto our ſelues, which we can not accompliſh? Hee that holdes himſelfe to be the ſtrongeſt man, of the ſoundeſt conſtitution, of the beſt compoſed humours, and the pureſt mixed elements, this man, I ſay, (for all his well ordered frame of nature) hath no aſſurance of his long continuance, but is more apt to fall, then thoſe other houſes of Clay, which are leſſe ſubſtantially built. There is not any mans ſtrength, be it neuer ſo great, that can reſiſt but a puffe of ſickneſſe; the beſt of vs all are but dung-hills, and heaps of duſt, which a little blaſt of winde will ſcatter away, and lay vs leuell with the earth. Let no man flatter and deceiue himſelfe: let him not feigne that to himſelfe, which is nothing ſo: nor intertaine that, which his lying ſenſualitie ſhall dictate vnto him. For ſhe will ſpeake that vnto thee, which ſhe vtters to all the world beſides. Shee will tell thee; Thou art great and powerfull, and may'ſt therefore doe what thou liſt. That thou art a Gallant, and mayſt therefore goe vp and downe, and take thy pleaſure. Thou art faire and rich, and mayſt therefore be diſ-honeſt, and diſſolute. Thou art noble, and mayſt therefore lawfully ſcorne thy inferiours, and thinke none to be equall vnto thee. And if thou receiueſt an iniury, it is not for thine

None line for euer in this world.

(a) *There is a Spaniſh Prouerb that ſayes,* Aueriguelo Vargas. *Let* Vargas *approue it. Which is to be vnderſtood, when a buſineſſe is very intricate and hard to be decided. This Prouerbe grew firſt from the* Licenciado Franciſco de Vargas, *of the Colledge of* Santa Cruz *in* Valladolid, *a man of a ſtrong braine, and of a quicke diſpatch, whom King* Don Fernando *made choyſe of to be his Secretary. And becauſe hee did remit all his Memorials to his ſcanning, and to giue him an account of them, he would vſually ſay, when any made ſuit vnto him,* Aueriguelo Vargas. Couarru. *Verb.* Vargas.

Wee muſt neither ieſt with great men, nor tell them the truth. Wee are all of vs but weakelings. Wee ought not to flatter our ſelues.

honour to put it vp, but to reuenge it to the full. Thou art a Gouernour, and ſet in authoritie ouer others, and therefore mayſt gouerne according to thine owne will, and order buſineſſes for thine owne beſt aduantage, though it be to the hurt of others, let them maunder their worſt, or come what will come, thou need'ſt not to care. Thou art a Iudge, and mayſt therefore iudge in thy friends fauour, mayſt tread iuſtice vnder thy foot, and peruert the Lawes at thine owne pleaſure. Thou art fauoured by the King, and art able to ſhew fauour vnto others; thou mayſt therefore vſe this thy fauour, as thou ſhalt thinke fit, and ſhall ſute beſt with thine owne liking, & blow (a) ſmoake in the noſes of the poore, not regarding how thou doeſt offend, and diſtaſte them. For it ſtands not with thy reputation, thy Office, thy Dignitie, nor thy honour, that they ſhould aske thee that which thou oweſt them, nor ſpeake to thee for that his cloake, which thou haſt wrongfully taken from him.

Prouerb. (a) Dara vn humo à narizes. i. diſgu-ſtarle, y enojarle. Couarr. *Verbe* Humo. *None is ſo good as he thinkes himſelfe to be. Man is but duſt; and what kinde of duſt.*

But, in good faith (my Lords) I muſt be ſo bold to tell you, that be yee neuer ſo great, or be yee ſo great as yee imagine your ſelues to be, (though you can neuer be ſo great, as you conceit your ſelues to be) yet the very beſt of you, when you are at the beſt, are no better then a little duſt. Make your choyſe of which duſt yee will; be it earth, or aſhes; for there are no other ſorts of duſt. If of earth; let it put yee in minde, that your beginning was duſt, though tempred with a little water, giuing yee thereby to vnderſtand (if your greatneſſe make yee not like beaſts, that vnderſtand not) that you ſhould make your ſelues fruitfull for heauen, by entring into a due conſideration of your ſelues, and an acknowledgement of your owne vnworthineſſe. Yee know well enough, that the earth cannot, without water, yeeld any fruit; And if this earth of yours become drie through your vices, and that it bee not watred with the deaw of heauen, with holy inſpirations, and with good workes, that it may fructifie and bring forth fruit, by pardoning of iniuries, asking forgiueneſſe for thoſe wrongs which yee haue done to others, by paying thoſe debts that yee owe, and by ſhewing true repentance, yee ſhall be but as heapes of Aſhes, good for nothing, and caſt out vpon the dung-hill. And that in the end ſhall befall ye, which we ſee to happen vnto Aſhes, wherof that Sope is made, that ſerues to take out the ſoyles and ſpots that are in cloathes, and are afterwards as things of no vſe, throwne forth vpon ſome one filthy-ſtinking mixen, or other. Yee ſhall by your bad examples, ſo terrifie others, and make them ſo afraid of following the euill courſes, that they ſhall thereby be ſaued, and yee damned to the pit of hell, that euerlaſting burning coale-pit, whoſe fire ſhall neuer goe out. Theſe I tell yee, are truths, and now it is time to tell yee them. And if I told yee lyes in my youth, out of a kinde of pride and brauery that I tooke in them, now experience teaches me another leſſon, and riper yeeres haue brought me to the knowledge of thoſe many errours, which I then committed.

We muſt not deferre our amendment vpon hope of long life.

Nor let any man indanger himſelfe, for to thinke, that that may happen vnto him, which hath befalne me; to wit, Long-life; and relying thereupon, grow ſlacke and careleſſe of their amendment, hoping that they may doe that time enough hereafter, when they begin to waxe old; for a ſharpe Eaſterly winde ſhall come vpon thee on the ſudden, ere euer thou art aware of it, and nip this thy flower of youth, with the cold bitter froſt of death, and ſheere thee downe to the ground in this thy greene and flouriſhing ſtate, as graſſe is cut downe by the Sithe of the Mower, and thou ſhalt preſently wither, and be carried cleane away, neuer more to be ſeene. I was neuer ſure that I ſhould come to liue thus long, nor can any man elſe warrant his owne life. For we are all of vs but as Birds that flye abroad in the fields ſinging and ſporting, while in the meane time the Eagle comes, and ſeazeth vpon one of them, which ſeemeth beſt vnto him. Or elſe comes the Owner of thoſe grounds, vſing a thouſand tricks and deuices to take them. None of vs know

the

the set houre of our death, but all of vs know this, that we must goe one after another. I likewise, haue followed mine owne idle humour, not thinking vpon any settled course in this world; but because the end which I intend, is to build vp a perfect man, still as I meet with stones fit for this building, I goe setting of them vp; these occasions, are my Center, and by them, as by so many lines, I come thereunto. But here I will lay downe this load of stones, and when time shall serue, I will returne againe with another, and it shall not be long e're I gather more, and bring them in place.

The Authors intention.

Returning therefore to our present purpose; I say, that I was wholly compacted of lyes, as I had euer beene. With some I would be a Martyr, with other some a Confessor. For all things are not to be communicated to all. And therefore I would neuer truly impart my troubles to any, nor punctually publish them; but when I was forced to manifest the same, I would tell one man one tale, and another, another; and no man had it without it's comment. And because a Lyer (they say) had need of a good memorie; I, that had none of the best, to day I would recount the case one way, and to morrow another, and so many times, so many different wayes did I varie from that which I first deliuered: So that, bearing my selfe in this manner, I gaue occasion to those that knew me to be a Lyer, not to giue credit so much to me, as to the generall voyce and report that went abroad. For they did all of them truly and really agree vpon the thing it selfe; they did iumpe in the matter, but not in the manner. For euery one did either take away, or adde thereunto, as he thought best; and as thou thy selfe perhaps art wont now and then to doe.

Guzman, a notable lyer.

A lyer had need of a good memory.

Now, for some few dayes, as a noueltie that had beene newly set abroach, there was no other thing talkt of in all *Rome*. My mis-fortune was the theame of their Discourse, and my being be-myr'd, the salt that seasoned their conuersation. It came likewise to my Masters eare, but he being wise, gaue it the hearing, but spake not a word of it. For a Master is not alwaies bound to take notice of all that is done; for then he should be ty'de (by the Law of goodnesse, and out of the nobleness of his nature) to remedie what is amisse. Hee did dissemble it all that he could; but not so cunningly, but that by some inter-smilings, and casting of his eyes, he made it knowne. He plough'd with me, and therefore knew what furrow I had turned vp. And as it was fit for him to dissemble it, so was it for me to denie it. We were silent on all sides, but not very long, for the Deuils clouen foot at last brake out at his shooes. There was a certaine friend of his, and consequently my enemy, who taking him one day all alone, told him, how much it imported both his qualitie and credit, to rid himselfe of me, in regard of the publike and open language, which I vsed of those things which his Lordship had in-trusted me withall, and that euery one might serue what he would from me, and draw all those secrets from me, which he had committed to my bosome. That Gentlemen of his place and profession should proceed according to that, which represented it selfe vnto them, and that his Lordship doing the contrary, it would proue very preiudiciall to his owne reputation, and his masters seruice. This discourse is mine owne; and though happely these formall words were not deliuered iust in the same phrase, as I haue now deliuered vnto you; yet I verily beleeue, they were like vnto these, if not more effectuall then what I haue here set downe. But howsoeuer they were the same, or not the same, I am sure that none of them all could tell him more, then he himselfe already knew, nor aduise him better then he was able to aduise himselfe. And I make no question, that he was not well pleased with that which they said vnto him. But he spake not one word thereof vnto me at that time, nor made any shew of alteration, or carryed any other kinde of countenance towards me, then he was wont to doe. Only, because Lent was now newly come in, hee made

A Master is not bound to take notice of euery flim-flam tale that is told him.

An Embassadours must haue a care as well of his Masters, as his owne reputation.

vſe of that occaſion, to liue a little more retyred, and not to talke of prophane and idle matters, and particularly, not of women.

Thus did things runne along. But in regard that I was become the common Table-talke of all the Towne, thoſe that waited on my Lord in his Chamber, his Pages, and other his ordinarie ſeruants, tooke a little more libertie and licence of language vnto them, then did well beſeeme them. For, to make themſelues merry, and to intertaine the time, what betweene ieſt and earneſt, they did ſo nip mee with their witty ieſts, and pay mee home with their Satyricall laſhes, that your Mariners doe not more ſtraine their tacklings in a tempeſt, then they did wreſt and wring the very bowels within mee. So that now at laſt, neither at home, nor abroad, had I any place, wherein I might reſt ſecure; nor any wall, where-againſt to leane, and from whence ſome Eccho did not ſound, that did voice forth the ſinnes that I had done.

How a wiſe man may be made to turne Foole, or mad-man.

I had now ſo loſt all patience, and was ſo in a manner beſides my ſelfe, that one day as I paſt along the ſtreet, I was almoſt inforced to haue committed many fooleries. He ſaid well, who being ask't, in how long a time, a wiſe man might turne foole? Anſwered; That is according as the boyes in the ſtreet ſhall flocke about him, abuſe him, and hoote at him. This was it that brought the water vp aboue my chinne, and was ready to drowne me; this was it that made me to for-ſweare all ſufferance, and to renegue my wonted patience.

Guzman *perſecuted by boyes and children.*

Many little children, as well as the greater lubbers, did perſecute mee, whereſoeuer I went, laughing and ſcoffing at mee, with ſtrange out-cryes, and loud ſhowtings, making a moſt hideous noiſe. I tooke vp ſtones, and would haue throwne at them; but a yong man, of mine owne ſtature, qualitie and yeeres, well-behaued, but ſome-what hot and cholericke, came running in vpon mee, and held my arme ſo faſt, that I was not able to moue a finger to doe them any hurt; yet did hee deale ſo honeſtly with mee, as to take part with mee againſt them all, and to defend mee againſt this their rage and fury, drawing in two or three other of his friends, that came along in his Company, making reſiſtance both in deeds, and in words, againſt thoſe Hobber-de-hoyes, which like ſo many Hob-gobblins, or little Diuels, did haunt me vp and downe from ſtreet to ſtreet, and from houſe to houſe. And hauing now quieted and laid theſe vnruly ſprites, he tooke mee by the hand, bringing me himſelfe alone home to my lodging, leauing his Companions behinde to keepe backe the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, I would faine haue had him to ſtay with mee, that I might haue faſtned ſome kindneſſe vpon him, and haue done him all the courteſie and honour the houſe could afford: But could by no meanes get him to accept thereof.

Then did I intreat him, that he would tell mee his name, as alſo vvhere was his lodging, that I might come to kiſſe his hands, and giue him thankes for the vn-deſerued kindneſſe I had receiued from him; but hee would neither acquaint mee with the one, nor the other; promiſing to returne ſome other time to viſit me. Onely he told me, that he did beare particular affection as well to my perſon, as my Country; for that I was a *Spaniard*, and that hee was as ſenſible of this diſgrace of mine, as if it were his owne. And with this we tooke leaue each of other. I came home with my colour ſo changed, my eyes ſo inflamed, and my vnderſtanding ſo confounded, that (not conſidering well what I did) comming iuſt in the nick, when dinner vvas a ſeruing vp, I would needs goe vp with the reſt of the Pages to wait at his Lordſhips table. But when I was come into the dining roome, and found what Gentlemen were there attending on his Excellencie, I then ſaw my ſimplicitie, and ſaw how egregiouſly I had playd the foole; and would faine

Guzmans *indiſcretion.*

haue

haue holpe my ſelfe, by getting forth from amongſt them: but it was too late; for my Maſter had already perceiued by my countenance what I ayled, and (without caſting my water) that all was not well with me; and that I was inwardly much troubled. Wherevpon he demanded of mee, what was the cauſe of this my perturbation? I beeing taken thus on a ſudden, hauing no leiſure to fall then a coyning, and hauing neuer a new lye in ſtore, went plainely to worke, and told him all the whole truth of the buſineſſe, and euery particular paſſage thereof; which was all out, before I was aware, telling that, which I was not willing to vtter. And this was the firſt Wine, that came out of my Tauerne without water, and the firſt truth that euer I told in my life. My Maſter ſaid nothing to it: but thoſe that waited at the boord, not beeing able to forbeare laughing, one claps mee the couer of the Cup that he held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that he held betweene his Thumbs, a third the Napkin where-with hee ſeru'd as Seruer, and thoſe that were empty-handed, laying one hand on their face, and with the other ſtopping their mouth; their hearts being ready to burſt in their bellies, hy'de them (for feare of blurting in my Lords face) as faſt out of the roome, as their legges would carry them. And they paſt ſo farre therein beyond the bounds of modeſtie; that his Excellency was ſome-what mooued thereat, and call'd out aloud vnto them to be quiet, rebuking them with ſharper words then euer heretofore he was wont to doe, reprehending them for this their ouer-boldneſſe in his preſence. Where-with I was ſo aſhamed, and ſo quite altered from that I was before, as if I had been ſenſible of the tearmes of honour, or had ſome ſignes thereof ſtill remaining in me.

The firſt truth, that euer Guzman *told.*

O how many things doth Rigour correct, which Loue is not able to effect! O, how much doth it import oftentimes, for to take a good fall, that a man may the better learne to looke to his feet hereafter, and to know how to walke more ſteddily, and more ſurely! Then did I take notice of mine owne deformitie, in that glaſſe did I ſee euery ſpot that I had about me; and was ſo quite daſht out of countenance, and ſo confounded in my ſelfe, that for all the Maſters, and women that were in the world, I would neuer more take vpon mee to treat of their Loue-matters, nor be a Broker in that kinde for the greateſt Prince in Chriſtendome. O, what a braue reſolution was this, if it would haue held!

It is good ſometimes to fall into an errour, that man may learne thereby to take better heed hereafter.

The ſtorme being now laid, my Maſter remained very ſad, leaning his cheeke on his hand, and his elbow on the boord, holding his Pick-tooth in his mouth betweene his teeth, beeing much diſcontented, that theſe things of mine ſhould runne on in that manner, that he muſt be forced to doe that, which he neuer thought to haue done; how-beit it was requiſite for him ſo to doe, for the auoiding of a greater miſchiefe; ſeeing himſelfe now ſo farre ingaged, that hee ſhould giue ſome notable touch to his Reputation, if hee ſhould declare himſelfe in my defence; eſpecially, conſidering that mens ſeruants are the reall and true marke of what goodneſſe and fineneſſe is their Maſters cloth. He will'd me to get me downe to dinner; And from that time forward, neither I, nor any of my fellowes did for many dayes together, ſee his countenance ſo cheerefull, nor finde his tongue ſo affable, as heretofore it was wont to be.

Now I durſt not goe (as before) out of doores, but by night. So that all day long I kept my ſelfe cloſe in my Chamber, ſpending my time, either in reading good bookes, or playing vpon ſome Inſtrument, or talking vvith my friends. Inſomuch, that this retiring of my ſelfe, wrought in thoſe of the houſe a new reſpect; and in thoſe abroad, ſilence; and in my ſelfe, another courſe of life, differing from that which I led before.

Now euery mans tongue was ſtill, and now by abſenting my ſelfe from their it

their ſight, all theſe my buſineſſes were forgotten, as if they had neuer beene. The Yong man came often to viſit mee, that had taken my part, when I was ſo vilely mockt and abuſ'd by the Boyes. He made mee many offers of his Purſe and his Perſon; hee acquainted mee with his Country, his Name, and the cauſe of his comming to *Rome*, which was to get a Diſpenſation of his Holineſſe; and that hee had ſpent therein a great deale of money and time, and yet was as farre from effecting his buſineſſe; as the firſt houre that hee ſet foot in that Citie. I held my ſelfe bound to doe him all the good offices that I could to further this his pretenſion, giuing credit to all that he told mee. And becauſe I did deſire, that ſome faire occaſion might bee offered, whereby I might repay part of that debt, wherein I ſtood bound vnto him; I intreated him, that hee would acquaint mee with his buſineſſe, and I would petition my Lord Embaſſador in his behalfe, and negociate it with all the ſpeed I could. Hee returned mee many thankes for this my kinde offer, and told mee that hee had now hit into the right path, wherein hee was to walke, and that he had now very good and aſſured hopes to bring his purpoſe to paſſe. But in caſe this courſe ſhould faile him, whereinto hee had now put himſelfe, hee would then intertaine that courteſie whereof I had made him ſo willing a tender. And thus wee paſt the time a while in complement, giuing and taking by turnes ſome Ceremonies of Court-ſhip, till at laſt he askt mee, whether I vvould take the paines to walke along with him to the Palace? I excuſed my ſelfe vnto him, and told him the cauſe why I had retyred my ſelfe, and how vvell it ſped with mee; for by my not going abroad, mine owne minde was now quieted, and the noiſe and hurry of the Towne very well allayd.

This yong fellow was as very a Wagge as my ſelfe, much of my age, and his Beard (like mine) newly budding forth; he preſently caught hold of theſe words, as thoſe, which he moſt deſired to heare to come from me; and when I had herein ſatisfied his longing, he ſaid thus vnto me:

Señor Guzman, you haue carried your ſelfe with that diſcretion, as is proper vnto you, and may truely bee termed your owne. And I hold this for as good and ſure a remedie, as I find it difficult for you to put it in practiſe, and to make continuall vſe of it; For ſometimes ſuch neceſſarie occaſions repreſent themſelues vnto vs, that men are inforced, whether they will or no, to breake theſe their firme purpoſes, and religious reſolutions. If I, Sir, were in your caſe, rather then I would bee thus mewed vp, and for ſo long a time, I would weare out this diſgrace by trauelling abroad, rounding all *Italy*, before I would returne. In which your trauell, you ſhall not onely take ſingular content, but you ſhall likewiſe obtaine your intended end, and with more aduantage, then you can poſsibly pretend, by this your priuate ſhutting vp of your ſelfe in your Lords houſe. For *Time* and *Abſence*, weare out all things, and are the beſt Phyſicians that can bee found for ſuch kinde of diſeaſes as theſe.

Trauell yeeldeth much delight.

He went likewiſe leading me along with the relation of diuers and ſundry curioſities, preſenting vnto mee the great excellencies of *Florence*, the beauty of *Genoa*, and the incomparable gouernment of *Venice*, and other things of great delight, which did ſo diſpoſe mee to vndergoe this courſe, which (after that hee had taken his leaue of mee) wrought ſo vpon mee all that night, that I could not take any reſt, nor thinke vpon any other thing. Me thought, that I had already pluckt on my Bootes, and put on my Spurres, and that I vvas now onward on my way. Wherevpon I got mee vp as ſoone as it was day, and brought my Lord his cloathes; to whom, while hee was making him ready, I gaue an account of this my reſolution. Hee liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an

honeſt courſe, that it would make much for my good, and ſtop all thoſe mouthes, that were now ſo clamorous againſt me. He then told me, what others had ſaid of mee; and that, which hee ſate muſing on at boord, when he ſhew'd himſelfe ſo ſad, how he was then beating his braines about my good, & how much he did deſire to ſee me well accommodated, for the great affection that he bare vnto me, and that he had ſet his wits aworke for me; but ſeeing that mine owne inuention had hit ſo well; he told me, that if I had a minde to goe into *France*, I ſhould haue Letters of recommendation to his friends there in my fauour; or if that I ſhould make any other choyſe to my better liking, he would not be wanting vnto me, but deale well and worthily with me, as one that had done him true and faithfull ſeruice.

A louing Maſter, what manner of man he is.

I had a great deſire to haue gone into *France*, for the great ſtate and Maieſtie that I had often heard of that Kingdome, but much more of that their noble and renowned King; But things were not then in that caſe that I could conueniently execute my longing. I kiſt his hands, and thank't his Excellencie for theſe his fauours towards me; and told him, that (if it might ſtand with his good leaue and liking) I was very deſirous to trauell firſt thorow all *Italy*, and eſpecially ſee *Florence*, whereof I had heard ſuch large commendations; and from thence goe to *Siena*, where *Pompeyo* did then reſide, one that was my eſpeciall good friend, and well knowne to his Lordſhip, for we did ordinarily conuerſe together by our Letters, though we had neuer ſeene one another. Which correſpondence had knit a ſtrict knot of friendſhip betweene vs.

My Maſter was very glad of this motion; and from that day forward, began to ſet things in order for my iourney. Purpoſing with my ſelfe to make hereafter a new Booke, waſhing away by my vertues, thoſe ſpots, which Vice had ſtained me with all.

CHAPTER VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *diſcourſes of Deceit. He departs from* Rome. *Hee deſires to ſee* Siena, *where certaine theeues meet with his Trunkes, which he had ſent away before, and robbe him of all that he had.*

THat moſt famous Philoſopher *Seneca* treating of *Deceit*, (whereof we haue ſaid ſomewhat already in the third Chapter of this booke, though all that ſhall be ſpoken thereof, will be too little) in one of his Epiſtles ſaith; That there is a deceitfull kinde of promiſe, which is made to the Fowles of the ayre, the Beaſtes of the field, the Fiſhes in the waters, and men themſelues vpon earth. *Deceit* comes vnto vs in that ſubmiſsiue kinde of manner, in ſo lowly, and ſo humble a faſhion, that they that doe not know her, may be condemned of ingratitude and inciuilitie, if they doe not ſet wide-open the gates of their ſoule, and runne out to receiue her with open both armes and heart. And for that the arte thereof, which is now a dayes profeſſed, the ſtudies, the watchings, and the diligences, which are vſed therein, are all done with a double minde, and ſet themſelues a-worke with a falſe intent; by how much the more the thing that is treated of, is in it's nature of that qualitie, that we may therein eaſily commit many errours, that may turne much to our preiudice, by ſo much the more ſecret ſubtilties, crafty

Seneca's *ſaying, touching deceit.*

The nature of deceit.

craftie Counter-minings, cunning Stratagems, ſtrong Artillerie, and warlike munition, ſhe fortifies her ſelfe, furniſhing her ſelfe with all neceſſarie prouiſion, when ſhe meanes to come into the field. And therefore wee need not ſo much to wonder, that we are now and then, but that we are not alwayes deceiued. And the caſe ſtanding ſo, I hold it a leſſe euill, to be deceiued by others, then to be the Authors of ſo ſacrilegious a ſinne.

It is better to bee deceiued, then to deceiue.

Amongſt other things which King *Don Alonſo* would (who was ſurnamed the Wiſe) in-diſcreetly reforme in nature, this was one amongſt the reſt; that he did blame her, that ſhe had not made a Window in mans breſt; that we might ſee that, which he was plotting in his heart, and whether his manner of proceeding were faire and ſincere, or whether his words were feigned, or whether (like *Ianus*) he had two faces vnder one hood? And the cauſe of all this, is Neceſsitie; for if a man finde himſelfe laden with obligations, and knowes not how to eaſe himſelfe of them, he goes about to ſeeke all the helpes and meanes he can, to lighten him-ſelfe of this load, and to come off as handſomely as he can. Neceſsitie teacheth vs the way to all this, and makes the hardeſt and moſt vntrodden paths, to appeare euen, and eaſie to be hit. It will breake thorow the thickeſt Briers, and clamber vp the rougheſt and ſteepeſt Rocks. It is in its owne nature (as is before mentioned in our firſt chapter) full of daringneſſe, and of Lying. And for this cauſe, euen your ſimpleſt and moſt innocent Birds haue their tricks and their ſubtilties. The Doue flies with a ſtrong and ſwift wing, ſeeking food for her tender young ones, whileſt another of her owne kinde, from the higheſt top of ſome one Oake or other, calsher, and inuites her, that ſhe will intertaine her ſelfe there awhile to eaſe and refreſh her ſelfe, and only to the end, that the cunning Fowler may come the more conueniently to make his ſhoot, and kill her. The poore harmeleſſe Nightingale, in a wilde and careleſſe faſhion, goes thorow the Woods ſweetly thrilling forth her loue-ſicke complaints, when lo, another Bird of the ſame feather, that is clapt into a Cage, awaking new iealouſies, deceiues her with a falſe call, and brings her into the Net, by meanes whereof, ſhee becomes a perpetuall priſoner during her life.

Neceſſitie makes men bold.

Birds and Beaſts ſeeke to deceiue.

Auianus the Philoſopher tels vs in one of his Fables, that euen your Aſſes haue alſo a minde to deceiue, and he maketh mention of one, that had put on a Lyons skinne, to make all the reſt of the beaſts of the Forreſt afraid; who being ſought after by his Maſter, when he ſaw him in that kinde of cloathing, not being able therewith to hide his huge long eares, he preſently knew this his Aſſe, and ſoundly baſting his backe and ſides with a good cudgell, and ſtripping him of his counterfeit skinne, he remained as very an Aſſe as hee was before.

The tale of an Aſſe, that ſought to deceiue.

Of all creatures liuing, there is ſcarce any one, but will, for the effecting of his purpoſe, vſe ſome deceit againſt him, who is careleſſe thereof, and thinkes not on it; As is expreſſed in that Impreſſe, of a Snake that lay aſleepe, and a Spider, that came ſecretly downe for to nip him by the head, and ſtrike his poyſon into him, and ſo worke his death; whoſe Motto ſpeakes thus: *No ay prudençia, que reſiſta al engaño.* No wiſdome can withſtand deceit. It is folly for any man to thinke, that a wiſe man can fore-ſee, and preuent thoſe deceits, which like ſo many Traps and Gins, are laid in his way. I was not ſo circumſpect, as I ſhould haue beene, I ſuſpected no trecherie, I receiued good deeds, I heard good words, I ſaw a man in an honeſt and faſhionable habit, who ſought to giue me good counſell, and ſeemed to fauour me, who had put his life in danger, to ſaue mine, who viſited me (as I thought) without any hope of intereſt, or particular profit to himſelfe, not being able to faſten vpon him (ſo vnwilling did he euer ſeeme to receiue any courteſie from me) ſo much as a Cup of cold water. He told me, that he was my Country-man, an *Andaluzian*, borne in the Citie of *Seuill*, a principall Gentleman of the

All vſe deceit.

An Impreſſe of the Snake, and the Spider.

The qualities of a cunning theefe.

houſe

houſe of the *Sayauedras*, and one of the nobleſt, the ancienteſt, and beſt qualified of all that Familie; and who, from one of ſuch a qualitie, would haue ſuſpected ſuch deceit? But all were lyes that he told me; for he was of *Valençia*, whoſe name, for ſome iuſt cauſes I conceale; but he ſpake the Language of *Caſtile* excellent well, and had the true tone thereof, that it was not poſsible to diſcerne him to be other. Hee was a handſome well-fauoured young man, well ſpoken, of a faire behauiour, and a fine Companion in his conuerſation; Who would haue once ſuſpected, that he ſhould haue prou'd ſuch a Conny-catching Raſcall, and that with ſuch ceremonious and feigned friendſhip, he ſhould thus deceiue me? But all this cuning carriage of his, was but like a Peacocks dreſsing, making this ſo faire a ſhow, that therby he might the better deceiue me, & that he might haue the freer acceſſe into my Lords houſe, and into my Chamber, to filch from thence whatſoeuer he could handſomely finger. I had no miſtruſt of him in the world, but rather held him ſo honeſt a man, that I durſt haue pawn'd my life for his truth.

Sayauedra, *a notable theefe.*

He came the other day to viſit me, and finding that I had altred my habit, and put my ſelfe into another kinde of faſhion of cloathes, differing from my wonted weare, he ſtartled and ſtood afterwards as one amazed, not knowing what he might thinke of it, or what might be the cauſe of this change. At laſt he askt me the reaſon of this ſudden alteration? I told him, that I had taken his counſell, and that I was reſolued to goe to *Siena*, where I ſhould meet with *Pompeyo*, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to paſſe for *Florence*, and ſo afterwards to viſit all *Italy*.

Sayauedra *viſits* Guzman, *only that he might rob him of that he had.*

When he heard me ſay ſo, he began to take freſh breath, and ſeemed to be very glad thereof, much commending this my reſolution, and altring withall his owne determination: for if his deſigne vntill then, were only to ſeeke out ſome fit occaſion to ſteale thence an odde ſute of cloathes, ſome trifling Iewels, or ſome odde pieces of Gold, not worth the talking of; hauing now heard this newes of my ſudden departure, no leſſe would now content him, then my whole ſtore. Hee was very diligent in obſeruing how I did make vp my Trunkes, putting his helping hand thereunto. He marked where I had laid a ſet of Gold Buttons, a Chaine, and other Iewels that I had; and aboue three hundred Spaniſh Piſtolets that I carryed along with me. For my Lord Embaſſadours houſe, being I did not now vſe to play, but to hoord vp what I got, yeelded me, in the ſpace of ſome foure yeeres that I ſeru'd him, good ſtore of money, what in gifts; what for good lucks ſake, Gameſters beſtowd vpon me, when they had a good hand; what by Cardes, which I was euer ready to furniſh them withall, and what with other Preſents, that now and then came vnlook't for vnto me.

When I had lockt, and maled vp my Trunkes, I laid the Keyes vpon my Beds-head, whereon *Sayauedra* had ſet his heart; for then did he deſire nothing more, then to meet with ſome fit occaſion, how he might come to the fingring of them, and finde meanes to falſifie them. And it fell out iuſt, (*a*) as hee would haue it. For, as hee and I were talking of my iourney, and telling him that I purpoſed to ſend away my Trunkes before, and that I would ſtay ſome ſixe or ſeuen dayes in *Rome*, to take leaue of my friends, by which time they would be at *Siena*, where I ſhould finde them ready for mee, when I came thither; in that very inſtant there came one of my Lords ſeruants vnto mee, and told me, that there were ſome beneath did inquire for me, and did much deſire to ſpeake with me. And becauſe my Chamber was out of order, vnſwept, and not fit, by reaſon it was ſo foule, to receiue any viſit, I went downe to ſee who they were.

(*a*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, A que quieres boca, *That is*, Darle todo lo que quiere, y quanto pidierè. Couart, *Verbe* Boca.

In the *Interim*, *Sayauedra* had opportunitie to take the print of all my keyes in certaine pieces of ſome Waxe Candles ends that lay about the Chamber, if hee had not purpoſely brought ſome along with him in his pocket.

Sayauedras *craft in coozening* Guzman.

pocket. Thoſe that ſought for mee, were certaine Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came vp, I deliuered it vnto them, and they carried it away.

This buſineſſe diſpatcht, my friend and I continued talking together: and becauſe hee did not offer to goe away, I thought hee did it out of courteſie, and the friendſhip that was betweene vs, and that it was out of his loue to keepe mee company, for that little while that I was to ſtay. Whereas indeed he onely ſtayd in Towne, till theſe counterfetted keyes were faſhioned by the Smithes hand, and to make me to breake my ſleepes, as by and by I ſhall tell you.

Hee continued his Viſits with mee for three or foure dayes together: and when hee thought hee had made all cock-ſure, and that the Bird could not now eſcape his hand; hee came one euening vnto my Chamber, where hee had not ſate long, but that his face changed colour, and beganne to put on that feigned hiew, which hee was willing to giue it, hanging his head in his boſome, making ſhow as if hee had beene taken with a great paine in his head, an extreme Ach in his ſhoulders, a ſtrange kinde of ſowreneſſe or bitterneſſe of his mouth and palate, and aboue all, with a wonderfull heauineſſe in his eyes, that hee was ſcarce able to hold them vp. Hee ſeemed to bee as it were in a Lethargie, or the like drowzie diſeaſe; complaining, that hee was ſcarce able to ſtand vpon his legges, deſiring mee that I would giue him leaue to goe home to his lodging. I vvas very ſorry, and held it as a great vnhappineſſe, that my Chamber was not fitted for to lodge him, and to giue him that friendly intertainment, as my heart deſired: Intreating him, (when I ſaw hee would needs bee gone) that hee would acquaint mee with his lodging, that I might come and viſit him, and ſend him ſome phyſicall curioſities, fit for ſicke folkes, to reliſh his taſte, and comfort his ſtomake, or that I might ſerue him in any thing elſe, wherein I might bee vſe-full vnto him. Hee told mee, that hee lodged in the houſe of a certaine Gentle-woman, that liu'd very ſecret and priuate; but in caſe this his ſickneſſe ſhould not ſuddenly leaue him, or that he ſhould chance to grow worſe and worſe, that then hee would aduiſe mee thereof, that I might come and viſit him. And ſo taking his leaue of mee, that very day hee tooke Poſt, and rode towards *Siena*, where hee found his Companions, that went along with the Muleters, that they might ſee where, and to whom theſe Trunkes were conſigned.

Sayauedra *rides Poſt to* Syena, *and finely robs* Guzman *of his Trunkes.*

When hee was come to *Siena*, the people ſeeing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by Poſt, tooke him to bee ſome principall *Spaniard*. Hee alighted at the chiefeſt Inne that was in all the Citie, where preſently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his comming, and giuing it out that they were his ſeruants, they waited diligently vpon him.

That very day, as ſoone as hee was arriued, he ſent one of them to *Pompeyo*, to giue him to vnderſtand, that hee was newly come to Towne. And when my friend had receiued this meſſage, and knew that I was in the Towne, hee was ſo ouer-ioyed, that going to put on his Cloake, it vvas a good while, ere hee could finde the vvay to vnfold it, and to ſet it right vpon his ſhoulders. And hee himſelfe afterwards told mee, that hee firſt threw it one way, and then another; one while with the wrong ſide outward, another with the cape doubled in, and out of order, and in the end, when he could not hit the right, through his too much ioy, hee careleſſely flung it onely vpon one ſhoulder, and in this vnmannerly kinde of manner, he came from home in all haſte, ſtumbling and tripping in the ſtreets, and ſome-times ready to fall vpon his noſe, through his too much haſte, and the longing deſire that he had to ſee me.

Being

Being come to the Inne, where *Sayauedra* had put on my perſon, hee tooke it very vnkindely, complaining much, that I ſhould make him ſuch a ſtranger, and deale ſo vnfriendly with him, as not to alight at his houſe, which I might command as freely as mine owne. Which *Sayauedra* hauing excuſed as vvell as hee could; they afterwards fell into diſcourſe, talking of his iourney, and ſome other things of *Rome*, vntill it was night.

At which time *Pompeyo*, for the preſent, taking his leaue of him, that hee might leaue him to his reſt: *Sayauedra* gaue (in his preſence) the key of one of his Trunkes, to one of his ſeruants, ſaying vnto him vvithall; Doe you heare, Sirrha? Goe you along with *Señor Pompeyo*, and take mee out ſuch a ſute, which you ſhall finde in ſuch a part, for I will put on that to morrow.

They went away together, and his ſeruant punctually performed that, vvhich his Maſter had commanded him; vn-cording, in the preſence of *Pompeyo*, the very ſelfe-ſame Trunke, where-vnto hee was directed, and taking forth the fore-ſaid ſute of cloathes, hee lockes mee the Trunke, and putting vp the key in his pocket, hee comes his way. That night *Pompeyo* ſent him a very good ſupper, a neat collation of Comfits, and ſweet meates, and admirable rich Wines: Wherewith when *Sayauedra* and his fellowes had ſupt, and had eate and drunke their fill, they got them to bed, where they ſo ſoundly ſlept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning *Pompeyo* came ſome-what early to viſit him; but his ſeruants intreated him to hold their Maſter excuſed; for he had not taken any reſt all that night, and was now newly falne aſleepe. Hee told them, he was very ſorry hee had ſo ill a night of it; hee would not therefore now trouble him, but would goe his way and come againe anon. But they would by no meanes giue way to that, telling him, that their Maſter would bee very angry with them, when hee ſhould know that hee had beene there, and that none of them had either ſo much wit, or manners to tell him of it. Where-vpon, they went preſently vp into his Chamber, and ſignified vnto him, that *Señor Pompeyo* was come to ſee him. Hee was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to ſet ready a Chaire for him, ſent down another to intteat him to come vp.

Pompeyo, as ſoone as hee came in, asked him how hee did, and vvhat was the cauſe of his laſt nights indiſpoſition? He told him, that for vvant of vſe, hee was ſo weary with riding Poſt, that hee found himſelfe ſome-what diſtempered, his body being ouer-heated, and that hee had a purpoſe to be let bloud.

Pompeyo was very earneſt with him, that hee would change his lodging, and take his houſe for his Inne. *Sayauedra* excuſed himſelfe, telling him, that his ſeruants were vnruly, and giuen to diſorder, and that hee was reſolued to put them away, and to take new within theſe eight or nine dayes, and that then he would promiſe him to receiue this courteſie at his hands, which he had ſo kindly offered vnto him: Intreating him in the meane while, that he would doe him the kindneſſe, as to ſend his Trunkes by one of his owne ſeruants, becauſe hee had no great truſt in any of his owne; and fearing, that giuing them the Keyes to fetch ſuch things as hee needed, they might put ſome tricke vpon him.

Pompeyo liked well of it, and thought that hee did therein very wiſely and diſcreetly, onely hee ſeemed not to bee ſo well pleaſed, that he ſhould treat of taking Phyſicke in an Inne. But reſting contented with the promiſe that hee had made him, hee performed what hee deſired, and vvas no ſooner come to his lodging, but hee laded certaine Porters with his Trunkes, and ſending one of his ſeruants along with them, hee ſaw them ſafely

safely deliuered to *Sayauedra*. Hee sent him that day a very dainty dinner; and those two friends hauing taken leaue of each other for that night, that they might goe to bed in a good houre, *Sayauedra* and his Companions conuayed secretly into another house that which they had brought thither, and taking Post, departed presently for *Florence*; whither, when they were come, they diuided the spoile amongst them.

Sayauedra *and his companions Post away to* Florence, *where they diuide the Spoile.*

These copartners with *Sayauedra*, were their crafts-Masters, subtill fellowes, and stout Rogues; and the principall plotter and contriuer of all these pilfring proiects, was a *Bolonian* borne, hee was a great Scholler, and a very learned Doctor in this kinde of Art; his name was *Alexandro Bentiuoglio*, the sonne of a Doctor in that Vniuersitie, who was a rich man, and a great proiector, but of no extraordinarie Discourse, but one that did build Castles in the ayre, and frame in his imagination mighty matters, and things of great intertainment.

This man had two sonnes, in condition quite opposite, and contrarie one to the other. The elder was called *Vicencio*, an ignorant yong fellow, a silly Asse, the laughter of the people, with whom your Noblemen and Gentlemen made sport; he would bolt you out the famousest fooleries that could bee deuised: One while, hee vvould boast his Nobilitie, another while his Valour; sometimes hee would take vpon him to be a great Musician, and then falling off from that, hee would bragge of his Horsemanship, and his Poetry; and aboue all, hee would professe himselfe to bee the onely *Enamorado*, and perfectest Loue-proficient in all the Country. So that of him, it might bee said, *Dexalas (a) penen.* Suffer such to dye in their folly.

(a) Dexalas penen, *is some phrase tending to that purpose, as I turne it; or some catch of a Song. I would be glad to bee better informed.*

The other was this *Alexander*, a notable Thiefe, nimble finger'd, and of a strong and able body. Who, though hee were well borne, yet was he ill bred, and for want of good education, became an excellent Vagabond, and a notorious Rogue, by keeping of euill company. This mans Companions, were other such like ruffianly fellowes as himselfe. For like will to like; and all sorts of things haue recourse to their proper center.

Ill company hurtfull.

Now, because hee was their Ring-leader, and the onely principall man amongst them, and that did all in all, hee made *Sayauedra* content himselfe with a little, giuing him some, but the worser sort of my cloathes. And thinking that he could not remaine there in safety, he got him into the *Popes* territories, where his father was *Alcalde*. So that he posted to *Bologna*, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Iewels, and the Pistolets, retiring himselfe home to his fathers house. And the rest of his fellowes, that shared with him, fled to *Trent*, as they afterwards told mee in *Bologna*, and there they dispersed themselues.

When *Pompeyo* returned to visit mee, not finding my *Statua* there, nor any of his fellowes, hee askt mine Host of the house what was become of them? He told him, that the night before, they went away from thence with their Trunkes, but whether they knew not. Hee tooke this for an ill signe; and suspecting what this might chance to proue in the end, vsed great and extraordinarie diligences in the search of them; and hauing notice that they rode Post by the way of *Florence*, hee sent Hue and Cry after them, with a warrant to apprehend them. But leauing them to this their businesse: let mee returne now vnto my selfe, and God grant, that in the meane while, they may haue the good lucke to meet with these Theeues, and recouer my lost goods.

Those few dayes that I afterwards stay'd in *Rome*, I was iocund and merry, and did not so much as once dreame of any such roguerie intended against me. And out of a great desire that I had, to know how my sicke friend did, whether he had recouered his health, or were in worse case, then when he

he left me; I ſtaid foure dayes waiting for him, but ſeeing he came not at me, nor ſent vnto me, I continued foure dayes longer in Towne, making inquirie after him amongſt ſome of his Country-men, giuing them al the markes and ſignes, whereby they might know, or at leaſt gheſſe at the man, but this was to aske for (a) *Entunes* in *Portugall*, or to looke to heare a *Magnificat* at Mattens, or to ſeeke after the man in the Moone, for there was no ſuch kinde of thing to be heard of. All the diligences that I could vſe, were to no purpoſe. I did verily beleeue that he was very ſicke, if not dead. I likewiſe thought with my ſelfe, that ſince he had concealed his lodging from me, that the reaſon thereof was, becauſe he had not a conuenient Chamber to receiue the viſits of his friends. I did as much as lay in me to looke him out: but when I ſaw it was all loſt labour, and that I could not poſsibly heare any newes of him, I left a large recommendation of my loue vnto him in my Lords houſe, and ſo taking leaue of my Lord Embaſſadour, I reſolued the next day following to begin my iourney.

Proverb.
(a) Preguntar por Entunes en Portugal. *Where there is no ſuch thing to bee found.*

My Lord grieued much for my departure, clapt both his hands vpon my ſhoulders, and taking a chaine of Gold from off his necke, which he did vſually weare, and putting it on mine, he told me, while he was doing me this honour; *Guzman*, I beſtow this vpon thee, that thou maiſt, as oft as thou look'ſt vpon it, haue me in thy remembrance, as one that wiſhes thee all good. He gaue me alſo, beſides that which I had of mine owne, good ſtore of Crownes, which would ſerue conueniently to defray my charges for ſome reaſonable while very well, and plentifully, that I needed not to want any thing that was needfull and fitting for me.

Guzman *is ſorrie that hee cannot ſee* Sayauedra *before his departure.*

The Embaſſadours kinde vſage of Guzman *at his departure.*

When hee had thus furniſht me, hee laid his Command vpon mee, that where-ſoeuer I ſhould hap to be, I ſhould from time to time giue him an account of my health, and how things did ſucceed with me, aſſuring me, that none ſhould reioyce more in my well-doing, then himſelfe; hoping, when I had made an end of my trauell, to ſee me againe in his houſe, whither I ſhould alwayes be moſt welcome.

How a ſeruant ſhould behaue himſelfe, to bee belou'd of his fellowes.

Theſe his words and kinde vſage of me, ſauoured of ſo much loue, and the aduice and counſell which he gaue me at this my farewell, was ſo ſweet and ſo ſound, and deliuered with that tenderneſſe, exhorting me to good and vertuous courſes, that I could no longer hold from bathing my eyes with teares. I kiſt his hand, kneeling on the ground; he beſtowd his bleſsing vpon mee, and with it a good high-way Nag. This done, downe I went, got vp, bid my fellowes farewell, and rode my way, making vſe of this Nagge in all my trauell, which did neuer faile me.

My Lord and his ſeruants were ready to melt for the ſorrow they had conceiued of my departure. He, becauſe he lou'd me, and ſaw he muſt now loſe me, and would doubtleſſe finde a want of me for ſuch ſeruices as I could beſt doe him, and himſelfe tooke moſt content in: And they, becauſe, albeit my actions were ill for my ſelfe, and turned much to mine owne hurt, yet were they neuer preiudiciall to my fellowes: and when occaſion ſerued (if they had beene put to the triall) I dare ſweare they would haue hazarded their liues in defence of my perſon, rather then they would haue ſeene mee take any wrong. I was alwayes their good friend, neuer did them ill offices, told no tales of them, neuer nouriſht any quarrels amongſt them, neuer croſt their pretenſions with my Lord, or hindred them in thoſe their ſuites, wherein they were intereſſed, but did further them all that I could; ſo that I was generally well beloued of them all. For by doing them theſe reall courteſies, and in that free and friendly faſhion, I could not but gaine the greater loue thereby, if not profit. For they were reckned of by my Lord but as ſeruants; but I was vnto him, as if I had beene his ſonne: So that I receiued from them the commendation of a good brother, and from my Maſter, of a faithfull

ſeruant. Inſomuch, that neither my ſeruiſe diſ-merited with my Lord, nor their friendſhip failed me at my need.

And if that publike fame which was ſpred abroad of me, touching that which ſo vnfortunately befell me in *Fabia's* houſe, had not beene diuulged abroad by that Aſpine-leau'd tongue of *Nicoleta*, who to as many goſsips, and friends as ſhe had in *Rome*, babbled forth the ieſt, which was put vpon mee by her Miſtreſſe in the backe Court of her houſe, I had neuer forſaken that commoditie, which I found in my Lords houſe, nor his Lordſhip haue loſt ſo good a ſeruant, who had ſo well and faithfully ſeru'd him. See what miſchiefe a wicked womans tongue can worke; who, without doing her ſelfe any good (playing the tattling huſwife) diſcredited her Maſters houſe, and diſordred ours.

Much miſchiefe in an euill womans tongue.

Let no man truſt a woman with a ſecret, no (if it were poſsible) not the wife of his owne boſome. For vpon euery light offence, that ſhe may be reuenged of thee, to plucke out one of thy eyes, ſhe will be content to loſe both her owne; making of a little bracke a great hole, and working thee much trouble vpon ſmall occaſion.

I went out of *Rome* like a Prince, well intreated, and better prouided, hauing ſtore of Crownes to ſpend abroad, till the durt I had taken ſhould become drie, and be rubb'd out. For when ſuch vnluckie chances as theſe doe light vpon vs, there is no ſuch remedy for them, as Time and Trauell to weare them out. *Mingo* neuer went abroad with more contentment, then I did now; I was gallant, rich, out of the gun-ſhot of ill tongues; with a full reſolution, neuer to returne the ſame man I went forth, but like a new *Phœnix*, receiuing freſh life from theſe my old aſhes.

I was now on my way towards my friend *Pompeyo*, who lookt for me euery houre, hauing prouided for me a neat lodging, with a handſome bed, and Table, and all other furniture fitting thereunto. I came at laſt to *Siena*, and inquiring after him, they directed me to his houſe; thither I came: I found him within, he receiued me, I cannot ſay whether more cheerefully, or more heauily, ſometimes ſhewing a ioyfull, ſometimes a troubled countenance; not knowing either what to doe, or what to ſay, concerning the forepaſſed ill ſucceſſe of my Trunkes. Hee was inwardly very ſad, as well for the value of that I had loſt, as alſo for the tricke that was put vpon him, and the ill account that he ſhould make me of thoſe my goods, which I had configned vnto him. Hee ſaid neuer a word to me touching my Trunkes, and would faine haue kept it from me; but it was not poſsible. For I had purpoſed with my ſelfe, to ſhew all my brauerie the next day, and like the Peacocke, proudly to iet it vp and downe the ſtreets of *Siena*, and for that purpoſe, requeſted him to helpe me to my Trunkes, that I might change my cloathes.

Hereupon he was inforced to open all the whole buſineſſe vnto me, putting me in good hope, that there were ſuch diligences vſed, and that good courſe already taken, that he did not doubt but that I ſhould haue all againe, and loſe nothing of that which they had thus cunningly ſtolne from me. I was ſtrooke with this blow to the very heart; and was thereupon ſo ſad, as thou thy ſelfe wouldſt haue beene, hadſt thou beene in my caſe, being thus ſtripped of all that thou hadſt in a ſtrange Countrie, farre from thy friends, and forced to ſeeke new, hauing but little ſtore of money in thy Purſe, and no more but one ſute of cloathes to thy backe, and two Shirts in thy *Port-manteau*. God deliuer vs from the hands of theeues and robbers, and from the frauds and deceits of wicked men. It was now too late to looke after them; the harme was already done, but no remedy to be had. *Que forçoſo lo aueys (a) de beuer, y no lo aueys de verter.* Whether I would or no, I was conſtrained to drinke of this cup; there was no auoyding of it.

Proverb. (a) Darſela à beuer. i. dar dis guſto, y dar vn mal trago. Nadie diga, deſta agua no beuerè. Couarru. *Verbe* Beuer.

Well, when I ſaw how the world went, and that there was no helpe for it;

I pluckt vp my ſpirits, ſet a good face on the matter, and drew ſtrength out of weakneſſe. For, if I ſhould in publike haue expreſſed my griefe, and made open ſhew thereof, I might, in priuate mens opinions, beene held baſe-minded, and a man of no metall; and might thereby haue hazarded *Pompeyos* friendſhip. Nor, had I kept neuer ſuch ſtirre, neuer ſuch a coyle and adoe about it, ſhould I thereby haue repayred my loſſes, or done my ſelfe any good by it.

And therefore ſound was that counſell; that we ſhould incounter aduerſities with a cheerefull countenance. For thereby our enemies are ouercome, and our friends recouer breath.

Aduerſities ſtoutly to be withſtood.

Chapter IX.

Guzman de Alfarache, *not recouering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complaines of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid vpon theeues. Wherein he deliuereth many things worthy the noting.*

Three dayes (according to the common ſaying) I continued booted and ſpurd, expecting what newes I could heare from thoſe, that had theſe theeues in chaſe, and whether they had had the good lucke to finde the track of their footing, and ſo follow them vpon the heate of that ſent, till they had them in view, and ſhould come to ouer-take them.

While my friend and I were ſitting at table, anon after we had din'de, as wee were talking of this miſ fortune of mine, and the cunning carriage of theſe theeues that had thus robd me, I might heare a great trampling of the ſeruants of the houſe and ſome others, who making haſte vp the ſtaires, came in and told vs; We haue him, we haue him, the principall thiefe is taken, and the theft confeſt.

This put new courage into me, quickned my bloud, and the tokens of my inward content, ſhewd themſelues in my face. For it is not poſsible, that any mans heart ſhould diſſemble a ſudden ioy. Though it ſometimes ſo hapneth, that exceſſe of ioy, doth ſuffocate the naturall heat, and depriue it of it's life. You might now haue lighted a Candle at mine eyes, they did ſo ſparkle, and were growne ſo quicke; me thought then I was giuing *Albriçias* to as many as demanded it of me, and that I ranne with open armes to receiue this welcome newes. We roſe vp from the table, (where we ſate talking before on this buſineſſe) to goe and meet and ſalute this Officer, that had beene imployd in this ſeruice, who (as if he had beene no leſſe affected therewith then my ſelfe) came towards me with his mouth full of ioy, and hauing kindely imbraced one another, I askt him how the world went? He told me, it was like to goe well. Then I farther demanded of him, In what manner? Hee replyde, that one of the theeues was taken, the reſt he could not meet with, but that this would diſcouer all.

The ioy of the heart, cannot but expreſſe it ſelfe in our lookes.

Thou haſt haply obſerued, that when ſtore of water hath beene ſuddenly throwne vpon quicke burning coales, there hath riſen vp at that very inſtant a thicke & ſowltrie hot ſmoake, yeelding almoſt ſuch a ſteame of heate, as the coales themſelues gaue before they were quenched. Euen in the like caſe did theſe his words leaue me. For all thoſe manifeſt ſignes of ioy, which had before diffuſed themſelues thorow-out my whole body, were quite quenched with

What the effects of ſorrow are likened vnto.

with the water of this bad newes, and at that very inſtant, there was ſtirred vp in me an infernall ſmoake of choller, which I had much adoe to ſuppreſſe; but becauſe I knew it would not helpe mee, I diſſembled it the beſt that I could.

Pompeyo call'd for his cloake, and went preſently to the Iudge of the Court, to intreat him, that he would vſe therein the beſt diligences he could, (which was no more then was fitting to be done.) But all this did me no good. For, he neither denyed the theft, nor confeſſed that he was in the fault. He ſaid that the others had committed it, and that he was but their ſeruant, and that they had only beſtow'd vpon him one poore ſuit of cloathes, which he ſold and ſpent partly in *Florence*, and partly vpon the way in his returne to *Siena*.

The condition of wicked people.

And this is the common courſe of ſuch kinde of wicked people; They further, and fauour each others euill workes and counſels, but when they haue wrought their purpoſe, and effected their intent, they forſake one another, leauing euery man to ſhift for himſelfe, ſome going one vvay, and ſome another.

Vpon this Confeſsion, (becauſe it was the firſt theft that euer he had beene taken with, together with that which hee had alledged in his own defence, and for thoſe other conſiderations, which offered themſelues vnto the Iudge) he was ſentenced to publike ſhame, and afterwards to remaine a baniſhed man from that Citie for a certaine time.

Now while this buſineſſe was a handling, one of *Pompeyos* ſeruants ſtood diligently waiting there, expecting the iſſue of this buſineſſe, that hee might come and aduiſe mee thereof. And when hee had his Sentence giuen him, as if he had brought my Trunkes along with him, hee came running vp in all haſte to my Chamber, laughing all the way as hee came, and as iocund as a Pye, crying out aloud vnto me; O *Señor Guzman*, laugh and be merry; the Thiefe that holpe to rob you, is condemned to open ſhame, I ſaw him vp on the Aſſes backe, before I came away: if you will ſee him, hye you to the window, and looke out quickly, for it cannot be long ere hee come. O, how much would I haue giuen, that this Foole, this Block-head, this Coxcombe had beene mine owne ſeruant, and in mine owne houſe, or in ſome other place, where I might haue had my will of him, that I might haue pumeld him about the pate, bob'd him about the noſe, ſtrooke out the teeth of him, and beaten the iaw-bones of this Aſſe ſo ſore, that hee ſhould not haue beene able for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I was mightily out of patience at theſe his fooliſh words. O thou Traytor, (ſaid I to my ſelfe) ſeeſt thou iu what poore caſe I am, and in a manner quite vndone, and doeſt thou goe about to comfort me with ſuch a poore ſatisfaction as this? I was ready almoſt to burſt with choller; but euen then, when it was in its greateſt force, there did offer it ſelfe vnto my remembrance iuſt ſuch another comfort as this; which was told mee for a truth had paſſed in *Seuill*; vvhich made my ſides to tickle againe with laughing, the very thought whereof, had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it was:

Guzman telleth a tale of a ſtout Iudge, as a fooliſh Attourney.

A Iudge of that Citie, by eſpeciall Order from the ſupreme Councell, tooke a delinquent, that had beene a famous falſifier of Deeds, had often counterfetted his Maieſties hand, and fained many falſe Patents, by meanes whereof, hee got a great deale of money in diuers parts, and at diuers times; for the which hee was by the ſaid Iudge, condemned to be hang'd; notwithſtanding that this Offender did alledge for himſelfe, that hee was *de Euangelio*, a kinde of Church-man, and therefore did appeale from his Sentence, challenging his priuiledge of beeing tryde by the Eccleſiaſticall Power, as by his competent Iudge. But the Iudge being reſolu'd, not to reuerſe his Sentence, being perſwaded, that he likewiſe falſifide theſe his Orders,

ſtood

ſtood to his tackling, and haſtened the execution thereof, vvilling him forth-with to bee ledde to the Gallowes, commanding thoſe that were to ſee the ſentence executed, to hang him out of hand; charging them to let this be firſt done *de facto*, and hee would anſwere the matter afterwards as well as he might.

The Eccleſiaſticall Ordinarie, was not in the meane while wanting on his part, vſing all the power that hee had, to ſaue this man from death, aggrauating and heaping his Cenſures vpon the Iudge, threatning him, that in caſe he proceeded therein, that there ſhould *Excommunications* goe out, and that in the Churches there ſhould bee *Ceßatio à Diuinis*. But being not able there-with, nor all that hee could doe, to hinder the Sentence; the Delinquent was brought to the Gallowes, and when hee was vp vpon the Ladder, and had the Rope about his necke, there came a certaine Notary to the foote of the Ladder, who had ſollicited his buſineſſe, and laying his hand vpon his breſt, ſaid vnto him;

Sir, you ſee, all poſsible diligence hath beene vſed, and not any one eſſentiall thing left out, that might make for you; but this (you ſee) will not hold water, nor doe vs that good wee thought it would haue done; For, as you may perceiue, the Iudge (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and ſweare vnto you (by that my Place and Credit, which I hold in the world) that hee hath done you therein a moſt notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Iuſtice; but ſeeing it cannot now bee otherwiſe, and that for the preſent there is no helpe for it, I ſhall wiſh you, Sir, to arme your ſelfe with patience, and to take your hanging quietly: And put your truſt in mee: for I will ſtay with you to the laſt, I will not leaue you till I ſee you hang'd. And leaue it to mee, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Conſider now, I pray, and tell me, what comfort can it be to thoſe men that are to ſuffer death, to heare ſuch idle and fooliſh words as theſe to come from a mans mouth? What pleaſure can that miſerable wretch, that is forthwith to bee hanged, take, that he hath left a good Sollicitour behinde him, to follow his buſineſſe, when hee is dead and gone? Mee thinkes, this poore Clyent that ſuffered, might very well haue ſaid to his Attourney, I ſhould like it much better (Sir) that you would come vp heere and take my place, and giue mee leaue to goe and follow mine owne buſineſſe.

To ſuch a one as I, who was rob'd of all that I had, and left ſo poore as I was, what credit or comfort could I take in it, to ſee a Thiefe ride vpon an Aſſe, to haue his hands bound, and his backe whipt, and to bee put to this open ſhame? Will his diſgrace doe mee any honour? Or vvill the repeating either of the caſe, or his puniſhment, procure mee meanes to liue, or furniſh mee with thoſe neceſſaries that I want? I got mee out of that, into another Chamber, thinking vpon the ignorance of theſe men, and the loſſe that I had ſuſtained by thoſe that rob'd mee; for that vvas the thorne that did ſo ſorely pricke and grieue mee. And as I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelfe of diuers and ſundry things, one while of this, another while of that: And amongſt many other things, that I went examining with my ſelfe, one (amongſt the reſt) was: Of what ſmall importance, and how light were theſe kinde of puniſhments! For what ſhame can either bee put into, or taken from a Thiefe, who hath no ſhame at all, nor makes any reckoning of it? And who, before that hee begins to play the thiefe, doth reſolue with himſelfe to receiue that puniſhment for his theft, wherevnto he ſhall bee condemned, and ſhall (by the Lawes of the Land) bee inflicted vpon him? A thiefe (forſooth) ſhall robbe a priuate houſe; and all his puniſhment muſt be, to walke his publike Stations vp and downe the Towne. A pretty piece of Iuſtice. For mine owne part, I haue no great

Theeues know not what ſhame is.

great ſtore of wit, and leſſe iudgement, and therefore I know not well what to ſay againſt thoſe Lawes; which before they were made, I make no queſtion, but they were wel weighed and thought vpon; and with ſound and mature counſell ratified and confirmed. And that before their publication, they were throughly ſcann'd, and approued by the generall opinion of thoſe, that were learned in the Lawes; yet notwithſtanding it will not ſinke into my head, that this is a ſufficient puniſhment for a Thiefe to leade him onely through the Citie, for to doe him ſhame, by making him a publike ſpectacle to the people, or to baniſh him from thence. But it ſeemeth vnto mee, to bee rather *præmium*, then *pœna*, a reward, then a puniſhment. For thereby, in my iudgement, they doe nothing elſe, but ſecretly ſay vnto him; My friend, you haue hitherto made your benefit of our goods, and haue made your ſelfe merry at our coſt. You ſhall now doe well to get your liuing elſe-where, I pray therefore get you gone, leaue off to doe vs any more harme, and goe robbe ſome other of our neighbours. I cannot bee perſwaded, that this miſchiefe lyes in the Lawes, but in thoſe that execute them; for that they are either ill vnderſtood, or not well executed.

To carry a Felon through a Citie, riding on an Aſſe, and to whip him, and baniſh him the Towne, is no fit puniſhment for him, but rather an incouragement to returne to his former roguery.

A Iudge ought to vnderſtand and know, as well the man, as the matter for which hee condemneth him. For baniſhments were not made for theeues that were ſtrangers, but for the Citizens of the ſaid Citie, the naturall Inhabitants, and ſuch as were noble, and well borne, whoſe perſons vvere not to ſuffer any publike puniſhment, nor affronts. And to the end that the faults which they committed, ſhould not bee exempted from puniſhment, therefore your Diuine Lawes did ordaine theſe your baniſhments, which without doubt, was the greateſt puniſhment of all other, that could bee inflicted vpon ſuch kinde of perſons. For thereby they are inforced to forgoe their friends, their Parents, their Kinsfolke, their Houſes, their Lands, their ancient acquaintance, their Wiues, and their Children, their pleaſures, and delights, and their buſineſſes both priuate, and publike; being to goe, they know not themſelues whither, and to liue and conuerſe with they know not whom. Which was certainly a great puniſhment, and no leſſe then death it ſelfe.

Wherefore baniſhment was firſt inuented.

And it was the permiſsion of Heauen, and will of God, that he that made this Law, and was the firſt Inuenter thereof, ſhould be paid home with the ſame puniſhment that hee had ordained for others, beeing baniſhed himſelfe by his owne Countrymen the *Athenians*. Many were much grieued thereat, and indured a great deale of ſorrow, accompanied with infinit inconueniences, and perill of their perſons; and many of them likewiſe did take it no leſſe heauily, then if they had ſuffered the bitter pangs of death.

The firſt inuenter of baniſhment, baniſhed himſelfe.

It is reported of *Demoſthenes*, that famous Grecian Orator, and Prince of Eloquence, being baniſhed by his Citizens, left his Country like a man in deſperation, ſhedding many a ſorrowfull teare; and the more in regard that his fellow Citizens had ſo cruelly proceeded againſt him, conſidering that hee had alwayes protected, fauoured, and defended them, both with his head, and his hand; his wit, and his ſtrength; and therefore hee did the more reſent it, making theſe his troubles and afflictions to ſeeme the more intolerable to be indured.

Demoſthenes *baniſhed to his great griefe.*

And as hee was wandring abroad in the world, it was his hap to come to a place, where hee lighted by chance vpon ſome of the greateſt and mortalleſt enemies that hee had: Who then made no other reckoning vvith himſelfe, but that they would ſurely kill him; but they did not onely giue him his life, and pardon all former iniuries, but ſeeing him in this miſerable and afflicted ſtate, taking pitie of him, they comforted him the beſt they could,

Demoſthenes *cheriſhed by his enemies.*

could, treating him with all courteſie and kindneſſe, and furniſhing him with ſuch things as were neceſſarie for him in this his baniſhment. Which was, as it were, a throwing of oyle into the flame; and the meanes of augmenting his ſorrow, to ſee that hee ſhould bee more kindely vſed by his enemies, then his friends, as did plainely appeare, when beeing comforted by them in this his baniſhment, he returned them this anſwere:

How would you haue me to carry my ſelfe; how beare my baniſhment with patience; how not complaine of my hard fortune, hauing ſo great cauſe, as I haue to bemone my mis-hap? Being that I am baniſhed from that Citie, wherein I was borne and bred, and am forced by you to ſeeke my fortune in forraine Countreys, where I meet with ſuch enemies, that I doubt to finde (and I ſhall account it a great happineſſe vnto me, that I haue made ſo good a purchaſe) the like friends elſe-where. They likewiſe baniſhed *Themiſtocles*, who being graced more in *Perſia*, then in *Greece*, told ſome priuate friends of his; *Perijſſemus, ſi non perijſſemus*. We had beene vndone, if wee had not beene vndone.

Demoſthenes *his anſwer to his friends.*

Themiſtocles *baniſhed, and his ſaying.*

The Romanes baniſhed *Cicero*, induced thereunto by his enemie *Clodius*, anon after that he had freed his Countrie from ruine. They did likewiſe baniſh *Publius Rutilius*, who was ſo valiant, and of that ſtoutneſſe of courage, that afterwards, when thoſe of *Sylla's* faction (who were the cauſe of his exile) would haue reuerſed his baniſhment, he would not accept of this their faire offer, but ſaid; I will make them bluſh for ſhame, by neglecting this their kindeneſſe; for by this meanes, they ſhall come to ſee their owne errour, and to acknowledge the wrong they haue done me, by this their vniuſt perſecution. They alſo baniſhed *Scipio Naſica*, in requitall of thoſe benefits and good ſeruices that he had done them, in deliuering them from the tyranny of the *Gracchi*. *Hannibal* the *Carthaginian* dy'de in Exile. *Camillus* the Romane, a man of that worth and valour, that it was ſaid of him, that hee was a ſecond Founder of *Rome*, for that he had freed it from it's enemies, when the whole State lay at ſtake to be wonne or loſt; yet notwithſtanding this meritorious Act of his, he was baniſhed his Countrie.

Cicero *baniſhed.*

Publius Rutilius *baniſhed. He is recalled, but will not come home.*

Scipio *baniſhed.*

Camillus *baniſhed.*

The Lacedemonians baniſhed their *Licurgus*, though a graue and wiſe man; and one that had made them very wholſome Lawes for the good of that Common-wealth. Nor did they reſt contented with this wrong they had already done him, but they threw ſtones at him, and ſtrooke out one of his eyes. The Athenians very impudently and vniuſtly baniſhed their *Solon*, and confined him to the Iland of *Cyprus*; as they did likewiſe their great Captaine *Thraſibulus*. Theſe, and infinite other the like were baniſhed; and anciently they inflicted this puniſhment vpon the nobleſt and principalleſt perſons, as one of the greateſt and grieuouſeſt puniſhments which they could impoſe vpon them.

Licurgus *baniſhed; beaten out with ſtones, and his eye ſtrooken out.*

Solon *and* Thraſibulus *baniſhed.*

I my ſelfe haue knowne a thiefe, who becauſe he was vnder yeeres, and not capable of greater puniſhment, hauing beene often-times baniſhed, but neuer went forth of his Countrie to finiſh this his Exile, and his thefts likewiſe being of no higher nature then matter of victuals, for his greater puniſhment, the Iuſtice commanded, that he ſhould haue a coller of Iron clapt cloſe about his necke, which ſhould be riueted ſo faſt with an Iron pinne, that it ſhould not poſsibly be taken off, hanging thereat a little Bell, to the end that the ringing thereof, as oft as he did ſtirre or moue, might giue the people warning to take heed of him. This may truly be called a iuſt, and a witty-conceited puniſhment.

A iuſt puniſhment inflicted on a little young thiefe.

Now, by this that hath beene ſaid, thou maiſt know, how grieuous a puniſhment baniſhment is to the good, and how ridiculous a thing to the bad: To whom all the world is their common Countrie; and who account that to be their Countrie, where they can beſt filch and ſteale. For whereſoeuer a thiefe

thiefe comes, he enters into that place, as a new Commer, and vnknowne; Which is no ſmall aduantage for him, for the better exerciſing of his Office, the people not thinking any harme of him, nor ſuſpecting him to be ſuch a one as he is. I know not, how they vnderſtand this, who doe puniſh them thus. It were the leſſer euill of the two, to let them goe among the people with the fore-ſaid Coller and Bell, that men might beware of them; and not to ſend one thus abroad, where he is vnknowne, with letters as it were of credence, to robbe all the world. No, no, this is no good courſe, it is not profitable for the Common-wealth, nor is there any policie at all in it, to doe theeues ſo great a fauour. But for euery light theft, it is fit they ſhould be ſoundly puniſhed: As to condemne them to the Gallies, to confine them to ſome Garriſon Townes, and there to ſerue, and to inflict other the like puniſhments vpon them, for longer or leſſe time, according to the nature and qualitie of the offence. And in caſe they ſhall be of an inferiour kinde, and not deſeruing the weight of your heauieſt ſentence, I would haue them branded, as the vſe is in other Countries, with a hot Iron in the ſhoulder, that may leaue the print of the marke behinde; whereby, vpon the ſecond theft they be taken with, it will plainely appeare, what lewd liuers they be. By this courſe they beare not only the marke about them, but the cauſe thereof. This will be accuſation enough, to giue in euidence againſt them, both what they are, as alſo their courſe of life. And I would haue this re-incidencie and relapſe of theirs to be ſeuerely puniſhed. And many (I make no queſtion,) this courſe being taken and duly executed, will for feare, turne ouer a new leafe, and that this their firſt correction will keepe them in a great deale the more awe, leſt the continuance of their lewd courſes, might chance to bring them to the Gallowes. This, and only this (I ſay) is iuſtice; all the reſt is *Fruta regalada*, delicious Fruits, and miniſter only occaſion to your *Eſcriuanos*, to be as arrant theeues as they; and I know not whether I may be ſo bold to ſay, that they are willing to ſet them free, that they may goe abroad, and ſteale afreſh, whereby they may afterwards haue occaſion to take that from them, which they haue ſtolne: and ſo of the two, proue the greater theeues. But I will hold my peace, and harpe no more vpon that ſtring. For I am a man, and may erre, and I haue beene already vnder their hands, and haue ſuffred too much through their falſe dealing, and I know not whether I may chance to come againe vnder their laſh, and then they will vſe their pleaſure vpon me, and reuenge themſelues on me without controlement: for I know not who can hinder them, when they are diſpoſed to worke their will. My thiefe was freed, he had confeſt, who were the principall Offenders, and which way they went; for which cauſe, as alſo that he had rounded the Citie on an Aſſe, and had beene put to open ſhame, he was ſet at libertie; leauing me (poore man) in the wretched priſon of pouertie: Where I muſt now take my leaue of you, and bid you all Good night. To morrow morning, if you be deſirous of the reſt, and would faine know, what in the end was the iſſue of this buſineſſe; you ſhall haue it with all my heart, which I ſhall truly and faithfully deliuer vnto you.

FINIS.

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE.*

THE SECOND BOOKE.

VVherein *Guzman de Alfarache*, treateth of that which befell him in *Italie*, till he returned into *Spaine*.

CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaues* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *He meets with* Sayavedra, *whom he takes into his seruice. And before he comes to* Florence, *he recounts vnto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arriued there, he shewes him all, that was worth the seeing.*

PHOCION (a famous Philosopher in his time) was so poore, that though he tooke a great deale of paines, he could hardly get wherewithall to hold life and soule together. Whereupon, as oft as any in the presence of *Dionysius* the Tyrant, and his mortall enemie, made mention either of himselfe, or of the manner and course of his life, he made a scoffe and a iest both at it, and him, flouting at his pouertie, and deriding his miserie, thinking with himselfe, that he could not doe him any greater disgrace, nor iniure him more, then to mocke at the meannesse of his fortunes. As if he would haue inferred thereupon, that if he had beene a man of that great learning, as the world held him to be, he might therewith haue gained bread to put in his mouth, and not needed to liue in that want, as now he did.

Phocion, *and his pouertie.*

Dionysius *the Tyrant.*

Phocions *cenſure of* Dionyſius.

When this came to the Philoſophers eare, he was not only not grieued thereat, but laughing at this his follie, he anſwered him, that reported this vnto him; It is true ſir, that *Dionyſius* ſayes of me, in terming me poore, for I am truly ſo; but, I muſt tell you withall, that he is much poorer, then my ſelfe, and hath a great deale more reaſon to be aſham'd of himſelfe, if he ſhall but conſider his owne wretched eſtate and condition. For though I lacke money, I want not friends: I abound in the more, and faile in the leſſe. But as for him, though he be rich in money, he is poore of friends. For I know not any one that he hath. This Philoſopher could not ſatisfie himſelfe better, nor with a righter or fuller blow hit out his eyes, then by ſtiling him, *hominem ſine amicis*; A man, that had not ſo much as one friend in the world, that he could truly ſay, was his friend. And albeit, it oftentimes ſo falleth out, that they are purchaſed with money, and that this is a principall meanes to winne and wedge them vnto vs, yet this Tyrant had neuer yet the wit either to get or keepe them. And it is no wonder, that he ſhould, of all other, want them. For he, that ſayes *friend*, ſayes (in that one word) *Goodneſſe*, and *Vertue*; comprehending in that all the good, that ſpeech, or thought, can reach vnto. Whoſoeuer therefore ſhall deſire to conſerue friendſhip, and to continue in his friends loue, and that the bond of amitie be not broken betweene them, muſt haue a care, that his workes correſpond with his words. But *Dionyſius*, being tyrannie it ſelfe, and of too ill a digeſtion to keepe friendſhip long, and his conuerſation being woſſe then his concoction; and for that friends are not ſo much gotten out of the greatneſſe of our fortune, as our vertue; wanting that, he wanted them.

Friends are the greateſt treaſure.

How friends are often got, and kept.

He that hath friends, hath all things.

For mine owne part, euer ſince I had the vſe of reaſon, and knew what diſcretion was, I made it my chiefeſt ſtudie, to get me friends, though at neuer ſo deare a rate, thinking no coſt too much, to purchaſe ſo great a treaſure. They ſeeming vnto me (as indeed they are) our greateſt helps and comfort, as well in proſperous, as aduerſe fortune. Who doth enioy the content of contents, but he that hath true friends? What doth ſo much lengthen and preſerue our peace, our life, our honour, and our wealth, as to ſee our friends to ioy with vs in our proſperitie? And in aduerſitie, from whom, but from them, can we finde any refuge, kindneſſe, comfort, helpe, and a fellow-feeling of our miſeries, as if they were their owne? A wiſe man, ought to want all whatſoeuer goods, rather then good friends. For they are better then our neereſt kinſmen, or our owne naturall brothers.

Friends better [illegible] kinſfolks or brothers.

Of the qualities, and conditions of friendſhip, many haue ſpoken much (and one day, God willing, we ſhall ſay ſomething thereof:) but in my opinion, where friendſhip is profeſſed, there muſt be all true and plaine dealing, and ſuch a faire and euen cariage, that it neither leane to alteration, nor giue any offence, nor cauſe any trouble, nor to aduenture (through our raſh and inconſiderate actions) the looſing of a friend. Two friends ought ſo to loue one another, as each of them doth ſeuerally loue himſelfe. For that I, and my friend, are as it were all one. And as you ſee, how quick-ſiluer dealeth with gold, how cloſe it adheres vnto it, how it workes it ſelfe into the very entrailes and bowels of it, and being two diuers mettals, are ſo incorporated, that they become but one maſſe or lumpe, nothing in the world being able to ſunder and diuide them but the pure fire of the furnace, wherein the quick-ſiluer is conſumed: So a true friend, who is now become another mans ſelfe, and by an intermixture of their hearts and mindes made as it were one ſelfe-ſame thing, nothing ought, nor can indeed diſſolue this vnion, but death, which is the Chryſoll, wherein we muſt at laſt be all melted one after another.

True friends what they are like.

Men ought to make the ſame choiſe of their friends, as they doe of good bookes. For their happineſſe conſiſts not neither in the greatneſſe of their number, nor the curiouſneſſe of their binding, but rather to haue a few, and

How to make choiſe of our friends.

thoſe

thoſe good and approued Authors. For oftentimes, it ſo falleth out, that many friends are rather a hinderance, then a helpe to true friendſhip: For he is a friend to none, that is a friend to all. Nor are we to chooſe a friend for our entertainment only, and merrily to ſpend the time withall, but to make choiſe of ſuch a one, as may benefit both our ſoule, and our bodie: one that without reſpect of humane intereſt, will aduiſe him to obſerue the diuine precepts. Not only to repreſent them vnto him, but to ſpeake to the purpoſe, to admoniſh him to the obſeruation of them, and to inſtruct him in the true knowledge of them. And if he be called a true friend, who meerely out of friendſhip, tells his friend the naked truth without masking or diſguiſing it, not as to a third perſon, but as to one, that is properly his owne, and as freely as if he ſhould treat of any thing belonging to himſelfe, or that he himſelfe would deſire, his friend ſhould ſay the ſame to him, on the ſame occaſion, of which ſort of friends, that carry that ſinceritie and plainenеſſe with them, few are now a dayes to be found, in whom a man may haue that aſſured confidence, and entire ſatisfaction.

Then queſtionleſſe (and that with very good reaſon) a good booke is a good friend; nay I dare boldly ſay, there cannot be a better. For from thence, we may draw that *vtile & neceſſarium*, that good and neceſſarie counſell, which we ſtand in need of, without incurring the ſhame, of that vaine and idle humour, which is too common now adayes, to be rather content to continue ſtill in ignorance, then by asking the queſtion, to ſeeme to doubt of any thing. But to bookes, we may boldly put the queſtion, and neuer need to be afraid, that they will bewray our ignorance: And beſides, we ſhall receiue this ſatisfaction from them, that they will faithfully, without flatterie, deliuer vs their opinion. And this one aduantage (and it is a notable one) *bookes* haue of *friends:* That our friends, dare not alwayes tell vs what they thinke, and know; for feare of particular intereſt, or out of tenderneſſe to offend (as we ſhall by and by briefly tell you) their friends. So ſoft a hand hath *Loue*, when it comes to touch, where it loues. Whereas on the contrary, the counſell that is giuen thee in bookes, is downe-right and plaine, and ſtands before thee ſtarke-naked, as beſtript of all manner of vice. And therefore (theſe things conſidered) it hath euer beene held one of the hardeſt and difficulteſt things in the world, to finde out a true and faithfull friend.

Bookes, true friends.

Of which ſort, many are ſpoken of in ancient ſtories, and we finde a great number of them recorded of olde, and painted forth vnto vs in your feigned fables; but that there either now are, or haue beene ſuch heretofore as are there decyphered vnto vs, I doubt it very much, at leaſt I am fully perſwaded, they were very rare and few. One only friend haue I found to be true, and is of the ſame nature and condition, as we are. And this friend of ours, is the beſt, the bountifulleſt, the trueſt, and the faithfulleſt of all other; for this is neuer wanting to it's friend, but continues firme and conſtant for euer, nor is at any time weary of giuing: And this good friend of ours, (that I may not hold you any longer in ſuſpence) is the *Earth*.

One only friend. And what that friend is.

This affords vs pretious ſtones, gold, ſiluer, and diuers other mettals, whereof we ſtand in need, and ſo earneſtly thirſt after. It bringeth forth graſſe, and all ſorts of herbes, wherewith are not only fed our flocks of ſheepe, our cattell, and other beaſts for the vſe and ſeruice of man, but thoſe medicinable ſimples, which conſerue our health, free vs from diſeaſes, and if we fall into ſickneſſe, ſet vs vpright againe, preſeruing this life of ours, in a ſound and perfect ſtate of health. It yeeldeth vs all ſorts of fruits, that are either ſauourie to the taſte, or nouriſhable to the bodie. It giues vs wooll, and flax, and by conſequence, all kinde of wouen ſtuffes, wherewith we cloath, and adorne, this naked fleſh of ours. It opens its owne veines of its owne accord, whileſt from its full breſts, ſprout forth thoſe ſweet and delicate waters, which we drinke; thoſe brookes

A commendation of the Earth, and its faithfull loue, and true friendſhip.

and riuers, which get the fields with childe, and make them fruitfull, and not only that, but doth facilitate commerce, and make an easie way for trafficke, bringing the strangest and remotest parts of the world to shake hands, and to communicate their commodities one with another, and to liue in a league of loue and friendship together. Nay more, it is so good, and so sweet a friend, that it suffereth, and willingly consenteth to all that we will our selues. Be shee well or ill vsed by vs, all is one to her, so as we be pleased. Shee is like a sheepe, from whom you shall heare no other language, but *Omnia bene*: All is well. Leade her forth to feed, or bring her to the waters to drinke; shut, and penne her vp, or let her loose; take her lambkin from her, her milke, her wooll, nay her very life, to all shee alwayes answers *bien*: all is well. And all that *bien*, or good that we haue on earth, the *Earth* giues it vs. And for an vpshot of all, when we are now dead, and lye stinking aboue ground, when there is neither wife, father, sonne, kinsman, nor friend, that will abide and endure our companie any longer, but doe all of them vtterly forsake vs, and flie from vs; then, euen then, doth not shee refuse vs, but huggs vs, and makes much of vs, and opening her owne wombe, takes vs in vnto her, where we quietly lye, as it were *in deposito*, till shee render afterwards a faithfull account of what shee hath receiued, and deliuers vs vp to a new and eternall life. And amongst many her other excellencies, one of the worthiest things in her, and deseruing most commendation, is; That shee doing so much for vs, as shee doth, and that so continually and without ceasing, being so generous, and so franke-hearted, that shee is neuer tyred out, neuer growes weary, yet doth shee not looke for any requitall, shee neither askes, nor expects any returne of kindnesse, nor doth shee talke and tell of it, nor twit thee in the teeth with it; which some kinde of friends, more vsually, then commendably, doe.

Amongst so many friends, as I had, and did daily conuerse withall, I found very few, who had not an eye to the north-starre of their owne proper interest, and shap't their course by the Compasse of their owne priuate ends; hauing only a desire to deceiue, not hauing any respect at all to the friendship they profest, being deuoide of all loue, truth, and shame: I was of an easie and tractable nature, my condition was facile and apt to be mis-led, their tongue was all honie, but their heart was very gall it selfe: whose bitternesse, I had too often tasted to my cost.

Considering therefore the falshood that now adayes is vsed in friendship, and mens craftie and subtle cariage, we are not so much to wonder that we are; as, that we are not deceiued. For I finde them, as liberall in promising, as niggardly in performing; as facile in their words, as difficile in their deeds. There are now no more *Pilades*, nor *Orestes*; they are dead and gone; and with them, almost the remembrance, that there were euer any such kinde of men. I only speake this for my *Pompeyos* sake; whom I therfore condemne the more, for that I lou'd him more then any other, and tooke him to be my especiall friend. For, most of my friends, I gained by my words, but this man, I presum'd I had purchast by my deeds. When I was in my prosperitie, I had many friends, all men did desire my loue, made much of me, feasted me, and did offer their seruice vnto me: But my moneys failing, they also failed; so that their friendship, and my money had an end at once.

The greatest miserie that can befall man in this life.

And as there is no misfortune, that toucheth vs so neere, as to call to minde the happy estate, wherein heretofore we did liue; so there is not any sorrow, that equals that, of being forsaken by those friends, whose loue and friendship we did euer desire to conserue. That little wealth that I had, was stolne from me, which was my vndoing. I continued some dayes (though but a few) in my friends house, howbeit he thought them too many; in which short time, he fell off from me by degrees, by a little and a little vnwedging himselfe from me, and vnlooſing those knots, which had knit vs in friendship together;

finding

finding at laſt, that I had but a ſlipperie eele in my hand, who when I thought I had ſureſt hold of him, ſlipt when he ſaw his time from me, leauing my hand empty. He was a *Cordoneſe*, in the freeneſſe of his offers; and would ſay vnto me after that we had dined; Sir, is there any thing elſe, that you would be pleaſed to command? If there be, I pray Sir make as bold of any thing this houſe affords, as if it were your owne. But theſe were but generall words, and matter of complement; for he went not vpon certainties, nor promiſed me any thing, that I might truſt vnto, but did rather ſeeme to proffer this his kindneſſe doubtfully and fearefully, leſt I might chance to take him at his word. And that little curteſie, which he ſhewed me, was not ſo much out of any hearty good will, that he had to doe it, as for feare leſt I ſhould ſeeke to recouer my loſt goods of him, by courſe of Law.

A ſeigned friend, compared to an Eele.

I read his thoughts in his lookes: And as mine were alwayes noble, ſo on the contrary, his were baſe and vile. And as oft as he ſpake of my loſſe, if he vſed any complement with me, it was all diſſimulation, and counterfet ſtuffe. Well, whatſoeuer it were, either better or worſe, I was much offended at it, and thought that he did me therein a great deale of wrong, and did ſeriouſly reſent this his double dealing, and theſe faire but falſe ſhowes of his loue. But he, on the other ſide, did as earneſtly perſiſt in the purſuit of his ſimulations, as if he had meant nothing leſſe, then to play vpon me, and abuſe me; or as if they had ſome ground of truth with them: And becauſe I ſtoutly ſtood to it, and bore out this buſineſſe as well as I could, that he might not perceiue any deiectedneſſe in me, he tooke heart thereupon, and made ſleight of it, as a matter of little, or no importance. For the loſſe was mine, and not his; and therefore he made the leſſe reckoning of it.

Wherefore, that I might not giue him farther trouble, perceiuing how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I reſolued with my ſelfe to free him of that feare, and to goe for *Florence*. I imparted this my purpoſe vnto him, telling him, that I much deſired to ſee that Citie, for the great commendation, that I had heard of it, and thoſe famous ſights that were there to be ſeene. And becauſe this my determination ſuted with his deſire, he tooke hold on this occaſion, relating vnto me many memorable things, worthy my ſight, wherewith my will was the more inflamed, and the deſire which I had to ſee it, much increaſed. But he did not doe this ſo much, to commend it vnto me, or out of any good deſire, that he had, that I ſhould ſee it, but only that he might ſee me no more in his houſe; and for that he is an vnwelcome [a] gueſt, that is a mans gueſt againſt his will. After that I had thus broken my minde vnto him, he began to blow the winde afreſh of his kinde vſage of me, that he might oblige me thereby to get me the ſooner out of his houſe, and to depart from thence peaceably and quietly; for he was not a little afraid of me. He then ſignified vnto me, how ſorry he was that I would needs be gone; but vſed no intreaties, nor any the leaſt reſiſtance, to haue me to ſtay. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my iourney, but neuer asked, what I wanted; which he might haue done out of good manners, though he had no meaning to pleaſure me. Which proffer, had he made it me, it ſhould not haue beene performed by him ſo much out of complement and ceremonie, as that he might thereby learne, how long, or how little a while I meant to ſtay with him, not knowing as yet the houre, when I meant to be gone. It is an eaſie [b] thing, to ſee; more eaſie, to ſpeake; but it is a hard thing to fore-ſee. For all that ſee, doe not know; and all that ſpeake, doe not doe. And for that he now ſaw, that he ſhould haue no farther need of me, for that I like a foole, told him ere I was aware, that I was not minded to returne any more to *Rome*, he began to caſt with himſelfe, What good can this cocks-combe doe me now? or of what vſe and profit will this foole be vnto me hereafter? And ſo from that time forward, he vſed me accordingly, which was no worſe, then

Prouerbe
a Es triſte huesped, el de por fuerça.

Prouerbe.
b Facil coſa es, el ver; y mas lo es, el hablar; pero muy dificultoſo el proveer. - No conocen todos los, que miran, ni los que hablan, hazen.

Many make reckning of their friend, no longer then they haue need of him. And when he can ſerue his turne no longer, he turnes him off.

mine owne indiſcretion deſerued. Then did I learne to my coſt, how a man may come to know a generous and noble minde; which is ſeene in nothing more then in a thankfull acknowledgment of benefits already receiued.

In this alteration of fortune, there were ſet before mine eyes a thouſand dangers, that I neuer dream't of. But becauſe I had as yet ſo much ſpirit left me, as was able to put me forward, I was not vtterly diſmaid, nor quite diſhartned. I ſtudied to forget that, which I could not helpe; making my meanes, the thinking on my iourney. And becauſe noueltie, and things of a ſtrange nature, doe draw the mindes of men after them, out of the deſire that they haue to know them, I made all the haſte I could to get me gone from *Siena*, as well out of this reſpect, as alſo that I might leaue *Pompeyo* well pleaſed therewith; who, I knew, would neuer thinke himſelfe well at eaſe, till he were well eaſed of me. For albeit men commonly ſay to their gueſts; I pray fall to your meat, and be merry, for I aſſure you, you are heartily welcome; yet whether you be merry, or not merry, welcome, or not welcome, they thinke you are bound vnto them for a meales meat, and put euery morſell to account, that goes downe thy throat.

This hoggiſhneſſe of his, this his vnciuill cariage, this diſſembled care of his, and this his great feare that he had, that I would continue longer with him, did much trouble me. Well, I tooke my leaue of him; and becauſe I was ſtill the ſame man, as I was wont to be, as alſo in regard of that loue and friendſhip, which I truly bore vnto him, at the time of this our departure each from other, I did ſo grieue thereat, that I was not able to ſpeake a word, no not ſo much as to bid him, farewell; yet could not this my inward ſorrow, draw ſo much as one teare into his eyes, or to make any the leaſt ſhow of griefe. And ſo all alone, I ſet forward on my iourney, but more then well accompanied with a world of melancholy thoughts, nor ſlightly attended by a multitude of cares, wherewith I was ſo ouer-laden, that my horſe was ready to ſinke vnder me, as vnable to beare ſo great a burthen. And therefore I rode plotting and deuiſing with my ſelfe, how I might make them lighter, and ſo eaſe both my ſelfe and my horſe of them.

Guzman *leaues* Siena, *and goes to* Florence.

I had not gone thus muſing many miles, but it was my hap to light on *Sayavedra*, who had left *Siena* to cumply with his baniſhment. Whom I no ſooner ſaw, but my kinde heart began to melt, and I could not chuſe but take compaſſion of him, and withall I muſt needs ſalute him; placing my eyes, not vpon the hurt, which he had done me, but on the harme, from which he once had freed me. Eſteeming more of that kindneſſe I then receiued from him, then of all that, that he had rob'd me of. And he is a bad pay-maſter, and doth ill deſerue a curteſie, who doth not with aduantage requite a receiued kindneſſe. Beſides; Liberalitie, ſuppoſeth a generous and noble ſpirit, and is of that high eſteeme, for that it is originally deſcended from heauen, that it is alwayes found in thoſe mindes, that are deſtinated thereunto. I could not for my life refraine from ſpeaking louingly vnto him, nor he abſtaine from receiuing me with teares, which guttring downe his cheekes, dropt downe vpon my feet, as he bowed him-ſelfe to kiſſe my ſtirrop, whereof he taking faſt hold, fell downe on his knees, crauing pardon for this his error, humbly and earneſtly beſeeching me, that I would be pleaſed to forgiue him; rendring me likewiſe thanks, that during the time of his impriſonment, I neuer offred to accuſe him; excuſing himſelfe alſo, that he had not, as ſoone as he was ſet at libertie, come to viſit me, laying the fault thereof, in his lacke of boldneſſe, and the largeneſſe of his offence. Yet, for to make ſatisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my ſlaue, and doe me faithfull ſeruice all the dayes of his life; I, who euer knew him to be a man, that had both a ſtrong braine, and a nimble wit, which did him rather hurt, then good, becauſe he did not well imploy them; yet, for that theſe did adapt him, and make him fit for any imployment what-

Guzman *meets with* Sayavedra.

Curteſies are to be returned with aduantage.

Sayavedra *asks* Guzman *forgiueneſſe.*

ſoeuer,

ſoeuer, I was the more willing to accept of his offer. And ſo taking him into my ſeruice, we ioggd on along by little and little like a couple of good fellowes, talking of diuers things on the way.

Guzman *entertaines* Sayavedra *for his ſeruant.*

And albeit I was not ignorant, that he was a notorious theefe, and a notable cunning rogue, yet I held it the leſſer inconuenience of the two, to haue a knaue, then a foole, to my man. For fooliſhneſſe did neuer yet but walke hand in hand with wickedneſſe. And both of them being ioyned together, are ſufficient to vndoe not only a priuate houſe, but a whole Common-wealth. For the ſimple, or fooliſh man, cannot keepe counſell, nor knowes when and where to hold his peace; nor the wicked and malitious man, to iudge of things aright; and if either of them, vttereth what he thinketh, (for commonly their tongue blabbeth, what their heart conceiueth) ſcandals, and troubles are already entred within the doores of our houſe, and like impudent rogues, ſticke not to preſſe into our priuateſt roomes, to ſee what they can get from thence. I thought with my ſelfe, if I would haue any one to ſerue me, (good ſeruants being ſo few, and ſo hard to be got) that this would be leſſe bad then any other, becauſe by thoſe his cunning tricks, that he had plaid with me already, he made me the more warie of him, and taught me (as if I had beene ſome *Lacedemonian*) to throw my beard [c] ouer my ſhoulder: that is, to haue an eye vnto him, and to be the more circumſpect and warie of him, and to take the better heed, looking ſtill behinde me, as thoſe doe that haue enemies, turning their head one while this way, another while that, that they may not be ſet vpon vn-awares. And therefore knowing him ſo well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better, to entertaine a knaue that I knew, as a knaue, that I knew not. For I knew well enough, that I muſt looke narrowly to his water, and watch him at euery turne, wherein I meant not to be negligent: Whereas, in taking of another, that ſhould ſeeme to beare the face of an honeſt man, and make ſhow of being faithfull and truſtie vnto me, I might haply grow careleſſe out of the confidence that I haue in him, and by this my credulitie be coozened of all that I had, and afterwards be left to looke after moone-ſhine in the water.

Better to haue a knaue, then a foole, to ones ſeruant.

As well in this reſpect, as alſo for that I had not much now to loſe, nor was my condition or qualitie ſuch, that I ſhould ſtand ſo nicely vpon theſe points, I admitted him into my ſeruice. He askt me (as ſoone as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for *Florence*, led thither out of a deſire that I had to ſatisfie my longing, by ſeeing that Citie, whereof I had heard ſo much. Whereunto my ſeruant replied, and ſaid; Sir, whatſoeuer you haue heard thereof, I make no queſtion, when you come there, but your ſelfe will confeſſe, report hath beene too ſhort with you. For I aſſure you, there are ſo many admirable things therein to be ſeene, that they cannot ſufficiently be commended. For the naked relations of things, that are curious and good indeed, neuer fill the vacuitie and emptineſſe of our deſires. I haue liued there ſome time, yet all the while as I remained there, as if I had beene but come that very day to towne, whereſoeuer I went, new things were ſtill offered to my view: and I would neuer with my good will haue left that Towne, if my friends had not forced me from thence.

I began to aske him ſome queſtions, touching the foundation of that Citie, and whence it had its firſt beginning? Sir (ſaid he) ſeeing we haue day enough before vs, and that we may talke and walke faire and ſoftly, and that the relation, which I am to make you is but ſhort; I ſhall, for the better ſatisfying of your deſire, acquaint you, and that truly, with all thoſe curioſities, that did then offer them-ſelues vnto my knowledge.

Sayavedra *diſcourſes of* Florence.

Then did he forthwith begin to diſcourſe of thoſe ciuill warres, which were occaſioned by *Catiline*, betweene thoſe of *Fieſole*, and *Florence*; the ouerthrowes, which one while thoſe of the *Romane* faction receiued, another while their enemie, *Bela Totile*. How in the time of Pope *Leo* the third, the Emperor *Charles*

Leo 3. *Pope.*

Prouerbe.

c Traer la barba ſobre el hombro Viuir recatado, y con receio, como hazen los que tienen enemigos, que van bolviendo el roſtro, à vn lado, y a otro. de onde, naçio el refran. Couarr. verb. Barba.

Carolus Magnus *Emperor.* Clement 7. *Pope.* Charles 5. *Emperor,*

Charles the Great, ſent a great Armie againſt the *Fieſolani*, leauing *Florence* re-edified in the hands of the *Florentines*, till that Pope *Clement* the ſeuenth, and the Emperor *Charles* the fifth recouered the ſame, for to reſtore it to its ancient poſſeſſion, from which the houſe of the *Medici* had beene put out. Which ſucceeded in the yeere of our Lord, 1529. Euer ſince which time, the *Florentines* haue alwaies been gouerned by one ſole Prince; which, though it ſeemed ſomewhat harſh vnto them at the firſt, yet now they ſee their error, and finde now at length how much more quietly they liue vnder the protection of their owne Prince, and with how much more ſafetie, both of their liues and goods. It is ſaid, that the firſt Prince, that euer they had, was *Aleſſandro de Medici*; who, for his ſweetneſſe of nature, his magnanimitie, and valour, though violently he loſt that principalitie in the very flower of his youth, yet might he iuſtly be termed *Aleſſandro*. After him, ſucceeded, that wiſe, and worthy *Coſimo*, great Duke of *Tuſcanie*, whoſe memoriall, for his heroicall actions, and great vertues, as alſo for his courteous behauiour, his religion, and good gouernment, ſhall liue eternally in the mindes of the liuing. This Prince was ſucceeded by *Franceſco*, who, for that he died without iſſue, the Crowne came to that famous *Ferdinando* his brother, the liuely image, and true picture of his father *Coſimo*, being as well heire to his Vertues, as his Eſtate. Who gouerned ſo worthily, and ſo wiſely, that I doe not know any other, with whom I may equall him, for the loue that his ſubiects bare him.

Aleſſandro de Medici.

Coſimo, *great Duke of* Tuſcanie.

Franceſco 2. *Duke of* Florence.

Ferdinando 3. *great Duke.*

If the relation, he then made me, had beene a little longer, he muſt of force haue deferr'd it till the next day; but it ſeemed, that he had meaſured it out iuſt with the time: for we were come as neere night, as we were to our Inne whereinto we went to lodge. And hauing there well reſted and refreſht our ſelues, we got vp betimes in the morning, and that we might the ſooner get into *Florence*, we did ſet the beſt foot before, and made a little more haſte, then otherwiſe we would haue done. But when we came within ſight of it, I was ſo ouer-ioyed, that I am not able to expreſſe it, ſo faire and ſo beautifull did it a farre of preſent it ſelfe vnto me. For though I could not take a full view of it, yet from the one end to the other, and from almoſt the bottome to the top, I might reaſonably well diſcerne it; and a more pleaſing ſight, did mine eyes neuer ſee. I did examine the pleaſantneſſe of its ſituation, I beheld the beauty of many great and goodly buildings, the inexpugnable ſtrength of its ſtately walls, the maieſtie, and firmneſſe of its high, and well formed Towers. In a word, the whole pile thereof, ſeemed ſuch vnto me, that I ſtood amazed at it, and could not (me thought) too much admire it. I would not willingly, haue mou'd out of the place where I ſtood, nor haue drawne neerer to the Towne, but haue kept my ſelfe at that very diſtance; as well, for that mine eye was wonderfull well pleaſed therewith, as alſo for that I would not wrong that delight, which I now receiued, when I ſhould draw neerer thereunto; if peraduenture (as it vſually falleth out with moſt things) it ſhould leſſen it ſelfe, and fall ſhort of that goodly proſpect, which I did here enioy.

The beauty of Florence.

But, when I did conſider with my ſelfe, that all this glorious ſhow, was, but as it were the outward caſe of it, my iudgement did then begin to inſtruct me, that the iewels therein contained, muſt needs be richer, and farre more glorious, as indeed they were. For, when I was entred thereinto, and ſaw the ſpatiouſneſſe of the ſtreets, how ſtreight and leuell they were, how plaine and ſmooth, paued all with cleane hewen ſtones of goodly faire marble, and their houſes built with beautifull ſtones, ſo coſtly, ſo curious, ſo neatly poliſhed, ſo artificially wrought, and with ſuch a deale of skill and cunning, in the architecture thereof, I was ſo confounded, that I could not tell what to thinke of it. For I could not imagine with my ſelfe, that any other Citie in the world, could haue compar'd with *Rome* for beauty: But hauing well viewd this, for its bigneſſe, it goes farre beyond it. For thoſe buildings that are in *Rome*, the beſt

beſt of them are gone to ruine, and few of them left ſtanding; and thoſe that are now remaining, are but meere ſhadowes, and the very ruines and fragments of thoſe, that were ſo famous in former times. But *Florence*, is the flower of the world, all is therein ſo flouriſhing, ſo coſtly, and ſo well ſet forth, that I ſaid vnto *Sayauedra*; Certainly, if the inhabitants of this Citie be as curious in the tricking of their women, as they are in the adorning, and beautifying of their houſes, they are vndoubtedly the happieſt men in the world. I was ſo ſtrucken with admiration, that I was deſirous to haue dwelt a long time in contemplating and beholding euery particular peece of building; but becauſe night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend vs any longer, I was faine to retire my ſelfe to my lodging. And we were not ſlacke in haſtning to our Inne, whither when we were come, we were ſo neatly and ſo daintily entertained, that I cannot ſo much indeare it, as it truly deſerueth. Such plenty of prouiſion, ſuch cleanlineſſe in their lodging-chambers, ſuch ſweetneſſe in their linnen, ſuch diligent attendance, ſuch affable language, and ſuch good vſage, did I neuer meet withall elſe-where in all my life. I was ſo taken therewith, that it made me almoſt to forget that which I moſt deſired. I ſlept ſo ſoundly that night (thankes to the good bed, that was vnder me) that it ſeemed vnto me ſcarce halfe an houre, ſince my firſt lying downe.

When the morning was come, (though with a heart full of ſorrow, for that was then my *Mount Tabor*) I call'd to *Sayauedra*, to giue me my clothes; and for that he was ſo well acquainted with that Citie, I will'd him to make himſelfe ready to goe along with me, that he might ſhow me all, whatſoeuer was of any note, and held (as curioſities) to be worth the ſeeing. And that firſt of all he ſhould bring me to the chiefe Church, where hauing heard diuine ſeruice, and recommended our ſelues vnto God, all things would proſper afterwards the better with vs. Thither he led me, and hauing ended our deuotion, I ſtood like one amaz'd in beholding that moſt famous Temple and fabricke *del* [b] *Zimborio*, which they there call [c] *Cupula*, which in my opinion, may be better termed *Copula*, for that it ſeemed not only to my ſelfe, but as many as beheld it, that therein was copulated, and ioyned as it were together, all that curious Architecture, which the writings of the beſt and skilfulleſt profeſſors, in that profeſſion, either *theoricke*, or *practicke*, haue publiſhed to the world, ſo admirable a peece of workmanſhip, ſuch a deale of greatneſſe, ſtrength, and curioſitie, (without any wrong or iniurie to any other fabricke of *Europe*) may iuſtly challenge the name of *the eighth wonder of the world*. Let him conſider with himſelfe, who hath any knowledge in Architecture, it being foure hundred and twenty handfuls high, beſides the ſpire that is on the top of it, what [d] diameter, this *Cupula* will require; and by this he may come to gueſſe, what manner of thing it is.

From thence I went to the *Annunciata*, a Church ſo called, to ſee the image, that was painted there vpon the wall, which might more properly be termed *Heauen*; ſo admirable a peece of worke, is that picture of the *Incarnation of the Sonne of God*: Inſomuch that it is held there for certaine, that it was drawne by one, that was no leſſe excellent in his Art, then holy in his life. For, when he had made an end of that which there you ſee painted, and that there remained no more to be done, but to finiſh and make vp the face of our bleſſed *Lady* the *Virgin*; being wonderfull timerous and fearefull, much miſdoubting and muſing with himſelfe, whether or no, he ſhould be able to giue it its true life, and to fit it euery way in its age, in trueneſſe of its colour, its complexion, in its honeſt and ſober countenance, and in the demure and modeſt poſture of its eyes, in this confuſion of his, and theſe his diſtracted thoughts, not deuiſing with himſelfe, what he were beſt to doe, he laid himſelfe downe awhile to ſleepe, and awaking anon after, and minding to betake him to his penſill, and to put his hand (by the helpe of God) to that peece of worke, he found it made

b Zimborio, es el hueco del chapitel.

c *A high Arche, or round vault of any high Church or ſteeple.*

The Cupula *of* Florence *what a curious peece of building it is.*

d Diametro, *of the Greeke word ſignifying ouer.* Linea dimetiens, ſeu per medium ſecans, recta in longitudine ducta.

It is a Geometricall terme.

The Annunciata *of* Florence, *wonderfull worth the ſeeing.*

made to his hand. And therefore, it needs not our farther commendation, for it being to be presupposed, that it was there miraculously wrought either by Gods owne hand, or some one of his Angels, it can be said to be no lesse, then an *Angelicall picture*. And for this cause, the rest of that peece being considered, which the Painter made, we may easily conceiue, what kinde of spirit he had, who could finde so much fauour, as to haue the hands of heauen (as if for the time, they had beene bound prentises to his Trade) to helpe him to grinde and mixe his colours, and to make an end of his worke for him.

So many miracles doth it daily worke, such a concourse of people doth continually flocke thither out of deuotion, and so great are the almes, that are there distributed & giuen to the poore, that I did much wonder, that all the beggars were not wondrous rich; which put me in minde of that poore man, who (as I was told, and you haue heard) made in this Citie, that his famous last Will and Testament, wherein he bequeathed his Asses pack-saddle to the Great Duke; That seeming now vnto me but a little small summe, in comparison of that, which such a one as he, might very well haue gained in that place. And for that it is a knowne truth, *Que el hijo de la gata, ratones mata*: That the sonne of a Cat, will kill his Rat. Or (as our English Prouerbe hath it) Cat will to his kinde; a thousand, and a thousand times, did I bethinke my selfe of many things that I had done in my younger dayes, and did now as it were plainely perceiue; that if, as I went to *Rome*, it had beene my good hap to haue lighted in this Citie, what with my roguish tricks, my counterfeit scurffs, leprosies, and sore legs, I might haue come to be a *mayorazgo* amongst them, and to haue purchased some great Lordship.

Guzman *scoffes at the rogues and beggars in* Florence.

I did likewise obserue, that few of these rogues, were curious, and cunning, or that they were their crafts-masters; but were, for the most part, fooles, meere block-heads, and had little or no wit at all, in comparison of those in my time. And when I did perceiue, what poore counterfeits they were, and how sillily they did order their affaires, it was sport alone to me. I tooke a great deale of pleasure in looking on them, and I did secretly wish to my selfe, that I might haue had the opportunitie, to reforme a thousand imperfections, which I presently saw in them. Who did euer see, that an honest poore beggar, that was a good proficient in his trade, nay, say he were neuer so meanely bred to it, would when he had most, (vnlesse he were a very cocks-combe) haue more then six, or seuen *Maranedis*, or some such like trifle, and not aboue, in his hat? nor to haue such a summe of money lie open to the peoples eye, that they may thereby be taught to tell him; you need no more, you haue as much there already, as will very well serue to supply your wants for this day, and to put bread enough in your belly; and therefore, that he should get him gone, and giue way to other poore folkes, that had more need, then he had? When was it euer knowne, that there was euer seene any beggar, of that poore vnderstanding, though he were but a new beginner, that would beg, hauing a loafe of bread vnder his arme? or to stand, as I saw another, with a tooth-pick in his eare? Which I no sooner saw, but I said to my selfe: O thou poore silly theefe, thou traitor to thy profession; Art thou such an Asse, as to let euery man know, that thou hast eaten so much, that there are some remnants yet left behinde in thy teeth? I saw not one amongst them all, that could play his game handsomely, nay scarce know how to set his men in their right place, nor to take their due time for the hitting of a blot; I saw no order, no *decorum* amongst them; they had no skill in this kinde of musicke; many of them could say their *Gammoothe*, (and that too they had learned by rote) but knew not how to proue a note; others there were, that had a little paltry skill in plaine-song, but would bawle it out so scuruily and so vntuneably, that no eare was able to endure it: And none of all this dunghill crew, that like *Chaunticleere*, could chaunt it out lustily, descant and diuide at pleasure, and so to relish

reliſh and melt their notes, as to make their hearts to melt that heare them, and to moue them to compaſſion of them.

There did I ſpie a young man, one of my old acquaintance, who was now a pretty well-growne man; this was the only beggar (I meane compared with the reſt) that knew any thing amongſt them. And would to God (thought I) that I might be ſo happy, as to come once to ſet my hands, where he had ſet his heart. For queſtionleſſe, he could not chuſe but be rich. He was the ſonne of ſuch parents, as were able to leaue him much. His father was a notable cunning rogue, and could his craft wonderfull well. And this his ſonne, was euery way like vnto him. He was leane viſag'd, lanke bellied, ſpindle-ſhank'd, and ſo alike ſuted in all the reſt, that a man might truly ſay of him; That, t'was fathers n'owne ſonne. But becauſe euery thing hath its time appointed, and takes it courſe when it comes; and for that the Iuſtice did not there permit, the hauing of an Academie, for the trayning vp of theſe freſh men, what through want of exerciſe, and not trying of concluſions, and putting them in practiſe, they may now throw away their caps, whileſt themſelues with their *breviaticke* Art, may lie wallowing in the durt. I knew him, but he did not know me: He might well ſay vnto me, *Talte veo, que no te conoſco*: The world is ſo changed with thee, that I doe not know thee. O, what a terrible conflict had I with my ſelfe, what a ſhrewd temptation, to goe and ſpeake to him: but I durſt not. I ſaid to *Sayavedra*; Seeſt thou that poore fellow? That rogue is able to make me rich. He then ſaid vnto me; Why doth he then goe a begging? I told him; When men haue once begun to open their mouthes to craue an almes, and haue ſhut their eyes to all ſhame, and bound their hands from all labour, and that their feet are benum'd, and wax ſtiffe from taking any paines, or care to liue in a lawfull courſe, their diſeaſe is beyond all cure, and there is no remedie to redreſſe this euill.

Guzman ſpies one of his old acquaintance amongſt the beggars in Florence.

Prouerbe.

Why beggars cannot giue ouer their lewd courſe of life.

The experience whereof I ſaw in a poore young wench in my time, who comming to *Rome* poore and ſicke, fell a begging for Gods ſake. And when ſhee was well recouer'd of her health, and as ſtrong of her bodie, as any bull, ſhee ſtill continued her trade of begging. They, whoſe almes ſhee craued, told her, it was ſhame for her to beg, ſhee was young, and luſtie, and was able to ſerue, and worke for her liuing. Shee anſwered; that ſhee was often troubled with a cruell paine and griping of the heart, which when the fitt tooke her, cauſed her to fall downe to the ground in a ſwound, beating her feet and her hands againſt the earth, renting and tearing all that ſhee could lay hand on, and kicking and ſpurning at thoſe that came neere her. In this ſort, did ſhee cozen the world a long time, and ſpent many yeeres in this lewd faſhion, till at laſt one of her owne Countrymen being askt, whether he knew her father, and her mother? Anſwered, He did; And that they were both dead, and had left her a great deale of wealth. Whereunto (as lawfull Inheretrix) ſhee laid claime. Whoſe eſtate was now ſuch, and ſo great, that many principall men became Sutors vnto her, and ſought to haue her to wife, and ſome of them exceeding rich (for there is no * yron ſo foule, that it will not be guilded; gold hides and couers all, be it neuer ſo ruſtie) ſhee was penny-white (as we ſay) and ſo was married in the end to one of an honeſt condition, and well to liue, and an handſome man withall. But this wife of his, ſeeing ſhee was now depriued of her wonted libertie of begging, grew within a little while after deſperately ſicke, daily withering and waſting away, the Phyſitians not being able to ſearch into the nature of her diſeaſe. And thus ſhee continued for a good while, till ſhee became her owne phyſitian, and cured her ſelfe, by playing the hypocrite, making ſolemne profeſſion, that meerely out of humilitie, ſhee would goe a begging, and eat not any thing, but what ſhould be giuen her of almes, wherewith ſhee would ſuſtaine this ſinfull carkaſſe of hers. And to this end, would ſhe go vp and downe her houſe amongſt her ſeruants, firſt to one, and then to another, crauing and

A notable tale of a roguiſh wench.

Prouerbe.

* No ay hierro tan malo, que no puede dorarſe. Todo lo cubre, y tapa el oro.

and begging ſome thing of them. And becauſe all did giue her almes, and none denie her, that did not fully pleaſe her, but did much trouble her; wherefore, oftentimes, ſhee would ſteale vp into a priuate roome that ſhee had, and there ſhut her ſelfe in, where ſhee had ſome pictures of certaine great perſons, that were fairely hung vp in frames, and euen of theſe (to ſatisfie this her ill habit, and to keepe her ſelfe in vre) would ſhee likewiſe demand an almes.

Sayavedra, maruelled much at it; Who brought me from thence, to the outward Court belonging to the Palace; in the midſt whereof I might ſee a braue Prince, mounted vpon a beautifull horſe of braſſe, ſo curiouſly cut to the life, and ſo well proportioned in euery part, that they both ſeemed to haue life and motion. My apprehenſion, could not diſcerne, and therefore durſt not preſume to iudge, which of the two were better, either this, or that at *Rome*; yet inclined in the end with that ſhort vnderſtanding of mine, to giue the praiſe to that which was there preſent; not for that it was preſent, but becauſe it did deſerue it. I askt of *Sayavedra*, whoſe ſtatua that was? He told me, it was the great Dukes, *Coſimo de Medici*. Of whom I went diſcourſing vnto you vpon the way. And here, great *Ferdinando*, his ſonne, (who lately was, but is not now aliue) cauſed it to be ſet vp to perpetuall memorie. I would needs know out of curioſitie, of what height it might be, and not being able to reach thereunto to take the meaſure of it, I was informed, that from the very bottome to the top, was about ſome fiftie handfuls high, little more, or leſſe. Round about the ſaid place, were many other delicate peeces caſt in braſſe, and ſome, of ſubſtantiall, yet very fine marble, ſo artificially wrought, that they did driue the beholders into great admiration; leauing euen the beſt iudgements in ſuſpenſe, and ſtaggering thoſe wits moſt, that were moſt acute; excepting only ſuch, as had ſome inckling afore-hand, what manner of things they were.

The Statua of Coſimo 1. great Duke of Tuſcanie.

Afterwards, we viſited the Temple of *S. Iohn Baptiſt*, as being moſt worthy our particular remembrance; for I may truly ſay of it, that there is ſcarſe the like in the world for all in all. Which glorious fabricke, I then learned, was founded in the time of *Octauianus Auguſtus* the Emperor, and conſecrated to *Mars*. There did I entertaine my ſelfe in obſeruing its antiquitie, and foundation, wherein I tooke much content; and the more, for that it is reported of it, and receiued by tradition, as alſo grounded vpon reaſon, (in regard of its foundation) That it is to laſt and continue, to the finall conſummation and end of the world. Which we may the rather be induced to beleeue, for that neither length of time, nor thoſe continuall warres, accompanied with ſo many calamities, haue as yet had the power either to deface, or deſtroy it. All the Citie beſides being left deſolate and laid leuell with the ground, only this Temple remaining ſtill vntoucht. The bodie of it, conſiſts of eight angles, all ſpatious, ſtrong, and maruellous beautifull to behold; eſpecially thoſe its three great doores, which are ſhut vp with ſix halfe doores, all of braſſe, caſt in curious molds, and all of one entire peece, wrought with Hiſtories of emboſſed worke, ſo daintily handled, ſo finely raiſed, and ſo proportionably equall in euery point, as may well be preſumed from the Artizans of that Citie, who beare away the bell from all the reſt, in that kinde, that are in the world.

S. Iohn Baptiſts Church in Florence.

This Temple hath likewiſe another greatneſſe belonging vnto it, which is this; That there being in *Florence* one and forty Pariſh Churches, two and twenty Monaſteries of Fryars, forty and ſeuen Nunneries, foure Colledges or Houſes for thoſe that are willing to retire themſelues from the world, eight and twenty Hoſpitals, and two bearing the name of IESVS; yet there is no baptiſme vſed in any of theſe, ſaue only in that of *S. Iohn*, and in that Church, are all the children of this Citie baptized, from the meaneſt amongſt the commons, to the principall Gentlemen, and the great Dukes owne children. For that time, that we ſtayed there, we viſited all the Churches one after another, which were of that admirable workmanſhip, and ſet forth with ſuch ſingular

The Churches, and Conuents in Florence.

and

and rare curioſities, that it is not poſſible to relate no not the leaſt part thereof, in regard of the muchneſſe of them, (the number of them being ſo infinite,) nor is the vnderſtanding capable of apprehending them, much leſſe our outward eye. For he that ſhould goe about to make a memoriall of ſo great a *Machina*, and ſuch a maſſe of things, whoſe admirable parts are ſo numberleſſe, and euery one of them accompanied with ſundry peeces of ſuch ſingular Art, and exquiſite workemanſhip, beſides ſo many excellent pictures, ſome in tables, and ſome ingrauen in braſſe, and other mettals, had need to make thereof a huge great Volume, and to ſeeke out ſome other Chronicler, that ſhall be better able then my ſelfe, to preſent theſe things to the eyes of the Reader, and to giue them their due commendation.

The Dukes Palace.

The great Duke, hath a Palace in the Citie, which is called *Il Palaggio de Piti*; whoſe excellencies, greatneſſes, and curioſities, as well in gardens, as fountaines, mounts, groues, ſports for hunting, and goodly roomes, may (without indearing) be truly ſaid to be a princely and royall ſeat; and ſuch a one, as may compare with any other whatſoeuer in all *Europe*.

The circuit of Florence.

I would not omit to know and ſee the circuit of this Citie, which containeth in it ſuch ſtore of wealth. And I found it to be much about fiue mile compaſſe: it hath ten great Gates, and one and fifty Towers. The Citie is ſeated all within the walls, and hath no ſuburbs adioyning thereunto. Through the midſt of it paſſeth the famous riuer of *Arnus*, vpon which ſtand foure moſt ſtately bridges, all pau'd with ſtone, and very ſtrongly built, being large and ſpatious withall. And all theſe things, being thus done in perfection; the like perfection is alſo to be found in their gouernment, their behauiour, and in the generall faſhion, and cariage of that people. And therefore iuſtly, and with a great deale of reaſon, is this Citie called *Florencia*, as being *flos florum*, the flower of flowers, and as it were the only noſe-gay of all *Italie*. Wherein all things, as in a curious garden, doe flouriſh ioyntly together, but more particularly theſe eſpeciall and ſingular good things; As the liberall Arts, horſemanſhip, all kinde of learning, militarie diſcipline, true dealing, faire proceeding, ſweet behauiour, plainenеſſe and ſinceritie in their actions, and aboue all I muſt recommend vnto thee, their loue and kindneſſe towards ſtrangers. Shee like a true mother, imbraces them in her boſome, huggs them, makes much of them, and fauours them more, then ſhee doth her owne children; to whom, in reſpect of them, ſhee may be termed a mother in law.

Florence *a friend to ſtrangers.*

The time, that I ſtayed there, I came to know the Cauſes by their Effects: to wit, by knowing the nature and condition of the inhabitants, and the politicke lawes, by which they were gouerned, and their due obſeruation of them, not erring a tittle from them. There they apply themſelues truly to know and eſteeme euery mans merits, rewarding them with iuſt and due honours; to the end that all may be incouraged to vertue. And let not Princes thinke it a ſmall glory vnto them, for they ought to acknowledge it for one of the greateſt, that can be giuen them, when it is truly ſaid of them, that their noble and renowned actions, doe iumpe and concurre with theſe of their ſubiects.

The good gouernment in Florence.

Enuie, and Flatterie, two great Courtiers.

I likewiſe knew that to be true, which *Sayavedra* had told me about the factions in Court, and the croſſing and thwarting one another. I ſaw ſomewhat of that, which did exceed in other places, as Enuie, and Flatterie, whereof no Princes Court is free, which alwayes raigne there moſt, where is deſire of fauour, but more eſpecially, when they labour to increaſe it, and to keepe themſelues in grace with their Soueraigne. Which oftentimes turne to the great hurt of both the one and the other. They are fine and witty relators of other mens actions, and ſubtle Mathematicians, for to delineate and meaſure out that which other men can doe, and ſometime that, which others cannot. But let theſe things reſt, without farther entring into them. For hauing painted forth vnto you, in ſo great a perfection, this

this illustrious and noble Citie, it is not fit that I should blemish it with so foule a blot, and dash as it were with a cole, that faire commendation, that I haue giuen it.

Chap. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in pursuit of* Alexandro, *who had stolne his trunkes from him*; *Whither, when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himselfe was clapt vp.*

Guzman *sells his horse, and breaks his fast with his old shooes.*

IN *Florence*, I did eat out that horse, which my Lord Embassador had bestowed on me at my departure, and made me one morning a breakfast of his shooes. I say; To the end I might sell him the better, I caused him to be new shod, giuing order to *Sayavedra* to make money of the old ones; whereof we made our breakfast. If this heretike, *Necessitie*, had not kickt me out of Towne, and thrust me out by head and shoulders, I should neuer while I liu'd, of mine owne accord, haue gone from thence. And this thou maist as certainly beleeue of me, as of any one Article of thy Creed. For I had now well taken salt, and was throughly seasoned, and had sounded that Citie to the very bottome, yet I know not, how my minde might haue altered, and what I should haue done hereafter. For in conclusion, *todo lo nueuo, aplaze*: See what is newest, that we still like best. This rule, holding more especially in such as I was, who had *spiritum ambulatorium*, a wandring humour of mine owne, and was a great louer of nouelties. But then I was of that opinion, for those many reasons I had on my side. For it was my hap to come thither, when they were full of their sports and pastimes; and other young fellowes of the same yeeres with my selfe, led me to these their delightfull pleasures along with them from house to house, from feast to feast, and from bridall to bridall.

Guzman *loth to leaue* Florence.

Prouerbe.

The sports and pastimes that are vsed in Florence.

In one house you might finde them dancing; in another, playing vpon instruments; in a third, singing; and in a fourth, making merry with their friends. All was delight, and more and more delight still; one sets vp his rest at *Primera*, another vyes his game at *Tic-Tack*: some at one game, some at another. In a word, in all places of the Citie whersoeuer we came, we met with nothing, but laudable exercises, and honest recreations. There might a man see many young gallants, pompous in apparell, and richly clad, and many faire Ladies, and hansome Gentlewomen, who wanted no setting forth for curious and costly dressings, with whom these young blouds did dance. Whose tyres on their heads were so daintily adorned, their gownes on their backs so richly imbroydered, and their *Chapines* to their feet, so plated with siluer, and beset with pretious stones, that they did rauish both the eyes, and the soules of as many as did looke vpon them. I leaue it therefore to thee to consider, what kinde of dressings those were, that had so much power to moue the beholders. See how I haue seasoned this dish, that I may not disgrace the goodnesse of the meat. Tell me; hath it not a good relish? is it not pleasing to thy palate? Though I goe not into a Tauerne to drinke, [f] yet I take delight to talke of it, and to looke vpon it, and to peepe in at the doore as I passe by, and sometimes slip in, to make my selfe merry. No man is wise on horsebacke; much lesse, in the vnbridled yeeres of his youth. In a word, I was young. And as old age is cold, and dry, so on the contrary, youth, is hot, and moyst. Youth, hath strength, and old age, wisdome. Thus are these gifts diuided, and yet euery one hath that which is fit, and necessarie for him. And though for the most part, we see that all old men turne to be young, if not (as we say) become children againe; yet it

Prouerbe.

[f] Sino beuo en la taberna, huelgome en ella. Deue ser entretenimiento ver en la taberna vnas monas tristes, y otras alegres, ver cantar vnos, y llorar otros; y todos con muy poca firmeza en los pies, y gran modorra en la cabeça. Covarr. verb. Taberna.

it were a wonder, to ſee young men grow old. And I ſay againe, it were as great a wonder, to ſee a young man in yeares, to be an old man in diſcretion, as to ſee a Peare tree, to beare fruits in the heart of winter. But I ſpeake this in *Spaniſh*, that ſome of other Countries, whom I know, may not finde fault with me. And I would haue all men take notice, that I alwayes ſpeake according to the vſe and faſhion of mine owne Country: for I doe not know after what manner others dance in theirs.

The Authors proteſtation,

But that I may returne to my former diſcourſe; it grieued me very much to leaue *Florence*, (yet did it much concerne me to be gone) flying as it were from my ſelfe, not knowing to what end, nor whither to goe; nor yet knew I, why I ſhould ſtay any longer there, vnleſſe it were to ſpend that poore little ſtore of money, that I had yet left me, and that chaine, which the Lord Embaſſador my maſter, gaue me at my farewell as a token of his loue, and to thinke vpon him, as oft as I chanc'd to caſt mine eyes vpon it. And I muſt truly confeſſe vnto you, that he was neuer out of my minde, whenſoeuer I did thinke vpon that houre, wherein I muſt ere long be forced to turne it into money. And as it was giuen me with a great deale of loue, ſo did it exceedingly grieue me that I muſt ſhortly part ſo vnkindly with it. I would, if I could, haue kept it rather then my life, and neuer haue parted from it; but there are ſome ſuch occaſions, wherein parents may impawne their owne children. Patience, (quoth I to my ſelfe) I will doe the beſt I can; and more, I can not. And therefore (my maſters) I pray pardon me; for he, that hath no other meanes to helpe him-ſelfe, and is conſtrained thereunto out of meere neceſſitie, is driuen many times to commit many a greater error, and that ſhall proue farre more preiudiciall and hurtfull. I had a great wreſtling and ſtrugling with my ſelfe; and my thoughts had a cruell ſharpe warre with themſelues, as well touching this, as other the like buſineſſes. I conſidered with my ſelfe, what would now become of me, and what courſe I were beſt to take, for to ſupply and releeue my wants. God helpe me; How heauy is the heart, when the § purſe is light! And therefore we ſay; A heauy purſe, makes a light heart. What little comfort doe we take in the world? And how faint and feeble, are the pleaſures of this life to him, whoſe purſe-ſtrings are too weake? And more particularly, to one that is in a ſtrange Country, and that hath put on a reſolution with him-ſelfe to forget his lewd courſes, and not to liue, as he had done, by tricks and by ſhifts; yet not knowing how to gaine a penny, and wanting the meanes, how to come by money; hauing no neere acquaintance with any, to preſume of ſuch kindneſſe from them, being farre from my friends, and farther from any the leaſt intention or purpoſe to cheat or cozen any man. For, if I would haue runne that courſe, and ſet my minde vnto it, I needed not to haue taken ſuch a deale of care and trouble in the buſineſſe. For I had my wits about me; and a hand, that was able to finde me worke all the yeare long; I could not want, (if I liſted my ſelfe) to picke out a liuing where-ſoeuer I ſhould come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned, it was mine owne for euer: I neuer loſt it, if I once had it. Only, I might at firſt be a little to ſeeke, for want of vſe, but the tooles of my trade were neuer out of my hand, but alwayes carried them with me, whither-ſoeuer I went. I departed from *Rome* with a full purpoſe to become an honeſt man; and fall backe, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as it pleas'd God; for I had a great minde to continue theſe my good deſires, and to remaine firme in this ſo honeſt a reſolution. But ſeeing, that Hell is full of theſe, what good could my holy deliberations doe me, if I did not put them in execution? For faith, without workes, is but a dead faith.

Guzman *begins to conſider with himſelfe.*

Prouerbe:
§ Apretado ſe halla vn coraçon, quando nolo eſtà la bolſa.
Money cheeres mans heart.

Now, I had gotten me a man to waite vpon me; Where by the way, I pray let me aske you, what a good direction this was, to addreſſe me to a Maſter? What a Letter of recommendation to bee receiued into ſeruice? I had beene now accuſtomed to command; how would you then, that I ſhould ſubmit my

He that is vſed to command, will hardly be brought to obey.

Want, and honesty, can hardly stand together.

selfe to obey? I verily thought with my selfe (as perhaps many moe doe, for I doe not thinke that I am the onely man of that minde in the world) that I should haue beene an honest man, if answerable to that glorious show that I made, and the height whereat I liu'd, I had had wherewithall to spend accordingly, and that I had not wanted meanes to vphold this great spirit of mine, but had had money enough to maintaine and inlarge my generous disposition. But the summes (I feare me) which must haue seru'd to supply my wants, must miraculously by some holy Saint or other, be subministred vnto mee: for no other hand could doe it. And certainly, I know not how it then fell out, that I was so honest, as I was; I verily beleeue, that this also was a Miracle, considering the condition of that present time, and mine owne euill inclination. I was young, left to liue at mine own liberty, suffered to do what I list, and rather accustomed to seeke occasions, to doe, then to shunne ill; and I could hardly by the helpe of my good desires, either lose, or lay aside my bad conditions.

A good discourse of Guzmans.

Such a Lady, or such a Gentlewoman saith (which is their ordinary kind of language) I would faine be a good woman, I desire to lead an honest life, as no woman more, if that necessity did not force me to doe that, which I doe. Indeed Madame, by your leaue, your Ladyship lyes. For, that you doe ill, it is onely, because you are willing to doe ill. O what a poore excuse is this? I confesse that I offend thus and thus, but it is against my will; for I am not of my selfe giuen to such, or such a sinne, nor haue any inclination thereunto in the world. In good faith it is otherwise, for I reade it in your eyes. And they consenting vnto sinne, who can be said to be the cause thereof, but your selues? For if you would but turne your eyes from your windowes, and throw them on your distaffe, or your cushionet, certainly necessity would not constraine you to ill. Womens hands are not of that length, nor so quicke and so nimble, that they should sodainly reach so farre, as to finde you food, apparell, and house-rent: yet are they long enough, to put themselues forth to seruice; and they that set you a worke, will bestow house-roome on you, and put meate in your mouthes, and money in your purse. But I expect you should say vnto me; Thou, that art a man, giu'st me this counsaile; Thou art loath to serue thy selfe, and yet thou wouldst haue me to serue, that am a woman? Indeed, thou hast hit the nayle on the head; And this is that, which I say; That your Mistrisse-ship, and I, and this, or that other woman (bee shee what shee will) are all of vs vnwilling to doe our selues good. We will put to no helping hand of our owne, but would, that what we stand in need of, should be put into our mouthes, and that it should miraculously be ministred vnto vs.

Youth, what a kind of thing it is.

Twenty yeares of age, is a terrible beast: O how headstrong, and how wild it is. There is no battaile so bloody, no skirmish so hot, and so hard to come off cleare, as that warre, which wee wage with our youth. For if it goe about to make its retreat from Vice, it hath many fierce enemies that sharply set vpon it, neuer ceasing to assaile it, galling it here, & wounding it there, which wil hardly bee repell'd, more hardly ouercome, by reason of those many occasions of aduantage which offer them-selues; it being besides a thing proper vnto youth, to stumble, if not to fall, at euery step: Youth hath not (beleeue me) any strength in its legs, much lesse know they well how to goe. It is an vntamed beaste, it is full of fury, and voyd of patience; and if it entertaine any good motion, a hundred ill thoughts disband the same by and by, and put it to route; not giuing it so much leysure as to set foote to ground, nor to put it in the stirrop, not to seate him-selfe sure in the Saddle. Euery one cannot get vp to it; and few that can bridle this beaste. It will not be so soone ouer-mastered, as some doe thinke, nor be easily brought to goe that way as a man would haue it. I was euer, like the Hog, vp to the very eyes, nousling my selfe in the mud of vice and wickednesse, (for albeit I did not alwayes practise ill, yet I neuer lost the sight of it) and I was loath to kick and fling against it, lest by my too much

much ſtirring, I might looſen my lading, and cauſe it to fall to the ground; if not ſpraine, and hurt my ſelfe.

A Bullocke, or young Steere, when he is to bee tamed, they firſt halter his legges, throwing him downe on the ground, then they fall a ſhooing of him, after that, they binde a rope or a cord to one of his hornes, which they ſuffer him to traile after him for ſome fewe daies; and when they are minded to bring his necke to the yoake, they yoake him with an old Oxe, that hath beene long vſed to the plough, and ſo by little and little diſpoſing him thereunto, they teach him by theſe degrees to beginne to draw handſomely, and in the end to be as perfect as the beſt of them.

Inſtruction, neceſſary for youth.

That young man therefore, that hath a deſire to be old, let him leaue to follow my ſteps, and let him ſtriue to ſubdue his paſſions; let him prepare, and diſpoſe himſelfe to labour, and in diſpight of his owne will, let him ſtrongly ſtruggle and wraſtle with his idle and fooliſh deſires, and throw them flat on their backes to the ground, that they may neuer riſe vp any more to make reſiſtance againſt him: And when he hath thus gotten them downe vnder him, let him binde them faſt with that double twiſted cord of Patience, and Humility; and let him traile after him, for ſome certaine daies, theſe his ſtrange and dangerous appetites, ſpending his time in vertuous exerciſes, and many ſhall not paſſe ouer his head, before hee be brought to bow his necke to that holy yoake of repentance; and by yoaking him-ſelfe with good company, hee ſhall quickly be inured to the plough, wherewith he ſhall breake vp the earth of his euill inclinations; But let no man thinke, that hee ſhall bee able to doe this at the firſt daſh; and that once trying what he can doe, ſhall be ſufficient to make him grow perfect. Some (I know) will not ſticke to tell me; I would doe this, and I would doe that, my will is to it, but &c. Let him ſpeake this to ſuch another as himſelfe, and to one that is of the like quality and condition, as he is. For I know well enough already, that he is not willing to doe this, nor to doe that; For they, that are willing indeed, vſe other more effectuall meanes. And nothing is hard to them, that will ſet them-ſelues hard to it. Peraduenture ſuch a one thinkes, or expects, that God ſhould open the heauens, and miraculouſly ſtrike him to the ground, as he did Saint *Paul*; But let him not looke to haue the like courſe to be taken with him; leſt he be accounted a foole for his labour.

This ſame but, *or* Si non, *is the cauſe of much harme.*

God threw him to the ground, and humbled him ſufficiently, when he afflicted him with ſicknes, when he laid troubles vpon him, and when he ſuffered him to be toucht in his good name; if either then, or now, thou wouldſt accept of grace, while it is offered thee, thou ſhalt be ſure to finde it. But thou waſt neuer willing to entertaine theſe good motions, much leſſe to humble thy ſelfe with Saint *Paul*, and to cry out with him; '*Domine, quid vis, vt faciam?* Lord, what wilt thou, that I doe? What is thy diuine will and pleaſure? Thou wilt not like *Paul* be for God, and yet thou look'ſt that God ſhould be for thee. And if he dealt thus with Saint *Paul*, it was becauſe God knew the earneſt deſire that he had to know and ſearch out the Truth: and that it was his zeale to the Law that did thus ouerſway him; the current whereof being turn'd another way, he would be as feruent for the Goſpell. And you can inſtance but in a few that haue beene ſaued by a bare intention, without any good worke. Theſe two are to concurre in one, *intention* and *action*; I ſay, if we haue any time left vnto vs for action, or wherein we may doe any good worke. And then ſhall a firme intention of amendment of life, and a hearty ſorrow for our ſins paſt, be accounted a good worke, when the night of death ſhall ſodainly ouertake vs, and ſhut vs vp in darkneſſe. But hauing day enough to worke and labour in the Lords *Vineyard*, both theſe ought to goe together, I meane *intention* and *action*. For neither the ſpade alone, nor the hand alone, can digge, and dreſſe the ground; but hand, and ſpade, muſt both worke together.

If we will be ſaued, our good intentions, muſt be ſeconded by good actions.

But who hath put me into this theame? Was not I in *Florence* euen now to my great content? Thither doe I returne againe. I assure thee, that the more I walked vp and downe that Citie, the more desirous I was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seeke for a *Plus vltrà*. For it was euen as I would haue wisht it to be, all very beautifull and delightsome. And if therein resided either flattery or enuie, I tooke no great heed thereof, but let it runne to others account, for I was none of those, that were comprehended in that Decree. I had nothing to doe (like *Iudas*) with the almes of the poore; nor could any preiudice thereby come vnto me, being that I pretended nothing in Court. And if they would any way haue holpen me, I had no need to vse them. Or had I stood in need of them, I would not haue made any vse of them; they euermore seeming vnto me the greatest meanes of mischiefe, that euer came yet within my knowledge. For one onely flatterer is sufficient alone of him-selfe to ouerthrow a Commonwealth, if not a whole Kingdome. Happy is that King, and fortunate that Prince, whose Subiects serue him for loue, and who out of his wisedome leaues now and then an eare open to the peoples complaints, as also their aduice; for onely by this meanes shall he come to know truthes, whereby hee may redresse those things, that are amisse, and keepe off flatterers from abusing his eares.

Enuy, and flattery, hurtfull to a Commonwealth.

There would I haue liu'd all the daies of my life, and haue past away the time, like a Duke, had I had wherewithall. But I was in a manner blowne vp, and all my money was almost spent. I need not to confirme this vnto you with an oath, for you may very well (if you will) beleeue me on my bare word. The Riuer now began to grow drie, and my store to faile me; for, *Del monton que sacan, y no ponen, presto lo descomponen.* Pull from your heap, and put nothing to it; you, or your heape (if not both) may rue it. So that my moneys still going out, and none comming in, if I should haue staid any longer there, I should quickly haue runne my-selfe out at the heeles, and it would haue beene a great disreputation for me, to haue come in a horsebacke, and to goe out a foote. I thought it good counsell to vphold mine honor, and to depart from thence, both to my credit, and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessity, I should come to discouer my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lacke of meanes to be gone. I acquainted *Sayavedra* with this my purpose, and plainly opened my minde vnto him; For by this time, I knew well enough, that he was likely to be my onely helpe at a pinch, my strong forte, and the onely trench whereunto I might with safety retire, and that I could not haue met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose. I went preparing him by a little and a little, working and disposing him by degrees, that he might not afterwards thinke that he had seene strange visions, and vaine apparitions, and that whatsoeuer should hereafter befall me, might not seeme new vnto him, or accounted as a nouelty.

Prouerbe.

When I had thus moulded him, he said vnto me; Sir, There is one remedy, that offers it selfe vnto me now on the sodaine, neither chargeable, nor hard, but very easie to be effected, and that may make much for your profit. Seeing there is no remedy, but wee must be gone, it is not much materiall which gate we goe out at; for at any one of the ten, we may trauaile out on our ten toes, to goe abroad, and see the world. Let vs (if you will be rul'd by me) take the way, that leads to *Bologna*; for besides, that it is neere at hand, and that we shall there see that famous Vniuersity, wee may chance likewise to haue the good lucke to meere with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to find him there, (as I verily beleeue we shall,) It will be an easie matter for you to recouer your owne. For, vpon that information which was made of the theft in *Siena*, it is not to be doubted, that though you get not what you lost againe, yet he or his father will at least be content to giue you good satisfaction.

Sayavedras *counsell to* **Guzman,** *for the recouery of his stolne goods.*

I tooke this to be no bad counſell, but was very well pleaſed therewith, not thinking on any other thing then the force of Law, and the iuſtneſſe of my cauſe; and let iuſtice deale neuer ſo indirectly with me, I could not conceiue the leaſt cauſe of doubt, in regard of the cleare notice I could make of the theft, which would, if not all, yet haue allotted me the greater part of my goods: perſwading my ſelfe, that this party, who was principall in this theft, knowing him-ſelfe guilty therof, would haue come vnto me vpon his knees, deſiring my pardon, and that he would voluntarily haue offered to make me amends for the wrong he had done me, and to come vpon any termes to agreement with me; as well for that his parents, and kindred in that Citie, were perſons of principall note; as alſo, for that notwithſtanding all the meanes they were able to make to bolſter out the matter, yet would they neuer permit, that ſo foule a fact ſhould come to publike hearing, and be iudicially tryde, nor that they, and their houſe, ſhould be blotted and blurr'd with ſo foule a ſtaine, and diſhonour, as this could not chuſe but proue, if it ſhould once come to be ripped vp.

Will you heare a ſtrange kinde of humour in me? you ſhall then know it by this. It is not long ſince you heard me ſay, what a delicate and delightſome place *Florence* was, and what a deale of pleaſure I tooke therein. And now vpon the ſudden, I was growne out of loue with it, the very name of it was growne ſo hatefull vnto me, that it was ready out of a loathing that I had taken to it, to turne vp my ſtomach. It began now (me thought) to ſtinke, I could not endure the ſent of it; euery thing ſeemed ſo foule and ſo filthy to my ſight, that I did now long to be gone, and till then, euery day was to me a thouſand. You may ſee (my maſters) what wonders want of money can worke! You will in a moment hate thoſe things, which you lou'd moſt, when you lacke wherewithall to maintaine both your ſelues, and them. Now my minde gaue me, that there was not ſuch another Citie in the world, as *Bologna*; wherein I ſhould no ſooner ſet my foot, but I ſhould recouer my ſtolne wares, and haue wherewithall to ſpend, and to keepe company with your young Students, lads of the right ſtampe, merry greekes, much of mine owne ſize and marke, with whom I might play three or foure venewes, when I were ſo diſpoſed, without any great diſaduantage of weapon. And the dice might haply haue giuen me ſo lucky a chance, and haue hit ſo right, that I might haue had the good fortune to haue followed my ſtudies: for that learning, which my Lord Cardinall beſtowed vpon me, I had not as yet forgot it, but was very ready and perfect in all that had beene taught me. And queſtionleſſe, with that little learning, that I then had, I might very well haue proceeded Maſter, and made a ſhift to liue by that profeſſion, if that kinde of courſe had beene fitting for me, or that my ſelfe had beene willing to apply my minde hereunto.

Guzman minds to leaue Florence, and to goe to Bologna.

But ſtay a while *Guzman*, be not thou too haſtie: Wilt thou offer to traile a gowne after thee, being ſo weake that thou canſt ſcarce hale a halter at thy heeles? Hold thy hand, this is not a taske for thee to vndertake. There is no talking of commencing Doctor, till the bowe of preferment be drawne home by the ſtrong arme of angels. What canſt thou hope for then, who art ſo poore, that thou art ſcarce able to wagg the ſtring.

I was now fully reſolued to begin my iourney, and to make all the haſte I could. And ſo in an inſtant I put this my intention in execution. Away goes *Sayavedra*, and I together, making directly for *Bologna*. And becauſe I had flying thoughts in my head, I was willing to put wings to my horſe: making ſuch good ſpeed, that we came thither that night; but ſlept very little, for we ſpent the moſt part of it in plotting and caſting about how we ſhould beare our ſelues in this buſineſſe; and whileſt we were diſcourſing to and fro, what were beſt to be done; *Sayavedra* (hauing looked well as it ſhould ſeeme on his owne cards) ſayes vnto me: Sir, I hold it not ſo fit, that I ſhould be ſeene herein at all, eſpecially now at this my firſt flight, but rather to lye cloſe awhile, till we may ſee, where

Guzman, and Sayavedra being come to Bologna, are puzled, not well knowing what courſe to take.

where it will be beſt to giue the wound; and when wee ſhall come to know, where the game lies, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let vs let flie, and ſtrike it dead. For if *Alexandro* be in the towne, and ſhould know that I am here, (which he cannot chooſe, if I ſtir abroad, being ſo well knowne as I am,) he will queſtion me, wherefore I am come hither, and with whom? And that knowne, he will abſent him-ſelfe forthwith from the Citie, and ſo we ſhall be defeated of our purpoſe. Or if he chance but to ſuſpect, that I had a finger in this buſineſſe, and that I was the cauſe of this iourney, and his ſhame, there is no way but one with me, he will ſurely kill me; ſo that neither of theſe two will aduantage vs any thing, nor is fitting for vs to be aduentured on. Beſides, if this web muſt come to be wouen in the Loome of Iuſtice, I muſt bee the maſter-thred to be wrought vpon, there is no auoyding of it: And therefore you haue no reaſon to ſuffer me (conſidering that I can ſtand you in no ſtead, if I be taken and clapt by the heeles) to receiue any farther harme, then what I haue already endured. The beſt courſe then to be taken, I conceiue to be this; That to morrow morning you make inquirie after him, and by one meanes or other (with the beſt ſecreſie you can) ſeeke firſt to know him, and to take particular notice of his perſon; That done, wee will conſult thereof afreſh, and gouerne our ſelues therein, according as occaſion and time ſhall ſerue.

I did not like amiſſe of this, me thought it was good wholeſome counſell. Well; as he had aduiſed me I ſet my ſelfe to worke, I walkt vp and downe the Towne, and after the treading of ſome few ſteps, not being troubled (as fortune would haue it) to tyre out my legs in the ſearch of him, it was my good hap to haue him pointed out vnto me with the finger, telling me; [f] Loe, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the cloathes on his backe did ſpeake what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is *Alexandro*. He was ſtanding amongſt other young men at the Church doore; nor doe I beleeue, that his deuotion was ſuch, as to goe in and out to heare Maſſe, but I was rather of opinion, that hee ſtood there regiſtring thoſe that went in, offering great ſcandall, but ſhowing ſmall reſpect, to that ſacred place. [g] It is a foule ſhame, that this is ſo commonly vſed as it is in moſt parts of the Chriſtian world. I know what I ſpeake; Would to God I knew as well how to reforme this abuſe. Are there not ſtore of ſtreets, and other publike places in the towne, for to make loue in, which wee ſcandall too much already with our lewd ſteps, wanton lookes, diſhoneſt ſignes, and tokens, and perhaps other things of a worſe condition, to intimate our looſe and luſtfull affections, but that wee muſt wrong Gods holy Temple with this our vnciuill and beaſtly behauiour.

But let vs proceed in our former argument, that wee may not leape from a Maſſe, into a Sermon. It ſeemed vnto me, that hee ſtood not there with any great deuotion, for he talkt [h] apace with his hand, and now and then he would breake out in a loud laughter. He had at that time a doublet of mine on his backe of cloath of ſiluer, and a ierkin dreſt with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and ſlaſht cleane through, and lined with the ſame cloath of ſiluer, ſutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the *Seuillian* faſhion, and eight buttons of gold wrought vpon Amber, to make it ſit the cloſer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of *Naples* preſented mee withall, for a certaine diſpatch that I had procured for him, by ſoliciting his buſineſſe with my Lord Embaſſador.

When I came to know mine owne, and ſaw another man weare it before my face, I could haue found in my heart to haue ſtab'd him, and to haue preſently ſtript him of it, ſo did it grieue and vexe the very ſoule of me, that ſuch deare pledges as theſe of my friends loue vnto me, ſhould thus ſore againſt my will, be in another mans poſſeſſion. My blood roſe againſt him, and I was often tempted to haue gone and ſtab'd him, but I held my hand, and ſaid with my

[f] Guzman *finds* Alexandro *with his cloathes on his backe, that he had ſtolne from him.*

[g] *An ill cuſtome, that is too much vſed in many great Cities in the world. Eſpecially in* Madrid, *where to preuent this Church-courting, the men are to goe in and out at one doore, and the women at another.*

Prouerbe.

[h] *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Hablaua por la mano. *That is, he talkt with his hand. Now to talke with the hand, is an ancient faſhion of ſpeaking, by forming letters, and by putting your fingers in diuers and ſundry poſtures, whereby a man makes his mind knowne.* Couar: Verb: Mano. Guzman *in a great rage; and why?*

my ſelfe; No *Guzman*, no; This muſt not be ſo; Better it were, that this thy thiefe, ſhould be conuerted, and liue. For if thou let him liue, he may chance to pay thee; but if thou kill him, thou art ſure to pay for him. And of the two, it is better to take, then to giue. And ſafer it is for thee, that others ſhould be indebted to thee, then thou indebted to others. And it will bee more for thy eaſe, and more eaſily compaſt, to get in a [i] debt, then to pay a debt. Make not thy ſelfe the *defendant*, if thou maiſt be the *plaintiffe*. Goe on faire and ſoftly, be not ſo haſty, for there is no body that runs after vs. And if there be any order or Law in gaming, and if the dice runne true, if the cards bee not packt, but are well ſhuffled and cut, and that there be faire play, vnleſſe the diuell be in it, or my lucke exceeding bad, all the world cannot winne the game from me. For I haue cards enough in mine owne hand to carry it. We are ſure the bird cannot now get from vs; which is that which importeth vs moſt. Let vs not feare the Chaſe, but hunt liuely, for the Buls are ſafe enough; they cannot eſcape vs. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, hee cannot poſſibly deny it. I ſweare I will put him to his necke-verſe, and ſee how well or ill he will come off, and make him to confeſſe vpon the Racke, who put him into thoſe fine cloathes, or in what Fayre or Market he bought them.

Hauing conſulted thus with my ſelfe, I got me home to my lodging, acquainting *Sayavedra* with what I had ſeene. Hee had prouided me my dinner ready for me, and had ſet it downe on the table, as ſoone as he ſaw I was come; And when we had din'd, we pitcht the hay wherewith we were to catch this Cony. We diſcourſed one while of this courſe, another while of that, many deſignes we had, many meanes propounded to come by our owne; but *Sayavedra* (poore man) did ſtagger at them, and was loath to giue way vnto them: He repented him now of the counſell hee had giuen me, fearing therein his own danger. But we concluded in the end, that of all other meanes, *Peace* (if we could draw him to ſome reaſonable compoſition) were the beſt. For it is better to haue one bird in the hand, then two in the [k] buſh. And a bad [l] Accord, is better then a good Plea: Leſſe harme euer comming of agreeing, then ſuing. So that at laſt, we grew to this concluſion, that I, by a third perſon, ſhould vſe ſome meanes, to haue his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the buſineſſe, and the whole manner how it was carried, giuing him a large account of euery particular thing, remitting my ſelfe to his good will and pleaſure, how he in his owne diſcretion ſhould thinke meet I deſeru'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not enforce mee (conſidering my faire manner of proceeding with him) to recouer mine owne by rigour of Law, being there was *Euidentia facti*; beſides many other pregnant proofes to be produced, that theſe goods were mine. And ſo I did, as we had deuiſed; hauing made choice of a diſcreet perſon, who ſhould ſecretly and with fitting language, deliuer thus much vnto him. But becauſe *Power* is commonly accompanied with *Pride*, and *Pride* is ſtill attended with *Tyranny*, he was ſo farre from compounding the buſineſſe, that he made little reckoning of it, taking it ill at his hands that treated with him about it, wiſhing him that hee ſhould ſpeake no more of it, deeming it as an *affront* done vnto his honour, and a meere defamation. He feigned him-ſelfe to be greatly wronged, though he knew well enough that I was he, that was iniur'd; and without giuing vs either good hopes, or good words, he diſpatcht my meſſenger.

When I receiu'd this anſwer, I hatched a thouſand euill imaginations in my heart. But becauſe I would not returne euill for euill, I reſolued to talke with ſome one Lawyer or other of that Vniuerſity, that ſhould be recommended vnto me for the nimbleneſſe of his wit, and ſoundneſſe of iudgement; to whom I opening my caſe (fearing the ſucceſſe thereof, for that my aduerſaries father was ſo powerfull) might craue his opinion, and that hee would aſſiſt me with his beſt aduice and counſell, for the better proſecuting of his buſineſſe. Hee plainly

Prouerbe.
[i] Mas facil cobrar, que pagar.

Prouerbe.
[k] *The Spaniſh prouerb is,* Mas valia paxaro en mano, que Buey volando.
Better a bird in hand, then a Vulture flying. Signifying thereby, That what a man hath ſafe and ſure in his power, is much better then the vncertaine hopes of great matters, by reaſon of thoſe many accidents that may interhappen.
Couarr. Verb: Bueytre.

Prouerbe.
[l] De menor daño mal conçierto que buen pleyto.
The tyranny of great perſons.

plainly told me; Sir, it is well enough knowne in this Towne, what manner of man *Alexandro* is, as alſo his lewd and idle courſes, which in ſome other place, would be a ſufficient information againſt him. Beſides, there is ſo much truth in that, which you vrge againſt him, that it is manifeſtly apparant to as many as know him, or ſhall heare you. You haue right on your ſide, a iuſt and a good cauſe, and therefore I would aduiſe you to frame an information againſt him, and to deſire iuſtice. All *Bologna*, hath taken notice already of this theft of his; for, as ſoone as he came hither with it, it was preſently knowne, that theſe clothes were none of his owne; as well, becauſe he cauſed them to be altred, and fitted to his owne bodie; as alſo, for that he carried hence with him no lambes to ſell, nor any other kinde of merchandize, whereby he ſhould make ſo rich a returne. Beſides, another companion of his, in whom he put much truſt, ſtole a good part of theſe goods from him, that he might likewiſe gaine thereby a part of his Pardons, & Indulgences. You ſee now, what courſe you muſt be faine to take, what lyes in me to releeue you, you may be aſſured of the beſt furtherance and the beſt counſell that I can giue you, for the countenancing of this your cauſe.

Whereupon, I being very deſirous, that a bill ſhould be exhibited againſt him, he preſently (according to my information) drew one out, which I forthwith preſented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the Iudge in all Cauſes Criminall. But, be it as it may be, whether it were immediatly from the Iudge him-ſelfe, or from the Notarie, I know not which, nor from whence, nor how it came to paſſe, but ſure I am, that this buſineſſe of mine was inſtantly ouer all the Towne, and particular notice was giuen thereof vnto *Alexandro's* father. And for that he was a man of authoritie in that Towne, and carried a great hand there amongſt them, he hyes him in all haſte to the Iudge, and there accuſing me for this my bold attempt, and inconſiderate raſhneſſe, (as it pleaſed him to terme it) he formed a complaint againſt me, that I had defamed, and diſhonoured his houſe, and that therefore he was of purpoſe come vnto him to deſire his lawfull fauour, and that he would be pleaſed to doe him iuſtice, to the end that I might be ſeuerely puniſhed for this my preſumption. I know not how, but the matter was ſo carried betweene them, that it had beene better for me, to haue held my peace. He was a powerfull man in that Citie, and the Iudge (it ſeemed) was very willing to pleaſure him. I began now to feare, that occaſions of quarrell would be pickt againſt me; mole-hils made mountaines; and this my loſſe, turne to my greater loſſe; making my vndoing, an occaſion of my farther vndoing. For *Loue*, *Intereſt*, and *Hatred*, are euer maine enemies to the *Truth*. And in many places, As a man is befriended, ſo his Cauſe is ended. But he that hath both money and friends, is ſure to worke out his ends. Money is of no great thickneſſe, yet it dulls the double edg'd ſword of iuſtice, if it but once offer to touch it. Gold, is a heauy mettall; and that makes the ballance of Iuſtice ſo light. I did ſpit as it were againſt heauen, the driuell whereof fell vpon my owne face; I ſhot my arrowes vp into the ayre, and they returned backe againe vpon mine owne boſome; the innocent paying for the [m] nocent; and the iuſt, for the vniuſt.

Truthes enemies.

What abates the edge of Iuſtice?

Prouerbe.
[m] Pagan los iuſtos, por peccadores.
[n] Mucho daña, el mucho dinero.

Much [n] money, does much harme; But much more, the euill intention of an euill man. And therefore where an ill-minded man, and a great maſſe of money meet together and ſhake hands, there is much need of helpe from heauen, to free an innocent ſoule out of their cruell clawes. Good Lord deliuer vs from out their clutches; for they are more griping and tyrannous, then thoſe of Tygers, or of Lyons. Their will is a law; what-ſoeuer they deſire, that they doe; right (when they liſt) ſhall be wrong; and wrong, right: And no man muſt controll them for it; nor dare to ſay, blacke is their eye; leſt he chance to loſe both his owne, for prying too neere into the ſecrets of theſe earthly gods. O that there were men of that goodneſſe and courage, that would

not

not sticke to tell them, and plainly giue them to vnderstand; that the money, they thus vnlawfully take, shall last with them but a while; but the fire, wherewith they shall be tormented for it, shall continue for euer.

The Iudge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofes, but so short, that it was not possible for me to make my information according to that scantling. In this you may see the iniustice that he did me. Who did euer till now know a Iudge restraine the Plaintiffe of lawfull time to make his proofes, as he did me, especially when I did alleage for my selfe, that the information was to come from *Siena*, where the theft was committed, whence I was to procure it, for otherwise I could not haue it. But to alleage this, or not alleage it, all was one. I must be content, will I, nill I, to sit downe with this losse. There was no fence for it. And to this purpose, before I passe any farther, I will tell you what happned in a little Village of *Andaluzia*.

A short tale of an Alcalde.

There was a certaine sessing to be set in a ratable proportion, vpon the Towne-dwellers, and borderers there-about, for some publike peece of worke, that was to goe in hand; and the Collectors that were appointed to gather the money, had put into their rolle (to contribute thereunto) a Gentleman of as ancient a house, as any in those parts; who taking himselfe therein to be greatly wronged, made his complaint against the collectors. But for all that, they did not strike his name out of the rolle. Now, when the time was come for the levying of these moneyes, they went vnto this Gentleman to demand so much of him, as he was rated at in their note; He refused to pay it. Whereupon they distrained on his goods, and paid themselues. The Gentleman being much offended with this their proceeding, goes forthwith to his Lawyer, asks his counsell, who (in conclusion) drawes me a petition for him, grounded vpon all both Law, and Reason, wherein he layes open his ancient Gentry, and the nobleness of his House, and that in regard thereof he was priuiledged from all manner of sessings, and such other the like payments, and that therefore he did humbly petition the Court, that they would be pleased to giue present order, that what the Collectors had forcibly taken from him, might againe be restored, and be deliuered backe vnto him, as in all equitie it ought. When this petition was by them deliuered vnto the *Alcalde*, hauing read it, and heard what they could say for themselues, he called to the Register, and said vnto him: Mark well, what I shal say vnto you, & see you set it down in the very same words, as I shall deliuer it vnto you. This Petitioner (then said he) as he is a Gentleman, I will by no meanes debarre him of his priuilege, God forbid I should denie him his iust request; but as he is a poore man, his House growne now to decay, and himselfe (as you see) in want, I hold it very fit, that he pay as others doe.

That I had iustice on my side, no man doubted it; it was so publike a thing, that all the world tooke notice of it. But I was poore and needy, and therefore it was fit I should pay for all, and there was no reason (in that respect) that they should doe mee iustice. I presently smelt a rat; I saw this was a bad signe, and was shrewdly afraid, that all my labour would be lost. But I could not for all this perswade my selfe, nor could it sincke into my head, that I should be that man, of whom it is said by way of prouerbe; *Paçiente, y apaleado:* That I must goe away with the wrong, and the blowes too. First be made cuckold, and afterwards knockt for my prating. Well; such was my hard fortune, that being not able to bring in my proofes in so short a time, it so fell out with me, that my Bill of Complaint, was throwne out of the Court, and held as a thing of no validitie or force in Law, and that of the aduerse part, tooke place against me; declaring there in Court, that I by this my petition, had framed an infamous Libell against his sonne, by meanes whereof his House, and his honour was much defamed; adding and interserting, *in maiorem cautelam*, I know not what a world of words, and what strange and intricate termes. That I did *sponte, indubitatè,*

Prouerbe. Cornudo, y apaleado, *Is prouerbially spoken of those, who besides the wrong they haue received are themselues condemned as faultie.* Covarr. verb. Apaleado.

dubitatè, &c. That I did it wittingly and willingly, impudently and malitiously, aggrauating the matter against me with all the odious termes they could deuise, that if I should set them downe one by one, they would take vp a whole sheet of paper. Alleaging farther against me, that forasmuch as his sonne, was a quiet, honest, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good both report, and life, I did deserue I know not what exemplarie punishment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all was too little, that I knew not what to make of it, nor what a Gods name, they would doe with me. Which things, when they were read vnto me, I said to my selfe; These men may haue healthy bodies, but I am sure they haue sicke soules; They may haue good purses, but I finde (to my cost) they haue bad consciences. I was careless, (as one that was confident of a good cause) I neuer shrunke aside, and as I was afterwards going about my businesse, that my sute might not fall, for want of following, I was taken vp in the midst of the street by an Arrest, and presently carried away to prison, without any other information against me, saue only the putting vp of my petition, and acknowledging it to be mine.

Guzman clapt in prison.

There is no sword, that hath so keene and sharpe an edge, as Calumnie, and false Accusation: and then cuts deepest, when it is in the hand of a tyrannous Iudge; whose force and power is such, that it is able to ouerthrow, and lay leuell with the ground, the best grounded Iustice that is, though it haue neuer so sure, neuer so strong a foundation. Which it doth then most, and most easily, when a poore mans cause comes in his way, who suspects (poore harmelesse soule) nothing lesse, then to receiue hurt from him, to whom he flyes for helpe. My businesse was plaine, no tricks, no giggs in it, I did only set downe the naked truth, but they made it I know not how, by their quillets and deuices, knotty and vneuen, though there was not a man, neither within, nor without the Towne, that did not know, all was true, that I had deliuered; and all this did plainly appeare to the Iudge to be so, and that I had sufficient information.

Little reckning made of the poore.

All this is very good; yet for all this (goodman *Guzman*) giue me leaue to tell you, that you are a goose-cap. Thou art poore, thou wanteſt fauour, and friends; and therefore art neither to be heard, nor beleeu'd. These are not Cases, that are to be brought before the Tribunals of men; but when thou hast occasion to haue thy cause tryde, goe get thee to God, petition him, where the truth shall appeare face to face, without any need of the fauour of thy friend, nor an Aduocate to plead thy cause, nor a Register to record it, nor a Iudge to wrest it. But here they made a sport of Iustice, and like Iuglers plaid *leggerdemaine* with me. They punisht me, as an vnmannerly man of my tongue, a lyar, and a lewd companion. I had spent my moneyes, lost my goods, put in prison, gyves clapt on my legs, treated with euill language, vpbraiding mee with many foule and vnciuill reproches, vnworthy my person, without suffering me to open my mouth in mine owne defence. And when I would haue answered their obiections, and giuen them satisfaction by writing, when they saw how the world went with me, my Proctor forsooke me, my Solicitor would not come at me, my Aduocate refused to plead for me, so that I only now remained in the power of the publike Notarie. The only comfort that I had, was the generall voice of my wrong, comforting me, that that terrible and fearefull day, would one day come, that the powerfull shall for all his power, be condemned to Hell, and that there, your *potentes*, *potenter punientur*, your mighty men shall be mightily punished; for that they are accursed of God for peruerting of Iustice. And that which he shall leaue behinde him, shall not continue to the third heyre, though he tye his land neuer so fast, nor make neuer so strong a conueyance, that it shall not goe from the house: For he cannot (though he would neuer so faine) tye the inclinations of those that are to succeed him; nor is there any preuention, that he can vse, of that force as the least

haire

haire of his head, to make any reſiſtance againſt Gods diuine will and pleaſure. And it is to be beleeued as an article of thy faith, that their lands and eſtates muſt be ſpent and conſumed, for that they are the grindings of the face of the poore, vngodly gaine, the bloud of the innocent, gotten in rage, and maintained with lyes.

But thou wilt ſay vnto me; Truſt them with ſo much more, till that day come, and you ſhall ſee whether they will make any bones of either taking the one, or thinking on the other. Where-unto I anſwer, that how ſleight a reckoning ſoeuer thou mak'ſt of it, and that it ſeemes ſo long a day to thee, that it will neuer come, I doe not know what theſe kinde of men may thinke of it; but I know very well, that it will come, and that quickly, and ſooner perhaps then thou art aware. And then it ſhall ſeeme ſo ſhort vnto thee, that thou wilt ſay; I am but newly come forth with my feet from out my bed, and the night is already come, and I muſt ſhut vp my eyes in darkneſſe.

But perhaps, thou wilt reply vnto me; I pray how cam'ſt thou by ſo many good ſuits of clothes, ſo much money, and other things of value? Thou didſt not get them by the ſpade, nor the plough, thou didſt not digge, nor delue for them. What didſt thou make in that ſtreet, vpon that occaſion and accident you wot of, when you ſeru'd your Maiſter the French Embaſſador? Is this (quoth I) the rod, you ſeeke to beat me withall? Thou art caught in thine owne trap; thine owne words doe condemne thee. For thou would'ſt liken theſe goods of mine, to thoſe that are gotten by lewd women, whereas thou doeſt not, but oughteſt to vnderſtand, that their gaine is lawfull, though the act be vnlawfull; and thou art in conſcience bound to recompence her, if thou haſt had thy deſire of her, and didſt make vſe of her for thine owne intereſt. Beſides, the caſe is not alike. For it is publikely knowne to all the world; that though a corrupt Iudge commit neuer ſo many miſchiefes, neuer ſo vniuſtly put men to death, neuer ſo wrongfully rob a man of his goods, and vndoe him by his partiall and corrupt dealing, thou ſhalt haue little or no remedie againſt him, nor canſt thou take that from him, which he hath ſtolne from others. For thou art not his competent Iudge, nor of that power as to adiudge againſt his will that to others, which he hath taken from them. For though it be true, that he is culpable therein towards others; thou ſhalt be ſure to be found culpable towards him. And howſoeuer he ſcape, thou ſhalt be ſure to ſmart for it. Beleeue me, I tell thee what is true, nay, I tell thee truth it ſelfe; truth vpon truth.

But what good does this doe me? My name is *Pero Garzia*, I am a kinde of *Tom-Tell-Troth*. A free *Aruntius*, that muſt vtter my minde plainly, though perhaps I may chance to ſmart for it. If we ſhould all ſtriue to heare truth, and to make ſatisfaction for thoſe wrongs we haue done, we ſhould ſee the Hoſpitals to be quickly fill'd. And now in good ſooth, I bethinke my ſelfe, that it is better to enter into Heauen with one eye, then into Hell with two. And that *S. Bartholmew*, had rather haue his skin pull'd ouer his eares, then to ſleepe (as they ſay) in a whole skin, and to goe therewith to eternall torment. And that *S. Lawrence* made the better choiſe, when he choſe rather to be burned here, then there. But (alas) we cannot be all *S. Bartholmewes*, nor *S. Lawrences*, ſo as we be ſaued, that is ſufficient. For mine owne part, I ſhould be glad of the like good fortune. For he ſhall performe no ſmall peece of worke, that ſhall worke out his ſaluation. But to be ſaued, many things are required. And it ſhall be impoſſible for thee to be ſaued, by keeping thoſe goods in thy hands which thou haſt ſtolne, when as thou art able (if thou wilt) to make reſtitution. Which thou art loth to do, or doſt not at al, that thou maiſt leaue it to thy heires, diſ-inheriting thoſe, that are the true owners thereof: And therefore doe not thou ſeeke to trouble either thy ſelfe, or vs, to excuſe theſe thy robberies and vniuſt actions, by cunning ſhifts, to cozen thine owne ſoule, and by leſſening

and mincing of them, as though they were matters of nothing, and therefore need not much to trouble thy conſcience; for this that I deliuer vnto thee is the Catholike faith; and thoſe other thy tricks and deuices, the ſleights and ſubtleties of Satan. Miſerable, and moſt wretched is that man, who for the maintaining of his pride and pompe in the world, and that he may leaue either his children, or his nephewes great titles, and rich reuenues, hath heaped vp riches by indirect meanes, and hath filled his houſe vp to the top with ill-gotten gaine, contenting himſelfe, ſo as he may leaue a name here behinde him vpon earth, to leaue his ſoule, to liue hereafter for euer in hell. Theſe (I aſſure you) are no ieſting matters, they are not to be made ſport withall; for ere long, thou (to thine owne coſt) ſhalt finde that to be too true, which I now tell thee. I call thee thine owne ſelfe, to be a witneſſe of that which I haue ſaid; I deſire no other. And let me tell thee withall; That thou thy ſelfe doeſt not know when thy dayes ſhall haue an end, or whether thou ſhalt haue ſo much time of life lent thee, as to reade out theſe good leſſons, which I reade vnto thee, howſoeuer fooliſh they may ſeeme vnto thee. But in that other world, thou wilt be of another minde. Nor doe not thou flatter thy ſelfe, That thou haſt built ſuch a Chappell, and maintaineſt ſo many Chaplaines to pray for thy ſoule, but at mine, and other mens coſt, ſtripping one of his coat, another of his cloake, where-vnto thou hadſt no right in the world. For Maſſes (though *S. Gregorie* himſelfe ſhould ſay them) cannot benefit the damned, there is no redemption, when the ſentence is once paſt.

O good God! When ſhall I make an end of troubling thee with theſe, and the like diſcourſes? For I know thou doeſt not looke for theſe Sermons from me, nor any other kinde of wholſome doctrine, but expecteſt only ſuch things, as may ſerue to entertaine the time, or to bring thee aſleepe. I doe not know how to excuſe this terrible temptation, that I haue to talke in this faſhion, ſaue only by telling thee, that it is with me, as it is with drunkards, who no ſooner get a penny, but they goe, and ſpend it at the Tauerne.

There is not any [p] ſhauings, of mettall, ſtone, or wood, that I can meet withall, good or bad, one amongſt another, but that I ſeeke to make ſome vſe of it, and ſtudie to ſerue my ſelfe with it, only that I may the better ſerue thee. And if that which I haue ſaid, ſeeme vnto thee to be well ſaid, it is well that I haue ſaid it: but if it ſeeme ill vnto thee, reade it not ouer any more, nor goe therein a iot farther. For it is all [q] mountraynous matter, rough and craggy, wherein perhaps, thou ſhalt meet with more paine, then profit, yet doe thou but write the like, and I ſhall patiently endure whatſoeuer thou ſhalt ſay. But I will conclude this Chapter with telling thee; That when misfortune ſhall follow a man, no diligence, nor good counſell ſhall auaile him; but ſhall, where hee thinks to gather wooll, goe away with his fleece ſhorne.

[p] *The Spaniſh word is,* Ripio. Cerca de los canteros, ſon las piedras menudas que ſaltan de las pieças que van labrando. ò otro genero de piedras menudas, para rehinchir las paredes. bezimo, meter vno mucho ripio, quando la meteria que va tratando, ingiere algunas coſas friuolas, à ſemejança del que haze paredes, que poniendo en las dos hazes piedras grandes, todo lo en de medio hinche deſte caſcaxo y ripio. Covarr. verb. Ripio.

[q] Todo es matas, y por rozar. id eſt, Todo es trabajoſo, y difficultoſo. Ib. verb. Rozar.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache, *diſcourſeth on the iniuſtice, which ſome Iudges doe, blinded by gaine, or by paſſion.*

I Came out of priſon, as out of a priſon. I need not to indeare it more vnto you. For, the leaſt I can ſay of it, is; That it is a true and liuely picture of Hell it ſelfe. I got forth, out of a deſire that I had to enioy my former libertie; and had I not (thinke you) great cauſe to deſire it? For he, whom they had ſo vniuſtly bereaued of it, had good cauſe to feare greater dangers to enſue. For if ſo iuſt and ſo faire a buſineſſe, as this was, did fadge ſo ill with me at the firſt, and that my Aduerſarie had the better of the day of me, when I thought my ſelfe ſureſt of the victorie; I might very well, and with a great

great deale of reaſon perſwade my ſelfe, that in negotiating the reſt, I ſhould finde much difficultie. Perhaps theſe men thinke, that God ſleepeth. But doe not withall conſider, that euen thoſe, who had no knowledge of him, both did, and doe feare him.

Æſope asking *Chilo*, what God did: How he ſpent his time: And in what he did buſie and imploy himſelfe: Told him; In exalting the humble, and in bringing downe the proud. I am a ſinfull man, a lewd liuer, aud a naughty fellow; and ſithence they did inflict puniſhment vpon mee, ſure I muſt be in ſome fault. For it is not to be ſuppoſed, that an honourable Iudge, one that profeſſes knowledge, and holineſſe of life, will be wonne either by fauour, by gifts, or by feare, to peruert the courſe of Iuſtice, or to lay ſo heauy a burthen on his tender conſcience. Eſpecially conſidering with them-ſelues; That euery man ſhall be rewarded according to his workes. But let them goe as they are. For the Iudges of the earth muſt be iudged; and therefore I will not iudge them, nor grinde them any more with this ſtone. I had now beene taught experience to my coſt, and ſufficiently beaten with mine owne rod, inſomuch that hauing beene once ſcalded with hot water, I was now afraid of cold. That from that day forward, I would neither paſſe by the *Torrone*, which was the place of Iuſtice, nor by the priſon, nor ſcarce come within foure ſtreets where they were. Not ſo much for my impriſonment, but for the wrong I receiued therein, contrary to all Law, and reaſon. I did not ſee a hackney-man with a wand in his hand, nor a Carrier with a cudgell vnder his arme, but I preſently thought vpon the [a] *Vare*, or rod of Iuſtice. Euer after I reſolued with my ſelfe, rather to ſit downe with loſſe, then to goe to try all of Law; at leaſt to vſe all the meanes that I could to the contrary, till I ſaw there was no other remedie, being compelled thereunto rather by force, then neceſſitie. The reaſon mouing me there-unto, is that counſell which I gaue another in the time of my impriſonment.

God exalts the humble, and humbles the proud.

[a] Vare, quaſi Virga.

There was a certaine fellow brought to priſon, for that he had bought a mandillion, which they ſaid, was ſtolne, the owner whereof was my very good friend. Who told me, that albeit he knew, that the partie impriſoned, was a perſon not to be ſuſpected to be conſenting to any ſuch baſe kinde of pilfrings, yet at leaſt, he would make him, to bring forth him, that ſold it him; for when that mandillion was ſtolne, he loſt many other things with it, and therefore, though he might haue his mandillion reſtored vnto him, he would not reſt ſo contented, but would either loſe it, or recouer the reſt.

I told him; Sir, you are my friend; The Law is coſtly, and therefore let me aduiſe you not to enter into it; you are fairely offered, and therefore (if you be wiſe) take your mandillion, leſt you ſpend your cloake, to recouer your coat; you will get nothing in the end by the bargaine; cloake, and coat, and whatſoeuer elſe you pretend, will goe all away in fees, ſo that the Lawyer at laſt will haue all, and your ſelfe nothing. He would not be ruled, and being (as all ſelfe-will'd men are) ſtrongly wedded to his owne opinion, he flatly told me he would goe to a tryall with him, and ſee what would come of it. For he aſſured himſelfe, that he had a great deale of reaſon on his ſide, and that his Proctor, and his Aduocate had told him, that he needed not to doubt of his cauſe, and that it would ſurely paſſe on his ſide. In concluſion, he had ſpent ſome fifteene dayes in following the ſute againſt him; in all which time there was no fault to be found againſt the priſoner; but prou'd himſelfe in the end to be an honeſt man; whereupon, he was preſently freed out of priſon; my friend perceiuing at length, how he had play'd the foole, repented himſelfe of the loſt time and charges, which he had ſpent in the ſute. So that he was forced to ſell his cloake, & was yet neuer a whit neerer the recouerie of his mandillion; & I doubt not, but the Lawyers ſtript him to the very ſhirt, before they had done with him.

No good comes of going to Law.

Let thoſe therefore, that can excuſe it, leaue off to goe to Law; for your

The nature of Law-ſutes.

Law-ſutes, are like vnto your Mats; whereunto, they that make them, goe adding one by one, ruſh to ruſh, and neuer make an end, till they cut them off, or cleane rid their hands of them.

Law-ſutes, for whom they are fitteſt.

Law-ſutes, belong properly to great perſons, and for great and important cauſes; for they haue wherewithall to hold plea, and are able to maintaine it. To theſe, the doores are ſet wide open, they are vſherd in by the officers of the Court, all ſhew reſpect vnto them, and if they ſpend their money, they haue money to ſpend. But as for thee, and me, we muſt for the recouering of fiue Royals, ſpend fifteene, and loſe a hundred more in the loſſe of our time, beſides a thouſand troubles, and as many enemies, which we ſhall get thereby. And worſe will it goe with vs, if we ſhall chance to goe to Law with one, that is mightier then our ſelues; for, that a poore man, ſhould goe to Law with a rich man, is all one, as if hee ſhould offer to wreſtle and try his ſtrength with a Lyon, or a Beare. It is true, ſome ſuch there haue beene, that haue giuen them the foyle, and ſometimes quite ouerthrowne them, but this hath ſeldome happened, and when it doth, it is held ſo ſtrange a thing, that it is accounted as a wonder, or ſome rare miracle. Thoſe ieſtes are vnſauory [b], that turne to a mans hurt. It is no ſporting with edge tooles. Doeſt thou not ſee, and know, that theſe kinde of men, will make the Sunne to ſhine at midnight? And that they caſt out deuils in the name of *Belzebub*? But as for vs, poore ſoules, *La lechona, nos pare gozques*; All things goe croſſe with vs; eſpecially, in cauſes criminall, where the ſtreet of Iuſtice, is of that great bredth and length, where the Iudge may eaſily winde himſelfe, whither, or which way he will, goe on this, or that ſide of the ſtreet, or to keepe the midle way, as hee himſelfe ſhall haue moſt minde to. He can either lengthen, or ſhorten his arme, and reach out his hand, either to helpe thee, or to hurt thee, according as it ſhall haue a feeling of the buſineſſe.

Prouerbe.
[b] No ſon buenas burlas, las que ſalen à la cara.

Prouerbe.

Good counſell, for thoſe that goe to Law.

And therefore, to him, that will not wilfully caſt him-ſelfe away, but deſires to haue a faire end of his buſineſſe, my aduice is; That he guild the Iudges bookes, and preſent the publike Notary with a ſiluer pen; So may he quietly lay him-ſelfe down to ſleepe, and take no farther thought for the matter, nor ſtand in need of *Doctor*, or *Proctor*, to plead and ſolicite his cauſe. If that courſe were taken in many Cities of *Italy*, which is vſed in diuerſe other *Prouinces*, yea alſo among the very *Barbarians*; with whom, when any one is abſolued or condemned, the Iudge ſets downe in his ſentence vnder his owne hand, the cauſe that moued him to giue ſuch ſentence, and vpon what grounds hee did it; ſurely, there would a great deale leſſe euill come of it; for, if he could ſhow good reaſon for that which he did, he need not be aſham'd who ſees it, and the party thereby, whom it concerneth, ſhall remaine well ſatisfied; But in caſe he ſhall not haue proceeded therein according vnto Law, but hath dealt vniuſtly in ſentencing the buſineſſe, ſome other ſuperiour Iudge ſhall bee appointed to rectifie that wrong, and to amend the others errour. And I knew a Iudge my ſelfe, to whom a Merchant paid a round ſumme to haue him paſſe a ſentence on his ſide, thinking thereby ſo to affright the aduerſe party, that deſpayring of any hope of good in his ſute, he might draw him to what compoſition it pleaſed him: Which a particular friend of his vnderſtanding, came vnto the Iudge, and told him; I wonder, Sir, how you could ſentence this cauſe in this manner, being ſo contrary, as it is, to all Law and reaſon. To whom, the Iudge anſwered, That it made no great matter. For he was but a ſub-alternall Iudge, and that there were other Iudges, that were his ſuperiours, who might (if they would) reuerſe that ſentence, nor ſhould the other loſe any thing at all by that, which he had giuen againſt him.

A Iudge on an ill condition, and a worſe conſcience.

Such kind of men as theſe, will not ſtand much vpon committing theſe and the like errours, nor examine themſelues, whether they doe well or ill in it; for with them it is not accounted a fault, though it may truly be call'd *Error de*

pre-

præsenti, an error in the *Indicatiue Mood*, a most foule fault: for in so doing, he doth rather deceiue, then iudge. But in my poore opinion, he is a foole, that may, and will not shunne Law-sutes; And in good Philosophy, *Minus est damnum, vnum sufferre, quam multos*; It is lesse harme, to suffer at one then many mens hands. When thy aduersary does thee an iniurie, it is one alone, that does it; and by him onely dost thou suffer. But if thou goe about to reuenge it, goe which or what way soeuer thou wilt to worke, thou leap'st (as we say) out of the [c] frying-pan into the fire; and seeking to auoid one inconuenience, thou runst headlong into another; nay into many, one vpon the necke of another. Wilt thou see the truth of this? I will show thee the wayes then, wherein thou must walke.

Wise is that man that auoides going to Law. Iniuries to be borne withall.

First of all; Thou maist chance to light vpon an *Alguazil* (who is a common Catch-pole, or apprehender of mens persons) a fellow, that hath neither soule, nor shame, who but the other day, was a *Tauernero*, a seller of wine, as his father was before him, though happely now they keepe no shop. And if the father were a thiefe from the beginning, the sonne is now the greater of the two. Who either bought that *Vare*, which he beares, to finde him meate to put in his mouth; or else hath hired it of another, as a man doth a mule; He is such a kind of poore, yet vnsatiable creature, that he must either steale, or starue; and doth therefore steale, that he may satisfie his hungry maw. And vnder pretence that he is the Kings officer, and carries the Kings white wand, or *Vare* in his hand, throating it out, wheresoeuer he comes, *Alguazil soy, traygo la vara del Rey*; I am an *Alguazil*, and carry the Kings staffe: he neither feares the King, nor keeps his Lawes, but both against the King, against God, & against all law, will he offer thee a hundred excesses, a hundred indignities, both in deeds and in words, that he may moue thy patience so farre, as to make thee ready to run out into resistance of iustice (which is the trap, he sets for thee) and bring thy offence to be criminall; and though thou didst not make any the least stirre, nor hadst any such meaning, yet will he enforce it against thee, and perswade others (all that he can) to beleeue it.

[c] *Prouerbe.* Saltaste de la sarten al fuego.

[d] *Your* Tauerneros *in Spaine, are not of that credit as your* Vintners *with vs, being for the most part poore base rogues! Into whose Tauernes, no man of fashion will come, as holding it to be a discredit so to doe. They haue but one poore lower roome, and dresse no meate.*

Alguazils *are to be auoided.*

What kinde of fellowes they be.

I knew an *Alguazil* in *Granada*, that had two teeth, that were false and counterfaite, and fastned by art to those other that he had in his head. And in a certaine broyle or quarrell that sodainly arose in the street, he comming in among them, he secretly puts his fingers into his mouth, and cunningly pulling them out, causing his gumes wherewithall to bleed; did not shame to say, that comming in to make peace in the Kings name, they were there beaten out. And albeit this businesse did not succeed so well with him, as he could haue wisht it, nor tooke its intended effect, for that the truth thereof came to be knowne; yet did he not giue it ouer for want of following, but vsed all the diligences he could, to possesse the Iudges with this falshood. It will lie in his hands, if thou but speake a word, or wag but a finger, to proue that thou didst giue him either ill language, or blowes; and then will hee presently deliuer thee ouer to his *Corchetes* [e], with command to carry thee to prison. Behold now, what an honorable calling this is, what a gentle craft, what honest men forsooth, are these your *Corchetes*, your Sergeants Yeomen, infamous Villains, Traytors, Thieues, Drunkards, shamelesse Rascals, nay impudency it selfe. Insomuch, that a witty *Lackay* said of himselfe, when they had angred him; He that saies the word *Lackay*, saies a vittailing house; hee that sayes the word *Lackay*, sayes a Tauerne; hee that sayes the word *Lackay*, sayes *Cloacam immunditiæ*, all the vncleannesse that man can imagine. And that woman, that hath taken the paines to bring forth a sonne, that proues a *Lackay*, there is not that wickednesse in the world, which may not be presumed, to haue proceeded from her. So doe I likewise say; that he, that saies the word *Corchete*, (that is, Sergeant or Sergeants Yeoman) there is not that vice, that villanie, that wickednesse, which doth not vtter it selfe in that one word. For they haue neither soule nor

A Tale of an Alguazil *of* Granada.

e Corchete, quasi curuacinete, *which signifies a claspe, that fastens a garment, and shuts it close. And by allusion, those Ministers of Iustice, which hang about a man, and hale him to prison, are called* Corchetes, *because of their taking hold like hooke:. They are the same with your Sergeants yeomen.*

The wicked conditions of these kinde of men.

nor conſcience; And are the onely true pictures, and moſt liuely images, of the Miniſters of hell. So cloſe doe they cling vnto thee, when thou fal'ſt into their clutches; and if they doe not drag thee by the collar, haling and tugging thee as if they would pull out thy throat, (which thou muſt acknowledge for a great & ſingular courteſie) yet at the leaſt ſhalt thou be ſo baſely vſed by them, that the Eagle will carrie away the fearfull Hare with a great deale more clemency and mercy in her ſharpe tallons, then theſe Hell-hounds will thee. They will punch thee, and kicke thee, and elbow-beate thy backe if thou goe not forward as they would haue thee, and will reuile thee with ſuch baſe and bitter tearmes, as if thou wert as bad as they: And for no other cauſe in the world doe they vſe men thus ſcuruily and vnciuilly, ſaue onely to pleaſe their maſter, who they know likes well enough of it; as alſo for that it is a butcherly and beaſtly cuſtome that they haue long kept, and therefore either cannot, or are loath to leaue it. Deeming them-ſelues, both then, and at all times, to bee the onely Lords and Maſters of the world; not conſidering in the meane while, that neither hee, nor they, haue any farther power, then to put thee in ſafe cuſtodie, and that without offering thee any the leaſt wrong or iniurie in leading thee thither.

Priſons, and their keepers, what kind of things they be.

Iuſt after this manner as I haue told thee, will they violently (though thou be neuer ſo willing to goe quietly along with them) thruſt thee this way, and that way, neuer leauing off to trouble and torment thee, till they haue brought thee to priſon. Now, will you that I ſhall tell you, what manner of houſe this is, what the vſage, what you are there to endure, and what kinde of life you muſt leade there? you ſhall meet with it hereafter in its proper place; Let it ſuffice for the preſent, that if it ſhall one day be thy hap to come thither, (which God forbid) after that they haue treated thee ill vpon the way in bringing thee thither, and peraduenture pickt either thy purſe, or thy pocket, and rob'd thee of ſuch moneys as thou hadſt about thee, they will put thee into the hands of ſome churliſh Iaylor, or ſome vnder-keeper of his, (as dogged a rogue as his maſter) who, as if thou wert his ſlaue, will accommodate thee in that ill fauored filthy manner, as he him-ſelfe ſhall thinke fit, nor canſt thou hope for better, vnleſſe thou come off liuely, and pay well for it. Be it better or be it worſe, thou muſt take all patiently, and pocket it with ſilence; for thou art in his houſe, not in thine owne; and in another bodies power, &c. There, neither brauings, nor threatnings, great words, nor bigge lookes, will ſtead thee any thing at all; for they are ſuch bug-beares them-ſelues, that they awe all, but feare none.

The hard condition of priſoners.

Then will they bring thee before the *Alcayde*, or his Deputie, or ſome ſuch like imperious officer or other, before whom thou muſt be faine to come with cap in hand, crowching and creeping vnto him, ſtudying new inuentions of doing reuerence and reſpect vnto him; making new kind of legges, and other vnaccuſtomed courtſies and congies vnto him; though I count this no ſuch great matter, being rather more troubleſome, then hurtfull. For I muſt truly confeſſe vnto you, that there are ſome *Alcaydes*, that carry them-ſelues as fathers towards thoſe that are brought before them; and for mine owne part, I euer found them ſo towards me, ſo that I cannot iuſtly complaine of them. True it is, they will liue by their Offices, as other men doe; they haue no other meanes to maintaine them, it is the trade, whereunto they muſt truſt. Beſides, they come not *gratis* to theſe places of gouernment. If they will come by them, they muſt buy them. Wherefore they doe thee a great fauour, if they doe thee iuſtice; if by their meanes thou come to recouer thine owne, and if they giue way to thee, either to eſcape with life, or to ſuſtaine it, or quietly to order thine owne houſe, or to liue ſetled in thy owne eſtate without diſturbance, or to defend and make good thy plea. But in fine he is thy *Alcayde*, he that muſt iudge and cenſure, either thee, or thy cauſe; He may, or may not, wiſh thee well;

Iudges doe a great fauour, if they doe thee Iuſtice.

well; He hath the Law in his owne hands; thy liberty, or impriſonment lyes in his power. Well; when thou com'ſt to follow thy cauſe, thou muſt goe adoring thy Proctor, or thy Lawyer; but beare this in minde tob I pray, that I now ſay vnto thee, that I ſay nothing of him; for that hath its *Woen*, and its *Woere*, its time, and its place, as your f *Savalo*-pyes for the holy weeke; its weeke ſhall come to, when it ſhall be beſt in ſeaſon.

In briefe, that I may not trouble my ſelfe twice with one ſubiect, and one and the ſelfe-ſame kinde of people; I plainly tell thee, that they will be thy maſters, and that thou muſt ſuffer them, and beare with them, and not only be a ſlaue vnto thy Lawyer, but to thy Solicitour, the Notarie, the Maſter of the Office, the Clarke of the Pleas, the keeper of the papers, and the boy, that is to goe with thy Plea to thy Lawyer. But in caſe, thou goe home to his houſe, or his office thy ſelfe, and thou finde him retired into his chamber, or ſome other priuate with-drawing roome, diſpatching of others, and thou ſtand waiting, looking ſtill when it will come to thy turne to be called in, like thoſe, that ſtanding on the bancke of a Riuer, expect a boat to come ouer vnto them from the other ſide, thou wilt be ſo tyred out with knocking thy heeles againſt a forme, that thou wouldſt rather ſtay the comming forth of ſome furious Bull, then of him. After all this, when thou haſt made a large relation of the whole buſineſſe vnto him, and how the caſe ſtands, he will tell thee, that hee will burne his bookes, and giue ouer the Law, if thy buſineſſe goe not with thee; This is their common language towards all their Clients, but they neither ſatisfie their expectation, nor performe their owne promiſe; for I neuer ſaw any of them, when their cauſes miſcarried, either burne their bookes, or leaue their practiſe. And will haue one thing or other to excuſe themſelues; As that the buſineſſe was not well followed, that diligence was not vſed therein, which ſhould haue beene, or that it was his Clarkes fault, and none of his, who was out of the way, when his buſineſſe was to be done, being either gone, at that very inſtant, with his children to Schoole, or to wait on his Miſtris to Church, by whoſe default the opportunity was loſt of drawing the Petition. Your Aduocate, hath ſome ſmacke of the Law, but little of learning. He dictates, but does not write; and the reaſon is, becauſe they take them too ſoone from Schoole, that they may with as little loſſe of time as they can, apply them to theſe ſtudies, whether that they were ſent thither ſomewhat of the lateſt by their friends, being kept too long from Schoole at firſt; or whether out of a couetous deſire that they had, to haue them fall preſently vpon the g *Digeſts*, leauing the Principles indigeſted. As if good writing ſhould not preſuppoſe good reading, and good reading, and good writing together, beget good Orthography, and bring forth at laſt a good Latine-tongue, which like linckes that belong to one chaine, ought both to be learned, and ioyned together.

But of this enough: Let vs now paſſe on to ſome other Theame. For here, we doe but eate out our cloakes, and ſpend our time to little purpoſe, and leſſe profit. Let vs come to your ordinary Iudge, of whom I haue ſaid ſome-thing vnto you already, nor know I well, what I ſhould ſay more, ſaue that he makes open ſale of *Iuſtice*, hucking with you, to bring you vp to their price, and if you refuſe to giue them, what they require of you, they will plainly tell you, you ſhall looke for no Iuſtice from them; for it is worth more then they aske, and that ſuch a one, that ſtands there by thee, payd a great deale more for it, then he now demands of thee.

But ſay thou ſhouldſt appeale, and come to ſome ſuperior Iudge, which ſeldome happeneth, in regard the fiſh dies here firſt, or is at leaſt ſo ſtaru'd in this ſhallow brooke, before it can recouer that ſea, that it comes thither without any Spawne, poore, and vnprofitable. Thy money is all gone, thou art needy, and not able to wage Law, for want of meanes; There thou ſhalt not find thoſe priuate intereſts, and particular profits which they make to themſelues; but thou ſhalt

f Saualo. *A knowne fiſh, and of a very good reliſh. And may be cal'd* quaſi Sapalo, à Sapore. *In Latine they call it* Alopa, triſſa, clupea. *It vſually dies, when it comes into freſh water.* Vid. Rondelecius de Piſcibus, lib. 7. cap. 15.

He that hath to doe with Lawyers, muſt dance attendance.

g *The Bookes of the Ciuill Law, which being in many huge Volumes, and ſcattered peeces, Iuſtinian the Emperor cauſed to be digeſted into a leſſer number, and better forme; whence they were called* Digeſts.

Your ordinary Iudge, what manner of fellow he is.

Your ſuperior Iudge, what manner of man he is.

ſhalt meet perhaps with paſſions, which ſometimes proue as bad. And as their purſes, haue not paid for thy breeding, ſo what care they whether thou be whipt or hang'd. Six yeeres, more or leſſe, for which terme thou art condemned to the Galleyes, what is it to them? It hurts not them; They are not ſenſible of it; they feele not that, which thou feeleſt; nor ſuffer that, which thou ſuffereſt. Theſe, I tell thee, are the Gods vpon earth, they goe to their goodly houſes, where they are well attended; they paſſe through the ſtreets, where they are honoured, and adored, and feared of the people. What care then canſt thou thinke, or conceiue with thy ſelfe, that they ſhould take of ſuch a poore ſoule as thou art? It is in their hands, to ſaue thee, or condemne thee; and ſo they will deale with thee, as their owne paſſions ſhall incline them to thy good, or hurt; or as ſome great and powerfull friends ſhall perſwade with them.

A horrible ſentence of a Judge of Sevill.

I knew a certaine Iudge in *Sevill*, who condemned a fellow *in pœna pecuniaria*, to pay ſuch a ſumme of money by way of mulct for his offence that he had committed. Out of which he awarded two hundred ducats to be paid into the Chamber of *Sevill* by way of fine: with this command or *proviſo* in the ſentence; That not being able to pay in the ſaid ſumme, he ſhould be ſent to ſerue in the Galleyes for ten yeeres, and to rowe at the Oare like a ſlaue, of free coſt, without receiuing one penny of pay. And when the terme of thoſe his ten yeeres were expired, he ſhould be brought backe againe to priſon to the ſaid Citie of *Sevill*, and from thence to the market-place, where he was to be hanged on the common gallowes.

The anſwer of a country clowne, to an ignorant Painter.

Had it beene my caſe, before I would haue giuen ſuch a fooliſh ſentence, I ſhould rather haue ordered it thus; That he ſhould haue beene hang'd firſt, and afterwards ſent vnto the Galleys; ſure, the cart, in this caſe, ſhould haue gone before the horſe. Iumping for all the world with that which was ſaid to an ignorant and vnskilfull painter, who talking one day in company, that ere long he would white his houſe, and afterwards paint it; nay, ſaid one of the ſtanders-by, you ſhall doe much better, if you paint it firſt, and white it afterwards.

There are ſome Iudges, whoſe tongues, ſo out-runne their diſcretion, that whatſoeuer comes firſt to mouth, it muſt out, nay, and muſt ſtand for good, though his owne iudgement vpon its better conſideration, chide his tongue for being too forward. And if he that is Aſſeſſor with him, and is ioyned as his fellow-Iudge in Commiſſion with him, ſhall take vpon him to moderate the matter, and ſeeme but the leaſt way to croſſe what he hath done, or ſhall but abate the leaſt tittle of what he hath decreed, or in any manner at all to mitigate the rigour of his ſentence, it is as if you ſhould take a thing from the Altar; ſo ſacred, doe theſe vnhallowed Iudges, hold their owne actions; Taking it as an indignitie, not to be endured. Looke well into the buſineſſe then, and conſider with thy ſelfe, how much the leſſer euill it is of the two, that he that hath offended thee, ſhould goe away with this his inſolencie, and thou thereby remaine free from ſome great inconuenience. Which thou oughteſt to permit, not only (as hath beene ſaid before) that thou maiſt not be ſubiect to ſo many; but alſo, that thou maiſt not hurt thy ſelfe, by putting thy houſe out of order, and (by conſequence) thy honour and perſon in perill, as alſo that of thy wife, thy children, and thy whole eſtate.

It is a good thing in any man, to neglect an iniurie.

But perhaps thou wilt ſay vnto me: O, it is not fit, that this Villaine, that hath thus wronged me, ſhould carry it away ſo, and laugh at me when he has done. I confeſſe it is not fit, nor is there any reaſon, why it ſhould be ſo: yet, if thou muſt needs be laught at, it were better but one ſhould laugh at thee, then many. For if thou wilt but hold thy peace, and ſeeme not to be moued at it, but to let it paſſe, and take no notice thereof, only he can laugh at thee in his ſleeue that hath done thee this wrong; but if thou ſeeke to right thy ſelfe by Law, and be afterwards ouerthrowne, thouſands will laugh at thee, that thou

thou ſhouldſt be ſuch a foole, to caſt away thy money ſo wilfully amongſt the Lawyers, hauing bought nothing therewith but meere ſmoake, and a little of their vnprofitable breath; and that Lawyer, will ſcoffe and deride thee moſt, that hath put thee in moſt hope, becauſe by that meanes he hath moſt pickt thy purſe.

Well, you will ſay, it may be ſo, I care not for all this; Let the worſt come, that can come, there are many Churches to flie vnto for ſhelter, and the world is wide enough for vs all. Tell me (thou ignorant man) thinkeſt thou to excuſe one error with another? Suppoſe the beſt that can befall thee in this caſe, it is no more but *temporis dilatio*, a little gaining of time. Neither there (no not in the Church) wilt thou be able to endure either the Prieſt, or his Curate, or that worſhipfull maſter his Sexton. And what thinkſt thou, that thou muſt ſuffer, that they may beare with thee, and giue thee leaue to ſtay amongſt them? Thinkſt thou, there is no more in it then ſo, to ſay, I will goe to ſome Church, or other, and there take Sanctuary? Thou wilt meet with more troubles there, then thou art aware of. This incommodate accommodating of thy ſelfe, will coſt thee money, nor canſt thou continue there for euer. Thinkeſt thou it ſo ſmall an inconuenience, to leaue thine owne home, and ſo to goe ſeeke thy fortune in forraine Countries? If haply thou be a *Spaniard*, (as I my ſelfe am) whereſoeuer thou ſhalt come, thou art ſure to be an vnwelcome gueſt, thou ſhalt be ill receiued amongſt them, how faire a ſhow ſoeuer they make thee; for we haue this aduantage of all other nations in the world, that we are more abhorred in all places, and of all perſons, then any other people vnder the Sunne; but whoſe fault it is, I know not. Thou goeſt wandring through deſarts, from Inne to Inne, from a priuate lodging, to a common vittayling houſe. Thinkſt thou, that they are all honeſt people, that haue for their Patron the good King, *Don Alonſo?* Inne-keepers, and Vittaylers, thou knoweſt not (poore ſilly ſoule) what kinde of vermine they are, and therefore thou ſet'ſt ſo light by them, and ſeek'ſt not to flie from them.

The Spaniards *hated in all places, and of all perſons.*

Laſtly, thou ſhalt endure many inconueniences in theſe thy trauels abroad; ſuffering heats and colds, winde and raine, bad weather, and bad wayes, and with it the diſtaſtfull company of diuers diſtinct Nations; one while it raines, another while it ſnowes, the riuers riſe, and thou canſt not paſſe, night is neere, and thy Inne farre off, it growes darke as pitch, and the clouds furiouſly diſcharge vpon thee their lightning and thunder; and for that thou art of an impatient ſpirit, thou hadſt rather dye a thouſand deaths, then endure it.

The inconueniences that befall Trauellers.

Goe to then; goe thy wayes at laſt; leaue off theſe thy idle thoughts of going to Law; ſit downe rather with leſſe, and liue in peace. For it is better that the world ſhould ſay of thee, that thou art a patient wiſe man, then a reuengefull foole. What haue they either done, or ſaid vnto thee, that thou keep'ſt ſuch a coyle, and that no man was euer ſo wrong'd, as thou art? If that be true, which they haue ſpoken of thee, it is thou that haſt giuen them cauſe ſo to doe; and if they lye, a lye is a lye, and he that lyes, let him goe like a lyar as he is. And therefore he did not thee ſo much wrong as himſelfe, nor haſt thou any reaſon to be reuenged on another by indangering thy ſelfe. Neglect him, and let him goe for a knaue, as he is; for thou canſt not take a fuller reuenge of him, nor puniſh him more, then to let him paſſe for an idle foole, and follow thine owne buſineſſe. I haue ſpoken enough of this, thinke vpon it, it may make much for thy good, if thou wilt well weigh, what I haue ſaid vnto thee. But I muſt returne againe into my old way, and now I am entring into it.

Good counſell for thoſe that will liue at quiet.

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being freed out of priſon, falls to gaming, gets money; Whereupon, he reſolues with himſelfe to goe to* Millayne.

Guzman comes heauy and melancholy out of priſon.

Came out of priſon, and got me to my lodging, being as ſad and melancholy, as I was poore and miſerable: ſaying to *Sayavedra*; What doeſt thou thinke of the good market, that we haue made in this fayre? We may make merry with the gaines we haue got, this will ſerue for once to keepe vs out of beggerie, we need no money now, let vs ſpend, and be liuely. Conſider now I pray with your ſelfe, vpon what a ſure ground they goe, who ſeeke to recouer their owne by Law. He told me, Sir, I ſee how things are carryed, for I haue beene an eye-witneſſe of all that hath paſt; but what remedy is there to be had, againſt the paſſions and priuate intereſts of Iudges, and the force and power of the potent? But that which toucheth me neereſt, and grieues me moſt, is; That you will finde fault with me, and be offended with me, that I haue beene the inſtrument of this your wrong, and more particularly at this preſent by that counſell and aduice, which I gaue you, to recouer your goods. Which though it were done all for the beſt, hath vnfortunately fallen out to the worſt. *Sed homo proponit, & Deus diſponit.* Man propoſeth one thing, and God diſpoſeth another. Who would euer haue dream't, that things would haue fallen out as they doe? What ſhould him ſay vnto it? There is now no helpe for it. For as a man cannot auoyde the ſtone, which a foole throwes by chance ouer a houſe, and kills him therewith: So, much leſſe was it to be imagined, or once to be ſuſpected by vs, that ſuch a buſineſſe as this, ſo faire, and ſo full of truth, ſhould proue ſo diſ-proportionable, and ſo quite oppoſite to our vnderſtanding.

Whileſt we were thus talking of this matter, there com's me a couple of gueſts that were ſtrangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that Citie, to play at Cards. And in a little ſquare roome, that diuided their chamber from mine, they had ſet vp a table, and to play they goe. Now I walking vp and downe that way, in my paſſing to and fro, ſeeing what paſt amongſt them, I was deſirous (for to entertaine the time, and to driue away melancholy) to draw neerer vnto them, and to looke vpon them. I did ſo, and pulling a ſtoole vnto me, taking that which came firſt to hand, I ſate me downe, viewing one of their hands for the ſpace of ſome two houres, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing loſt on either part. The money went to and fro; loſing one while, and getting another; Fortune had ſhow'd her ſelfe ſo equall, that ſhee had made them in a manner all ſauers; what was wonne, was not worth the ſpeaking of, there being no difference to be diſcerned in that they had drawne before they began. Euery man entertained himſelfe with his owne money which he drew at firſt, expecting a lucky pull, whileſt I in the meane while had a ſhrewder pull in mine owne boſome. They had not that griping them-ſelues, yet did they cauſe it in me, without any other why, or wherefore, ſaue only by my looking on his cards, by whom I ſate, when either he loſt through want of good carding, or well-playing of his game.

The nature and condition of thoſe that ſtand by, looking vpon Gameſters.

O what a ſtrange nature are we made of, which I ſpeake not only of my ſelfe, but of all in generall; for not any one of theſe men being knowne vnto me, nor hauing euer ſeene them before in my life, (for this was the firſt flight I had made of comming abroad ſince the time of my impriſonment) hauing neuer conuerſed with them heretofore, being all alike ſtrangers vnto me, yet me thought

thought I was much ioyed, and was glad with all my heart, when he did winne, my affection inclining to haue fortune ſhow her ſelfe more fauourable vnto him, then the reſt; and on the contrary was ſorry, when I ſaw he loſt. See what a kinde of ſinne this was in mee; how vnprofitable to my ſelfe? how fooliſh and to no purpoſe, to deſire that the other two might loſe, that hee might riſe the winner, and goe away with their money, as if my ſelfe had beene intereſſed therein, or as if they had got it from me, or were bound to let me haue it.

O, what an indiſcretion, what an ignorance is it, to lay other mens burthens on our owne ſhoulders; which are neither of any moment in themſelues, nor of any benefit vnto vs! One ſtands peeping out at his window, and another with his head halfe out at his doore, watching only to ſee, who went out of his neighbours houſe before day, who came in at midnight, what they brought in, and what they carryed out, led only thereunto out of an idle and needleſſe curioſitie; by reaſon whereof they runne into a thouſand ſuſpitions, a thouſand iealouſies of ſuch things, which neuer were, nor could be, much leſſe to be gathered from them, or any way in the world to be imagined by them. Brother, or Siſter, who ere thou be, get thee gone, leaue off thy prying into others actions, God helpe vs all; thou doeſt not know, whether ſuch a one ſinneth, or not ſinneth; whether he doth this, or that other thing, or doth it not: and it may be, that he doth not ſinne, but I am ſure that thou doeſt ſinne in doing as thou doeſt. Tell me, what doth his death, or his life, his going in, or his comming out, concerne thee? What good doeſt thou get by it, or what reward doe they giue thee, for that thy nights watching, ſo ill beſtowed on thy ſelfe, and others? What honour, ſhalt thou reape by his diſhonour? What contentment canſt thou take therein? Say, by this diligence of thine, thou maiſt haply haue occaſion to doe him ſome friendly office, and beſtead him in time of need. It may be ſo. But this is ſo contrary a thing, to men of ſuch baſe condition, that I aſſure my ſelfe, nay I dare to ſeale it with an oath, that thou wouldſt not doe it.

Needleſſe curioſitie.

Men ought not to prie into other mens actions.

If thy neighbour, fearing ſome thieues would come that night to rob him, ſhould ſpeake vnto thee to take the paines to ſit vp & watch his houſe for him, & ſhould very earneſtly entreat thee ſo to do, tell me, and lye not, what wouldſt thou ſay vnto him? what anſwere wouldſt thou make him? Certainly, thou wouldſt tell him, That thou haſt enough to doe, to looke vnto thine owne, that euery man is bound to reſpect himſelfe firſt; and that thou wilt not ſtand freezing in the cold, nor indanger thine owne health for to benefit another. How comes it then to paſſe, that to doe thy neighbour a good turne, and to exerciſe thy charity towards him, thou wilt not watch a quarter of an houre with him, and yet, that thou maiſt bring his faults to light, and lay open his ſpots to the Sunne, thou wilt thus play the foole to ſit vp a whole night to ſee if thou canſt light vpon any oblique action, that thou maiſt lay in his diſh hereafter? Doeſt thou not perceiue by this time, how ill this doth become thee? Seeſt thou not, that I ſay the truth? Thou canſt not (if thou wilt but examine thy ſelfe) but know, that it were better for thee, and would ſtand a great deale more with thine owne health, to get thee to bed betimes, and to looke how things goe at home in thine owne houſe, and to let thoſe of thy neighbour alone. Wilt thou, to doe him a deſpight, charge thine owne ſoule with thoſe ſinnes, of which thy neighbour is free; whence his comes to be ſaued, and thine to be damned? Such a one plaies to winne, and to increaſe his ſtocke, and it grieues me forſooth, that ſuch a one ſhould win, or ſuch a one loſe. Iuſt ſo it goes, and no otherwiſe. If thou take pleaſure in looking on thoſe that game, looke on (if thou canſt) without paſſion. But thou canſt not doe it; for thou art, as I am; and thou wilt doe, as I doe. Of the two, I ſhould hold it the leſſer euill, that thou ſhouldſt play thy ſelfe, then looke vpon anothers game with ſuch

Profitable counſell for curious obſeruers of other mens faults.

Men that looke vpon Gameſters muſt be free from paſſion.

ſuch like paſſion; For he that plaies, it is well enough knowne, that he deſires to winne; and this is a battaile, that is fought betweene two wits, or foure. Thou, being confident of thy good fortune, doeſt aduenture thy money, at leaſt thou deſireſt, that they may not carry it away from thee, thou ſeek'ſt to defend thy ſelfe as well as thou canſt, and thou ſetteſt thy ſelfe downe to play with that credence and beleefe, that thou maiſt as well loſe, as win, and as well get theirs, as they get thine; In this thou ſeem'ſt to haue ſome reaſon, and deſerueſt to be excuſed. But that onely by looking on, a man of reaſon, and vnderſtanding, whom the buſineſſe nothing concernes, ſhould bee ſo blinded with paſſion, as to be affected, or diſ-affected in that violent faſhion, tell mee if I doe amiſſe, in ſtyling him to be a man depriued of true iudgement, and whether I may not lawfully condemne him for it. But to returne to our purpoſe; Continuing their play, within a little while after, the Sea began to ſwell, the waues grew high, and the money began to ſwimme from one ſide of the boord to the other, their bloods waxed hot, and their choller began to kindle, they were now at their cloſe fights, watching but aduantage to boord, or ſinck each other; they grapled hard for it on all ſides, & the Cards likewiſe they plaid their parts, and laid about them for life, beſtirring them-ſelues luſtily, and gaue one of them ſuch a blow on the head with his club, that hee was ſtrucken ouer boord, and he and all his money ſuncke, hauing loſt in that fight aboue a hundred Crownes. And this man, that had this great blow giuen him, was he in whoſe hand I lookt. Of whoſe loſſe I was as ſenſible, as if the caſe had beene mine owne; thinking with myſelfe, that I had brought him this ill luck, and that I was the inſtrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieue me ſo much the more, for that I vnderſtood, that he was not worth in all the world ſo much more, as he had then loſt.

The effects of game, and gameſters.

Gaming, is vſed for two cauſes.

Gaming ought to be vſed for two manner of ends; either for meere gaine, or to entertaine the time. If for gaine, I ſay nothing vnto it, ſaue that thoſe, who bend them-ſelues that way, are like vnto Pyrats, that put them-ſelues forth to ſea to purchaſe ſome prize. *Capiat qui capere poteſt*; catch, he that can catch; Let euery one arme his own ſhip, as well as he can, and haue an eie to the bullets that flie about his eares, and thoſe other warlike weapons which they vſe in ſuch kinde of fights. Who goe ſcouring the Seas a whole yeare, in hope to meet with one lucky day.

They that play for intertainment, ſhould bee onely ſuch, whom the Cards them-ſelues doe marke and point out vnto vs; In them, ſhall we picke out ſome learning; for if we ſhall but conſider the *Kings* [a], the *Queenes*, and the *Knaues*, that are there pictured and painted forth vnto vs, from the vppermoſt of all the other, to the loweſt, which is the Ace, you ſhall not finde any portraitures or ſhapes as in the former; giuing vs thereby to vnderſtand, that none ſhould play there-at but *Kings*, *Queenes*, and *Knaues*. I can aſſure you that in all the whole packe of Cardes, you meete not with any Merchants, Tradeſ-men, Lawyers, nor Diuines, for they are not befitting their profeſſions. The very Aces, ſpeake as much vnto vs; for from the *Knaue*, or rather *Sota*, which is the *Souldier*, downe to the Ace, which is the leaſt and laſt Card, thou ſhalt ſee nothing elſe but ſpots, admoniſhing vs thereby, that all (except the aforeſaid) are but Aſſes, that ſhall offer to play at Cards. And ſuch another Aſſe was this my adoptiue ſonne, in loſing that, which perhaps was none of his owne, nor had wherewith to pay, at leaſt could hardly ſpare it.

[a] *The Court-Cards are called in Spaine*, Rey, Cauallo, y Sota. *The firſt is the King, as with vs; The ſecond ſignifies a Knight, which is all one with our Queene; And the third a Soldier, which is the ſame with our Knaue.*

But I will not ſtraine this ſtring ſo hard, that I ſhould quite debarre men of theſe noble entertainments; for I will not call him a *gameſter*, who plaies but now and then for his recreation, once, or twice, halfe a dozen, or halfe a ſcore times in a yeare, for this cannot hurt him much; eſpecially if he doe not play out of a greedy deſire of gaine, but onely for ſport and paſtime. Howbeit I hold it a thing impoſſible, that a man ſhould ſet himſelfe to play, without a

All gameſters deſire to win.

deſire

deſire to winne, though it ſhould be but for a pinne, and that he play, with his wife, or his ſonne. For although a man doe not ſtake money (and ſo cannot be ſaid to play for couetouſneſſe of the coyne) yet the opinion of a mans vnderſtanding and iudgement, lies then at ſtake, and there is no man ſo meane ſpirited, and of that weakneſſe of nature, that would willingly be beaten by another, if he could otherwiſe chuſe.

This my man, I told you of, was one of the gueſts to the houſe, where I lay, the winnings were diuided betweene his companion and the Citizen; the quarrell ceaſed for that time, and a freſh challenge was made againſt after ſupper. And ſo they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their ſeuerall occaſions lay; and the loſer, to looke out more money. I doubt not but hee vs'd all the diligence he could to get more (for gameſters ſeldome want money to game, though ſcarce euer haue any to pay their debts:) but becauſe it is a maſſie kinde of mettall, and waighes very heauy, it ſinkes downe ſtill to the bottome, and is long and hard a getting vp againe; hee could not (it ſhould ſeeme) get any money, yet he came thither, though without it; more offended with thoſe that would not lend it him, then with thoſe who had got it from him. He went walking and raging vp and downe the roome, puffing and blowing like a Bull; all the whole chamber was too little for him. One while he walkes athwart it, another, ſtalkes along from one end to the other, then againe flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all was vexation of ſpirit, he railes vpon the Citie, and vpon that traytor, that was the cauſe of his comming thither, that that was no Country for honeſt men to dwell in, but for thieues and cutthroats, being that he had in that towne, a hundred knowne friends, and all of them rich and well moneyd men, yet could he not borrow one Royall of them all, and began to ſweare that he would doe this, and that, and I know not what, if it ſhould be his hap to meet with any of them in his owne Countrie. I gaue him the hearing, and held my peace. And when he went into his chamber, I might heare him ſit downe on his bed-ſide, and might from mine, heare likewiſe the blowes, which he gaue with his fiſt vpon the table that ſtood by him.

Money, hard to be got.

Loſers grow impatient.

I cal'd *Sayavedra* aſide, and told him; Occaſion is now offered vnto me, either to get out of my troubles, or to get me to an Hoſpitall. And ſeeing that ſmall ſtore of money which is remaining vnto me, is not ſo much, as to ſuſtaine vs any long time, let vs ſup well, or goe to bed with a iarre of water, all's one, as good to day, as to morrow, for hold out much longer wee cannot. What thinkſt thou of this? tell me thy opinion, whether I ſhall play the foole, or the wiſe man in doing that which I intend? Shall it not bee well done, that after ſupper, when the ſame company ſhall meet againe together, wanting a third to maintaine the combat, I ſhould come forth as a challenger into the liſts, aduenturing to runne my Lance amongſt the reſt, putting my ſelfe vpon fortune either to loſe, or winne the honor of the day, by hazarding thoſe few Crownes that I haue? *Sayavedra* made anſwer vnto me, That I ſhould haue him euer ready at hand vpon all occaſions, being that he had now ſet vp his reſt to doe me ſeruice, and that hee would carefully doe whatſoeuer I would haue him, ſpake I in earneſt, or in ieſt, and were it good, or ill that I ſhould vndergoe, he would alwaies ſticke cloſe vnto me, and be ſtill at mine elbow, to performe that which I ſhould be pleaſ'd to command him. Yet notwithſtanding, that vpon this occaſion, I might not come off with diſhonor (for wee were then driuen very low, and almoſt brought to beggers buſh) it were good to ſecure the buſineſſe. Wherefore he would marſhall things in that manner, that both ſafely, and ſubtlely, he would range all ouer the field, and euermore giue me aduice of my aduerſaries forces, and how and where their ſtrength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewiſe to make my retreat; ſo that he keeping a

Guzman *means to venture all his money at play, and to make himſelfe either a man, or a mouſe.*

Sayavedra *offers to diſcouer to* Guzman *the others games.*

true account of their Cards, and the numbers wherewith they were to set vpon me, it was not possible that I should lose. When hee had said thus much vnto me, a man might haue pul'd my skin ouer mine eares, and I should neuer haue felt it, for I was for very ioy, ready to leape out of it my selfe; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his aduice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might easily conuert three parts of their money to mine owne vse. Saying secretly to my selfe; *No ay mal, que no venga por bien*: There is no ill, which doth not turne to our good. And it may bee that by this meanes, I might recouer my selfe of those losses, which I had so lately receiued. I did long my selfe to haue told him as much, but I did desire this base action, should proceed rather out of his mouth, then mine. For I was willing in this to keepe that *decorum* which beseemeth a Master with his seruant. For otherwise, if this tricke should haue beene plaid out of my hand, *Sayavedra* would happely haue said to himselfe; See, what a fine master I serue! I haue rid my selfe of a thiefe, and haue lighted vpon a cheater. What a tree haue I taken, whereunto to leane? Had it not beene better for me to haue gone and leaned against a wall? Yes certainly, for that would not haue thus deceiu'd me. Stay, stay, (*Sayavedra*) for all you were my friend, it was no part of my meaning, to open my minde vnto you in that straine, doe you enter first, and you will, vpon the point of my sword, and if you haue a mind to it, come on a Gods name when you please; for I promise you, you shall first confesse your selfe to me, before you haue any confession from mee; I will haue a pawne first from you, before you haue any pledge from me. But when we haue once vnmasked our selues, and cast off all disguises on either side, let vs come off freely, deale plainly one with another, I will speake what I thinke, and thou shalt speake what thou thinkst; Let vs iumpe as well in bredth, as in length, and then there will be little ods and difference betweene vs in the reckoning. There he and I were disputing a great while with our selues, which signes would be best, whereby we might come to know both the others hands; And at last it was resolu'd on, that the best manner of doing it, would bee by the buttons of his ierking, or the ioynts of the fingers, according to the arte of the Gammuth, when we learne first to sing. And hauing made triall thereof some three or foure bouts, we grew so ready and so perfect therein, that wee now vnderstood one another better by these our tokens, then our tongues.

Prouerbe.

Masters must keepe a decorum with their seruants.

Guzmans *and* Sayavedras *drift.*

Now were the challengers entred the lists, whilst I was walking vp and down there in the roome with my *Rosario* in my hand, like a Hermite, my seruant being in the meane while in my lodging. They began to talke of falling afresh to play; whereupon, the third man told them what had passed, and that hee could not meet with those his friends that should haue furnisht him with money, but if they would trust him vpon his word, till the next day morning, see whatsoeuer he should lose vnto them vpon the ticket, he would truly pay them. The Citizen sayd, that he should be well content therewith for his part, but told him withall, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kind of dull and tedious sport, and that he had neuer any good lucke, but did alwaies lose, when he plaid vpon the Ticket. But the other would by no meanes giue way thereunto. Whereupon their gaming was at the best, the company was vpon breaking off, and euery one going his way; but when I saw this good conuersation was vpon dissoluing, leauing my Beades to keepe their owne reckoning, I stept forth, and said vnto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, so as you will not play too great play, but onely for entertainment, and no more, but to passe away some part of the night, and that so holy a worke may not bee left off for want of a third, if it please you, I will put my selfe vpon the Cards, and trie for a while how well they will deale with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleas'd them passing well; for they took me to be some young Thrush, that was new crept out of the shell, and had not my bill growne out,

and

and was not able to pecke at any thing. Making reckning, that all was their owne, if they got me in to play, and that my money was as ſure theirs, as if they had had it already in their purſe. And for that they thought, if I ſhould chance to loſe my money, I would alſo venture my chaine (which I of purpoſe diſcouered vnto them by vnbuttoning my ierkin) and if I were once bitten, and began to bleed, being a young man, as I was, I would not haue the patience to giue ouer, but throw the pot-hookes after the pot, and the helue after the hatchet, and loſe all, that I was able to make.

The cheating tricks that are vs'd in gaming.

Well, we were now ſet downe, and ready to goe to the buſineſſe, whereupon I called for *Sayavedra*, and ſaid vnto him; Goe fetch me ſome money, if you haue any ſiluer left, bring it me quickly. He preſently drew out a hundred royals, which I had giuen him before, that he might haue them in readineſſe, when I called for them. He abiding a while in my chamber, till our play grew a little warme, and then calling him to ſnuffe the candles, I ſaid vnto him, ſeeming as if I had beene angry with him; Are we to be vſed thus by thee? Haue you ſo much buſineſſe to doe in the chamber, or are you ſo drowſie-headed, that you cannot ſtay here in the roome, if we ſhould at any time haue occaſion to vſe you? He ſaid neuer a word, but ſtood ſtill, and held his peace, inſomuch that no man in the world would haue once ſuſpected any harme from him, for he neuer offered ſo much as to caſt but an eye vpon me, nor did he at any time remoue his hand from his boſome, by which meanes he gaue me true knowledge how their games went. And howbeit, we vnderſtood one another well enough, I would ſometimes of purpoſe ſeeme not to vnderſtand him, nor would I make vſe of his warie aduice, but when I had wonne two or three hands, I tooke pleaſure now and then to loſe a little. I did ſuffer them now and then to draw my money, but neither much, nor often, leſt when they had me on the lift, they might haue left off: I was content they ſhould touch it, but not enter vpon it; and afterwards I would charge them home, that I might, hauing once netled them, egg them on the more. I did skirmiſh with them in that cunning manner, that I made them ſtill come on more and more eager vpon my money. But when I began to ſuſpect, that they would giue ouer the fight, and ſound a retreat, and that they were to leaue the field, and be gone, I then thought fit to purſue them to ſome purpoſe, and to follow the chaſe a little more hotly, till I ſaw them ſafe in the net, and had them in my hands, to doe what I would with them, and then did I ſet roundly vpon them and their money, bringing it all vnder my ſubiection in a very ſhort ſpace, few blowes being ſtrucken in the battaile. I had got of thoſe two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were ſo aſhamed, and ſo ſtung withall, that they ſwore they would haue another bout with me the next day, challenging me againe at the ſame game. I willingly accepted of it. They came, we playde, and I was willing to let them winne ſome thirty Crownes of me, which they carried away with them, giuing ouer play for that time; for, this loſſe, was but a bayte that I laid for them, knowing that this would fleſh them, and put them in heart a-new, and make them come on brauely at our next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to continue longer, and ſaid; Let vs play greater game, for that the night growes late. Nay (quoth I) by the ſame reaſon, it were better that we goe now to bed, and meet againe to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leyſure, we may come together ſomewhat ſooner, and taking the day before vs, we may play at pleaſure, and as long as we lift. They were wondrous glad to heare me ſay ſo, and that they had yet loſt ſomewhat vnto mee, hoping in the end that they ſhould get more by me.

The next day they came, with their purſes well arm'd with double piſtolets, well appointed for warre, they threw downe whole handfuls of them vpon the boord, ſome being peeces of two, ſome of foure, and ſome of ten, ſeeming

seeming to make no more reckning of them, then if they had beene so many peeces of copper coyne. Saying, as they flung them downe; *Coraggio, coraggio (Senor Soldado)* see you what here is, to be spent in your seruice? I told them; Although I am not so rich, as to be able to doe you seruice with so large a supply of money, yet at least my good will shall not be wanting to attend vpon you, as your seruant. I was about to tell them, that I did not doubt ere long to see this faire companie of these glittering men at armes to come and march vnder my colours. We began to play, and I went wearying of them out by little and little, giuing them line enough to runne them-selues out of breath, and when I saw, that I had now brought them euen with me, and that I might strike them both dead at once, I let flie a whole volley of shot at them, and in a few hands, I saw in these hands of mine aboue fiue hundred Crownes, which yeelded themselues vp to my mercy, whom (out of the pittifulnesse of my nature) I tooke into my protection. The maine battaile being thus ouerthrowne, my two Captaines were faine to forsake the field, after these their bravado's, and to try if they could leuie fresh men, and raise new forces to encounter me againe the next day, promising to bid me battaile, if I durst abide it. I was not a little glad to heare them say so, as well for that I had let them blood both alike; as also, for that my heart was now pretty well at quiet; holding my selfe very well pleas'd with that which I had gotten of them, being as well contented, as if I had wonne all that they had beene worth. For I had now enough to serue my turne, and what should I desire more? But I cannot expresse vnto you how glad I was, that they should giue ouer first; for it was a rule, which I euer obserued in my play, that I would not willingly giue any the least occasion of difference; and therefore did euermore leaue it to the losers owne good liking, to play, or not to play; referring it to his choice, as he himselfe had most minde to. They went away in a good houre; and I fearing, that this Townes-man, might put a Towne-tricke vpon me, and that the stranger, being in need, and in want, might doe me some wrong (for I was lately, to my great cost, too well acquainted what good iustice a man was to looke for in that Citie) I told *Sayavedra*, when we were alone by our selues, that without any word speaking, or telling any body, whither we intended to goe, we would take horse betimes in the morning, and poste with all speed to *Millayne*. And so we did, leauing them full of sorrow, but not so much as one crosse of siluer, wherewith to blesse themselues.

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache, *trauayling towards* Millayne, Sayavedra *vpon the way, recounts his owne life vnto him.*

WE rode towards *Millayne*, with as great haste, as feare. For *Bologna* standing so high as it does, it is to be discerned a great way of, the very shadow whereof, did make my heart to tremble, fearing the danger, whereinto it had lately put me. For I was euer of the minde, That there is no fault, but hath his punishment; no ill, but hath his chastisement. Now did I wish, that horses had beene borne with wings, that mine might haue flowne away with me. But miserable wretch that I am, what good would that haue done me? it had beene all one to me; for then others, would likewise haue had the like horses, to haue ouer-taken me. What way so euer I tooke, I found it all full of thornes, bushes, and brambles, which did scratch, and pricke my guilty conscience; which way soeuer I went, I was fearefull of danger; and the

The condition of feare, and fearefull men.

the more ſlowneſſe, the more feare. And he neuer thinks he flyes faſt enough, that ſeekes to flie from a miſchiefe. I, accompanied with my thoughts, and *Sayavedra* with his, went iogging on along, but both as mute as fiſhes; though his were farre different from mine. For my care only was, to ſee my ſelfe in ſome place of ſafetie; and *Sayavedra* was thinking with himſelfe, how much of this money would fall to his ſhare.

We rode on a great while in this manner; at laſt, that I might bid feare farewell, which thus troubled me, I ſought to ſhake it off, and if I could, quite to forget it, by entertayning ſome one thing or other, to turne the ſtreame another way; it ſeeming vnto me, to be no leſſe fooliſh, for a man, to be too ſilent vpon the way, then to babble and prate too much, in the ſtreet. And therefore, that I might be the firſt to breake the yce, I call'd to *Sayavedra*, and ſaid vnto him; Come, let vs talke of ſome thing or other, to paſſe away the time; or doe thou tell me ſome ſtorie vpon the way, to giue me content; it will make our iourney the ſhorter. He then, finding his bowle flung in amongſt the reſt, and that he was not ſhut out for a bungler, ſeeing there was occaſion now offered vnto him, to ſpeake that, which he longed to vtter, he began to breake his minde, and ſaid thus vnto me.

I wiſh Sir, that I could tell you a tale, how glad I was, and what a deale of good it did doe me, to taſte of the ſweetneſſe of your gaines. But I am ſo confident of the nobleneſſe of your diſpoſition, that this my comming to ſerue you (ſeeing you haue beene pleaſed to entertaine me for your ſeruant) ſhall not be only for ſatisfaction of that debt, wherein I ſtand bound vnto you, but alſo make much for my profit. I was glad to ſee this arrow flie forth of his quiuer, and that he had touch't mee vpon that ſtring; whereupon, I thus replyed vnto him.

Friend *Sayavedra*; What is paſt, is paſt; and there is no more to be ſaid of it; for there is no man, ſo much man, and maſter of himſelfe, which either here, or there; this place, or that; this, or that time, doth not ſlip in one kinde or other. We liue all in the fleſh; and all fleſh is weake. Others, haue this weakneſſe, ſome other wayes: Euery one committeth his errour, one in one ſort; another, in another. As thou haſt in this thing, wherein my ſelfe am likewiſe faulty. God helpe me in my iudgement; for I know not what will become of me. For I finde, I haue as much cauſe, as he that hath moſt, if not more, boldly to vndergoe any deſperate attempt whatſoeuer. And let him be who, or what he will, (had he found himſelfe in that grea want and miſerie, as we were) he would haue done the like, as we haue done: which was no better then plaine theft, to cozen theſe poore men, of that little which they had, which perhaps was all, that they had wherewithall to liue: Nor would I at that time, (being in that poore caſe as I was) haue ſpared any purſe whatſoeuer, had it had a thouſand Crownes in it, though it had beene of an Orphane, that had neither father, nor mother, to helpe it.

All men ſpotted with one Vice, or other.

Guzmans traffie dealing.

And ſeeing, that we are fallen into this errour, and for that I perceiue thou haſt vnderſtanding and iudgement to apprehend any thing, and to go through with it, I perſwade my ſelfe, thou doeſt likewiſe comprehend, that I am no Trader in the *Indyes*, nor any of your rich *Fucars*, but a poore young man, (as thou art) rob'd of his ſubſtance, and depriued of his neceſſaries, by ſuch meanes, as are beſt knowne to thy ſelfe; nor haue I any greater or better profeſſion to liue by, then that which thou haſt ſeene in me. Now, becauſe I would not doe any thing, that might ſauour of baſeneſſe, or vnlike my ſelfe, and to beare the ſame port I did heretofore, I muſt endeuour to maintaine my ſelfe (at leaſt) in ſome reaſonable faſhion, as euery honeſt man ought to doe, not falling a iot from that ſtate and condition of life, wherein my parents left me, and whereunto my fortune had rays'd me. For albeit I ſeru'd that Lord of mine, the French Embaſſador, and liu'd in houſe with him, it was out of that loue, which

he bore vnto me from a childe, and vpon the earneſt intreaty, that he made vnto my friends, my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance, and hauing liu'd and conuerſed long together in *Paris*. And ſo he begg'd me of him, ſaying; he ſhould take no farther care for me, and that he would one day make me a man.

But ſince that things haue ſo fallen out with me as they haue, (as in part you your ſelfe know) and that I haue left his houſe, and am now come from him, I am not minded to returne thither any more, till I haue ſeene ſomewhat of the world, and that I may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to liue in eaſe and pleaſure, all the reſt of my life. Euery place [a] affords good bread; and that of *Rome*, agrees not with my ſtomacke, for it doth not digeſt very well with me, but turnes to rawneſſe and crudities. And it is no maruayle, that all men ſhould ſeeke out ſome meanes or other to liue; eſpecially, ſeeing they, that haue leſſer abilities, endeuour the like.

Prouerbe.
[a] Donde quiera, ſe amaſa buen pan.
Euery man would faine liue.

Turne thine eye aſide, and looke vpon as many men, as now liue in the world; view, and conſider them well, and thou ſhalt finde, that they all goe ſeeking to encreaſe their eſtates, to aduantage themſelues the beſt that they can; and failing in thoſe obligations, whereunto they are tide both in honor, and honeſtie, by one deuice or other, this or that tricke, euery one ſeekes to aduance himſelfe and his fortunes, as high as he can. The King, ſeekes to augment his State, and inlarge his Kingdome; The Gentleman, to raiſe his Houſe; The Merchant, to encreaſe his wealth, and to driue ſuch a trade, as may turne to his great profit; And the Tradeſ-man, to gaine by his Trade: And that not alwaies (by their leaue) in that conſcionable and lawfull faſhion as is fitting they ſhould. For it happeneth ſo with ſome of them, that firſt growing knuckle deepe, and afterwards vp to the elbowes in vngodly gaine, and vniuſt dealing, they neuer leaue off till they be vp to the very eyes, nay ouer head and eares (I will not ſay) in Hell, doe thou ſay it for me, whoſe tongue is bolder then mine, to lay this cenſure vpon them. In concluſion, all the world in this caſe, is as it were another *Rochelle*; Euery man liue for himſelfe; get hee, that can get; Onely they, that are vnfortunate, as thou art, pay the puniſhment of their ſinne. If thou hadſt beene a thiefe of the largeſt ſize, I ſay one of thoſe great ones, that ſhouldſt haue gone away with three or foure thouſand Duckats at a clap, thou mightſt peraduenture haue made thy peace, bought out fauour and iuſtice, and mightſt haue paſt well enough with them, and haue come off cleare, as they often doe: But thoſe poore wretches, which know not how to negociate, nor haue any ſet rents, no receipts, nor Bils of exchange, nor know how to get a great deale of money into their hands (compounding afterwards for a little) paying backe a third part, and that ſlowly, ill, or neuer; theſe poore rogues, I ſay, that neither haue the wit to inuent, nor the power to aſpire to any great bootie, nor to vndertake great matters, are (as infamous thieues) ſent to the Gallies, and ſometimes hang'd, not for thieues (for thieues are not hang'd) but becauſe they did not well know what did belong to their office, and were not their owne crafts-maſters. And I will here by the way, tell thee what I heard of a Slaue, that was a *Negro, entre boçal y ladino*, one that was a nouice, and was better skil'd in his owne, then the Country language wherein he liu'd, being ſcarce perfect in either; which ſtory will fall in here very fitly.

All ſeeke to make their beſt aduantage.

A ſhort tale.

In *Madrid*, in the daies of my child-hood, where I reſided ſome time, there were adulterers led to execution; and although this ſin be very common there, and much vſed amongſt them, yet it is ſeldome puniſhed; for there are neuer wanting good meanes, and good moneys; by meanes whereof theſe kinde of crimes are well accommodated: but at this time, and with this womans huſband, they could worke no good. A world of people went forth to ſee them, eſpecially your women, inſomuch that the ſtreets, and the windowes were wholly

wholly taken vp with them, making great moane for that miſerable and vnfortunate woman. Now when her husband had cut off her head, this *Negro* ſpake out aloud, and ſaid; O God, how many here doe behold this ſad ſpectacle, who with a great deale of reaſon might haue the like meaſure!

The ſaying of a Negro.

We likewiſe, may very well ſay; How many, are there now adaies, who condemne others to the gallowes, whereon they might better, and with more reaſon, be hang'd themſelues. I wonder at nothing in this age, nor am I of that queazy ſtomacke, that any thing ſhould offend mee; I will dance to the ſound of that Pipe, after which I ſee others dance; let things laſt, as they may laſt; and hold out as long as they can, and then there is an end of them; like vnto ſpoones made of a cruſt of bread, which wee haue no ſooner ſupt vp our pottage with, but we ſend them preſently packing the ſame way with the other. And ſince thou ſaiſt, that thou lou'ſt my company, & tak'ſt much contentment therein, and that thou lik'ſt ſo well of it, I hope, it ſhall neither bee hurtfull vnto thee, nor hard to brooke it. For I am ſo good a fellow, and of ſo ingenious a diſpoſition, that I know how to value and make a true eſteeme of thoſe kindneſſes which are done vnto mee; the thankfull acknowledgement thereof, I ſhall referre to my actions, which in their due time, ſhall teſtifie, what I now profeſſe. But becauſe reward is the ſpurre, which puts vertue forward; and the onely whetſtone, that ſets an edge on mens affections; making them to goe on brauely and couragiouſly in all that they vndertake; And that it argues a baſeneſſe of minde, not to reward, when from thence ſome glory, or benefit may ariſe; And that a man doth not cumply with his duty, when hee doth not take any paines for his liuing; for to that end was he borne, and therewith is he to ſuſtaine himſelfe; it is fit, and no more then what is iuſt, that euery man ſhould haue a proportionable and equall gaine, according to the quality of his aduenture: And I am very well content to giue way hereunto, making this the firſt ſtone in this our building; and will treat farther hereafter of that, which is to be ordered and ſet downe betweene vs, in theſe, or any other the like occaſions, that ſhall offer them-ſelues vnto vs.

Vertue encouraged by rewards.

All that, which ſhall fall, or come vnto our hands, as well thoſe fruits already fallen, as thoſe that are to fall hereafter, ſhall be diuided into three equall parts; of all which thou ſhalt haue one part for thee, and another for me, and the third ſhall goe for to defray the charges of *auerige*; for it will not be alwaies faire weather; nor ſhall wee ſtill ſaile before the wind; nor make euermore a ſpeedy voyage; as it happens when men are becalmed at Sea; and when we ſhall land and come aſhore, it is not fit that we ſhould want cloathes, and other neceſſaries, nor muſt we, if the enemy ſhould ſet vpon vs, bee vn-prouided of munition to defend our ſelues, and offend him; nor, ſhould wee chance by ſome, ſtorme or other accident, to bee caſt vpon ſome ſhelfe or quick-ſand, muſt wee lacke a boate to put out, wherein to ſaue our liues, though we loſe our goods. This third part, we will ſtill lay apart by it ſelfe, that ſhall be, as it were the *Ærarium*, and publike Treaſurie, our common purſe, for to ſupply and relieue our neceſſities. For, if we goe wiſely and diſcreetly to worke, and be not raſh and inconſiderate in our actions, ſeeing we want not vnderſtanding, and haue ſome skill in nauigation, (at leaſt are both of vs good Coaſters,) I for my part will content my ſelfe with no leſſe, then ſome good place of command in my Countrey, and ſuch good ſtore of wealth, that I may afterwards liue happily all the daies of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be ſixe yeares elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart vnto thee, for thou ſhalt make the like purchaſe, wherewith thou maiſt returne with credit to *Valençia*. I would not haue thee buſie thy ſelfe in baſe thefts, nor be none of thoſe ſneaking thieues, that ſteale Primers, Horne-bookes, and Ballads; for from ſuch kind of thefts, thou ſhalt reape no other profit, but infamie, and reproach. In a word, let vs brauely reſolue, *Morir ahorcados, ó comer con trompetas*; Either to hang

Guzman *purpoſes to prouide for a deare yeare, and ſhowes how it may be done.*

Prouerbe.

hang together for company, or to haue our dinners ſeru'd in with Trumpets. Let vs dye like dogges, or liue like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but pouerty, is a daily death. And if we goe on as we haue begun, and vſe theſe, and the like trickes, we ſhall with a little practice, grow to greater both cunning, and wealth, and bid a fart in Feares teeth; For all moneths are alike, bee they faire or foule, euery one hath [c] his thirty dayes, and no more; Euery man muſt liue out his time, how happily, or how miſerably, I cannot ſay; euery one muſt be content with his fortune: And for as much, as in the darke, all *Cats* [d] are blacke, and *Ione* is as faire as my Lady; we will ſo carry things in the clouds, that wee may not appeare in our right colours. Wee two will ioyne together, keepe counſell, and deale fairly one with another, diuiding the ſpoile equally, that there may be no falling out betweene vs: For, as it is in the Prouerbe; *Vn lobo, à otro, nunca ſe muerde*; One Wolfe, will not bite another. Loe here, if thou wilt, thou ſhalt preſently, before we goe any farther, haue a third part of what is already got; for it is not iuſt nor honeſt, to debarre any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it doe thee; and thanke God, that with ſo fortunate a foot, and ſo propitious a ſtarre, thou haſt lighted thus happily into our company; deſiring him, that we may not fall into the hands of Pyrates, who haue an eye to nothing elſe, but to runne away with the meat, that others haue dreſt, to licke away the creame, that others haue laboured for; and to skimme away all the fat from off the pottage, not leauing vs any thing that good is.

Prouerbe.
[c] Todos los meſes de a treynta dias.

Prouerbe.
[d] A eſcuras todos los gatos, negros.

Prouerbe.

With this kinde of language, and my liberall carriage, dealing thus kindly and bountifully with him, I went ſecuring his perſon vnto me, that hee might not forſake me, but ſtay, and liue with me. For if I ſhould haue ſought ouer all the world for a Mariner, I could not haue met with a better Mate for my Barke, nor one, that would ſo well haue ſuted for my purpoſe, as *Sayavedra*. Beſides, he being my equall, and euery way as good a man as my ſelfe, was contented to become my ſeruant, and to acknowledge me for his maſter, it being no ſmall aduantage to haue the hand, in moſt games that you play at. He, vpon theſe good words of mine, was ſo ouercome, that he reſted no leſſe contented, then conquered by me. And ſo falling, in our future diſcourſe, from one thing to another, (as men vſe to doe when they talke vpon the way) I hapt at laſt to aske him the cauſe, that mou'd him to rob me? Sir (ſaid he) though I would, yet I cannot now forbeare, to acquaint you with the whole courſe of my life, and truly and faithfully to deliuer vnto you euery particular paſſage thereof, as well for thoſe fauours which I haue ſo liberally receiued already from your hands, as alſo for that it is well enough knowne to the world, and therefore requires no ſuch ſecreſie; As likewiſe, for that with thoſe with whom we keepe company, and are daily to conuerſe and liue withall, plaine dealing muſt bee vſed, and all matters fairly laid open, without the concealing or hiding of any thing: For, not onely to our *Confeſſors*, our *Lawyers*, and our *Phyſitians*, are we to tell the truth, but to thoſe alſo that are of our owne profeſſion, birds of the ſame feather; nor was this vertue euer yet wanting amongſt vs, which is a powerfull meanes for the maintaining of friendſhip, and the faſter wedging of one man vnto another. But that I may at length cumply with thoſe many obligations, wherein I ſtand bound vnto you; I ſhall giue you (Sir) to vnderſtand, That I am of *Valençia*, borne of honeſt parents, (whom report may one day make knowne vnto you) for they (God be praiſed) are now both dead; onely, their fame liueth. We were two brothers, and both vnfortunate; whether it were, becauſe from children, conuerſing continually together, wee ran courſes alike, and did in all things ſort and ſute each with other; or whether it were, that ſuffering our ſelues to be carried away with the fury of our vaine appetites, without ſtriuing to make due reſiſtance, we did giue way to this temptation, by conſenting thereunto, (or to ſay more truly) fell into this weakneſſe, not

Free and plaine dealing, holds friends together.

Sayavedra *diſcourſeth to* **Guzman** *of his courſe of life.*

not thinking on thoſe future dangers, that were to follow thereupon, but drawne along with thoſe baytes, that for the preſent pleas'd our taſte, being now inured, and accuſtomed thereunto, wee could not (though wee would) goe backe. My other brother, is ſomewhat elder then my ſelfe, and though both of vs were of a reaſonable good capacitie, and had (as they ſay) our wits and iudgements about vs, and were not put (as other men are) to ſeeke for them, yet could not this vnderſtanding of ours, put a bridle vpon our vnruly affections; ſuch is, or was the force of our malignant ſtarre, and ſo great the power of our euill inclination, that we could not auoid it. In ſo much, that laying aſide all reſpects of honor, and to apply our ſelues to any ſet courſe of life, more out of a deſire to ſee ſtrange Countries, then to get ſome honeſt meanes, whereby to liue, we went out into the wide world to ſeeke our fortunes. But becauſe things might not chance to fall out ſo luckily with vs, as we did frame to our ſelues, and that if we ſhould come in trouble, we might not be knowne, nor diſhonor our houſe, we did agree betweene our ſelues, to change and alter our names.

My brother being a good Latiniſt, and a fine Scholler, fetcht his name, I know not from whence; His owne name being *Iuan Marti*, of *Iuan*, hee made *Luxan*; and of *Marti*, *Mateo*; and turning it by inuerting the words, he cal'd himſelfe *Mateo Luxan*. In this manner, did hee wander through the world; and the world ſaith, that it gaue him the ſame payment, as it did mee. But I, for that I had no learning, and knew no more then a young Nouice in a Monaſterie, I would not trouble my head with theſe curioſities, but going the downe-right way to worke, and knowing that the *Sayavedra's* were of principall note, and ancient Gentlemen of *Sevill*, I ſtyled my ſelfe to be of that City, and tooke their name vpon me. But I was neuer in *Sevill*, nor know any more thereof, then what I haue ſaid already.

Being thus new chriſtned, we ſet forth both on one and the ſame day, and began our trauailes together, but went each of vs a ſeuerall way. Some haue told me, who knew him by ſight, that they haue ſeene him in *Caſtile*, and in *Andaluzia* very hardly vſed; and that from thence, he went to the *Indyes*, where it alſo went ill with him. I ſhap't my courſe another way; for I got me to *Barcelona*, where in the Galleys I paſt ouer into *Italy*: I had ſpent all that, which I had brought along with me from home, and at laſt became exceeding poore. And becauſe Neceſſitie, doth oftentimes (as they ſay) driue a man to doe that, which he neuer dream't of, toſt thus vp and downe, and cruelly encountred with hunger, I chanced in the end to arriue in the kingdome of *Naples*; where, I had euer a deſire to reſide, for the great good which I had heard of that Citie.

I traueld all ouer that kingdome, ſpending that which I had not, till I came to be a notable *Picaro*, and began at length to conuerſe with as arrant Rogues as my ſelfe; and from one round to another I grew vp by degrees, to be a fine nimble-fingerd [d] Fuller, I could teazell cloathes ſingular well, I could picke a pocket very neatly, and cut a purſe handſomely, and doe many the like fine feats. I made my ſelfe a *Camerade* with thoſe that were the Maſters of our Company, and had recourſe alwayes vnto them, that they might couer mee vnder their wing in time of aduerſitie; I was but their ſeruant, and one of thoſe ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought vnder their Enſigne. For my pouertie was ſo great, that I could neuer get me into a ſtocke to put me into cloathes, or to be able to ſet vp ſhop for my ſelfe. Nor was it an inability or inſufficiency in me, that I came no better forward in the world; for there was not ſuch a cunning ſharker amongſt them all, as I was; my ſheeres, would finde an edge, when theirs could not cut; they were all bunglers to me; I was able to haue read vnto them all thoſe foure curſory Lectures of thieuing; and thoſe other two of cony-catching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when I proceeded

[d] *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; Oficial de la carda. Por traſlaçion dezimos carcar à vno, quando le dan alguna fraterna, y es tratado aſperamentè. Covarr. verb. Carda.

ceeded Batcheler in that Art. For I was ſo well read in thoſe roguiſh ſtudies, and from the time that I firſt learn'd them, had them all ſo perfect at my fingers ends, that I was not to ſeeke of any one of them. I was that ſingular Saker, that excellent Ierfalcon, that neuer miſt my prey, but tooke all that I flew at either in Citie or Countrey. No game came amiſſe to me. None of them vnderſtood halfe ſo well as I, the Art in cutting of a purſe; nor to diue into a pocket, ſo deepe, as I could. I was dogge at it, and could diſpatch my buſineſſe in a trice. My eye, and my hand, went both together; they were here and there, and euery where, with a *preſto* be gone. I was of all occupations; a mariner, a miller, a baker, a ſcout, a croſſe-biter, one of your vp-right men, a cheater, a cozener, a fox, that was full of craft and ſubtletie; none of my ſtanding, no nor ſix yeeres elder then I, but would ſtrike ſayle to me, and acknowledge himſelfe as farre inferiour to me, as the fowle is to the Falcon.

But by reaſon of their ancient ſtanding, and the reputation they had got in thoſe former dunſicall times, they tyrannized and vſurped on the name of famous profeſſors: Theſe were the *Ceſars*; and we the poore rogues; whom they ſent abroad, from houſe to houſe, to ſcowre diſhes, to caſt an eye in euery corner, to make one excuſe or other whereſoeuer we came; demanding in one place, whether ſuch a Gentleman were there or no; and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to ſerue them. Asking ſuch a Gentlewoman, whether ſhee would buy a very fine paire of Twizes; which but a little before, we had cut from another Gentlewomans girdle, and hauing new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and cleane, and fitted them with a new cace, and a new ribond, we ſold them afterwards away for new ware. Sometimes, we would make ſhow to goe into ſome houſe to make water, and if we found, that there was a ſtable there, or other by-roomes belonging vnto it, in thither would we goe, where we ſhould meet with a horſe-cloath, a curry-combe, a ſyve, or the horſe-mans cloake; and when we could not come to finger any thing elſe, we ſhould euermore be ſure of bridles, and collars, and ſtirrops, and the like kinde of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortune, any one ſhould come in, and ſee vs there, looſing preſently our cod-piſſe point, we would quat vs downe in a corner of the ſtable, as if we had beene driuen in thither by neceſſitie to doe that ſeruice, which no body can doe for vs but our ſelues. And in caſe they ſhould ſay vnto vs (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thiefe, what make you here? We would then preſently riſe vp, and pulling vp our breeches to make them faſt, and be gone, we would while we were a truſſing, mildly make anſwer; I pray Sir be not offended; take heed to whom, and of what you ſpeake; for here is no ſuch kinde of man, as you talke of, no thiefe, no rogue, but one that is true and honeſt, and meanes you no harme; I was ouer-taken in the ſtreet, and forced to come in vpon meere neceſſitie, and therefore I hope you will hold me excuſed.

Some did beleeue vs, and ſome not, but how-ſoeuer we paſt well enough with it. Sometimes, we would preſſe farther in, and rummage as it were all the whole houſe, from one end to the other, till we found ſomewhat that we might finger, and carry away; and if by chance we were ſpyde by any, we would come crowching vnto them with teares in our eyes, beſeeching them for Gods ſake, to giue vs an almes, being euen ready to ſtarue for want of food. With theſe, and other the like cunning ſhifts, there was not ſo much as a nayle in any mans wall, which we did not keepe a reckning of, and tooke away when we ſaw our time. I was a pretty little wagg, ſlender of growth, rather leane then otherwiſe, very witty, full of inuention, and aboue all, as nimble, and light-footed as a Bucke. I alwayes laid wait in the day time, how and where I ſhould compaſſe my exployts in the night, neuer imbroyling my ſelfe in any buſineſſe at vnſeaſonable times, for the better auoyding of all ſuſpition; and

taking

taking little ſleepe when I had any thing to ſet my ſelfe about. In the day time, wee did (like good Chriſtians) viſit Churches, goe to Maſſe, heare Sermons, frequent your Indulgences, Iubiles, Feaſts, and Proceſſions. Wee were preſent at your Play-houſes, and Courts of Iuſtice, at all Executions, and all other publike meetings and aſſemblies, where there was any concurſe of people, any preſſing or thronging in the ſtreets, ſtriuing to be alwaies in the thickeſt of the croud, entring in and out amongſt them, paſſing to and fro a thouſand times. For euery bout afforded vs worke enough, making vpon euery returne a good and gainefull voyage. One while we brought away daggers, ſtolne from mens backs; other-while handkerchers pickt out of their pockets; purſes, *roſarios*, *twizes*, iewels worne by women; and ſuch odde toyes, as your children weare about their necks. And when all fail'd, and that I could not make that purchaſe as I would, with my ſheeres (which I had euer ready in my hand) looke where the beſt and faireſt cloake was in all the companie, I did whip from behinde, or the one ſide of it (if by chance it ſlipt off from his ſhoulders in the throng) as much as would make three or foure payre of ſoles, or ſome ſuch odd knack, or other. Wherein, beſides the profit, I tooke exceeding great pleaſure, in ſeeing theſe gallants afterwards looke like the picture of *S. Martin*, with little more then halfe a cloake; which was a ridiculous thing to behold, and did often moue me to much laughter. And when they them-ſelues had found it out, they began to winde and turne it this way, and that way, putting the part offended, either vnder or ouer their arme, as would make beſt for the hiding of that blemiſh; and the people when they once began to perceiue it, they ſtraight way flockt about them, who bluſhing to ſee their garment cut ſhort to their waſte, diſcouering thoſe parts which ſhame bids vs hide, they went flinching away, and got them home through by-lanes, and ſuch places, as were leaſt frequented.

And when this would not fadge with vs, we would cunningly ſteale to your ſilke, or cloath of gold hangings, for we neuer ſtood vpon termes of courteſie, or were more dainty with theſe, then the reſt; for the greater was the value of it, the greater was our gaine; and from the lower part of theſe hangings, would we ſnip off a peece or two, according as occaſion, or time, would giue vs leaue; endeuouring euer to cut in the beſt and choiſeſt place, and in the turning of a hand, we made thereof either womens bodies, mens [a] *monteras*, purſes, pinpillowes, ſleeues for little children, and a thouſand other the like fidling things; ſtill ordering and husbanding it ſo, that we would not loſe the leaſt thread, but did alwayes contriue it in that manner, as might make beſt for that vſe, whereunto we would put it.

By little and little, we came approaching neerer and neerer vnto the Citie, drawne thither vpon the fame and report, that there was a new *Vice-Roy* already come thither, or would be there very ſhortly. For at ſuch ſolemne feaſts as theſe, where there is running of Buls, bayting of Beares, and the like paſtimes, beſides your great Fayres and markets, we will not ſticke, for a need, to come a hundred miles off, that we may be preſent at them. Our expence vpon the way, was alwayes very little; for we ſtill made our prouiſion, as we went along, and what we got in one place, that we ſpent in another, taking vp hens here, capons there, in ſuch a village chickens, and ſuch a doue-houſe pigeons, pigs, gammons of bacon, and any thing that was tame, and would come to hand, neuer eſcapt our hands, furniſhing our ſelues with all other neceſſarie implements, that might ſerue for the conueniencie of our iourney, were it for our dyet, or our lodging. And as a man that deſires to haue a good lodging in his Inne, muſt haue a care to come there before the Sunne be ſet: ſo in that ſhort time which we had to ſpend vntill it were towards night, and that the houre was come, wherein we did vſually retire our ſelues, we did runne ouer all the open places about the Countrey, and if we found any breach in

[a] Montera, *is a cap made of ſtuffe, with little or no brims, to weare for eaſe within doores: your Clownes haue them of cloath.*

in any wall of a houſe, we would prie what we could proule from thence, and ſeeke to make our entry; Which that we might doe with the more conueniency, and leſſer hazard of our perſons, we would begin to beg an almes, ſaying; That we were poore Students, and being driuen to great neceſſity, could not for want of meanes returne handſomely into our owne Countrey. Which we did not ſo much demand of them, to the end they ſhould giue vs any thing, as thereby to ſeeke occaſion to ſteale ſomething from them, hauing an eye ſtill towards the hen-rooſt, caſting with our ſelues how we might diſ-people that houſe of its pullen.

Beſides, for your Innes, and your Farmers back-ſides, I carried alwaies with me a good angle-rod with a ſtrong hooke and line, baited with a cruſt of bread, or ſome ſixe graines of wheate, to catch there-with whatſoeuer came in my way, and I ſeldome put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fiſh as long as mine arme. But when it fell out ſo vnfortunately with vs, that we could not get any booty, and that (as it is in the Prouerbe) *Se caya la caſa*; the houſe was fallen downe; and that there was no victualls there to be found; yet come the worſt, that could come, wee ſhould be ſure to meet with as good and fat a Calfe, as any man need to eate, the world could not afford better Veale. As ſoone as we came to *Naples*, at our firſt comming we draue for ſome few dayes, a very good trade, and made very quicke returnes, with a great deale of profit to our purſes, and all things did ſucceed very well with vs; we tooke great paines, and we reapt great gaines. I had put my ſelfe into ſuch apparell, that my preſence might promiſe the reputation of an honeſt man; ſo that any man might very well be cozned by this Carde, (this outſide I meane of mine) ſo faire did I colour for it. So that if the entrance which wee made, like to our *juego de cañas*, glittering in gold, and all kind of brauerie, had not through my lacke of patience receiued in the end a foile, I might haue continued there in very good faſhion. But I had worke enough to doe, to ſaue my skinne, from being pluckt ouer my eares, and to keepe my bones from being broken. It was mine owne fault, that my egges prou'd addle, and were not ſo well hatcht as they might haue beene. I may thanke no body for it but my ſelfe. But God be thanked, that it was no worſe with mee; for I might haue receiu'd much more harme thereby, and therewith did I comfort my ſelfe.

Prouerbe.

One of my Camerades was of that Countrey, ſeruant to a Regent of the Collaterall Councell, whoſe father had alſo ſeru'd him heretofore, he was deſirous to make himſelfe knowne vnto him, whereupon hee went to kiſſe his hands, nor did his owne returne empty from him; But (being very glad to ſee him) offered to doe him any kindneſſe that lay in his power; nor were they Courtiers vvords, ſprinckled vvith holy-vvater, for he did as vvell doe, as ſay; For ſeldome, and to few, doth it happen in Court, to eate together in one plate, and at one boord; But when the minde is generous and noble, it euermore takes delight to giue; and by ſo much the more is encreaſed, by how much the more we craue. For it hath alwaies beene a peculiar property belonging to giuing, to make the *doner* famous and renowned to the world. And the more ſubiects they light on to conferre ſuch courteſies, ſo much the more glory doe they gaine vnto them-ſelues. Preſently, without any more adoe, hee employ'd him in ſome buſineſſes, and thoſe of ſome worth and moment, and well deſeruing a worthier ſubiect. Vnder his protection we went vp and downe the Citie, as if we had beene ſo many Vice-Kings of the Country, liuing without controlment, and no man daring to meddle with vs.

Noble minds are euer liberall.

Being thus ſeated on the warme ſide of the hedge, preſuming vpon his fauour and countenance, we did laſh out a little too much, in vndertaking ſuch and ſuch things, as were beyond the reach of our braines, and would require ſtronger wits then we had any. He was the tongue, wherewith we ſpake; he did direct vs, whither wee were to goe; and what wee were to doe; at what houres,

houres, we might with moſt ſafety be abroad; where we might beſt make our entry; whom we might beſt truſt; and of whom we had moſt reaſon to be afraid. For (as we ſhall tell you hereafter) they that commit the greateſt robberies, and ſuch thefts, as are more famous then any other, more cunningly carried, of a higher ſtraine and nature then the reſt, and of the greateſt importance, are thoſe that are neareſt in their attendance about the Miniſters of *Iuſtice*. For theſe men, feare nothing, they are in fauour with their Lord, neceſſity oppreſſeth them, occaſion is offred; God bleſſe euery good man from ſuch authenticall thieues, who thinke themſelues authorized to ſteale, and that the Law either cannot, or will not, take hold of them.

I went one day a wreſtling *à braço* * *partido* (as they ſay) with my thoughts, that is to ſay, vpon equall tearmes, without any manner of aduantage of my fellowes, out of a deſire that I had to ſeeke out ſomething wherewithall to entertaine my ſelfe; for it was almoſt high-noone, and wee had not yet threaded our needle, nor wrought one ſtitch of worke. And to come home empty handed, that I would not; I ſcorn'd not to ſend in my prouiſion before-hand, as holding it a great diſgrace vnto me. For if my companions ſhould chance to haue wrought their honey-combes, and that they were to bee found at home in the hiue, where we did all meete, if I ſhould bring nothing in, but feede vpon their ſtore, they would vpbraid me therewith calling me idle Drone; Titting and flouting at me, that I ſhould offer to ſit downe at boord [f] with cleane hands. Meaning thereby, that I had not laboured for my liuing as the reſt had done, nor taken the paines to foule my hands, and yet muſt ſit downe and eate at other mens coſt. Holding him for a baſe minded fellow, that would come to a well furniſht table, and ſit downe to dinner, not hauing before-hand prouided ſome prouiſion of his owne, whereon to feed. I had caſt mine eye vpon a very faire houſe, which at the firſt ſight ſeemed vnto mee, to belong to ſome honorable perſon, or principall Gentleman of that Citie. I entred as boldly into it, as if the houſe had beene mine owne. For (as it is in the Prouerbe) *nunca el timido, fue buen cirujano*; The fearfull man, neuer makes good Surgeon. Which kinde of Phraſe, your old women in *Spaine* vſe to their children, when they goe ſneakingly and fearfully about any buſineſſe. *Anda, anda, que pareçe que vas a hurtar*; Get thee gone, get thee gone, thou goeſt logging and dreamingly about it, as if thou wenteſt a filching. So that alwayes, and in all places whatſoeuer, or whereſoeuer I came, me thought I went into mine owne houſe, or that I did enter as it were by authority, with the *Vare* of Iuſtice in my hand, or the whole power of the Country.

I lookt about on this ſide, and on that ſide, longing that mine eyes might light one ſome-thing or other, that I might lay my hands on. At laſt it was my fortune to ſpy lying on the top of a little ſide-table, a faire blacke veluet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well ſerue to make three ſeuerall ſorts of garments, caſſocke, and hoſe, and ſomething elſe beſides; for there were full fifteene yards in it, and might very well beſeeme the wearing of the neateſt and braueſt Gallants in the Kingdome. I ſtood looking and peering on euery ſide of me, if I might goe cleanly away with this booty, that it might not coſt me the laying on, and eſcape without danger of being beaten for my labour; and by good hap I did not meete with any to hinder me in this my purpoſe; Whereupon I tooke it vp, and clapping it vnder mine arme, fetching two or three nimble friſcals, my feete were preſently vpon the threſhold of the doore, making their way to goe forth into the ſtreete: But I was no ſooner come thither, but there I met full butt with the owner of the houſe, who was Maſter *Datario* *, a man of great place and authority in that City, who ſeeing me come forth with this fardle vnder mine arme, asked mee what I was, what I made there, and what was that I carried away with me? I being thus put to my ſhift, made a vertue of neceſſity, and was not long in conſulting with my ſelfe

Prouerbe.
* Luchar a braço partido es proceder y gualmenté ſin ventaja de vno à otro. Covarr. verb. Braço.

Prouerbe.
[f] Vienese à ſentar à la meſa con ſus manos lavados. Dizeſe del que no ha trabajado como los demas, y à la hora de comer, no haviendo en zuſiado ſus manos, ſe viene con los demas à la meſa, y come de mogollon. Covarr. verb. Lavar.

Prouerbe.

Prouerbe.

Sayavedras *ſtealing of a Kirtle.*

* Datario, *a great office in* Rome, *as alſo in other places.*

my ſelfe for an anſwere, and with an vntroubled, or rather cheerefull countenance, ſaid vnto him; Sir, it is my Miſtreſſes pleaſure, that I ſhould vntucke theſe pleats a little, to make the folds fall a little handſomer, and that I ſhould leſſen it a thought in the waſte, for that it ſits not well before; and hath giuen me in charge to diſpatch it preſently. Doe ſo I pray (my friend) quoth he, ſee it be done quickly, and let it be your owne hand-working, that it may not bee done amiſſe, and make all the haſte you can. I then ſaid to my ſelfe; I haue done this with mine owne hand, and I will make quicke worke with the reſt. And with that I hy'd me downe the ſtreet, fetching more turnings and windings then a Snake, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that way, now here, and now there, and all, that they might not find any footing of mee, if hee ſhould chance to vncouple his hounds, and ſend them after me to follow mee vpon hot ſent.

Anon after (as ill lucke would haue it) hee came to know how the world went, for he was no ſooner come into the houſe, but hee found it all in an vproare, ſome in the hall, ſome in the kitchen, ſome in one roome, and ſome in another, the maids of the houſe ſome vnbraced, ſome their haire about their eares, ſome with one ſleeue off, and another on, ſome in one poſture, and ſome in another, but all in a combuſtion, brauling and calling one to another, giue me the Kirtle, giue mee the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle? but the Kirtle appeares not: you tooke it from my miſtreſſe, (ſaies one) I laid it here, (ſayes another) I left it here, (ſayes a third.) Then falls the Miſtreſſe of the houſe a chiding, asking who came in, or out? No body could tell of any; Then (quoth ſhe) it is likely, that ſome of the houſe muſt needs haue it, therefore looke it me out, and that quickly too, or elſe you ſhall ſoundly pay for it. There was ſuch an out-cry, ſuch exclamations, ſuch a howling, ſuch a bawling, and ſo hideous a noyſe, as if the whole houſe had beene fallen to the ground; in ſo much, that they could not one vnderſtand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the Maſter of the houſe, acknowledging now the error, that he had committed, in letting me goe away in that faſhion; and going to pacifie his wife, he told her that a thiefe had got into the houſe, and carried away her Kirtle, recounting vnto her, what had paſſed betwixt him and my ſelfe, when he met me comming forth of doores. Hee preſently made ſearch after me, but I ſo beſtir'd my ſtumps, that he could not then finde me out, hauing by this time both ſecured my perſon, and the Kirtle.

Sayavedras *theft at the Conſtables houſe.*

That night, I got me to the houſe of the great Conſtable, out of a deſire that I had, to finiſh a peece of worke, which ſome few dayes before, I had drawne out; but my pen did ſo blur, that I did deſpaire at that time to come off cleanly with it, and though I had taken a great deale of paines that it might bee neatly and handſomely done, yet could I neuer compaſſe (for want of a good opportunity) to haue it fall out fairly and fitly as I would till now. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or foure tables ſet ready for them, and a page or two appointed to ſit vp, and attend vpon them, till they gaue ouer. Euery table had his ſilke carpet, and two ſiluer candleſticks; I carried thither with me a couple that were counterfait, made of the pureſt Tinne I could get, and iuſt of the ſame faſhion and proportion, and ſo like in euery reſpect, that you could not for their fineneſſe, diſtinguiſh them from the other, iumping ſo truly, as well in the colour, as the making, prouided of purpoſe, for the better effecting of what I intended. I carried likewiſe two candles along with me, and vſing cloſe conueyance, that they might not be ſeene about me, I leaned againſt one of the corners of the wall, as I had vſed to doe heretofore, waiting for a faire occaſion to bring my proiect to paſſe, giuing thoſe that were there to vnderſtand, that I was a ſeruant to one of thoſe Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at [h] *cientos*, at one of thoſe tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and hee

[h] Cientos; *a witty game at Cards, much vſed in Spaine.*

he ſo ſleepy and ſo drouſie, that hauing call'd vnto him twice, hee did neither anſwer them, nor well minde what they ſaid vnto him: I made preſently in to them, and hauing my candles and candleſtickes in a readineſſe, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloake ouer my ſhoulder, as if I had beene one of the ſeruants of the houſe: I ſhifted the candleſticks, putting the lights into thoſe that I had brought with me, clapping thoſe other of ſiluer vnder mine arme; and ſo turning nimbly away from them, walking as Cats doe, ſoftly and without any noyſe, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other peeces of plate, which I had in the like manner at diuers times gathered together; And for to take away all occaſions of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt whether theſe are thine, or mine? Let me ſee the marke; Compare it with this or that other peece, and the difference will ſoone be decided; How came you by it? Where did you buy it? What was he that ſold it you? To auoid theſe and the like cauills, I thought good to make ſure worke with it; ſo I melted it (that it might not be knowne by its care-marke) all into one maſſe, and putting it into a fine earthen pot, I carryed it to my Captaine, that he out of the authoritie and credit that hee had abroad, might the better ſell it for me.

He did ſo; and taking out a fifth part for himſelfe, he gaue me the reſt in very good Royals of plate, without defrauding me of one farthing, or the leaſt haire of my head. It was an order amongſt vs, that to him, as to our Chieftaine, we ſhould bring all whatſoeuer we got, whereof the fifth part was his fee, which we truly and iuſtly paid vnto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the *Indies*, is to his *Catholike Maieſtie*. No Prince in the world had more punctuall payment. And for this taxe, tallage, impoſt, or cuſtome, (or whatſoeuer in that kinde you ſhall be pleaſed to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected and defended by him. Let no man thinke to chew his [i] meat on both ſides of his chaps at once; and to haue all the water runne through his owne mill, and none paſſe beſides. For there is no dignitie in this life without a penſion; and nothing that a man enioyes of his eſtate, but he muſt part with ſome portion out of it. Euery one hath his double rowe of teeth, together with his grinders, all would faine eat. Euery poll, hath his polling. There are certaine rights and duties to be raiſed out of all things whatſoeuer. Impoſts, and Intereits, muſt paſſe to and fro in the world. One hand waſheth [k] another, and both waſh the face. If one giue me a Capon, it is fit I ſhould beſtow the brawne thereof vpon him. And there is no money can be better imployd, then vpon ſuch a good Angell as this to guard vs. There are ſome kinde of people ſo cruell and vnconſcionable, that they thinke of nothing but deceit and cozenage, ſcooping like ſhouels all to themſelues; they will haue all the [l] bread, and the meat too; both a mans paines, and his profit; leauing vs nothing but the *periculum*, and the *pœnam*, the perill, and the puniſhment, if it be our misfortune to be caught. They will highly praiſe and commend vs, that they may incourage vs on to greater matters, as *Pizarro* did his people in the *Indies*. But when they giue vs moſt, and reward vs beſt, they thinke they doe vs a great fauour, if they giue vs the ſcraps and fragments, and what themſelues know not well what to doe withall, reſeruing the beſt and greateſt part of the profit to themſelues; as *Alexandro* dealt with me. But afterwards, when they ſee vs in diſtreſſe, and that we haue need of their helpe, they will not ſo much as know vs; they preſently ſtrike ſayle, and will not ſtirre a foot to ſuccour vs.

But we, and this our *Milaneſe* (whom we made our Commander) kept very good quarter; for he would by no meanes haue any more of vs then a fifth part, which by agreement belonged vnto him. And if at any time, he hauing need of money, did intreat vs that we would lend him ſome, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furniſht him, he would preſently ſet it downe in his booke, with an *Item* ſo much due

Prouerbe.
[i] Maſcar a dos carrillos. i Hazerſe à ambas partes contrarias con diſſimulaçion. Covarr. verb. Maſcar.

Prouerbe.
[k] Vna mano lava la otra, y entrambas la cara.

Prouerbe.
[l] Quieren el pan, y las maſeras.

vnto ſuch a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, and when that debt was ſatiſfied, he would either croſſe it, or write repayd in the margent; ſo that there was euermore an euen reckning kept betweene vs. No, no, he was none of theſe ſhuffling companions, he was wonderfull honeſt in ſharing the ſpoyle with vs, leuelling all accounts, and ſtill keeping an euen reckning with vs; and ſo as we had the fortune to make a good voyage, for the reſt, we needed not to feare. My fellowes did not loyter but beſtirred themſelues luſtily, and like good husbands, neuer came home with their hands in their [m] boſomes, nor dragg'd out an empty net.

Prouerbe.
[m] Con las manos en el ſeno.

We were foure of vs in the whole; three aduenturers, to enter vpon all kinde of enterprizes, and one Captaine to fight in our defence. We would ſomtimes take him along with vs,& put him formoſt, to the end that if any one of vs ſhould be taken napping, and the theft found about vs, he might ſerue to mitigate the matter, when we were thus taken in the manner, making vs to reſtore that which we had taken, (that I may not ſay ſtolne away) giuing vs two or three boxes on the eare, and as many kicks on the breech, diſmiſſing vs from thence in a diuels name, ſaying withall; Get you gone, you rogue, be packing I ſay like an arrant raſcall, and falſe thiefe as thou art, ſirrha, let me ſee your backe, and I aduiſe you let me neuer heare or ſee, that you fall any more a filching, leaue your ſtealing, and liue honeſtly, elſe I ſweare vnto thee by the faith of an honeſt man, I will cauſe thee to be whipt, or ſent to the Galleys. Being thus curſtly vſed by him, firſt kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were preſent, taking him to be a good honeſt Gentleman, and a mercifull minded man, they were content to let vs goe, and ſo did we ſcape that ſtorme by his meanes, whereas otherwiſe wee had beene ouertaken therewith.

But ſome againe, were ſuch hard-hearted people, and of that ſtubborne and peruerſe nature, that they did ſet vpon vs like fierce dragons, and were ſo full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but did ſtill preſſe vs more and more, and nothing would content them, but our impriſonment, whipping, hanging, all was too little for vs. They would firſt ſee vs clapt vp ſafe, and afterwards talke with vs at leyſure. To ſuch rough-hewen natures, and boyſterous diſpoſitions, our Captaine would come to the parties, whom we had wronged, and tell them; Doe not foyle your hands with ſuch a filthy rogue as this is, giue him a hundred kicks, and let him goe like a villaine and thiefe as he is, but doe not cauſe him to be apprehended, you ſee he is a poore raſcall, and if you commit him to priſon, there will he ſtarue, and be eaten vp with lice; and what pleaſure can you take in the deſtruction of ſuch a ragged ſnake, who in himſelfe is ſo wretched a ſoule already? And with that, crying out; Thou vngracious vnlucky villaine, they would giue vs ſuch iobs, ſuch puſhes, ſuch ſhocks, and iuſtlings, and thruſt vs with that violence from them, that they would make vs to root vp the earth with our noſes, and only thereby to free vs out of their hands, who had vs in hold.

But if any one ſhould be ſo ſtiffe, and ſo hard laced, that nothing could moue him to pitie, nothing worke our inlargement, we vſed our beſt endeuour to get from them; if that would not ſerue the turne, vve vvould ſtand vpon our iuſtification, and not ſticke (and that ſtoutly too) to tell this or that other to his teeth, that he lyde in his throat, and that we vvere as honeſt men as he, or the beſt of them all: And vvhileſt vve vvere thus ſtriuing to be gone, our Captaine vvould interpoſe himſelfe vnder colour of pacifying the matter, and vvould helpe to part vs, by his comming in betweene vs, and ſo free vs from out their clutches, and ſet vs at liberty. And if need vvere, (vvhen all this vvould not ſerue the turne) hee did throvv a [n] bone amongſt them, and vvould ſeeke ſome occaſion or other, prouoking them by vvords, to fall to blowes, quieting the leſſer tumult by the greater, and ſo made a ſhift to

Prouerbe.
[n] Deromavan el poleo, *ſayes the Spaniſh phraſe.* Lat: pulegium. *Eng. pennyroyall.* Quæ herba excitat oues ad balatum.

ſcuffle

ſcuffle away, and to diſ-imbroyle our ſelues of this troubleſome buſineſſe.

At other times, vvhen vve vvere running away vvith that vvhich vve had ſtolne, and vvere hardly followed, euen cloſe at the heeles of vs, one of our ſellowes vvould come athwart him that purſued vs, and ſtepping out iuſt before him, vvould detaine him for a vvhile, asking him vvhat vvas the matter, and vvhat troubled him, that he made ſuch haſte, vvho it vvas that had done him vvrong, together vvith the nature of the iniurie, and ſo vvould not ſuffer him to paſſe on, as if he had deſired to make peace, and to pacifie both parties. And albeit he would not giue him any anſwer, (for that his buſineſſe required haſte) yet were it more, or leſſe, that he thus entertained the time with him, euery the leaſt delay, were it neuer ſo little, was enough to make vs, to our great aduantage, gaine ground of him; howbeit they that flie, haue alwayes the ſtart of them that follow; and feare, in ſuch caſes, doth euermore clap wings to our feet. Whereas they that runne after others, doe naturally grow quickly weary, & beat themſelues out of breath, partly being ſtifled with the heat of paſſion, and partly out of the minde that they haue to doe another a ſhrewd turne, which doth much puzzell them, notwithſtanding that they ſtriue and labour all that they can to ouertake him: but it is impoſſible to ſtriue againſt nature, which doth euer fauour thoſe, that deſire to ſaue themſelues. Thus by one meanes or other, they were ſtill detayned, and miſt of their purpoſe.

Other-whiles, they would be bound for our forth-comming, giue their words for our truth and honeſtie, and though we had gone ſheere away with that which we had ſtolne, they would plead our innocencie, eſpecially, not being taken with the theft; for by this time we had conuay'd it ſome three or foure ſtreets of, where there was no more newes to be heard of it. So that by their good words, their interceſſions, and their being bound for vs bodie for bodie, we were freed from that euill opinion, which before was conceiued of vs. So that by hooke, or by crooke, this way, or that way, one or another, we went through-ſtitch with our buſineſſe, *maugre* all the world, or though ſpite ſhould haue done her worſt; for we had ſtill one tricke or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to ſerue our turne.

But once, being more careleſſe, then I ought to haue beene, I would needs goe forrage alone by my ſelfe, without euer a skout to ſcoure the coaſt, and though I ſhould haue taken one along with me, I perſwade my ſelfe, as the caſe then ſtood with me, he would haue ſteaded me little, or nothing at all. And thus it was.

Sayavedra's *ſtealing of ſhirts.*

My ſinnes (for it could be nothing elſe) had drawne me one day forth of the Citie to walke abroad and take the ayre, and comming neere vnto a riuer ſide, where in a medow vpon the graſſe were laid out a great many linnen cloathes a drying, and the woman that lookt vnto them, ſitting cloſe, to ſhade her-ſelfe from the heat of the Sunne, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farre off; me thought the linnen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, it made no great matter, either way (ſo I might haue what I look't for) would ſerue my turne well enough. I had a moneths minde, to folde vp two or three of the fineſt and neweſt ſhirts, that were there, thinking with my ſelfe, that they would fit well with my bodie, and ſo very eaſily and fairely I tooke them vp; but fearing leſt any body ſhould come in the meane while, and ſpie what I was a doing, I lapt them vp in haſte, not being willing to ſtay to folde them there, but to doe that at more leyſure, when I came to my lodging. The good woman did not ſee what I did, for her backe was all this while towards me; but there was not one wanting, who ſhrewdly complayning of me, not running (to make me the more ſecure) but walking a good round pace towards her, aduiſed her thereof.

This poore woman, when ſhee heard how the world went, ſets me out a throat, whoſe ſhrill ſound did aſcend as high as heauen. And leauing a little

girle, that ſhee had there, to looke vnto the reſt of the linnen, ſhee began to runne after me. So that I ſeeing my ſelfe in this ſtrait, I diſſembled the matter as well as I could, and without either turning my face towards her, or mending my pace, I walked ſoberly and demurely along, as if ſhee had nothing to doe with me; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on ſtill as I did before, without any perturbation of countenance, or inlarging of my ſteps; thinking with my ſelfe, that when this wicked woman had recouered that which ſhe loſt, ſhe would therewith haue been contented, and reſted quiet: but ſhee did not leaue me ſo; for if ſhee cryde out before, now ſhee made ſuch a noyſe, and ſent forth ſuch a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peale, which that ſhrill clapper of hers made. And for that we were not farre from the Towne, nor in a ſolitarie place, that was free from company, the our-cryes that ſhee made, were heard by many; inſomuch that great ſtore of all ſorts of people came running in, eſpecially boyes and little children, beſides a great number of dogs, barking and bawling, as if they had beene mad, comming about me as thicke as bees; being confounded, and ready almoſt to haue runne out of my wits with that tumultuous hurry, and horrible ſtirre they made. And ſome young lads, which fell in with theſe leſſer beagles, to make the cry the fuller, when they vnderſtood of the buſineſſe, were ready to ſwallow me vp aliue, from whoſe power (ſo violently were they bent againſt me) it was impoſſible for me to ſcape. From that day forward, I began to ſtand in feare of this little frye, which heretofore I was neuer afraid of. Theſe little minowes, were they, that by perſecuting of me, did vndoe me.

A ſhort tale of a drunkard.

When I heard *Sayavedra* ſay ſo, there preſently came into my minde a famous drunkard in *Madrid*, who being kickt and ſpurn'd, and mightily abuſed by the Boyes that had got about him; when hee came to the end of the ſtreet, hee ſtoopes mee downe and takes vp a couple of ſtones, and holding one in the one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himſelfe againſt a wall, hee ſaid thus vnto them: No more, no more (my good Boyes) it is enough; ſtay here, ſtay here (ſweet Children) for it is not fit you ſhould goe any farther. And therefore (my pretty hearts) let mee intreat you to goe backe, and not trouble mee, or your ſelues any longer: for I am very well ſatisfied with thoſe courteſies I haue already receiued from you; for the which I kindly thanke you. Otherwiſe, I haue nothing to returne you in requitall, but theſe ſtones, which I ſhall freely beſtow vpon you, though it coſt mee the laying on; ſo that ſome of you, I beleeue, will be better paid for your paines then you expect. Whereupon they ſeeing him thus reſolute, they ſneakt away one by one, and let the poore man alone, who afterward went quietly along about his buſines. If *Sayavedra* had taken the like courſe, he might peraduenture haue had the like ſucceſſe.

But he, continuing his diſcourſe went on and ſaid; ſurely where this rude rabble once bands and lincks it ſelfe together, no good man can doe ought that is good, nor any honeſt man paſſe in quiet for them. I ſought now to flye from them, as a man would fly from the gallowes: and I was in a good way towards it, and wanted little of comming thither. For, by ſeeking to flye from their hands I fell into thoſe of the Iuſtice; who had now caught me in their net, vvhence there vvas no hope to ſcape.

When I ſaw this misfortune vvas fallen vpon me: I made no more adoe, but ſent preſently to my Captaine, aduiſing him how the caſe ſtood with me, who as ſoone as hee vnderſtood of it, made all the haſte he could vnto mee, was with me (as they ſay) ere a man could ſay *this*; and well inſtructed mee what I ſhould both ſay and doe. That done, hee went to the Notarie, telling him that hee knew mee to bee well deſcended, that I was honourably borne both by Father and Mother, and of as ancient and noble a Houſe as any was in *Spaine*: and that it was not poſſible, nor was it to bee beleeu'd, that ſuch a Gentleman as I was, would commit ſo foule a fact.

But

But say (which cannot sinke into my head) that it should be true, it is not a thing so much to be wondred at; for that he might either doe it out of youthfulnesse (which is incident now and then to play such kinde of idle prankes) or out of want, lacking money, and being loath to begge or borrow, or forced thereunto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans qualitie, and the noblenesse of his house. What with these good words and something else that he did besides, within some two houres after I was freed out of Prison: and (had God beene pleased so to haue it) I could haue wisht I might not haue come out then, nor three houres after that; nay, not till darke night: but since it was his good will and pleasure that it should succeed as it did with me, blessed bee his name for euer, good or ill must be welcome from his hand. Sinne, that Catchpole of Conscience, that churlish Porter that keepes account of our actions, and has an eye to what wee doe, who had still persecuted me at the very thresholds of the dores wherinto I entred, was not vnmindful to do the like by me in that of the Prison, when I was ready to come out: for euen as I was putting my foote ouer the threshold, who should I meet full butte, but Maister *Datario?* who came thither to free a Prisoner.

As soone as hee saw mee, hee presently knew mee, and withall pusht me so violently backe, that I fell flat vpon my backe to the ground; and then comming fiercely vpon mee that hee might hold me, while hee had me at this aduantage, and calling to the Keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him to surcease his sute. Hee was a powerfull man, I vsed all possible diligences: but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman, nor the tendernesse of my yeares, preuaile so farre, as to bring mee fairely off. And, as if they had done me a deed of charity, and bestowed an almes on mee, by way of transaction and agreement, as if they had shewed mee all the fauour in the world, they gaue mee such a heauy sentence that I shall neuer forget it vvhile I liue. I vvent for shirts, and they stript mee of mine from my shoulder to my vvaste, banishing mee from thence for euer. I had my payment, but the blockhead had not his Kirtle: see how a vvilfull foole, such a one as this vvas, stood in his owne light; being more vvilling to doe me a mischiefe then himselfe a pleasure; and to lose his goods, rather then to let mee loose: vvhich hee might easily haue recouered of me, if he vvould haue suffered mee to stay in that City.

Well, I vvas forced to forgoe *Naples*, and vvith it, all my old friends and acquaintance: I packt vp all my trinkets together, and that poore pittance that I had pickt vp by mine owne industry, and departed from thence, vvandring vp and downe *Italy*, till I came to *Bologna*, where *Alessandro* receiued me into his seruice: who did vsually go out of that City, to fetch in some booty or other; and hauing sped vvell hee returned home in safety. When wee vvere in *Rome*, and came in vnto you, when you vvere in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some farther quarrell vvould haue growne thereupon, vvherby vvee might vvith the more safety haue got some Cloakes or Hats: but that occasion being taken away, missing thus of our purpose, wee began to plot how wee might commit this theft, making me (as their manner was) ° *Cabeça de Lobo*, the Wolfes head, the instrument of their profit; vvhilst they kept their owne fingers out of the fire, and would be sure to be out of the danger of Gun-shot. This Story vvas he telling me, vvhen vvee were now come to our iournies end. And so ceasing to talke any farther of it, vve came into our Inne, vvhere vve presently had that prouided for vs vvhich vvas fitting for trauellers that were not to make any long stay.

Prouerbe.
° Cabeça de Lobo. *That is, the occasion that a man take to benefit himselfe. As he that kils a Wolfe, and carries the head to the Villages thereabout, receiuing something of euery one by way of gratification, for the good hee hath done in killing so dangerous and hurtfull a Beast.* Couarr. Verb. Cabeça.

CHAP. VI.

Sayavedra *meets in* Milan *with a friend of his that ſerv'd a Merchant*; Guzman de Alfarache *layes a witty plot how to rob him.*

With a great deale of attention and admiration, had *Sayavedra* all this iourney tyed mine eares to his tongue. And during the reſt of the vvay, till vvee reacht to *Milan*, vvee vvere neuer out of matter; but kept the ball ſtill vp; hee toſſing one tale to me, and I returning another to him: ſo that our Diſcourſe neuer made a fault; but vvas (being both good Players) vvell maintaind and kept vp betweene vs. But I had a great contradiction in my ſelfe, and could hardly bee brought to beleeue that men of noble birth, Sonnes of ſuch vvorthy Parents, ſhould ſuffer themſelues to bee thus violently haled by their Paſſions; that, forgetting the reſpect due to their bloud and Gentry, (the remembrance vvhereof ſhould cauſe them to goe on in an honourable and ciuill courſe of life) doe notwithſtanding commit baſe and infamous actions, by robbing others of their goods and honours: for in very truth, hee that loſeth his vvealth, loſeth both the one and the other; for euery man is ſo farre forth eſteemed and honoured, as hee is rich and vvealthy. Whereupon I ſaid ſecretly to my ſelfe; ſurely if *Sayavedras* father left him ſo rich as hee himſelfe reporteth hee did, how comes it (quoth I) to paſſe, that hee is turned thiefe? and that hee takes more pleaſure to follow this lewd kinde of life, and to endure theſe ſhamefull affronts, then to liue in eſteeme and reputation in his owne Countrey? If vvee doe ill, vvee therefore doe it becauſe it carries a faire appearance vvith it, and ſhewes vnto vs a certaine ſhadow, or a kinde of reſemblance of ſome goodneſſe or other; but in ſuffering ſuch indignities as hee hath done, there is no hope thereof, no colour at all for it. But I preſently recall'd this raſh cenſure, and ſodainly taking vp my ſelfe, I fell to excuſing of him, and began vpon better deliberation to ſay with my ſelfe; It may bee hee went from home being a childe as I did. And ſo, conſidering the relation that hee had made vnto mee, mine owne proper ſteppes repreſented themſelues vnto mee, and thoſe lewd courſes that my ſelfe had runne. But I afterwards came againe to my ſelfe and ſaid: But ſuppoſe all this to bee true vvhich hee hath ſaid: Why did hee not turne ouer a new leafe vvhen hee had the vſe of reaſon, and came to bee a man, taking vpon him the profeſſion of a Souldier? He might anſwere likewiſe for himſelfe and ſay; Why did not I ſo to? I ſee a mote in another mans eye, and cannot behold the beame that is in mine owne.

Military Profeſſion is a pleaſing thing, and hath many motiues to draw a mans affection thereunto. They haue good pay, they paſſe well enough with it; it teacheth a man hardneſſe, it maketh him to forget his dainty fare at home, and boldly to aduenture his life to winne honour, and to doe his Countrey ſeruice. But they pay dearly for it, they haue too hard a bargaine of it, it is a kinde of taking vp of money at extreame rates, and exceſſiue intereſt, for to ſatisfie a debt of leſſer value. They muſt ſerue long before they can come to any thing, riſe betimes in the morning, watch all night, haue his ſhoulders pincht with the heauy weight of a Muſquet, ſtand Centinell for the ſpace of full foure houres, and two at the leaſt, when hee is [a] *Centinela perdida*, without budging or mouing but a foote from that place where they haue once ſet him: let it raine, thunder or lighten neuer ſo faſt; freze, ſnow, or blow the windes neuer ſo hard; let the weather be as ſharpe as ſharpe may be, all is one, he muſt ſtand to his tackling. And when hee hath done all this, like a ſouldier and a braue fellow,

Monie makes man to bee eſteemed.

Men ſooner ſee other mens faults then their owne.

The ſweetneſſe and ſowreneſſe of warre.

[a] Dixoſe Centinela, à Scintillando. Porque ha de eſtar con los ojos abieros, y viuos, como çentellas. Otros dizen, que eſta corrompido el vocablo de çentinela, à ſentiendo. Por la viueza que ha de teneren todos los ſentidos; eſpecialmentè en la viſta, y eneloydo. Centinela perdida, *is hee that is put out of a Caſtle, or out of a Campe into the open field, where in caſe of neceſſity, he cannot bee conueniently relieued: and ſo he muſt ſtand to his aduenture. The French ſtile him,* Centinelle perduë. Covarr. Verb. Centinela.

low, when hee ſhall returne home ſafe to his lodging (not reckoning thoſe that miſcarry by this meanes) hee hath not ſo much as a Candle to light him to bed, nor fire to dry either his wet or frozen carcaſſe, nor bread to put in his mouth, nor wine to waſh downe thoſe crummes, being hunger-ſtaru'd, all mire and dirt, all to bee rent and torne, but not a ragge of comfort. And therefore conſidering the hard life that a Souldier leades, and how ill they are rewarded, hazarding their owne liues to ſaue other mens, I doe not much blame *Sayavedra* that hee did not turne Souldier.

But for his elder Brother, *Señor Iuan Marti*, or *Mateo Luxan* (leauing him to make choyce of one of the two, as ſhall ſtand beſt with his Worſhips liking) who was of age ſufficient, when his father died, for to diſcerne betwixt ill and good, who had a good houſe to put his head in, and good meanes to maintaine it, and to haue liu'd richly and plentifully, and in good reputation and credit in his owne Country, what a Diuell mou'd him, or what helliſh temptation came into his minde, to neglect his owne buſines, and ſo fooliſhly thruſt himſelfe to intermeddle in other folkes matters, and to fall at laſt to ſtealing of cloakes. How much better would it haue beene for him to haue employd his perſon in ſome honourable entertainment or other? Hee was a good Gramarian, hee had ſtudied the Lawes, and might (if hee would himſelfe) haue eaſily come to be a Doctor.

But happely, theſe and the like doe thinke, That there needs no more to make a thiefe, then to ſay; I will be a thiefe. And that all ſhall ſucceed as happily with them, as themſelues could wiſh it. But in good ſooth, I muſt beate them out of this errour, and plainly tell them; That there is more in it, then ſo. That it will coſt them no ſmall labour, and withall they muſt incurre a great deale of danger. Beſides, I cannot well tell you, whether or no, there be ſo many rules amongſt the Lawyers, as he needs to haue, who meanes to proue a good thiefe indeed. For ſay, that there be two in a Towne, that emulate one another, and contend for the victorie, and that the one after a great deale of ſtrife, and ſtiffe ſtanding out, will at laſt concurre with the other, who hath gotten him the name and fame of all that perfection that belongs to your [b] *Cocoquiſmo*, and *Germania*, the true Art of filching and ſtealing, and hath ſhow'd himſelfe an excellent Proficient in that Science, I can aſſure you, on my credit, hee had need carry a cloſe hand, and looke narrowly to his buſineſſe. For, to my ſeeming, if that be true, (as I thinke it was) which *Sayavedra* deliuered vnto me; he was a poore vnfortunate pilchard, a kind of ſhotten Herring; and I, in compariſon of him, a great goodly Whale. Yet for all this, did not I dare, (fearing I ſhould proue my ſelfe a dunce, when I came to be examined by the maſters of that faculty) to ſtand for my grace, nor pretend the Cap and Hood, as doubting, how I ſhould be able to anſwer for my degree, if I were well canuaſt by thoſe that ſhould oppoſe me. *Sayavedra*, and his brother (doubtleſſe) did flatter themſelues, and were truly perſwaded, that with theſe poore dry petty thefts, ill ſeaſoned, without any good taſte, ſweet ſauour, or any the leaſt pleaſant reliſh in the world, they might boldly goe into the Schooles, and there reade in the [c] *Regis profeſſor* his chaire, their ſolemne Lectures for their Doctorſhip. They did happely thinke with themſelues, that there was no more in it, then what a good plaine Country-fellow ſaid, that was a kinde of poore ſilly *Alcalde*, in a little Village, called [d] *Almonaçi de Curita*, in the kingdome of *Toledo*, who hauing made a watring place for the towne Cattle to

Thieuing is a trade, that is full of trouble.

b *Termes of Art amongſt theeues and rogues.* Germania, elaccento en la penultima, es el lenguage de la ruſianeſca; dicho aſſi; ò porque no los entendemos, ò por la hermandad que entre ſitienen. *A canting kind of language. Alſo taken for a fraternitie, or brotherhood amongſt theeues.* Covarr. verb. Germania.

A tale of a Country Alcalde.

c *The Spaniſh word is*; Catedra de prima. Valetanto, como ſilla pueſta en alto, qual es la de los Maeſtros que leen; con obligaçion de leer à tiempo ſenalado, &c. Covarr. verb. Catedra. d Almonaçi de Curita, *is ſeated betwixt* Alualate, *and* Zorita. *It is an Arabicke word corrupted, of* Almunaſi, *which ſignifies a place of oblivion: ſeeming to haue its root, from the Hebrew word* naſas, obliuiſci. *And in that Towne there is wine of that ſtrength and goodneſſe, that Trauellers ſet their iourneyes ſo, as they may lodge there at night, where ſome of them forget themſelues, like* Vlyſſes *ſouldiers, before they get thence.* Otros dizen, que vale tanto como, huerta del Rey. Vid. Covarr. pag. 56.

drinke

drinke at, when he had finiſht it, and made it handſome, hauing fitted it with ceſternes, and whatſoeuer elſe hee in his wiſedome held to be neceſſary, hee call'd the wiſedome of the towne together, the whole body of the Councell, where in their preſence, he caus'd the conduit pipes to be opened, and to let out the water, that they might giue their iudgement and opinion, how they lik't of it? One ſaid, the trough ſtood too high; another, too low. The *Alcalde*, ſeeing his worke found fault withall, was not halfe well pleaſed with it, but ſcorning to be daſht out of countenance, and ouer-borne by his inferiours, he ſteps himſelfe to the trough, and there his worſhip drinkes: And when hee had done, ſtepping backeward about ſome two ſtrides, or thereabouts, looking angerly, yet grauely enough vpon them, he firſt ſpits, then wipes his mouth, and laſtly ſayes vnto them; Gods nigs, (my maſters) you need not find ſuch fault with it, there is no more to be ſaid in this matter: for being that I can make a ſhift to drinke at it, there is neuer a beaſt but may do the like, if he haue a minde to drinke.

Euen iuſt ſo is it with your young thieues that are freſh-water-Souldiers, and not well beaten to the buſineſſe, who thinke all things eaſie, that they take in hand, and when they heare of ſuch a famous thiefe, and that he hath done wonders in that kinde, will not ſticke to ſay; Tuſh, this is nothing: We can doe as much as this, and more too. But I promiſe you on my honeſt word, that ſuch as theſe, who haue ſo good a conceit of them-ſelues, that may bee ſaid of them: which another Country fellow, nor farre from thence, dwelling in *Mancha*, ſaid to two other fellowes, who earneſtly contended about the foale of a Mare; One ſaid, it was a Horſe; No, ſaid the other, it is a Mule: Then a third perſon, that was in their company, drawing neerer and neerer, and rounding about the beaſt, and viewing, and viewing him againe, after hee had throughly marked his muſle, and his eares, hee cryes out aloud; Gods-bores, what a deale of doe is here about nothing? You are a couple of coxe-combes both of you; for I can aſſure you, this is as very an Aſſe, as my father. He that will boaſt himſelfe to be a thiefe, and deſires to bee liſted in the rolle of thoſe that haue gotten greateſt fame, let him endeuour to doe things brauely, let him be an honourable thiefe, and not of that baſeneſſe of minde, as to ſtoope ſo low, as to rob an hearbe-wifes ſhop of a rope of onions, or Tops and Gigs, and ſuch other toyes as little children vſe to play withall, which ſerue but from hand to mouth, to feed other thieues withall; who will vſe thee no otherwiſe, then men doe their ſlaues: you muſt pay them daily tribute, or elſe you muſt be packing; they will not care a pin for you. And yet for theſe petty thefts (though thou thinkſt to ſcape with them, as things of nothing,) they may chance to chaine thee to the gallies, if not halter thee at the gallowes. A man ſhould not (me thinkes) ſo much vnder-value his owne worth, as to proſtitute his life to danger, and to lay open his ſhoulders to ſhame, for bables and trifles; nor, is it fit, that for ſo little, a man ſhould pay ſo much. That a man ſhould bee ſuch a foole, as to indanger his necke for a Kirtle, or a couple of ſhirts) *Quien camiſas hurta, [e] jubon eſpera*; He that ſteales a ſhirt, liues in hope to haue a doublet too. Let ſuch a white-liuerd-whoreſon, doe that, which that valiant Captaine *Capin Vitelo* aduiſeth; [f] *El mercader, que ſu trato no entiende, çierre la tienda*; That Merchant, that vnderſtands not his trade, let him ſhut vp his ſhop.

A tale of three country fellowes.

But to let theſe thieues alone, and to come home to my ſelfe; what could I now doe, if I ſhould come to be put to it? What's become of all my cunning thefts? I doubt me, I ſhould be to ſeeke, how, where, and which way to begin. The Art of it, is gone from me, but not the feare. Euery thing hath its courſe, and its time, it is now a great while agoe ſince I finger'd my *fleame* or *lancet*, or that I did let any man blood, my hand is nothing ſo nimble as it was, it is growne ſlow and dull, and knowes not well where to pricke the veine. Beleeue it, There is no ſuch Maſter as *Practice*. Vſe, and exerciſe, are excellent things,

Practice, a great matter.

to

e *There is alſo (which the Iuſtice beſtowes on rogues)* Jubon de açotes: porque ſe los ajuſtan alas eſpaldas. Covarr. 492.

f *Prouerbe.*

to keepe the hand in vre: Which when it is wanting, the vnderſtanding gathers moſſe, waxeth mouldy, and growes ruſty.

When we were come to *Milan*, we kept vacation for three or foure dayes. For I durſt not as yet aduenture to play. I was loath to haue any thing to doe with your men of warre, for they alwayes play very warily. Your Souldiers are ſubtile cunning gameſters, and aboue all, beare a moſt malitious minde againſt a mans money. They are neuer quiet, till they haue it. All, or the moſt part of them, would ſeeke to play vpon ſome one aduantage or other. I could not make vſe of my trickes, nor would they permit me to put them vpon them, yet I muſt, whether I would or no, be forced to giue way to theirs. Beſides, of them I was ſure to get but little, but might be in election to loſe much. I was not minded to doe any thing there, ſaue onely to round the City, to ſee what a manner of thing it was, what their trafficke, and ſuch other greatneſſes as it ſhould afford our ſight, and ſo afterwards to bid it farewell. And being thus reſolued, I went to walke all that day from ſhop to ſhop, where I ſaw ſo many curioſities that I was taken with great admiration in the beholding of them, as alſo in the great trade, that was there driuen, euen in leſſer things, that were of meaner value.

Guzman *comes to* Milan.

Standing one day in the midſt of the Market-place, there came to *Sayavedra*, a handſome young youth, honeſtly clad, and well behau'd, and both in his garbe and faſhion, a very fine *Spaniard*. But becauſe his backe was towards me, I could not then diſcerne, nor vnderſtand more of him, but that they went a little aſide off from me, where alone by them-ſelues, they entertained talke a good while: which put me in a great muſe, thinking with my ſelfe, what might be the cauſe, that theſe two ſhould treat together with that ſecreſie, not hauing (as I did imagine with my ſelfe) euer ſeene one another before. Notwithſtanding, that I might not breake off their diſcourſe, to the end that I might ſee whither it tended, I ſtood ſtill, and did not moue from the place wherein I was, hauing ſtill an eye, leſt they ſhould get out of my ſight, obſeruing their proceedings, and that if they ſhould chance to go towards my lodging, I might (taking the ſtart of them,) be there before them. And euer and anon, mine eye was vpon them, but yet kept me ſtill where I was, to the end that they likewiſe might not ſhift a foot, and ſo ſlip from me.

For, I did conſider with my ſelfe; if I ſhould now call him vnto mee, and aske him, what it was they talked of, *Sayavedra* might take occaſion to make what excuſe he liſt himſelfe, and might make me this anſwer; that by reaſon of my calling him away, they had not finiſhed their diſcourſe, nor as yet entertained talke to any purpoſe. Whereupon, for my better ſatisfaction, I thought it my beſt courſe, to continue there a little longer, and to leaue them a large field, wherein to expatiate their minds, for I had no ſuch earneſt buſineſſe elſewhere, as might preſſe me to be gone. Now when it was almoſt dinner-time, this young youth tooke his leaue, and went about his buſineſſe; And I was likewiſe willing to doe the like; for all this while I was wonderfull iealous, and had a ſtrong ſuſpition, that they had plotted together to put a tricke vpon me. And *Sayavedra*, not ſaying a word to me, nor I to him, my feare was thereby the more increaſed, and began more and more to doubt what their drift might be. Watching him with no leſſe care then a Cat would watch a Mouſe. For Suſpition, is a ſhrewd wormе, which lies ſtill gnawing at the heart; nor is it to be held a vice, when it ſetles it ſelfe vpon a vicious man. For, accordingly as the natures and conditions of men are, ſo haue we reaſon to be more, or leſſe ſuſpitious: Fearing euery man ſo farre forth, as his faſhion and carriage may occaſion this feare. But for as much as the deſire that we haue after this, or that other thing, makes vs to ruſh violently on, & break through the bars of all difficulties whatſoeuer, although I would faine haue held peace, and did ſtriue all that I could to keepe in this tongue of mine, yet could I hold no longer, (no though

The nature of ſuſpition and iealouſie.

though my life had layen vpon it) but I muſt needs aske him; who that young man was, and what might be the ſubiect of this their long diſcourſe? yet did I forbeare for the preſent, making no words thereof till I had dined, and then taking my time, calling *Sayavedra* vnto me, I ſaid thus vnto him; That young man, that was with you this morning, me thinks I haue (if I be not much miſtaken) ſeene him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoça*?

Aguilera, *a famous theefe.*

No Sir, (ſaid *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguilera*; nor hath he his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will flie at any thing, nothing comes amiſſe to him, he is ſtill ready vpon all occaſions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; he is likewiſe a brother of the Companie, and ſuch a one, as none of them all can out-ſtrip him, he hath more tricks then a hundred of them, there is more reſort to his Lectures, then to all the other Readers beſide, put them all together.

O, this *Aguilera* hath tickling tallons, and what he once ſeazes on, is ſure his owne, he goes ſheere away with it, and tis neuer heard of any more. He hath a quicke apprehenſion, a nimble wit, a ſtrong braine, a ſound iudgement, he is an excellent pen-man, and ſuch an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants booke, or ſumming vp of any recknings whatſoeuer, that I know not his fellow. We haue knowne one another theſe many yeeres, we haue trauayled together, and endured many particular troubles, and perils. And now he hath beene at me, to put me vpon one, which may turne to our exceeding either great good, or hurt; it being with vs, as with thoſe that goe to Sea, either a happy voyage, or a miſerable ſhip-wracke. For he that will goe to Sea, muſt reſolue before-hand to encounter with dangers; eſpecially, being that betweene our death, and our life, there is no more then the ſpringing of a planke, or the ſlipping of a cord.

He gaue me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpoſe to ſeeke out as well as he could ſome meanes whereby to liue. But, becauſe he would not ingulphe himſelfe, before he had firſt ſounded the water, and that he might not within two dayes after his arriuall, be taken vp for a vagabond, or ſome maſterleſſe-hound, he had by good hap lighted vpon an entertaynment, which might quit coſt without ſuſpition; for he had now placed himſelfe with a Merchant of this Citie, who had receiued him into his ſeruice for the goodneſſe of his hand, and hath ſeru'd him now a yeere, and ſomewhat more very faithfully and truly, looking when he might play the iade with him, and giue him a ſound kicke with his heeles, and get ſafe away from him, as your Mules vſe to doe, when they once come to be ſeuen yeere old; who kicke at thoſe, that haue kept them.

He farther told me, that we ſhould lay our heads together, and draw one or two good fellowes into our companie, and ioyne together, to knead ſuch a cake, and to make vs ſuch a ſwinging paſtie, that we might feed our fills, and free our ſelues from this poore and miſerable kinde of life, wherein now we liue. But I was loath to hearken thereunto, holding it not ſo conuenient, for two reſpects.

Firſt, becauſe I found my ſelfe already ſo well fitted to my minde, that I did not deſire to leade any better life, then that I now did with you: And ſecondly, for that a great deale of conſideration is to be required, before a man leape out of one courſe of life into another. A little (I knew) could not content vs; and to carry away much, it was impoſſible, wanting conueniencie of meanes to doe it. Here, we could not hide our ſelues out of the way, or keepe our ſelues ſecret aboue foure dayes; nor could we ſecure our ſelues by flight, but that we ſhould be taken, before we had gone foure ſteps out of Towne, ſo that we ſhould either leaue our necks there longer then the marke, or our perſons ſo rack't and ſo tortur'd, that they would neuer after be vſefull vnto vs. We gaue, and tooke; he argued, I anſwered: In concluſion, he preſt me hard vnto it; but

but I ſtood off; ſo that we did not ioyne iſſue, and all that had paſt betweene vs, was to no purpoſe. Many deſignes, many deuices were toſt to and fro betweene vs; but I did not like of any one of his propoſitions. For when the concluſion does not handſomly follow, the meanes thereunto are impertinent, and the grounds naught. So for that time he left me, becauſe his houre was come, that he muſt hye him home; nor would he willingly be wanting, when his maſter ſhould haue occaſion to vſe him. Haſtning perhaps his departure the ſooner, becauſe he ſaw he could doe no good vpon me, and that all our talke was to no end in the world.

This, that *Sayavedra* had told me, did neither ſecure my ſuſpition, nor worke an abſolute vnbeleefe in me, becauſe I thought with my ſelfe, it was not a thing vnlikely. I call'd for my cloake, and out of doores we went, with a purpoſe to walke abroad into the fields to recreate our ſelues. And albeit, the moſt part of that euening, we talk't of other things; this feare, was neuer out of my head, but where-ſoeuer I went, or what-ſoeuer I did, I was ſtill thinking vpon it, and it would neuer out of my minde; deuiſing with my ſelfe, whether I were beſt to beleeue him, or no; or whether truſting to his honeſtie, and depending on the profeſſion of his loue vnto me, he might play the Iacke with me, and ſtrike me, like a [f] ſhouell-boord peece (being now a ledger) into the box, and himſelfe remaine vpon the boord in my place. And if he ſhould thus play the box with me, of whom ſhould I complaine, but mine owne folly? or whom can I iuſtly blame but my ſelfe? A man may beare with one ſlippery tricke that is playd him, and if he pocket it with ſilence, or otherwiſe diſſemble it, he may very well be excuſed; but to be cozened twice one after another, and by one and the ſame party, he deſerues to haue the Aſſes ſaddle clapt on his backe. What aſſurance can I haue from this man, or how may I dare to truſt him, ſince, (as it is in the prouerbe) *nunca buena viga ſe hizo de buen cohombro*; a crooked Cucumber, neuer made ſtraight rafter. He that is naturally giuen to knauiſh tricks, will hardly, or neuer leaue them. And were not this a fine one aboue the reſt, that he ſhould put a full ſtoccado vpon me, and goe brag when he had done, that he had beaten a maſter of defence at his owne weapon? Did I not deſerue to be laught at, if I ſhould ſuffer him to carry away the bucklers from me in this faſhion? But as mine [h] eye was neuer off from the doore; ſo my [i] hand was ſtill vpon my diſtaffe. I was now become another *Argos* in mine owne buſineſſe; and another *Vlyſſes*, to looke to his water. Plotting with my ſelfe, how (if that were true, which he told me) I might helpe them to come off ſafely and cleanely with this buſineſſe, in caſe it might be a matter of ſome moment and conſideration, and that I might be ſure it would free them from beggery, and make them for euer after to liue like men. For, to beſtow a great deale of coſt vpon that, which will yeeld but little profit, were fooliſhneſſe, if not meere madneſſe. There is no thrift, no good husbandry in it. The imploying of our paines, and our purſe, ought to be anſwerable to the gaines and profits, that will come of it. For a man to limbeck his braines, a whole, nay, many nights, for Moone-ſhine in the water, or ſuch a poore commoditie, as will ſcarce pay for a meales meat, is ſuch a foolery, as no wiſe man will trouble his head about it. But becauſe it might haply proue a rich voyage, and might haply ſpeed better then we were aware of, when we had done walking, and were now come home to ſupper, ſeeing *Sayavedra* looke ſomewhat ſad and heauy, as if ſomething did trouble him, I ſaid vnto him; Me thinks (*Sayavedra*) thou robbeſt thy ſelfe of thy mirth, becauſe thou canſt not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth, doth greatly diſquiet thee. Is that which thou muſeſt vpon (for I ſee thou art in a browne ſtudie) ſome rare plot, one of *Archimedes* his quaint inuentions? I can aſſure thee, I know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this buſineſſe, and a fellow I tell you, that will not ſhrinke in the wetting, ſo as it may be a good fat purchaſe indeed, none of theſe

[f] *Th: Spaniſh phraſe is:* y me dieſſe vn cabe, que paſſaſſe la raya. Cabe en el juego de la argolla, es la diſtançia que ay de vna, à otro bola, que para ſerlo, por lo menos ha de caber en medio la paleta, ſin tocar aninguna de los dos, y de ayui tomo el nombre: y cabe de paleta es el que eſta tan junto, que de vna bola à otra, no aymas tierra ò ſuelo, del que puede tomar la paleta tendida en medio, y errarle, es de ruynes jugadores. y para ſer cabe, ha de hazer que la bola de ſu contrario, tocada con el golpe de la ſuya, paſſe de la raya del juego, y vale dos piedras, ò pedradas.
This Argolla, *is an ordinarie play in* Spaine. Covarr. verb. Cabe. 161.

[g] - Tortuſque per herbam, Creſceret in ventrem cucumis. Virgil. 4. Georg.
Prouerbe.

[h] Siempre tune los ojos en la puerta.
Prouerbe.

[i] Nunca me faltaron las manos de la rueca.
Guzman *falls aboard* Sayavedra, *concerning the robbing of the Merchant of Milan.*

leane carrion commodities, but one that may haue ſome good tacke and ſubſtance in it.

What tacke, what ſubſtance would you haue, ſayes *Sayavedra*? There is twenty thouſand ducats, and a better penny to be had, if we can handſomely light vpon it. There is cloth enough (Sir) to cut out, to content vs all, if we will our ſelues, which we may order and diſpoſe, as we ſhall beſt thinke fit. Well (quoth I) vnto him; I pray God, it come not to be cut out for vs into ſhrowds (you know my meaning) and then all will be well. But I prithee tell mee one thing; ſeeing thou ſtandſt thus plodding, and muſing on the matter, is it poſſible that thou haſt not yet ſetled vpon ſome one inuention or other, that may ſerue the turne, make the game ſure, and ſtrike it dead at thy foot?

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replyes *Sayavedra*; I cannot hit vpon the right ioynt; I haue now loytred ſo long, that I am as farre to ſeeke, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. I haue taken my pleaſure, and liu'd ſo much at eaſe of late, that through too much idleneſſe, thoſe ſpirits and blood, that ſhould quicken my vnderſtanding, and put life into it, are growne dull and muddy; and my wits, for want of vſe, as ruſtie as olde yron. A thouſand times, I ſeeke to fall into my old trot, but I haue ſcarce ſtrucken two ſtrokes, but I grow reſty and lazie, and am not able for my life to pace one true ſtep, or to bring my ſelfe to that perfection and readineſſe of hand, to winde you this way, or that way (or whither-ſoeuer you would haue me to goe) as I was wont to doe. Many proiects proffer themſelues vnto me, but I pitch vpon none, as miſliking all, propoſing this and that, and t'other courſe; but in concluſion, none ſorted to my liking.

When I heard him ſay ſo, I thus made anſwer thereunto. Since it is a buſines of that importance as thou ſayſt, what ſhare ſhall I haue out of it, if I ſhall rid you of this care, & bring you (like valiant conquerors) brauely off with the victory?

Sir (ſaid *Sayavedra*) my part, and my perſon are both at your diſpoſall; but as for *Aguilera*, you were beſt talke with him your ſelfe, and when you two are agreed, I make account the buſineſſe is as good as ended, and all ſhall be as we would haue it.

Goe to then (ſaid I) goe and ſeeke him out, and ſee if you can come to ſpeake with him, but with that ſecrecy, that you be ſure you be not ſeene by any of his maſters houſe; and wiſh him (when his leyſure will giue him leaue) that he and I may talke a word together, and it ſhall not be long ere he and I be better acquainted, being I know him (by your report) ſo well already.

He did ſo: ſending a ticket ſecretly vnto him; and when we were met, I began to wyre-draw him, and to queſtion him ſomewhat more particularly, touching his maſters diſpoſition, his condition, and qualitie, what ſtore of wealth he had, in what commodities it did moſt conſiſt; how, and where it lay; what moneys he had in preſent caſh, and vnder what keyes? When I had done; he began to make his relation vnto me, in this manner, as I here deliuer vnto you.

Sir, I aſſure my ſelfe *Sayavedra* hath ſufficiently informed you of me; yet my ſelfe ſhall giue you to vnderſtand, that I am by my profeſſion a [k] caulker of ſhips, and a reaſonable good mariner, but as poore, as poore may be. And albeit I am not ignorant, that thouſands with a great deale leſſe wit, haue growne to a great deale of wealth in the world, yet I haue ſeene ſome others more able, and more deſeruing, to haue come to the gallowes, my ſelfe being none of thoſe, that haue leaſt deſerued it: for which eſcape, I render infinite thanks to his diuine Maieſtie. It is a yeere, and ſomewhat more (which is the time of my abode in this Citie) that I haue ſerued a Merchant, and haue taken a great deale of paines in his ſeruice. And it is about ſome foure moneths ſince, that he hath made me the keeper of his caſh. All his bookes, are in my hands, but his moneys, in his owne. *Amo & timeo:* I loue, and yet I am afraid; nor can I reſolue

k *The Spaniſh word is*, Calafate: *That is to ſay*; El que con maço y eſcoplo aprieta las junturas delas tablas, de modo que no pueda calarlo el agua. *It ſeems to be a* Flemiſh *word.* Becanus *in his fourth booke* Hermathenæ, pag. 74. *ſaith thus*: Caluatem, eſſe idē, que vltimam manum nauibus imponere, & efficere, ne aquam per rimas vllas admittant. quod tamen verbum, per excellentiā nauibus tribuitur; cum alioquin ad quæuis vaſa integra reddenda ſpectet, vbi ratio ipſius requirat. &c.

But by Becanus *leaue, how ſoeuer he would fetch this word from the* Flemings; *I muſt be ſo bold as to affirme, that it is deriued from the Hebrew word,* Caphar bituminare. *And from thence,* Cafatar, *and* Calafatar, *by interpoſing the letter* l, *whence it comes to be* Calafate. Covarr. p. 172.

ſolue with my ſelfe, how I may ſo handſomely rob him, that I may not afterwards come to cut capers in the ayre; and to venture a ſtretching, for that which is not worth the catching, it were better for me to continue ſtill as I am. But where much is to be had, a man will hazard himſelfe much. Here is ſtore of gold to be had, and he is worthy to weare it, that winnes it. I haue communicated my minde to *Sayavedra*; for it is more then one man can doe, to manage ſuch a peece of buſineſſe, as is this. He had need to conferre with ſome confident friend, or other, or more, whom he is aſſured he may ſafely truſt. For, as mens opinions are diuers; and ſo many heads, ſo many mindes; euery one deliuereth (as his iudgement ſhall direct him) which is the beſt courſe he thinks to be taken. And ſometimes it ſo falleth out, *Quod bonus dormitat Homerus*: That the wiſeſt man, doth not alwayes hit vpon the right: when as a ſhallower braine, doth now and then wade, and that happily too, through the deepeſt fords of humane affaires. And when, this laſt night, I receiued *Sayavedra's* ticket, wherein he ſignified, that he was deſirous to ſpeake with mee, I thought it was no idle errand, that he went about, but that there was ſomething in the winde, what euer it were. For I haue knowne him a long time; and that it is not his faſhion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath ſome good prize in chaſe. And I am verily perſwaded, that if this matter be wiſely handled, and that we finde good firme footing in the paſſage of this ford, and through our owne indiſcretion, doe not wilfully caſt away our ſelues, we may bring this buſineſſe brauely about, and make our ſelues men for euer.

Touching his wealth, I can truly affirme vnto you, (as one that knowes and hath often ſeene it) that thoſe commodities, which he hath now in cellerage and other ware-houſes within his owne doores, which to Gentlemen, and others that want moneys, he[l] ſells vpon credit at exceſſiue deare rates, buying them afterwards at eaſie prizes by the helpe of his brokers, amount to more then twenty thouſand ducats. Whereof, oftentimes he deliuers me the keyes, out of the great truſt and confidence, that he hath of mine honeſtie. Beſides, he knowes very well, that thoſe bales are too big for me to carry away, and therefore will ſpare the labour to lade my backe, with ſuch vnprofitable burthens as my weake ſhoulders are vnable to beare. That which he hath cofered vp in two yron cheſts, in ſeuerall ſorts of coyne, come to ſome fifteene thouſand ducats, and better. And in his *Eſcritorio*, or Tye, that he hath in his ſhop, ſome twelue dayes ſince, did he ſhut vp a delicate dapple gray[m] Cat, as gentle, and as tame as my ſelfe, not with his eyes ſparkling, nor his nayles ſcratching, nor his teeth as ſharpe as any razor, but cram'd full with crownes, three thouſand crownes, in good, dainty braue ruddocks, all good double piſtolets, ſome peeces of two, and ſome of foure, not one ſingle one amongſt them all. Which he hath purpoſely laid aſide for a certaine Merchant, who is to take them vpon vſe for ſix moneths, which he will looke to be well paid for. There is not a man in all this Towne that hath ſo bad a name, or is ſo ill belou'd, as he is. There is no man, that wiſhes him good; nor any whom he doth not hurt. There is not a true word, that comes out of his mouth, he hath not one friend in all the world, he is counted one of the Caterpillars of the Common-wealth, and ſuch a one as would cozen his owne father (were he liuing) and negotiates with none, whom one time or other, he doth not deceiue. And well aſſured I am, that whatſoeuer loſſe ſhould light vpon him, it would be (as they ſay) [n] *en haz, y en paz*, with the good liking of all men. I know not one man that would be ſorry for it, but would laugh heartily at it, and make them-ſelues therewith exceeding merry.

He acquainted me likewiſe with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the cabinet ſtood, as alſo the box, wherein the Cat lay. He made me ſo good and perfect a relation of euery particular, that I could haue gone thither blind-fold, and haue clapt my hand vpon it. I askt him, whether

[l] *The Spaniſh word is*, Monatra: *that is; When the Merchant ſells vpon credit at vnreaſonable prices, and by his brokers buyes them afterwards at eaſie rates.* Monatra, *is likewiſe, when a man buyes as aforeſaid, and ſells cheape. They that are in want, for to ſatisfie ſome debt, vſe theſe* Monatras. *Some deriue it from the Hebrew word* hatar, fodere. *Others ſay,* Mohatra, quaſi moſatra, *from* motar, *to mocke, or deſude. This ill manner of buying, and ſelling, is forbid by the lawes of Spaine, and is ſeuerely puniſhed, being proued.* Ley. 29. tit. 4. lib. 3. de la nueua recopil. *and* Ley: 22. tit. 11. lib. 5. Covarr. pag. 552.

[m] Gato, *is not onely a Cat, but is alſo taken for a purſe full of money, which is made of a Cats skin. To a couetous rich miſer they vſe to ſay;* Ata el gato. Covarr. verb. Gato.

[n] Enhaz, y en paz. Como ſi dixera, conguſto de todos. Covarr. verb. Haz pag. 463.

ther there would be any matter of difficultie in procuring the print of his keies. He told me, that might easily be done; for that he had them all tyde to one little chaine, as well those that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as those that seru'd to open his yron chests, which I ordinarily brought vnto him; when, hauing occasion to take out some thing that he was to vse, hee would call vnto me to fetch them. But being (as he is) a most couetous miserable wretch, his suspition and iealousie was such, that he would be sure (for feare of the worst) that his eye should neuer be off from them, so loath was he to lose their sight. I was glad when I heard that this might be done with that facilitie, wherein I did imagine we should haue found the greatest difficultie. Whereupon, I said vnto him; That then, which wee must first of all begin with, and must be the ground, whereon we must worke, must be the getting of the print of these keyes in waxe, to the end that I may see the fashion of them, and set some Smith a worke, to make them out of hand, iust in euery respect according to that impression which shall be presented vnto him in the waxe.

I moreouer mentioned vnto him, that it were very fit, that we should agree vpon that which we should steale from him for the present, which I would haue to be carryed in that discreet manner, that the muchnesse of it, should not so amaze vs, as that we should not well know, which way to turne our hands; nor the meannesse, draw vs on to aduenture our persons for a trifle; where the danger shall be great, and the profit small.

Neither must we forget, that it is worthy our consideration, to determine before-hand, how the spoile shall be diuided, that we may not afterwards differ, when we come to sharing. Well, this theft being resolued vpon, say we should come to finger this fine pretty pusse, this sweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thousand crownes in her belly, and so proportionably reckning alike in the rest, be it more, or lesse, we will goe so much, or so much a peece, taking them out by the tale, as they vse to doe, that sell sheepe. And for this money, if we shall rob him smoothly of it, all of vs running equally the hazard either of the gallowes, or the sword, in all naturall reason, it ought to be, that as the danger was equall, so the gaine should be equall. And so we being three of vs, euery one ought to haue a third part. But in case we shall play this game safely, and wade dry foot through this forde, and that you shall not be able to lay any fault to my charge, nor receiue any punishment by my ill managing of the businesse, euery one of vs comming off with a good reputation both of his life, and fame, his credit vncrackt, and the nut (as they say) whole and sound, so good an Architect, or Surueyour of the worke, shall very well deserue some reasonable allowance ouer and aboue his fellow-labourers, for his good directions, and onely for his cunning contriuing of the building, without any relation to the rest of his paines, that he shall take therein. And this meane I to carry away, as in reason I ought, as a due that properly belongeth vnto mee. So that if I enter vpon this businesse, and be the onely proiector to bring it handsomely about, I will haue one entire third part, wholly to my selfe, you shall make no scruple of it, but let it come faire and quietly to me, and the other two thirds that remaine, shall be equally diuided into three parts, whereof you shall haue one; *Sayauedra*, another; and my selfe, the third. So that in this, we will all share alike.

This was controuerted to and fro, and much adoe there was about it. But because I had the *maior* part of voyces on my side, to wit, mine owne, and that of my seruant *Sayauedra*, who was well contented therewith, and for that the goods which we stroue about, was not any lawfull partition of a father amongst his children, we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, I had the print of them deliuered vnto me in waxe, and caused the keyes to be made out of hand, and *Aguilera* instructed vs in the meane while, which were which; to the end that wee being throughly informed, which were for the shop, which for

for the cabinet, and which for one thing, and which for another, wee might know the better how to vſe them, when we ſhould come to put this our enterpriſe in execution. I afterwards told *Aguilera*, that I would come the next morning, and ſpeake with his Maſter, and that he ſhould diligently obſerue all, that I did either ſay, or doe, for the better aduancing of our future deſignes, and that euery night we ſhould ſee one another, and lay our heads together for the better ordering and finiſhing of that taske, which we had now taken in hand. He ſaid it ſhould be done, as I would haue it; and ſo he went his wayes.

On the morrow I went to this Merchants Shop, and in the preſence of his Seruant *Aguilera*, after that wee had complemented a little together, and ſaluted each other, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, I am a Gentleman, that am but lately come to this Towne, vvith a purpoſe to buy ſome rarities and curioſities, which this City affordeth, as well for mine owne vſe as to gratifie my friends, becauſe I am ſhortly to bee married in mine owne Countrey; and haue for that end brought along vvith me a matter of three thouſand Duckats, and ſomwhat more, which are now at my Lodging: I haue no acquaintance here in this Towne; nor doe I know the faſhion of this people; nor vvhat their manner of proceeding and dealing is: Money you know is a dangerous commodity, and runnes many hazards; eſpecially, when a man hath it not in that ſure and ſafe cuſtody as hee deſireth. I know not what this or that other man is: I lye in a Lodging, where many other lodge as well as my ſelfe; no leſſe then a hundred goe dayly in and out; and though they haue giuen mee a key to my Chamber; yet am I halfe afraid they may haue a fellow vnto it, and that ſome inconuenience may thereby happen vnto mee.

I haue beene informed of your quality, as alſo of the worthineſſe of your diſpoſition, of your plaine and honeſt dealing with all men; and therfore vpon the good report that I heare of you, I am imboldened to come vnto you, to intreate you that you would be pleaſed to do me that kindnes as to keep them for me ſome few daies, til I haue made choyce and bought ſuch things as ſhal ſerue my turne, and I ſhal returne you many thanks, and ſhall be ready vpon any occaſion that ſhal offer it ſelfe, to expreſſe my thankfulneſſe vnto you; I am a Gentleman, and know what belongs to the acknowledgement of a receiued courteſie.

My Merchant thought he had this money already in his poſſeſſion; and I doe ſtill ſtrongly ſuſpect, that hee and I did iumpe both vpon one thing; hee, to make my money his; and I, to ſteale his, and make it mine. He made proffer vnto mee both of his perſon and his houſe, and that I ſhould as freely command it as if it were mine owne; and that hee ſhould bee glad to ſerue mee in this or any thing elſe: hee bid mee bring it when I would, promiſing to keepe it carefully for mee, and that I ſhould haue it as of, when, how, and in what manner my ſelfe ſhould demand it of him, as my occaſions required: ſo for the preſent wee tooke leaue each of other; hee, with a reſolution to keepe them; and I, with a promiſe to bring them thither: but I neuer came to him againe, till ſuch time as we were to execute our exploit.

When *Sayavedra* and I were come home, he ſtood ſtocke ſtill like an Aſſe, or like a maz'd man that had been garred out of his ſleepe, & dreamingly drawes me out his words, asking mee where this money was to bee had, that hee was to haue in his keeping? I fell a laughing, and ſaid vnto him; Didſt not thou carry it him euen now? With that hee laught. Laugheſt thou, quoth I? Is this a matter to bee laught at? I know that in the Cat, and the Cabinet, they are kept ſafe enough for me. Tell your friend *Aguilera*, that wee muſt needs ſee him about an eight dayes hence, and will him to bring along with him his Maſters ° *Borrador*, or booke of remembrances, wherein hee ſets downe his Solutes and his debts, what hee is to receiue and what to pay. In the interim, while wee were tarying for a good tide, and waiting for a fit time for the effecting of our purpoſe, *Sayavedra* hauing me one night to bed, finding when

° Borrador, el papel donde primero ſe eſcriue o dibuxa porenſayo; y dixoſe aſſi, porque emendando, le van quitando, y poniendo, y aſſi ſe borra.

I had laid my ſelfe downe, no great deſire to ſleepe; for the working of my braines (thinking vpon old buſineſſes) kept me waking: I called to my ſeruant, who comming vnto me, I ſpake thus vnto him.

A ſhort tale of an Aſſe that made his Will.

Sayavedra; I haue a tale to tell thee, which though it bee but ſhort, yet it is worth your hearing. I ſhall giue thee therefore to vnderſtand, that once vpon a time the Aſſe (that poore ſilly creature) fell ſicke, and finding himſelfe much oppreſſed and weakned with his diſeaſe, growing euery day worſe then other, inſomuch that he was now almoſt brought to deaths dore; at the inſtance of his Kinsfolke, and the earneſt intreaty of his Children, which were very many, he was moued to make his laſt will and teſtament; and each of them ſtriuing who ſhould bee beſt left, and goe away with the greateſt portion of their fathers goods, the lawfully begotten, and his baſtard Children went together by the eares about it. But their honeſt and well-meaning Father, deſiring to leaue them in peace, and for auoyding of further wrangling, that euery one ſhould know his owne, and what hee ſhould truſt to after his death, was content in the end (for quietneſſe ſake) to make his Will, diuiding his goods amongſt them in this manner following.

The Aſſes Legacies.

My Will and intent is, that my Tongue (when I am dead and gone) bee beſtowed amongſt ſuch my Children as are Flatterers and Backbiters: to thoſe other my children that are angry and cholericke, I bequeath my Taile for a cooler: my Eyes, I leaue to the laſciuious; my Braines, to Alchimiſts and iudiciary Aſtrologers; my Heart, to the couetous; my Eares, to the ſeditious and ſowers of diſcord; my Snout, to Epicures, Gluttons, and Drunkards; my Bones, to the ſloathfull; my Loynes, to the proud; my chyne, to the obſtinate: Let my hinder Legges, bee giuen to the Lawyers; my Fore-feete, to the Iudges; and my Head, to your Scriueners and Notaries. Laſtly, I bequeath my Fleſh, to the poore; and my Skinne, to bee diuided amongſt my Baſtard-Children.

I would not for any thing, that *Aguilera*, bearing vs in hand that we ſhould rob his Maiſter, ſhould come to ſtrip vs of all that wee haue, and leaue vs ſo naked, that wee ſhould bee forced to couer our ſelues with the skinne of this our Teſtator. And I aſſure you, if hee ſhould chance to put ſuch a tricke vpon vs, he ſhould ſhew himſelfe a very wiſe and ſubtile fellow: and how vve ſhould be afterwards able to helpe our ſelues, God hee knowes; for I doe not. I ſpeake this vnto thee, for that for the better proſecution of our intent, and that it may goe well with vs, that out of thoſe *Doblones* of ten, which I haue here, wee giue him ſome ten of them, vvhich will amount to a hundred Crownes; which being no ſmall ingagement, may much further our affaires. But I would not in any hand, that giuing vs a backe blow, and ſhewing vs a faire paire of heeles, hee ſhould ſlip his neck out of the collar, and by little and little fall off from vs.

True dealing amongſt thieues.

Sayavedra, perceiuing the doubts that I began to caſt with my ſelfe; to free me of this ſuſpition, made mee this anſwere, Sir, if wee ſhould put all the fiue hundred into his hands; nay, ſay they were fiue hundred thouſand: yet, foraſmuch as it is a cuſtome amongſt vs, and a rule that wee neuer breake, to vſe all faith and fidelity amongſt our ſelues, and neuer to be falſe one to another, in a thouſand yeares they will not deceiue you of ſo much as one poore mite; but you ſhall haue your owne againe to a farthing. And therefore feare you nothing; let mee runne the hazard of it, and put it to my account: for I ſhall bee content to ſtand to any loſſe that you ſhall ſuffer thereby.

Chap. VII.

The robbing of the Merchant of Milan, *falls out as luckily as* Guzman de Alfarache *could haue wiſht it.* Aguilera *ſhares ſo much with him as of right belonged vnto him: And hee and his ſeruant* Sayavedra *goe for* Genoa.

Of Hope.

Oraſmuch as Hope doth not aſſure vs of a true and reall poſſeſſion, it euermore makes vs carry about vs a troubled and vnquiet minde, our thoughts neuer taking reſt, our of the great feare that wee haue, leſt vvee ſhould faile of that vvhich wee ſo earneſtly deſire: Onely, it is *Solatium miſeris*, the ſole comfort that afflicted ſoules haue; and that ſafe harbour whereon they relie; being that from it, a certaine ſhadow (as it were) of ſhelter and refuge, whereby thoſe cares and troubles are eaſed and lightened, which our hopes delay, doth lay vpon vs. And as that hope which is ſecure and certaine doth dilate and extend our hearts to an aſſured affiance of that which wee expect; ſo there is not any paine affordeth greater torment, then that which we endure whenwe once come to loſe it. And little leſſe is our griefe, when it defers its comfort.

How many and how various thoughts did diſtract in this ſhort time my two ſtipendary Penſioners: For, hauing not giuen them any more light, then what I haue already told you, of my deſigne; I had onely ſweetned their lips, and left them (as it is in the Prouerbe) [a] *Con la miel en la boca*, with a ſmatch of ſome honey in their mouth; and therefore they could not chooſe but reele this way and that way, ſtaggering and wauering with their thoughts, and in the ſeuerall Maps of their inconſtant imaginations, one conceiuing this, another that, hatch a thouſand ſtrange inuentions; chewing the cudde, as it were, and ruminating with them-ſelues, when (a Gods name) they ſhould ſet them-ſelues roundly to the buſineſſe, what the plot might bee, and how to be effected, longing to ſee the iſſue of theſe promiſed and hopefull ends, which made them almoſt at a ſtand; being (as it ſhould ſeeme) ſomewhat doubtfull whether it would goe on or no: and if it did; yet could they not deuiſe with them-ſelues how, and in what manner this buſineſſe was to be carried.

[a] Prouerbe.

Guzmans conning plot, for to cozen the Merchant of Milan of his money.

But when they ſaw the Sunne of that day appeare, no leſſe by them, then my ſelfe, deſired; and that *Aguilera* had brought me that his ſhop-booke of accounts, according as I had appointed him. I turn'd to one of the leafes towards the latter end of the booke, where I found ſome memorials booked eight daies before, and in a voyd place, or blanke, where nothing was written, I ſet downe this that followeth: Left with me by *Don Iuan Oſſorio*, three thouſand Crowns in gold, ſome being peeces of ten, but moſt of them, of two, and of foure. Ouer and aboue, he likewiſe left with me two thouſand Royals, in good Royals of plate. Afterwards I drew a line vpon what I had written, to ſhew that the booke was croſt: And wrote in a different letter on the margent, *Ilenolos, Ilenolos*; which is as much to ſay; All this money is mine. Afterwards I ſhut to the booke, and gaue it him againe, and together with it ten Doblones of ten; willing him, that when he opened the Cabinet, he ſhould take a hundred other out of the Catt, and put thoſe in their roome. I likewiſe gaue him two billets; whereof the one ſaid; Theſe three thouſand Crownes belong to *Don Iuan Oſſorio*; And the other ſaid, Here are two thouſand Royals in plate, whoſe true owner is *Don Iuan Oſſorio*. I did moreouer aduiſe him, that if there were any other bill, or note, in the bag, hee ſhould take it forth, and leaue mine only there. And that of the two thouſand Royals, hee ſhould clap it into another great bag, wherein *Aguilera* had already told mee, there were ſome ſeuen-

teene

teene thouſand more, or there-abouts, for he could not know the iuſt number in regard they did daily put in other freſh moneyes amongſt them. And that he ſhould withall remember, that this great bag of ſiluer, lay in a great cheſt, next vnto his Cabinet, and that the bag was marked with a great ſpot of inke neere vnto the mouth of it. With theſe inſtructions; *Aguilera* went his way, hauing taken order with him, that he ſhould that night without faile, put euery thing in its right place, according as I had giuen him direction. The day following, as ſoone as I had dined, I walked leiſurely along to the merchants ſhop, with my man at my heeles, as if I had knowne no ſuch matter, diſſembling the buſineſſe very handſomely. When I was come thither, and that his eye was vpon me, as ſoone as he ſaw me, he was wondrous glad; thinking I had brought that with me, which I meant to demand of him. We did agree both in one, in reſpect of the purpoſe that we had to deceiue each other; but my plot was another kind of gambol, then he was aware of. We had both one end, but the meanes were diuers. Now, when wee had ſaluted one anothe, I ſaid vnto him; To morrow, Sir, ſhall I ſend this my ſeruant vnto you with a bag, and a ticket with it, deſiring you that you will be pleaſed to giue a quicke diſpatch, and to ſend him backe vnto me as ſoone as you can, becauſe I ſhall haue occaſion to vſe his ſeruice. My poore ſilly Merchant, whoſe minde was more bent, how he ſhould out-ſtrip mee by his cunning, then fearfull, that I ſhould goe beyond him, and proue in the end the craftier knaue of the two; thought that my meaning was, that the money ſhould be brought him the next morning; and ſo ſaid vnto me, Sir, your deſire ſhall be fulfilled: you ſhall haue it when-ſoeuer you pleaſe to ſend for it.

With that, I got me out of doores, and had ſcarce gone twenty paces, but I returned backe againe, and ſaid vnto him; Sir, ſince I went from hence, I haue better bethought my ſelfe, and haue preſent occaſion to vſe this money, and therefore (I pray) let me haue it. The mans colour began to change, and ſeeming to be ſomewhat troubled, he ſaid vnto me; What money, Sir, is that you would haue of mee? All, Sir, (ſaid I) all, for I haue occaſion to vſe all of it. Whereunto hee replied; What all? What all, quoth I? All the gold and the ſiluer. He anſwered me, What gold, what ſiluer? I told him, That ſiluer and gold Sir which you haue here of mine. I, any gold, or ſiluer of yours, No Sir, (ſaid he) I haue no ſiluer, nor gold of yours, nor doe I know what you meane. Sir, ſaid I, (anſwering him ſomewhat roughly) doe you make it ſo ſtrange, thinke you I doe not know what I ſpeake? I am neither mad nor drunke; this is pretty fine dealing indeed: this tricke will not ſerue your turne. No yours neither, Sir, ſaid he; Me thinkes yours is the prettier of the two, in demanding that of me, which you neuer gaue mee; nor haue I any thing of yours. No Sir, quoth I, Take heed what you ſay. Let me wiſh you to be a little better aduiſed. Leaue off your ieſting, and come to earneſt, for I can aſſure you, this is no ieſting matter; I muſt not be ſo anſwerd, nor doe I take it well at your hands. Very good Sir, (ſaid he) very good ifaith: it is you Sir that are diſpoſed to ieſt, and to make your ſelfe merry with me. No more (good Sir) it is enough, I pray be gone, I haue ſomething elſe to doe, then to finde you talke. How Sir, be gone? Nay, by your leaue (quoth I) there is more in it then ſo. I muſt not goe hence without my money. Money, (ſaid he) what money would you haue of me? What is your demand? Marry, I demand (ſaid I) thoſe Crownes and Royals which I left with you the other day. With me, (ſaid he) you neuer left any Crownes nor Royals with me: Goe looke your Crownes and Royals elſe-where; the deuill a croſſe that I haue of yours. Then ſaid I vnto him, Are you not aſhamed to auouch this before theſe Gentlemen, that are here preſent, who but euen now before them, when I told you that I would ſend my man to morrow for them; you anſwer'd mee, hee ſhould haue them; and now that I come to you for them my ſelfe (hauing preſent vſe for them)

them) doe you deny me them with one and the ſame breath? Deny you Sir? (ſaid he) I deny you nothing; nor nothing ſhall you haue of me: for I receiued nothing of you; and nothing ſhall I returne you. How Sir, nothing? Did not I Sir, ſome eight dayes ſince bring you theſe moneys, deſiring you to keep them for me, and did not you your ſelfe receiue them from me? Giue me therefore my moneys, and that preſently, for I will not that you keepe them one minute of an houre longer in your hands. In my hands, (ſaid he?) I haue not ſo much as one farthing of yours in my hands: and therefore God be with you Sir, I haue no more to ſay to you. It is the Deuill that deceiueth vs all. I think ſo indeed (quoth I:) for ſure the Deuill did deceiue mee when I truſted you with my money. And with that, my inflamed choller, hauing ſet my whole face on fire, I angerly ſaid vnto him; What meaneſt thou by this, that thou wilt not reſtore me my money? before thee and I part, I will make thee lay it downe here on this board, euen to the vttermoſt farthing, or elſe I will know why I ſhall not; Be wiſe therefore in time, and well aduiſe with your ſelfe (I would wiſh you) what you doe, for feare of after-claps. The poore man was ſo troubled, and ſtruck into ſuch a feare, when he ſaw I was ſo hot and chollerick in the buſineſſe, and ſo reſolutely bent vpon it, that he had not a word to ſay; yet at laſt, with a kinde of counterfaite ſmile, ſeeming to make a ieſt of my words, hee bid me bee gone, one while in Gods name, another in the deuils; ſaying, that he knew me not, nor who I was, nor what was my name, nor the thing that I demanded of him. Whereupon, turning my ſelfe about to thoſe (which were many) that were there; Art thou ſo impudent (ſaid I) as to ſay, Thou doſt not know who, nor what I am, thinking thereby to out-face me, and to cozen me of thoſe moneys thou haſt of mine in thy hands? But I doubt not but I ſhall finde good iuſtice in *Milan*, and that (though full ſore againſt his will) he ſhould be forced to make mee preſent [b] payment. My man denies it more and more, telling me, I had much miſtaken my marke; and that I might happely haue giuen it to ſome body elſe to keepe: for he ſtood ſtiffely vnto it, that he neither had any money of mine, nor did owe me the value of one farthing, though indeed (he ſaid) he muſt thus farre forth confeſſe the truth; That I came vnto him, and that I told him, I would leaue ſo much money in his hands to keepe for me, but that I neuer brought them vnto him, nor that he did either ſee or touch, one farthing of mine: And therefore, if I had a mind ſo to doe, I might goe a Gods name, and complaine to the Iuſtice, and that if it ſhould appeare that hee ought me any thing, hee ſhould bee very willing to giue me ſatisfaction. When I ſaw hee had armed himſelfe with this reſolution, I did open the doores of my lips a little wider, foming at the mouth for very anger, and ſtraining my throat to a higher key, ſaid vnto him; O thou falſe traytor, heauens iuſtice ouer-take thee, and let all the plagues light vpon thee that the earth can affoord, (vile and wicked man as thou art) wilt thou thus then rob me of my moneys before my face, and thus iniuriouſly goe about to vndoe me? I muſt haue thy life, or my money. And therefore make no more adoe, but bring me hither preſently my three thouſand Crownes: bring them I ſay, and quickly too; it ſhall not boote thee to denie them; for I will either teare them out of thy throat, or make thee lay it downe here, in good gold and ſiluer, as thou hadſt it of me.

The houſe was all in an vprore, and thoſe likewiſe, which were preſent there from the beginning, that this difference happened betweene vs. Vpon this coyle and ſtirre that was betweene them, there came in many into the ſhop, as they paſt along the ſtreet, beſides a great number of the neighbours, asking one another, what was the matter? For now were we growne ſo loud, that we did not well vnderſtand one another. All that were there, went enquiring, what was the cauſe of all this noyſe, what wee quarreld about, not ſo few as a hundred were talking here and there, of it, and euery one relating it each to other,

b *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Vn pie a la Françeſa. Vale, al inſtante. Covarr. verb. Pie.

other; ſome in one manner, & ſome in another, whileſt we within drowned all that the other ſaid, ſo earneſt was the conteſting that was betweene vs. In the heat whereof comes me in a *Bargello*, an officer of the ſame nature with our *Alguazil* in *Caſtile*, a kind of Sergeant or Catchpole, but he bare no Vare or white rod in his hand, as ours doe, and making the people to giue way, hee came vp where we were, being both (through the heat of our choller) as hot, and as red as coales. When I ſaw the Iuſtice preſent (howbeit he was a ſtranger vnto me, and knew him no otherwiſe then as he was the Iuſtice) I ſaw my ſute at an end, and that the cauſe was like to goe with mee. And here taking my Cu, I began in a milder temper to ſpeake thus vnto thoſe that were by: Gentlemen, you haue ſeene and heard that which hath here paſſed betweene vs, and how, and in what manner, this naughty man hath deny'd mee mine owne money; let his owne man ſpeake the truth concerning this buſineſſe, and if hee (out of his reſpect to his Maſter) ſhall refuſe to deliuer what he knowes, let his owne Booke ſpeake in my behalfe, wherein ſhall that appeare to be ſet downe, which he receiued of me, and in what parcels, and in what manner of faſhion I deliuered the ſaid moneys vnto him; to the end that it may be knowne vnto you, which of vs is the honeſter man, and ſpeakes the moſt truth. Should I bee ſo ſhameleſſe to aske a man that, which I neuer gaue him? Into a Cat-skin bag, that he hath, he did put into that Cabinet three thouſand Crownes of mine, ſome of two, and others of foure, and for to make my proofes more plaine and cleare vnto you, he hath intermixed amongſt them, ten Crownes of ten, which in the whole make vp iuſt the ſumme of three thouſand Crownes. And in a bag, which he lockt vp within that cheſt, (wherein he told mee there were at that time I deliuered him my moneys, neare (together with mine) about ſome ſeuenteene thouſand Royals) did he put thoſe two thouſand, he had of mee: And if this (which I tell you) be not true, I am content to loſe it all, and that you take my head from off my ſhoulders, for the arranteſt traytor that euer ſpake with tongue; And if here in your preſence, before I ſtirre a foot from hence, I doe not make good vnto you all that I haue ſaid. Onely (Gentlemen) let me entreat (though a ſtranger) ſo much lawfull fauour from you, that there may preſent inquiſition be made concerning this buſineſſe (conſidering how neerely it concernes me) that he may not (by gaining of time) haue opportunitie to tranſport them to ſome other place. And turning himſelfe toward the *Bargello*, hee ſaid: See now (Sir,) I beſeech you Sir to ſee, which of vs two, treats falſehood, which entends deceit? The Merchant then ſaid; I am content to ſtand to this motion, and to put my ſelfe vpon this triall, I ſhall bring forth my bookes, I care not who ſee them, let them be peruſed, if any ſuch thing be there to be found, you ſhall likewiſe ſee all the money, that I haue in the houſe, and if any ſuch thing ſhall appeare as this man would make you beleeue, I will confeſſe that he ſayes truth, and that I am in the wrong. Then ſaid they, that were preſent; This buſineſſe is now ended, they are both agreed vpon the point, and it will ſtraight be ſeene, which of theſe two are in the right.

The Merchant commanded his ſeruant, that kept his Caſh, that hee ſhould bring him his great booke of Accompts; He did ſo: but when he had brought it, I excepted againſt it, and ſayd; O thou cozening companion; this is not the booke, it is a leſſer then this, a little kind of Manuall, that a man may eaſily hold in his hand. Then he will'd him to fetch the Manuall that was in the Caſhe, being a litle thing of ſome foure ſheets of paper, like a note-book. Which when he had likewiſe brought; No, no, (ſaid I) what need ſo many trickes and deuices? why doe you ſeeke to deceiue vs thus with your booke? this is not that which I would haue, you need not to beat ſo about the buſh, the bird that I looke for is not here; I askt for your chalke, and you giue me cheeſe; I would ſee that, wherein you did ſet downe thoſe particular ſummes of money, you receiued of me; it is a little long narrow booke; you know well enough which I meane,

meane, if you were diſpoſed to bring it forth. Then ſaid *Aguilera*, It may bee Sir he meanes that wherein you write your Memorials, for ſo it ſhould ſeeme by the deſcription of it; for there is not any other beſides of that faſhion, to my knowledge in the houſe. And bringing it before vs, hee turned himſelfe towards me, and ſaid; Is this, Sir, the booke that you would haue? I anſwered, yes, this is it, this is it, and none but this. Now (Gentlemen) I pray ſee whether I ſay truth or no. This will decide the controuerſie, his cunning can no longer cloake it ſelfe, and this will make his knauery plainly appeare vnto you. They began then (hauing the booke in their hands) to turne the leafes one by one, and when I ſpy'd mine owne hand, and what I had there ſet downe, I ſaid; I pray (Gentlemen) will you be pleaſed to looke vpon this writing, and to ſee what it ſaith; Reade I pray theſe parcels of moneys, which he hath croſt and blotted out, (though the ſummes are eaſie to be ſeene) and by that which I here perceiue, hee hath noted it in the margent to be paid. But this tricke ſhall not ſerue his turne, for I will haue my money before I goe from hence. They did all looke vpon it, and might eaſily diſcerne, thoſe very ſummes, by me before mentioned. Whereat the Merchant was ſo mad, and ſo tranſported with paſſion, that he knew not what to ſay vnto it, but began to curſe and raile, & ſwearing a thouſand oaths, vowd that he did not know of it, nor how it came there, nor who had written it. To cleare that doubt, I anſwered; I wrote this my ſelfe, this I confeſſe to be my hand, but that in the margent is a different letter, and the quotation as falſe as God is true; for hee neuer return'd me one penny of it; and in that Cabinet that ſtands there, if he haue not taken it thence, there are my Crownes.

Hereupon, like a furious Bedlam, he began to rage and raue extreamly, ſo that the ſtanders by did vndoubtedly beleeue, that all I had ſaid, was true. And ſeeking to pacifie me (for I ſeemed to be very angry with this foule dealing of his,) they wiſhed me to quiet my ſelfe, and to reſt contented, for the croſſing of his booke was not materiall, nor his writing in the margent, that he returned me my moneys, if thoſe things ſhould fall out right (as I had ſaid) in the reſt. What greater proof, (then ſaid I) or what truer token can you haue of my truth & his falſhood, then his late proteſtations, that he neuer receiued anyone penny of me, and yet you here ſee it ſet downe, though hauing a purpoſe to play the rogue with me, he afterwards croſt it out. If he receiued it, why does hee denie it? If he did not receiue it, how comes it here? I pray you cauſe that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not but you may chance to finde my *Doblones*, where you ſhall light amongſt them, vpon ten *Doblones* of ten Crownes a peece? At this, the Merchant fell a fuming and a fretting, and ſtampt for very anger, refuſing to open the Cabinet, and as ſtiffely ſtriuing againſt it, as if they ſhould haue offered to rip vp his belly, and take out his heart, vowing and auerring with ſundry hideous oathes, and fearfull obſecrations, that all was roguery and villany, and that there was no ſuch matter as I talkt of; and for thoſe *Doblones* of ten, he did there confidently auouch before them all, that he had not one, or not aboue one, (if he had that) in all his houſe. Such adoe there was, to get him to open the Cabinet, as was wonderfull; He denied to doe it; The *Bargello* was as inſtant, as he was ſtubborne, and ſaid, hee ſhould doe it. The latter inſiſted to haue the keyes; The other reſiſted, and ſaid, hee ſhould not haue the keyes. When the *Bargello* ſaw this, he began to grow now as hot, as before he was iealous of his double dealing: and ſwore a great oath, that if he would not fetch the keyes, and open the Cabinet by faire meanes, and that quickly too, he would take it out of his houſe, and carrie it away with him, and giue particular notice of all the whole buſines, to the *Signor Capitan di giuſtitia*, (which is there with them of the ſame quality and authority as a *Corregidor* in *Caſtile*) and there depoſite it, that the truth thereof might be knowne. At laſt (though ſore againſt his will) he gaue him the keyes; and when he had opened

the

the Cabinet; Sir, (ſaid I) there in ſuch a Boxe did hee put them in a dapple-gray Cat-skinne: They opened that Boxe, and pulled out the Cat by the eares, and going to tell the money to ſee if it were right or no, a piece of the Billet ſhew'd it ſelfe. When I ſaw that, vvith ſomewhat a more cheerefull countenance, I reard my ſelfe vp and ſaid: Let this Paper, I pray, bee read; for that ſcroll will declare how much there is in the bagge, and whoſe it is. They read it, the Contents expreſſing *Don Iuan Oſſorio*, to bee their true owner. Well, they fell afterwards to telling of them and found them to bee iuſt three thouſand Crownes, with thoſe ten of ten a piece which I told you of.

Things being brought to this puſh, and falling out ſo pat as they did, my Merchant was ſtrooke as dead as a herring, he was abſolutely now gone, quite ouerthrowne horſe and foote, without hope of recouery, hee had not a word to ſay for himſelfe, nor knew not in the world what to alleage in his owne excuſe: it ſeeming vnto him to bee *Opus Dæmonii*, that the Diuell had a hand in it; for hee thought it was impoſſible that any man ſhould bee able to doe it. Beſides, hee conſidered with himſelfe; that if I could finde hands, to put theſe things there, I might eaſier haue found hands to carry them away.

Hee was quite beſide himſelfe, and cryed out, that all was lyes and nothing but lyes; that his goods were wrongfully taken from him; that this money was his, and no bodies elſe, that the Diuell had put thoſe *Doblones* there, and not hee; that they ſhould lay hold on mee, for I had a familiar, and a great many the like broken ſpeeches.

Let them lay hold a Gods name on me (ſaid I) ſo that I may haue my money out of thy fingers. I gaue him very rough and harſh language, telling him; O thou Impoſtor, thou cheating raskall, haſt thou yet a tongue to talke, ſeeing how euident thy wicked dealing appeares to all the world: open that cheſt too I pray; for there lies my ſiluer, I ſaw him put it in. There is no ſuch thing ſaid hee; for all the ſiluer that is there is mine, and ſo are theſe three thouſand Crownes. How yours, I pray Sir, being you did but now confeſſe that you had no *Doblones* of ten? It was Gods will to cauſe thee to forget that thou hadſt receiued them, that I might not loſe my monies. Hee that will denie another man his owne, had need of a good memorie, as alſo a care to remember what hee ſayes.

When I firſt came in hither, thou toldeſt mee here before theſe Gentlemen, that to morrow I ſhould haue them, ſending my man for them, and now that I came backe againe to demand them of thee, before the ſame Gentlemen, thou denieſt to haue any ſuch thing in thy keeping. Let that Cheſt therefore (I pray) bee opened, take out all that is in it, and then it ſhall be knowne which of vs two is the honeſter man, and who it is that liues by cozening others, either hee or I? They opened the Cheſt, and when I ſaw the bagge, though there were diuers other there, ſome of more, and ſome of leſſer ſummes, reaching forth mine arme I pointed out that with my finger, ſaying; this with the blacke ſpot is it. In concluſion, they found that to bee true, which I had ſaid. And this truth vvas the more confirmed, when pouring out that bagge for to count the monies, they met with that other Billet, which ſaid, That my two thouſand Royals were in there amongſt the reſt: then I began to be louder then euer I was before, and cryde out vnto him. Thou vile naughty man, thou falſe crafty Merchant, thou common coozener, thou enemy to God, thou that haſt neither truth nor conſcience in thee: is this thy honeſt dealing? this thy faire proceeding? this thy good vſage of thoſe that haue to doe with thee? No maruell thou bee rich, if thou take this courſe with others, as thou haſt done with mee: and if thou hadſt my monies (as is apparant to all the world) how didſt thou dare firſt to croſſe and blot out what I had written; ſeeking thereby to defeate me of my due? And then afterwards ſo impudently to affirme that I had giuen thee nothing, and that thou didſt not know whence I was, nor whither

whither I would, and that you did not ſo much as know either me, or my name? What canſt thou now alleage for thy ſelfe? Haſt thou any more falſe money to coyne? any more lyes to ſtampe? See how thou art ouertaken in thy miſchiefe, how blinded by thine owne wickedneſſe, that thou hadſt not the wit (which was Gods iuſt puniſhment vpon thee) either to take away theſe *memorandums*, or to hide the money? See how his diuine Maieſtie hath beene pleaſed to make good my innocencie, and to protect my ſimplicitie, that downe-right plainneſſe, wherewith I committed my moneys to thy cuſtodie, preſuming that I ſhould haue them againe, when-ſoeuer I call'd for them. But I now verily beleeue, that he, that did aduiſe me that I ſhould truſt thee with my moneys, was ſuch another ſharker as thy ſelfe; and one of your proiectors for your profit, a blood-hound of your owne making, to winde out your commoditie. All they that were preſent, with this that they had ſeene & heard, were as much amazed, as offended, at the Merchants baſe and roguiſh dealing, being now throughly ſatisfied, that I had a great deale of reaſon, and iuſtice on my ſide. The common voice was wholly in my fauour, the prooſes, and euidences ſeene and allow'd, and the ill report that ran of him before, did now ring in all mens eares. Inſomuch, that not a man of them, but ſaid; Fie vpon him, doe you not ſee how this greedy Cormorant would haue ſwallowed this poore Gentlemans moneys, which he had deliuered vnto him vpon truſt? But it is no ſuch newes, that an vſuring knaue ſhould like a Harpy, prey vpon other mens goods. And had he not vſed the better diligence, and had his wits about him, it had beene all vtterly loſt, and damned for euer. The Merchant, who with his owne eares heard not only theſe, & the like, but far worſe words ſpoken of him, had not ſo many mouthes, or tongues, where-with to ſatisfie ſo great a number, as there railed againſt him; nor indeed was it poſſible for him (as things were carried) to iuſtifie himſelfe, but ſtood like one, that did not well know, whether he were aſleepe, or awake. It ſeemed then vnto me, that he rub'd his hands and elbowes, to call himſelfe to remembrance; or that he began to thinke with himſelfe, whether he had loſt thoſe two potentiall facultics of his Vnderſtanding, and Memorie, and that onely his Will was remaining vnto him, conſidering what had paſt. He (as I told you before) had gotten himſelfe a very bad name, which made much for me, and was as good as halfe a proofe for the clearing of my buſineſſe. And this puniſhment ſtill lights vpon them that leade a lewd life, that ſleight proofes are ſufficient to ouerthrow them, and makes the cauſe goe currant againſt them. This onely of it ſelfe, without any farther adoe, would haue ſeru'd the turne well enough to helpe me to my money againe, which was much ſtrengthned by thoſe that were there preſent at my firſt comming thither, who there tooke their oath, That he ſaid vnto me, that if I ſhould ſend my ſeruant vnto him the next day following, I ſhould not faile of my money, and that within a little while after, I returning thither againe, and demanding it of him, he denyed it vnto me. His owne ſeruant likewiſe ſwore, that I in his hearing (as being then preſent) did intreat his Maſter that he would keepe three thouſand Crownes for me, and the aforeſaid ſumme of Royalls, but whether I did deliuer them vnto him or no, he could not anſwer to that, but muſt refer it to his Maſters booke of Accompts, which did not alwayes lye in the ſhop, but was often carried in, and more he could not ſay concerning this matter. My ſeruant, he on the other ſide ſwore, that he told out the moneys with his owne hands, and deliuered them vnto the Merchant, in the preſence of diuers others, that were then in the ſhop, but knew not who they were, for he was a ſtranger in that place, and therefore could not haue any knowledge of them. So that, what with the pregnant proofes of all that I had ſaid, what with ſeeing in what manner he had croſt the booke, what with finding the ſummes of money (by me mentioned) to fall out ſo iuſt, both in their place, and number; as alſo, that euery bagge had his particular billet, which told, whoſe the

money was; they all tooke part with me, and were mainely bent against him, not ſuffering him to ſpeake a word in his owne defence, nor to heare any thing that he could ſay, to excuſe himſelfe. He had ſpent all his breath in vaine, and had not now the ſpirit to talke any more; for, being ſtrucken in yeeres, and ſeeing ſo ſtrange, and vnexpected an accident as this, which he did not ſo much as once dreame of, thinking it impoſſible that he ſhould be thus ouer-reach't, waxed thereupon ſo pale and ſo wanne, as if he had beene a dying man, continuing for a good ſpace in a ſwound. All that were there, did verily beleeue, that my Merchant was dead, and that it was a iuſt puniſhment of God vpon him for his periurie and falſe dealing; but he afterwards came againe vnto himſelfe, but ſo ſtupid and ſenſleſſe, that I began to take compaſſion of him. But in theſe his ſwounings, I did comfort my ſelfe, that if he ſhonld chance to dye, I ſhould haue had leſſe miſſe of him, then of his money.

In a word, there was not any one, of all that were there, which did not ſay, Let the Gentleman haue his money, giue him his money. But I, knowing full well, that it was not the voyce of the vulgar (though I was beholding to their good wiſhes) that could aſſigne me my money; but that it muſt be awarded me by the power and authoritie of the Iudge, and by courſe of Law, I was very warie in aduiſing with my ſelfe, how I might preuent all future miſchiefes, and that the end of this buſineſſe might be anſwerable to its good beginning. And therefore when they all with one vnanimous conſent, and voyce, cryde out; The money is his; giue the Gentleman his money, giue him his money; I anſwered very mildly, and gently; No, not I; I will none of it, I will none of it; let it be depoſited, let it be depoſited. So, for the better iuſtification of this buſineſſe, the *Bargello*, that was there preſent, tooke away the money with him, and depoſited it in one of the neighbours hands, that was an honeſt man, and vn-intereſſed on either ſide. Which, with a little ſute, was within a few dayes after by way of ſentence, deliuered vnto me; My merchant being not onely cozened of his caſh, but condemned in coſts and charges of Court, beſides the generall infamie, which by this meanes fell vpon him.

When I ſaw ſo much money in theſe poore and ſinfull hands, I did often thinke vpon that theft, which *Sayavedra* had done vpon me, which though it were not of that great value, yet was it not ſo little, but that then it fell out to my great hurt, albeit afterwards, it turned to my greater good. For if that had not beene, I ſhould not haue knowne ſo much as I now doe, nor come off ſo cleanely with this theft. And therefore comforting vp my ſelfe, I ſaid; it was the better for me, [c] that I broke my leg. It might haue hapt worſe with mee, had it not hapt ſo ill. My marring, was my making; my loſſe, my gaine. So that all fell out to the beſt. For from that time, euer ſince, haue I liu'd in greater credit, and better furniſhed with moneys, then before I was rob'd. I was growne rich, *Sayavedra* releeued, and *Aguilera* had well patcht vp a broken eſtate. I carryed my moneys home with me, as merrily as the heart of man can poſſibly imagine. I clapt it ſafe vnder locke and key, I looked charily vnto it, and lapt it vp very warme, that it might not catch cold. And albeit all things ſucceeded thus happely with me, yet *Sayavedra*, though he felt it, had it in his hands, and toucht it againe and againe, yet could he not beleeue it was there. It ſeemed vnto him as a dreame, and thought it an impoſſibilitie, that this buſineſſe ſhould proue ſo lucky. He fell a bleſſing of himſelfe with both his hands, as oft as he thought vpon my craft and ſubtletie. For albeit, when he was acquainted with me in *Rome*, and knew my courſe of life, and did perceiue by my cariage, and manner of proceeding, that I had a ſubtle wit of mine owne, yet for all this did he not thinke, nor could be brought to beleeue, that I had ſo much ſtore, as he now found to be in me. Or that I had beene ſo good an Archer as I was, [d] to kill birds, as they were flying in the ayre. He ſuppoſed, I muſt haue come much ſhort of himſelfe; for he was many yeeres my ancient, and

Prouerbe.
c Si me quebre la pierna, quiça por mejor.

Prouerbe.
d Matarlas en el Ayre. i. ſer vn hombre muy agudo, y corteſano. Covarr. verb. Matar.

and might very well (for his ſtanding) haue beene my maſter, and I his apprentiſe ſome ſix yeeres at the leaſt, to haue learned the Trade. I ſaid then vnto him; Friend *Sayavedra*; This is true knowledge, this is the right skill of it, this the Art, and the cunning, to ſteale without danger,[e] and to liue and thriue well by it. As for thoſe things, which thou didſt preach vnto me vpon the way, they were leſſons of the *Turkiſh Alcoran*, meere toyes, and trifles to theſe. To ſteale a kirtle, and receiue a hundred ſtripes for it, euery foole can doe this. Your expences, [f] exceed your receits; and the gaines, will not quit the coſt. And therefore, whereſoeuer I ſhall come, ſuch as you may vayle bonnet, ſtrike ſayle, ſtooping your ſtandard to mee, reuerencing mee as your king and ſuperiour.

[e] Hurtar, ſin peligrar, y bien medrar.

[f] *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; Mas es la data, que el cargo.

Some two dayes after, comes *Aguilera* for his ſhare, ſtealing by night vnto vs. And had it not beene for *Sayavedra*, I had ſhow'd him *Velez* his tricke, who ranne away with the bride, and the bride-cake too. The deuill a penny he ſhould haue had of me. But becauſe I was willing to vphold my reputation with him, and that he might not conceiue an ill opinion of me, by leauing ſo foule an impreſſion of falſifying my word behinde me, and that he might not take occaſion to ſay to himſelfe; Surely, if this man deale ſo vniuſtly with another, it is a thouſand to one, he will vſe me in the ſame manner. I muſt drinke in the end of the ſame cup, as he hath done; I would not hazard much, to get a little. *Aguilera* told vs, that his maſter was euen ready to dye for very griefe, and almoſt mad with imagining how this was brought about, and that it would not ſinke into his head, but that this was the deuils doing, and that he, and none but he, was able to bring ſuch a thing to paſſe. I told him out a hundred crownes, for thoſe *Doblones* of ten, which he had receiued of me with his owne hands, and gaue him iuſt to a haire, as much as his ſhare came too. Hauing diſpatcht him, I came to *Sayavedra*, and offred him his part, together with the gaines of the former fiue hundred crownes. But he told me, that he knew he was ſure enough of them, when-ſoeuer he ſhould haue occaſion to vſe them, and that not knowing well where to keepe them, he was content they ſhould remaine ſtill in my hands, till he ſhould finde ſome fitter opportunitie to diſpoſe of them.

Guzman *ſhares the theft with* Aguilera, *and* Sayavedra.

We continued in *Milan*, ſome ten or twelue dayes after this, though not altogether free from feare, leſt the winde might chance to chop about; and therefore we did agree to goe from thence, and to get vs to *Genoa*, making no body liuing acquainted with our intended iourney, nor ſpake ſo much as one word of it our ſelues, for feare of what might follow thereupon. But rather gaue out, that wee were to goe for ſome other place, farre wide of that, faigning a buſineſſe, which did much concerne vs, to make all the haſte we could.

It was my chance (before I went away) to walke through one of the ſtreets in *Milan*, wherein there was ſuch choyce and variety of wares, and in that abundance, that I ſtood amazed at the ſight of them; and by chance I eſpyde a chaine in a certaine ſhop, which they had ſold to a Souldier: which in my eye, was one of the faireſt that euer I ſaw. I had ſuch a great good liking vnto it, and was ſo earneſtly affected with it, that I was reſolued either to buy it, in caſe they had not already agreed vpon the price, or to take order to haue iuſt ſuch another made me. Whereupon, I drew neere vnto the ſtall, and ſtanding by, began to looke vpon it, without giuing them to vnderſtand that I had any minde thereunto; but it pleas'd me ſo well, and I was ſo taken with it, that vpon the ſodaine, in that little ſcantling of time, taking it to be fine and pure gold, I had preſently plotted in my head, how I might haue it along with me to *Genoa*, and that without any great labour. I ſtood liſtning, while he was bargaining for it, and while they were thus beating the price, the ſeller demanded very little for it, which me thought was dog-cheape; whereupon I began

to ſuſpect, that what hee asked, was rather for the workmanſhip of the chaine, then the chaine it ſelfe: but they, not agreeing on the price, I began preſently to pitch my hey; asking him what it might bee vvorth, and what it vveighed. I had no ſooner made him this queſtion; but the Merchant caſting vp his head, lookes vpon mee, and falls withall a ſmiling, telling mee; Sir, this is not to bee ſold by the weight; but taking it altogether as it is, wee ſell it as reaſonably as wee can afford it.

This word alone was enough; for by this I knew that it was falſe and counterfeit: and holding it a great baſeneſſe for ſo ſlight a toy to hazard much treaſure, and that this plot of mine, which I had already caſt in my head, might ſtead mee better hereafter, reſeruing it for ſome great occaſion, and of more importance then this could bee; beſides, being that no wiſe man will aduenture his perſon for niffles in a bagge, I forbore to execute my purpoſe; wiſely conſidering with my ſelfe, that if I ſhould haue gone on with this, and miſcarried therein, it would haue beene a ſufficient proofe againſt mee, that I had plaid the Impoſtor in my late buſineſſe with my Merchant. I preſently therefore came to his price, and paid it him with as good a will as if it had been a thing of great value: and I muſt tell you, that I made no ſmall reckoning of it, in regard of thoſe deſignes for which I intended it; and particularly in that, which (as it afterwards fell out) turned to my exceeding great good and benefit. For which purpoſe, (hauing the plot already in my pate) I reſolued with my ſelfe to make mee one of gold out of hand, iuſt of the ſame making and faſhion as that was in euery reſpect, that you ſhould not bee able to diſcerne which was which: ſo like would I haue them to bee the one to the other.

Guzman plotteth a new deceit.

Whereupon I got me to a Gold-ſmith, who made it according to my minde, ſhowing himſelfe ſo good an Artizan, that ſhould you haue taken them both into your hand, and compared them together, it was impoſſible to iudge which was the true one from the counterfeite, ſaue only by the ſound and the weight; for the falſe one was ſomewhat lighter then the other, ſounding more bell-like; whereas that of gold was more maſſie, and had a more churliſh kinde of ſound with it: it coſt mee in the whole, about ſome ſixe hundred and thirty Crownes, and I ſhould not haue beene ſory, if I had beſtowed a thouſand; for then that counterfeite one ſhould haue yeelded mee as much: with them I bought likewiſe two little curious boxes, as like as like might be, to lay vp theſe chaines in, each by himſelfe in his ſeuerall boxe, which were fitted and faſhioned as I could haue wiſht them.

And becauſe all the ioynts of my body did ſtill paine mee very much, conceiting with my ſelfe that my ribs and my huckle bones were diſlocated and ſlipt out of their right places, euer ſince that nights kinde entertainment, which my worſhipfull Vncle gaue mee; which I haue kept hitherto written in my ſoule, the inke thereof being not as yet dry: and being now vpon the way for *Genoa*, I imparted ſome part of my minde to *Sayaveda*, not recounting vnto him all the whole Story of it; but onely acquainting him, that when I paſt that way, being but a childe to ſpeake of, ſome of my friends had done mee an affront, and put a ieaſt vpon mee; becauſe I was not either in ſuch good cloathes as might honor and grace their company; or ſo flush of money, that they might get ſomething by mee. And I was heart-angry with my ſelfe that I had told him ſo much; becauſe hee ſhould not take mee in a lye, if hee ſhould chance to remember what I had told him before.

But letting that paſſe, and dwelling no longer vpon it, I went on in my diſcourſe, and ſaid farther more vnto him: if thou *Sayavedra* wert that true friend as thou profeſſeſt thy ſelfe to be vnto me, thou wouldſt ere this haue beene * at *Genoa*, and haue reuenged the wrong that I there receiued. But I muſt bee inforced to doe it my ſelfe, ſupplying thy default, and neglect thereof, by mine owne induſtry. It will alſo well beſeeme mee ſo to doe, that I may cancell

Turne to the firſt Part of Guzman, *the third Booke, and the firſt Chapter.*

* *Hee here taxeth* Mateo Luxan Sayavedra, *the Author of the falſe ſecond Part, for his omiſſion of a promiſed reuenge, mentioned in the firſt part, by our Author,* Mateo Aleman.

that

that obligation, and pay this debt that I owe them, to the end that those good turnes which they did mee, may bee fully requited; and receiue not onely the principall, but vse for forbearance. But to remoue all suspition, we must doe that which you and your brother did, change both our apparell and our names. I like very well of it (said *Sayavedra*) and further promise vnto thee, that I will inherit thy true name, that I may the better both imitate and serue thee. From hence forward therefore I style my selfe *Guzman de Alfarache:* and I (directing my speech to *Sayavedra*) will inuest my selfe with mine owne proper name, which I inherited from my Parents, and vntill now, haue not hitherto taken it vpon me. For, a *Don* ought to be a gift which comes from the holy Ghost; because it is admitted, and well receiued of others, or it must bee deriued from the direct line, from father to sonne. For your *Dons*, that now strut it vp and downe Italy, glorying more in this title, then the Peacocke in his painted plumes, are nothing but infamy and shame. For there is not a Spaniard in these parts, (though the sonne of a Cobler) but goes adorning himselfe with the name of *Don*, that hee may be held a Gentleman. And if it goe there as it doth here, a man may very well aske, without offence; who keepes the Swine? Henceforth, I call my selfe *Don Iuan de Guzman:* and with this title will I content my selfe. Then said *Sayavedra*, with a iocond heart and a cheerfull countenance; *Don Iuan de Guzman*, § *Victor, Victor, Victor:* which name can become no man better then your selfe; so well it suites with your noble actions: confusion light vpon that Traitor that shall seeke to spot it. Hee (my braue boy) that shall take it from thee, my curses shall pursue him to death. I had furnished my selfe in *Milan*, with as much rich silke Grogram, as would serue to make mee a cloake, and a [h] *Sotana*; and so being prouided of all things necessary, wee began our iourney for *Genoa*.

§ *In Spain when a Comedian acts his part exceeding well, the applaudite they there giue him, is to cry,* Vitor, Vitor, Vitor, *such a one,* Pinedo, *or* Fernandez.

[h] Sotana, *a garment much like our Clergie-mens Cassocks here, which reacheth no farther then the knee: which is the common weare of your* Grandes, *and other Noblemen and Gentlemen in Spaine.* Dizesi Sotana, porque se trae soto el manteo. Covarr.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being knowne by his kindred, he is feasted by them. He perswades euery one to liue vertuously; And showes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and false Witnesses, bring to mens soules, honours, and riches; He deliuereth the great profit, we shall gaine, by auoiding such venemous* Basiliskes. *And concludes with telling vs, who are true thieues indeed.*

LOng will the vessell keepe that his sent and sauour, wherewith at first it hath beene fully seasoned. If the course of my life, the occasions and the chances that befell me, Loue, & Feare, had not opened the eyes of my vnderstanding; if these I say, could not awaken me, and rouse me vp from the sleepe of my sinnes, and those vices, wherein I was lull'd so fast asleepe, I cannot perswade my selfe, that any other humane forces are of power to doe it. And howbeit, with stratagems, inuentions, deuices, and diuers other meanes, it might be brought otherwise to passe; yet not with that easinesse and facility, (as some may imagine.) For it will require a large Discourse, how, and in what sort, a man ought to make his election, by distinguishing profit, from dis-profit; iust, from vniust; and good, from ill. And when it once comes to this point, the businesse so stands then with him, That hee that will be but willing to put his owne helping hand to get out of that mire of sinne, wherein hee lies wallowing, and endeuour to free himselfe from that muddy sinke of vice, those good inspirations of heauen, shall neuer be wanting vnto him, which fauouring, and furthering his vertuous actions, will adde strength vnto his weakQuo semel imbuta recens, &c

The force of vertue.

neſſe, and raiſe him vp from the death of ſinne, to the life of grace. To the end, that knowing and acknowledging his fore-paſſed errors, he may learne to correct his faults for the preſent, and for the future, grow vp to perfection. But they that are deuoid of reaſon, who like the Bull, ſhut their eyes, and bowe downe their heads to giue a blow, following their owne wilfull appetite, ſeldome or neuer, ſhall come to the knowledge of their owne miſery. Becauſe, like they that are blind, they will not ſee; and like thoſe that are deafe, they will not heare: and out of a headſtrong and wilfull humour, will not giue way, that any ſhould croſſe them in their lewd courſes. They take great ioy and delight in walking in the path of their owne luſts; it ſeeming ſo long vnto them, that it ſhall neuer haue an end, or that this life of theirs ſhall euer come to be cut off; whoſe happineſſe (they make account) doth onely conſiſt in this their vaine and idle idolatry. Theſe are men of a large life, but a farre larger conſcience. They loue the broad, better then the narrow way. They know full well, that they doe ill; and therefore doe ill, becauſe they haue no mind to doe well. They feigne them-ſelues to be ignorant of that, which they are not willing to vnderſtand; yet wot well enough, that the thred of their life, goes daily wearing and waſting away; and that the ſtring by which it holds, muſt cracke and breake in ſunder, in the end; and then their perpetuall downe-fall, will fearfully and with a great deale of terror, preſent it ſelfe vnto them.

Men without reaſon, and who they be.

But becauſe wee ſee that Gods hands are nayled faſt, that they ſtirre not againſt vs, and that he is much grieued and afflicted for vs; we thinke, it would much vexe him, that we ſhould be vexed. Such fooles as theſe, ſay to themſelues; we feele no paine, nor haue any aches, but are ſound and luſty; wee want no money, but haue the world at will; our houſe is well furniſht, we haue plenty of prouiſion; let vs lye downe and ſleepe, and take our eaſe, ſtretching our ſelues on our yuorie beds; let vs liue as merry as the day is long, ſport while we may; we haue time enough before vs, we need not to make ſo much haſte to goe vnto God, ſhortning that life, (by leſſening our pleaſures) which God hath allotted vnto vs. They deferre their doing of good, and put off their amendment of life, from an houre, to a day; from a day, to a weeke; from a weeke, to a month; from a month, to a yeare; and from one yeare, to many: ſo that houres, dayes, weekes, months, and yeares, runne poſting along by vs; but this *quando*, this *when*, is not yet come; this time, that we ſhould repent and amend our ſinfull liues; And when it doth come, it ſhall bee happy for vs, if it come not too late. This is that debt which is ſaid to be recouered at three ſeuerall payments; but if neither in our youth, our manhood, nor in our elder age, we doe ſatisfie this debt, the puniſhment that will light vpon vs for *non payment*, will be certaine, ſharpe, and ſodaine.

The language of fooles.

What meanes the Vſurer, that he hath not God in his mind, nor doth once thinke vpon him, acknowledging no other God, but his vngodly gaine? What the Wanton, who to pleaſe his luſt, adoreth her, whom he ought rather to hate? and placeth all his happineſſe in that, which he knowes muſt turne to his eternall torment? What the Epicure, or the proud man, that ſonne of Lucifer, who makes it his common practice, to martyr the innocent, being more cruell therein, then *Diocleſian*, oppreſſing the righteous, and perſecuting the vertuous? What the vnprofitable Murmurer, who hoping to make himſelfe a fortune, ſeekes to vndoe other men? Scraping, like the [a] hen, to her owne hurt; whilſt vſing diligences to preiudice others, they light vpon that, which workes their owne bane?

An exageration againſt the enemies of vertue.

Prouerbe.
a Eſcarua la gallina por ſu mal.

The man, that is honeſt, well able to liue, and of a good life, and ciuill conuerſation, doth not rob, filch, nor ſteale; for he liues contented with thoſe fauours which God hath beene pleaſed to beſtow vpon him; hee maintaines himſelfe with that, (be it more, or little) that he hath, feeds his familie, and ſuſtaines both himſelfe, and others. And ſuch as theſe, are wont, in their contemplations,

temptations, to lift vp their eyes to heauen, and to breathe forth this ſweet and thankfull meditation: O Lord, I haue as much, as is needfull for me, and ſomewhat (I thanke thee) to ſpare, to giue vnto others. And theſe good Chriſtians count it an happineſſe and honor vnto them, when through Gods bleſſing, and goodneſſe towards them, they are able to ſay; that they haue ſomething yet remaining of their ſtore, to giue vnto the poore, and ſuch as need their reliefe. *The honeſt Chriſtian.*

The thiefe he ſteales, becauſe it is his onely maintenance, hauing no other meanes to liue. And when all is gone, and that he hath nothing of his owne, he ſeekes to ſnatch from others, if he can but once come to lay his hands on it. He that is a noble Gentleman, will euer ſo farre forth reſpect his honour and credit as is fitting for him, and ſeeke to maintaine his port, and to liue like himſelfe, in a liberall and plentifull manner; but yet will not ſticke to grace, and doe good to others. *The Thiefe.*

But on the contrary, the Murmurer maintaines himſelfe with the honor of his friend, and of his neighbour, robbing him of his good name, and leſſening his worth, as much as in him lies; for, if he rob not others of it, he thinkes he ſhall not haue any for him-ſelfe. It is as ſtrange, as to bee pitied, that the ſea, ſhould breed fiſhes, that haue no tongue; and the earth bring forth men, that haue too much: that the ſea ſhould afford vs Soles; and the earth, men that haue no ſoules. *Murmurers.*

Your Hypocrites, who boaſt their letters of credit, which they haue giuen to the world; are like vnto thoſe that play at Tennis, who ſtrike the ball againſt the ground, that it may the better come to their hand, and toſſing it to and fro in the ayre, keepe it vp a good while, till it come to be either a chaſe, or a loſſe. But of all other, moſt wretched, and moſt miſerable are thoſe men, who make long prayers with their lips, and deuoure with their mouthes, the goods of the poore, the widow, and the fatherleſſe. Wherefore God will ſeuerely puniſh theſe holy offenders; holy in outward ſhow, but not in heart. An Hypocrite, is like vnto a gun, that is charg'd; for euery man doth not know, what is within it, or whether it be charg'd or no; but if you once put fire to it, the leaſt ſparke will ſend forth a bullet, that ſhall ouerthrow a gyant, and lay him on the ground: So, your Hypocrite, vpon euery little occaſion, how-ſoeuer hee may ſeeme for the preſent to haue no harme in him, will vent his malice, and be ready to doe you a miſchiefe; and when you leaſt thinke of it, giue you ſuch a blow, that your ſhall neuer be able to riſe againe. *Hypocrite.*

There are a certaine ſort of men, that are like vnto your dry withered Peare-trees; leane, tall, and ſtooping; hanging their heads in their boſomes, as if they would ſeeme to bee Saints, and goe lapt vp in a long thred-bare cloake, as if they were to accompany a Coarſe to the graue, or were them-ſelues to be interred. Theſe are fooles of the firſt forme; and will with this their diſſimulation and graue carriage, make vs beleeue, that they are wonderfull wiſe, and of great vnderſtanding. Theſe I ſay are principall fooles; they will ſteale you foure or fiue ſentences out of this, or that other Author, whereof they make a Gallimafrie, ſeruing them in, as a diſh of their owne making, recommending it vnto vs as theirs. They feigne their iuſtice, to be equall with that of *Traianes*; their ſanctitie, with that of Saint *Paul*; their wiſedome, with that of *Salomon*; their ſincerity, with that of Saint *Francis*; yet vnder this cloake, what ſhall you find? If you ſearch it well, you ſhall find, an hypocriticall knaue, a ſeeming *Sanctificetur*, but as arrant a villaine, as euer trode vpon a ſhooe of leather. They carry a leane, and meager countenance, but their workes flouriſhed ouer with painting; little breeches, but large conſciences; nothing but yes verily, and indeed, in their mouthes; but their heart is full of lies; a publike kind of charity, but an inſatiable ſecret auarice; they manifeſt a kinde of abſtinence and faſting, as well from meates, as temporall meanes; but their throats are ſo drie, and *Diſſemblers.*

and their thirſt ſo great, that they will ſwallow vp the whole Sea, deuoure other mens eſtates, and yet be ſo farre from being ſatisfied therewith, that they remaine as thriſty as they did before. They ſay, they haue enough, and more then enough, and that much leſſe would ſerue their turne, and is more then they are worthy of; yet are they ſo greedily giuen, that they are neuer contented, and nothing can fill their hungry maw. They are like vnto your Dates; ſoft and ſweet without, but hard and ſtonie within. They carry hony-combes in their mouthes, but wormewood in their hearts. They haue ſweet tongues, but ſowre ſoules. Great pitie is to be taken of theſe men, for that they ſuffer ſo much, and enioy ſo little; and are finally condemned to Hell, for this one poore fading vanitie, to be eſteemed honeſt and religious, when indeed they are nothing leſſe. So that, they neither cloath their backs, nor feed their bellies, according to their owne content and liking, but goe vp and downe in a miſerable kinde of manner, afflicted, hunger-ſtaru'd, withered, pale, and wanne, denying them-ſelues ordinarie neceſſaries for the vſe of this life, not being able truly to ſay, that they haue had one houre of content in this world, bearing alwayes about them a troubled bodie, and an vnquiet minde, their corps, and conſcience equally ſuffering. Now if this, which they thus, and in this manner ſuffer, as they doe it, and endure it, onely for the worlds ſake, and to ſeeme outwardly holy, that thereby they may gaine a good opinion amongſt men; if they would doe this, I ſay, for Gods ſake, laying aſide their diſſimulation, and not debarring them-ſelues of thoſe good bleſſings, which God hath created for mans vſe and comfort; queſtionleſſe, in ſo doing, they might leade a happy life in this world, and enioy euerlaſting happineſſe in the world to come.

False witneſſes.

Let vs ſay ſomething of your falſe witneſſe; whoſe puniſhment doth giue ſatisfaction to the people, and is pleaſing vnto all men, taking pleaſure in their chaſticement, in regard of the hainouſneſſe of their offence. For, for a matter of ſixe *Marauedis*, a thing of nothing, you ſhall haue them ſweare ſixe thouſand falſhoods, and take away ſixe hundred thouſand mens credits, and eſtates from them, which lies not afterwards in their power to make reſtitution thereof. And as your day-labourers, and other workemen, repaire to certaine ſet-places, appointed for that purpoſe, to be hired by thoſe that haue occaſion to vſe them; ſo doe theſe kind of men come to your Courts, your Conſiſtories, your places of publike buſineſſe, euen to the very Offices where your Notaries are a writing, to learne how things goe there, and to offer their ſeruice to thoſe that haue need of them. And if this were all, the matter were not great, but it is worſe then you thinke it is; for the very Officers of the Courts them-ſelues, doe maintaine and countenance theſe lewd fellowes, that in thoſe cauſes that occurre (as occaſion ſhall ſerue,) they may make vſe of them for their aduantage, ſuborning them to beare falſe witneſſe, for the prouing of ſuch, or ſuch a buſineſſe, which they will not ſticke to teſtifie vpon oath. This I aſſure you, that I now tell you, is no ieſt; nor doe I therefore ſpeake it vnto you, to make you beleeue that which is not ſo; nor doe I lie one iot, in all that I haue ſaid vnto you. For there are falſe witneſſes enough to be found, if any man be diſpoſed to buy them. And are as frequent in your Notaries Office; as Conſerues in an Apothecaries ſhop. Or like horſe-leeches in a glaſſe, ready prepared for the buſineſſe, when-ſoeuer you ſhall be pleaſed to put them vpon it. Let thoſe that haue a minde vnto them, goe to *D. N.* his Office; I was about to name him, before I was aware, but tis all one; for I am ſure you all know him, or can giue a ſhrewd gueſſe whom I meane; there ſhall you haue theſe Knights of the Poſte, at all kind of prices, as you ſhall haue pies in a Cookes ſhop; ſome for eight Royals, ſome for foure, ſome for two, and ſome for halfe a Royall, as chooſing rather to play ſmall game, then wholly to ſit out.

But if it be a weighty cauſe indeed, there is alſo another ſort of them, of a higher rank, and at a higher rate, as we ſee there are pies for weddings, and for

great

great feasts, which will cost you somewhat more then ordinary; these are those, that are Musket-proofe, and will (to strike the matter dead) not sticke to sweare, that vpon their owne knowledge, for these foure-score yeares, they remember such and such a conueyance was past thus and thus, such a piece of land past ouer after this or that manner, and a hundred the like.

Like to that Country-clowne, who being a shallow braind coxe-combe, a very lob-cocke, being brought into the Court by his Land-lord, to witnesse a thing in his behalfe; and instructed by him, that when hee should be askt how old hee was, should answer, he was eighty yeares old. The silly fellow, did not well vnderstand him, but being desirous (as it should seeme) to doe his Land-lord a pleasure, being demanded touching his age, tooke his oath, that he was eight hundred yeares old. And albeit the Notary wondring at this so inconsiderate and vnaduised an oath, did aduise him to take heed what hee said; he clownishly made answer, Doe thou take heed how thou writest, and stand not a sifting of other mens liues, but let euery man bee as old as hee will him-selfe. Afterwards, the Notary reading the report of this witnesse, when he came to the point concerning his age, the Iudge apprehended it to bee the Notaries error, and would haue punisht him for it; but hee excused himselfe, saying; That he did no more, then what did belong to his office, in setting that downe aright, which he receiued from the witnesse his owne mouth; and that although he had admonished him thereof, and bid him be better aduised, yet he stood stifly in it, and ratified what he had said before, saying; That he was of that age, and that he should so set it downe. The Iudges caus'd the witnesse to make his personall appearance; and demanding of him, why hee had sworne, that he was eight hundred yeares old. Because (and it like your Lordships) it was for the seruice of God, and the Conde, my master.

A Country fellowes mistake: for ochenta años, *he names* ochoçientos.

There are store of false witnesses euery where, the streets are full of them, they are to be hyred for money, but he that will saue his purse, and haue them for nothing, let him seeke out some kinsman or other, that is his enemie, with whom thou wagest law; for he to be reuenged of him, will sweare any thing against the whole generation of thy aduersarie. But from these malitious minded men, good Lord deliuer vs. For they doe vs the greatest hurt.

But let vs leaue these kinde of men, and come to those of mine owne occupation, and to that our Companie, or Brotherhood, which is the ancientest and greatest that is in the world. For I would not haue thee to tit me in the teeth, that I haue a pen for others, and let mine owne stand idle in my standish, or else cause it to runne another way. I will not passe by this doore, without knocking at it, and that soundly too; I will not lye lazing in the shade, nor making my selfe merry in the Tauerne.

Of Theeues.

A thiefe, what will he not doe, to steale? Which word *Thiefe*, I apply to such poore sinfull creatures as my selfe. As for your great rich theeues, such as ride on their foot-clothes of veluet, that hang their houses with hangings of tissue and costly arras, and couer the floores of their chambers with gold and silke, and curious Turky-carpets, and often hang such poore snakes as wee are, I haue nothing to say to them. For wee are farre inferiour vnto them, and are those little fishes, which these great ones doe deuoure. They liue brauely, vpheld by their reputation, graced by their power, and fauoured by flatterie; These, are of that strength, that they breake the gallowes; hempe was not sowen for them, nor for them were your Galleys built, except it be to beare command in them. Of which command, it may be, that we shall remember to say something in its proper time and place, if we hap to come thither, as I hope in God, we shall. But let vs now speake of those theeues, that are not fit to be left out, such as my selfe, and my seruant *Sayauedra*. We will not touch vpon those that rob Iustice; for there are none such I trow that will doe so, nor is it knowne, who they be. And if peraduenture there be any such, that haue

Who be the braue theeues.

done ſo, we haue already ſpoken thereof at large in our firſt Part. Nor will we ſpeake of your Rulers, nor Gouernours, nor your Counſellors of State, for we haue likewiſe treated thereof heretofore; beſides, their managing of theſe matters, is not of any importance at all, or worth the talking of. For take them out of their tracke, put them from their whole-ſale, and turne them to retayle, or remoue them from that pond, wherein they haue liu'd, and they are to ſeeke which way to winde them-ſelues; I will not giue a button for the beſt of them.

But ſome perhaps will taxe me, and ſay; That thou art, as they are; both birds of a feather; ſeeing thou art ſo willing to ſmother their lyes, their deceits, and their falſhoods. For, if it ſhould be demanded, what meanes hath Maſter *N?* The anſwer would be; Sir, He is a *Regidor.* What, is he no more then a *Regidor?* How liues he then thus gallantly? How can his Office alone maintaine this brauery, hauing no ſet reuenues, or other rents comming in beſides, conſidering what a port he carryes, what a houſe he keepes, what ſtore of ſeruants, and horſes, that continually attend him? You ſay well Sir. But I perceiue by you, that you doe not truly vnderſtand the myſterie of it, nor rightly conceiue, how this may be brought about. True it is, that he hath no rents, but he hath his renters, and none can execute that Office without his licence, paying him ſo much rent for it; whereof the greateſt part comes to the *Regidor*, the reſt remaines to the renter, to the end, that he alſo may liue, and haue where-withall to diſcharge his rent. But why doeſt thou not ſpeake freely what thou knoweſt concerning theſe men? I may not, nor I dare not; for if any man ſhould preſume to ſpeake of them, oppoſe himſelfe, though neuer ſo little againſt them, or but once offer to queſtion either their lifes, or their actions, they will make him hold his peace with a peſtilence, they will neuer ſuffer him to liue in quiet, but force him for his owne eaſe to flie the Country. For being (as they are) men of great place and power, they will preſently fall a feeling, to finde a [b] ſtraw in thine eare; that is, they will ſeeke a hole in thy coat, and picke ſome one quarrell or other againſt thee, and either by right, or by wrong, they will ouerthrow thee, if not vtterly vndoe thee. They are like vnto your Cupping-glaſſes; which (where they once faſten) ſit cloſe and hard to thy skin, and neuer leaue drawing and ſucking, till they haue haled from thee what they would haue, nor is there any taking of them off, till they be as full as they can hold. I could alſo tell thee, that no man dares ſay; Blacke is their eye; or goe about to haue them puniſht. For whoſoeuer he be, that offers that, it fares with him, as it vſually doth with your pipkins; which when they are ſet full of water ouer the fire, they no ſooner begin to boyle, but the water runneth ouer, and puts out the fire that was the occaſion thereof.

Vnderſtand you me now? Yes marry doe I: And, it may be, they paſſe ouer theſe things the better, by reaſon of their good Angels of guard, which free them from thoſe blowes, that would otherwiſe fall vpon them, and rid them out of all their troubles. I could tell thee likewiſe ſomewhat which thou haſt left out, that if theſe men, after they were hanged, ſhould haue their cauſes heard, and ſee what they could ſay for them-ſelues, euen thoſe very men would then plead ſtiffely againſt them, who heretofore were in their fauour; but now for the feare, that they haue of them, they are well content to eat their meat in quiet, and to hold their tongues. I could tell thee beſides, if I would vnmaske theſe men, that they fare daintily at other mens coſt, haue what they will, either for nothing, or dog-cheape, making the poore to pay for it, who muſt pay moſt, and fare worſt. But it is now time to make a full point, and to leaue them with their *Agentes*, and *Conſentientes*, their inſtruments, and their copartners to them-ſelues: For in concluſion, they are, as thou art; and worſe then thou, and doe much more hurt; for thou doeſt but damnifie one houſe alone; but theſe a whole Country.

Prouerbe.
[b] Buſcan la paja en el oydo.

O what good counſell doſt thou giue mee! But let mee wiſh thee (my friend) to make vſe of it thy ſelfe. Think'ſt thou perhaps to ſaue thine owne fingers from burning, to take the [c] Cat by the foote, and therewith to rake the coales out of the Ouen? If thou knoweſt this to be true, or haſt any thing elſe to ſay of them, ſpeake it your ſelfe for me: for I haue told thee all that I know, and I would not willingly that they ſhould deale with mee, as thou ſayeſt they deale with others: for I haue no minde to come vnder their laſh. Suffice it thee, that contrary to that decorum that is fitting for the greatneſſe of their place and quality; I haue inlarged my ſelfe in ſpeaking more already, then may well become mee. Nor am I willing to oblige my ſelfe anew, to ſift their liues, nor diue into their doings, being there is no good to bee gotten by it, if things runne along in this ſtraine there in *Italy*, God bee thanked, that I am going for *Spaine*, where no ſuch robberies as theſe are vſed. But becauſe I am a *Spaniard*, thou wilt ſay, that all the world is my Countrey; it is true; and in ſaying ſo, thou doeſt not lye. But ſhall I tell thee one thing? I know how all this may bee remedied, and that very eaſily too, to the great augmentation and good of the Common-wealth, and by the generall conſent of all good ſubiects, to Gods good ſeruice, and the Kings great honour: but for the better effecting thereof, I muſt be forced to follow the King, preſenting his Maieſtie with memoriall vpon memoriall, Petition vpon Petition: and when I ſhall haue brought the buſineſſe to a good paſſe, and as it were to the very vpſhot, ſuch a Fauourite, or ſuch a great Lord, *Don B.* buzzes him in the eare, and tels him, that it is an idle and fooliſh Proiect, and vnable to take effect. For, it reflecting generally vpon them all, they out of their great power will trample me vnder foote, and cruſh mee, that I ſhall neuer bee able to lift vp my head any more, leauing mee in farre poorer taking, then I was before. But I am affraid to wade too farre in this deepe water, for feare of drowning. A ſhallower ford is ſafer, and fitter for me to dippe my foote in: becauſe I ſpeake the truth, they count mee a baſe and obſcure fellow; and for that I preſume to giue them wholſome counſell and ſound aduice, they call mee Rogue, brand me with the name of *Picaro*, and thruſt mee out of doores by head and ſhoulders, ſcorning ſuch a Iack-ſauce, and down-right raskall as I am. But they ſhall not carry it away ſo. Let them take their courſe, and wee will take ours, treading in the ſteps of our noble Anceſtors: and (God grant) that they that come after, doe no worſe then wee doe. Onely, I will bee bold to tell you thus much; that there are farre more thieues then there are Phyſitians. Neither need any man to make himſelfe ſuch a Saint, as to take offence when hee heares the name of a thiefe ſpoken of, ſhewing himſelfe queaſie-ſtomack'd, and ſeeking to diſgrace him, till hee aske this queſtion of himſelfe; whether, either here, or there, hee hath not in his life time playd thee thiefe himſelfe? And to this end, I would haue him to know; that to ſteale, is no other thing then to detaine that which is another mans, contrary to the will of its owner.

Prouerbe.
c Sacar las braſas, con la mano del gato.

What ſtealing is.

For mine owne part, I would make no more reckning, that a man did not know that I had any thing of his, then if hee did know it, and had giuen it me with his owne hand, ſo as hee bee not able to hurt mee, and haue not the power to take it away from mee againe by force. I learned this Leſſon from my Childhood, though I did not alwayes put it in practice. I was like vnto a tree, that is cut downe to the very roote, which leaues ſome liue-ſap ſtill remaining, by meanes whereof it growes in time to bee a new Plant, and begins to beare the ſame fruit it did before. And you ſhall ſee by and by, how quickly I returne to my old bias. While I left off ſtealing, I was like vnto forc'd-earth, I was out of my proper Center; now, with a little vſe, I am come to the ſame lewd courſe that I ran before. When I was a Lad, I was quick and nimble, I had a facility in filching, and could lay hand on any thing, were it neuer ſo hard to come by. But now that I am turn'd Man, me thought at the firſt, I was

growne gowty, both in my feete and hands; I found my ſelfe much ſlower, and duller then I was wont to bee: but in a very ſhort time I recouered my former health.

I continued my accuſtomed thefts, & took ſuch pleaſure in them, as a Souldier could not more in his armes; nor a Ginet in his trappings, and other his rich furniture. When any doubts did ariſe, I did reſolue them; if they were to ſeeke for Plots, I did inuent them: and in all weighty buſineſſes, I was their ſafegard and defence: they would hearken vnto my aduice, as to the anſweres of ſome Oracle; there being no man that would contradict my rules, nor withſtand my lawes, nor reply to any thing that I ſhould once determine. Thoſe that were beſt practiz'd amongſt them that frequented the Hoſpitall of *Saragoca*, and *Guadalupe* came ſhort of me; though I vs'd the trade but now and then, like the intermiſſions of an Ague: for, when all things elſe fail'd mee, and that I knew not what ſhift to make, I had this, my fiue finger for a helpe, this did neuer forſake mee in the time of neede: it was ſure money in my purſe, and ſtucke as cloſe to my necke, as my Lord Embaſſadors chaine did, which a long time eſcaped many a faire danger. The trade of thieuing was as proper to me, as laughing is proper to man; nay, I had almoſt ſaid, that it was as a Character not to bee blotted out, ſuch deepe impreſſion had it taken in my ſoule. But when I did not exerciſe the ſame, it was not any want of good will; for that was euer ready, and at hand.

Guzman goes *for* Milan.

Prouerbe.

[a] Come, mangas, que a voſotras es la fieſta.

Prouerbe.

[e] Iuzgan a cada vno, como lo ven tratado.

Good cloathes recommend a man more then knowledge.

I, and *Sayauedra* went out of *Milan* well lined, and better prouided of all things that were needfull for our iourney: ſo that there was no man but would haue taken mee for a very rich man, and one of note and quality. But how many bee there that might very well haue ſaid, Sit downe [a] Gallants, and fall to; for this feaſt is prouided for you. For, as a mans apparell is, ſo [e] is his eſteeme: And they that know not a man otherwiſe, make their cenſure according to his cloathes. If thou wert *Cicero* himſelfe, and ſhouldſt goe ill clad, thou ſhouldſt be no longer *Cicero*, at leaſt a ſcuruy *Cicero*, whom the world would ſcorne, and count a mad man. For there is no other wiſedome, nor learning in the world, then the hauing of ſo much more wealth, and ſo much more land then another man. And he that is not ſo, may like a dog, goe ſhake his eares without doors: he is like money that is not currant; he paſſes not for any thing where-ſoeuer hee come. They will neither offer thee a chaire to ſit downe, nor giue thee the vpper hand, when they ſhal ſee thee vvithout a feather, though thou bee rich apparelled with vertue and knowledge; but of ſuch now a dayes, there is little or no reckoning made. But if thou bee glorioufly ſet out, and richly ſuted, though thou be neuer ſo baſe a Groome, euery mans eye is vpon thee, euery mans hat ready to honour thee. Bee thou as baſe and vile as any dunghill; yet if it bee couered ouer with greene graſſe, many will ſet themſelues downe vpon it, and there recreate and refreſh themſelues. But *Catulus* was not of this minde; who when hee ſaw *Nonius* riding in a triumphant Chariot, ſtickt not to ſay, what a deale of dung doth this Cart carry? Giuing vs thereby to vnderſtand, that dignities doe not grace the vicious. But there are now but few *Catuls*, though there bee many *Nonii*. Nay, wert thou but good Alchimie, that ſhall bee adored in thee, becauſe of its glorious and gaudy glittering. Men doe iudge now more by the eye, then the eare; by what they ſee, then by what they heare: the outſide is more looked on, then the inſide looked into: a rich rayment ſounds louder then a good report. No man conſiders what thy knowledge is, but what thy wealth is: they talke not ſo much of thy vertue, as of thy purſe: and of thy purſe, not what thou haſt in it, but what thou ſpendeſt out of it. I was well appointed, well apparelled, and growne fowre inches thicke, with other folkes [f] fat.

Catulus *his ſaying of* Nonius.

[f] *The Spaniſh word is* Enxundia Adeps porcinus, interior pinguedo porci inueterata. *Alſo*; lo gordo, que las aues tienen en la ouera.

When I came to *Genoa*, they knew not in my Lodging what cheere to make mee, nor how to pleaſe mee in my diet, I was growne ſo dainty and ſo curious.

I

I then began to call to minde the firſt entrance that I made into that Citie, and in how different a manner I was there receiued; and how I was forced from thence, carrying my Croſſe vpon my ſhoulders; and how now they receiue mee, ſpreading their cloakes on the ground. Wee alighted, and fell to our victuals. That day I was willing to take mine eaſe, and to reſt my ſelfe after my iourney. The next morning I apparelled my ſelfe, *à lo Romano*, no *Romane* of them all could weare a fairer Cloake, *& Sotana*, in which I walked vp and downe the ſtreets. All mens eyes were caſt vpon mee, as well for that I was a ſtranger, as likewiſe in regard I was well clad, and of a preſence not to be deſpiſed. They askt my ſeruant, who I was? Hee told them, *Don Iuan de Guzman*, a Gentleman of *Seuilla*: And when I heard them inquire after mee, I would pop vp my head, ſtretching out my necke, ſome what more then ordinary, thinking vvith my ſelfe, that I had ſome ten pound vveight of Bread more in my Belly, then I had before: ſo Peacocke-like was I blowne vp with Pride, and ſuch ſtore of this puffe-paſt of vaine-glory had I ſwallowed downe my throat. Hee told them that I vvas newly come from *Rome*. They demanded farther of him, if I were rich; becauſe they ſaw me come from thence in a differing faſhion from the reſt: for they that goe to the Court of *Rome*, and to other Princes Courts, are like vnto thoſe that go to the vvarres, who thinke all the world muſt now bee theirs, and that they haue already finiſhed what they went for; vvith which vaine hopes they vſing to flatter themſelues; they laſh out into extraordinary expences vpon the vvay, as likewiſe in the Court; till the Court leaues them ſo curtail'd, that they haue ſcarce ere a ragge left them to couer their breech; returning home afterwards, vveary in their bodies, poore in their purſes, diſcontented in their mindes, and driuen to that extreame want, that they muſt either almoſt ſtarue or begge their bread. They goe thither freſh and liuely, fluſh of money, and rich in cloathes; whom I can liken to nothing better, then to the fiſh called the *Tunny*; vvhich, when it is full of ſpawne, is alſo full of fiſh, fat and faire to ſee to, and is very good meate; but vvhen her Spawne is gone from her, ſhee turnes lanke, leane, and vnſeaſonable; prouing as vnprofitable to the ſtomacke, as it is vnpleaſing to the Palate.

They likewiſe enquired of him, whether I were to continue there for any long time, or paſt onely along as a Traueller, taking it in my way. To all which queſtions, *Sayavedra* gaue ſuch anſwers, as I could my ſelfe haue wiſht: Telling them that I was the only ſonne of a widow-gentle-woman, of very good quality, being a wonderfull wealthy dame, which was wife to a certain Gentleman of *Genoa*, and that I was come thither to expect certaine Letters and diſpatches, and then to returne backe againe to *Rome*; and that in the interim, I would recreate my ſelfe here in *Genoa*, taking much pleaſure in the ſight of this ſtately City; for that I knew not when I ſhould make my returne, nor for what part, or whither I ſhould euer haue the like opportunity to ſee it againe. The Inne, where I lay, was the beſt in all the Towne, and is commonly called, *L'Hoſteria di ſanta Marta*, whither the moſt part of your Noblemen, and Gentlemen did vſually reſort. There wee remained, making merry, and ſpending our money, without doing our ſelues any g good at all in point of profit, nor did we as yet goe about it. And in keeping thus our ground, wee came to gaine ground. The Clocke doth not alwayes ſtrike, but ſtaies till its houre comes, and when by a little and a little the time creepes on, that is limited thereunto, why then it ſtrikes. I playd now and then, but not for much money, with ſome other gueſts, that were in the houſe, more for company ſake, and to paſſe away the time, then any thing elſe, not vſing any other helpe then mine owne fortune, and skill in gaming; *Sayavedra* had now no hand in the buſineſſe, nor did I vſe to ſet his plough a worke, ſaue in deepe and fat grounds, where there was hope of a plentifull harueſt; I kept him for Holidayes, his attendance

Guzman arriues at Genoa.

The effects of Pride and Vainglory.

The fruits of following the Court and Wars.

g *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Sin beſar, y tocar, en coſa de prouecho.

tendance was, when there was a great feaſt, and a full boord; but for ſuch poore pittances as theſe, not worth the ſitting downe for, I was well content hee ſhould ſpare his labor. For, when the loſings or the gettings could not be much, the beſt courſe then (me thought) was to proceed plainly and ſincerely. Yet, when I plaid ſmall game, I went along with a leaden foot, marking and obſeruing this, and that other Card; and if Fortune did not fauour me, and that my croſſe-carding was ſuch, that I could not light on a lucky encounter, I would giue off with a little loſſe: but if the wind blew faire, and that I found good fortune was comming towards me, I neuer left following my good lucke, till I had ſwept vnto me all the money on the boord.

The common courſe amongſt gameſters.

And it ſo fell out, that hauing one day wonne a matter of a hundred Crowns, and ſomewhat more, it was a Captaines hap, that had the command of a Gally, to ſit by me, who I perceiu'd, lik't very well of my manner of play, and was very glad that I had got the money; and reading in his lookes, that he had no great ſtore of Crownes in his purſe, but was rather in extreame want and neceſſity, I gaue him ſixe *Doblones* of two, which in that coniuncture, conſidering his pouerty, ſeemed vnto him to be ſixe thouſand.

There is a time, when one ſingle Royall, is more to a man then a hundred; nay a thouſand perhaps at another time, will not doe him ſo much good. For the which he made me ſuch a thankfull acknowledgement, as if the fauour I had done him, had beene much more then it was, or ſome matter of greater moment. And this fell out very happily for me; for hauing afterwards vnderſtood from him-ſelfe, of what diſeaſe he was ſicke, and where his griefe lay, at that inſtant, was mine owne remedy likewiſe repreſented vnto me, and quickly found out, that I was to make him the needle that muſt knit my net. In a word, I effected what I deſired. He ſpends nothing, who buyes that he hath need of. I diſtributed likewiſe ſome few Crownes amongſt the reſt of the ſtanders by, to make them the better deuoted, and affectioned towards mee, and that I might leaue euery man well pleaſ'd and contented. Inſomuch, that by this my affable, franke and bountifull carriage, I grew into that credit and good opinion amongſt them, that I had wonne their hearts, and got the good will and loue of all men; and it is an old ſaying, That hee that ſowes [h] well, reapes well. And I can aſſure you, that as many as conuerſed with me, would haue hazarded their liues for me, if need had beene. Wherewith I found my ſelfe ſo iocond, my body ſo lightſome, my heart ſo comforted, my blood ſo cleare, and my ſpirits ſo quickned, that my cheekes were as freſh, and red as the Roſe, and mine eyes did ſparkle, and lookt ſo merrily, as if they had laught for ioy.

Prouerbe.
[h] Quien bien ſiembra, bien coge.

This Captaine was called *Fauelo*; not that this was his proper name, but becauſe it was giuen him by a certaine Miſtreſſe of his, whom hee ſometimes ſerued; which he was willing ſtill to retaine in remembrance of her beauty, and his owne misfortune; the whole ſtory whereof, hee at large related vnto me; as how dearly ſhe loued him, how much ſhe made of him, indearing the ſweetneſſe of her diſpoſition, her gentle behauiour, and the gracefulneſſe of her perſon; all which commendable qualities, poyſoned with ſome vaine and falſe appearances, were drowned in the end by a deſperate torment of iealouſie, and ſuch other beaſtly thoughts, as are ſtill waiting vpon it. And from that time forward, he would neuer ſuffer me to be alone, but was for the moſt part continually with me, and did embrace my friendſhip with the greateſt loue that could be. Whereupon, I intreated him, that he would be pleaſed to make vſe of my perſon, if I might be any way ſeruiceable vnto him, and to be my gueſt, and take ſuch fare as I had, and though I knew I did bid him to his loſſe, as keeping a better Table of his owne, yet for my ſake, and the contentment I ſhould take therein, he ought in courteſie to accept of it. I omitted no meanes, for the obliging of him vnto me, and the continuing of him ſtill to bee my friend.

friend. He had me along with him to his Galley, feasted me, and made me take my pleasure in her, all along the coast, plowing daily such deepe furrowes for the better taking root of this our new friendship and acquaintance, that if mine had gone on in the true course of vertue, there it might haue found a Hauen wherein to haue harbourd it selfe. But I was made of nothing but fraud and deceit. Yet would I be alwayes laying a firme foundation, that might well haue seru'd for the raising of a better building: but at last it came all to nothing; being (like that foolish builder) who knew better how to beginne, then to make an end of his building. Wee did communicate many particular accidents and secrets each to other, but hee came not within my shirt, he had not pierced into my bosome, *Sayavedra* onely kept the key of that Cabinet, and none but hee knew the secrets of my soule.

This *Favelo* was of a good behauiour, witty, discreet, valiant, patient, and yet full of mettall, qualities well befitting so valiant a Captaine, and so amorous a Souldier, by meanes whereof he liu'd alwayes in want. And it is a common mis-fortune that accompanies these good qualities, that they are still wayted on by pouerty (or to speake more properly) by beggery. Now I, who was not ignorant of his wants, sought in all that I could to releeue his necessities, and to free him from these his extremities, that thereby I might bind him the surer vnto me. I carryed my selfe so fairly and so cunningly, both with him, and as many as I conuersed withall, that (like Hawkes) I made them all to stoope to my lure. And within a few dayes, my name and credit was so good amongst them, that I could battle largely vpon it, and might haue receiued any courtsie in that City, if I had beene willing to make vse thereof. Whereupon, partly out of this, and partly the ancient desire that I had to know something concerning my selfe, lest the not knowing of it, might make me take thought, and so sicken, and dye of griefe; considering with my selfe, that being in that good state I now was in, a handsome young fellow, well clad, good parts, and a good purse, no man whatsoeuer could hold it any disparagement vnto him, to acknowledge mee for his kinsman; but that which did most sway with me, was the earnest desire that I had to be fully reuenged of him, who had abused me in that base manner. This did often trouble me; nor could I sleepe in quiet, as oft as I thought vpon it.

Guzman begins to thinke vpon the reuenge he meant to take of his kinsman.

I had not staid long in towne, but I found out a father and a mother, and came to know all my kindred. Those, which before threw stones at mee, as if I had beene some strange curre, whom they would chase out of their doores, did beginne now to quarrell, who should haue me first home to his house, who make mee greatest cheere, who giue me the noblest entertainment, one seeking to out-vye another. The very first day that I made this enquiry, my kindred was more (I imagine) then my credit, and might be better knowne then trusted amongst them; for no man is ashamed to owne a rich man for his kinsman, though hee be vicious and ill giuen; but all flye from a vertuous man, if they once haue him in the winde, and finde that he stinkes of pouerty, I need not to indeare this poynt vnto you, it is so common a thing.

Riches compared to fire.

Prouerbe.

i Mas fuego, mas calor.

Riches, is like vnto fire, which albeit it belong to a different place, and is onely prouided for one particular roome, yet notwithstanding as many as come neere vnto it, warme themselues, though they take not so much as a coale from thence; and *i* the more fire, the more heate. How many shall you see warming them-selues by the fire in a rich mans hall? of whom, if you shall but aske what they make there, or what's their businesse? They will answer you; No great businesse. Doe they perhaps giue me any thing? Alas, what doest thou get, by curring fauour with them, by soothing them vp, by crowching and creeping vnto them, by assisting day and night in base and seruile offices, mis-spending that time, which thou mightst better bestow in gaining thy meate else-where? It is true Sir, that I benefit my selfe here but little, yet can I not

chooſe, but come and warme my ſelfe at *Señor N.* houſe, as others doe. You, and ſuch others as you be, tell me I pray, what you are? and be not angry with me, if I plainly tell you, you are all fooles.

But to returne againe into our way. Many of my kindred came vnto mee, euery one deſiring to make himſelfe better knowne vnto me, and offering his ſeruice in ſuch complementall manner, as was befitting my faſhion; and there was one amongſt the reſt, who for to honor, and oblige me the more, did challenge ancient kindred of me, euen from our great grand-fathers. I would, for curioſities ſake, faine know, what was become of that good old man, which put that former tricke vpon me; and that I might doe it without any the leaſt ſuſpition or iealouſie in the world, I demanded of them, whether my father had any more brothers? or if hee had, whether any of them were yet aliue, or no? For, I was euer of the minde, that he that plaid the rogue with me, was my Vnckle. They told me, yes. That there were three of them in all, my Father, and two more: and that the middlemoſt was dead, but that the eldeſt of all was liuing, and that he dwelt here in the Citie. They told me that he had liu'd a bachelor all the dayes of his life, that he was a man of great meanes, and the top of all our kindred, and gaue ſuch particular tokens of him, whereby I came to know him. I ſaid that I would goe kiſſe his hands the next day: But when this was told him, and that hee vnderſtood of my qualitie, albeit he were very old, he came trudging with his ſtaffe in his hand, as decrepit as he was, to viſit me, accompanyed with ſome of the chiefeſt of our linage. I knew him as ſoone as euer I ſaw him, though he was now growne very lame and aged. I was glad to ſee him, but ſory that hee was ſo old, I could haue wiſht him much younger, that he might the longer haue felt the ſmart of thoſe ierkes, that I was reſolued to beſtow on him. I count that man a foole, who to reuenge himſelfe of his enemy, will take away his life; for that being ended, all his paine is ended with it. When I would take a reuenge, I would handle it ſo, as I did with theſe my kinſmen, that they may not forget it as long as they liue, but beare the wofull remembrance of it with them to their graues. I deſired to be reuenged of this man, and wiſht that hee had beene at leaſt in the ſame ſtate as I left him, that I might in the ſame, haue paid him the debt I ow'd him: who had without any cauſe or reaſon in the world, vs'd mee ſo vnworthily. He made mee many offers of his houſe; the very naming onely whereof, made my bloud to boyle in my breſt.

Now (me thought) the Bats were fluttering about mine eares, that the Gnats began to ſting me, and that from vnderneath the bed, crept out thoſe old Hobgobblins, and fire-ſpitting deuils, which tormented mee heretofore. No, no; once was enough of this ieſt; I would bite no more at this bait. The Cat hath [k] cozened me once, and is gone away with her prey, but ſhe ſhall ſerue mee ſo no more. I ſhall take heede of her againſt another time. Marry, I ſaid to my ſelfe; Onely *Sayavedra*, may put another tricke vpon me, but it will not bee much for his profit. But (excepting him) let any man elſe deceiue mee the ſecond time, and I will freely forgiue him.

Prouerbe. [k] Vna fue, y lleuoſela el gato. *I cannot find whither this* vna *is referr'd, and therefore referre it to others to find it out.*

We talked of many things; and amongſt diuers other queſtions, he demanded of me, if I had beene heretofore in *Genoa?* Are you thereabouts (thought I;) I ſhall watch you well enough for that, you ſhall not catch me with this trap, as old and crafty as you be. So (lying at my cloſe fights) I anſwered him, that I had not; onely I told him, that much about ſome three yeares ſince, that I paſt this way, but could not (though I would) ſtay longer then one night, becauſe I was going in great haſte to *Rome*, vpon pretenſion of a certaine benefice. Then he told me, with a great deale of pauſe & deliberation, dreaming perhaps that he had lighted on a ſtory that ſhould pleaſe me wonderfull well; Some ſeuen yeares agoe, little more or leſſe, there came hither (my good Cozen) to this towne, a little roguiſh boy; whom none that ſaw him, but would haue taken

This Story you ſhall finde more at large, in the firſt Part, firſt Chapt. and the third Book.

taken him to be a thiefe, or at leaſt a young diſciple of theirs; who, that hee might the more eaſily rob me, came to my houſe, giuing mee ſome particular ſignes and tokens of my brother, that is now in glory; as alſo of your mother; telling me, that hee was his ſonne, and my nephew; This is true that I tell you (Cozen) thus, and in this manner came he vnto me: but hee lookt ſo like a Rogue, and we had that ſuſpition of him, that not owning him for our kinſman, leſt his infamy might reflect vpon our family, and turne to our diſgrace, we ſought to make him leaue this Citie, and ſo he did, by meanes of a pretty plot which we had deuiſed for him. I can aſſure you (Cozen) that hee went flying from hence, like a dog that hath a bladder, with ſome few rattling pibles in it, tide to his tayle; we could neuer more ſet ſight on him, nor doe we know whether he be dead or aliue, as if the earth had then ſwallowed him vp quicke. With the leualtos & high-bounding capers that he cut, flying finely in the aire, with no other help then a Couerlet, without the which, (you know) your tumblers cannot handſomely doe their feates of actiuity; I very well remember that he left my bed, (whether out of feare, or what other accident I know not) full of honey-combes. This ieſt prou'd a very good one; for fearing (if he ſtaid any longer here) to haue a worſe put vpon him, hee got him packing, and ſo we were fairly rid of him. And I cannot chooſe but laugh, as oft as I thinke vpon it: For queſtionleſſe this Rogue had a purpoſe to deceiue vs. But I beleeue he will remember this nights lodging (if he be yet aliue) the longeſt day that he hath to liue. And I haue beene often angry with my ſelfe, and haue beſhrewd my fingers a thouſand times ouer and ouer, that I vſ'd him no worſe.

All that I had formerly paſt, he related vnto me very ſolemnly, omitting no one circumſtance: As the contriuing of the plot, his making him goe ſupperleſſe to bed (ſuppoſing that might haue holpe to ſaue his ſheets) and which was worſe then all the reſt, his toſſing in a blanket.

I poore man, that was this little rogue that had ſuffered all this, and had receiued ſuch hard meaſure from them, apprehended it ſo feelingly, as if I had beene afraid I ſhould haue gone to this geare againe: My fleſh did breake out (me thought) into chops; and like the wound of a murtherd man, did open of it ſelfe, and began to bleed afreſh, (vpon the hearing of this tale) as if the murderer were preſent. And albeit, I ſenſibly perceiued in my ſelfe, that the colour of my face did receiue ſome alteration, hauing changed its naturall hew, yet did I diſſemble it the beſt that I could; and then, euen then at that very inſtant, did I whet the razor of my reuenge. Not ſo much moued thereunto, out of my former hunger, that I had to doe it; as this his preſent boaſting, what fine feats he had done; ſeeming to take a pride and a glory in doing an vndeſerued miſchiefe. For I hold it a greater ſinne (and doubtleſſe ſo it is) to boaſt an ill, then to doe it. I did itch all the while this tale was on foot, and knew not which way to looke, nor what to ſay. At laſt I ſaid vnto him; I can not call to minde, who this youth ſhould be that did ſo earneſtly long to haue honourable parents; yet are we beholding vnto him, (if haply he be aliue, and haue eſcaped with life from *Ronçeſvalles*) that of all other noble Houſes (whereof there are ſo many in the world) he would vouchſafe to make choyce of ours, to honour himſelfe therewithall. And if ſuch another ſtripling as he, ſhould chance to come to my houſe, I would ſhow him all the kindneſſe I could, till I had fully inform'd my ſelfe of the truth, and had aſſured knowledge, whether he came vnto me out of an euill, or good intent. For there are ſome Caſes, and ſome ſuch ſtrange and vnexpected caſualties, whereunto mans courſes are incident, that euen perſons, of great, both worth and valour, eſcape in that miraculous manner, and are by their misfortunes, brought to that low ebbe, that they are aſham'd of them-ſelues. But this wag, when I had ſifted and ſounded him throughly, and found out his intent, I would haue dealt with him, as hee would

would haue dealt with mee: For Pouertie neither quits Vertue, nor Riches giue it. And in caſe it ſhould not haue fallen out as my ſuſpitious thoughts had ſuggeſted it, and that (for ought I ſaw) he had no euill intention towards me, nor any purpoſe to doe me any harm, I ſhould haue fauourd him all that I could, and haue ſecretly diſmiſt him from me. And in a word, though hee had not beene my kinſman, yet for the good choice that he made, and the good liking he had to our name, preferring it before any other, ſurely hee ſhould not haue fared the worſe for that. And if I had not giuen him any money in his purſe, yet would I at leaſt haue vs'd him ciuilly, and not ſent him away diſcontented, who (as it ſhould ſeeme by him) was not very well pleaſed with his entertainment. Goe to, goe to, (Cozen) (ſaid the oldman) had you ſeene him, as I did, you would haue told me another tale then now you do. And for mine own part, (I muſt confeſſe vnto you) it did me good at the heart, that I had thus firkt my young Rogue; and (as I told you before) I am very ſory that I did not handle him worſe, and giue him that condigne puniſhment, which the heynouſneſſe of the offence did deſerue. For you neuer ſaw ſuch a tatterd Raſcall as he was in all your life; and being thus all to be rent and torne, and not a ragge (ſauing your reuerence) to couer his breech, yet this ſhake-rag, this young impudent Rogue, did not ſticke to challenge kindred of vs, and that hee was lineally deſcended of our houſe, and in ſo neare a degree, as you haue heard. And becauſe he brought not his wedding garment with him, but was thus poore and baſely clad, we gaue him *Iacke Drums* entertainment, and ſhut him out of doores, hauing lapt him firſt in a blanket, where hee was handſomely canuaſt; and with this he went his way. Iuſt about the ſame time (ſaid I) was I with my mother in *Sevill*. And it's not yet full three yeere ſince I left her. I was their onely ſonne, nor had my parents any other children ſaue my ſelfe. It was euen at my tongues end, and almoſt out of my mouth ere I was aware, that I had two fathers; but quickly mending that fault, I went on, as followeth: My father left me well to liue, being neither ſo much, as there-with to be able to ſpend lauiſhly; nor yet ſo little, that with good gouernment, I might not liue handſomely. I cannot boaſt my ſelfe to be rich, nor iuſtly complaine that I am poore. Beſides, my mother was alwayes a prudent and prouident woman, well gouern'd, a ſmall waſter, and a great huſwife.

All they that were there preſent, were willing to giue me the hearing, and were wondrous glad of it, not well knowing in what Sanctuary they might place me, nor how ſufficiently to feaſt me, nor could they ſatisfie them-ſelues in point of good manners, if they did not giue me the right hand, and being two, if they did not put me in the [1] midſt betweene them both. Then did I ſoftly ſay to my ſelfe; O vanity, whither wilt thou? how doeſt thou runne after thoſe that are fortunate, as long as they ſaile with a faire wind. But when that fayles thee, how in a moment doe thy friends forſake thee, how many changes doeſt thou find in an inſtant? And how truly, did I now come to know that they are euermore fauoured and reſpected, from whom any hope may bee had, that one way or other, they may be benefited by them? and this is the reaſon why few doe helpe the needy, and all runne after the rich.

We are the children of pride, and rather flatterers then friends. For if wee were true friends indeed, and were charitably minded, wee would haue recourſe to the contrary. Eſpecially, we knowing how acceptable a thing it is in the ſight of God, that euery one ſhould be as ſenſible of his neighbours miſeries, as his owne, ſeeking to doe the ſame good vnto him, as we would haue to be done vnto our ſelues, were wee in the ſame wretched caſe, as he is. I was now become the idoll of my kindred, ſo much was I adored by them. I had bought me at an [m] *Almoneda*, a faire Cupboord of plate, which coſt mee almoſt eight hundred Ducats; and for no other end in the world, but to cloſe vp this my wound the better, I inuited all my kindred together, with ſome other of my

[1] *The middle place eſteemed in Spaine, to be the beſt.*

[m] *A publike outcrie: Or an open ſale of goods at the ſecond hand.*

my friends one day to dinner, I made them a great feaſt, beſtow'd a coſtly ban-ket vpon them, cheared them all vp, made wonderfull much of them, and gaue them all the kinde entertainment I could poſſibly deuiſe. After dinner, wee goe to play, I get the money, but gaue it almoſt all away in *barato* to the ſtanders by. And with this coniuring tricke thus I carried them through the Ayre, I was able to doe what I would doe with them. O that I could haue then whiſpered them ſoftly in the eare, and haue told them; Know (Gentlemen) that you feed vpon your owne fleſh; that the [n] wolfe is in the midſt of your flocks; and that hee, whom they make ſo much of, is hee, whom they ſo much wronged. O, if they did but know ſo much, how would they bleſſe them ſelues, what a world of croſſes would they make in euery corner of their houſes, that they might not be troubled with a double labour all the dayes of their life after to doe the ſame thing againe, a thouſand and a thouſand times ouer? For now their mattreſſes were a quilting, and their beds a making, wherein they were like to take but little reſt, and fetch more friſcalls in the ayre, then when they toſt mee in the blanket; ſo that they ſhall haue as good cauſe to thinke vpon mee, as I vpon them; and remember one another the better as long as wee liue. But my paine was already paſt; and theirs was now comming vpon them. O, if they but knew, that he that is thus with them in ſheeps-cloathing, ſhall ere long breake ſodainly in vpon them, like a roaring and raging lyon, how would they looke one vpon another? But it is well as it is; for ere they and I part, we will quit ſcores, and make them to know me a little better, and what it is to abuſe one in that manner as they did me, and to ſcorne and deſpiſe their owne blood. It is a fine ſtale, or call, to take a bird withall, to haue a good *coram vobis*, to ſpend brauely, to goe gallantly, and to be a *Don Iuan de Guzman*; but it had beene better for them, that I had beene poore *Guzman de Alfarache* with his tatterd cloathes, then *Don Iuan de Guzman* in all his gallantry. They vs'd me with a great deale of courteſie, and gaue me very kinde entertainment, but becauſe I had a queazy ſtomacke, and was troubled with many qualmes, like a woman that is a breeding, out of that longing deſire that I had to be reuenged, nothing would downe with me, or if it did, it would make no ſtay, but I ſhould preſently puke it vp againe. For in ſuch caſes, a mans thoughts are euer of a bad digeſtion; it being the nature of iniuries, not to be eaſily concocted. So that I did continually beat my braines about it, plodding with my ſelfe how I ſhould beſt effect it; and in this vertuous exerciſe had I ſet my wits a working, and all theſe my noble entertainments tended to no other end then this. For it had beene great folly in me, to haue made ſuch great preparation to no purpoſe. And vnprofitable is that power, which is not reduced to act. I did but wait for a happy coniuncture, for euery thing hath its [o] *quando*, its when it ſhould be done. For we cannot execute all things, at all times. Beſides there are ſome houres that are vnlucky, ſome ſtarres that are croſſe, and ſome planets that are malignant; whoſe contagious breath we are to flie from, and keepe our ſelues aloofe from their infectious ayre, leſt they chance to worke our deſtruction.

Prouerbe.
[n] En el hato, eſtà el lobo.

Inanis potentia, quæ non reducitur ad actum.

Prouerbe.
[o] Cada coſa, tiene ſu quando.

Thus then did I leyſurely ſtay, looking for a fit occaſion, paſſing thoſe dayes that I remained there, in feaſting and banquetting, and all other delightfull pleaſures; one vvhile walking downe to the Sea-ſide, to take the freſh ayre; otherwhiles, going to recreate my ſelfe in their ſweet and pleaſant Gardens, vvhich are very curiouſly kept; and now and then viſiting the faire Dames of *Genoa*.

My Kinſmen, vvould faigne haue made mee to marry a Gentlewoman of very good quality, but of a ſmall Dowry: but I durſt not venture vpon her, for the reaſons before recited: and being beſides to ſteale away from thence very ſhortly, our egges [p] muſt haue beene buried in the aſhes; yet did I ſhew my

Prouerbe.
[p] Auiamos de dar con los hueuos en la ceniza.

my ſelfe very thankfull vnto them for theſe their good vviſhes towards mee; neither accepting, nor refuſing their offer, that I might goe entertaining and leading them along till I had hit the marke that I aymed at. For, certaine it is, that a man may then eaſilieſt knock out his enemies braines, vvhen his aduerſary thinkes there is no ſuch treachery intended againſt him, and reſts moſt ſecure. And here vvill wee reſt a while.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *robs his Vncle and Kinſmen in* Genoa, *and imbarkes him ſelfe in the Gallies that were to goe for* Spaine.

Touching Reuenge.

Prouerbe.

[a] De donde no pienſan, ſuele ſaltar la liebre.

AN iniury, neuer ought to bee ſlighted; nor he ſleepe that does it. For Reuenge comes vp from beneath the earth, lurking in the ſecret corners thereof, lying ſtill in Ambuſh, watching but a fit time to ſally forth; and to doe thee a miſchiefe. The [a] hare oftentimes ſtarts out of that buſh, where wee did leaſt dreame of his ſitting. Let not the rich man truſt in his riches; nor the powerfull man in the greatneſſe of his power; nor the ſtrong man, in his ſtrength; nor the valiant man, in his courage: for Time alters the ſtate of things, and turnes them topſie-turuy. A little hayre in a Pen, makes a great blot; and a little ſtone in the way, ouerturnes a great Waine. And when the Offender thinks himſelfe moſt ſecure; then the offended finds the better opportunitie. I haue told you here-tofore, that Reuenge is baſe Cowardiſe, which ſprings from a weake womaniſh minde; to which kinde of Creatures it is commonly competible, and ſutes beſt with them. And albeit I haue mentioned ſome, nay many vnto you, that haue made their names immortall, by ſcorning and contemning of it; yet here I ſhall not omit to tell you a ſtory of a woman, wherein ſhee well ſhew'd that ſhe was a woman.

Reuenge a womaniſh affection.

A Story how a wronged Gentlewoman reuenged the iniury that was done vnto her.

A Gentlewoman, that was young, faire, rich, and of a noble linage, being married to a Gentleman, in euery reſpect equall vnto her ſelfe, chanced within a ſhort time after to become a widdow: who diſcreetly conſidering the dangers, whereinto by reaſon of her tender yeares, ſhee was like to fall, and what ſpeeches the world is wont to caſt out, through a too much aptneſſe that men haue to whiſper and murmur ſtrange tales: for euery man iudgeth ſo of things as they repreſent themſelues to his imagination; and as hee is inſtructed by his priuate either fancy or affection; and taking notice of one onely action of this or that man or woman, it is a common practice amongſt them, to varry their opinions thereupon, and giue their ſeuerall cenſures. And yet not alwayes doe theſe tongues of theirs ſpeake the truth; nor their iudgements hit vpon the right. She, holding it therefore very inconuenient to put theſe deare pledges of hers, vpon the tips of mens tongues, and to occaſion her honour to come in queſtion; ſhee reſolued (as on the leſſer euill) to marry. Two Gentlemen became Suters vnto her, both equall in their pretenſion; but farre vnequall in their deſeruing. The one, to his as much content, as his heart could deſire, the match being in a manner concluded; but the other reiected and quite caſt off, running a contrary fortune to his Corriuall. And beſides, that hee was not of that ranke and quality as the other, hee had likewiſe ſome other defects, which might very well excuſe a woman of farre meaner indowments, to admit him to bee her Companion. Now, the former being made ſure to this Gentlewoman, and hauing paſt their promiſes each to other; ſo that nothing

was

was wanting but their going to Church, and there to performe those Ceremonies, and Solemnities in that case required. The second, seeing his hopes dasht, and his sute at an end, and that there was no recouering of her; for that shee was already betrothed to the other: a diuellish toy tooke him so lainly in the head, by peruerse and indirect meanes, to fetch such a leape, as should put himselfe forward, and cast the other behinde.

Hee resolued with him-selfe to rise vp one day very early in the morning, which he did accordingly; and hauing hid him-selfe in a secret place, where no body could see him, there did he lie close, till such time as the seruants of the house had opened this betrothed Gentlewomans doores; and then presently taking his time, without being heard or perceiued by any, he steps mee in, and there stayes mee a pretty while behind the porch, till such time, as to his seeming, the people were stirring in the streets, and all the rest of the houses and shops were open. And then faigning to come out of the Gentlewomans house, as if he had lyen there all night, he stands strutting him-selfe vpon the midst of the threshold before the doore, with his sword clapt vnder his arme, making show as if he were setting and ordering his Ruffe, and buttoning vp the buttons of his Doublet; so that as many as past by and obserued the manner of his carriage, did verily beleeue, that hee was espoused vnto her, and had now inioyed this Gentlewoman.

When this plot of his fell out thus handsomely, that for his purpose hee could not haue wisht it to haue taken better effect: this businesse was whispered of at first by a few; but afterwards spred it selfe by degrees, and came to be diuulged all ouer the street, till at last the noyse thereof entred into her owne priuate chamber. This tricke had hee played twice ouer. And this businesse was so publikely talked of, and the Gentlewoman growne thereby so infamous, that it was the Table-talke of all the Towne: euery man admiring this her inconstancy, and wondring at her indiscretion, that shee should forgoe her first bargaine, being so aduantageous for her owne good, and make choice of this other, whom she had formerly cast off, and not without cause. But when this newes was thus scattered euery where abroad, and euery mans mouth was full of the manner of it; as that hee was seene to come out halfe naked, all vndrest, and his points vntrust: when this (I say) came to the knowledge of her other Suiter, hee did so resent the wrong she had done him, was so ouercharged with sorrow, and so inflamed with choller, that albeit he lou'd her before so tenderly, that he desired nothing more then to make her his wife; now did hee cruelly hate her; flying now as fast from her, as before hee sought after her: and did not onely abhorre her; but all other women for her sake: it seeming vnto him; That since shee, whom he so much esteemed, and so dearely loued, accounting her so good, so chaste, and so reserued a creature, that shee should commit so foule a fact, there was little hope of faith to be found in the rest: and if there were any left on whose loyalty men might trust and relye, they were so few, that hee despaired of meeting with that happinesse. Hee weighed their inconstancies, their delayings, their passions, and with them the dangers, the troubles, and the cares whereinto men put them selues. And passing from these to other discourses which he made with him-selfe, inspired by God, they wrought so vpon him, that hee changed the loue of the creature, into that of the Creator, resoluing with him-selfe to turne Fryer. Which deliberation, hee putting in execution, sodainly entred into a religious Order. This came to the Gentlewomans knowledge, and with it, the report that ran of her, as also the occasion of it, who, when shee saw how things stood, and that it was not possible for her to repaire her honour; nor to take away that foule blot which the other had laid vpon it, shee tooke-on like a mad woman: and how can you blame her, that she should thus lose her selfe in her passions; hauing lost at one blow, her honour, her Husband, her preferment, and her

her chiefeſt happineſſe? hopeleſſe for euer, eyther by this, or any other the like meanes, to receiue any future content, or to returne to the former ſtate wherein ſhee ſtood, or to recouer her reputation, which was thus ſhamefully loſt.

Whereupon ſhee began to bethinke her ſelfe, how ſhee might ſalue this her innocency by ſome exemplary puniſhment. And hauing ſumm'd and caſt vp theſe reckonings with her ſelfe, ſhee found her honeſty ſo deeply ingaged, that it was impoſſible by any other courſe but this, to cleare it: and that ſuch a treachery as this, could not be quitted, then with one on leſſe treacherous, though more cruell. Whereupon, ſhee did put on ſo infernall a fury, and went on in that violent rage, that ſhee buſied her thoughts in nothing elſe, ſaue how ſhe might bring this buſineſſe about. God bee mercifull vnto vs, and deliuer vs from a wronged womans reuenge; for all of them are commonly ſuch as ſhe, who here preſents her-ſelfe vnto vs.

The firſt thing that ſhee reſolued on, was to vſe her beſt endeauour to become a Nunne; (and if ſhee had ſtopt there, ſhee had ſpunne a good thred) and imparting a great part of her troubles to an eſpeciall friend of hers, that was of that Monaſtery, whither ſhe had determined to goe, after ſhee had broken her minde vnto her; ſhee, with great ſecrecy, effected her deſire. Then did ſhee conuey into the Monaſtery, all the chiefeſt of her houſhold-ſtuffe, her Iewels, and her monies, annexing thereunto, by publike conueyances and inſtruments drawne and ſigned for that vſe, the greateſt part of her wealth. This being done, ſhe ſtood daily expecting, that this Gentleman her enemy, ſhould come and renue his ſuite, and treate with her, touching their mariage; which (according to her expectation) within ſome few dayes after, hee did: alleadging in his excuſe, the great loue that hee bare vnto her; for which cauſe, being deſperate of his hopes, hee vſed thoſe ſubtill meanes, that he might obtaine the end of his wiſhed deſires. But now, acknowledging his fault, and that hee had beene the cauſe of this error, that was voyced abroad, crauing pardon for the ſame, he was willing to ſolder vp this flawe, by tendring himſelfe to bee her husband. Shee, who deſired nothing more, then that this his wicked intention ſhould come to light, and that her honor thereby might recouer its former ſplendor, made anſwer vnto him; That ſeeing there was now no other meanes left vnto her for the ſaluing of her credit, nor no better courſe to bee taken for the recouery of her loſt reputation; ſhe did willingly accept of his offer. But told him withall, that ſhee had made a vow, the performance whereof would be accompliſhed within theſe two months, or little more, and vntill that time were expired, ſhee could not giue him that ſatisfaction which hee deſired. But, if hee would bee pleaſed to haue the patience to ſtay till then, hee ſhould obtaine his ſuite. But, if hee were ſo eagerly bent vpon the buſineſſe, that impatient of ſo long an intermiſſion of time, he longed to come ſooner to this his deſired end, ſhee would not ſtop him in this his iourney; but would haue the buſineſſe to be carryed with all poſſible ſecrecy, till the terme of the aforeſaid two moneths ſhould be fully accompliſhed; and then afterwards ſhee did not care (leauing that to his diſcretion) how ſoone this their mariage were manifeſted to the world.

The Gentleman accepted of the condition, holding himſelfe (therein) the happieſt man in the world. And hauing prouided all that was fitting and neceſſary for a buſineſſe of this nature, they were ſecretly contracted together, by vertue whereof, they were eſpouſed each to other. They continued together on theſe termes ſome few dayes, hee entertaining himſelfe with that aſſured hope which hee had of his abſolute inioying of her, and ſhe being no leſſe contented then hee, with the wiſhed end that ſhee had to worke her reuenge.

One night, after they had ſupt, her husband went to bed, ſhee enters into

to the chamber, and ſetting her ſelfe downe neare vnto the bed-ſide, feigning to be buſying her fingers about ſome trifling worke or other, (as women are neuer without a thouſand ſuch idle toyes) ſhe waited by him, till he was falne aſleepe, and when ſhe ſaw that the ſoundneſſe of his firſt ſleepe had ſeazed forcibly vpon him, ſhe ſoftly puts her hand into the ſleeue of her gowne, and taking out a keene cutting knife, as ſharpe as any rayſour, to that firſt ſleepe of his, ſhe added the laſt minute of his life; for in an inſtant ſhe had cut his throat, and left him dead in the bed, wallowing in his owne blood. Afterwards, telling the people of the houſe, that her husband had had a very bad night of it, and that none ſhould goe in for feare of waking him, till he himſelfe were willing to call to them, or that her ſelfe ſhould returne from Maſſe; ſhee ſhut the doore after her, and hy'd her as faſt as ſhe could, to the Monaſtery, where ſhee preſently receiued the habit and was made a Nunne, after that ſhee had thus waſht away her infamy, with his blood, who had beſpotted it, giuing a notorious token of her honeſty, and a terrible demonſtration of her cruelty.

A tale of Fuctillos *the foole.*

I will likewiſe tell you (becauſe it ſuteth well to this purpoſe) that which *Fuctillos* ſaid; a foole that went vp and downe *Alcala de Henares*; one whom I afterwards very well knew. This foole, a dogge had bit by the legge, which hurt, though he was afterwards well healed of it, yet his heart was not at quiet: for he had ſtill a ſpight to that dogge. Whom hee finding one day by chance lying all along before his doore, ſleeping in the Sunne, he went to a certaine place neere vnto the Church of *Santa Maria*, and taking vp a great ſtone, as much as he could lift with both his hands, he came ſoftly ſtealing towards the dogge, without being perceiued by him, and lifting it vp as high as euer hee could reach, let it fall iuſt vpon the head of him. The poore Curre, hauing receiued this cruell blow, being in extreame torment, and neere vnto his death, began to make a moſt pittifull howling, and fell (his laſt pangs being vpon him) a bounding in the ayre. *Fuctillos* the foole, ſeeing in what caſe he was, ſaid vnto him; Doe you heare brother, doe you heare? [b] *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma:* He does ill to ſleepe that has an enemy. I remember I told you once before; That ill, is alwaies ill; But of all ils, I hold reuenge to be the worſt: For a reuengefull heart knowes not how to be mercifull. And he that ſhall not ſhew mercy, let him not looke for mercy, neither from God, nor man. For euery man ſhall be meted with the ſame meaſure that he meteth vnto others. And in the ſame balance that thou weigheſt thy neighbour, in the ſame ſhalt thou bee weighed thy ſelfe. This, thou canſt not deny, but I muſt haue thee alſo to confeſſe, That they are in an error, who knowing mens euill inclination, will yet be ſo ſimple, as to truſt them; eſpecially thoſe, whom we haue formerly iniured; for few or none of your reconciled friends, but proue rotten at the heart; and how faire a ſhow ſoeuer they make, not one of them of a thouſand that is ſound and good. He doth offer a pleaſing ſacrifice vnto God, who for Gods ſake onely, remitteth the wrongs that he hath receiued. Few miracles haue we ſeene in this caſe; Only I was an eye-witneſſe of one my ſelfe in *Florence*, which happened without the wals of the City, in the Church of *San Miniato*, that ſtands within the Caſtle. Which becauſe it is but a ſhort one, and worthy your memorie, I wil briefly relate it vnto you. A Gentleman of *Florence*, called Captaine *Giouanni Gualberto*, the ſon of a noble Knight, that was a *Titulado*, going to *Florence* with his Company, well armed, & on horſe-back, he met vpon the way with a mortal enemy of his, who had kild his brother; who ſeeing the danger wherin he was, giuing him-ſelfe for a loſt man, (for that he knew not how to eſcape him) humbled him-ſelfe at his feet, and croſſing his breſt with his arms, beſought his pardon, and that for Ieſus Chriſts ſake, that was crucified, hee would be pleaſed to ſpare him his life. *Giouanni Gualberto*, had theſe words in that veneration, that pricked with a charitable compunction, taking pitty of him, hee willingly pardoned this his enemie. And taking him along with him, he made him to goe backe

b *Prouerbe.*

Reuenge, of all ills the worſt.

Prouerbe.
Por la medido, que midiere, ha de ſer medido.
Truſt not a reconcited enemie.

A ſtory of a miracle, wrought in San Miniato, *and vpon what occaſion.*

backe againe with him to *Florence*, and brought him to *San Miniatos* Church, to offer thankes vnto God. And kneeling downe before a *Crucifex*, which was a very liuely peece, *Gionanni Gualberto*, kneeling alſo on his knees, deſired of God, That he would ſo forgiue him his treſpaſſes, as he did freely forgiue this his enemy that had treſpaſſed againſt him, in killing his brother. Which words were no ſooner vttered by him, but Chriſt bowed his head vnto him, *Gionanni Gualberto*, humbly acknowledging this great grace and fauour there ſhowne vnto him in the preſence of all thoſe that were there, preſently entred into a religious Order, in which holy profeſſion, he continued to his dying day. This image of Chriſt ſtands to this day, with his head bowing it ſelfe downe, euen in the ſelfe ſame manner as it ſtood then: and is there reuerenced as a great relicke, not onely by the *Florentines*, but all other Catholickes.

Of reuenge.

And now (laying Miracles aſide) let mee truly tell you, That when a man does pardon his enemie, but takes not this for his ground, it leaues ſome embers behinde, ſome quicke coales couered ouer with a few aſhes, which being ſtir'd neuer ſo little, breakes forth againe, inflaming the ſoule, and ſoliciting it to reuenge. And howbeit outwardly this fire ſeeme to bee dead; yet God keepe vs from this ſtill water; for many a time and oft, this fire is onely ſprinkled ouer with a little Court-holy-water, which is as good as nothing; or ſleightly couer'd ouer with the aſhes of a falſe forgiueneſſe. But if you ſhall but offer to blow it with *Occaſions* bellowes, though neuer ſo little, it ſoone diſcouers it ſelfe, the coales kindle by and by, and the flames of their hatred breake forth afreſh, and to as deepe a reuenge, as if there had neuer beene any atonement betweene them. And this I am able to iuſtifie vnto you, as hauing made experience thereof my ſelfe: For I was euer ſo mightily pricked on to reuenge, as if (like a beaſt) the ſpurres thereof lay ſtill gagging at my ſides. And well may I ſay beaſt, for he is no leſſe, that is thus beaſtly-minded. I had ſtill before mine eyes, that diſ-ioynting and ratling of my bones, when like the winnowing of wheat in a fanne, they toſt me vp on high, and no ſooner downe, but hoiſt me vp againe, euery bone of mee ſeeming to gingle like ſo many bels. What with this, and that delight and pleaſure that they tooke in the recounting of the ieſt, and the euill intent wherewithall they did it, beſides their telling of me, that nothing did ſo much grieue them, as that they had not vs'd me worſe, I could not chooſe but beare it in minde, and ſay to my ſelfe; O ye misbegotten raſcals, ye villaines, ye enemies to goodneſſe, ye dogges: I came to your gates, being poore and needy, and what a fine refreſhing did yee giue me, that I might the better goe forward on my iourney! This their courſe vſage, had ſtir'd vp ſuch ſtore of choller in mee, that I did now deſire nothing more, then to cry quittance with all thoſe that had a hand in this conſpiracy. And not ſo much to be reuenged of them, as that old dog-bolt, who was the principall plotter, and actor, both of it, and my hurt.

The time paſſed on, and with it I gained more friends, wedging them cloſer and cloſer daily vnto me, I knowing them, and they mee. The propoſed mariage was hotly purſued by them, they all very earneſtly deſiring to haue me naturalized amongſt them. I viſited them, and they me: my friends reſorted to my lodging, and I to theirs. Now, as if I had beene a towne-borne child, I had free acceſſe in all parts of the City, I went and plaid amongſt them at their Ordinaries, and publike houſes of gaming; and they likewiſe would come and meete at my lodging; ſometimes loſing, and ſometimes getting, till one night amongſt the reſt, the Cards fell out ſo luckily, and ſhew'd themſelues ſo fauourable vnto me, that I carried home with mee at one clap aboue ſeuen thouſand Royals: where-with my Gentlemen were ſo nettled, that the next night after, they were very deſirous to play greater game. I miſliked not the motion; for the time of my reckning was now neare at hand, if not paſt; my nine [d] monthes, (as the common ſaying is) that I had gone with child,

Prouerbe.
[d] Yo eſtava fuera de cuenta: ò, en las nueve meſes.

looking

looking to be brought a-bed of this birth, begotten of mine owne braine, were now fully expired; and euery moment I expected a happy houre. For Captaine *Favelo* had already told me, that the Galleys were now ready, and that he was fully perſwaded, they would very ſhortly goe for *Spaine*. This made me beſturre my ſtumpes, and to get all things ready to goe aboord, conceiuing they were now [a] hoyſing ſayle, fitting their oares, and ready to launch, being reſolued, whither-ſoeuer they went, to goe along with them; yet I durſt not make it knowne, till going out of the hauen, they were to put forth to Sea. I accepted that night their challenge, and continued play with them, but to no other end in the world, but to entertaine the time, that I might afterwards be the better prouided, to giue them a wipe for a farewell, and to tickle them with the latter arrow, or (as they vſe to doe in *Portugall*) *darles de pancada*.

That night I loſt, but no more then I was willing; for now I did employ all my skill, to bring my purpoſe to paſſe. I did float vp and downe with a ſide winde, and got to winde-ward of them, ſtill beſtowing *barato* (howſoeuer the world went) vpon my old friend the Captaine; becauſe I knew he was to returne it backe againe in the end, to my greater aduantage. Some few dayes after, I perceiu'd my Captaine grew ſome-what ſad; I aſkt him what might be the cauſe of this his melancholy, and that he was not ſo merry, as he was wont to be: He told me, it was onely the ſorrow, that he had conceiued, that he and I, ere long muſt part; for that ſome ten dayes hence the Galleys were without faile to goe away, by expreſſe order giuen for their departure.

His words were pearles; and this language of his, as a voyce from heauen, as if I had heard it once more ſay vnto me; Open this Cabinet, vnlocke that cheſt, and pull out that other Cat by the eares, and carry away with thee, what thou liſt. So that now, I thought this buſineſſe was in a manner quite ended. And ſo taking my Captaine aſide, when I ſaw that he and I were all alone, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, you haue ſhow'd your ſelfe ſuch a friend vnto me, and I doe ſo highly eſteeme of your loue and friendſhip, that I know not how either to indeare, or requite it. There is offered now vnto me by occaſion of this your voyage, an abſolute remedie to all my deſires, and a fit opportunitie to effect, what I haue long ſince intended; and without your helping hand, wherein it chiefly conſiſteth, I vtterly deſpaire of obtayning my purpoſe. And if I haue for-borne till now to giue you an account thereof (which I ought to haue done, in regard of that true affection, and faithfull friendſhip, that is betweene vs) it was becauſe I was loth, out of my loue vnto you, to cauſe any diſquietneſſe in you, which the acquainting you therewith, muſt needs bring with it. I would haue you therefore to vnderſtand, that I came not hither, either out of any deſire to ſee this Citie, nor for that kinde entertainments ſake, or any other courteſie, that I haue here receiued; but onely for to diſ-oblige my ſelfe, and to reuenge a certaine wrong, which my father being an elderly man, receiued at the hands of a young *Spaniard*, that reſideth here in this Citie: who was forced thereupon to forſake his Country, as being aſhamed of the affront that was done him. And not being able (in regard he was an old man) to right himſelfe as he ſhould, he held it his beſt courſe, to leſſen it by his long abſence; the griefe whereof continued with him to his dying day. And he that had no reſpect vnto thoſe reuerend hayres of my aged father, cannot iuſtly complaine of me, if being his ſonne, I loſe all reſpect towards him in the working of my reuenge. And becauſe it may ſo fall out, that after I haue ſatisfied my deſire, that his friends, either by the great fauour they ſhall finde in this place, or by the ſtrength of their purſe, which is no leſſe preualent, ſhall goe about to doe me any iniurie, that you afford me your beſt aſſiſtance, by which good furtherance onely of yours, without any perill to your owne perſon, you may by your ſecrecy ſecure me, and bring me fairely off. Which friendly office ſhall binde me ſo faſt vnto you, that (during life) I ſhall acknowledge my ſelfe to be your

[a] *The Spaniſh word is* Leva, termino nautico, y vale la partida, y arrancada que hazen las galeas del puerto, à levando.

ſlaue. For a ſonne hath no more honour, then what he inherits from his father: And if my father had none to leaue me, this trayterous enemie of his, hauing taken it from him, I likewiſe liue without it, and muſt recouer it my ſelfe by theſe hands of mine, and by mine owne proper induſtry. Which if my kinſmen haue not ſought to repayre, it was, for that they were not either willing to hazard them-ſelues, or their fortunes; or for that after my fathers abſence, all was buryed, and not ſo much as a word ſpoken thereof, whereby the remembrance of the wrong might haue beene reuiued. Holding it the leſſer inconuenience of the two, to let it ſleepe thus quietly as it did, then by awaking it, to giue occaſion to the people to publiſh this his ſhame the more.

Favelo all this while hearkned very attentiuely to euery word that I ſaid, and would that I ſhould haue remitted this buſineſſe vnto him, to the end that hee might make himſelfe a party in this reuenge, as became a true friend; not doubting but that he ſhould giue me good ſatisfaction therein, and performe it as well as I my ſelfe could wiſh. And albeit he was very carneſt with me, vſing many violent intreaties, that he might take this burthen wholly vpon him, yet notwithſtanding could he not bring me to giue way vnto it; Telling him, that it was neither iuſt, nor fitting; That the iniurie being mine, the reuenge ſhould be anothers. And that onely for this end, I was come out of my natiue countrey of *Spaine*, with a reſolution neuer to returne thither againe, till that I my ſelfe had giuen my enemie his payment, and in that coyne, that he ſhould know from whom, and wherefore he receiu'd it. Adding withall, that he ſhould doe me a great deale of wrong, to thinke that I wanted either ſtrength or courage to put my ſelfe vpon ſuch a buſineſſe as this is, conſidering how neerely it concernes me, and how it toucheth my ſoule to the very quicke. When hee heard me ſay ſo (ſeeing me thus peremptorily bent) he grew ſo quiet, that he would preſſe that point no farther; and though he made no reply thereunto, yet he told me; If I haue any thing of worth in me, if I can doe any thing, if my whole eſtate, life, and honour, may import your ſeruice, I lay them downe at your feet, they are wholly yours to be diſpoſed of. And if, for feare of the worſt (becauſe a man knowes not what may happen in ſuch a caſe) you will (for to make ſurer worke) that I and my ſouldiers ſhall aſſiſt you, or (at leaſt) giue vs leaue to ſtand at a gaze, to ſee how the world goes with you, command vs ſo farre forth as you pleaſe; your will ſhall be ours; and we will not be wanting to the vttermoſt of our power, to afford you our beſt ayde, and to giue you all the content we can. And I will promiſe you vpon mine honeſt word, and therefore put that to my account, that if you once but ſet your foot within the Galley, all *Italy* (would they neuer ſo faine) ſhall not be able to fetch you thence, and would rather runne all dangers my ſelfe, though neuer ſo great, then that you ſhould ſuffer the leaſt.

Noble Captaine (ſaid I) I beleeue you both in this, and the reſt, and am very confident that you profeſſe no more, then what your true heart vnto me, doth ſincerely ſuggeſt. But I thinke, there needeth not ſo much water to driue this mill. Firſt, becauſe my enemie reſts ſecure, and ſuſpects not the reuenge that I ſhall take of him: And ſecondly, for that my ſelfe and *Sayavedra*, ſhall be able well enough to goe through with that which I pretend. Which being accompliſhed, my deſire is, the buſineſſe may be ſo carryed, that when his friends would right themſelues vpon me, and ſhould haply chance to purſue me, or make ſome diligent ſearch after me, they might by your fauour, miſſe of their purpoſe, and come too late to lay hold vpon me. That which preſſes, and imports me moſt, and which I require at your hands, is; That I may know the ſet day, when the Galleys are to depart, and when you meane to weigh anchor, that I may not loſe either time, or occaſion. He promiſed me, I ſhould: And ſo we were agreed in the end, that by little and little, and that very ſecretly, I ſhould by *Sayavedra* conuay my trunkes, and my cloathes aboord the Galley, to

the

the end that I might not deferre the doing thereof to the very laſt puſh, and haue nothing elſe to buſie my ſelfe about, but onely my imbarking.

I cannot tell you, how much *Favelo* ioyed, nor expreſſe vnto you the great content he tooke, when he knew that he ſhould haue mee along with him; whereupon, he made very good prouiſion of diuers delicacies to entertaine me withall, as if I had beene Admirall of the Galleys. I call'd my ſeruant vnto me, and told him, what had paſt betwixt me and Captaine *Favelo*, and that it was now time to [f] tucke vp our ſleeues to our elbowes, becauſe we had much to knead, and a great deale of dowe to mould, to make tarts: and therefore we muſt roundly ſet our ſelues to worke. I had ſcarce ended my diſcourſe with him, but that he was ready for ioy to leape out of his skin, he was all a gogg with content, the tindar had now taken fire, the Deere was rouz'd, and he was ſet ſo hot on following the game, that there was no holding of him backe. Then preſently did we ſit in councell concerning the manner of the reuenge, and hauing well aduiſed with my ſelfe, I ſaid thus vnto him: The beſt, the profitableſt, and the leaſt dangerous to our ſelues, will conſiſt in matter of money. This is that which I deſire (ſaid *Sayavedra*) this chaſe will be better then fifteene, if we looke well to our play. Beſides, the wounds that are giuen vs on the bodie, are quickly cured; but thoſe that light vpon our purſe, are long a healing, and paine vs a great while after, if not all the dayes of our life.

Prouerbe.
[f] Arremangar los braços haſta los codos. *When a man ſets himſelfe roundly about a peece of buſineſſe.*

Goe to then (ſaid I) that we may fall the more handſomly to worke, the firſt thing that is to be done, is to buy foure trunkes, two of which thou ſhalt put in that part of the Galley, which *Favelo* ſhall appoint for them. And the other two, thou ſhalt fill with ſtones, and letting no man know what there is in them, thou ſhalt cunningly and vn-eſpyde, ſecretly conuay to my lodging, and put them in my chamber. Theſe ſtones ſhalt thou wrap vp cloſe in ſome old rags, that where-ſoeuer they be, or whither-ſoeuer they ſhall be carried, and tumbled to and fro, they may not rattle, nor make any noyſe; charging him to haue a great care, that he leaue not any one empty place, but with ſome traſh or other cramme them as cloſe as he can for his life. As alſo to ſee, that they be not heauier, then he, in his diſcretion, ſhall thinke it fitting, making each of them to weigh ſome ſix *arrobas* a peece, which will come to about a hundred and a halfe good weight. I alſo acquainted him with euery particular thing, that he was to doe, leauing him well informed with thoſe inſtructions that I had giuen him.

Guzman *goes about his lot that he had laid for the cozening of his kinſmen.*

When theſe wheeles were thus ſet a going, I got me to *Don Beltran's* houſe, that good old man, my Vnckle, and being in conuerſation with him, I began to fall into talke, how fearefull I was to goe abroad a-nights, in regard of the trunkes that I had in my lodging, two of them eſpecially being worth the looking to, for that they were full of plate, iewels of good value, and good ſtore of crownes, and (to ſay the truth) all the litle wealth that I had. This is your owne fault, Cozen, ſaid he vnto me; and if any harme come vnto you, blame no bodie but your ſelfe. For my houſe might very well (had it pleas'd you to accept of it) haue excuſed both your lodging, and your feare. For albeit, that where you are be the beſt in all this Towne; yet haue you not any Inne, (though you ſhall trauaile all the world ouer) where you ſhall finde that goodneſſe and that honeſtie, as to keepe any thing there in ſafetie. You (Cozen) are but a young man, and know not the world as I doe; I am an old Lad, and haue a great deale of experience of theſe things, and therefore let me aduiſe you, that you neuer truſt your trunkes, but with a ſure and ſtrong locke; and when you are iourneying vpon the way, carry along with you in your pocket, or your port-manteau, ſome good pad-locke, to faſten to the ſtaple of the chamber doore, where you lodge. For either your Hoſte, or his wife, or his children, or his ſeruants, haue two or three keyes to all the chambers, and you ſhall no ſooner turne your backe, but in the twinckling of an eye, you ſhall loſe all that

What a Traueller muſt doe, when he comes to his Inne.

you left there within, and hardly recouer it againe. And therefore be ſure, to make all ſure. For if you ſhall call mine Hoſte, or any of his in queſtion, and ſeeke to recouer your owne by Law, they will anſwer to your ſute, and after a great deale of coſt and trouble, they will alleage for themſelues, that either you carryed it away your ſelfe, or that you brought no ſuch thing thither, or at leaſt, that they knew of no ſuch thing, becauſe you had not, when you came in, conſigned it vnto them, and committed it to their charge; ſo that what was thine before, they will by this meanes make it their owne. Into an Inne, ſ bring nothing in; for it is no ſooner in, then loſt, vnleſſe you looke narrowly vnto it. But being a young Gallant, as you are, though it pleaſe you not, out of your *Ioniall* diſpoſition, and the loue to good companie, to take this for your houſe, which is moſt freely yours, yet could I wiſh you to fetch away your trunkes from thence, and to bring them hither, and not to leaue any more plate, or ſiluer there, then what ſhall ſerue for your neceſſarie vſe. For here in my *Eſcritorio*, all ſhall be kept ſafe for you, ſo that you ſhall not need to be afraid thereof, as long as it remaines here in my houſe. I thank't him as much, as if my trunks had beene worth a Million, and ſo I thinke he did conceiue as much, or little leſſe. As well in regard that he had ſeene ſome of my veſſels of ſiluer, as likewiſe my chaine, my gold, and other things, that I had brought thither with me: As alſo, for that I ſeem'd to be ſo deſirous to haue them ſecured in ſome place of ſafetie.

Prouerbe.
ſ En la poſada, no ay coſa poſada.

From this talke, we fell into diſcourſe touching my mariage: He telling me, that I was now of fit yeeres for a wife, and that the longer I ſtaid without, if I had a purpoſe to ſettle my ſelfe and my eſtate, I did but loſe ſo much time; for that your elder mariages, were but a leauing of a mans children to be fatherleſſe, and to become poore miſerable Orphanes. And therefore, if I were not minded to be a Church-man, and to admit my ſelfe into ſome one religious Order or other, it were better for me to marry out of hand, as well in reſpect of mine owne comfort, as the husbanding of my eſtate. For ſeruants, though they be neuer ſo faithfull, doe not for the moſt part want conduit-pipes, to conuey away thy wealth, ſcattering it abroad like water, vpon women, gaming, feaſting, exceſſe in apparell, and diuers other things, who ſeeing themſelues neceſſitied, and put to their ſhifts, to maintaine theſe their idle expences, rob their Maſters of all that they haue, and afterwards flie the Country. He laid before me the manifold inconueniences of a ſingle life, and on the necke of that, he comes vpon me, making a large relation vnto me of the good parts of this Gentle-woman, whom he wiſht me vnto. Who (as I vnderſtood) was his kinſwoman by the mother-ſide, and more nobly, then richly deſcended. But that defect was ſupplied by her beauty. I ſhould haue had likewiſe with her, but *Ho-there*, (as I afterwards came to diſcouer the myſterie) a young daughter, which ſhee had by a miſchance, begotten on her by a young Citizen of *Genoa*, who had promiſed her mariage, but afterwards (cozening the poore wench) married with another. He told me beſides, that ſhee had a mother, that was a very wealthy woman, and one that would be a great ſtay and helpe vnto me, eſpecially in the gouernment of my houſe, and the bringing vp of thoſe children, that God ſhould bleſſe me withall. And that I ſhould finde her no leſſe louing vnto me, then if ſhee were mine owne naturall mother. I did ſet a good face on the matter, and ſeemed to like wondrous well of all that which hee had ſaid vnto mee; Telling him, that what-ſoeuer came from him, could not but be good; and that his counſell ſhould be a guide to my actions, without farther conſultation from my ſelfe, as conueniencie ſhould offer it ſelfe. But that I might not loſe a certaine Benefice, that was beſtowed vpon me, for the making ſure of that, I muſt neceſſarily reſigne it to a Cozen-Germane of mine, my mothers-ſiſters-ſonne, who liues in *Seuill*. I threw out this baite vnto him, to nibble vpon, where-with

of mariage.

I entertain'd him for that time, hee ſeeming well contented with my faire anſwer.

Whileſt we were earneſtly talking of this buſineſſe, in comes *Sayavedra* vnto me, and rounding me in the eare, made ſhow as if he had deliuer'd me a very long meſſage. I then (ſeeing my time, ſpeaking out aloud) ſaid vnto him; And what anſwer did you make him? And he anſwering me in the ſame key, replyde; What anſwer would you haue me make him Sir, but that it ſhould be done. Marry, beſhrew your fingers for it, (ſaid I) you did not well, in ſaying ſo. Doeſt not thou know, that I am not now in *Rome*, nor *Sevill*; doeſt thou not ſee how raſh and inconſiderate thou haſt beene, in promiſing that for me, which I cannot performe? Goe, carry him the great chaine, giue it him, and tell him, that this is all that I haue, and that I can doe no more then I can doe: Excuſe me vnto him, and ſignifie withall, that I haue ſtraind my ſelfe as farre for him, as my abilitie can reach. You ſay well Sir (replyde *Sayavedra*) but how a Gods name, ſhall I be able to lugg along by my ſide ſuch a huge chaine as this, that weighs ſeuen hundred crownes in good gold? I thinke I had need hyre a porter to helpe me. I preſently made anſwer; No more words; Doe as I bid you. Get you to ſome Gold-ſmiths ſhop or other, and take the chaine along with you, and make choyce of ſome Iewell there, or what you ſhall thinke fit will ſerue the turne, and leaue the chaine there, or ſome other pawne, which ſhall be worth more then what you haue of him, and pay him intereſt for the lone of it: and this, I take it, will be the better courſe. And if the pawne fall out too ſhort, make it out in Crownes vnto him. So ſhalt thou diſ-ingage thy ſelfe of the folly, whereinto thou haſt runne: For I know no other remedie but this.

My Vnckle, who liſtned to all that I had ſaid; What pawnes (ſaid he) will you giue him, or for what? To whom I made anſwer; Sir, he that hath fooliſh ſeruants, muſt whether he will or no incurre many inconueniences, falling ſtill into a hundred thouſand errours, and as many miſchiefes, and ſleepe-breaking cares. There is a Gentlewoman here of *Caſtile*, that is treating a mariage with a Gentleman of her owne Country, they are both well knowne vnto me, and of my eſpeciall acquaintance, and to whom I owe ſome beholdingneſſe. They haue requeſted me, that I would furniſh them with apparell and iewels for their wedding; which is now ſo neere at hand, that I cannot giue them that ſatisfaction, that I would. You ſee Sir, what tree they truſt vnto, and what ſhifts I am driuen to, to cumply with them. And the griefe of it is, that this block-head my man, had not the wit to excuſe me, being he knew, how hardly I could doe them this kindneſſe. And I am halfe iealous, that he out of his owne kinde heart inuited them thereunto, and without making mee priuie vnto it, hath promiſed them my beſt furtherance. For it cannot ſinke into my head, that a woman of iudgement, ſhould of her ſelfe requeſt ſuch a courteſie as this. And if it be his owne act, why ſhould not he make it good without me? But Sirrah (ſaid I to my man) ſeeing it is as it is, and it cannot now be otherwiſe, goe wait vpon her, and doe as ſhee ſhall direct you.

The old man, ſeeing me ſo much moued, and that I ſeemed to be much offended with my man, for his indiſcretion, ſaid vnto me; Cozen, let not this trouble you, it is not a thing worth the ſpeaking of, and therefore let it not diſquiet you: you are come into a place, where you cannot want friends for ſo ſmall a matter as this. I know that very well Sir, (ſaid I) and that my noble kinſmen here, will doe me any friendly office that lies in their power, and that as long as they haue it, I cannot lacke. But becauſe amongſt all our kindred, I know not any of thoſe that are married, that can furniſh me with ſuch things as ſhee requireth for this ſolemnity, I dare not intreat them in a matter ſo troubleſome as this cannot chooſe but be vnto them. And yet on the other ſide, being ſo earneſtly requeſted to ſupply this Gentle-womans occaſions, the very

very demanding of ſuch a courteſie, is a kind of commanding of it, and obligeth me (as I am a Gentleman) to make the beſt ſhift I can for her, and to trie all my friends, rather then faile her now at her need. And yet I know well enough, that Iewels are not euery where to be met withall, which in publike aſſemblies, and ſuch ſolemne acts, as theſe are, can ſhew their faces without bluſhing. Cozen (ſaid he) no more, it is enough; breake not your ſleepe for this, nor take you any farther care; For I, for my part, and other your kinſmen, on theirs, will trie amongſt vs, what we can doe, and doubt not but wee ſhall fit her in that reaſonable and conuenient manner, as ſhall ſerue her turne, and ſaue your credit. Nay (Cozen) I will not haue you ſit out for a little, if I can helpe it. And as for your Trunkes, you may ſend them hither when you pleaſe. I kiſt his hands for this his double kindneſſe, returning him both for the one and the other, ſuch condigne thankes, as either my wit could inuent, or my words expreſſe, acknowledging the great and extraordinary fauour that herein he ſhould doe me: and ſo taking my leaue of him, as ſoone as euer I came home to my lodging, I tooke order, that the Trunkes, (each of them hauing three keyes a peece, being well and ſurely lockt, and ſtrongly plated with yron,) ſhould out of hand be carried thither without any more adoe.

My Vnkle, when he ſaw *Sayavadra* enter his houſe, and the Porters at the heeles of him, ſo heauy laden, that they were ſcarce able to creepe along with them, hauing well conſidered the ſtrength of the locks and barres about them, and the diſtruſt that I had of mine Hoaſt, together with the weight and heaft of them, he did certainly aſſure himſelfe, that they were full of treaſure. Whereupon he asked *Sayavedra* what was within thoſe Trunkes, that they weighed ſo heauy? Whereunto he anſwered; Sir, though my maſter hath many things in them of great value, yet that which is worth more then all the reſt, is a parcell of ſtones, which he hath gathered together from all parts of *Italy*, the choiſeſt he could light vpon, whereſoeuer hee came, but for whom they are, or whither he will carry them, I know not. The old man arched vp his eie-brows, and wiped his eyes, wondring to ſee ſuch great ſtore of wealth, and putting them with his owne hands in ſafe cuſtody, vnder the keeping (as they ſay) of ſeuen keyes, the Trunkes remained with him, and *Sayavedra* returned home. And there (like Pigeons, when they court and woo one another, and haue done billing, and murmured out their amarous paſſions) we two louing companions fell likewiſe a crookling, and gathering ſtraw, for to build our neſt. Wee ſpent all that night in deuiſing new plots, and in plotting new deuices, how wee might fetch off another kinſman of mine, that was young, rich, and of great credit amongſt them, reſoluing to goe home to his houſe, and there to pitch another net for him, to the end that whilſt others ſhould complaine of the harme I had done them, he ſhould not ſtand by and laugh, whilſt others wept, and applaud his wit, that he eſcaped my fingers. And therefore I was minded to inueſt him likewiſe with this new order of a ſecond St. *Iago*. And ſo I did: For the Sunne was ſcarce vp, and got out of his bed, when *Sayavedra* taking with him the two chaines, in thoſe two boxes that were ſo like one another, gilded equally on euery ſide, neatly cloſed with your Dutch claſpes, with alike viſes, or ſprings, that would ſhut of them-ſelues, bearing them cloſely vnder his cloake, home we came vnto him; where we found him newly vp, & making him-ſelfe ready. But not thinking that a fit time, I was willing to haue defer'd my ſeeing of him, till after dinner. But when it was told him that I was there, he tooke it ill, and ſeemed ſomewhat aſhamed withall, accuſing me of ſtrangeneſſe, that I would be ſo dainty with him, as to make ſcruple of comming vp vnto him, as ſoone as I came within the houſe. I told him I did not doe it out of any niceneſſe, but that I was loath to diſquiet him, for that I vnderſtood he was taking his reſt. With theſe, and the like complements, we paſt the time a while, queſtioning each other of our healths, and diſcourſing of ſome things (whilſt

Prouerbe. Debaxo de ſiete llaues: .i. à muy buen cobro.

Another plot of Guzmans.

(whilſt he was dreſſing and fitting his cloathes) about the Citie, at laſt hee brought me downe into a cloſet, or pretty little counting-houſe, that hee had beneath ſtayres, and ſitting downe, after a ſhort pauſing, hee demanded of me, what wind had blowne me thither ſo early? Sir (ſaid I) none, ſaue onely that I may giue a good morrow to the day, to the end, that it may thriue the better with me: For the night hath not beene my friend.

The buſineſſe Sir, that I come vnto you about, is to intreat you, that if you haue any ſeruant of yours in the houſe, that is an honeſt diſcreete fellow, that you would be pleaſed to call him hither. Which I had no ſooner ſaid, but hee preſently rings me a bell, the ſound whereof was no ſooner heard, but two or three came haſtily running in. And hauing beckned to one amongſt the reſt, to come vnto him; he ſaid vnto him; here is my ſeruant *Steffanello*, who ſhall doe what-ſoeuer you ſhall be pleaſed to command him. That then (quoth I) which I ſhall intreat at his hands, is, That he will take the paines, to goe along with my ſeruant *Sayavedra* to ſome Gold-ſmith, to take the aloy, weight, and value of a chaine that I haue here. *Sayavedra* thereupon preſently deliuered me the little boxe, wherein was that which I had cauſed to be made of pure gold; and taking it out, I ſhew'd it vnto him; my kinſman was much pleaſed with the ſight thereof, and was neuer weary with looking vpon it, ſo handſome a one it was, ſo beautifull, ſo maſſie, and of that extraordinary curious workmanſhip. Inſomuch, that it ſeemed vnto him, that he had neuer ſeene the like; for it was all of dainty delicate fine linkes, ſmoothly poliſhed, without any ſtones, or inammelling at all. When he had taken his fill in viewing of it, I return'd it backe againe to my ſeruant, and they two went together to diſpatch this buſineſſe, whilſt we in the meane while continued talking ſometimes of one thing, ſometimes another, the better to paſſe the time. A little while after, they both came backe againe, bringing with them a little ſcrole of paper, with the Gold-ſmiths hand to it, wherein it was there ſet downe, That the chaine of gold, was in fineneſſe two and twenty Carats, and that it was (according to its weight) worth ſixe hundred and three and fifty Spaniſh Crownes, and ſomewhat more. Then I called to *Sayavedra*, and willed him to giue it mee, who deliuered mee the counterfaite one, firſt opening the boxe wherein it lay, where once more taking it forth, we fell afreſh to looking vpon it. And putting it anon after into its boxe, which I ſtill kept open, I ſaid vnto him; Sir, that which I am farther to intreat at your hand, is that which followeth; Some few nights ſince, I haue beene bitten at play by ſome Gentlemen of this Citie, but they them-ſelues worſe; for that I haue gotten of them a matter of fiue thouſand Royals: they haue challenged me to play greater game, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune, while it laſts, and to make triall of my good lucke; and it may be, that I may venture little, and get much. But becauſe all kind of gaming doth wholly in a manner conſiſt in the handſome carriage of the buſineſſe, and that we that are gameſters, may as well loſe as winne, I would not find my ſelfe ſo limited and ſtinted in play, that if I ſhould chance to loſe, and runne out of my moneys, that I ſhould not be able to come againe vpon them with freſh ſupplies, to recouer what I loſt, and (if lucke ſerue) to get vpon them. And albeit (I thanke God) I lacke no money, hauing at home in my Vnkles houſe ſome fiue thouſand Crownes, yet I may not meddle with them, for as ſoone as certaine Letters ſhall come hither to my hands, which I daily expect from *Seuill*, I cannot, no not for an houre, prolong either their payment, or mine owne departure to *Rome*, for the ſetling of a good Benefice either vpon my ſelfe, or a Cozen-germane of mine, as it ſhall ſtand beſt with my Vnkles liking, ſubmitting my ſelfe to his direction, who may diſpoſe of me as he in his diſcretion ſhall thinke fit; ſo that it is neither iuſt nor conuenient, that I ſhould once breake, or offer but to touch that ſumme, leſt I might then want it, when I had moſt occaſion to vſe it; which I may ſo much the rather for-

forbeare to doe, becauſe (if need be) I can make vſe of my Iewels, and my Plate, which like a dead commodity lie by me, and are good for nothing, but to lay to pawne at a dead lift; and yet for all this, vnleſſe ſome vrgent occaſion, or extreame want, ſhould force me thereunto, I ſhould be very loath to part with them, much leſſe to put them away to loſſe, as many too often doe. You haue here this chaine, you haue ſeene and view'd it, and you know what it is worth, all that I ſhall now deſire of you, is that with all ſecreſie (for I would not willingly incurre the cenſure of an vnthrift, nor if men ſhould talke of it, be forced to giue them an account of ſuch trifling toyes as theſe) you would be pleaſed to furniſh me with ſixe hundred Crownes vpon this Chaine, paying intereſt for that ſhort tearme that I ſhall vſe them; aſſuring your ſelfe, that whether I winne or loſe, you ſhall not fayle to be paid at your due time. Wherein, if I ſhould chance to faile you, you may pay your ſelfe out of the chaine, for which end I ſhall leaue it with you, that howſoeuer the world goe, you may be a gainer, though I a loſer. I likewiſe told him, how vpon the like occaſion I had once pawned a certaine piece of new Plate, richly gilt, but he that had it of me, had vs'd it in that ill manner, that when he returned it vnto mee, it was not fit to be ſerued in at any honeſt mans boord, ſo that I was forced to ſell it, hauing not one penny allowed me for the faſhion. And therefore for the auoiding of ſuch another loſſe, I intreated him to doe me the fauour, that the chaine might remaine ſtill in his owne hands, without being poſted ouer from one to another.

Hee made ſhow that hee did not take it halfe well at my hands, that for ſo ſmall a courteſie as this, I ſhould offer him a pawne. But I clapping downe the couer of the boxe, ſhut it ſodainly too, and ſo conſign'd it ouer vnto him, forcing it into his hand; vowing and proteſting, that I would by no meanes receiue this kindneſſe from him, if he refuſed to accept of the chaine. For, beſides that I did not vſe to weare it oft, becauſe it was too maſſie and heauy for mee, he ſhould doe me a courteſie to keepe it for me; for as long as it was with him, I was ſure it would be both ſafe and well vſed. Adding further withall, That being we are all mortall, and that many things might occurre vnto me, being a ſtranger, it was fit and conuenient, that hee ſhould therein ſatisfie my deſire. Vpon theſe words, and the earneſt inſtance that I made with him, he accepted of it in the end, and promiſed me, that the firſt thing that he would doe, ſhould (as ſoone as hee put his foote out of doores) bee his procuring of theſe moneyes for me: wherein he was as good as his word. For the very ſame day, whileſt I was ſitting at dinner, in comes *Steffanello* with the ſixe hundred Crownes. I thankt him for his paines, and intreated him to recommend my ſeruice to his maſter; he ſtaid not with me ſcarce a *Pater-noſter* while, & was but euen new gone, but preſently in comes his maſter, and makes directly towards my lodging. Which ſodaine approach of his did ſo trouble me, that I had not one drop of blood in all my whole body, nor could the beſt Barber of them all, haue found any ſuch thing in my veines. Here I loſt my ſtirrops, and knew not what to doe. For hauing but then, euen newly then receiued the Crownes, and the maſter following ſo cloſe at the ſeruants heeles, I did vndoubtedly beleeue, that they had opened the boxe, and had found out the falſe chaine, and that he had made this haſte, to hinder his man from deliuering the money vnto me. But this doubt was ſoone reſolued, and I was quickly rid of this feare, for he came towards me with a chearfull countenance, making many offers of his loue and ſeruice vnto mee, and that if I had occaſion to vſe him in any thing elſe, I would be pleaſed to command him; for whatſoeuer hee had, it was wholly at my deuotion: And that thoſe moneys hee had borrowed of a friend of his vpon intereſt, but that it would come to a matter of nothing in the reckning. Then ſaid I to my ſelfe, (conſidering more the future, then the time preſent) I beleeue this nothing will be ſome-thing to you in the end; and how

light

light you make of it, will light heauilier vpon you, then you are aware. But burying my thoughts within my owne boſome, I told him, that was not much materiall, for the pawne was worth more then the vſe of the money could come to.

But he had not long ſtaid a talking vvith me, vvhen loe, vvhileſt hee vvas there with me, my Gentlemen gameſters enter the roome, and calling to *Sayavedra* for cards, there was a well-ordered battaile begun betweene vs. My kinſman perceiuing that we meant to fight it out, and to ſet cloſe to it, tooke his leaue, and went his way. I was ſo ſafely intrencht in my moneys, hauing *Sayavedra* then in my fauour (for being vpon our departure, it was no time now to ſtand with our hands vnder our girdle, nor to gather flowres, but to reape the fruits of our labours, and to hoyſe ſayle, and away) I ſallyed ſafely out vpon them, beating them ſo ſhamefully, that I put them to flight, leauing behinde as a prey vnto me aboue fifteene thouſand Royals in good gold. I gaue *barato* to thoſe that were preſent, and to the Captaine who came thither anon after this field was fought, I cloſely clapt fiftie Crownes in his fiſte, which was all one, as if with them I had bought me a ſlaue, and purchaſed me ſuch a ſeruant as ſhould ſticke to me vpon all occaſions.

This quarrell being ended, and the Gameſters gone, my Captaine tooke me aſide, and we two being all alone, he aduiſed me, that on Sunday night following, being ſome foure dayes hence, the Galleys were to depart. Whereupon, ſeeing my ſelfe thus ſtraitned by time, I began to ſtrike vp my drumme, to muſter my forces together, and ſending abroad my tickets, this way, and that way, firſt to one party, and then to another, aduertiſing my friends, that the wedding was to be ſolemnized the Munday following, and that they would be pleaſed to make me beholding vnto them for their promiſed fauour. The Ants doe not come ſo laden with corne in Auguſt, which they gather abroad in the fields, and bring home into their granaries, as they came tumbling into my lodging with iewels, euery one ſtriuing, who ſhould ſend me the moſt, and the beſt. Which in a word, were ſo many, and ſo rich, that I was euen almoſt aſhamed to receiue them. But I ſet a good face on the matter, becauſe me thought they were not deare. My Vnckle ſent me in a Collar to grace the Brides ſhoulders, and a girdle ſutable vnto it, and a feather to adorne her head-dreſſing, which being all of gold, and ſet thicke with pearles, and precious ſtones, the three peeces were valued at more then three thouſand Crownes. The reſt did furniſh me with rich brooches, buttons, bodkins, bracelets, pendents, care-rings, tablets, carcanets, vayles, coyfes, and rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. All which things, as faſt as they came in, the Captaine vnwitting thereof, I clapt vp cloſely within my trunks, which ſtood in a by-corner out of ſight. The next three dayes that were left me, I ſpent in viſiting my kindred, thanking them for the vndeſerued grace and fauour they had done me.

When Sunday was come, knowing that the Galleys were to weigh anchor a Munday morning betimes, and to put forth to Sea, I ſaid to mine Hoſte: Mine Hoſte, I ſhall be abroad this night at play, at a friends houſe, where ſome Gentlemen haue appointed to meet, and if peraduenture it ſhall be ſomewhat late before we giue ouer play, I thinke I ſhall not onely ſup, but lye there too, if we chance to breake off before it be day. And therefore (good mine Hoſte) haue a care to the chamber, till we returne, though it may be, I ſhall ſend *Sayavedra* home vnto you. And ſo hauing the night to friend, I went out of my Inne, leauing mine Hoſte two trunks, to pay for my dyet, and my lodging, during the time I ſtayed in *Genoa*. True it is, that by reaſon of the great haſte we had to be gone, I left them both full, but of fine little pibbles that I had cauſed to be fetcht from the Sea-ſide; being in ſhow, not much vnlike to your craggy Chriſtall of the mountaine, which did weigh ſome twenty pound weight a peece.

All

All things being done and diſpatcht as I would haue it, I went aboord the Galley, and cabbin'd with my friend Captaine *Favelo*. I want words to expreſſe vnto you, the great entertainment, the Captaine (that night I came out of *Genoa*) made me, the coſtly ſupper, that he had prouided for me, and what a good bed I lay in. He demanded of me, how I had ſped in my buſineſſe. I told him, to mine owne good contentment and ſatisfaction; and that hereafter, I ſhould giue him a more particular account thereof. With this anſwer he reſted ſatisfied, and queſtioned me no farther about it. We ſup, we ſleepe, but I for my part not very quietly, for though I came cleare off, and had not any the leaſt rub, but things ranne as fairely and ſmoothly, as in ſuch a caſe I could haue wiſht it, yet I had a little thing within, that checkt me, and told me in mine eare, that I had not done well, which did much trouble me for the time. I paſt ouer that night, as well as I could; and when the Sunne was vp, hauing not all this while perceiued the Galley ſo much as to wagg, nor hearing any beating of the oares, nor any the leaſt noyſe in the world, as if I had beene in the greateſt ſolitude that the minde of man could imagine; being now fully awakened, and going about to put on my cloathes; my Captaine comes into my Cabbin, and tells me, that we had doubled the Cape of *Nols*. So farre we had as faire a winde, and as fine weather, as heart could wiſh, but it did not ſtill continue thus fauourable vnto vs, but much contrary, and full in the teeth of vs, as you ſhall heare hereafter. For *Fortune* is not alwayes proſperous; but with the Moone, hath her Creſcents, and her Waynings, and by how much the more pleaſing are her ſmiles, by ſo much the more ſowre are her frownes, when ſhee changes the copie of her countenance. Onely I had a deſire, whileſt wee were making our voyage, to know what mine Hoſte thought on, when hee ſaw I returned not the firſt night to my lodging. And what the ſecond, when the reſt could heare no newes of me, thinking with my ſelfe, what lamentation they would make for me. How many cold ſhaking fits of an Ague they would haue, for want of a warme blanket; how many couerlets would they caſt vpon them, yet giue none to the Hoſpitall; what diligent ſearch they would make after me; what ſeuerall coniectures, what ſhould become of me; diſputing with themſelues, whether ſome bodie had not murther'd me, to make themſelues maſters of my wealth; or whether I had beene wounded in ſome quarrell. But I imagined with my ſelfe, that they conceiued, (and they were in the right) that I was gone along with the Galleys. And then being cleane out of hope of any humane remedie, I began to thinke with my ſelfe, how ſhrewdly the fleas would trouble them for many a faire night after.

Guzman *leaues* Genoa, *and carryes away with him his kinſmens goods.*

Now did I begin to conſider, what haſte they made to vnrip my trunkes, that they might by them ſaue them-ſelues harmeleſſe, euery one firſt alledging the *antelation* of time, and prioritie of his debt, and ſo by the ordinarie courſe of Law in thoſe parts, pretend as he was the firſt Creditor, that he might be firſt paid. Me thought I did likewiſe ſee, how mine Hoſte did hugg himſelfe, how he did laugh and chucke for ioy, to thinke how rich I had left him, by leauing him theſe two trunkes, which being valued according to their weight, might very well haue contented him, for a farre longer and larger allowance, then I could poſſible ſpend in ſo ſhort a time. But the worth did not anſwer the weight: For there was nothing in them, but ſtones, which if he were minded to hang himſelfe, might ſerue for his ſepulchre. And what ſay you to my old Vnckle, doe not you thinke that he was well prouided for, with thoſe pretious ſtones, which *Sayavedra* acquainted him withall? But that other kinſman of mine, who went away with the chaine, who doubts it, but that he did laugh in his ſleeue at the reſt of his fellowes, when he ſaw he had ſuch a ſure pawne in his hands, all pure linkes of gold, that he might very well pay both the Principall, and the Intereſt. But when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymie, light and falſe Latten, being no better (taking away its guilding, and faſhion) then

Guzmans *conceit of his kinſmen in* Genoa.

then baſe braſſe, courſe copper, or ſuch mettall, as you make your candleſticks, what man can imagine, what ſtrange mouthes and faces he made? How hee hang'd downe his head, fixing his eyes on the ground, then lifting it vp againe, turne vp the white of his eyes towards heauen, not out of any deſire that he had to bleſſe him, that had made him to ſhine and glitter thus gloriouſly, but to curſe my mothers wombe, for bringing forth ſuch a *Picaro*, ſuch a baſe raſcall, and arrant theefe as I was. In this pickle I left them, and ſo we parted. A man might then haue ſaid that of them, which one blinde man ſaid to another in *Toledo*, who being to part companie, and to goe each to his owne houſe, when they tooke their leaues, ſaid each to other; Good night (Goſſip) till we ſee one another againe.

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *ſayling toward* Spaine, Sayavedra *by reaſon of a great ſtorme, growes Sea-ſicke. He falls into a Calenture, or burning feuer. He waxes light-headed, and loſeth his wits. He cryes out, that he is* Guzman de Alfarache, *and growing mad, throwes himſelfe into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

WE had ſuch faire weather when we ſet forth of *Genoa*, that the Tueſday following, by Sunne-riſing, we had (as I told you before) doubled the Cape of *Noli*. And till we came to the [a] *Pomas de Marſella*, we had as fauourable and proſperous a winde, as we could wiſh. There did we expect that the winde ſhould ſtill blow faire, hauing all this while ſhow'd it ſelfe ſo friendly and louing vnto vs. For we had a freſh gale from the Eaſt, which holpe vs ſo well, that the next day towards the Euening, we diſcouered, to our generall ioy, the coaſt of *Spaine*. But fortune, hauing not the ſtrength to ſtand firme, nor being alwayes one and the ſame; but weake and various, began to manifeſt vnto vs the ſmall confidence that we ought to haue of her; whereof, too ſoone to our great hurt, we had ſufficient tryall. And now, hearing the Mariners call one to another in thoſe termes and language, which is vſuall with them in ſuch caſes, Heauen was couered all ouer towards the North-weſt, with darke and thicke clouds, which guttered downe vpon vs huge and great drops of raine. Our good winde had bid vs farewell, and our hearts began to be ſo ſad, and ſo heauy, as if all that ſame darkſome blacknеſſe had quite ouer-caſt them, ſuch a cloud of ſorrow, had like a curtaine, ouer-ſpred thoſe late lightſome faculties of our ſoules. Which being foreſeene by the Pilots, and thoſe other watry-Counſellors at Sea, they held a Councell in the poope, debating to and fro, what courſe was fitteſt to be taken, to preuent ſuch fearefull threatnings. Euery one ſpake his opinion, deliuering what he in his iudgement deemed beſt to be done. But ſeeing the winde begin to lay luſtily about him, bearing his brazen wings againſt our woodden ſides, and his forces increaſing more and more, without any other reſolution, before their conſultation could come to a concluſion, they were inſtantly, without any more adoe, inforced to let fall their maine ſayle, which when they had ruffled, and laid as low as the decke would giue them leaue, they tooke out another leſſer one, which they call *Marabuto*, (as they doe the other, *la Borda*) which is a kinde of triangulary ſayle, cut out into three corners, after the manner of a womans kerchiefe; (This they call *la Latina*) and this they ſet vp about the middle of the maſte, which ſtood at the end of the laſt banke of oares, fitting them-ſelues afterwards with thoſe other things, that were needfull on ſuch an occaſion. They faſtned their oares to the vpper deck: The paſſengers, and their ſouldiers, they commanded (ſore againſt

[a] *The word* poma, *is vſed for a womans paps or dugs, and by way of ſimilitude may be taken for ſome Promontorie ietting out into the Sea, reſembling the forme and faſhion of a womans breſts. If I miſſe of my ayme, I leaue it to thoſe that haue beene in thoſe parts to determine the true ſignification thereof.*

againſt their wills) to keepe themſelues vnder hatches: They fell a caulking of the Galley, from the prowe to the poope, nor were they wanting in any one of thoſe diligences, that were neceſſarie for the ſauing of our lifes.

Whileſt they were thus buſie, the night grew on, and a pitchy darkneſſe had (like a pauillion) pitched it ſelfe round about vs, all was clouds, Ægyptian clouds, blacke and darke as Hell; ſo that hauing loſt the comfort of the light, we loſt likewiſe with it all hope of ſafetie; eſpecially when we ſaw that the ſtorme was no whit allayd, but rather more and more increaſed vpon vs. Wherefore for the better auoyding of ſo many dangers, whereinto by reaſon of this tempeſt, they were like to runne, they gaue preſent order to hang out the lanterne, that they might the better ſee what they did. The Sea, now began to ſwell, and lifted one while its waues as high as heauen, and by and by againe, abaſing that their pride, they tumbled downe ſo low, that they opened the boſome of the Sea ſo wide, that you might ſee the ſand that lay in the bottome. They were faine to appoint another to aſſiſt at the helme, that was an expert Pilot indeed, and knew how to guide the Rudder to a haire. The Maſters-mate they cauſed to be tyde faſt in a chayre to the poſt neere vnto the poope, as being reſolued either to dye in that place without remouing from thence, or to keepe the Galley aliue, and ſet her in ſafetie.

Whileſt this skilfull Mariner was labouring to put this his deliberation in execution, we often demanded of him, if we were in any great danger; and much more often then he was willing to heare. See how blind-ſighted wee were, that we would rather giue credit to that which had proceeded from his mouth, then that which we ſaw with our owne eyes, which repreſented nothing but death vnto vs. But his lying tongue, ſeemed to afford vs like comfort, as doth that of the Phyſitian to the ſorrowfull and afflicted father, who queſtions him touching the health, and life of his ſonne, and whether he be likely to dye of this diſeaſe, or whether he be dead already: Who tells him, That (God be thanked) he is on the mending hand. In like manner, the Maſters-mate, making anſwer vnto vs, for to cheere vs vp, and to put vs in heart, would bawle out aloud vnto vs, *Que todo era nada.* Tuſh, all this was nothing. And therefore be of good comfort (my Hearts.) And indeed, in telling vs ſo, he told vs but the truth. For all this was nothing, to that which came after. For the winde had torne our ſayles to fitters, there was not one whole peece, all was rents, and rags, and it grew higher and higher ſtill, ſo that we were forced to clap on our *Treo*, which is a kinde of round ſayle, which they make vſe of in ſtormes. Fortunes hand did not yet grow weary with whipping vs; but as if ſhee had not puniſht vs ſufficiently already, it was our hap to haue an ill guided Galley to fall foule vpon vs, which ſtriking vs with her prowe on the poope, made her ducke her head into the Sea, and had well-nigh ouer-turn'd her; and to make this encounter the more vnlucky, the blow, and the loſſe of our Rudder (whereon did depend the hope of our ſafetie) hapned both at one and the ſame inſtant. Wherefore ſeeing our ſelues now depriued both of our hope, and helme, wanting a Rudder wherewith to ſteare, yeelding our ſelues to the mercy of the Seas, as men deſpayring of any remedie to repayre this loſſe, yet that they might not deſiſt to vſe all the meanes they could, which they thought might make beſt for our good, (making a vertue of neceſſitie) they made as good ſhift as they could, by clapping a couple of oares in the place, guiding therewith the Galley (beſides the danger) with a great deale of toyle, and labour.

And how ſhall I here be able to expreſſe but the halfe, nay the leaſt part of that vnto you, which theſe eyes ſaw, and theſe eares heard? I doe not know the tongue that can ſpeake it. But ſay I ſhould light on ſuch a tongue; yet, I am ſure, I ſhall hardly meet with thoſe men that will beleeue it. O, how many vowes did they then make! How many Inuocations to Saints, euery one calling

calling on that, which was the greateſt and famouſeſt in his owne Countrey? What various deuotions, what a generall recourſe to their prayers? And ſome were ſo childiſh and ſo fooliſh, that you ſhould heare no other word come from them, but, O my mother, ô ſweet mother! How many abuſes, and how many abſurdities, were committed amongſt them! Confeſſing themſelues one to another, as if they could be their ghoſtly fathers, and had power to abſolue them. Others in a loud voyce made confeſſion of thoſe ſinnes vnto God, wherein they had offended him; and as if they thought that God were deafe and thicke of hearing, they would ſtretch out their throats as high as heauen, perſwading themſelues perhaps, by the force of this their breath, to ſend their ſoules packing in that very inſtant vp vnto heauen.

In this deſperate, and wofull manner, did our poore weather-beaten Galley endure this miſery, together with thoſe that were in her, till the next day following, when as with the brightneſſe of the Sunne, and the clearing of the skie, we began to recouer breath, ſo that now all was ioy, and our ſorrow was turned into mirth, cheering, and hartning vp one another. Certainly, it cannot be denyed, That of all thoſe dangers, that attend vpon death, that is alwayes moſt feared, which is ſtill neereſt vnto vs. For from thoſe other, wee thinke we may well ſcape. But I did not ſo much feare this ſtorme, nor ſo ſenſibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I ſtood in feare by a contrary winde, and the new rigging vp of our Galley, to be carryed backe againe to *Genoa*. It was not the Sea, but the ſhame, that wrought vpon me. This was it, that made me to ſay to my ſelfe, when I ſaw how the winds blew, and the Seas raged, that all the reſt did fare the worſe for my ſake, and that I was that *Ionas*, for whom this tempeſt was rais'd, that it might raiſe me vp to repentance.

Sayavedra *falls ſicke of a feuer, and runs mad.*

Sayavedra became ſo Sea-ſicke, that he fell into a ſhrewd burning feuer, and ſhortly after grew beſides himſelfe. It would haue grieu'd a mans heart, and moued much compaſſion, to ſee the things that he did, and the fooleries which he vttered; and ſometimes, when the ſtorme was greateſt, and the danger moſt, while others were a confeſſing their ſinnes, he would cry out in a loud voyce; I am *Guzman de Alfaraches* ghoſt, I am that ghoſt of his, which goes thus wandring vp and downe the world; whereat he made me often both laugh, and feare. But though he ſhould haue vented ſome thing vnhappily, they all ſaw that he was mad, and ſo regarded not what he ſaid. Yet for all this, he would not leaue his talking, but by flaſhes would fall a ripping vp of my life, and bolte out by fits, all that which I had formerly recounted vnto him concerning the courſes I had taken, compoſing a thouſand extrauagancies. And if by chance he heard any man talke of promiſing to performe a pilgrimage to *Monſerrate*, thither would he leade me; telling, at what ſtations, and weddings he had beene there with me. He did dreſſe me (like a French Cooke) a thouſand ſeuerall wayes. But that which was moſt to be laughed at, (though it much pitied mee to ſee him in that ſtate) and wherein I tooke moſt pleaſure, was; That he ſpake all theſe things of himſelfe, as if he had beene true *Guzman* indeed.

In briefe, we being all ſhrewdly beaten, and growne extreame weary with our late ſtorme, the night following we went in a good houre to take our reſt, to ſee if we could recouer that old debt of our former loſt ſleepe. We were all of vs ſo weary, and ſo drowſie, and our Galley ſo batterd, and torne about the poope, that *Sayavedra* riſing vp in his franticke fit, lept at that open place where our rudder was ſplit from vs, into the Sea, on whom we could neuer after ſet eye; though the Mariner that kept watch, as ſoone as he heard the flownce of the fall, preſently cryde out, *Hombre a la mar*; There is ſome bodie fallen into the water. Whereupon we began preſently to coniecture, that it muſt needs be he; and vpon inquiry finding him wanting, we ſought to recouer him, but it would not be. And ſo poore *Sayavedra* was buried in the Sea; all

Sayavedra *drownes himſelfe.*

of them much lamenting his misfortune, and seeking all that they could, to comfort me. I made show, as if I had beene exceeding sorry for him, but God he knowes how true it was. The next day I got me vp betimes in the morning, which I wholly spent in receiuing the condolings, which they made vnto me, which were done in that dolefull fashion, as if he had beene a brother, a kinsman, or the neereſt and deareſt friend that I had in the world, bewayling the great losse that I had sustained in him; or as if, when he threw himselfe into the Sea, he had carryed away my trunkes likewise with him. God blesse me from that mischance (said I to my selfe) as for any other misfortune, I doubt not but I shall very easily ouer-passe it. They knew not how (more then this) to comfort me, nor what they should entertaine me withall to diuert my griefe; for they did verily beleeue, that I was wonderfull sorry for him, because I had put on a seeming heauinesse. And the more they sought to bring me out of it, the more I feigned to be in it; at last they called to one that had beene condemned to the Galleys, who was very studious, and a great louer of curiosities, that he should come where I was, and bring a certaine booke along with him, which he had written with his owne hand, which the Captaine taking from him, and turning ouer the leafes in a careleſse kinde of fashion, he lighted by chance vpon a notable storie which hapned in *Sevill*; and returning backe the booke to the owner, he will'd him to reade it vnto me. He thereupon required their attention; which being granted vnto him, he began to reade as followeth; recommending it first vnto them, as well for its strangeneſse, as its truth.

A true and strange storie of a merchant in Sevill.

There was in *Sevill* (the famouseſt Citie in all *Spaine*, and the Metropolis of *Andaluzia*) a Merchant that was a stranger, well borne, rich, and honeſt, whose name was *Miçer Iacobo*. He had two sons, and one daughter by a noble Gentlewoman of that Citie. They being carefully trayned vp in vertue, in good manners, and in all kinde of learning appertayning to the liberall Arts: And shee bred vp to her needle, wherein for curious workmanship, shee did excell, (all the Gentlewomen in those parts, being meere bunglers vnto her.) And there was some reason, why shee should be so exquisite, and singular therein, for that from her childhood, shee had beene bred vp in a Monasterie of Nunnes, by reason that her mother dyde in child-bed, when shee was borne.

Now in regard that the goods of fortune, are mutable and vncertaine, and more in Merchants then other men, who carry their wealth in other mens purses, and commit their estates to the disposition of the winde and the weather, there being not halfe a foot difference betwixt their making and their marring, their inriching or vndoing. It so fell out, that his two sonnes returning home from the *Indies*, and bringing along with them good store of gold and siluer, when they were now come within sight of the barre of *San Lucar*, and thinking themselues as safe, as if they had beene (as they say) within the doores of their owne house, there ariseth a huge storme on the sodaine, and the Sea inraged with the boysterous blustrings of the windes, begins to swell, and looke big vpon them with its billowes; insomuch, that this poore vnfortunate ship, set vpon by two such fierce and cruell enemies, was miserably tossed to and fro, and so violently carryed out of its course, that at last vnable any longer to resist the rage of this terrible tempest, shee desperately ranne her selfe vpon a rocke, the terriblenesse of which blow, did not only open her wombe, and cleaue it cleane in the midst, but did split all the ribs of her in a thousand peeces; so that both men and goods were all cast away, and vtterly lost, and neuer after either seene, or heard of.

When the heauy newes of so great a losse (whose nimblenesse lyes onely in its wing) came flying to the fathers eare, such a deepe melancholy sodainely seazed on all his vitall parts, that with the griefe thereof, within a few dayes after, he also dyed. His daughter that remained in the Couent, hauing lost all her wealth, her father, her mother, & both her brothers, remaining thus abandoned,

doned, and left to ſhift for her ſelfe, was wonderfully ſenſible of this her wofull eſtate (which might likewiſe haue much troubled any man whatſoeuer, though neuer ſo wiſe) when ſhe ſaw, that in ſo ſhort a time, which might in a manner runne in the reckoning (as it were) of one day, ſhee had loſt ſo many reall comforts, and with them, that hope of remedie to allay her miſeries, (for ſhee much deſired to become a Nunne) ſhee wept ſo bitterly, and tooke on ſo pittifully, that it would haue grieued any mans heart, to ſee the ſorrowfull lamentation that ſhee made. Here ceaſed her deſignes, and here began her ſorrowes; Here ceaſed her plenty, and here began her want; Here ceaſed her [b] *regalos*, and here began her troubles. Which went daily ſo increaſing vpon her, that ſhee knew not in the world what to doe, nor how to be able to maintaine herſelfe in the Nunnerie. And albeit all the Nunnes there wiſht her exceeding well, and bare her great loue and affection for the nobleneſſe of her condition and qualitie, her affabilitie, ciuilitie, goodneſſe of nature, ſweetneſſe of behauiour, and other commendable parts, condoling very much this her preſent neceſſitie, and pouertie; and were very deſirous that ſhee ſhould continue ſtill amongſt them, yet could they not poſſibly bring it to paſſe. For their wills being ſubordinate to that of their Superiour, it being in their Prelates, and not their owne choice, neither could they effect what they deſired, nor ſhee continue any longer amongſt them. For very ſhortly after it was notified vnto her, that ſhe ſhould either leaue the houſe, or if ſhe had a minde to ſtay, forthwith to aſſigne her dowry. But ſhee not being able (for want of meanes) to cumply with the ſecond condition, ſhee was forc't to entertaine the former. This poore diſtreſſed maid was ſo cunning at her needle, and had ſuch a curious hand in all kinde of workes, white or blacke, in ſilke or gold, and in ordering her colours, to giue true life and perfection to whatſoeuer ſhee tooke in hand, that the fame thereof was ſpred ouer all the Citie.

[b] Regalo, *is a word of a large extent, and ſignifies any thing that may giue a woman content, be it in meat, drinke, cloathes, ſports, or whatſoeuer elſe that may delight her.*

To this ſumme, I muſt adde the vertues of her ſoule, and the beauty of her face, both which were in that height of excellencie, (the parts of her bodie, being anſwerable to thoſe of her minde) that he that had but once ſeene her, would verily haue thought, nay almoſt ſworne, that two moſt cunning and exquiſite Artizans, had in emulation one to the other, ſpent all their ſpirits, and imployde the vtmoſt of their skill, in framing ſuch a ſingular creature as ſhee was, being ſuch a perfect peece of beauty, and goodneſſe, that ſhee might draw off the beholders eyes from all other obiects (though not vnworthy the looking on) and attract them to her ſelfe. Yet all this put together, being in that (if the word doe not exceed) exceſſe, was nothing, being compared with her retiredneſſe of life, her mortification of the fleſh, her faſts, prayers, and penance. Shee, not vnwitting, that ſhee was now thruſt out into the wide world, that ſhee had no more any Nunnerie to ſhelter, but lay open to the venues of Fortune, if ſhee did not the better ſtand vpon her guard, fearing the worlds murmuring, and thoſe occaſions, which might bring ſome ſcandall vpon her reputation, as one that was wonderfull tender and iealous of her honour, ſhee had got her a lodging, where ſhee had the companie of diuers other vertuous and religious young maydens; and there, without any ſuſpition, or leaſt ſhadow of any ill intention, hauing no other helpe or meanes to liue, ſaue the ſweat of her browes, and the labour of her fingers ends, ſhee liu'd there very frugally, keeping her-ſelfe within her bounds, and giuing a good example of her vertue to all the young damoſels of her time.

The Archbiſhop of that Citie, had a great deſire to haue ſome curioſities made for him, as certaine wrought Chalice-cloathes, [c] neat towels, handſome napkins, dainty handkerchers, and the like, to wrap the Hoſte in, bordered about with ſome hiſtoricall worke, as ſhould beſt fit with the vſe whereunto they ſerued, and to haue them done as neere to the life as Art could attaine vnto. After much inquirie made, there being none to be found, that could doe

[c] *The Spaniſh word, is,* Corporales; *which though they ſignifie thoſe things that belong to the body: yet are they more ſtrictly taken for thoſe linnen cloathes which are laid vpon the Altar, whereupon in their Maſſes, they place the bodie of our Sauiour* Ieſus Chriſt *vnder the formes of bread and wine; and repreſent vntous, that* Sindone *or fine linnen ſheet, wherein they wrapt the ſacred bodie of our bleſſed Sauiour when they laid him in his ſepulchre.* Vide Stephanum Durandum de ritibus Eccleſiæ, lib. 1. c. 22.

theſe things halfe ſo well as *Dorotea* (for ſo was this Gentle-woman called) vpon the good report they had heard of her, they ſought her out, and recommended this worke vnto her care, promiſing ſhee ſhould be well paid for her paines. Shee conſidered with her-ſelfe, that for ſuch a curious peece of worke as this was to be, ſhee muſt make choyce of the beſt, the pureſt, the brighteſt, and the fineſt gold threed that ſhee could get for money, whatſoeuer it coſt. And becauſe they that know beſt how to beſtow it, know beſt how to buy it, ſhee her-ſelfe, taking ſome of her neighbours and friends along with her, went to ſeeke out this ware amongſt the Gold-beaters ſhops, who in *Sevill* both make and ſell theſe kinde of commodities. It was their hap to come to a young mans ſhop, that was a handſome fellow, and well beha'd, who had but newly ſet vp for him-ſelfe, and to get him the better cuſtome, ſtroue to haue his ſhop well furniſht, and indeed, had better and more choyce then the reſt of his neighbours, that traded in that kinde. Of this youg man, ſhee was willing to buy all the gold, that ſhee had occaſion to vſe about this worke (as well becauſe ſhee found it was fit for her turne, as likewiſe to excuſe her-ſelfe a labour of going too oft out of doores) if ſhee had had ſo much money, as would haue done the deed: but hauing no more ſtore, then that little which they had giuen her to begin the worke withall, ſhee told the Maſter of the ſhop, that ſhee would beſtow a little money with him now, but ſhee would come againe for more, as her worke went on, and her moneys came in. This young Occupyer, when he had beheld the beauty, and compoſed countenance of this young mayden, and had well obſerued her manner of ſpeech, her honeſt cariage, and modeſt behauiour, he fell into that good liking of her, and was ſo farre in loue with her, that the leaſt that he could haue found in his heart to haue giuen her, was all the gold that ſhee had occaſion to vſe, which was no great matter, being that at that very inſtant, he had deliuered vp his ſoule vnto her. And perceiuing, that ſhee forbore to buy ſo much, as otherwiſe ſhee would willingly haue done, for that ſhee wanted money, embracing the occaſion, which he had now in his hands, not ſo much to gaine her farther cuſtome, as to expreſſe the affection that he bare vnto her, and to draw her into a good opinion of him, not ſuffering her to part vpon thoſe termes, he ſaid vnto her; Miſtreſſe, if the gold be good, and ſuch as you looke after, and that it be for your turne, picke and chooſe where you like, and carry away with you as much as you haue vſe for, or what you pleaſe, and pay me now what you can well ſpare, as for the reſt you ſhall pay me by little and little, as you ſhall receiue it from their hands that ſet you a worke. The young man ſeemed to them all, to be very kinde and courteous, and for the ware, they could finde no fault with it, being as good, as them-ſelues could wiſh or deſire. *Dorotea* made him preſent payment of as much as ſhee had, and hauing made choyce of as much gold, as ſhee thought good and needfull for her, ſhee carried it away with her, leauing with him the name of the ſtreet, whither he ſhould either come or ſend for that which was remayning behinde. That done, they preſently went their way, the poore young man being ſo loue-ſtrucken after their departure, and ſo pitifully wounded with this amorous arrow, that he was as farre from him-ſelfe, as from all reſt, being toſſed to and fro with various thoughts, hauing his braines beaten with many troubleſome and vnquiet imaginations. Loue had almoſt burſt the very heart of him; He did neither eat, nor drinke, nor any thing elſe, that might ſeeme to beare the name of life: ſo altogether was his ſoule occupied in the contemplation of that rare and incomparable beauty, and that mirrour of all vertue, that this his troubleſome life, was to him as bad as death, not knowing in the world what to doe. At laſt, it ſeeming vnto him, that ſhee was a poore young mayden, and that by meanes of mariage, his chaſte deſires might arriue in the end to ſome happy port, hee reſolued to informe him-ſelfe what ſhee was, as alſo of what life, behauiour, and birth.

The

The reports which were giuen of her, were ſuch, that hee was now more perplexed, and leſſe confident then before. Deſpairing in a manner with him-ſelfe, that he ſhould euer be able to enioy ſo rich a iewell, holding him-ſelfe ſtill more and more vnworthy of ſo great a happineſſe, as to obtaine her to bee his Spouſe. Hee was now quite out of heart, as knowing him-ſelfe too meane for her worth: But becauſe it was not poſſible for him now to goe backe, nor did it lye in his hands (if he would) to haue done it; and for that the paſſions of the ſoule, are no leſſe preualent in the poore, then the powerfull, and that all are all alike ſubiect thereunto, and equally affected with them; howbeit he found him-ſelfe caſt ſo farre behind-hand, yet did hee neuer leaue ſtriuing to trie if he could get before, perſeuering ſtill in his honeſt purpoſe, for that hee put him-ſelfe into Gods hands, who doth alwayes fauour our good intentions, and knowes how to accommodate thoſe things, that tend to his ſeruice, according to his diuine will and pleaſure; preſenting euermore in his prayers and ſupplications vnto him, that his deſire was no other, then to get him a companion, with whom he might be the better inabled to ſerue him, and more particularly, that he might be linked in lawfull mariage vvith this ſo vertuous a creature, and one that vvas ſo much to his hearts-liking and content; yet not that his, but Gods vvill ſhould be done, where-unto he ſhould moſt vvillingly ſubmit him-ſelfe, and that he ſhould ſo farre grant his requeſt (and no farther) as it ſhould ſeeme beſt to his Maieſtie, and make moſt for his ſeruice.

He went likewiſe diſcourſing with him-ſelfe; and amongſt many other, this one preſented it ſelfe to his imagination; That peraduenture her great pouerty, her wary diſcretion, and vigilant fore-ſight, would force her thereunto, conſidering the ſolitary kind of life ſhe now led, and the remedy thereof, and laying aſide thoſe vaine points of honour, not meaſuring her ſelfe by what ſhee was, but what ſhe is, ſhe would happely accommodate her ſelfe to the condition of her preſent fortune; and that, when his honeſt deſire to ſerue her, ſhould bee truly repreſented vnto her, ſhe may chance to yeeld to my faire requeſt. Intertaining him-ſelfe with theſe thoughts & cares, he was minded to call vpon her for the money which ſhe ought him, but not with purpoſe to preſſe her therewith, nor to be troubleſome therein vnto her, but taking occaſion rather one while to ſee this her curious worke, another while, that paſſing that way, hee was of purpoſe come thither to know whether ſhe needed any more gold, and if ſhe did, that ſhe ſhould not want it, whileſt he had any that was fit for her; & ſo fetching many a walke thither, excuſing him-ſelfe in the beſt manner that he could, and as he thought would make moſt for the performing of theſe his frequent viſites, and the procuring of her good will and acquaintance, for that time he pretended nothing elſe; to the end, that this being firſt obtained, he might the better play his game hereafter, and in the interim mitigate ſome part of that ſorrow which her abſence did continually torment him withall. In this, the young man ſhew'd him-ſelfe as diſcreet, as ſolicitous; and as ſolicitous, as truly louing. Going on in thoſe good and honeſt tearmes, that in a ſhort time he gained the good wills of all thoſe that conuerſed and were companions to *Dorotea*. Being ſo farre from diſliking his often viſites, that they rather receiu'd them as fauours and courteſies. Amongſt the reſt, that liu'd there together, there were foure Siſters, to one of which, as being the graueſt and reuerendeſt of the company, they did all ſhew a kinde of reſpect, as well for her temper and wiſedome, as alſo for her priority of yeeres. With this graue Matron, our young man ſeekes to enter into a ſtricter kind of friendſhip, by reuerencing her, and obſeruing her, and by preſenting her with ſome ſuch tokens and remembrances, as might ſute beſt with the reſpect (more then loue) that he bare vnto her. So that in the end, time bringing forth occaſion, by degrees he diſcouered him-ſelfe vnto her, making her acquainted with his deſires, not omitting any thing that might make her fully to vnderſtand the

greatneſſe of his affection, and the fairneſſe of his pretenſion. Earneſtly intreating her withall, that by interpoſing her power and authority, ſhe would be a meanes, that his hopes ſhould not returne home empty, and vnrewarded, her worth, and wiſedome, putting him in good aſſurance of the contrary. And that therefore ſhe would be pleaſed to continue her good fauour towards him; and as occaſion ſhould offer, that ſhe ſhould goe working and diſpoſing this peece of waxe, to receiue the impreſſion of his affection; leauing it to her, to imprint it in her to the life, that ſeeing the trueneſſe of the ſtampe, ſhee might be the ſooner molded to entertaine the motion: But in caſe ſhee ſhould not finde her plyable, but tough and hard to be wrought vpon, ſhee would ſeeke to mollifie her by her meeke and gentle perſwaſions, and remoue all thoſe difficulties, which on her part might be a hinderance to theſe his honeſt deſires; for on his part, he vow'd and proteſted vnto her, that nothing ſhould be able to croſſe it, but that with open armes he would runne to embrace her, ſubmitting himſelfe to be in all things ordered, if not ouer-ruled by them. Good meanes, ſeconded by good intentions, and which, without any humane reſpects, treat of honeſt things (carrying a ſound heart in their breaſts, and a true tongue in their heads) haue alwayes ſuch force and power with them, that they eaſily perſwade, becauſe truly beleeu'd.

This Gentle-woman, ſo wrought with *Dorotea*, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that, now vſing t'one, then t'other meanes, till at laſt, ſhee brought the buſineſſe ſo about, that ſhee being conuinced by reaſon, began to yeeld to her perſwaſions, and to condeſcend to the motion that ſhee made vnto her; and obeying her in all things, as if ſhee had beene her owne naturall mother, ſhee kiſt her hands, in acknowledgment of her thankfulneſſe, putting her-ſelfe wholly into her hands. In concluſion, the match was made vp betweene them to both their good likings, but more eſpecially on *Boniſacio* his part (for ſo was her husband called) for that he was fully perſwaded, that in meeting with this iewell, no man was more happy, more fortunate, and more rich then himſelfe; hauing now got him ſuch a wife, as his owne heart could not haue wiſht a better, being greater in her condition and qualitie, then he deſerued, and ſuch a good creature beſides, that he could leade a ſecure and honeſt courſe of life with her, without feare or trouble of any ielious thoughts, nor of any other thing that might cauſe his diſquiet. They liued very contentedly together, making exceeding much of each other, and wonderfully well ſatisfied of that chaſte and true loue, which they bare one to another. He did ordinarily attend his ſhop, buſying himſelfe (for both their benefits) in the exerciſe of his Trade, and ſhee abiding aboue in her chamber, either playing the good huſwife, in thoſe things that appertained to the good gouernment of the houſe; or following her needle, ſpending part of that gold threed which her husband ſold, in working goodly borders, garniſhing them with curious flowers in their true and naturall colours, and other the like neat and dainty peeces, wherein ſhee did excell. Their gaines were great, and to make this their happineſſe the fuller, there was that conformitie in their loue, and ſuch an equall retribution in their affections, that no two in the world could liue more honeſtly, and more louingly together then they did.

But the Deuill, who is ſtill waking, and neuer ſleeps, but ſtill watches moſt how he may breake the bond of peace, and breed brawles in loue, againſt this louing Couple, theſe who agreed ſo well together, that there was neuer yet any the leaſt difference betweene them, prepares his pit-falls, ſets vp his traps, and ſpreads his nets with all ſecrecie, and all the skill and cunning he could deuiſe, to doe them all the miſchiefe he could, and if it were poſſible, to throw this vniforme frame, and ſtrong peece of building to the ground. He followed this poore ſoule cloſe at the heeles, watching aduantage how he might trip her vp, and ouerthrow her, and in caſe he could not doe that, yet at leaſt to giue her

her a foyle, or make her to ſtumble. Inſomuch, that at her Viſites, when ſhee was at Maſſe, or at Sermon, yea in her greateſt deuotion, when ſhee was receiuing the Sacrament, he did ſtill ſeeke to trouble her, preſenting her with the inſtruments of his malice and wickednesſe, young Gallants, diſcreet in their cariage, neat in their cloathes, and ſweet in their perfumes, who fell a courting her, when ſhee came forth, following and ſoliciting her whither-ſoeuer ſhee went: but all theſe tricks would not ſerue the Deuils turne, he did not reape the fruit he hoped for; for this chaſte woman, ſtanding ſtiffely to her tackling, and giuing her enemie no ground, did euermore with-ſtand theſe lightneſſes, by oppoſing againſt them a conſtant chaſte minde, and a ſetled, and well reſolued honeſtie. And howbeit, for to auoyd all occaſion, ſhee did forbeare, as much as ſhee poſſibly could to goe abroad, and when ſhee did, it was very ſeldome, and when ſhee was of neceſſitie inforced thereunto, at which time ſhee was likewiſe haunted and perſecuted by them. They did round her doore night and day, they ſought inuentions, and vſed all the meanes that might be for to ſee her; neither did this alſo profit them any thing.

Amongſt thoſe Gallants, that deſired to ſerue her (for all of them were young Gentle-men, of very good faſhion, and the chiefeſt in *Sevill*) there was one, that was [d] *Teniente* of the Towne, a young man, vnmarried, and rich. This Gentle-man liu'd right againſt the houſe where ſhee dwelt, where hee had very faire and goodly roomes, being eſpeciall and principall lodgings, and of ſo many ſtories high, and thoſe goodly open galleries, that they did ouer-top and looke into thoſe lower ones of *Dorotea*, notwithſtanding that they were diſtanced by a whole ſtreet, that interpoſed it ſelfe betweene their houſes. So that from his Turrets, his Terraces, and his high windowes, he might ouer-looke her, and ſee what ſhee did; and that ſo plainly, that neither her husband, nor her-ſelfe, could ſcarce riſe vp in the morning to make them ready, or at night get them to bed, without being ſeene and eſpyed by him; eſpecially they being careleſſe, and heeding no ſuch matter, and the other with extraordinarie diligence, watching and prying what they did. This *Teniente* then, making vſe of this occaſion, with all carefulneſſe and vigilancie, accompanied with inſupportable paſſions, and ſorrowes, did labour (as if his life had layen vpon it) how he might come to haue ſome ſpeech with her, or receiue any fauour from her hands. But finding in the end, that he loſt his labour, and ſpent his time in vaine, he was forced, as the reſt of his fellowes were, to giue ouer his [e] ſuite, ſet vp his reſt, and turne backe the ſame way he came, without obtayning any the leaſt looke, or fauour from her, not being able to perceiue in her any ſhadow of hope, that either now or hereafter (though neuer ſo ſmall) ſhee was likely to graunt him. For this chaſte woman did liue in that ſober and diſcreet faſhion, and did ſo well and wiſely gouerne her-ſelfe, that ſhee put him quite off from any ſuſpition, which might incourage him to pretend any kindneſſe from her, or but waſh off one haires bredth of gold from this good creatures credit; though it is not to be doubted, he vſed all the Art he could, to haue made her ſome few graines lighter then ſhee was.

There went likewiſe along in the ſame dance with the reſt, another Penitentiarie, that was of the ſame brotherhood and companie of theſe fooliſh [f] *Diſciplinantes*, and ſelfe-afflicting louers. This was a Gentleman of *Burgos*, gallant, young, diſcreet, and rich. Which good parts, fauoured by his franke, and bountifull diſpoſition, might (a man would haue thought) haue digg'd downe mountaines, and laid them leuell with the loweſt earth. But the chaſte *Dorotea*, neither by this Gentlemans good parts, nor the *Teniente's* great power, nor all the paſſions of other her Louers, could be moued one iot from her honourable reſolution, not hauing any ſenſe or feeling thereof in the world, as if ſhee had beene no woman of this world, or had minded any ſuch matter. Againſt all theſe aſſaults, ſhee ſhow'd her-ſelfe a ſtrong Tower, an inexpugnable rocke, againſt

[d] Teniente, *is one that is ſubſtitute to another in an Office. A Lieutenant.* A tenendo. *As hauing the charge and keeping of ſome Forts or Caſtle, which he faithfully keeps and maintaines.* Covarr. verb. Teniente.

[e] *The Spaniſh word is*; Bolver al pueſto con la caña. *To pitch downe his ſtandard. To proceed no farther.*

[f] Diſciplinantes, *are they that laſh themſelues to doe penance.*

againſt which the continuall beatings of thoſe furious waues of their raging luſt and froathy appetite (not being able to preuaile) were broken and daſht in peeces. And it is not to be doubted, but that her honeſtie, continually keeping watch, like the Crane, that with the ſtone of Gods loue, raiſing her-ſelfe from the ground, and her foot ſtanding faſt and firme on the ſteedy affection that ſhee bare to her husband, did free her from theſe birds of rapine, theſe Eagles of *Caucaſus*, that ſought to make a prey of her. And it had beene impoſſible to haue wounded either her, or her honeſtie, if the cunning and crafty Fowler had not ſpred his net, couering and ſhadowing it ouer with the greene graſſe of holineſſe, and ſimulated ſanctitie, to intrap this ſimple, harmeleſſe, and innocent Doue. This *Burgaleſe* (whoſe name was *Claudio*) had to his ſeruant a dainty fine ſhee-ſlaue, not ſwarfe and tawney (as others commonly be) but faire and well-fauour'd, of a good preſence, a good garbe, and gracefull behauiour, borne in *Spaine* of a Mooriſh ſlaue of *Barbary*. Shee was ſo cunning, ſo ſubtle, ſo nimble witted, ſo dextrous in her tricks and deuices, ſuch a worker of her-ſelfe into all folkes loues and affections (were it for her owne ends, or others) ſo curious in viſiting Church-yards, ſo charitable in accompanying thoſe that were to be hang'd, that ſhee was able to make § water-creſſes to grow on the top of a bed. Shee was ſuch a one, as for ſuch like affaires, her fellow was not to be found. Her Maſter one day call'd her vnto him, and giuing her account of this his Loue-torment, he craued her counſell, how he might come to compaſſe his pretenſion. This his good ſlaue, after that ſhee had beene well informed of the buſineſſe, and knew how the caſe ſtood with him, as if ſhee had beene in ieſt, ſmilingly ſaid vnto him; Why how now (my good Maſter) what mountaines haue you to remoue? What Seas to dry vp? What dead to raiſe vnto life? What great difficultie is there in that which doth thus afflict thee? Or why doeſt thou ſo indeare it vnto me? Sir, Are not theſe things that I am well ſeene in? Little oyle, and leſſe labour, will ſerue to bring this wheele about, then thou thinkſt for. Thou mayeſt now make reckoning that ſhee is thine owne, and that thou haſt her already in thy hands. Let not this therefore trouble thee any farther, but be of good cheere, and plucke vp thy heart; for within theſe few dayes, I will deliuer this Hare into thy lap. And if I doe not, let me loſe my name for euer, and call me no more *Sabina*, the daughter of *Haja*. From that time forward, ſhee tooke this buſineſſe to taske, and began from that very inſtant, like a cunning Cheſſe-player, ſo to order and marſhall her men, deſigning with her-ſelfe how to make her draughts, and within how many remoues, to giue firſt the checke, and then the check-mate. Now does ſhee ſet her-ſelfe roundly to her play, and begins this her game, mouing firſt one of her pawnes, reſeruing her beſt men for the laſt puſh, if the meaner ſhould miſcarry in this battaile.

§ *When they will note out a Witch, or the ſorceries of an old Hagg, the* Spaniards *indeare it with this phraſe,* Que harà naçer berros en cima de la cama. *That they will make water-creſſes to grow on the top of a bed. that is; ſhee will do ſtrange things, or worke wonders.* Covarr. verb. Berros.

Firſt of all therefore, ſhee makes me a fine delicate little basket, of the greene ſprigs of Mirtles, Pome-citrons, & Oranges, adorning and ſetting it forth with Gilly-flowres, Gecimines, Muske-roſes, and other ſweet flowres, bound in with ſmall tender bull-ruſhes, which were compoſed and ſet together in moſt dainty and curious manner. This basket ſhee takes along with her, and beares it to the Gold-beater; Telling him, that ſhee was ſeruant to a certaine Gentlewoman that was a Nunne in that Citie, and Lady-Abbeſſe of a Couent; who hauing notice of the goodneſſe of his ware, and hauing neceſſary vſe of ſome of his beſt gold, for to flouriſh ouer certaine things, which were to ſerue for ſome ornament that were to adorne that Monaſterie againſt Midſommer day, which was a great Feſtiuall with them, ſhee had ſent him that little basket for a token, intreating him, to ſend her two pound of his pureſt and fineſt gold, that ſhee might make proofe of it, and that if it ſhould be found to be ſo good, as to her it had beene commended, and that ſhee found it fit for her purpoſe, ſhee would pay him well for it, and he ſhould from hence-forth haue her

cuſtome

cuſtome for all the gold that ſhould be ſpent in her Houſe, ſending weekly for ſo much as they had occaſion to vſe. Beſides, ſhee would be very thankfull vnto him, if he ſeru'd her well, and beſtow now and then vpon him ſuch dainties and curioſities, as thoſe religious places vſually afford. *Bonifacio* was much gladded with this new occaſion of freſh gaines, and no leſſe with his little baſket of flowres, which he made much reckoning of, being ſo neatly and artificially wrought, as indeed it was. Which he had no ſooner receiued (hauing firſt diſpatcht the ſlaue away with the gold) but he preſently carryes it vp to his wife, putting it in her lap with great ioy, which was by her with no leſſe receiued. Shee asked him, of whom hee had bought it: And then he told her all that had paſſed. Then did ſhee eſteeme it much more then before, becauſe it brought to her remembrance the time of her childhood, when with other girles of her yeeres, and the Nunnes of the Couent, ſhee did buſie her-ſelfe in the like exerciſes. Whereupon, ſhee intreated her husband, that when ſhee came to him againe, he would ſend her vp vnto her, for ſhee would gladly be acquainted with her.

The next weeke following, being ſome ſix dayes after, *Sabina* returnes very iocondly, boaſting how good the gold was, and that ſhee was come for as much more of the ſame; bringing with her a large meſſage in the behalfe of her Miſtreſſe the Lady-Abbeſſe, and preſenting him from her, with a little image of the rinde of Limmons, and a *Roſario* ſutable to the ſame, ſo curiouſly cut out, that it was well worthy much eſtimation. As ſoone as he ſaw it, he would not him-ſelfe receiue it of her, but intreated her, that ſhee with her owne hands would deliuer it to *Dorotea* his wife. Now the [h] ſop was fallen into the honey-pot. Now had ſhe what ſhe would haue. This fell out as pat for her as a pudding for a Fryars mouth. But making ſtrange of this newes, and as though ſhee had knowne no ſuch matter, ſhee ſaid vnto him. Ah, thou naughty man, doeſt thou ſpeake in earneſt? Art thou marryed indeed? I doe not beleeue it. Thou art bought and ſold with vs for a ſingle man, we tooke thee to be a Batchelour, and my Miſtreſſe talkt of marrying thee with a pretty Lay-mayden that we haue in our Houſe, as fine and as freſh as the flowres in May, and is both beautifull, and rich. *Bonifacio* replyde; I haue one already as rich and as beautifull, as you there can giue me any, and with whom I liue moſt contentedly. And if you will not beleeue me, goe vp, and ſee. *Sabina* then ſaid vnto him; In faith no, not I, you ſhall not get me vp ſtayres, I am afraid you will play the wagg with me, and that you doe but ieſt. I aſſure you, I doe not ieſt (ſaid *Bonifacio*) and therefore (friend *Sabina*) you may boldly goe vp. Vp ſhee goes, and hauing entred the roome where ſhee was, ſhee no ſooner ſaw *Dorotea*, but ſhee runnes with open armes towards her, and throwes her-ſelfe downe at her feet, making a thouſand ducks and reuerences vnto her after the *Mooriſh* faſhion, admiring much her rare and ſingular beauty, which though ſhee had heard it much ſpoken of before, yet this worke of nature, went farre beyond the words that were vttered of it. For it was ſuch an admirable peece, that report was not able to expreſſe it to the life, but muſt needs fall ſhort in the praiſing of it. But ſhee ſtood like one aſtoniſhed, when ſhee beheld the frames, and thoſe loomes of rich embroyderies, and other the like workes, wherein ſhee ſpent her time, wondring at their perfection and curioſitie, ſaying vnto her; How is it poſſible, that my Miſtreſſe ſhould not haue the happineſſe to enioy ſuch excellent good things as theſe? No, no, it ſhall not be long (by the grace of God) ere you two know one another, and be better acquainted, and enter into a ſtrict league of friendſhip. O ſweet Ieſus! When I ſhall tell my Lady-Abbeſſe, what I haue ſeene, ô how will ſhee enuie my good fortune? What a longing deſire will ſhee haue, till ſhee ſee that face of yours, and be made ſo happy as to enioy your good companie? By the life of her, that left me here behinde her, and as her ſoule is there, where thoſe eternall tapers continually burne, let the pocks conſume

Prouerbe.
[h] Cayo la ſopa en la miel.

conſume my iaw-bones, if I be not a Bawd to theſe your loues, becauſe I haue a great minde to bring you together, and that yee ſhould dearely loue each other. I will not faile hereafter to viſite you oftner, you are a pearle of that price, that I cannot chooſe but loue you, make much of you, and deſire to ſerue you. After theſe words, and many other, full of ceremony and complement, ſhe tooke her leaue, and went away with her gold. And from that time forward, euery ſecond or third day, ſhee made one errand or other thither, one while for gold; another, ſaying that ſhe paſt that way, telling *Bonifacio*, that ſhe ſhould be guilty to her ſelfe of neglect,& that ſhe ſhould commit treaſon to her owne heart, if ſhe ſhould paſſe that way, and not performe a viſit to that good Angell of his, being the onely Saint of her ſexe, to whoſe ſhrine ſhee did owe all reſpect and reuerence. At other times, ſhe would excuſe her comming, by bringing her ſome rarity or other, and whileſt ſhee was talking with her, goe diſpoſing and preparing of her, that ſhe would of her owne accord goe one day and make merry at the Monaſtery.

Now, when ſhe had moulded things to her mind, and thought that this fine peece of gold was fit for the hammering, ſhe tooke a walke thither on Munday morning, carrying along with her two pretty little baskets, the one hauing in it ſome Conſerues, and the like toyes; the other, ſome fruits of that ſeaſon, the firſt and the beſt that were to be found vpon their firſt comming. Which ſhee preſented her withall, telling her, becauſe they were fruits of their owne garden, and the firſt they had gathered, her Lady Abbeſſe thought they could not be better beſtow'd on any, then her ſelfe. And that withall ſhe had a double requeſt vnto her; The firſt, that the next inſuing Munday, being the feaſt of the glorious Saint *Iohn Baptiſt*, and the Sunday before it, their firſt *Veſpers*, ſhe would be pleaſed to doe her the fauour to ſtay thoſe two daies with her in the Monaſterie, doing penance there with her; which ſhe might the more conueniently doe, in regard that ſhe had no occaſion of buſineſſe during thoſe two Holy-dayes; and beſides, the Nunnes, after they had ended their feaſts, were amongſt them-ſelues to repreſent a Comedy; And that the Abbeſſe would take no pleaſure nor contentment in it, if ſhe would not doe her this fauour, to come and ſee it acted; and that other principall Gentle-women, that were of kinne to the Nunnes, were likewiſe to come thither, and that they ſhould goe all along together, bearing each other company: The other, that ſhe might haue three pound of her beſt and fineſt gold, to make tufts and taſſels for a rich cloath that was to be vſed before the Altar; deſiring her, if it were poſſible, that ſhee might haue the choiſeſt and the fineſt for that purpoſe, that was to be got. To this of the gold, *Dorotea* made anſwer, ſhe could, and would doe that for her with a very good will; for this (quoth ſhe) is in my power to performe; I could likewiſe be content to cumply with whatſoeuer my Lady Abbeſſe ſhall be pleaſed to command me, but this is not in mine but my husbands hands. You know (Siſter *Sabina*) that I am not Miſtreſſe of my ſelfe, I am vnder anothers command, and therefore in this, you muſt aske my good-mans leaue; it is hee that can giue you an I, or a No, whether I ſhall goe or ſtay. To whoſe will I muſt, and euer ſhall conforme my ſelfe. This were fine in good faith (ſaid then *Sabina*) if your husband ſhould deny vs ſo ſmall and ſo faire a requeſt as this? Let me neuer thriue, if I goe out of doores theſe eight daies, vnleſſe hee giue you leaue: Say your ſelfe, doth it ſtand with reaſon (to omit the mentioning of common ciuility, and good manners) that one onely requeſt which my Miſtris makes vnto you, being (beſides the firſt that euer ſhe made vnto you) ſo earneſt a one, and ſo iuſt, that you ſhould loſe all reſpect towards her perſon and her kindneſſe, as to deny her ſo ſleight a courteſie, deſiring (as ſhee doth her ſaluation) to inioy ſuch a paradiſe as your ſelfe? Fie *Sabina*, hold thy peace (ſaid *Dorotea*) be not ſo prophane, nor doe not flout your poore friend, for I am old. Old, (ſaid *Sabina*) yes, yes, you bee very old indeed; Let mee die of

your

your diſeaſe. You might as well haue told me, that the Spring is the end of the yeare, and that Lent is Chriſtmas. But let vs leaue off ieſting; As old as you are, God grant your husband may long inioy you, and giue you the fruit of his bleſſings. And therefore without any more adoe, I pray grant our requeſt; for I meane to goe away with this good bargaine, that my miſtreſſe may con me thanke for it. O how much will ſhe make of this pretty little Rogue? *Bonifacio* and *Dorotea*, fell a laughing to ſee her ſo pleaſant; while hee (with a cheerefull countenance) not ſeeing the i Snake that lay lurking in the graſſe, nor the ambuſh that was laid for him, ſuſpecting no harme, and the leſſe, in regard of the great confidence that he had in his wife, ſaid: Well followed in good faith; Now (by my life) *Sabina* hath pleaded hard in this cauſe, and hath handſomly beſtirr'd her-ſelfe; ſhee muſt not be denyed for this once, eſpecially being it is my Lady-Abbeſſes pleaſure to haue it ſo. And therefore I prithee (ſweet Heart) goe and recreate thy ſelfe there thoſe two dayes, for I know thou wilt be well pleaſed there-with, and it ſhall be no ſmall contentment to mee, becauſe it ſhall content thee. And therefore (*Sabina*) you may tell her Ladyſhip that her will ſhall be fulfill'd as well in this, as in any thing elſe, wherein I may ſerue her. And when theſe Gentle-women that you ſpeake of goe vnto the Monaſterie, I pray ſo order the matter, that they may paſſe this way, and take my wife along with them. *Sabina*, being a well-ſpoken woman, returned them thanks in excellent good language, vſing ſuch fitting phraſe as beſt ſuted with the accompliſhment of her deſire. Shee hy'de her home, ſo well contented, and ſo proud of this rich purchaſe that ſhee had made, that the ſteps ſhee ſet forward, ſeemed to goe backe againe, and that ſhe ſhould neuer come time enough to her Maſters lodging. Her heart was ready to haue burſt in her bodie, it was ſo ouer-ſwolne with ioy; and would (had it beene lawfull for her ſo to doe) haue found in her heart, to haue cryde it out at the high Croſſe. A man might haue ſeene her mirth in her lookes, her blood boyled within her, and her eyes did ſeeme to dance in her face for very ioy; you would haue thought, that through them, and her mouth, ſhee would haue vttered the cauſe of this her (more then can be expreſſed) content. When ſhee came into the houſe, no ground could hold her, ſhee fell preſently to plucking off her *chapines*, to vndoing of her mantle, flinging it with all the haſte ſhee could ouer her head, leauing it trayling at her taile, and holding vp the fore-skirts in her hands, leſt they might hinder her ſpeed, ſhee rannes mee, as faſt as her leggs would carry her (like one that had beene fraid out of her wits) into her Maſters chamber, who attended her comming. And out of meere haſte, that ſhee might tell him all at once, all hung betweene her teeth and her tongue, that ſhee was not able to ſpeake one ready word. Shee would one while be in the Actiue, another while in the Paſſiue: Well, or ill, as well as ſhee could, ſhee deliuer'd her meſſage in that manner, that thoſe eight dayes neuer had an end, ſhee in telling him of them, and he in asking her of them, a leaſt a thouſand times a-peece ouer and ouer. Euery moment they returned to treat a-new of one and the ſame thing, re-iterating the ſame, I know not how many times ouer, and fell to make Comments thereupon, diſcourſing how it could be poſſible, that this buſineſſe ſhould take effect: It ſeemed vnto them, that that whereof they talked, had fully contented them, and gone for good payment, their beleefe neuer comming to an end, neuer being able to perſwade them-ſelues, that the newes of ſo great a deſired good, could be certaine, or that euer they ſhould come to ſee ſo happy a day.

Dorotea and *Sabina*, being thus agreed vpon the point, that this buſineſſe might be the more cleanely carryed, *Claudio* tooke order, that certaine women ſhould be prouided and fitted vp, that were of his good acquaintance, and friends and well-wiſhers to his houſe, ſuch as he might ſafely communicate any ſecret

Prouerbe.
i La culebra eſta entre la yerva.

ſecret vnto, to the end, that by their good care and diligence, they might helpe to bring this his purpoſe to paſſe.

Sunday (the appointed day) being come, ſome of them, apparrelling themſelues like married wiues, others, being in the habit of maydens, and others after the faſhion of graue [k] and matron-like Gentle-women, went along with *Sabina* to goe fetch *Dorotea*. They come to her houſe, they knocke at the doore, her husband comes forth, who ſtaid at home looking for them: Who ſeeing ſuch a worthy traine of women, opinionating them to be principall perſons, preſently call'd to his wife, that ſhee ſhould make haſte, and come downe, that the companie might not ſtay for her. Downe comes *Dorotea*, no leſſe innocent, then contented. All of them did very louingly ſalute her, beſtowing many kinde words, and ceremonious complements vpon her. And her husband, hauing conſigned her ouer vnto them, they placed her in the midſt betweene them, and ſo with great ioy they ſet forward on their voyage. And as they were walking towards the Monaſterie, one of them, that had a vayle on her head, and of more reuerend aſpect and ſpeech then the reſt, makes a ſtop, and ſodainely cryes out; Ay me, forgetfull wretch that I am, how hath it ſlipt our remembrance, that we forgot to goe for '*Doña Beatriz* the new marryed Bride, who ſtayes at home expecting our comming, who alſo is inuited to the Nunnerie? Then another of them made anſwer; By the bones of my father, you ſay true. As God helpe me, I did no more thinke vpon her, then I remember the firſt [l] ſmocke that was put on my backe. We can by no meanes goe without her, we muſt needs haue her along with vs, and therefore let vs turne downe here, for it is not much out of the way, and we ſhall be there by and by. Then one of thoſe, which was to the reſt, as the bell-weather, that goes before the flocke, ruffling betweene her legs a large ſided kirtle, and hauing a *Roſario* hanging at her necke, which ſerued in ſteed of a bell, leads the way vnto them, whom all of them follow, till ſhee had brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They call'd at the doore; A ſlaue, putting her head out at the window, askes, who was there, and what they would haue. One of them made anſwer; Runne in quickly, and tell your Miſtreſſe, that ſhee would be pleaſed to make haſte, and come downe, for we ſtay here for her. Shee made as if ſhee had gone in to deliuer her the meſſage, and anon after comes forth againe with this anſwer, That her Miſtreſſe would intreat them to haue the patience to ſtay a little, till ſhee had but faſtned a pinne or two to her head-dreſſing, and had put on her mantle, which would not be long a doing, deſiring them in the meane while to come in, and reſt themſelues in the Hall. Whereupon, they entred through a faire Court into a goodly ſpatious Hall, very well furniſht, where the reſt of the women remained, onely two of them paſt forward with *Dorotea*, into a midling ſquare roome, which was hung with cloath of ſiluer, and watchet damaske, with a bed ſutable thereunto, full of imboſſed worke of gold, the chaires, and cuſhions, and carpets correſponding with the reſt. Adioyning cloſe to the bed was a curious [m] *Eſtrado*, where theſe three ſate them downe, and had ſcarce warm'd their cuſhions, when the two, that were with her, began to complaine, and cry out; Good God, what does this new Bride *Doña Beatriz* meane to make vs ſtay here ſo long? Fie, what a tedious thing is this? I care not (ſayes the one to the other) if I goe in, and ſee what ſhee is a doing, I dare pawne my life, ſhee is not yet out of her bed. I prithee, Siſter, (if thou beeſt a good wench) goe with me, that we may know, when we ſhall get hence. Which word was no ſooner ſpoken, but they both went preſently out of the roome, leauing *Dorotea* all alone. In concluſion, they were all vaniſhed, and not any body liuing to be heard about the houſe.

When all was huſh, *Claudio* comes in, and ſitting downe vpon one of the cuſhions, that was next to *Dorotea*, he began to make her many faire offers, diſcouering vnto her the plot that he had laid to get her thither, excuſing this his

k *The Spaniſh word is*, Dueña, *and ſignifieth an ancient Gentlewoman that is a widow: now taken commonly for thoſe that weare large vayles like your Nunnes, to difference them from maides. And in the Kings Court, they call thoſe* Dueñas de honor, *that are principall perſons, and become widowes, & your Queenes and great Princeſſes haue them ſtill attending vpon them.* Covarr. verb. Dueña.

Prouerbe.

l No me acordaua mas della, que de la primera camiſa, que me veſti.

m Eſtrado *is a place raiſed halfe a foot from the ground, couered ouer with carpets, where Ladies and Gentlewomen ſit vpon cuſhions, and receiue their* Viſites. Lat: Stratus, ab ſternendo: ſed potiùs à Græc. στρωτὸς. Covarr. verb. Eſtrado.

his manner of proceeding, with the great torments that for her ſake hee endured. When ſhee heard him ſpeake in this language, and now (too late) perceiued how ſhee was betrayed; poore *Dorotea* was not a little troubled; for ſhee knew him by ſight, and was not ignorant of his pretenſions. Shee ſaw her-ſelfe taken in the trap, ſhee knew not what to doe, nor how to defend her-ſelfe, and therefore began with teares and prayers, intreating him with all the Rhetoricke thoſe two good Orators could vſe, that he would not ſpot her honour, nor offer her husband that wrong, by committing ſo grieuous a ſinne, and ſo heynous an offence againſt God. But all would not ſerue the turne. To cry out, was to no purpoſe; for there was no body there to take her part. But ſay her ſhrikes might haue diſturbed *Claudio*, and haue drawne the people in the ſtreet to come in, whoſoeuer ſhould haue found her there, would queſtionleſſe haue condemned her for her comming thither, giuing no credit to this tricke that was put vpon her, though ſhee ſhould haue ſworne out her heart to the contrary. Shee defended her-ſelfe (poore ſoule) as well as ſhee could; but *Claudio* courting her one while with many faire and kinde words, and when they would not preuaile, breaking forth another while into actions of violence, with a great deale of reſiſtance, and againſt her will, he pluckt from her by force ſuch fruits as he could reach to, but not thoſe that he deſired; entertayning him-ſelfe, and tyring out her, in this his rude wreſtling with her. But in the end, when ſhee ſaw that ſhee could no longer hold out againſt him, and that her breath and ſtrength did both faile her, and that the battaile would be loſt on her ſide, *Claudio* ſtill getting more and more ground vpon her perſon, ſhee yeelded vp the Fort vnto him, for want of ſuccours in conuenient time, hauing fought it out (as they ſay) to the laſt man, and keeping out the enemie as long as ſhee could. They two, were all alone; the doore faſt lockt; the tearme long, (no leſſe then two dayes) *Claudio*, his friends about him, ſhe a lone-woman; he ſtrong, and ſhee weake; and none can doe more then they can doe. This might haue very well beene ſaid to haue beene a ſportfull contention, and an amorous combat, befitting *S. Iohns* feaſt, if the heauen of their paſtime had not beene ouer-caſt with a ſodaine and vnexpected cloud. They fared daintily, did dine, ſup, and ſleepe together. But this their pleaſure laſted but a while, ſhort was their content, and their reſt ſodainely and vnexpectedly interrupted. For the [n] Deuill neuer yet made that pye, whereof him-ſelfe did not eat the better part. It is a vſuall thing with him, when he maketh any ſuch kinde of meeting, to ſet vp a tent, or pauillion, inuiting them to goe into it, that there they may couer, and hide them-ſelues, and none may know of their doings, laying a charge of ſecrecie and ſilence on their preſent actions; but afterwards, when they are cloſely ſhut vp, and kept hid from the open eye of the world, in this their greateſt, and ill-conceiued ſecuritie, he ſets the doores wide open, diſcouers, and throwes theſe pauillions downe to the ground, manifeſting in publike, their concealed ſinnes; and beating vp his drumme, and ringing out his Alarum-bell, he calls the people together, that they may come and ſee what they are a doing, leauing them aſhamed and ſad, making him-ſelfe very merry to ſee them thus caught in his ſnare, and laughing and flouting at them, he makes him-ſelfe a Holy-day in Hell, ioying and triumphing in his new-gotten victorie. Who would once haue thought, that ſo ſubtle an inuention as this was, ſo well ordered, and in ſo ſhort a time, and by ſo ſtrange a meanes brought about, ſhould come to be diſcouered? Who, from ſuch happy beginnings, and meanes, would euer haue expected ſuch aduerſe, and Tragicall ends? But I ſay ill, and therefore correct my ſelfe: For we could looke for no other, conſidering the dance, and who he was that led it; and heauen cannot but openly puniſh ſuch wickedneſſe, and violence. And though the puniſhment was not equall to the offence, yet the blow was ſuch that was giuen them, that thereby euery good

Prouerbe.
[n] El diablo nunca hizo empanada, de que no quiſieſſe comer la meyor parte.

Diſcourſe might come to the knowledge of the fault, and repent him-ſelfe thereof.

Now whileſt they were thus in their mirth and iollitie, all that day paſſed ſo without account, and order, that there was no heed taken of any thing: The ſeruants in their quarter, fill'd their bellies, tooke away the wrinckles from off their guts, by glutting them-ſelues full, and pulling the faucets out of the hogs-heads, they did eat and drinke ſo luſtily, that they were faine at laſt to creepe to their beds, as a Cat doth ° vp a wall, vpon all foure; or as a ſhip-boy vp to the top of the maſte; leauing the chimney full of fire, and a great deale of dry wood ſtanding by it; The fire takes me hold of the brands, and other dry clefts, and they being tinded, did communicate their flames to their fellowes that ſtood by them, ſo that towards mid-night, all that quarter of the houſe was burnt, and not one bodie in all the houſe that did perceiue it, ſo faſt were they all a-ſleepe. It was the Veſpers of *S. Iohn*, and that night the *Teniente* (to ſee good order) vſeth to round the Towne, and by the great ſplendor that the flames did caſt a farre off, he ſaw what a light it gaue, and ſuſpected (which was ſo indeed) that ſome houſe was on fire. And ſo following the cleareneſſe of this light, the brightneſſe thereof brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They call'd out aloud, and knockt hard at the gate; for the houſe was great, and the people that were within, ſome were weary, ſome drunke, and others burnt, but none that did anſwer. There was a great noyſe and out-cry amongſt the neighbours, euery one ſeeking to preuent the threatned danger, and to prouide as well as they could to ſaue their goods and perſons, many people of all ſorts, and all parts of the Citie, came haſtning and running thither, who by maine force brake downe the gate, and laid it leuell with the ground, and entred the houſe, ſuppoſing all thoſe that were in it, to haue beene conſumed with the fire, or at leaſt choaked and ſtifled with the ſmoake, becauſe they could ſee no body ſtirring in it. The noyſe and clamour was ſuch, that *Claudio* awak'd, and ſtartled with this ſo great a rumour, and confuſed a ſound, not knowing what the matter might be, haſtning with his ſword in his hand, (he and *Dorotea* being both naked) he opened his chamber-doore, and when he ſaw the fire, he returned backe, that he might throw ſome thing vpon him, and ſaue him-ſelfe by flight. The *Teniente* thought that the people that were without, had broke open that doore, that they might rifle the roome; haſting thither with all diligence, that he might ſaue it from the ſpoyle and ranſacking of the more vnruly route, hee found theſe two louers running about the chamber, from one corner to another, to ſeeke out their cloathes, and hauing them in their hands, neither of them had their owne, interchanging them, through their more haſte, then good ſpeed. Now you may imagine in what taking they were, and what they might thinke, ſeeing them-ſelues thus naked, the houſe full of people, and her greateſt enemie, the *Teniente*; who had thus taken them napping. But that we may come to him, who ſtreight way knew *Dorotea*; whereat he was ſo amazed, that of all thoſe three, you could not tell for your life, which of them was moſt aſtonied. For the *Teniente*, had any body told him of ſuch a thing, he would neuer haue beene perſwaded to beleeue it; and though he had now his owne eyes to be his witneſſes, yet did he ſeeme to doubt of it. So troubled were his thoughts, ſo his heart inflamed with iealouſies, and diſdaynes, ſo mad and deſperately bent, that to be reuenged on them both, without any farther conſideration, he commanded them to be carried away to priſon; his ſpleene being more againſt *Dorotea*, then *Claudio*, for that ſhee had reiected him, and admitted of another, and therefore was reſolued to doe her a diſgrace, and to defame her all that he could, deuiſing with him-ſelfe, how he might likewiſe picke an occaſion to commit her huſband. For he thought it a thing impoſſible, that this ſhould be done without her

Prouerbe.
° Yr a las camas gateando.

her husbands priuitie, and that he had beene witting and consenting to this businesse, and had giuen his wife leaue to bestow a nights lodging vpon this young Gallant, vpon some particular interest, that might make much for his profit. Nor is it so strange, that the *Teniente* should take this indirect course: For a Loue-passion, or passionate fit of Loue, blindes the vnderstanding, and makes the minde of man turne cruell and tyrannicall. They carryed her away, her face being couered ouer with her mantle, hauing giuen expresse order, that shee should not be seene, or made knowne to any, till information should be made against her. And *Claudio*, he likewise was committed. And howbeit he had vsed all the meanes he could, to hinder this his harsh proceeding, alledging in excuse the great and many harmes that might happen thereupon, yet neither reasons, intreaties, nor all-perswading Crownes, could allay the rage of this incensed Iudge, so bigg was his heart swolne with malice and reuenge. They remained in prison, and the Iudge fomed at the mouth, till the fire was asswaged, and quite put out; but that of his heart did burne apace. It was now past midnight, and he had endured a great deale of trouble, but much more anger and choller. He got him to bed, and would haue slept if he could; but in him was that prouerbe verified, which saith, p *Assi tengays el sueño:* So let him sleepe, that troubles another mans rest. He could not sleepe in quiet, nor is it to be beleeued, that he should; but rather it is to be supposed, and true it was, that transported with rage, his head was plotting of reuenge, dressing this his rancorous dish of poyson a thousand seuerall wayes, that they might not escape his hands, at least not come off, with the saning of their honour. But hee reckoned without his q Hoste. For his feet were scarce warme in his bed, when *Dorotea* was out of his reach. *Sabina* lay in an inner chamber next vnto her Masters, to the end, that if he should need any thing in the night, shee might be ready at hand, when-soeuer he should call. And for that shee had diligently listned to all that had passed, shee presently bethought her-selfe of a remedie for this disease. For your women, vpon the sodaine, are more quicke, and nimble witted, then your men; nor must you giue them leaue to aduise any thing long with them-selues, if you meane to haue it succeed well and happily. Shee takes me out of her lodging a good fat Capon, which was left vntoucht at supper, and a good peece of a gammon of bacon, which being of a wilde Bore, was held to be a dainty dish, a good flagon of rich wine, a loafe or two of bread, and money in her purse, and clapping a bed, sheets, and a couerlet on her head, and bearing a little basket, wherein shee had put her commodities, vpon her arme, away shee trugs along to the prison. Shee intreated the Iaylour, that he would giue her leaue to carry in that her bed and supper for one of her Masters maydes, who because shee had show'd her-selfe too slow and negligent, vpon so vrgent an occasion, in bringing a bucket to draw water for the quenching of the fire, the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her to prison. With this slight excuse, and foure Royals of foure, which shee clapt in his hand, he opens the doore, and lets her in, making him a hundred curtsies; howbeit by reason of the luggage which shee had on her head, he could not come to see her face. In this manner, in shee goes to *Dorotea*, whom shee found rather dead then aliue: They two stood talking alone together, for the rest of the women-prisoners were all asleepe, and taking hold on this so faire an opportunitie, it so fell out, that *Dorotea* was transformed into *Sabina*, by putting on a greene kirtle that shee wore, who called to the Porter, that kept the prison doore, and giuing him the supper, that was prouided for that end, told him, that the mayde would neither eat any meat, nor come in any bed, vntill shee were releas'ed. Hee was so ioyed therewith, that he thought he had seene the heauens opened, and when he had tasted of the bacon, and found what a tarte yet pleasant relish it had with it,

Prouerbe.
p Assi tengays el sueño.

Prouerbe.
q Hizo la cuenta sin la huespeda.

it, he takes the flagon of wine in his hands, and giues it a good ſwigg, reſeruing the remainder againſt the next day. Whileſt the Porter was making him-ſelfe merry with his good cheere, *Dorotea* heaues vp the bed vpon her head, and ſo goes out of the priſon, leauing *Sabina* there in her place, and with thoſe two women that bare her company the day before, and ſtaid waiting for her comming forth, ſhee was conducted by them backe againe to *Claudio* his houſe, where ſhee continued till the next morning, and then accompanied with them, and ſome other women, ſhee returned home to her owne houſe, fayning that ſhee was not halfe well, and therefore made the ſpeedyer returne. The *Teniente* growing now proud vpon the matter, thinking the next morning, which was Tueſday, to execute this his reuenge, *Claudio* in the meane while was not wanting, (being aduiſed before hand that his Miſtreſſe was now out of his danger, and ſafely arriued at her wiſhed hauen) intreated a Gentleman, a friend of his, to take the paines to goe and ſpeake with the [r] *Aſſiſtente* of *Sevill*, and to craue ſo much lawfull fauour of him, that he would be pleaſed to come in perſon to the Court, and free him of that iniurie and wrong, which was ſo vniuſtly done vnto him. The *Teniente* likewiſe, when he was going to ſit downe to dinner in his owne houſe, going aſide to the window, and looking with a deuiliſh iealouſie on thoſe of *Dorotea*, he had her preſently in his eye, and knew it was ſhee, and might plainely perceiue, how her husband and ſhee ſate very louingly together eating of their dinner. He was almoſt beſide him-ſelfe, and ready to runne mad, wondring with him-ſelfe, how this might be. Hereupon, he preſently diſpatches one away to the priſon, to know who had freed the woman, that he had ſent thither ouer night. Anſwer was made; that ſhee was there. Then did he beat his feet againſt the ground, and ſtampt for deſpight and anger, and did verily perſwade him-ſelfe, that he was not well in his wits, vnleſſe the other had beene a dreame. So that day paſt on, till the next came, when (at the accuſtomed houre) comes me thither the *Aſſiſtente* him-ſelfe in perſon attended with his two *Tenientes*, and when he was ſate in the ſeat of Iuſtice, he will'd that *Claudio* ſhould be called forth, & the woman which was impriſoned with him. Who, when they were brought before him, and had (according to their owne confeſſion, as alſo the Keepers) approu'd themſelues to be the ſame, there was no man there but knew *Sabina* was his ſlaue, and ſo finding nothing to be ſaid againſt them, they were ſet at libertie. Yet were they not ſo freed, but that *Claudio* paid ſoundly for it; for when he came home, he found the greateſt part of his houſe, and his goods burnt, and together with them a ſiſter of his, one of thoſe honeſt ones, that accompanied *Dorotea* from her houſe, who was found dead in the ſame bed with his *Deſpenſero*, beſides ſome three other of his ſeruants. This affront to his honour (for that it was generally publiſhed throughout the whole Citie) did ſo afflict his minde, and did in that manner oppreſſe his heart, that with the ſtrong apprehenſion thereof hee fell grieuouſly ſicke. And not deſiring his health, that hee might take any worldly comfort in it, but onely that hee might liue to doe penance for this heynous ſinne that hee had committed, by corrupting ſo good a creature, hee recouered of his ſickneſſe, and without making any one acquainted therewith, hee retyred him-ſelfe to the top of a mountaine in a deſert place, where in a holy courſe of life hee ended his dayes, betaking him-ſelfe to the Religious Order of Saint *Francis*. *Dorotea* remayned with her husband in the ſame peace and loue as before, and the *Teniente*, like a filthy fellow as he was, without *Doblones*, for ought that they gaue him; and without reuenge, for ought that hee could take of them. And *Boniſacio* (honeſt man) vntoucht in his honour. For *Sabina*, and moſt of them that knew the affront that was done him, dyed within a few dayes after. So iuſt is God in all his workes, and ſo well doth he know how to puniſh thoſe wrongs, that are offered to the innocent.

[r] *The principall Magiſtrate, and chiefe Commander in* Sevill, *is called there by the name of* Aſſiſtente.

With

With this Storie, and other entertainments, to passe away the time, we were brought by a faire winde to *Spaine*, which I had not a little longed for, for hauing lost our Anchors, our Ordnance, our Oares, our Helme carryed away, our sailes rent, and all our tackling torne, hauing nothing left which the Sea had not swallowed vp, onely I was left aliue, who ought more iustly to haue perished. We did dis-imbarke in *Barçelona*, where telling my friend Captaine *Favelo*, that I had made a vow, while we were in this storme, that I would not stay three nights in any part of *Spaine*, till I should come to *Sevill*, and visit the Image of our *Lady del Valle*, to whom I had offered vp my deuotions, and made a certaine promise to consecrate some thing vnto her, if I should be so happy as to escape that tempest. It grieu'd him to the very soule, that he should lose my companie, but I could not doe otherwise; for I feared lest they of *Genoa* would come in pursuit of me in some Skiffe, or the like vessell. I bought three beasts for to carry my selfe and my trunkes, I entertained a seruant, and giuing out, that I was to goe my iourney (no man knowing the contrary) we tooke our leaue for euer.

The end of the second Booke of the second Part of *Guzman de Alfarache*.

THE ROGVE:
OR,
THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF *GVZMAN* DE *ALFARACHE.*

THE THIRD BOOKE.

Wherein he relateth all the reſt of his lewd and roguiſh life, from the time that he returned into *Spaine*, till he was condemned to the Galleys, where we muſt leaue him.

CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *hauing taken his leaue of Captaine* Favelo, *telling him, that he was to goe for* Sevill, *makes for* Saragoca, *where he perules the ſtatutes of* Gotam College, *otherwiſe called,* The Hoſpitall of Fooles.

How men vſe to grace their lyes.

WHEN a man (out of ſome particular end knowne to himſelfe) hath a minde to grace a lye, for to bring forth witneſſes to credit his falſhoods, he ſeekes out a fountaine, a lake, a ſtone, ſome mettall, tree, or hearbe, where-with he proues his vntruthes, and preſently alledgeth for his authoritie, that he hath ſaid nothing, but what ſtands with reaſon, and is made good by all thoſe, that haue any in-ſight in naturall Philoſophie. And in this manner he quoteth a thouſand witneſſes; he being the man that tells the lye, and layes the burthen of it on other mens ſhoulders. But I will runne a contrary courſe to this; for I (my ſelfe not lying) ſhall tell you their lye; not that I affirme it to be ſo; but becauſe it ſeemes to be ſo. And ſo it ought to be taken.

The propertie of the stone Pantaura.

taken. For that *Apollonius Tianeus* takes it vpon himselfe, and sayes; That he hath seene a stone, called *Pantaura*, which is the Queene of all other stones, whereon the Sunne doth worke in that forcible manner, that it hath all the vertues in it, that are to be found in all other stones whatsoeuer that are in the world, and that it worketh the same effects: And that as the Load-stone draweth the yron vnto it; so this *Pantaura*, attracteth all other stones vnto it selfe, preseruing that parrie from all kinde of poyson, that shall beare it about him.

Of riches.

To this stone, we may very well, and with a great deale of reason, compare riches. For see what vertue there is in all other things, the same shall we finde in riches. It drawes all vnto it selfe, and preserueth the possessor thereof from all manner of poyson. It doth all in all; it bringeth mighty things to passe; it is a most fierce and cruell beast; it ouercomes all; treads downe all, that stands in its way; and commands all. It makes euery thing stoope to its power; it subiecteth the earth, and all that therein is. By riches, the fiercest beasts are made tame; no fish, though neuer so great, can resist riches; nor the least of fishes, that hide them-selues in the concaues and hollow holes of the rocks, though ouer-whelmed with water, and drowned in the deepe, can escape its force; nor can the fowles of the ayre, though of the swiftest and nimblest wing, flie from its Empire; it exenterates, and pulls out the very bowels from the profoundest parts of the earth, vpon which the highest mountaines haue their foundation; and it maketh dry the most hidden sands, which the Sea doth couer in her bottomlesse Abysse. What altitudes, hath not it abased? What difficulties, hath not it ouercome? What impossibilities, hath not it facilitated? In what dangers, hath shee wanted safetie? In what aduersitie, hath not shee found friends? What thing hath shee desired, which shee hath not obtayned? Or what Law hath shee made, which hath not beene obeyed? And being, as it is, so venomous a poyson, that not onely like the Basiliske, by being beheld by vs, it killeth our bodies; but by a bare desire onely (being couered) destroyeth our soules, damning them for euer to the bottomlesse pit of Hell; yet shee her-selfe is a treacle to the harme we receiue from her, and a counter-poyson, to that venome, where-with shee infecteth our soules and consciences, if he that possesseth riches, can (as of an Antidote, or some pretious preseruatiue) make good vse thereof. Riches, in its owne nature, and in it selfe, hath neither honour, nor knowledge, nor power, nor valour, nor any other good, nor any punishment, nor glory, more then that, whereunto, they that doe possesse it, doe direct it. It is like vnto the *Cameleon*, which assumeth the colour of that thing, on which it settles its selfe: Or of the nature of that water of the Lake *Feneo*; of which the *Arcadians* report, that he that drinketh thereof ouer-night, growes sicke; but he that takes it after the Sunne is once vp, waxeth well. He that shall liue in idlenesse, heaping vp treasure by night, that is, secretly scraping a great deale of wealth together, ouer-charging his conscience there-with, he sure shall be sicke: But he that shall vse them in the day time, and show them to the light, that his workes may shine before men, and that he come with a cleare conscience, hauing the stomacke of his soule empty of sin, and his conscience not ouer-clogg'd with worldly cares, this man shall be made whole. Neither is the rich man condemned, nor the poore man saued, for that the one is rich, and the other poore: but onely because the rich man abuseth his riches, and the poore man his pouertie. For if the rich man treasures vp, and the poore couet, neither is the rich man rich, nor the poore man poore; and both are to be condemned. But that may be called the best and the truest riches, which being possessed, is despised. For riches serue onely (at least should) to releeue our owne necessities, to communicate with the good, and to distribute amongst our friends. The better and greater part, which rich men haue of riches, is the lesser part, in regard they are so occasionall in men, inciting them

Of the vse of riches.

Of the nature of riches.

The best and truest riches.

them (especially if their hearts be once set vpon them) to this, or that other sinne. Ill desires, beget ill doings. Riches in its owne nature, is a very sweet thing: To this, mans appetite hath a sweet tooth, and a greedy gaping after it. And as it is in the Prouerb; *La mançana* [a] *corre peligro en las pujas del erizo*; that Apple is in great danger, that stickes on the prickles of a Hedge-hogs backe.

Prouerbe.

[a] La mançana corre peligro en las pujas del erizo.

The Diuine prouidence (for our greater good) being to diuide and distribute its gifts, not laying all the weight of them vpon one side, thought good to repart them in different manner, and on different persons, to the end, that all might be saued. This Prouidence made both the rich and the poore. To the rich she gaue temporall goods; to the poore, spirituall blessings: to the end, that the rich man distributing his riches to the poore, might thereby purchase Gods fauour; and so remaining both equall, might equally gaine heauen; which is to be opened with a golden key; to wit, with riches, by vsing them well: And sometimes likewise this doore of heauen is to be opened with a pick-locke; that is, by dispensing our goods to the poore: Yet notwithstanding, doth not man, onely for that he has more, thereby merit more: but because he more despiseth then desireth. For, without comparison, much more is the riches of a poore man that is contented, then of a rich man that is neuer satisfied. He possesseth them, that is not possessed by them; hee is rich that seekes not after riches; and he hath most store, that is the least storer. This is the only man whom we may truly tearme rich, wise, and honourable.

Of Gods prouidence.

How heauen gate is to be opened.

And if the wise man would vse his wisedome well, and would measure that which he hath need of, with that which he hath, nature would content it selfe with a little; and euen in that little, would hee find an ouerplus. But because the foole inlargeth the cord, and would imbrace that which he hath, according to that which he desireth, God so orders this measure, that though he had all whatsoeuer the world containes, yet should he still be poore. To him that is not contented, nothing is enough; To a hauing mind, all is too little; wanting much, by hauing too much. The eye of a couetous man, will neuer say, no more then will the Sea, or Hell, *Yame basta*. Now I haue enough. Rich, and wise, shalt thou be, when thou liu'st so within thy compasse, that hee that knowes thee, should admire the little, that thou hast, and the much, that thou spendest: and when it shall not cause any wonder in thee, to see what little meanes thou hast to liue, and what great possessions other men inioy.

Nature contented with a little.

The couetous man neuer contented, and therefore neuer rich.

Thou seest me here now rich, very rich, and in *Spaine*; but farre worse, then I was before; for if before, pouerty made me too impudent; why riches hath now made me too confident. If I could but haue contented my selfe, or had I but had the temper of a well gouern'd man, I could neuer haue wanted; but because I neither did the one, nor knew the other, for to get money I endanger'd my body, and hazarded my soule. I was neuer contented, neuer satisfied, neuer at quiet with my selfe. And for that I led an idle kind of life, and was not willing to take any paines, (vnlesse it were in roguery) I lost that with ease, which I got with much labour. I was like vnto that wheele which conuayes water to your *Aqueducts*, no sooner full, but presently empty. I cared little for money, kept it lesse, but alwaeys imploy'd it ill. My money was the price of bloud, it was spent vpon Sepultures for dead bodies, on dead workes, and worldly vices. This was the vse I put it to, and therefore it is no maruell, if it thriu'd no better with me. Easily it came, and easily it went. And in the end I lost both it, and my selfe, as you shall heare hereafter.

How it fared with Guzman *now he was rich.*

Flying from that mischiefe, that might follow me, I went out of *Barçelona*, forsaking the rode-way, going by by-pathes from place to place, betaking my selfe to vnknowne trackes. I gaue out that I was to goe to *Seuill*, I framed excuses, to be the better beleeued. I talkt of the Vowes that I had made, and inuented a thousand other lyes; and for no other cause in the world, then to defeat the Spies of their purpose, and that they might not know what was become of me,

Guzman, *how he goes out of* Barçelona.

me, nor find the pricking of the Hare, that was now ſo farre before the hounds. The Mules were mine owne, my ſeruant a new-comer, and vnacquainted with my trickes. I trauail'd which way it pleaſed me, according as my minde ſerued me, or as it came firſt in my head; here to day, and to [b] morrow in *France*, without ſtaying in any one ſet-place; and alwayes changing my cloaths: for I came not to any place where I might change my apparell, but I did it, being of no great charge, not paſſing a hundred Crownes or there-abouts.

Prou rbe. [b] Oy a qui, mañana en Francia.

Guzman *comes to* Saragoça.

In this manner did I trauaile ouer all that Countrey, till I came to *Saragoça*, receiuing no ſmall contentment, that I was ſafely arriued in that noble and famous Citie. According as my youthfulneſſe did pricke me on, my money hold out, and the Dames did incite me, ſo did I continue there ſome few dayes, though all, and many more had beene too little for to view and enioy it's greatneſſe: So fayre and ſtrong were the buildings, ſo good the gouernment, ſo great the prouiſion, all things ſo good cheape, and thoſe reaſonable rates, that me thought it had a ſmatch of *Italy*. In one only thing I found it very ſtrange, and to my ſeeming, at the firſt ſight, ſomewhat terrible: which was the harder for me to digeſt, and the worſe to be endured, for that I knew not the cauſe of it. And it was, to ſee, how men, knowing the condition of thoſe women, and that euery little occaſion is ſufficient for them to make their longings lawes, forming bodies of ſhadowes, would put a bridle vpon them, leſt by loſing that *decorum* & reſpect which they owe to their deceaſed husbands, aſſuming too much libertie vnto them, they were likely to ſtumble on a thouſand blockes, that might be an occaſion of their falling, and cauſe them to runne on headlong to the vtter ruine of their reputation, which in a woman being once loſt, is neuer againe to be recouered.

His like, and diſlike of Saragoça.

The cuſtome in Saragoça *concerning widowes.*

It was my hap to walke through a ſpatious ſtreet, which they call, the *Coſſo*, which though it made a fayre ſhow, yet was it much graced by a handſome widow, that was young and well-fauoured, and to my ſeeming of good both wealth and qualitie. I made a ſtand to view her; ſhe likewiſe ſtood ſtill, and would not away: ſhe knew well enough of what diſeaſe I was ſicke, but would take no notice of it, nor made any other ſemblance or ſhow vnto mee, then as if neyther I or ſhee had beene there, or as if wee had not ſeene one another. I made more turnes about her window, then a horſe doth about a Mill; (for they are not a few, that vſe daily the like kinde of fooleries,) yet did ſhee not ſhow her ſelfe eyther coy or ſcornfull vnto mee, or that ſhe was offended with me for it. Nor did I once offer to ſpeake a word vnto her, till at laſt, ſhee ſeeming (me thought) vnto me, to waxe weary of this my fooliſh ſilence: I conceiued that ſhe ſaid to her ſelfe, what painted timbrell is this? what Peece without powder, that hath made me wait here theſe two long houres, and making ſtill proffers, as though hee would ſhoot, hath not yet diſcharged his musket, nor ſo much as once opened his mouth. With that ſhee went her way; and I ſtood looking when ſhe ſhould returne: being now fully reſolued to let flye [c] another arrow, to ſee if I could finde the former that I had loſt; but ſhe came no more in play, and ſo I miſt the marke that I meant to haue ſhot at. I went home to my lodging, and demanded of mine Hoſte, what ſhe was; but as it were accidentally, and in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, without any the leaſt ſhow that I did it of ſet purpoſe, or for any intereſt of mine owne, giuing him ſuch markes and tokens, whereby he might gueſſe whom I meant.

Prouerbe. [c] Perder vn virote, p ra emendar el anuelo.

This Gentle-woman (ſaid mine Hoſte) is a widow, and that not one, but many wayes, exceeding faire and beautifull. I would needs know of him how. He told me, ſo many, that euery particular fairneſſe in her, were a ſufficient beautifying to any other woman. She is fayre (as you ſee) in her face, ſhee is likewiſe fayre in her Image, being of the beſt deſcent in this Citie; ſhe is alſo fayre in her wealth and riches, hauing much of her owne, and much by her husband; and aboue all, moſt fayre in her diſcretion, for therein eſpecially doth her

her beauty exceed. I ſaw the pot [d] was ſo full, that I was afraid, it would runne ouer; and therefore I ſaid vnto mine Hoſte, that he might not runne him-ſelfe out of breath; How comes it then to paſſe, if ſhe be of that ranke and quality, as you ſay ſhe is, that her friends and kinsfolke doe giue way, that ſuch a worthy Gentlewoman, ſhould runne ſuch a deale of hazard, as ſhe does; for youth, beauty, riches, and liberty, can hardly walke out their ſtations without tripping, if not falling. How much better and ſafer were it, both for them, and her, to get her another good husband, and cauſe her to marry, then to ſuffer her to liue in this dangerous ſtate of widowhood. Whereunto mine Hoſte replide; you ſay well Sir, but this cannot be done, but to her great loſſe and hinderance; for that very day, that ſhe ſhall betake her ſelfe to a ſecond mariage, ſhee is to loſe all the eſtate, which ſhee had by her former husband, which is no ſmall matter. But continuing ſtill a widow, ſhe ſhall be Vſufructuary of all that he left her, and enioy it as long as ſhe liues.

Then ſaid I, O how hard a condition, how rigorous a clauſe is this? How much better were it to deale with this Gentlewoman, and ſuch other as ſhe is, as they vſe to doe in *Italy*, whoſe husbands, when they dye, leaue their wiues a large Legacy, diſpoſing it in that manner, that it be paid vnto them at the day of their mariage, declaring thereby, that they meerely left it them to that end. And this they doe, to the end that they may enioy ſo great a benefit by a ſecond mariage, whereby their ſtate ſhall not onely be aduanced, but their honor likewiſe ſecured, which otherwiſe might chance to receiue ſome ſcandall. I was preſſing this argument a little more home vnto him; but he interrupted me and anſwered thus vnto me. Sir, hath not you worſhip oft heard ſay; *En cada tierra ſu vſo*; Euery [e] Country hath his cuſtome? This goes currant here, and that in *Italy*. And that other I am ſure is not vnknowne vnto you; *Cada loco, en ſu [f] caſa ſabe màs, que el cuerdo en el agena*; Euery foole is wiſer in his owne houſe, then a wiſe man is in anothers. Whereunto I replyde; If here bee no better Law then this, and if people ſhall ſuffer them-ſelues to bee gouerned in this manner, I know well enough what I ſay, I tell you plainly, I like not of it, nor can I by any meanes approue it. And to this end it is alſo ſaid, *Al mal vſo, quebrarle la pierna*. A bad Cuſtome is better broken then kept. The legs of it are to be broken, that it may not ſtand any more in force. A holy, good and iuſt Law, ought to be grounded on reaſon. I am of your minde (ſaid mine Hoſte) but they that are more learned, then I am, would peraduenture giue you better ſatisfaction then I can. Yet in my opinion, it ſeemeth to carry ſome force with it; and I am verily perſwaded, that that which moued them to make this Law, vvas; not that a vvidow might not marry, but that being a vvidow, ſhee might not liue in vvant; and to take away all occaſion, leſt for lacke of conuenient maintenance, according to the condition of her qualitie, ſhe might fayle in her obligation, and vſe that ill, vvhich vvas inſtituted for good: ſo that the fault is the vvomans, though the puniſhment be the mans.

This mine honeſt Hoſte, did not halfe ſatisfie me vvith this (as he thought) his ſound reaſon: vvhereupon, I entred into a diſcourſe, thinking vvith my ſelfe, vvhat kinde of creatures theſe vvomen be; vvho if you leade them by euill vvayes, they turne euill; if by good, worſe; and neuer ſhall you come to know vvhat to make of them. They [h] are the making or the marring of their houſe: The eſtabliſhers, or the deſtroyers thereof. In their running they trip, and in going they fall. And therefore their name ſutes vvell vvith their nature; being for this cauſe, called *Woman*, becauſe ſhe is a vvoe to man. She hath a ſmooth skinne, but a harſh nature; a ſoft tongue, but a hard heart; ſilken vvords, but ſowrage deeds. They ſeemed (me thought) vnto me, (pardon the courſnes of my compariſon) to be like vnto ſtraw, vvhich if you let it ſtand in the field in its naturall place, without laying it in ſuch rooms, vvhere it ought to be kept, it is preſerued by the vvinde and raine; but if you reſtraine and

Prouerbe.
[d] Tan llena eſta la medida, que ha de vertir.

Guzman *argues with his Hoſte about this cuſtome.*

Prouerbe.
[e] En cada tierra, ſu vſo.

Prouerbe.
[f] Cada loco, ſabe mas en ſu caſa, que el cuerdo en el agena.

Prouerbe.
[g] Al mal vſo, quebrarle la pierna.

Bad cuſtomes not to be kept.

Prouerbe.
[h] Muger, el mal, ò el bien de ſu caſa.

Guzman *diſcourſeth of women.*

and ſtraiten it, clapping it vp cloſe in ſome little priuate lodging, it will ſhoote it ſelfe out, and breake through the walls; nor ſhall you reape any other good of it, then that ſowre iuice which it will yeeld you, like vnto that of the ſowre Orange, affording much bitternetſe, but no benefit. They know not how to keepe a meane in their actions, and leſſe in their loue or hate: Nor euer yet could they vſe a moderation in their crauings and deſirings. That much which they receiue, they thinke it ſtill too little; and that little which they giue, they alwaies thinke it too much. They are generally couetous; yet notwithſtanding all theſe faults, naked is that houſe [i] where there is neuer a wife. All will reele, where the Reele goes not. Where there is neuer a [k] white apron, there is no good order, the meat ill dreſt, and the table ſluttiſh. As the breath of man doth vphold houſes, that they runne not to ruine and decay; ſo the ſteps of a well gouernd huſwife, doth preſerue and multiply wealth: And as a good Chine of Bacon, makes glorious porrige; and as a man becomes the ſtreets; ſo doth a woman adorne the houſe.

Prouerbe.
i Des dichada la caſa, donde las faldas faltan

Prouerbe.
k Donde no ay chapines, no ay coſa bien pueſta.

But this is not a place to treat of their vertues. I come vnto mine owne, which at that time were more then the vertues of *Tobacco*. I continued a while diſcourſing with mine Hoſt, who made me a large relation of many things concerning that Citie, as of its priuiledges and liberties, from which conuerſation of his, I receiued ſo much content, and was ſo attentiue to his talke, that I would haue forgone any other intertainment, to haue inioyed this his pleaſing diſcourſe. I may thanke my ſinnes that had brought me thither. I had taken an extreame cold in the Galley, which I was not yet well rid of; and finding my head ſtuft, I pluck't a handkercher out of my pocket, and blew my noſe, which I had no ſooner pull'd thence, but I opened it, and look't thereupon, as if that Oyſter had afforded me a pearle, it being the manner and faſhion of that Countrey ſo to doe, (contrarie to the rule of good manners) being a no leſſe ſlouenlie, then common tricke amongſt them.

Guzman, *put into a needleſſe feare by mine Hoſtes meanes.*

The crafty Rogue mine Hoſte, perceiuing why I did it, and that I made, as it were, a ſcoffe of their cuſtomes, being a good ſpeaker (as hee was) a proper handſome fellow, and a pleaſant; ſpeaking in a low voyce, and nodding his head towards me, ſoftly ſaid vnto me; Flie, Sir, flie; Hide your ſelfe, as ſoone as you can: Quickly, quickly, I ſay. Poore and miſerable man that I was, O theſe his words, how ill did they ſound in mine eares! O how my heart was ſcorcht with them, like the Partridge that is firſt ſinged in the fire, and afterwards to be put preſently on the ſpit! My feathers were ſinged, and my pride abated. Hee had ſcarce made an end of his words, when at two leapes, I had got me behinde the curtaines of the bed. He being ignorant of my villanies, thought that I had done this innocently, and out of ſimplicitie, as being ſtartled with the ſodainneſſe thereof: and ſo inſtantly breaking out into a loud laughter, he merrily ſaid vnto me; I perceiue, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: by my faith Sir, you are a nimble actiue Gentleman: your Worſhip may now come forth, if you pleaſe; as God would haue it, it is nothing: the ſtorme is paſt, the coaſt cleare, and you may ſafely ſhew your ſelfe vpon the hatches. I came forth from thence as pale as aſhes, my colour was quite gone, and death appeared in my face; and did much wonder at my ſelfe, conſidering the great feare and perturbation I then was in, that the ſodaine aſtoniſhment, and the affright it had put me into, had not made me to leap out of the window into the ſtreet.

I came out at laſt, but whether more amazed, or aſhamed, I cannot tell you; but I ſought to diſſemble it the beſt I could, that I might not raiſe vp that duſt which might chance to put out mine eies. Being now come againe to my ſelfe, I ask't him what was the myſterie of this, and what he meant by it: I pray Sir ſaid he, content your ſelfe, reſt you quiet, and giue me preſently two ſhillings from you. I put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royall, and

when

when I ſaw he was quiet, hauing by this time laught him-ſelfe weary, I began a-freſh to aske him, why he demanded two ſhillings of me, and what was that, that had paſſed before, when he bid me flie, and goe hide my ſelfe? Hee falling into a new vaine of laughing, louder then before, looking cheerily and merrily vpon mee, ſaid vnto mee: Sir, I haue here a *Procuration* ſubſtituted by the *Adminiſtrators* of an *Hoſpitall*, for the recouering of certaine duties and rights of thoſe, which come to my houſe, which I am to challenge of them, if they commit any forfeyture, contayned in the ſaid *Procuration*. From this time forward, your Worſhip may goe ouer all the world by vertue of theſe my Letters Patent, without any farther moleſtation to your perſon, or your purſe. With this Royall, you haue paid for your entrance, and haue free licence to be gone, when you liſt. When I heard him tell me this, what with that was paſt, and what with this preſent gamball, I was ſo confounded there-with, that that might be ſaid to me, which was to a Gentle-woman, that is well knowne, who hauing matcht her-ſelfe with a new Chriſtian, for that he was rich, and ſhee poore; who being with childe by him, and finding her-ſelfe (it being the firſt that ſhee had gone withall) out of eaſe, and in much paine, talking with another Gentle-woman that was an acquaintance and friend of hers; ſhee ſaid vnto her; In good faith, I finde my ſelfe ſo ill, that I know not what to ſay vnto it. I was neuer in my life, in that [l] Iewiſh taking, as I am now in. No maruaile (ſaid the other) hauing a Iew within you; and bearing him about you (as you doe) in your bodie. And in good faith, my ſelfe (like this Gentle-woman) was in that feare at that time, that if mine Hoſts laughing and ieſting with me, had not quickly rid me of this doubt, I verily beleeue, I ſhould haue fallen downe dead for feare. His breath, put breath into me; his liuelineſſe, life: And ſeeing him thus ſet vpon the merry pin, I ſaid vnto him; [m] *Cuerpo de mi:* As I am an honeſt man; ſince I haue paid the penaltie, I will know, by your leaue, what is the fault I haue committed. For that Iudges ſentence is rigorous and vniuſt, that ſhall condemne me in charges, for that which I neuer did, and ſhall not giue me a diſcharge for it. For it may be, that both parties being heard, my money may be return'd me backe againe. Becauſe your Worſhip (ſaies mine Hoſt) ſeemes to be a worthy diſcreet Gentle-man, I will reade vnto you a bede-roll of ſuch ſtatutes as I haue here for the recouery of thoſe amercements, and thoſe penalties, wherewith they are to be puniſhed, who incurre the danger of them. This Royall is a fee, that goes to the Beedle for your entrance. Only I ſhall intreat your Worſhip to haue the patience to ſtay a while, till I ſhall goe runne, and fetch it you. He went his way, and returnes againe in a trice, bringing a great booke with him vnder his arme, wherein he ſaid, he did ſet downe the admittance, or matriculation of thoſe that were made free of that Incorporation, and taking out ſome few ſheets of paper, that lay looſe in the booke, he began to reade ſome of their ſtatutes and ordinances, whereof I will repeat ſuch vnto you, as remaine in my memory, with a proteſtation which I make vnto you, to acquaint you with thoſe few hereafter, which ſhall occurre to my remembrance. And they ſpeake after this manner.

A tale of a Gentle-woman, that married with a new Chriſtian.

Prouerbe:
[l] Tener el Iudio en el cuerpo *That is*; eſtar con miedo: *To be in a great feare.* Covarr. verb. Iudio, pag. 492.
[m] *A common oath, or aſſeueration in* Spaine: Engliſh, *Body of me.*

The ſtatutes and conſtitutions of *Gotam Colledge*, OR *The Hoſpitall of Fooles.*

WE *REASON*, abſolute Monarch, and ſole Soueraigne of the world, not acknowledging any ſuperiour, or in any ſort equall vnto vs, for the redreſſing and reforming of mens manners, againſt the obſtinate and peruerſe wilfulneſſe of folly, and all other her wickedneſſe, which hath taken ſuch deep root, and multiplied it ſelfe in that abundance, to our notable hurt and detriment, the preiudice of our Royall prerogatiue, and the great damage of all mankinde;

kinde; for to auoyd thoſe greater inconueniences, which the corruption of ſo dangerous and ſpreading a canker may cauſe, that it may not creepe more and more vpon our louing ſubiects (whoſe welfare and ſafetie we tender as our owne) and that it may not dilate it ſelfe any farther, to their vtter vndoing, and finall deſtruction; We will and command, haue and doe ordaine, as alſo doe publiſh and proclaime theſe our Lawes, to all thoſe that are already borne, or ſhall be borne hereafter in ſucceeding ages, by the power of our Regall authoritie, and by the generall conſent of our Councell of State, that they be taken and held for ſuch, as are now by vs eſtabliſhed and confirmed, and that they be punctually kept, religiouſly obſerued, and fully cumplyde withall, both in all, and euery the leaſt point or parcell, herein ſpecified, or contained, as you will anſwer it to your perill, and incurre that grieuous puniſhment, which to thoſe that ſhall violate and infringe theſe our Lawes, is in that caſe prouided.

Moreouer, becauſe the firſt thing that we are in our princely care to conſider of, is, that all due, fitting, and conuenient prouiſion be made, for the quicke expedition, and good execution of Iuſtice, we in our wiſdome haue thought it meet, to nominate and appoint certaine Officers, of good both ſufficiencie, and truſt, ſuch as ſhall be requiſite and needfull for this ſo weighty and important a buſineſſe, And therefore we do depute, nominate, and aſſigne for Iudges, good *Policie*, *Curioſitie*, and *Solicitude*; to the end, that they, as if it were vs our ſelfe, and as repreſenting vs in our owne proper perſon, may truly and vprightly adminiſter iuſtice, giuing them by vertue of our power, full, & plenary authoritie, to apprehend, ſet at libertie, and puniſh, any manner of perſon, or perſons whatſoeuer vpon iuſt cauſe, referring our ſaid Iudges to be ordered and directed by theſe our lawes and ordinances, and not to differ from the true intent and meaning of them, to the damnifying of the ſubiect, and the diſhonouring of vs. Furthermore, both for the preſent, & euer here-after, do we ſubſtitute as elder Brothers of this Fraternitie, & chiefe Wardens of this Incorporation, all thoſe that be iealous obſeruers, euery one according to his place and merit, and he that ſhall be moſt iealous, ſhall be moſt honoured. Our Atturney Generall, ſhall be *Diligence*, and our Bedle, that ſhall warne them to the Court, ſhall be *Fame*.

1 Firſt of all therefore, any perſon, or perſons, that ſhall goe walking and talking to them-ſelues in the ſtreets, or ſhall doe the like, when they are all alone, or at home in their priuate houſes, we condemne them for fooles for three moneths, within which terme of time, we will and command, that they abſtaine therefro, and reforme this their foolery. And in caſe, they ſhall not amend this fault, our pleaſure is, that for the better accompliſhment thereof, they haue a longer and more peremptory time ſet them downe, of ſome three Termes, or more; within which limited time, they ſhall bring in a certificate of their ſaid reformation and amendment, vpon paine of being held for approued, attainted, and conuicted fooles, and accordingly command our foreſaid elder Brothers, and Ancients of the Company to bring in their euidence, & to find them guilty, & to ſee them afterwards ſeuerely puniſhed, as violaters & breakers of our Lawes.

2 *Item*, They that ſhall walke through any publike or priuate place, that is paued with bricke, or with ſtone, and ſhall goe with a great deale of care and ſtudie, pitching either their toes, or their heeles, in ſuch a direct line, ſide, or corner of the ſaid bricks, or ſtones, ſhall be condemned in the ſame puniſhment as aforeſaid.

3 *Item*, They that walking along the ſtreets, caſting their cloake vnder one arme, and ſtretching out their hand, or their finger, ſhall goe, as they paſſe along, either patting the wall, or making ſtreakes, and Indentures with their fingers ends, let them be admitted ſchollers of our ſaid Houſe or Colledge; prouided alwayes, that they haue ſix moneths of approbation granted vnto them; In which time, we command them to be reformed. Otherwiſe, and in default thereof, we haue already ordayned, and doe now ordayne; That the Warden,

Sub-warden,

Sub-warden, or Deane of this our Colledge, and in their abſence, the Senior-fellow, put his coat vpon him (according to the cuſtome of the Houſe) his cap, and his bable, and other ornaments belonging to his degree, and euer afterwards be held a profeſſed foole.

Item, They that ſhall play at bowles, or at billiards, when they haue throwne out their bowle, if by chance it ſhall runne awry, and that they with it, ſhall alſo wry their body; thinking, that which way they leane, the bowle ſhould run inclining to that ſide, and gouerne it ſelfe, as they direct it with theſe their mimick geſtures, ſhall dye in this their ſin; and we muſt declare them for brothers already profeſſed. And we further command, that the like be alſo vnderſtood of thoſe, who vſe the like Apiſh action, ſeeing ſomething fall downe from ſome high place to the ground, ſhrinking their ſhoulders, wrying their mouthes, or turning vp the whites of their eyes. And likewiſe of thoſe, who hauing vizards on their faces (as in masks and reuels) ſhall vnder thoſe, goe making of ſtrange geſticulations, either by frowning, or ſmiling, or biting of the lip, as if in ſo doing, it did really and truly ſeeme vnto them, that theſe variations, and alterations of their countenances, were taken notice of by ſome outward appearance, when as being thus masked, it is impoſſible, that any inward geſture of theirs ſhould be outwardly diſcerned. And of thoſe, who do counterfeit and imitate the like, not knowing whether they doe the ſame or no. Or if in cutting out ſome thing with a bad paire of ſheeres, or with a dull-edged knife, or taking paines with any the like vntoward inſtrument, they ſhall draw their mouth on t'one ſide like a Plaice; lill out their tongue, like a Calfe; wrinckle vp their cheekes, forehead and eyes, like a ſcorched peece of parchment, and ſuch Idiot-like poſtures, our will and pleaſure is, that they in like manner, ſhall take the degree of fooles. 4

Item, They, who expecting their ſeruant, (hauing ſent him forth on an errand) if in caſe he be ſomewhat long a comming, ſhall ſtay waiting for him at the doores, or windowes of his houſe, thinking that by his ſtaying there for him, he will make the more haſte, and come the ſooner, we condemne all ſuch to retract and acknowledge their errour, vpon paine, that in caſe they ſhall refuſe ſo to doe, they be ſeuerely proceeded againſt. 5

Item, They that draw their cards with a great deale of leyſure, ſeeking by degrees, by a little & a little, to diſcouer at this, or that other corner, firſt whether it colour right, and afterwards, diſcourſing and arguing the caſe, whether it be ſuch or ſuch a card, they themſelues knowing for certaine, that for all this their laborious lingring and delay, they ſhall neuer a whit the ſooner encounter, or miſſe, then if they had preſently taken it vp, and made ſhow thereof, as ſoone as it was dealt into their hand; we condemne them to the ſame acknowledgment, as aforeſaid. And for ſome cauſes mouing vs thereunto, we haue thought fit, to giue them free leaue and licence, without incurring any farther penalty, to follow their ancient cuſtome; but with this condition; That as oft, as he, or they, offending in this manner, ſhall ſee an Ancient of the houſe, or paſſe by his chamber doore, he ſhall make an acknowledgment of this his error, by putting off his hat. 6

Item, They that are gotten vp into ſome vpper roome, and either ſitting or ſtanding in ſome window, or open gallery, ſhall from thence ſpit downe; whether it be thereby to take (as it were with a plummet) the euenneſſe of the building; or to ſee, if he can make his ſpittle to light iuſt vpon ſuch a ſtone, or ſome one marke or other, which his eye hath choſen out; we ſtrictly charge and command them, that they retract and reforme this their folly, and that vpon ſhort warning, vpon paine of being taken for publike profeſſors of the ſame. 7

Item, They who trauayling vpon the way, ſhall inquire of thoſe paſſengers, whom they meet withall, how farre it is to ſuch a baiting-place, or to ſuch a Towne, thinking, that by this their asking, they ſhall the ſooner reach vnto it, 8

we condemne them in the like penalty, inioyning them for penance, the badnes of the way, the Carryers iading of them, and mine Hosts cozening of them: Not inflicting any greater punishment, out of the hope of their amendment.

9 *Item*, They who when they make water, goe streaking the walls with their vrine, as if they were busie about some curious delineations, or framing some Antick-figures, or shall pisse in the dust, making I know not what scattering angles, and Circles; or in some chinke in a wall, or little hole in the ground; We will and command, that they doe so no more, vpon paine (in case they shall persevere therein) to be punished by their Iudge, and deliuered ouer to an elder Brother, or one of the Ancients of the House.

10 *Item*, They who when they heare the clocke strike, count not the houres, but aske others, what's a clocke; it being more fit and facile for them, to tell it them-selues. Which carelesnesse of theirs, proceedeth often times from the abundance of a cholericke kinde of humour; We therefore, strictly charge and command all such, that they haue an especiall care of their health; and in case they be poore, and not able to be at the charge of physicke, that then one of the Masters of our Hospitall, cause them to be carryed thither, giuing order that some preparatiues be prouided for them of wilde Cherries, or sharpe sowre Orange, lest otherwise they might runne the danger of losing their wits, and quickly turne either fooles, or mad men.

11 *Item*, They who haue but a little meat before them, and many mouthes a going, shall diuert themselues from their feeding, to entertaine the company with this tale, or that discourse, taking more pleasure (like a sort of pratling fooles as they are) to fill other mens eares, then their owne bellies; by which meanes they often rise a hunger'd: For as much, as these are dyde in the woll, and come ready drest to our hands, we remit them to be registred amongst your incurable fooles. And therefore command, that there be an especiall care taken of them. For these are in the 7th degree, and are almost in their full height to be taken.

12 *Item*, They who out of couetousnesse, or any other cause or reason whatsoeuer, so as they be not driuen thereunto of force and necessitie, (for in such cases, Lawes are not to be kept) when they goe to market, buy the worser sort of victuals for the sauing of their purse, and spending the lesse in their houses; as if a Physitian, an Apothecary, or a Barber-Surgeon (who all the yeare long come to your houses, to cure those diseases, which were caused by bad and vnwholesome meats) were not dearer by much, then any the best meat they could buy: We condemne them to a generall disgracing of them-selues, declaring them (as before declared) to be professed fooles; forbidding them from henceforth to doe the like, vpon paine of being committed ouer to the Curate, Sexton, or Graue-maker of his, or their Parish, to be punished either more, or lesse, according to the hurt that shall grow thereby.

13 *Item*, They who in the summer-nights, as also some in the winter, sit, or stand, till their breech, or their feet ake, in some open Court or Taratse, gaping and gazing on the heauens, and from the clouds of the ayre, goe forming the figures of Serpents, and the shapes of Lyons, and so of other beasts, we pronounce and declare them to be brothers of this Fraternitie: But if in this kinde of sort, or the like manner, they shall thus entertaine them-selues with these bables, that they may thereby, giue place and time in their owne houses, as some vse to doe for their owne interest and priuate gaine, that they may see the signe of *Taurus*, *Aries*, and *Capricorne*, which is a most foule and dishonest case, we condemne them (though accounted of the Brotherhood) not to be capable of the priuileges thereof, nor that they be admitted into their Senate-house, nor that they haue any waxe lights allowed them on Festiuall dayes.

14 *Item*, They who wearing either blacke shooes, or white, or of any other coloured veluet, shall, for to take away the dust from them, or to giue them a better glasse, make them cleane with their cloake, as if that were not of a more noble

ble and better condition, and much more coſtly, and that for to make them cleane and handſome, they ſhall leaue that foule and duſtie, we condemne them for neat fooles. And in caſe they be Noble-men, for their greater honour, we will haue them to be taken for three-piled fooles.

Item, They who hauing paſt ſome few dayes, without ſeeing their friends and acquaintance, when afterward, meeting one another by chance, they ſay each to other; Are you aliue Sir? Is it poſſible, that there ſhould be any ſuch man vpon the face of the earth? Which notwithſtanding that it be a kinde of indearing of a mans loue, yet muſt we haue them inrolled amongſt the reſt, being there are other more proper formes of ſalutation, without asking a man, whether he be vpon earth, or aliue, when as he was neuer yet in heauen, and ſees him ſtand iuſt before him. And we farther will and command, that all ſuch haue a ſigne, or marke of *Admiration*, ſet vpon them; and that (during our pleaſure) they neuer goe without it. 15

Item, They who after the hearing of Maſſe, and when they haue made an end of their *Aue-Maries*, at the tingling of the bell, or at any other houre, when a ſigne is giuen in the Church, that Seruice is ended, ſhall ſay to ſuch a one; I kiſſe your hands Sir, howbeit this phraſe of ſpeech is ſuppoſed to be no other then an acknowledgment of thanks, the other hauing bowed his body towards him, or giuen him the good day, or good night; yet notwithſtanding we condemne them for fooles, and command them to abiure this manner of ſpeaking, vpon puniſhment that they ſhall carry this name with them to their graue, and while they liue, be pointed at for their folly, for that they more eſteeme of a falſe and lying *beso las manos*, I kiſſe your hands (which they neuer kiſſe, nor would kiſſe them, though they were the Biſhops hands, and much leſſe thoſe of other inferiour perſons, whereof ſome haue them full of ſcabs, of ſcurfe, or leproſie, and other ſome, with nayles either ready to drop off, or full of [n] durt, looking like *Caueary*, that they would be ready to turne a mans ſtomacke) then to ſay, God giue you good night, or good morrow. And the like command, we lay vpon thoſe, who make anſwer with the like ſalutation, at another mans ſneezing, when they may as well ſay, God bleſſe you. 16

Item, They who come to a mans houſe to inquire for him, and asking whether he be within, or no; it being anſwered vnto him, or them, that he is not within, but is gone abroad, returne a ſecond time to reply: Is he then gone abroad? we condemne them as rebels, and contumacious people, for repeating that demand, whereof they had already ſatisfaction. 17

Item, They who hauing hit their ſhin, or their toes againſt ſome ſharpe ſtone, by ſtumbling vnawares vpon it, and with a great deale of fleame, and full of choller, returne backe againe to looke vpon it at leyſure with a fixed eye, and a troubled minde, we condemne them in the ſame penaltie, and command them, either to remoue it out of the way, or that they doe not offer to looke vpon it, vpon paine of farther increaſing their puniſhment. 18

Item, They, who blowing their noſe, in the taking away of their handkercher, looke ſteadily vpon it, and pry into it, as if ſome pearles had dropt from thence, and that they would ſafely lap them vp for feare of loſing, we condemne them for brothers of our ſaid foundation, and that as oft as they ſhall offend in this fault, they giue an almes to the Hoſpitall of incurable fooles, grounding our reaſon of this mulct vpon this, that they ſhall hereafter haue others doe as much for them. 19

When he was come thus farre, me thought he wanted onely the bell to toll him off. I was ready to burſt my heart with laughing, and the bede-roll was ſo long, that I would not ſuffer him to goe on any further, and therefore interrupting him in his reading, I ſaid vnto him; Now (my good Hoſte) ſeeing you haue done me the fauour to aduiſe me of theſe things, that I may thereby know how to correct my errors; tell me I pray you, where-abouts this Hoſpi-

[n] *The Spaniſh word is*; Vñas cayreladas. *The French renders it*, Ongles ſi lanternes, & ſi ſalement colorez.

tall is, who is the Principall, and what lands and rents belong vnto it. Sir (ſaid mine Hoſte) for that there are ſo many diſeaſed and ſicke perſons, and that the Hoſpitall is incapable, and poore, conſidering the few that are well, and the many that are ſicke; it was agreed vpon, that they ſhould change their lodgings and be ſcattered vp and downe in diuers other places, ſo that now all the world in a manner appertaines to this Hoſpitall. Where then (ſaid I vnto him) ſhall thoſe diſcreet and wiſe men, that remaine yet vntouched, be ſo conueniently lodged, that they may be out of the danger of this infection? Hereunto hee made anſwer, I heare (Sir) that there is but one onely man in all the world, that is free from this contagion; but as yet I could neuer learne who that one ſhould be. Euery particular man, thinkes that he is this ſound party, but few, beſides him-ſelfe, will beleeue it.

The certaineſt newes that I can giue you hereof, is, That there is a great Enginer lately found out, that will vndertake to put into an egge-ſhell, as many as ſhall be abſolutely free of this diſeaſe, and does farther make offer, that together with their perſons, he will likewiſe thruſt into the ſaid egge-ſhell, all their goods, lands, and rents, and that notwithſtanding all this, they ſhall haue ſo much elbow-roome, that they ſhall ſcarce touch one another. I could hold no longer, but muſt needs tell him; This (mine Hoſte) is a malitious interpretation, and a matter of meere waggerie, and no leſſe large then the Hoſpitall it ſelfe. But, being well conſidered, I find that it is very true; in regard we are all of vs but men, and haue all ſinned in our father *Adam*. Our conuerſation had continued ſomewhat longer, and we ſhould haue made an end of reading of the ſtatutes of the ſaid houſe, if the night had not haſted away ſo faſt. Beſides, I had a great deſire to haue another fling at the widow, and did long to fetch a turne or two before her lodging, to ſee how the world went there. So leauing the reſt to the next dayes reading, I willed my ſeruant to bring mee a very gallant ſute of cloathes, which I had in my truncke, and taking my ſword vnder mine arme, I went out of the houſe, and walkt about the City, ſeeking my fortune. I went ſtalking through thoſe ſtreetes in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, with a minde ſo well pleaſed, and a heart ſo contented, that I would not haue chang'd my preſent ſtate, with any Prince in Chriſtendome; thinking my ſelfe to bee ſuch a tall fellow of my hands, that no man was able to ſtand in my way.

Guzman goes by night abroad about the City.

At the winding of a corner, where two ſtreets met together, and made a croſſe, I met with a couple of young wenches, the one was a reaſonable handſome one, and might very well haue ſeru'd the turne; the other, ſeemed to be her ſeruant. I made towards them, and they did not ſtep aſide; I ſtopt them in their way, and they ſtood ſtill. I began to talke and diſcourſe with them, and they with me, and in that kind and courteous manner, that I was as it were rauiſhed with their company. I could not put any queſtion to this Gentlewoman, whereunto ſhee had not a ready anſwer; ſhee would not giue an inch of her ground, nor let any Card that came from me, paſſe without a Vye. There was not any one word, that could come amiſſe to her. I went about to dis-inwrap her hands of her mantle, that I might come to touch them; but the crafty hyleding, ſeeming ſomewhat ſqueamiſh, ſtraining courteſie, did in a pretty kind of faſhion faigne a defending of her ſelfe from that friendly violence, yet did ſhe not make any great haſty retreat, but did ſuffer me to come on in that cunning manner, and was ſo nimble finger'd withall, that in that ſhort ſpace of time, that I was buſying my hands about her face, and her breſt, ſhe with hers was not idle, but putting them into my pocket, tooke thence that little, that I had. I was hot vpon the buſineſſe, and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache; nor had it beene poſſible for me to haue beene ſenſible of it, had I taken the beſt care, that I could. For, at ſuch times, and vpon ſuch fits, our memory, and our vnderſtanding failes vs, onely our will is then occupied. She had

He meetes with two wenches.

His wench cozens him.

had no ſooner made her market, and ſtript me of a matter of ſome hundred Royals, but ſhe ſaid vnto me; enough (good Sir) I beſeech you no more, for Gods ſake, leaue off while it is well, and doe that (as you loue me) which I ſhall aduiſe you vnto: Let me then intreat you Sir, that you will haue the patience to ſtay a while at the turning of this ſtreet, through which you ſaw vs now come, for the next houſe ſaue one, at the end of this ſtreet, is mine; we goe but a little wayes off here, to fetch a peece of worke, that I haue put forth to doing, I ſhall make no ſtay, but come backe by and by, and be inſtantly with you. We will not tarry ſcarce the turning of your hand, and then you ſhall goe in with mee into my houſe; for there lodges no body, but I, and my maid, and there you ſhall ſee I will bee at your ſeruice, as you ſhall be pleaſed to command me; beſides, you ſhall heare me ſing, and play in that manner, that you neuer heard a ſweeter voyce, nor ſaw a better or quicker hand vpon a Virginall. Get you thither (my deare) whither I haue directed you, that you may not be ſeene to haue come along with me; for I am a married woman, of honorable parents, well reported of by my neighbours, and generally wel thought of, and I would not willingly loſe this their good opinion; yet you ſeeme vnto mee to bee a a gentleman of that quality and noblenеſſe, that I would willingly hazard both my perſon, my reputation, and whatſoeuer elſe is deareſt vnto me, for your ſake. I beleeu'd her in all that ſhee had ſaid; and did now thinke my ſelfe as cock-ſure of her, as if I had had her already betweene mine armes. I did as ſhe commanded mee, ſtanding cloſe vpright againſt the corner, where I continued from halfe houre paſt eight of the night, till the clocke had ſtrooke eleuen, and euer now and then me thought I had a glimpſe of them, and that I ſaw the bulkes of them a far of, making towards mee, but I might as well haue ſtaid there till this day, for any comming againe of theirs. The deuil a Miſtreſſe, or mayd of them, that I could ſee any more. When I ſaw that it was ſo late, and that they ſtaid ſo long, I imagined with my ſelfe, that ſhee had ſome Gallant to her ſeruant, and that ſhee being gone to his houſe, he would not giue her leaue to returne. For the which I did blame her, but not much; for my ſelfe would haue done the like by her, if ſhee had come once within my doores. I perſwaded my ſelfe, that ſhe could not helpe it; and that it was not in her hands to do as ſhe would: and ſaid to my ſelfe; *Ann, ſeran buenas mangas, deſpues de Paſcua:* It is no great matter; A payre of ° ſleeues, will not doe amiſſe after Eaſter. What is not to day, may be to morrow: and as good then as now. There are more dayes in the weeke then one; as there are more fingers then one, on the hand. Thus goes the world; one day followes on the P necke of another; but it is the faſhion of it, To be all for the preſent. I tooke notice of the doore againſt another time, and went walking along another way, as I was led along by my deſires. Anon after, I returned thither againe, whither when I was come, all was very huſh and quiet; there was no memory nor ſigne of any one body in all that ſtreet, nor at any doore or window, any noyſe to be heard, nor any noſe, no not ſo much as of a dogge, or of a cat, that peeped out. I ſtood prying and watching from one ſide to the other; I fetcht many turnes, I cought, hauk't, and ſpit; I made a noyſe with my feet, but all in vaine, and to no purpoſe in the world. In the end, hauing ſtaid there a great while, and being now growne weary with walking, as well as with expectation, I was reſolued to get mee home to mine Inne, as deſpairing of any good hopes for that night: Which as I was about to doe, I might eſpie from a little window, a countenance, which by its interpreter, the tongue, ſeemed to be a womans, who had thruſt out her head at a little window, whoſe face I could not ſee, or if I had, I could not giue you an account thereof, for that it was ſo darke. I beganne to talke youthfully to her, (or rather fooliſhly, for ſuch kinde of parlees are but fooleries,) but ſhe told me that ſhe was none of thoſe I lookt after, marry ſhe had a mayde, that I might happely make loue vnto, that was a drudge of the kitchen, and ſcoured

Prouerbe.
° Buenas ſon mangas, deſpues de paſcua. *The meaning whereof, is, when that which we deſire, comes to vs ſomewhat later then we could haue wiſht it.* Covarr. verb. mangas.

Prouerbe.
P Vn dia, viene tras otro.

Guzman *talkes with a wench from a window.*

ſcoured her pots and her pannes. But be ſhe, as ſhe may be; what euer ſhe were, ſhe ſpake ſo well, and intertained mee ſo for the time, that I quite forgot my ſelfe for the ſpace of two houres that we interchanged talke, all that long while ſeeming vnto me but one ſhort minute. But loe, (if it offend not thine eares,) whilſt we were thus pratling, comes out a deuilliſh curre, one of *Belzebubs* whelpes, which as it ſhould ſeeme, flew eagerly forth of one of the neighbours houſes thereabouts, & fell a barking and balling ſo loud, that it was not poſſible for vs to heare or vnderſtand one another: The window was high, the woman ſpake very low, there was a pretty freſh wind abroad, and the dog did ſo lay on, and ſpend his mouth ſo faſt, that being willing to remedy that fault, I groaped with my feet for a ſtone, that I might throw it at him, and not finding any, I caſt downe mine eyes to the ground, and I might perceiue neere vnto the wall, a little copped blacke thing, which I tooke to bee a ſtone. Preſently I catcht it vp in my hand, but it was not a ſtone, nor nothing ſo hard; but had quickly found that I had be-ſmeared my fingers; I ſought haſtily to ſhake it off, and giuing a flirt with my hand to fling it away from mee, I gaue my fingers ends ſuch a ſmart ierke againſt the wall, that I was much pained therewith; and to eaſe the tingling that I had in my nayles, I clapt my fingers to my mouth ere I was aware: but I forthwith repented me of what I had done. My often ſpitting would not mend the matter, and therefore I ſought for helpe with my other hand from my pocket, thinking to take thence my handkercher; but there was no ſuch thing to be found. This ſtrucke me into my dumpes, and made me melancholly, to thinke how the ſcuruy harlotry had conycatcht me. And I was ſo angry beſides, to ſee how my mouth, and my hands were inammeled, that with very choller, my eyes were ready to ſtart out of my head; my guts were likewiſe in a good forwardnes to haue leapt out of my mouth, being vpon the point to vomit out of my ſtomacke all that I had within me, as thoſe women vſe to do, that haue a fit of the Mother. And the more to anger me, this ſcuruy curre did ſo perſecute me with his bawling, that my Gentle-woman was forced to with-draw her-ſelfe, and to ſhut to her window, and I driuen to looke out ſome thing, to rid me of this odious and filthy ſtinke. I rubb'd my teeth againſt the wall, as well as I could, thinking that way to doe my ſelfe good. Well, when I ſaw it would be no better, I returned in a great rage to my Inne, with purpoſe to returne the next night to the ſame place, to ſee if I could by chance meet with that good wench, that had ſold me this Greyhound.

How Guzman *was beſmear'd.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes from Saragoça, and comes to Madrid; where he turnes Merchant, and is married. He breakes his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens ſubtill trickes. And of the inconuenience of counter-writings; and of their remedy.*

AS ſoone as I came home, I got me to the well, and feigning that I would refreſh my ſelfe there a while, (becauſe I would not haue my ſeruant acquainted with this diſgracefull accident) I will'd him to draw me vp two buckets of water. Which when hee had done; with the one, I waſht my hands, and with the other my mouth, hauing almoſt rubbed off the skinne from either, and yet did not reſt contented and fully ſatisfied of my ſelfe, I had taken ſuch a villanous conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. I could not fall aſleepe for my life, nor ſettle my ſelfe to reſt all that night, for thinking on that truth which the wench had told me, that I ſhould neuer while I liu'd meete with a quicker or a nimbler hand. See now whether ſhe ly'd or no? I am ſure I ſhall neuer forget her words,

ſo

ſo good cauſe haue I to remember them, for that which fell out afterwards. The *Gracian Helen* (I aſſure you) nor the *Romane Lucretia*, cannot be more, or oftner remembred by others, then ſhee by me. And yet, when I was thinking on her, the others conuerſation would ſeeke to put that out of my head, one ſeeking to thruſt out the other, ſo that I was as it were diſtracted betweene them both. I would haue had them (like nayles) to haue driuen out one another, that I might haue heard no more newes of them. And when I began to ſhut the doore of my remembrance to theſe, this ſame ſcuruy copped pibble ſtone came flying in at a by-window, the very conceit whereof, began a-freſh to turne my ſtomacke. What a bad night muſt we needs make of this, hauing to doe with ſo many? For if q *Duero*, did compaſſe me in on the one ſide; *Peñatajada*, did girt me in on the other. But when my hat was come to its colour, & that I had conſidered a little better on the buſineſſe, I ſaid with my ſelfe; If this poore tricke (not for any great hurt that it did doe me, but only for that it was a tricke put vpon me) I can thus hardly digeſt, and that it makes my ſtomacke to riſe, as oft as I thinke vpon it; how will my kinde kindred in *Genoa*, digeſt thoſe gudgeons, that they ſwallowed? how brooke that famous ieſt, which ſticks ſo cloſe to their ribs? If ſuch a r toy as this, a meere trifle, not worth the talking of, moue my patience ſo much, how would it haue wrought vpon me, had it beene a matter of momẽt? Thus did I paſſe away the night, thinking one while on this, another on that; what I ſhould do with my ſelfe the next day, how beſtow my time, what cloathes I ſhould weare? or whether I were beſt to put on my great chaine, which I kept in ſtore for high Holy-dayes, and great Feaſts? what part of the Towne I ſhould quarter out? what words I ſhould ſpeake, to moue her affection? or what preſent I ſhould ſend her, to oblige her vnto me? Then throwing all theſe things out of my minde, as if they had neuer beene in my thought, I ſhould runne by and by backe againe (like a giddy-headed Spaniel) beating and queſting vpon the old haunt, ſaying to my ſelfe: If it ſhould be my good hap, to meet with this young crafty harlotry to morrow, what ſhall I doe vnto her? Shall I lay hands on her? No: Shall I take that from her, which ſhee filcht out of my pocket? Neither: What ſhall I do then? Shall I craue her better acquaintance, and deſire her friendſhip? Leaſt of all. Embracing therefore none of theſe, I aduiſed with my ſelfe, and ſaid; Why ſhould I trouble my ſelfe to ſeeke after her? To what end? I know the goodnes of her hand already, and how quicke & nimble her fingers be, be it for Virginall, Harpe, or any thing elſe that you will put them to. Let her go; God be her good ſpeed; and much good may it doe her with them, f *Alla ſe lo aya Marta con ſus pollos:* I could wiſh they had beene more for her ſake. Well may ſhee thriue with them. For if ſhee had not ſtood in need of them, and beene in want, I aſſure my ſelfe, ſhee would neuer haue put her-ſelfe to ſo much danger. I began to looke a litle better into my ſelfe, and when I had well conſidered what I was, and knew mine owne condition, and the courſes that I had run, I whiſpered my ſelfe in the eare, and ſaid; What complaints will not the butcherly Wolfe frame againſt the poore ſilly Lambe, accuſing him of troubling the water when he came to drinke, that he might pick a hole in his coat? A luſty ſtrong Mule can hardly carry the gold, the ſiluer, the pearle, the pretious ſtones, and the iewels, which I had purloynd, and come cleare away with them out of *Italy*, and yet ſticke not to finde fault with this poore ſoule, for a thing of nothing, that ſhee tooke from me, being perhaps vrged thereunto out of meere neceſſitie. O the miſerable condition of men! how apt, and how eaſie are we to complaine? O how much adoe, doe we make about a little! How take on, as though we were vndone! What a little loſſe, and what a deale of lamentation? O the immenſe and infinite goodnes of God! How much do we offend thy diuine Maieſtie? How little reckoning do we make of it? and yet how eaſily doſt thou forgiue vs our offences? What vaſſalage, and baſe ſubiection is that, which men doe yeeld to their owne paſſions?

And

q Duero. Rio famoſiſſimo en Eſpaña. Por el qual ſe dixo, yo ſoy Duero, que todas las aguas beuo. Covarr. verb. Duero.

Prouerbe.

r Quando aqueſte aſſi duele, que hara con guindas?

Prouerbe.

f Alla ſe lo aya Marta con ſus pollos. Los pollos de Marta, piden pan, y dan les agua Marta la piadoſa, &c. Covarr. pag. 541.

And becauſe the beſt of things, is the curbing of them, and to make vſe of them in their time and place; I know very well, and am able from thence to reade this lecture both to my ſelfe and others; That we ought to haue as much compaſſion of thoſe that offend, as we haue cauſe to enuie thoſe that forgiue. For mine owne part, I will follow this leſſon: Let her make herſelfe merry therefore with the money ſhee got from me; for I forgiue her with all my heart.

Now whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelfe, the day began to breake. The light, by little and little, had crept in through ſome chinkes of the windowes, when together with it, a little ſleepe likewiſe came creeping vpon my ſelfe, being willing to haue my ſenſes clogg'd with thoſe ſoft-lined fetters, in which I lay faſt till nine of the clocke, and ſlept ſo ſoundly, that I could not ſay; This mouth is mine. Nor was I ſo glad that I had ſlept ſo well, as that I found my ſelfe thereby the better diſpoſed to watch the night following, without being bound to pay that debt to nature, when my game was at the faireſt, if fortune ſhould chance to fauour me ſo much, as to offer me a faire occaſion, to finiſh what I had begun. I roſe vp well ſatisfied, wiſhing the houre were come, wherein I might goe to that deſired place. I made me ready, and went to Maſſe, and viſited the Image of our Lady of * *Pilar*, which is one of the greateſt deuotions, that is in Chriſtendome. I ſpent that day in walking vp and downe; I ſaw my Widow, who came to the window, to waſh her hands. I could haue wiſht, that thoſe drops of water, which fell from her ſnowie fingers, would haue trickled downe vpon my heart, to ſee if they would haue beene able to quench the fire, that flamed in my breaſt. I had not the face to ſpeake a word to her: No not ſo much as, God ſaue you.

I ſtood leaning againſt the corner of a wall, putting my ſelfe in a good handſome poſture, looking on her with a wanton eye, a cheerefull looke, and a ſmiling countenance. And ſhee likewiſe ſmilde, and talking with her ſeruants, who attended there on her, after ſhee had waſht, they carryed away the towell, the baſon, and the ewer, which when they had ſet them aſide, they put their heads out at the window, and lookt vpon me. I hauing receiued this fauour, thought I had now brought my buſineſſe to an end. I ſtretcht out my legs, and my breſt, and lifting vp my head, and bearing vp my necke ſomewhat ſtiffe, I made two or three ſhort turnes, throwing one corner of my cloake ouer my ſhoulder, ſetting my hat on t'one ſide, laying my left hand on my ſword, and reſting the right on my ſide, treading my ſteps in ſtate, and turning my rolling eyes vpon her, I walk't leyſurely before her window, my eye being neuer off on her. Whereat they laugh't a good; and I reſted well contented. They made themſelues merry, and I was very well pleaſed. I aſſumed ſo much libertie to my ſelfe, and behaued my ſelfe ſo boldly, as if I had already obtained what I deſired; and as though the doores and windowes of the houſe had of purpoſe been ſet open for me to enter in. And all the while I was vſing this Courtſhip, and performing this my Loue-exerciſe, ſhe ſtood me ſtill, and did not once offer to wagge from the window.

Many Gentlemen paſt that way, well clad, young, able, and handſome: yet in my iudgement, none of them like to me, neyther in apparell nor perſon. In euery one of them I could haue found one fault or other; but in me, there was nothing to be excepted againſt. One came ſhort in the handſome ſhape and feature of his foot; another wanted a well made legge, the calfe was too little, or the ſmall too big; ſome were too tall, and other-ſome too lowe; ſome too fat, and others too leane: This, went a little limping; that, awry. All had one blemiſh or other; I only, was compleat; I was *I perſe I*; I was like a Rule, without exception. All in me, was in true Mood and Figure; In a full and perfect ſymmetry, hauing a iuſt and euen proportion of euery particular part, in reſpect of the whole frame. And being of beſt both grace and fauor in my perſon, I was

* Pilar de Saragoça, *One of the famouſeſt Churches in the world, for that our bleſſed Lady appeared there to the Apoſtle* S. Iames, *and willed him to build a Church there to her honour.* Padre Pineda lib. 10. Monar. Eccleſ. cap. 25. ſect 4.

The Spaniſh poſture, when they court their Miſtreſſe.

was graced and fauoured more by her, then all the reſt: for ſhee did not ſhew them the like countenance, as ſhe did mee.

Night drew on, ſhe left the window, but before ſhe with-drew herſelfe, ſhe turned her eyes towards me, and ſo went in. I hyed me home to my lodging, being rich in hopes, and muſing vpon that which in this caſe was fitteſt to be done. Mine Hoſte came to me to keepe me company; but becauſe I tooke no content in any thing but my contemplations, I intreated him to hold me excuſed, for that I had buſineſſe to goe abroad. I ſupt, and taking my ſword with me, I went out of doores in purſuit of my buſineſſe: you ſhall ſee how euill is mans inclination: For notwithſtanding that I had made, (as you haue heard) that diſcourſe with my ſelfe, in fauour of that woman, which had cozened mee of a few Royals, and had put on a reſolution to let it paſſe, and neuer to thinke more of it; yet my thoughts were much troubled therewith, and like ſo many Bryez or horſe-flyes, did make me kick and ſtampe againſt my former determination, and would not let me be in quiet, but that I muſt needs goe and ſeeke her out. Whereupon, I gaue that night a hundred turnes about the very ſelfe ſame ſtreet, hauing a conceit with my ſelfe, that it would be my good hap to light once more luckily vpon her in the ſame manner as before. But not knowing well why, for what cauſe, or to what end I did it, but walked idly there vp and downe, till the houre was come. I had waited long, and when I ſaw to what little purpoſe, I thought to make homewards towards my lodging: and as I entred into the *Coſſo*, by a croſſe-way, right ouer-againſt my Miſtreſſes houſe, I might diſcerne a pretty wayes off, two ſeuerall companies, one on t'one ſide of the ſtreet, and t'other on the other. Thereupon, I returned a little backe, and ſtepping into a porch, I beganne to thinke with my ſelfe; I am a ſtranger, this Gentle-woman of good ranke and quality, well deſcended, and rich withall. There is generall notice taken of her worth and meanes. This fleſh [u] need not to haue beene hung vp vpon the hookes for want of a Cat. No man will ſay that this was not a woman worth the looking after, but rather that there was a great deale of reaſon, that ſhe ſhould be wooed & ſued vnto, and to be ſerued and obſerued by thoſe that had the happineſſe to ſee her. Theſe (ſaid I to my ſelfe) doe not wait here to giue or receiue an almes: I know not who they are, nor what they pretend; whether they be friends & all of one companie, or whether any one of them be intereſſed here; if by misfortune I ſhould come amongſt them, and that they ſhould hedge me in in the midſt of them, and make a ring about me, the would not onely muffle me with their cloakes, but make me as full of holes as a Sieue, and pricke mee in the body with their Rapiers points, as Bulls are ſtucke with darts, when they are bayted in the market-place, and perchance leaue me for dead. This Country is dangerous, the men bold and inſolent; their weapons of aduantage, they many, and I a poore ſingle man. And therefore (*Guzman*) [x] looke to thy ſelfe. And if they be enemies, and haue a mind to goe together by the eares, it is not I that can part them, I ſhall neuer be able to make them friends, but indanger my ſelfe, and doe no good. Goe the world which way it will, fall backe, or fall edge, the beſt courſe for me, is to get mee home to my lodging, I am ſure that is the ſafeſt way. And fitter it were for me to goe ro mine Inne, and looke to my trunkes, and to get me out of Towne as ſoone as I can. For I neither know any, nor am knowne by any. Beſides *à quien ſe muda, [y] dios le ayuda.* God helpes thoſe that alter their euill condition. I betooke me to my heeles, and came in a trice to my lodging. Aſſoone I came in, I preſently got me to bed, where I reſted, with much more ſleepe, and a great deale leſſe paine, then the night before. For indeed, there is not any thing that doth ſooner thruſt theſe loue toyes out of our heads, then to ſee ſuch kind of viſions. Whereupon I reſolued the next day to leaue the Citie, and ſo I did; By little and little I drew towards *Madrid*; And when I come to *Alcala de Henares*, I abode there eight daies, for that it ſeemed vnto me, one of the fineſt and

Prouerbe.
[u] Eſtaie la carne en el garabato por falta de gato. *Alluding to thoſe women that are retyr'd, and chaſte; not ſo much out of their owne will, a for want of opportunity, and a naturall reſpect, and ſhamefaſt feare, that the world may not take notice of their incontinency.*
Caſta eſt quam nemo rogauit. Ovid. leg. 1. *And anon after.* Aut ſi ruſticitas non vetat, ipſa rogat.
Alſo we ſay; Que alguna dama tiene garabato; *when with her beauty, and other good graces, ſhe draws as it were with hookes, your gallants hearts after her.* Covarr. verb. Garabato.

Prouerbe.
[x] *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Guarte, noſea nabo.

Prouerbe.
[y] A quien, ſe muda, dios le ayuda.

Alcala, *an Vniuerſity not aboue a dayes iourney from* Madrid.

and pleaſanteſt places of any other that I had ſeene, ſince my comming out of *Italy*: and if the loue of the Court, had not clapt wings to my feet, I am verily perſwaded, that I ſhould haue continued there ſtill, that I might haue inioyed that freſh and delicate Riuer, their plentifull prouiſion, their rare and ſingular wits, and many other good intertainments. But becauſe *Madrid* was *patria communis*, the common mother to vs all, and a large field, wherein euery man might range at pleaſure, I thought it no diſcretion, to forgoe the Sea, for a Riuer. And for leſſer things, to neglect the greater. In fine, euery man may there follow that which hee hath moſt mind to. There no man knowes one another; no not ſo much as thoſe that liue within the ſame doores, and lodge in the ſame houſe. This drew me thither, and thither I came. The face of the Court, as alſo of the towne, was quite changed, ſince I left it. There was no Grocer there to be heard of, no memory now, that there was euer any ſuch man. I found the fields peopled with houſes, children become men, young folkes growne ancient, the ancient old, and the old dead. The high wayes turned into ſtreets, and the ſtreets altered in their bredth and building; finding euery thing in good order, and farre better then when I left it. I lighted on a lodging, that liked me exceeding well; and ſo well, that I ſtaid full eight dayes within doores, without putting ſo much as my foot ouer the threſhold, being onely tide thus faſt by the legge, by the good company and ſweet conuerſation of mine Hoſteſſe. Who, beſides her handſomneſſe, had a good faſhion of behauiour, and a pleaſing kind of entertainment. She was diſcreet in her cariage, and at boord knew very well how to demeane her ſelfe. Thoſe few dayes that I ſtaid there, ſhee made me very good cheere, and did with all poſſible punctuality, ſeeke to pleaſe and obſerue mee, fitting my humour to a hayre.

Prouerbe. [z] Dexar vn mar, por el arroya.

Madrid *much altered in a few yeares.*

Guzman *takes a lodging in an Inne.*

While I continued there, I went caſting vp of my accompts, plotting and deuiſing with my ſelfe, what courſe of life I ſhould runne, how, and vpon what I ſhould liue, and in concluſion Vanity weighed downe the ſcales. And firſt of all I beganne my buſineſſe with gallantry and brauery; being euery day more fine then other. I made me two different ſutes of cloathes, with long ſilke ſtockings, of the beſt *Naple* ſilke, neate ones they were, and ſtrongly ſow'd to my payn'd hoſe: And I tooke another ſute out of my trunke for change; thinking with my ſelfe, that being thus well clad, and getting me a good horſe, and taking two ſeruants to attend me, by ſhewing my ſelfe abroad in this good equipage, I might the eaſier vent my merchandize, and meete with thoſe, that would buy theſe my iewels of mee. I put this in execution, and beganne to braue it, and to ſpend liberally. My Hoſteſſe was not ſhort, either handed, or witted, but a gentle courteous dame: ſhe ſought in all things to pleaſe my [a] palate. She had found out the beating of my pulſe, and need not to be taught how to apply her ſelfe to my malady. It hapned, that amongſt many of thoſe her ſhe-friends that did often come and viſite me, one of them brought along with her in her company a yong wench, well fauored, well behau'd, hauing a face like an Angel; and though ſhe were in extreame both faire & beautifull, yet was ſhe far more wily and ſubtile; it was a notable crafty carrion. To this wench, did I make loue; ſhe ſhewes her ſelfe coy and diſdainfull; gifts [b] molifie rockes, and breake the hardeſt ſtones in ſunder. The more I did *regalar* her, and the more courteſies I beſtowed vpon her, the more kind ſhe grew; of a Haggard, ſhe became a gentle Hawke; and though ſomewhat wilde and ſtrange at firſt, yet now was ſhee taught to come to fiſt; I could play with her beake, caſt her, and giue her ſtones, ſo that now ſhe was manag'd, as I would haue her. I continued this friendſhip with her for ſome few dayes, in all which time, (as if ſhe had beene ſome gutter to receiue all the raine that fals; or ſome *Chimiſt*, or *Alchimiſt*, to melt a mans money, and to extract quinteſſences) there was not that day that paſt ouer her head, wherein ſhe did not begge or craue ſomething of me;

He turnes Gallant.

Prouerbe. a *The Spaniſh phraſe is*, Dauame cañas a las manos.

Prouerbe. b Dadiuas, ablandon peñas.

Guzman *makes loue to a young wench.*

me;peeling,and polling me, as much, as possibly she could; carrying her selfe therein so slily,& so cunningly, as if she had bin a woman of much riper yeares, and well beaten to these kind of businesses;neuer a Courtizan of them all,could go beyond her. But she was the better Verste(I doubt not)in these things, in that she had so good a tutor of her Mother.Once(amongst the rest)I remember she intreated me, that I would buy her a gowne of crimson damaske, which a Broaker had to sell at the *Puerta*[c] *del sol*,trimmed with gold lace,and richly embroidered,the price no lesse then 1000 Royals.This seeming in her an excessiue kind of liberty,that she had assumed to herselfe, to dispose of my moneys at her pleasure,(for albeit,I was not a little taken with her loue, and though I saw her crauing nature, yet I had not dealt so ill with her, but that I had bestowed on her aboue 100. Crowns one way or other, and that if I should suffer her still to [a] vntap my vessell,she would sucke me so dry at last, that she would not leaue one drop in al the hogshead)I would not giue it her,but grew somewhat angry with her;she sets light by it,was offended with my denyal,took it to hart,& thought hardly of me,and that I had vs'd her vnkindly.I would take no notice of it. The mother & the daughter,were both displeased with me.I said nothing,but lookt on,to see,what would become of this businesse. They came not at me,nor did I send to them.They entred into counsell with mine Hostesse. The Wolfe & the Foxe, had both laid their heads together, how they might intrap the poore harmelesse Sheepe; and all three did combine them-selues against me. Now here see their roguery, and what a villanous plot they had laid for me. When I was set downe to my meat, when I was iust in the midst of my dinner, not dreaming of any ill, that was intended towards mee, I might perceiue an *Alguazil de Corte*,make towards my lodging. Who, when hee came within hearing, speakes out aloud, Body of me; *Aqui morira Sanson, y quantos, con el son*; Here shall [e] *Samson* die the death, and as many as be here with him. My end (said I to my selfe) is now at hand. I thrust the table from mee, and rose vp much troubled. Then said the *Alguazil* vnto me; Pacifie your selfe Sir, and rest you quiet, we come not to apprehend you for a thiefe. It cannot bee for any other thing (thought I with my selfe;) for he had nam'd the word thiefe before, and I did verily beleeue that he spake in a frumping and scoffing kind of manner; and that for this cause he was come thither to arrest me. That word strucke my heart so dead,that I was not able to speake a ready word, much lesse to saue my selfe by flight, but stood as still as a stocke. The Catch-poles had made good the doore, the window was of the least,& too high from the street, from whence I could not get downe so easily,but that they would take hold on me,ere I came to the ground;or if I escapt their hands,it was a thousand pound to a penny, I should breake my necke in the fall. At the last, for all my spirits were thus troubled within me, I did (as well as I could) aske him, what was his will with me? He (hauing much adoe to forbeare laughing, and hauing no share of the care that I was in) putting his hand into his bosome, pul'd out a Warrant,by vertue whereof the *Alcaldes* had commanded him to apprehend me vpon the breach of that law of theirs, *de* [f] *vitiatione virginum*,of cracking of maiden-heads, and the deflowring of a virgin. The deuill take thee for a wicked woman as thou art, and me for an arrant villaine, (said I) if I know what thou wouldst haue, or what thou dost meane by this: And let mee neuer liue, if she doe not lie like a hundred thousand diuels. I sware vnto him, that it was a most sinfull and abhominable vntruth, and a testimony as full of falshood, as God is true. The *Alguazil* smiling vpon me, said, I beleeue you Sir, but told me withall, that he might not exceed his Commission, nor was it in his power to release me. And therefore wisht me to put on my cloake, and to goe along with him to prison. Now I was in the bryers; I knew not how to winde my selfe out of them; my finall ruine was before my face; I had trunkes; what ones they were, you your selues can imagine; my seruants not knowne, I lay

c *A place so called, in the high street of* Madrid, *neare vnto* Ian Felipe.

d *The Spanish phrase is*, No quedarà bolo en hiesto.

Vnkindnesse growes betwixt Guzman *and his wench.*

A plot to cozen Guzman.

Prouerbe.

e Aqui morira Sanson,y quantos con el son; *A kind of* Rodomontado, *or proud menacing.*

An Alguazil *comes to arrest* Guzman.

Guzman *much dismaid.*

f *The Spanish phrase is*, Por el virgo de justilla.

in a lodging where they had made a[g] bed for me, or rather a trap to catch me. I did feare this was but the Prologue to the Tragedy, that would come after, making this but a colour for the better cozening me of all that I had. If I left my trunkes there, they would haue beene as safe in the ſtreet; and if I ſhould remoue them thence, I knew not whither to carry them; And to goe to priſon is like vnto thoſe, who goe to play in a Tauerne, that is ſeated on the top of ſome cold mountain; who begin in Cards, & end in drunkennes, falling aſleepe with the pot between their hands. Thinking with my ſelfe, that though I went thither for a trifle, I could not tell, whether theſe mole-hils would bee made mountaines; and ſmall occaſions breed mighty inconueniences. So that I was at a ſtand with my ſelfe, and knew not which way to take. I tooke the *Alguazil* aſide, and intreated him, as he did honor one onely God, that he would not be the inſtrument of my vndoing. I told him, that wealth that I had, was like to run great hazard of being vtterly loſt, and that he would be pleaſed to deuiſe ſome meanes, that they might not doe me ſo great a wrong; for that I aſſured my ſelfe they had a purpoſe to rob me, and they were minded to make a ſpoyle and a prey of me, and that this was onely their intent, and nothing elſe.

He was an honeſt man (which was no ſmall good fortune, conſidering his calling) diſcreet, and courteous, he knew my innocency, as one that was well acquainted with the contrary parties courſe of life; and I promiſed to bee ſo thankfull vnto him for this his kindneſſe, that he ſhould haue no cauſe to complaine, or repent him of the fauour he ſhould afford me in this caſe. Hee told me, that I ſhould not need to trouble my ſelfe any farther in the buſineſſe, for I ſhould find him ready to ſerue me in all that he was able. He left his ſeruants there to looke vnto me, and went to ſeeke out the aduerſe party, that brought him thither, who was in my Hoſteſſes chamber. He went to and fro betweene vs, with offer of ſuch and ſuch conditions, to accommodate the buſineſſe; and in the end, he threatned them, that if they would not come to agreement, and make ſome reaſonable end, he would ſweare the truth in my fauour, and diſcouer their cheatings, and their rogueries, if they would not reſt contended with that which was fitting.

They, when they ſaw how ill their cauſe was like to goe with them, were willing in the end to put it wholly into his hands, and ſo this quarrell was ended between vs, for two thouſand Royals. For he hauing put the mother to her oath, ſhe ſwore, that I had promiſed to pay for the gowne, and double the value of it in money, and that if this would not content her, ſhe ſhould haue more. But ſhe I know reſted well contented, and was glad with all her heart, that ſhe went thus away with theſe two thouſand Royals, becauſe ſhe knew they were not due vnto her. Well, I paid downe the money on the nayle, and wee went to the Regiſters office, and there had the bill daſht: So that the ſute was now at an end. It coſt me in the whole, a matter of two hundred Ducats; & within halfe an houre after all was diſpatcht, it was darke night. But I would not ſtay a minute longer in that lodging, nor would not ſo much as haue ſet my foot within the doores of that wicked houſe, had it not beene to haue away my trunkes, and ſuch other things as I had there. Which done, I preſently parted thence, and went to ſeeke out another. I was not curious, but tooke the firſt that came to hand, till I could fit my ſelfe better, and meet with ſome quarter part of a handſome and honeſt houſe, with perſons in it of ſome worth and credit. I bought me ſome moueables and ſuch houſhold-ſtuffe, as was neceſſary for my ſelfe, and my ſeruants, and prouided me pots and pans for the kitchen. Whileſt I was making this prouiſion, it was my hap one morning to meet with the ſame *Alguazil* in the[h] *Deſcalças*, and after wee had both heard Maſſe, at the ſaid Monaſtery, we talkt together, and I ſware vnto him by the bleſſed Sacrament, that was there vpon the Altar, that I had neuer made any ſuch promiſe to that woman; he told me, Sir, not onely in thoſe things which I know, but in

[g] *It is an vſuall phraſe in Spaine to ſay*; Eſta hecha ſu cama. *Such a mans bed is a making; when there is ſome matter a working againſt him for his hurt.*

Guzman *treats in priuate with the* Alguazil.

The Alguazil *wrought to fauour* Guzman.

Guzman *compounds his buſineſſe.*

Guzman *leaues his lodging.*

[h] *A monaſtery in* Madrid. *The diſcourſe that paſt betwixt* Guzman *and the* Alguazil *at the* Deſcalças.

in thoſe, which I know not, you might haue ſpared this oath with mee, much leſſe was there need of it in a thing of this nature; for this is well knowne, to be a packt peece of knauery, and a plot laid of purpoſe to picke your purſe. I know this young baggage; who beſides this, which ſhe hath now put vpon you, hath exhibited two other ſeuerall bils in the Court in this kind. The firſt, before the Vicar of this towne, againſt a poore [1] Subdeacon, who came hither about a certaine buſineſſe; he was the ſonne of honeſt and rich parents, who for quietneſſe ſake, was content (good man) to haue his cloathes torne from his backe by them, and being ſtript of all that he had, went away (as they ſay) in his ſhirt, they leauing him as poore as *Iob*. Afterwards they commenced the like ſute here in this towne, making a grieuous complaint againſt a *Teniente*, who was a *Catalunian*, and exceeding rich: They firkt him too, and fleeced him as well as they could; but this man hath deeply ſworne, that hee will bee fully reuenged on her. And now hath ſhe complained on your ſelfe to the *Alcaldes*; And had it not beene, that I held it the leſſer inconuenience to pay them that money, then to yeeld your ſelfe a priſoner, leauing your goods (as they ſay) at ſixe and ſeauen, I aſſure you I would not haue giuen way vnto it, but haue executed my office. But of two euils, the leaſt is to bee choſen. For albeit you would out of doubt haue beene freed in the end, yet would you not haue procur'd your liberty in haſte; for much time muſt firſt haue beene ſpent in the proofes, and then in the replies to thoſe proofes; vvhereas this vvay, though you were at an vniuſt charge, yet haue you by this meanes, auoided the priſon, your ſhackles, your Viſits, your Atturneys, your Proctors, & your Regiſters, bringing in this relation, and returning that relation, this information, and that information, al which is but vexation of ſpirit, & prolongation of time, trouble, charge, and diſcontent. The bargaine was driuen cheaper this way, and with a great deale leſſe diſtaſte. I vow this vnto you, as I am a Gentleman, and an honeſt man, that in all the time that I haue ſerued his Maieſty with this *Vare* in my hand, which is now going vpon the three and twentieth yeare, that of all the caſes that I haue ſeene in this kind, I haue not knowne aboue three in three hundred, that haue beene iuſtly proſecuted in Court: For he that feeds vpon that diſh, (vnleſſe hee haue very ill lucke) ſeldome or neuer payes for it. But when ſuch things come in queſtion, the accuſer hath commonly the better of the accuſed; the plaintiffe will bee ſure to fare well, how ere it goe with the defendant; he hath that he lookes for, he cares for no more; for it is in this, as at *Beſt* [k] *betruſted*, amongſt Coſtermongers, the firſt ſpeaker ſcapes ſcot-free. And theſe kinde of people will neuer giue ouer this tricke, till they haue lighted vpon one vnluckie bird or other, whom they may rob both of his credit, and his money, or get them ſuch a husband as may ſupply their wants, and neceſſities. It is like vnto ſome botch or kernell, which firſt begins in the finger, but afterwards breaks out in the arme-pit: And the cauſe of it is, becauſe the delinquent either ſodainly flies vpon the accuſation, or is ſo poore a fellow, that he is not worth the looking after.

Theſe young queanes, either walke the ſtreets, to ſee if they can meet with a good chapman, or drop into ſome friends houſe, or keepe at home at their fathers or their mothers houſe: this, or that other young man, enters within doores, comes into the kitchen, where hee hath opportunity to ſpeake vnto her, and ſhe to anſwer him: They are all alone, the doores ſhut, time enough, will they want not, occaſion is offered, and the bargaine driuen. But this is practiſed for the moſt part amongſt the poorer ſort; and the party hath no ſooner the ſent of thoſe raſhers of Bacon, that are m king ready for him, but hee preſently gets him out of the houſe, and comes there no more. Now, when their parents come to know it, that they may not loſe the fruit of their labours, they giue her an admonition, or gentle reprehenſion. And afterwards they themſelues ſtand ſentinell, and haue a nearer eye to the buſineſſe, and ſo order

[1] *The Spaniſh word is* Cauallero de epiſtola, *becauſe it is the ſubdeacons office to ſing, or reade the Epiſtle of the Maſſe.* Couarr. 358.

The inconueniences of impriſonment and Law-ſutes.

[k] *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Echar la buena barba, *A ſport whereat one payes for all the wafers that he and his fellowes eate, by asking the ſeller this queſtion, Who is the honeſteſt man of all vs? which is ſignified,* por la barba. *By alluſion, it is ſpoken of thoſe, who with ſet ſpeeches, and flattering phraſes gull a man of his money.*

The faſhion of your Spaniſh queanes.

the matter for her, that shee may fall into such a mans hands, of whom they may make profit of this their merchandize. Whence, it oftentimes comes to passe, that he that is least in fault, [1] smarts most. Then said I vnto him, I pray Sir tell me, if these things neuer happen, but in secret, and vnseene, none knowing thereof but them-selues, who dare to sweare, or can truly take his oath, vnlesse shee shreeke and cry out, whereby it may appeare, that he did offer her force and violence, or that the people came in and found them bussling together, or in the act it selfe? He told me, such an oath is not necessarie, nor in such cases doe they put the witnesse to proue, that he saw them together in that actuall manner, for this were an impossibilitie, the businesse being carryed in that secrecy, as you propound it. It will serue turne, that he, or they, depose, that they were seene to talke together, or to haue beene in priuate together, or that hee was seene to kisse her, or to embrace her in his armes, or that he was in some chamber with her, the doore shut vpon them, or that they had seene some such passages, by which it might well be presumed, that such a thing was either done, or in doing. For what with these circumstances, and her owne asseueration, standing stifly vnto it, that he had rauisht her, and forced her against her will, it being found vpon inspection, by a Iurie of women, that her mayden-head is crackt, and that shee is no more a Virgin, this shall be a strong and sufficient proofe against him. I my selfe (said the *Alguazil*) saw in this Court, a very rigorous course taken in this kinde, and one of the strangest Cases, that I beleeue you haue scarce euer heard of the like heretofore.

There was once abiding in this Towne a very handsome and beautifull Gentle-woman, a stranger in this place, who came hither (being baited out of her owne Country) for no other end, then to seeke out some meanes to liue. Shee profest her-selfe to be a maid, and in that habit shee went a while vp and downe the Towne. A certaine Prince in this Court had a great minde vnto her; he pretends, and procures her loue; he giues her a ticket vnder his owne hand for to pay her eight hundred Ducats, in which writing, shee would haue it set downe, that there should be a respect had vnto her honour; specifying therein, that he bestow'd the same vpon her by way of dowry for her aduancement in mariage. The Prince did not pay this money at the day, shee put his bond in sute, he answers not vnto it, shee gets out an execution against him, and recouers the money.

About some foure yeeres after (being fauoured by a certaine great person) shee prouided the like pickle for another, that was a stranger, who hauing had some dealings with her, shee picks a quarrell with him, and makes a grieuous complaint against him. And howbeit the defendant alledged against her the originall writing, and the payment of the principall, together with the interest, yet they condemn'd him, and made him to giue her full satisfaction, so that the poore Gentle-man was forced to pay her soundly for her cut Melon, it was argued to and fro, that shee was, and was not a maid; but not to dispute, whether shee were or no: Sure I am, that shee recouered twice or thrice in Court, that which shee neuer sold; and in this manner did shee goe away with the bucklers. And therefore (Sir) you haue not beene ill serued in this businesse, but haue well woond your selfe out of the bryars. For in good faith (Sir) the witnesses did threaten you sore, were violently bent against you, and spake very bloody words (though the wench was not so.) And so we tooke leaue one of another, he going his way, and I mine. I did much wonder to heare such businesses to be so carryed. Insomuch, that discoursing thereof with my selfe, I began by degrees to fall into consideration of the sacred Councell of *Trent*, which so holily, so iustly, and so lawfully had made prouision for clandestine mariages; and by which there was a remedie found out for so many inconueniences, stopping so many gaps, and rearing vp so many walls, to keepe them out, and hinder their entrance. And I did likewise weigh with my selfe, that if the secular power, would

Prouerbe.

[1] *The Spanish phrase is*: Quien menos culpa tiene, à lavar la lana. *And it is spoken by way of prouerbe*; Vos lavareyes la lana. de aquel, que le ha caydo la suerte mas trabajosa Comolos, que trabajan en los lavaderos; que vnos son apartadores. Otros tienen los mas oficios, que no son pocos: y los que lavan la lana tienen mayor trabajo, por andar en el agua todo el dia, desnudos. Covarr. 513.

A tale of a cunning queane.

would (as in iuſtice they ought) doe as much in theſe dayes in ſuch caſes, (as mine was) I verily perſwade my ſelfe, that there would not be the fifth, nay not the tenth part of thoſe lewd and naughty women, as are now (the more is the pitie) euery where abroad in the world, liuing to their owne, and others vndoing. For really, and truly, there is no ſuch thing as this *force*, which they ſo much inforce (that we may ſpeake it vnder *benedicite*) but that which they call *force*, is rather an accord and conſent of both parties. Nor is it poſſible, that one man alone ſhould force a woman, if ſhee of her owne will, or with a kinde of vnwilling willingneſſe, graunt him not that which he deſireth of her. And if ſhe giue way, and reſt contented with it, why doth ſhee queſtion and trouble him for it? And here I ſhall take occaſion, to tell you a true Storie, which hapned in a certaine place within the Signorie, or Iuriſdiction of *Andaluzia*.

A Tale of a Country Clowne.

There was a Country Clowne, a good honeſt day-labourer, that had a pretty young wench to his daughter, with whom a young fellow fell in loue, that was a neighbours ſonne of the ſame Pariſh; and in fine, hauing obtained what he deſired, when her father came to know of it, and that this young man had pluckt from her the faireſt flower of her garland, he made haſte to ſuch a Towne (that was the Head-Towne of that Diuiſion) to make his complaint againſt this his neighbours ſonne. The *Alcalde* hearkned with great attention to all that hee ſaid, and after that the poore man had informed him at full of the caſe, and had ſaid all that he could, hee ſaid vnto him: Well (my honeſt friend) you complaine here of this young man, that he hath tickled your daughter, & plaid the wanton with her, wherewith you find your ſelfe agrieu'd; Is it not ſo (my good friend?) yes (and it pleaſe your Worſhip) ſaid her father, it is as your Worſhip ſayes; you ſay very true Sir. And I am much agrieu'd with it indeed, for that he did diſhonour my daughter by force. Then the *Alcalde*, ſpake againe vnto him, and ſaid; Tell me (I prithee) how old is thy daughter, and how old is the young fellow? My daughter (ſaid the father) will be (next Auguſt) one and twenty yeare old, and the young man (as I take it) is ſome three and twenty. When the *Alcalde* heard him ſay ſo, in a rage he roſe vp from the bench, and frowning vpon him, ſaid angerly vnto him; And comeſt thou with this to me now? Haue I nothing elſe to doe (thinkeſt thou) but to heare euery idle fooliſh complaint? He twenty three, & ſhe twenty one: Let me heare no more of this (my friend) goe get you home, and reſt you quiet; here's a pretty accuſation with all my heart: one, one and twenty, and the other three and twenty, they might very well doe the buſineſſe, they could not chooſe, but well and willingly goe to it. If others, in the like caſe, ſhould receiue the like anſwer, and that there were a Law made, whereby it were enacted, That no woman, from eleuen yeares vpwards, dwelling in a Towne, ſhould pretend her-ſelfe to be forced; they would then be good perforce.

A digreſſion to another ſtorie of the like nature.

But vpon this ſubiect, may it pleaſe you to heare a ſingular accident, and a notable caſe in this kinde, which hapned (not long ago) in one of the principalleſt Cities of that moſt noble Common-wealth of *Venice*.

There liued in that Citie, an old woman, baſe in her birth, and poore in her meanes, who had a daughter, that was very louely, faire, and beautifull. And becauſe ſhee had not wherewithall to marry her, this crafty *Gabrina* (being an old cunning Hagg) deuiſed with her-ſelfe to make ſale of the puritie and virginitie of her daughter, and that not once, but many and many times: and theſe her wicked proceedings did proſper well with her. For ſhe would either be ſure to haue that before hand, which they had agreed vpon, or by the fauour of ſome principall perſon, this, or that other man, was faine to compound with her, and to make his peace as well as he could. One day amongſt the reſt, this handſome young wench, being ſeene and well eyed by a young Gallant, and one of the principall Gentle-men of that Citie, a ſingle man, and exceeding rich, vſed diuers meanes to winne her affection, and in the end obtained his purpoſe, and af-

ter that he had enioyed her, he did very liberally requite her for her kindneſſe. But the greedy old woman (who was couetouſneſſe it ſelfe) thinking this Lordly gift too little, made her moane to a particular Gentleman, complayning how ill ſhee had beene dealt withall.

He, as it were in a ieſting kinde of manner (ſcorning and hating in his heart the vile and baſe humor of this wicked & accurſed woman) ſaid thus vnto her; Thou knoweſt *Lena* (for that was her ſurname) that the moſt illuſtrious, and moſt excellent *Segnor Generale*, will ſhortly be here; and thou likewiſe knoweſt, what vpright iuſtice he doth indifferently adminiſter to euery one, without reſpect of perſons, and more particularly in ſuch caſes that concerne the good and honor of maydens. And therefore the beſt counſell that I can giue you, is, That you and your daughter *Ricciolina* get you both (as ſoone as he comes hither) vnto his Excellency, & plainly deliuer vnto him how *Signor Conde N.* hath forced and deflowred your daughter, and falling both a-weeping before him, yee further declare vnto him, that after he had had his will of her, he was not ſo good as his word with her, nor performed the promiſe which hee made vnto her; which was, That he would eyther giue her two hundred crownes, or get her a good husband. And that therfore, ſeeing that he did not cumply with you neither in the one, nor the other, that his Excellency would therefore be pleaſed to take this your wretched and wofull caſe into conſideration, and to doe you iuſtice. If you can doe this handſomely (as I know you are not to ſeeke, and can doe it better then I can aduiſe you) my life for yours, you will haue the day of him, and the buſineſſe will go cleare on your ſide. It was not long after, that the Generall his Excellency came, before whoſe preſence theſe women being brought, they opened this their falſe accuſation. Vpon which relation of theirs, his Excellency was much moued, and cauſed the *Conde* to be ſent for by one of his ſeruants: who, when hee came before him, was demanded, whether at any time he had had conuerſation with *Ricciolina* the daughter of *Lena*? He without any more adoe, ingeniouſly confeſt, that he had. When he heard him ſay ſo, he beſtow'd vpon him, ſuch a louing and fatherly reprehenſion, that the *Conde* beganne to bluſh, and for very ſhame, could not for the preſent expreſſe himſelfe, as he might, and would haue done in his owne excuſe. Whereupon the *Generall* perceiuing this his tacite confeſſion, cauſed *Ricciolina* to be called forth (who by his appointment ſtaid in the next roome) and when ſhee was come, he grauely ſpake in this manner vnto him; *Signor Conde*, if we ſhould puniſh faults with rigour, a heauy puniſhment would light vpon you. But we, for that we loue your ſelfe, and all other offenders that come before vs, as our owne children, and taking pity and compaſſion of your youthfull feruor, and thoſe violencies that accompany ſuch yong yeares, we doe pardon you that grieuous and moſt hainous offence of forcing this maiden, as farre forth as it may touch your life; but withall, wee condemne you, to pay the double of what you promiſed her, which comes to foure hundred crownes: which before you goe from hence, wee command that you preſently diſburſe, and giue it to *Ricciolina*.

To this the *Conde*, his bloud now waxing warme, which before was frozen, with that reſpect and decency, which was fitting for him, replyed thus: Moſt Illuſtrious and Excellent Sir, I haue hitherto held my peace, it beſeeming me ſo to doe, as one that is your moſt true, faithfull and obedient ſeruant, and moſt ready to ſubmit my ſelfe to any reproofe or puniſhment, that you ſhall be pleaſed to inflict vpon me, in caſe this their accuſation were true. And if your Excellency out of the greatneſſe of your wiſdome, ſhall be pleaſed to diue into the depth of theſe ſubtill womens hearts, and ſearch them to the very bottome, your Excellencie will ſoone diſcouer, how wickedly falſe theſe their accuſations haue beene againſt me. And though I haue confeſſed, that I haue had conuerſation with her, it was vpon couenant and agreement betweene vs, vpon ſuch a price, which I punctually paid, giuing her more out of mine owne bounty, then ſhe could

could challenge of me. Notwithstanding, if it shall seeme good vnto you, that I disburse this money, I craue no longer time, then that I may goe home & fetch it, wherewith I shall presently returne, and put the money into your Excellencies hands, to be disposed of, as you please; but not as in punishment of any such error by me committed.

The *Generall* hauing heard what the *Conde* said, replyed vnto him, *Signor Conde*, goe fetch the money, for I shall stay here till you come. And you *Ricciolina*, see you depart not.

Now, whilest the *Conde* was going home, and returning backe againe, his Excellency went a farre off, asking this and that other question, one while of the old woman, another of the young, and so talking to and fro of diuers things, at last, he said vnto her; Tell me (*Lena*) haue you euer carryed a good hand ouer your daughter? haue you alwayes lookt narrowly vnto her? Yes marry haue I Sir (said she.) And did you neuer (replide he againe) leaue her all alone by day or by night? No Sir, quoth she. How comes it then to passe (said his Excellency) that you would suffer your daughter to be forced and deflowred by the *Conde*? Why did not you defend her from that violence? And you (*Ricciolina*) hauing your mother in your company, why would you let him force you, and take that from you which (vnlesse you should in some sort consent thereunto) it were impossible for him to get from you? Both of them, then weeping, said vnto him; That the *Conde* was too strong for them, and that they were not able to resist his violence, and therefore besought his Excellency, that hee would not suffer her daughter to be thus abused, and both of them to be left open to such a deale of scorne and reproach: but that he would be pleased to doe them iustice.

By this time the *Conde* was come, and had told out vpon a little table of Iuory foure hundred Crownes; which by the *Generall* were giuen to *Ricciolina*, giuing her this *Item* withall, Take them (daughter) and looke well vnto them, lest they chance to be taken from thee. And you (*Lena*) haue a care both of her and her money. And so God be with you, I haue no more to say to you.

When they were gone, his Excellency turning himselfe towards the *Conde*, said vnto him, Goe, get you after them, and see you take their money from them, either by loue or force, by fayre meanes or by foule. And looke that you giue me a true account of the passage of this businesse.

The *Conde* hearing this, moued with rage and disdaine, seeing how basely he had beene vsed by these infamous women, (not considering the condition imposed vpon him, nor to what end it was done) made hastily after them; nor did he goe alone by him-selfe, but made choyse of a seruant of his (amongst those many that he had) whom he tooke along with him. And so walking a good round pace, he ouertooke them a little on this side their owne house, and comming vnto them, after that he had saluted them very kindly, and by little and little had insinuated himselfe into them, hee continued discoursing with them, till he had brought them home. Where, as soone as he was come into the house, he beganne to demand his money of them. And when he saw he could not preuaile with entreaties, he assayed to get it by force, and went roundly to worke with them. But *Ricciolina*, who had put the purse in her bosome, stoutly defended both it and her selfe, scratching the *Conde* with her hands, and biting him with her teeth; who with all the strength that he had, could not come so much as to touch, much lesse to take the purse from her. To make good this quarrell, the mother ran in, and tooke part with her daughter, and they did so help and ayd one another, with their nailes and their teeth, and by their loud out-cryes and shreekes, that although the house were a lone-house, farre from neighbors, and little frequented, yet notwithstanding many people vpon this great noyse and tumult, came running thither, and amongst the common route, one Gentleman, who pressing in, and seeing the *Conde* all bloody, who fought like a fierce Lyon, set vpon by two rather inraged Beares, then women, what with his words,

words, and what with his deeds, being assisted by others, he parted the one from the other. The *Conde* was so ouercome with choller, that hee laid about him like a mad man, and had so lost all patience, that doubtlesse hee had done much mischiefe, if he had not beene restrained by the company. He washt his face and his hands, and hauing wiped them with his handkercher, he departed thence in company of that Gentleman, threatning those women, that he would be reuenged on them: who, no lesse offended then the furious *Conde*, made no long tarrying, but hasted with all the speed they could to the *Generall*. But the *Conde* had got the start of them, and was there before them, hauing fully acquainted his Excellency with all that had passed, shewing the scratches and the bitings which he had receiued from them: who had no sooner told his tale, but in come the women, vnsheathing their malicious & sharp-edged tongues, grieuously complaining of the *Conde*, who was there present, declaring, how first with fayre and kinde words, and afterwards by violent and forcible deeds, hee would haue taken their money from them, threatning besides to kill them.

Then said the *Generall* vnto them; He hath not taken them from you, hath he? No (and it like you Excellency) said they. How came it then to passe (quoth he) that he tooke them not from you? They answered, Sir, we did so well bestir our selues, with our hands, our nailes, our teeth, and the shreekes that we made, to call in company, that he mist of his purpose and could not doe it.

Very good (said the *Generall*) and you *Ricciolina*, if your mother had not come in to help you, could you (thinke you) haue made a shift so to withstand the *Condes* courage, that he should not haue taken the purse from forth your bosome? Yes indeed Sir, said she: for I feare him not, nor any thing he can doe, I care not a straw for him, for I thinke my selfe euery way as strong as he; yet is it not meet, that men should come in this violent manner into poore womens houses, to take that from them which is none of theirs. Then (said the *Generall*) you did both of you, helpe and defend one another, as well as you could. Yes Sir, said they. It is very well (replyed the *Generall*) I like well of it, and I must needs say, you haue borne your selues well in the businesse. But where is the purse? I haue it here in my bosome, said *Ricciolina*. Let me see it, said the *Generall*. The young wench presently pluckes it out of her bosome. Then said his Excellency vnto her; Poure them out (daughter) there vpon the board, and tell them anew, to see if you haue all, and that the *Conde* hath not taken any of them from you. She did so, and found the number iust. Whereupon, she told his Excellency they were all there, and not so much as one crowne missing. Then the *Generall* (who was a very wise and discreet man) perceiuing the *Condes* goodnesse, and these other womens wickednesse, spake and said: *Signor Conde*, Take you your money againe, you haue fought hardly for it; it is yours, put it vp.

Then, turning to this young queane, looking sternly vpon her, he said vnto her; Thou lewd and filthy baggage, if thou hadst defended thy selfe as well as thou didst thy money, the *Conde* could not haue forced thee; but it seemes thou wast very wel content that he should haue his pleasure of thee, and hauing consented to his will, you were not forced (Minion) as both you and your mother haue falsly accused the *Conde*, to whom we iustly award his re-hauing of his 400 Crownes. And as for you, get you gone, and let me heare no more of you, and be glad that you scape so, for if you were well serued, and punished according to your deserts, I should send you to Bridewell, and haue you well whipt, & ring your mother out of Towne, for an old wicked Bawd. The *Generall* hauing pronounced this so iust a sentence, the businesse was ended to the great contentment of all that heard it, and to his owne no small commendation.

Touching Rapes.

But to come into our old way againe: No force of man can preuaile against the woman that is vnwilling. But say such a thing might once in a thousand yeares chance to happen; me thinkes it is no reason, that a businesse of this nature should be compounded withall for money, much lesse inioyne them ma-

riage,

riage, (vnleſſe he had formerly giuen her his word and faithfull promiſe before witneſſes) but that in this caſe, the fitteſt meanes, were perſonall puniſhment, either more, or leſſe, according to the qualitie of the delict, and that the cauſe might be handled before the Kings Atturney Generall, that there might be no hope of pardon left, to ſuch boyſterous offendors. Aſſuring my ſelfe, that by this meanes, men would haue more feare; and women more ſhame: and would not, ſo often, as now they doe, commit ſuch like ſinnes, and treacheries, as theſe. For, this refuge being taken from them, and hauing no hope of remedie, or helpe left vnto them, they would leaue this lewd courſe of life, and not be ſo haſtie, to vndoe both them-ſelues, and others. If a wench goe to it with a good will, why ſhould ſhee vrge, it was againſt her will? Or if perhaps ſhee haue not where-withall to liue, why ſhould ſhee picke a liuing out of ſuch diſgracefull, and dangerous deceits? There are a thouſand other, and farre more honeſt wayes, for a woman to liue by, then theſe.

But here pitie (me thinks) comes in, and pleads thus; Alack, poore women, they are weake & ſimple, and ſuffer them-ſelues to be ouercome through their too much facilitie and aptneſſe of beleefe, and mens too much falſhood in their promiſes; and therefore they ought to be much fauoured and pityed by vs. I confeſſe this plea to be true. But if they were either taught, or knew before hand them-ſelues, that this their facilitie is a fault in them, and that they ought not to be ſo eaſily wonne, they would learne the better to keepe their cabinet cloſe, and not to depart with ſo pretious a iewell, but vpon very good tearmes. And this fooliſh confidence of theirs, hath vndone many a woman, and is like to vndoe more, vnleſſe they looke a little better to them-ſelues. This deſtroying confidence of theirs, is like vnto faith, without good workes, which hath ſent thouſands packing to Hell. Let no woman therefore (if ſhee be wiſe) depend vpon mens promiſes, be they neuer ſo faire: for they promiſe with paſſion, performe with delayes, and ſeldome or neuer ſatisfie expectation. That woman therefore, I ſay, that ſhall truſt any mans faith or promiſe, and ſhall vpon ſuch falſe aſſurance, ſurrender vp her Copie-hold into his hands, let her blame no bodie but her-ſelfe, if ſhee be afterwards cozened, and deluded by him.

Women, weake creatures.

Their facile nature, and mens falſe promiſes, haue wrought them much woe.

There is another kinde of iniuſtice in the world, ſomewhat neere in this nature, which would require ſome reformation. You ſhall (which I haue ſeene oftentimes) haue two fellow-ſeruants lodge together in one houſe, who being agreed vpon the buſineſſe, and both very willing to enioy each other, ſhee (like a ſilke-worme) continues her three [m] ſleeps with him, till at laſt their Maſter comes vnawares vpon them, and takes them in the manner: Who, thereupon, layes hold on this his vnfortunate ſeruant, who neither taſted the creame, nor the cheeſe of this milke, but only that ſowre whey, which is caſt out to the dogs and the ſwine: He puts him in priſon, where he keeps this poore ſoule ſo long, till at laſt growing deſperate, he is driuen to marry her; and the more to increaſe his miſerie, they condemne him in a pecuniarie puniſhment, which he, and all his whole linage, if they were ſold to their ſhirts, are not able to pay. When he ſees him-ſelfe thus vndone, being firſt forced to marry whether hee will or no; and then to haue all that little that he hath, to be taken violently from him, and torne as it were out of the very throat of him, he goes one way, and ſhee another: He runnes about the Country, and turnes rogue; and ſhee ſtayes at home, and turnes whore. I pray ſee, what a proper mariage this is, what a wiſe and worthy ſentence, and the great good that comes of it?

[m] *Your Silke-wormes make three ſleepes: Awaking after their firſt, to feed; then falling againe to ſleepe, till they begin to worke their balls. Neuer leauing off, till they ſhut vp them-ſelues in thoſe balls, and conſume themſelues, vngorging all that ſliminеſſe, whereof they forme the ball.* Covatr. pag. 327.

O, if there were ſome prouiſion made for the reforming of this abuſe, I doubt not but it would doe very much good, and proue profitable for the Commonwealth. I paid the puniſhment of that ſinne, wherein I had not offended; and the price of that meat, whereof I had not taſted: I had prouided me a houſe, put all things in order, and withdrew my ſelfe thither, with all that I had; for I was much afraid, leſt I might be ſerued with the ſame ſawce by another Hoſteſſe, as

Guzman prouides him a houſe of his owne.

I

I was by this. And becauſe I was likewiſe iealous, that the Collar and Girdle, which my Vnckle had ſent me, being peeces of that great value, as they were, might, by the fame that went of them, come to be diſcouered, I was the willinger to retyre my ſelfe to an houſe of mine owne, where I might with ſecrecy all alone by my ſelfe deface the ſame, and ſo alter the faſhion, that they might not be knowne. I did ſo; taking out the pretious ſtones, and the pearles that were in them, with the point of my knife, laying euery thing apart by it ſelfe. I did put all the gold into a great Criſoll, but not all at once, for it would not hold it; ſix or ſeuen ſuch pots, being ſcarce able to containe it, which in the end I made a ſhift to melt, and preparing it with a little ſublimate (for I had ſome ſuperficiall knowledge in that kinde of Art) hauing all my tooles, and moulds in a readineſſe, befitting ſuch a buſineſſe, I did (when I found my ſelfe beſt at leyſure) caſt the whole maſſe into ſeuerall ingots, or little barres of gold. And I thought I did very wiſely therein, leſt by ſauing their workmanſhip, my ſelfe might haue made worke for the hang-man; and by keeping them in faſhion, beene my ſelfe in no faſhion: and therefore thought it better to ſpoyle that, then that ſhould ſpoyle me. With theſe ſtones, I began to turne Ieweller, firſt informing my ſelfe very well of their true worth and value, cauſing ſome of them to be ſet in Crucifixes, ſome in rings, ſome in pendents for the eares, and other ſome in Iewels, as they would ſort and fit beſt, differencing the ſetting and inchaſing of them, as I ſaw cauſe: ſo that of the ſame gold and ſtones, I made diuers and ſundry peeces: whereof I ſold ſome for ready money, others I lent out at weddings with good gaines, and others I rifled away at dice; inſomuch, that I loſt little of that which I might otherwiſe haue gained, had I preſerued their faſhion, and with a great deale leſſe feare of danger to mine owne perſon. My ſtocke began to increaſe a-pace, I knew how to ſell at deare rates vpon truſt, and how otherwiſe to afford a reaſonable good penny-worth: I could tell how to turne and winde my money to the beſt profit; and I wanted no credit, becauſe I was fluſh of money.

Guzman alters the faſhion of his Iewels.

There was cloſe adioyning to my houſe, certaine ground, that was to be ſold for the building of houſes vpon it. I thought good to buy a plot thereof for to build vpon, that I might haue a houſe of mine owne to put my head in, making choyſe rather of a little corner of mine owne purchaſing, then to goe euery moneth chopping and changing of our lodging, lugging our bedding on our backs, and being at a continuall charge in remouing of our houſhold ſtuffe. Well, I agreed with the owner of the Land, I paid him his full price in good Royals, holding the ſame for euer, the Lord reſeruing only for himſelfe a yearely rent of two Royals. I built a houſe vpon it, wherein I ſpent before I was aware (and now there was no turning backe) aboue three thouſand Ducats. It was a neat pile, handſomly contriu'd, and of good receipt, and ſtood finely for pleaſure and entertainment. There did I liue, with that poore trading that I had, like a *Fucar*; and there ſhould I haue ended my dayes like a Prince, if my hard fortune, and greedy ill lucke had not croſt me, by the vnhappy encounter of a crafty knaue, with a couetous wretch. For my houſe being ſo well furniſht, my perſon ſo well reſpected, and my reputation ſtanding on ſuch good termes, as it did, there was not a foole wanting, who had a moneths minde to make me his ſonne in law: Who had a conceit, that I was all good meat, and that I had not (like the grape) ſome ſtonie kernels in me, that were to be taken out, and throwne away, as good for nothing.

Guzman turnes Merchant.

This alſo is another great folly (and I feare me too much in vſe) that men ſhould be ſo ſimple, as to marry their daughters, to the ſonnes of vnknowne parents. Take heed, take heed, I ſay, how thou beſtow'ſt thy childe: Thinke vpon that old, but ſound counſell of our fore-fathers; *Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu caſa:* "Match thy daughter with thy neighbours ſonne: Thou knoweſt his breeding, his diſpoſition, his behauiour; what his honeſtie is, what his wiſ-

dome,

Prouerbe.
" Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu caſa.

dome, what his means: but neuer admit thou a new-commer, or receiue him for thy ſonne in Law, who is a meere ſtranger vnto thee: For ſuch a one, though thou ſee him to day in his owne houſe, may to morrow be led thence to the gallowes if he chance to be knowne, and found out what he is.

The care a father ought to haue in the beſtowing of his daughter.

Prouerbe.

° Acude cada vn à ſu natural.

This ſilly foole was a kinde of trucker of commodities as well as my ſelfe; and ° birds (you know) of a feather, will ſtill flocke together. He clung ſo cloſe to me, that he glew'd me vnto him: He marryed me to his daughter, hauing no other childe in the world: He was rich, ſhee was faire, and of a good and gracefull behauiour. He promiſed me with her, three thouſand Ducats, and I was well contented with it. He, who was a ſubtle fellow, and knew the dapps of the world, and could winde a penny to the beſt aduantage, had no ambition to ſeek any higher, then to finde out a man of my making, that knew how to employ my money to profit. And in this he had reaſon: For better is a poore ſonne in Law, that is a good husband, and knowes when to ſaue, and when to ſpend a penny, then one that is rich, and a great waſter. And there is no wiſe father (I aſſure my ſelfe) but would rather haue a man without money to his ſonne in Law, then money without a man. This man had a wonderfull great affection vnto me, we were agreed on the point, the conditions were drawne, the writings ſealed, and the mariage ſolemnized.

Guzman *marries a wife.*

Now I am a marryed man, now am I entred into an honeſt and honourable calling, I haue a miſtreſſe now in my houſe, well contented with her choice, much made of, and well ſerued. Some dayes paſſed ouer, (which were not many) when as my father in law, carrying vs home with him one Sunday to dinner, after that the cloath was taken away, we three being all alone, he ſaid thus vnto me; Sonne, being now growne old, and hauing in my life time paſt through many troubles, and for that I ſee thou art yet but a yong man, and ſtand ſt now but at the foot as it were of the hill, that thou mayſt get vp to the top, with the greater eaſe, and that thou maiſt not tumble downe backward when thou art halfe wayes vp, I will deliuer thee my opinion, as one who is ſo much intereſſed as I am in thy good; otherwiſe I ſhould ſaue that labour, and not giue thee any part of that which I now pretend to doe.

Guzmans *father in law his aduice.*

Firſt then I would haue thee to conſider, that if thou ſhalt diminiſh one farthing of thy ſtocke, which thou windeſt and turneſt in the world, it will quickly be conſumed, be it neuer ſo great. You muſt likewiſe haue a care to vphold and maintaine your credit; And if you meane to bee a Merchant, you muſt carry your ſelfe like a Merchant; laying aſide all that which is not integrity and plaine dealing, for there is no negociating now adayes, but with it and with money; changing, and re-changing as the market goes; making, according as you ſee the times are, either more or leſſe gaine. I ſhall ſtand ſtill by you, and be euer ready to giue you my helping hand, and hold you vp by the chinne, that you may not ſinke, if it be in my power to beare you vp. But if at any time (which God forbid) the Dice ſhould turne, and that lucky chance which we looke for, ſhould not come, take phyſicke in time, purge your ſelfe while you are in health, of your bad humors, and by a prouident forecaſt, preuent all future ſickneſſe. This ſaid, he cauſed two bils of debt to bee brought in, and two counter-bils of credit, and going on in his diſcourſe, hee ſaid thus vnto me; One of theſe writings ſhall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your ſelfe to be indebted vnto mee in the ſumme of foure thouſand Ducats, which I haue lent vnto you; againſt which (to ſaue you harmeleſſe) I will make a Counter-bill, wherein I will confeſſe a full ſatisfaction and true payment of the ſaid debt, in ſuch ample manner as you your ſelfe ſhall be pleaſed to deuiſe it. Both which wee will ſafely keepe to helpe our ſelues at a pinch, if need ſhould require; though it were much better, that no ſuch occaſion ſhould offer it ſelfe, nor come (as I hope it neuer ſhall) within our doores. The other writing ſhall be, that I will procure my brother to ſell vnto you an annuall rent that hee

he hath, of fiue hundred Ducats, *de* P *juro*, and it ſhall be done in this manner; There will not one caſh-keeper or other, be wanting vnto vs, who (out of the acquaintance and friendſhip that is betweene vs) will be willing to make ſhow of ſo much money, to the end that the publike Notary, may auow and teſtifie the payment thereof; or elſe we will take it there, and they ſhall lend it vs in banke, paying for the vſe thereof fifty Royals; and when this bill of ſale ſhall be made ouer vnto you in as abſolute manner as Law can deuiſe it, you ſhall returne the ſame backe againe vnto him, giuing him full power to diſpoſe thereof, and by a writing vnder your owne hand, you ſhall acknowledge that this was but a feigned thing, put ouer vnto you onely in truſt, and that really and truly, thoſe fiue hundred Ducats, are, and were alwayes his, and that you can by no meanes pretend any lawfull claime vnto them. I liked very well of it; ſuppoſing, it might doe me much good, but could doe me no harme.

I did as he directed me, who had beene an old beaten Souldier in theſe kinde of buſineſſes, had taken all the degrees of a cunning dealer, and knew the true tracke, wherein he was to trade, by which trickes and deuices, he had wrought him-ſelfe into a fortune, and come to be ſo rich as now he was.

This foundation, being thus laid, I continued my trading a pretty whiles, being alwayes in all things, very circumſpect and punctuall: And becauſe I was not ignorant, that the credit of thoſe that are great dealers in the world, doth depend much vpon oſtentation, faire ſhowes, and flouriſhes, I did make the world beleeue, that my houſe, my wife, and my ſelfe, were in a fulneſſe of plenty, and wanted nothing that was for ornament or neceſſary vſe. And in particular, my word, in all my dealings, was like a clocke, it ſtrucke alwayes true, and neuer went falſe. My wife had a hole [q] bored through her hand; all ranne out to waſte, that was powred into it; an augre had likewiſe pierced her temples, whereby her hogges-head had taken the vent of vanity. And I (kind foole) ſeeing the world thriu'd with me, and that my gettings were great, began to giue way to her idle deſires, & to humour theſe her womaniſh appetites, giuing her greater liberty, then in diſcretion I ſhould haue done; and ſhe for her part took ſo much on the other ſide, ſtretching euery inch to an ell, that ſhe ſpent exceſſiuely, and beyond all manner of meaſure in the accompanying & entertaining of her friends, in her banquets, feaſts, and other inter-mealary-intertainments, beſides the great pompe of her apparell, iewels, dreſſings, and a thouſand other the like gallantries, with as many bobs, and other [r] dingle-dangles, hanging at euery one of theſe, as the *Polypus* hath tales; All theſe things concurring with that dearth and ſcarcity which befell vs in theſe our firſt yeares, and that ſmall correſpondence which we had in trading, it being a dead world, I began at length to know mine owne weakneſſe, and was taken on the ſodaine with ſuch a ſwimming and giddineſſe of the head, that I was ſcarce able to ſtand on my legges, and lackt little of falling like a lumpiſh piece of Lead, flat to the ground: So true is that ſaying;

[s] *No man knowes, (ſaue who by proofe doth taſte)*
What a good houſe, and a bad wife waſte.

If now in theſe dayes, there were made a Law; that whereas in Caſtile they allow the halfe of that which a man hath to his wife, in way of dowry; that the husband ſhould not onely not giue her that, but ſhould rather take ſome of their wiues drowry from them; they would then labour to get ſomething, at leaſt, ſeeke to ſaue what the husband gets; Whereas now they take no farther care, then how they may waſte and conſume what the husband painfully brings in.

When I was a ſingle man, I had wealth and trading enough, to haue made my ſelfe a rich man in a ſhort time; but now, by hauing a wife I was growne poore, and ready to goe downe the winde. And becauſe my Father in Law was onely acquainted with my booke of Accounts, and knew as well as my ſelfe,

p Iuro, is a royall rent raiſed vpon Cities, Townes, and other places of the Kingdome, ſo called à Iure, which the Kings haue to ſuſtaine themſelues withall, and to pay the Miniſters of his Courts of Iuſtice. And from thence it had the name of Iuro. *This kind of Tribute is due vnto the Kings of Spaine, for their ayde and maintenance.* Covarr. verb. Iuro.

q Muger, de mano horadada. *This phraſe is ſtill taken in the worſer part.* Covarr. pag. 478.

Prouerbe.
r Traer mas rabos que vn polpo. Covarr. pag. 600.

Prouerbe.
s Nadie ſabe, ſi no es el que lo laſta, lo que ſemejante caſa gaſta.

Guzman *begins to ſinke.*

ſelfe, what was owing to me, and what I did owe vnto others, and was true and truſty therin vnto me. I could not want credit; & the rather, for that all men did verily beleeue, that thoſe 500 Ducats of yearly reuenue were mine owne. With this prop I bore vp the burthen of my debts, till my back was ready to break, & when I could endure the waight of them no longer, I ſodainly ſunk like vnto a building that is raiſed on a falſe foundation. Now the time of my paiments drew neare; & though time of it ſelfe doth naturally ſtill run along, yet to thoſe that owe money, it flies away with a ſwift wing, & ſeemeth ſhorter, then otherwiſe perhaps it would. I ſaw my preſent ruine before mine eyes, & was ſo perplexed with the very thought thereof, that I could not take any reſt, nor knew in the world what to doe. In this perplexity of mind, I got me to my father in lawes houſe, that I might break my griefs vnto him, and communicate my cares with him; He comforted me the beſt that he could, and wiſht me not to be diſmaid, for that we had a ſalue for this ſore in our owne hands, & that the remedy for this malady, was here at home within our owne doores. He takes his cloake, throwes it on his ſhoulders, and away hee and I goe together to one that was *Eſcriuano de Prouincia*, the publike Notary of that Prouince, an eſpeciall friend of his, and carrying him to *Santa Cruz*, which is a certaine Church adioyning to the Market-place, and ſtands right ouer againſt the priſon, and thoſe Offices belonging there vnto, there we made in ſecret vnto him a priuate relation, how the caſe ſtood with vs. Then ſaid my father in Law vnto him; *Señor N.* This buſineſſe ſhall be many Ducats in your way; you know very well how I dealt with you in my laſt troubleſome ſute, and how fairely things were carryed betweene vs on both ſides; and I muſt alſo truly confeſſe vnto you, that by your good meanes, all the decrees and ſentences that were publiſhed in that cauſe, came forth in my fauour, turning greatly (for the which I muſt euer thanke you) to my profit and credit, which makes me hope (preſuming vpon your wonted loue) for all good from your hands. My ſonne in Law, owes by a former writing to this of mine a 1000 Ducats, and this is already preſented, and diligences vſed therein in another Office; yet we are both of vs very willing, that all this buſineſſe ſhould be brought before your Worſhip, & that you ſhould haue the ordering of it; in conſideration whereof, we hope you will deale well with vs, & vſe vs friendly, being ſo much your ſeruants, as we are; for I ſhall not only my ſelfe requite this your kindnes to your own good content & liking; but my ſon, that is here with me, ſhall, when our buſineſſe is diſpatcht, beſtow 200 Crownes on you to buy you gloues; and I will paſſe my word vnto you for him, and ſhall ſee you truly paid. The *Eſcriuano* told vs; All ſhall be done to your mind, & as well as you your ſelues would haue it. Let this bil, ſaid he, of 4000 Ducats be firſt preſented, & we ſhall accord the debt for ten in the hundred, by means of a friend, to whom we will giue an account of this pretenſion, to the end that he may doe it vpon any reaſonable conſideration, that we ſhall giue him, and for the reſt lay the care vpon me, and leaue it to my charge. My father in Law, preſented his owne bond: In concluſion, I was carryed to priſon, al my goods were ſeazed on; my wife ſhee brings forth the Indenture for her Dowry, taking ſo much oath to them-ſelues, that there was a great deale of ſtuffe wanting to make vp my garment: For both of them, hauing poſſeſt them-ſelues of my houſe, my bils, and my moueables, there was nothing now left for mee to take hold on with my teeth. And for my Iewels, and my moneys, they were ſold, and ſpent, and that little that was remayning, was too farre out of my reach to come at it.

When my Creditors ſaw me clapt vp, they came all vpon me, entring their actions againſt me, preſenting their bils and their bonds before diuers & ſundry Notaries: But when this bond of ours was brought forth, all were to yeeld to that, as one that commanded all the reſt, and had already paſt the Office, as being the moſt ancient debt, & therefore ought to be ſeru'd firſt. For the *Alcaldes*, ſeeing it was *res iuſtificata*, a good and authenticall bond, and proued ſo to be,

Guzman *committed to priſon.*

Prouerbe.
* Echar la ſoga, tras el caldero. Caldero, *is commonly taken for a bucket, which ſerues to take water out of a Well. Now*, echar la ſoga, tras el caldero, *To fling the rope after the bucket, is, when we haue loſt one thing, to throw the other after it. This prouerbe is taken from one, who going to draw water out of a Well, the bucket ſlipping from the rope, and falling into the Well, in a rage throwes the rope after it; wherewith, if he would but haue had the patience, he might haue got vp his bucket againe.* Covarr. verb. Caldero. Guzman releaſed.

gaue order that ſhould be firſt ſatisfied. When they ſaw what an ill hand they had of it, and that they could not come to finger my goods, they preſently went about to imbarque thoſe my 500 Ducats of that annuall rent, before ſpecified. But the true owner then appeares, & defends his owne right, my wifes Vnckle clayming thoſe, as belonging properly vnto him. Then they fell to Law about it, whoſe bills, and anſwers, together with other writings, proceſſiue, iuſtificatiue, obligatiue, teſtamentiue, partitiue, acquiſitiue, renunciatiue, and infinite other the like, being as the body of a great Armie, when they were all ioyn'd together, came to no leſſe then two thouſand and fiue hundred ſheets of paper. Euery one, that came to demand them, for to carry them to his Aduocate, when he ſaw, that he muſt, before he could haue them, pay ſo much money to the Notarie, he did tremble at it. And albeit there were ſome, that were at the charge; yet there were other ſome, who ſeeing that they were like to haue a cold ſute of it, and that they ſhould but throw away their money in vaine, would not be at the coſt to take them out, but did rather deſire to come to ſome indifferent termes of agreement, & to ſit downe with loſſe, then to be at any more charge, and in a cholericke humour, to caſt the * cord after the cauldron. They well perceiued, that albeit they had taken out a Copie of the Proceſſe, they were as far to ſeeke of their money, as before; And therefore ſeeing there was nothing to be got by the bargaine, their loſſe remedileſſe, and their debt deſperate, they did helpe to negociate for me, and to come to compoſition with me. I demanded tenne yeares tearme; and ſome of them were well contented with it. Then began my Father in law to ſtirre in the buſineſſe, and becauſe his was the greater debt, he wrought ſo with them, that the leſſer debts followed the example of the greater, by which meanes I came out of priſon, and was ſet at liberty, the *Eſcriuano* hauing well lickt his fingers on both ſides: whoſoeuer loſt, I am ſure he got well by the bargaine. After all theſe ſtormes, my ſhip, and goods ſunke, I made a ſhift at laſt to get a land, I came ſwimming to the ſhore in a paire of linnē linings, being ſtript of all the reſt, yet were theſe linings well linde with ſiluer. I had a great deale of wealth of diuers poore men remayning ſtill in my hands, who had truſted me with all that they had, being deceiued by that credit which I had abroad in the world. I did in this, as I vs'd to doe in all the reſt of my actions; I was no changeling; onely I proceeded herein with a little more credit, and a better kinde of name, which my other had no colour for. For albeit this was no better then theft (to ſpeake the truth of it) and plaine robberie; yet I continued ſtill with the name of Merchant, and not of Thiefe. By this, I got experience of that, which I knew not before. This roguiſh tricke, till now, did I neuer vnderſtand what it was, nor did ſo much as once enter into the recking of it. This ſeemed vnto me *cautelã damnoſiſſimã*, a very hurtfull warineſſe, a caution too too cautelous, which ought narrowly to be look't into, and ſome good remedy in this caſe to be prouided. For by theſe their counter-writings, there is no debt certaine, no aſſurance good, nor any true ſecurity to be had; being the moſt preiudiciall thing that can be to a Common-wealth. For, from thence are occaſioned moſt of your Law-ſutes; by meanes wherof, many of poore, come to be rich; & many of rich, to be poore; being thereby vtterly vndone, & driuen to beg their bread from doore to doore. And it being the intention & purpoſe of a good Iudge, to auerre the truth betweene litigant and litigant, and ſuch as wage law one againſt another, & duly to adminiſter Iuſtice to euery man aright; yet is it not poſſible for him in this caſe ſo to doe, becauſe things are ſo intricate and ſo intangled one within another, that they which are moſt innocent, & oftentimes moſt deceiued, and by conſequence moſt wronged. And the reaſon of it is, becauſe when a man doth plot a deceit or cozenage in this kind, he goes warily to worke, & beats his braines how he may ſecure him-ſelfe, poſſeſſing him-ſelfe before-hand of the ports and paſſages that lead vnto the truth, to the end, that the way thereunto may be barricado'd & blocked vp, that no body

Againſt fraudulent conueyances.

may

may come vnto it. So that this light being taken away, the Iudge remayneth blinde, and that mans falſe play, which is not yet found out by Iuſtice, triumphs ouer truth, and goes away with the victorie. I know there are ſome, that will not ſticke to ſay, that your counter-writings, for commerce and negotiation, are very neceſſarie; but I muſt be ſo bold with theſe men, as to tell them plainely, that they are not. For he that is willing to help another man with his credit, let him ſtand (a Gods name) as a ſurety for him, & not as a cloaker of his knauerie. That which I learned in *Barçelona*, the firſt time that I was there, & now within theſe two dayes, ſince my returne from *Italy*, is; That to be a Marchant, is a dignitie, and an honourable calling; and no man can haue that title, vnleſſe he be firſt preſented before the Prior, & the Conſuls; where he puts in ſecuritie to deale faithfully & truly in the Trading, that he ſhall vndertake. And yet in *Caſtile*, where there is ſuch a *Machina* of merchandizing, ſuch a great Trade driuen, where there is Contractation for whatſoeuer commodities, the huge ſtore-houſe of the Vniuerſe doth in a manner afford, they take this noble profeſſion vpon them, when as they are neither men of abilitie, nor able to put in good ſecuritie for that which they deale for; but are only rich in ſhifts and tricks, and more cunning in deceiuing thoſe, who giue them credit, then skilled in an honeſt courſe of Trading. Euery one now, will take vpon him to turne Marchant; whereas in other parts of the world, he that enters thereinto, had need of a good ſtocke to begin withall, & a greater euery day then other, if he meane to continue in that courſe. And if perchance it ſo fall out, that (through want of a ſtrong braine, or a ſtrong purſe, or both) their buſineſſes fall out contrary to their expectatiõ, & ſucceed otherwiſe then their falſe imagination did ſuggeſt vnto them, making vſe of theſe their counter-writings, they remaine in better and richer eſtate, then they did before. I need not to inſtance in particulars, becauſe it is exemplified vnto vs by daily experience. With their breaking, they pull a great many others after them, eſpecially all thoſe, that haue truſted them with their goods; who conſume that little that is left them in ſuing for their owne. And if peraduenture they be Officers, or Husband-men, the Lord with their loſſe, loſeth likewiſe his part; wanting thoſe by this meanes, which ſhould follow his profit, and receiue his rents, and his cuſtome; and the Common-wealth thereby rob'd of the trauell & paines of theſe laborious & induſtrious day-labourers, & honeſt husband-men; who being buſied in ſutes of Law, cannot apply themſelues to follow the plough, & to manure & dreſſe their land as they were wont to do. Leſſe harme it were a great deale, that a few, and thoſe baggage-people, ſhould not be rich, then that a great many good & honeſt men, ſhould be ouerthrowne, and vndone by them. If it were not for theſe Counter-writings, and fraudulent deeds, men might more ſecurely truſt one another, and there would be much better dealing in the world: For then a man might haue certaine knowledge of his eſtate and meanes, whom he truſts, without hauing other owners ſtep forth, and challenge all that he hath to be theirs. And becauſe it may be, that at ſome time or other, there will be order taken for the remedying of this ſo great a miſchiefe, I will onely briefly tell the effects (that I may be as good as my word) of this harmefull cozenage, if they doe not the ſooner leaue off theſe their damnable fraudulent tricks and deuiſes. For queſtionleſſe, many men would deale more honeſtly and plainely, then now they doe, if theſe fobs and giggs, were not put into their heads by others. And hence it is, that many things loſe thoſe good effects, which otherwiſe they would take, for that theſe ſtrange owners are not made knowne in time, who do not only inuent, but execute what they haue deuiſed, cheating the Creditor of that iuſt debt which is due vnto him. I cannot chooſe but ſpeake my minde; and if there be no care taken for the reforming of this groſſe abuſe, I cannot doe withall. It ſhall ſuffice me, that I haue herein ſatisfied that obligation and dutie, which in this caſe is required at my hands. Let others likewiſe looke to their obligations; and ſeeing,

The order in Barçelona, *that is taken with your Merchants.*

ing, they neither want age, nor diſcretion to looke into theſe things, let them not alſo be wanting in their good will, to redreſſe that, which is ſo neceſſarie for the ſeruice of God, and of their King, it concerning ſo much as it doth the generall good of the Common-wealth.

When a poore Merchant is minded to enter into great trading, he intreats (for the increaſe of his credit) ſome kinſman, or friend of his, that he will make ouer ſome land of good value, or other his goods in truſt, for the which hee makes him a Counter-writing, wherein he acknowledgeth, that notwithſtanding theſe parcels of lands or goods ſeeme to the world to be his, yet really and truly it is not ſo, and that he ſhall be ready at all times to reſigne them vp into their hands, to whom of right they belong, whenſoeuer they ſhall demand the ſame of him. And ſo with the credit of this ſeeming ſtocke of his owne, he gets farther credit of others, & takes vp vpon truſt, what he will him-ſelfe. See now, what a kinde of people we are, and what true dealing there is amongſt vs! How like vnto thoſe *Moores* and *Negro's* of *Ghinie*, an ignorant and barbarous kinde of people, who with counterfeit beads, falſe eare-rings, bells, and other the like bables, which children weare about their necks, doe with the bare ſound, gay ſhow, and glorious glittering of theſe glaſſie commodities, cozen and deceiue vs. If their trading thriue well with them, it is well; for then the Creditor ſhall receiue what is due vnto him: If ill, they haue a trap, wherein to catch their Creditors, and all goes ill with them. Then he, that made ouer his goods vnto him in truſt, comes by a Counter-writing to recouer them, and all the reſt are defrauded of their due.

When a man will not pay what he owes; before the day of payment comes, that this debt is due, the debtor ſelleth, or abſolutely paſſeth away all his whole eſtate in truſt by ſome fraudulent deed, or counter-writing in that kinde. And it afterwards ſo falleth out, that before the day of payment come, the debtor, who made this cautelous prouiſion, dyes; whereby the true Creditor cannot come to recouer his owne. For the party, whom the debtor truſted with his goods, doth couer and conceale this Counter-writing; ſo that the Feoffe in truſt carryes away all his goods, and the deuill the deceaſed downe to the pit of hell.

When a man hath a purpoſe to deceiue with his perſon, to get him a wife with a good dowry, the better to cozen both him-ſelfe and others, he runs the like courſe. He gets him-ſelfe to be truſted with a great deale of wealth; and anon after that he is marryed, his debts begin to grow vpon him, and liuing at a greater charge then before, he is not able to pay what he owes. So the owner of theſe goods recouers his owne, and the new marryed couple fall into want. This his cozening of her, comming at laſt to be knowne, their loue begins to coole each towards other, and oftentimes they goe together by the eares, for that the wife will not conſent that he ſhall ſell away her dowry, or any way be charged with her husbands debts.

All which inconueniences, would finde a ſpeedy and eaſie remedie, if there were an expreſſe command giuen, that there ſhould be no ſuch kinde of fraudulent deeds, and Counter-writings at all; and if there were any, that they ſhould be of no force or validitie in Law, and that any Act in that kinde ſhould not ſtand good. And for the preſent, any ſuch deed or deeds, to be publiſhed and made knowne within ſuch a certaine time, vpon paine of taking the others debts vpon him. If this courſe were taken, men might then certainly know, what a mans eſtate were, and whether he were of that ſufficiencie to be truſted, and to take vp vpon credit. And I dare be bold to ſay, that thereby one halfe of your Law-ſutes would be excuſed; for that moſt of thoſe, which are here in *Caſtile*, are of this nature, or at leaſt, haue their ground and beginning from thence.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes the ſucceſſe of his mariage, till ſuch time as his wife dyed. And how her Dowry returned backe to his father in Law. He diſcourſeth of bad wiues, and the hurt which they doe their husbands.*

READER; Haſt thou by this time conſidered with thy ſelfe, into what a Labyrinth I was willing to put my ſelfe? What good can it doe me? or why doe I ſpend and conſume my time in vaine, baſting ſtones with butter, and annoynting flints with oyle, to ſee if I can ſupple them, and make them become ſoft? Doeſt thou thinke I ſhall make the Blackmoore white, by my often waſhing of him? Or doeſt thou conceiue, that any good will come of that which I haue ſaid? Will it bring forth any profitable fruit? I rather beleeue that I ſpend my breath in vaine, beat my braines to no purpoſe, and loſe both my coſt and my labour, without receiuing either profit, or honour thereby. For I know I ſhall be tit in the teeth, with that old anſwer; Why ſhould he giue counſell to another, that cannot follow it himſelfe? It would haue ſuted better with me, to haue told them two or three merry tales, wherewith Miſtreſſe ſuch a one, and my Lady what you call (who are now quite tyred out, and begin to nod, being brought a-ſleepe with theſe fooleries) might haue entertained them-ſelues, and paſt away the time. Me thinks I heare him ſay, who is now reading, what I haue written, that he will caſt aſide my booke, and rather get him-ſelfe into ſome corner, and there take a nap, then endure the trouble of hearing me talke. I confeſſe, he hath a thouſand reaſons on his ſide, to doe as he does; nor can I blame him; for, being truly (as they are) truthes, which I treat; they are not ſo fit for *entretinimiento*, as *ſentimiento*, entertainment, as the vnderſtanding; being to be reſpected more, for the ſenſe, then the conceit: Theſe are not things fit for laughter, and to make merry when friends meet; but are to be weighed with a great deale of ſtudie, and conſideration; and to be ruminated, and chewed ouer, againe and againe. But becauſe the purge, that I ſhall giue thee to cleanſe thee, may not ſeeme loathſome vnto thee, or that thou mayſt refuſe to take it, *propter malum odorem & ſaporem*, for its ill both ſmell, and taſte, let vs guild ouer theſe our pills with gold, or couer them with the papp of an Apple, conſerues of Roſes, or ſome thing elſe, that may pleaſe both the eye, and the palate. And ſo I returne againe to the purpoſe, from whence I haue made this digreſſion.

Now did I begin to lift vp my head againe, and to enter a-freſh into the world; I had a new ſtocke a going, the beſt I could make, though much leſſe then I could haue wiſht it, and meaner then ſtood conueniently with my preſent both neceſſitie, and occaſions. For to beare a good [a] burthen, a man had need of a good backe; and they who build Towers on the ſand, ſee them quickly fall to the ground. Thoſe that haue a minde to marry, muſt haue wherewithall to make the pot ſeethe. The good man muſt be able to giue his wife a dinner; and ſhee bring wherewithall to beſtow on him a ſupper. There is more goes to mariage, then two payre of leggs, in one payre of ſheets. Foure naked walls, ſix carpets, two table-cloathes, and halfe a dozen napkins, are not a Dowry for a wife, when at the firſt entrance into the houſe, I muſt ſpend vpon her in Iewels, and other idle dreſſings, that out of which I ſhould picke my liuing. My principall was gone, and I was now in want. For (as it is in the prouerbe) *Quien compra lo que no ha meneſter, vende lo que ha meneſter*: He that [b] buyes that he needeth not, muſt ſell that he hath need of. What profit can it be for a poore Tradesman, to tricke vp his wife in ſome ſix change of gownes, wherein he conſumeth his maine ſtocke? Can he afterwards continue his Trade with this traſh?

My Gentle-woman, my wife, was ill acquainted, and leſſe exerciſed in miſe-

Prouerbe.

[a] Para grande carga, grandes fuerças.

Aduertiſements for thoſe that will marry.

Prouerbe.

[b] Quien compra lo que no ha meneſter, vende lo que ha meneſter.

ries. She had liued well at home with her father, she knew not there what want meant, but had the world at will, there was not that dainty shee desired, which shee had not; but now in my house, she had nothing lesse, though as long as my wealth lasted, shee lacked not any thing, that shee had a minde vnto. But being not able any longer to hold out, shee was forced to worke and sweat for her liuing, and being not vsed heretofore to take paines, it seemed the harder vnto her to endure it. With that little, which was now remayning vnto me, I began to buy at deare rates vpon credit, and to sell good cheape for ready money, *sicut erat in principio*. I stood ingaged, and my father in Law bought the wares. I could haue wish't the ballance had weigh'd the contrary way. And these commodities that we dealt for, neuer went out of the house. Our ordinary wares, were gold thread, and sometimes wrought plate, and iewels of gold, handsomly set forth, curiously inchased, and for the fashion exceeding neat and delicate: Some other things we had of little or no value, old moth-eaten ware, which lay vpon our hands, and could not be rid away, which were bought at a farre lesser price. And thus out of those small gaines, that we made, we rubb'd out, and made a shift to liue as well as we could. But all was little enough to bring the world about, because our stock was so litle: & so by litle & litle, we went eating of it out, it cõsuming by degrees. And for all we were brought to this low ebbe, my wifes dowry was neuer so much as once touch't or fingred by me, that stood still on foot, being laid out vpon possessions, which my wife would neuer consent should be medled with: I could as well take the Moone in my teeth, as to come to lay hold on them; nay I could not so much as haue a sight of them. These our commodities, we did deliuer forth vpon credit for foure moneths, with condition to haue a fifth part of the gaines. And that *Escrivano* (whom we had ready vpon all occasions, to serue our turnes) did alwayes make testification of the consigning ouer of these commodities; which goods, a Broaker presently tooke into his hands, who made vp the third person in these our dealings, and was all one as it were with my selfe and the *Escrivano*. And hauing them in this manner made ouer vnto him, within some two houres after he would bring the money to its owner, to such losse, as he him-selfe should say they were sold (as was ordred betweene vs) though he had not sold one penny-worth of them, but had them still in safe custodie, and were neuer so much as once remoued out of the house. We made vp the money amongst vs: He receiued an Acquittance for his discharge, and there was an end of this businesse.

Gentlemen in Spaine *cannot be arrested for debt.*

It was a common tricke amongst vs, to make vse of a most cunning and subtill stratageme, to the end that none might escape our fingers, by alledging his Gentilitie, or any other exception that might bestead him, or free him from arrest. When wee were to furnish any man, wee would first informe our selues, whether he had the meanes to pay vs; and knowing him to be a sufficient man, and that he tooke vp such or such commodities, only to supply his present occasions, we did willingly giue him credit: howbeit, it would somtimes so fall out, that we should come short of this our reckning, and those men faile vs, whom we thought to be very good men, and of good wealth. But when wee had no perfect knowledge of the party, & that it did not sort to our purpose, we would demand a Surety, together with the morgage of some house, or peece of land, for default of payment. And howbeit we knew well enough, that this house, or land, thus morgaged was none of his, and that whatsoeuer he had was extended already for the payment of his debts, and that he had not so much as a tyle or bricke that was in it, which was not indebted in a crowne, yet we did not stand so much vpon that, nor was this the thing that we did much care for, and were willing it should be rather so then otherwise: But that which we did ayme at was this, To draw him to acknowledge by a writing vnder his owne hand, that this house or land, was his owne fee-simple, free from all kind of incumbrances, morgages, sessings, rents, feoffments of truft, or otherwise obliged for any other

debt

debt whatsoeuer. And with this assurance, when the time of paiment was come, if he brake his day with vs, we had an *Alguazil* still at hand, with whom wee were in league, who made him to giue vs so much for euery tenth part that we deliuered vnto him, and so wee presently came vpon the backe of him, putting our bond in execution.

And if at any time they would oppose the arrest, or did offer to make any resistance for to escape the hands of iustice, that he might not pay the debt; then came we vpon him another way, bringing a criminall action against him, and making a diligent search and enquiry into his estate, we would proue that it was not extended to its true value; that there was some *legger-demayne* vsed therein, and that he had dealt falsly and deceitfully to defeat his Creditors, laying to his charge many other his misdemeanors. And thus did we make sure worke for our selues, whilest the poore man slipt downe the hill, without being able to recouer himselfe, or to stay the force of his sodaine falling. Vsing this precaution, we plaid vpon sure cards, and without this prouision made before-hand, we seldome preuailed in our businesses. Whether this kind of dealing were lawfull or no, I know what I know; but we ranne the same course wee saw others run before vs, we did no more then what others did; our consciences were seared, so that we had no great sense or feeling of it. I well wot, that all the while I continued this wicked course of life, I did neuer truly confesse my sinnes; and if I did come to Confession, I did not doe it as I ought to haue done, and performed that duty for no other cause in the world, but to satisfie the Parish, and to auoid Excommunication.

To resist an arrest in Spaine *and to draw his sword against a Sergeant, is a whipping matter, besides a condemning to the Galleys; and if he strike or hurt the* Alguazil, *it is punished with death.*

Wilt thou see whether it be so or no? Consider whether I euer promist to make restitution, whensoeuer it should be in my power to doe it? Or whether I had likewise a purpose to amend my lewd and wicked life, when at that time there were fifteene, twenty, or more bonds a-foot of the like nature; and yet did I neuer goe my selfe, nor vse any diligence by others, to acquaint those that were thus bound, that such and such a bond was vnlawfull, and that I had grated vpon them with a griping and biting Vsury; and that for to cleare my conscience, and that I might worthily receiue the blessed Sacrament of the Communion, I would abate them of the ouer-plus, and make good all that which I had wrongfully and vnlawfully taken from them? And how that I would restore vnto them besides, all that which I had, for that it was all stolne, and had nothing that I could iustly and truly say was mine owne. And if afterwards, when they came to pay me, I had no relenting in me, nor did not returne them any thing backe againe, what an intention must this be? Certainly as bad as bad may be. This truly is that which I ought to haue done, but I did it not, nor is it in vse now-adayes to doe such good things as these. God (if it be his will) giue vs a due acknowledgement of our sinnes. And I verily perswade my selfe, that if then at that time I had finished this my life, my soule had assuredly gone downe to hell, and beene condemned to fry in that eternall fire.

O, your Vsurers, they are a wicked generation of Vipers: they haue neyther any conscience, nor any feare of God. O what a braue, and what a sure marke is this to shoot at! Howneere am I now to the drawing of mine arrow vp to the head? And how doe these traiterous villaines, these Caterpillers of a Commonwealth, stand peeping and watching to see how, and where, I meane to hit. O, what a temptation doe I feele, what a strugling doe I finde in my selfe, & what adoe to pull in this hand and arme of mine, from letting fly my whole sheafe of arrowes at them, and so to wound and gall them on all sides, that I leaue no part about them vntoucht, and no bone in their whole body vnbroken? For, in regard that I am (as they say) *Ladron de casa*, a house-thiefe, one of the same stamp, I know them as well as they know them-selues, & am not only acquainted with their actions, but euen with their very thoughts, & secrets of their hearts. Will you giue me leaue to giue them a gentle nip, and that I make them to see their

their owne perdition, and put them into ſuch a great confuſion, that they ſhall not know in the world what to doe with them-ſelues. I know that ye will not, and I alſo know why you will not.

This is a digreſſion. Againſt the greedy deſire of riches.

But if I ſhall ſpeake the truth, I muſt plainly tell you, Riches are the cauſe of all this. But when they are ill gotten, in what miſery liues the ſoule of ſuch a one? Certainly, it is in a very bad caſe. And hence it commeth to paſſe, that couetous men too much deuoted vnto riches, incurre infinite troubles, perils, and hazards. And therefore to free himſelfe from this danger, and the better to ſecure himſelfe, *Crates* the *Thebane*, that moſt famous Philoſopher, with an vndaunted courage, bound vp in one pack or fardell together all the gold & other ſuch precious Iewels as he had, & with great fury threw them into the ſea, ſaying: get you gone, ô ye riches, into the bottome of the ſea, leſt you drench me in the deepe. I had rather drowne you then you ſhould drowne me. But this great Philoſopher (by his leaue) did herein (me-thought) very ill. Much better had he done, if he had diſtributed theſe his goods amongſt the poore: but in doing that which he did, he gaue vs therby to vnderſtand the great trouble that gold bringeth with it; ſo that to him it ſeemed a farre leſſer inconuenience to remaine poore, then to liue in ſo many griefes and afflictions, as riches occaſion in thoſe that poſſeſſe them. What other thing is it to enter with conſideration into the minde of the rich, then to enter into a fearfull priſon, where within we ſee men impriſoned, laden with irons, bound with chaines, fetter'd, manacled, and girt about the necke with collars of iron, wherewith they are brought before the Iudge? And how many then are the afflictions, and the torments, of theſe miſerable and wretched men, thus incarcerated, and compaſſed in with ſtrong wals, and hard chains? And how much more are they oppreſſed, and how much heauier are their ſhackles, who loue riches, and thoſe moſt bound, who moſt abound in them? And as there is more compaſſion had of thoſe which are in theſe miſeries, and are thus faſt bound, and painfully laden with bolts, manacles, collars and chaines of iron, about their feet, hands, necks, and their whole body throughout: So much more pitie is there to be taken of the rich, and ſee how much the richer hee is, and the more wealth hee hath about him, and all thoſe good things which his heart deſireth, yet for all this are we not to account him a rich and wealthy man, but rather wretched and vnfortunate: For beſides the priſon, wherein he liues (miſerable as he is) he findes himſelfe attended and guarded with a barbarous and cruell keeper, which is the *loue* of riches. And if it ſo happen, that thou fall at any time into their hands, there is no getting out of their clutches: but that they may keepe thee ſafe when they haue thee, and that thou maiſt not eſcape from them, they will haue three or foure ſtrong doores ſhut vpon thee, and as many great chaines to make all ſure, beſides locks and keyes, with I know not how many double wards and bits, that all the picklockes in the world, that euer haue beene, ſhall, or will be, ſhall not be able to open theſe doores, and ſet thee free from thence. And yet theſe wretched creatures are ſo blinded in the pleaſure which they take in this their impriſonment, that they neuer thinke vpon it, nor ſeeke to get out, but are content to continue in it all the dayes of their life.

Crates throwes his goods into the Sea.

Bonauenture ſaith, that he who hath once ſet his affection on gold, can hardly with-draw his loue from it. King *Dauid* ſaith, That our ſoule cleaueth vnto the duſt, and that our belly trayleth on the ground, and is as it were faſtned and glued to the earth: Vnfolding thereby the affection which we haue to theſe earthly things. For ſeldome or neuer are riches poſſeſſed, without a mans ſetling his affection vpon them, it being ſo eaſie a thing to haue it wedged to the things of this world. And by ſo much the more, by how much the more ſtrongly the heart of man is knit vnto them. The *Gloſſe* ſaith, That with difficultie wee deſpiſe them; and with lothneſſe leaue them. But the ſafeſt and ſureſt way is, neyther to loue them, nor to keepe them. And therefore that Kingly Prophet ſaid,

ſaid, If riches increaſe, ſet not thy heart vpon them. True it is, that they are as hurtfull for the ſoule, as dangerous for the body. And therefore our Sauiour Chriſt, much pitying and lamenting thoſe who poſſeſſing them, did heartily loue them; ſaid: Woe vnto you that are rich, for yee haue already receiued your comfort. And S. *Iames* likewiſe with a great deale of griefe and ſorrow, doth bewaile and lament theſe kind of men, ſaying; Goe to now yee rich men, weep and howle for the miſeries that ſhall come vpon you: your riches are corrupted, and your garments moath-eaten: your gold and ſiluer is cankred, and the ruſt of them ſhall be a witneſſe againſt you; and ſhall eate your fleſh, as it were fire: you haue heaped treaſure together for the laſt dayes. Behold, the hyre of the Labourers, which haue reaped downe your fields, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: And the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabaoth. Yee haue liued in pleaſure on the earth, and beene wanton; yee haue nouriſhed your harts, as in a day of ſlaughter. Yee haue condemned and killed the iuſt, and he doth not reſiſt you. Bemourne therefore the miſeries wherein you are, for your riches ſhall end in anguiſh and vexation of ſpirit, and all your comforts ſhall forſake you: you ſhall ſleepe your ſleepe, and when you awake finde your hands empty.

Dauid ſaith, Rich men turne fooles through their too much wealth: they become ambitious and vaine, they giue themſelues ouer to a thouſand vices; they ſuffer a thouſand ſharpe iourneyes, and as many troubleſome toylings, for to get riches; which when they haue got, they haue a daily fit of feare and trembling, leſt they may chance to loſe them. The imagination of their loſſe cauſeth extreame ſorrow in them: their braines are ſtill working, and their vnderſtanding neuer taketh any reſt. For, (as our Sauiour ſaid) Where a mans treaſure is, there alſo is his heart. O wretched man, thou doſt not any thing in this world, that is ſo bad for thee, as the loue of money. For they, that ſeeke to make themſelues rich, fall into a thouſand temptations, and into as many ſnares, which the Deuill hath laid to intrap them. For the root of all euill, is couetouſneſſe. This cauſeth vs to commit ſacrileges, thefts, murders, rapines; it is the author of ſymony, the cauſer of vſuring contracts, of vngodly gaine, and of a thouſand deceits, and frauds, of breakings, both in our deeds, and in our words, of periuries, and peruerting of iuſtice. O, what an vnquenchable fire, is the deſire of riches; O how inſatiable is this our luſt, but much more inſatiable our will. Tell me (he that can) who did euer yet ſee the rich man ſatisfied? who, heare him ſay, That he had now enough? For, when hee hath got what he deſired, he hath no ſooner obtained it, but he is as greedy as hee was before; like vnto your hungry Curres, who when you throw them one morſell, ſtand gaping for another. His end is alwayes on that he deſireth, forgetting how full hee is, and the ſtore of wealth that he poſſeſſeth. The eye of a louer is neuer ſatisfied with looking; And the couetous minde hath neuer money enough. But (which is a curſe that accompanieth the couetous) he that loueth riches, neuer reapes the fruits of them. Hell is neuer ſatisfied with the ſwallowing downe of ſoules; neither the eyes, nor heart of the couetous, with riches. For theſe wicked men, haue two horſe-leaches belonging vnto them, which alwayes crye, giue me here, and giue me there; let more and more come in ſtill. By ſo much the more the loue of money increaſeth, by how much the more our money increaſeth. O what a falſe and vnfortunate felicity is that of riches! becauſe it maketh him truly vnhappy, who doth not truly poſſeſſe them.

The poore man liues more contented with that little which hee hath; then the rich man that walloweth in his wealth. O how many haue beene deceiued with the deſire of riches! *Balaam*, hearing the ringing and ſound of money, which King *Balack* offered vnto him, fell into deſpaire, and had a miſerable end. *Achan*, being deſirous of a rich rayment, and a wedge of gold, was ſlaine, and ſtoned to death, together with all his family. King *Achab*, out of the deſire

desire he had to haue *Nabothes* vineyard, was the occasion of *Nabothes* death, who by *Iezabels* order, wife vnto *Ahab*, was stoned to death: For which euill fact, *Ahab* was depriued of his life, and his Kingdome; and his wicked wife *Iezabel*, the inuenter of this villany, deuoured of dogs. *Gehezi*, out of a desire to be rich, receiued so many changes of rayment; for which hee was cloathed all his life time, with a most loathsome leprosie. *Iudas*, to get thirty pieces of siluer, lost his Apostleship, and his body, together with his soule, by becomming his owne executioner. *Ananias* and *Saphyra*, out of greedinesse of gaine, were sodainly strucken dead. If thou wilt bee rich, thou shalt not bee without sinne: for such is their miserable and vnhappy condition.

Moreouer, it inducеth men to embrace vice and to abandon vertue; it falling out for the most part, that where there is aboundance of riches, there is aboundance of pleasures, and sensuall delights, and of euill company, which are often an occasion of infinite infamies, and wicked actions, with great offence to the Maiestie of God. The rich thinke that God hath no power ouer them; but they are much deceiued; who with open eyes see them-selues carried headlong into hell. And this misfortune befals them, because the feare of God is not before their eyes; and for that they loue not their neighbour as they ought: But rather on the contrary, loue their riches better then them-selues, nay more then their owne soules. O miserable and vnhappy men as you are; looke, and diligently consider that which happened vnto *Lazarus*, that poore beggar, who receiued more contentment in that his extreame pouerty, and in those his ragges and stinking sores, liuing in the feare of the Lord, then in any other thing in this world; by meanes whereof, he came to enioy those rich treasures of heauen, and the continuall and eternall vision of his God. For a man to make him-selfe rich, it is a dangerous thing; for before euer he is aware, hee drawes vpon him an infinitie of all kind of troubles and miseries. It is a wonder to see at how deare a rate they buy hell, who pretend to be rich; seeing with how many restlesse trauailes, they purchase eternall torments.

Wicked and worldly-minded men, for a litile vaine glory, or rather a smoke that sodainly vanisheth, care not how many tribulations they vndergo; for loue of this, they submit them-selues willingly to infinite sufferings, toyles, and sweats, and voluntary stoope their necke to the heauy yoake of so many woes. And why doe they this? Onely for a little mucke. So that your rich men take a great delight in suffering annoyances, afflictions, tribulations, toylings, turmoylings, trauailes, troubles, vsing diligences, solicitudes, and placing all their care, and their study, in getting wealth, and with it, Hell. By which their carke, paines-taking, and sweats of blood, they gaine vnto them-selues eternall damnation. Doe ye not perceiue (ye wretches) that how much the more care yee take in hoording vp of riches, so many the more thieues, and murderers you prouide for your selues, that may rob you, & cut your throats? whence it also commeth to passe, that they who did commit these outrages against you, are likewise for this their wickednesse whipped, sent to the Galleys, if not to the Gallowes, and there hanged and quartered.

That man is a foole, that boasteth him-selfe of his riches; For why should any man glory in that, which takes away the safety of his life? Riches depriue vs of our liberty. We should be our owne, if these were not our owne: And masters of our selues, if these were not our masters. Riches take not away want, but occasion it; draw not on content, but withdraw it from vs. They are massed vp with trouble, possessed with feare, & forgone with sorrow. The rich man therfore hath need of many things, and must submit himselfe to many basenesses, and vile indecencies, being that he is euermore besieged and assaulted with feares, iealousies, and suspitions. They are full of perturbation, and confusion; the common subiect of murmuring and repining. They scratch and scrape all that they can rap and wring from others. They are daily more and more inflamed

flamed with the desire of getting. In a word, they will commit any wickednes, or villanie whatsoeuer, so as they may be sure to get by the bargaine.

A merry tale deliuered in the Pulpit by a Preacher.

Hearken to that, which was deliuered vnto me by a famous Preacher, who discoursing vpon this subiect of rich men, amongst many other things, I remember he told vs at that time of a certaine picture, the vpper and middle part of which square, or peece, was taken vp by a great rich man, which was there portrayed forth to the life: On his right hand, stood a roaring boy, to fight for him, if need were; and on his left, a foole, to make his Worship merry, and to put him out of his dumps: both which were expressed in such a posture, as fitted best with them. Vnder this rich man, was drawne a country Clowne; vnder the Clowne, a Merchant; vnder the Merchant, a Counsellor at Law; vnder the Counsellor, a Confessor; vnder the Confessor, a Physitian; and vnder the Physitian, the Deuill, with a long chaine, whose linkes were made of womens tongues, which kept a horrible ratling. And he farther added, that the rich man had written ouer his head; These two I keepe: The Clownes word was; I maintaine these three: The Merchants motto; I rob these foure: The Counsellors posie; I pill these fiue: The Confessors; I absolue these six: The Physitians; I kill these seuen: And the Deuill had a labell comming out of his mouth, which said; I carry away all these eight with me to Hell.

All these, and many other the like mischieses doe riches beget, whose possessor purchaseth no other fame, saue only; Lo, there goes a rich man: their riches being their totall and eternall destruction. But your true riches indeed, are the vertues of the minde; which like inuincible forts, defend those that possesse them. Against these, neither all the men in the world, nor all the deuils in hell can preuaile: They may wage warre against them, but they shall neuer ouerthrow them. O thou, that doest either reade, or heare me, make vertue the end and center of all thy desires, and there strike in the nayle, that it may sticke close vnto thee. And here I will stop my pen, that I may not runne my selfe out of breath, in the praysing of that, which is so well able to recommend it selfe. But I would haue thee withall to know, that as I haue purposely & willingly made this considerable digression; so in all the course of my life, I haue not done any thing more vnwillingly, then to winke at these men, and to let them goe by, without leauing some pawne behinde them. But because they may not obiect vnto mee, that I spend all my discourse in Reformations, and in prying into other mens actions, I am the more willing to giue way vnto them, and for this once to let them alone. Another motiue, that makes me loth to meddle with these Vsurers, is; That I may haue one day need of their helpe; and I would not willingly make them mine enemies, whom afterwards I must sue vnto to stand my friends. In a word, we are so farre forth to keepe some kinde of men our friends, as we may haue occasion to vse them, and as they may be profitable and beneficiall vnto vs. And as a faithfull friend is knowne in doing good, in time of need; so an enemie will neuer hide him-selfe, when he may do thee a mischiefe.

Onely this one thing I will say; Let a man cast vp his reckonings with himselfe, and when he findes, that he comes short of his Account, and that he stands in need of 200 Ducats to make it vp, let him but take vp so much vpon Vse, and he shall see them amount in two yeere, to more then six hundred. To how much more then, if a man take vp more? And therefore it is good to haue a care to the mayne, and to take heed, that we come not within such mens danger. For there is no such Cormorant, as Vsurie; it deuoureth houses, and swallowes downe whole Lordships, as it were at a bit, and makes no bones of it. And if a man cannot get out of this bogg, when he is but ouer shooes, how shall he doe, when he is ouer boots? Or how shall he satisfie a great debt, that is not able to discharge a small one. But here let your Vsurers (for me) rest in peace, and let me returne backe againe to my selfe.

I say then, that men, by not doing that which they ought to doe, come in the end,

desire he had to haue *Naboth*
who by *Iezabels* order, wife
fact, *Ahab* was depriued o
Iezabel, the inuenter of th
sire to be rich, receiued to
thed all his life time, with
ces of siluer, lost his Apost
comming his owne execut
gaine, were sodainly struck
without sinne: for such is

Moreouer, it induceth
ling out for the most part,
aboundance of pleasures, a
often an occasion of infinite
the Maiestie of God. The
they are much deceiued; w
into hell. And this mist
before their eyes; and for
But rather on the contrary
then their owne soules. C
diligently consider that w
who receiued more conten
ragges and stinking sores,
thing in this world; by m
of heauen, and the conti
make him-selfe rich, it is
drawes vpon him an infini
to see at how deare a rate
how many restlesse traua

Wicked and worldly-
that sodainly vanisheth, c
of this, they submit the
sweats, and voluntary ste
And why doe they this?
a great delight in suffering
moylings, trauailes, trou
care, and their study, in
carke, paines-taking, and
nall damnation. Doe ye
care yee take in hoording
rers you prouide for you
it also commeth to passe,
are likewise for this their
the Gallowes, and there

That man is a foole, th
any man glory in that, w
vs of our liberty. We sho
masters of our selues, if th
but occasion it; draw not
sed vp with trouble, posse
therfore hath need of ma
ses, and vile indecencies,
feares, iealousies, and sut
the common subiect of ma
that they can rap and wi

word, they will
sure to get by
d vnto me by
ien, amongst
ine picture, th
o by a great ric
hand, stood a
le, to make his
were expressed
, was drawne a
rchant, a Cour
fessor, a Physi
, whose linke
nd he farther
I keepe: The
motto; I rob t
fessors; I abso
ull had a labe
se eight with
schieses doe ric
Lo, there goes
n. But your tr
ncible forts, d
n in the world,
gainst them, b
eade, or heare
ke in the nayl
n, that I may n
so well able to
at as I haue pur
e course of my
e at these men,
hem. But beca
e in Reformati
ng to giue way
e, that makes
day need of thei
hom afterwards
forth to keepe
them, and as the
end is knowne i
selfe, when he
a man cast vp hi
short of his Acc
him but take vp
o more then six
therefore it is g
not within such
uoureth houses,
makes no bones
ouer shooes, ho
great debt, tha
for me) rest in p

at which they o

they will commit any wickednes,
to get by the bargaine.

A merry tale deliuered in the Pulpit by a Preacher.

o me by a famous Preacher, who amongſt many other things, I re-
icture, the vpper and middle part a great rich man, which was there d, ſtood a roaring boy, to fight for make his Worſhip merry, and to expreſſed in ſuch a poſture, as fit-drawne a country Clowne; vnder nt, a Counſellor at Law; vnder the or, a Phyſitian; and vnder the Phy-oſe linkes were made of womens he farther added, that the rich man epe: The Clownes word was; I ; I rob theſe foure: The Coun-s; I abſolue theſe ſix: The Phyſi-ad a labell comming out of his ght with me to Hell.

ſes doe riches beget, whoſe poſſeſ-here goes a rich man: their riches ut your true riches indeed, are the le forts, defend thoſe that poſſeſſe he world, nor all the deuils in hell t them, but they ſhall neuer ouer-or heare me, make vertue the end n the nayle, that it may ſticke cloſe t I may not runne my ſelfe out of ll able to recommend it ſelfe. But haue purpoſely & willingly made rſe of my life, I haue not done any eſe men, and to let them goe by, But becauſe they may not obiect Reformations, and in prying into giue way vnto them, and for this at makes me loth to meddle with ed of their helpe; and I would not fterwards I muſt ſue vnto to ſtand to keepe ſome kinde of men our and as they may be profitable and knowne in doing good, in time of vhen he may do thee a miſchiefe. caſt vp his reckonings with him-of his Account, and that he ſtands ut take vp ſo much vpon Vſe, and then ſix hundred. To how much ore it is good to haue a care to the thin ſuch mens danger. For there h houſes, and ſwallowes downe no bones of it. And if a man can-hooes, how ſhall he doe, when he debt, that is not able to diſcharge) reſt in peace, and let me returne

h they ought to doe, come in the end,

end, to pay ſoundly for that which they do. What doth it auayle a man to gaine much? What good to get, if he know not how to keepe? Eſpecially, ſeeing we are daily taught by experience, *Que vale mucho* [c] *mas al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta:* That a wiſe man will goe farther with a penny, then a foole with a pound. His poore pittance (well husbanded) ſhall bring him in more profit, then all the others rents, though neuer ſo great. Such great odds, hath moderation, of reuenue. He [d] that hath a time of it, let him take time, while time ſerues; and not lye lazing, looking for a better, yet let him not be ſo confident, nor ſo farre preſume vpon his ſtrength, that hee doe not keepe a good and carefull watch vpon him-ſelfe: He muſt looke about with many eyes, and that diligently to, hauing an eye here, and an eye there; it often-times ſo falling out, that when we thinke our ſelues ſafeſt, and freeſt from danger, then (when we leaſt dreame of it) we meet with a *Martinus contra*; ſome pad in the ſtraw, or ſome [e] Gil to plague vs. I had money in my purſe; I once was rich, but now am poore. God he knowes, why, and wherefore. I ſtood looking for a day, to ſet vp my reſt, and how to order the remaynder of my life in ſome ſetled courſe; but this day neuer came: I did build too much vpon mine owne ſtrength; it was euer my fault; I preſum'd I could recollect, and take vp my ſelfe, how, and when I liſted: being verily perſwaded, that though I could cozen and deceiue all others, I ſhould neuer be ſuch a foole, as to cozen my ſelfe. But here in me, you may ſee, how ſelfe-confidence, cauſeth a forgetfulneſſe of God, and by truſting more to our ſelues, then to him, hence it commeth to paſſe, that we loſe not onely our goods, but our ſoules. The greateſt enemie that I had, was my ſelfe: Mine owne hands, wrought mine owne woe: And as the good actions of the good, are the reward of their vertue; ſo the bad actions of the bad, are the occaſion of their greater torment. Mine owne works did follow me. They were the furies that did perſecute me: Whereof mine owne naughty dealing, and other mens wickedneſſe, were not the leaſt part of this my miſerie. And God doth therefore permit, that that, which we make the inſtrument of offending him; the ſame he maketh to be our deſtruction. Nor did I ſo much grieue for the loſſe of my wealth; for I knew full well, that the goods of fortune come with her, and with her goe their way. And that the more fauour ſhee ſhoweth, the leſſe certainty ſhee aſſureth. That which did vex me to the very heart, was; That that, which ſhould haue beene my comfort (I meane my wife) ſhe, whom with ſuch earneſtneſſe her father deſired to marry vnto me, and vſed a thouſand meanes to effect it, that ſhee, that was another my ſelfe, fleſh of my fleſh, & bone of my bone, that ſhee ſhould riſe vp againſt me, and proue a croſſe vnto me, perſecuting me without a cauſe, and for no other reaſon in the world, but only for that I was now growne poore. And that her hate ſhould come to that height, that contrary to all truth, ſhee accuſed me of keeping a wench at rack and manger, ſeeking by this meanes to finde ſo much fauour as to ſue out a diuorce, and procure a ſeparation betweene vs, not wanting a Lawyer to aduiſe her thereunto, firming it with his owne hand, that ſhee might lawfully doe it.

This griefe, of all other, was the greateſt vnto me; this wound ſtrooke deepeſt. For as Matrimonie once contracted, cannot be diſſolued; ſo when it is ill conioyned, it is hard to be endured. For a troubleſome wife, is like vnto a houſe, whereinto the raine falleth, dripping into euery roome and corner thereof. And by how much the more ſhee ſhineth in wiſdome, and good gouernment, when ſhee will apply her-ſelfe vnto vertue; ſo much the more beaſtly ſhe is, the more inſupportable, and the more to be abhorred, when ſhee departeth therefro. What facilitie hath ſhee, in all thoſe things, that ſhee hath a minde vnto? What a cunning *Scotiſt* is ſhee, for to compaſſe what ſhee longs for? Put the iudgements of a thouſand men together, yet ſhall they not equall the wit of one ſingle woman, for to frame a lye on the ſodaine. And although it be commonly ſaid, That when a man ſhuns company, and deſires to be alone, he is *aut Deus*, *aut*

Prouerbe.
[c] Mas vale al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta.

Prouerbe.
[d] El que tuuiere tiempo, no aguarde otro mejor.

Prouerbe.
[e] Vn Gil, que nos perſiga.
Giuing vs to vnderſtand, that eſcaping one thieues hands, we fall into anothers.

Of good and bad women.

aut Dæmon, either a God, or a Deuill, either ſpending his time in his ſeruice, or liuing like a beaſt; yet doe I ſay, that the ſolitude, which he ſuffereth all alone, is not ſo great, as is the puniſhment, which he receiueth, in hauing ill company, and ſuch as are contrary to his liking. I was rich, when I was not married; married, I became poore. The dayes of my Nuptials were ioyfull to my friends; but thoſe enſuing dayes of my mariage, ſad and mournefull for me. They were iocond and merry, and went well contented home to their houſes; but I remayned to endure martyrdom in mine owne dwelling; and for no other cauſe, but becauſe my wife would haue it ſo, and for that ſhee was too proud, and preſumptuous. Shee ſpent beyond meaſure, ſhee had a high minde, and a liberall hand; and ſhee had beene vſed to ſee me come home, like the Bee, laden with much honey; and that I had ſweet commings in, bringing her ſtill one dainty or other to pleaſe her: Shee could not endure, to ſee me goe forth in the morning, and bring nothing home with me at noone: Shee loſt all patience, and was ready to runne out of her wits, when the world did not goe as ſhee would haue it. But now (ay me, poore wretch that I am) when ſhee ſaw that all the oyle was ſpent, that ſhould maintaine the weke, and that alſo quite burnt out; and when ſhee found, that we had not where-withall to eat, nor knew where to get meat to put into our mouthes, and that we were faine to ſell our houſhold-ſtuffe to buy vs bread; from hence grew all this miſchiefe, here ſhee loſt her footing, and with it her patience; inſomuch, that ſhee could not afford mee a good looke; and (which is worſe) did euer after hate mee, as if I had beene her mortall enemie. Neither my faire words, nor her fathers admonitions, nor the intreatie of her kins-folke, nor the perſwaſions of her friends and acquaintance, could winne her to receiue me into her former fauour, or to recouer her loſt affection. Shee fled from peace, becauſe ſhee found it in diſcord; ſhee loued vnquietneſſe, becauſe it was her contentment; ſhee would be reuenged of mee, by retyring and ſeparating her-ſelfe from me, both at bed and at bord; and would refuſe many times to eat her meat, for that ſhee knew how well I wiſht her, and that it was a death vnto me, to ſee her ſo to doe. I knew not what to doe with my ſelfe, nor how to gouerne my paſſions, by reaſon of the great difficultie that I found to giue her content, which conſiſted onely in feeding her with the fulneſſe of money, which (God hee knowes) I extreamely wanted. Truly it ſeemeth vnto mee, that there are ſome women, that only marry for to ſatisfie their owne fooliſh longing, and to make tryall, what a kinde of thing mariage is, it ſeeming vnto them, to be like vnto an hyred houſe; if they finde them-ſelues well in it, it is well; if ill, and that it be not to their minde, and fitted as they would haue it, all is nothing, nor will they want one excuſe or other, and two falſe witneſſes to worke a diuorce. And beſides other ſo many inconueniences, if it ſo fall out, that a mans wife being any thing faire and beautifull, and that ſome one or other happen to fall in loue with her; but here I will be ſilent, & ſay no more. I could wiſh, that the Aduocates, Notaries, and Iudges of ſuch Courts, would open their eyes, and conſider well with them-ſelues, that that which they doe therein, is no other thing, then to diſſolue a matrimonie, and to open a doore to the Deuill, that he may enter in, firſt to the loſſe of the wifes life, ſecondly to the husbands honor, and laſtly, to both their vndoings. And I dare aſſure them, in the name of that all-powerfull and mighty God of heauen & earth, that a moſt grieuous puniſhment ſhall be powred downe vpon them from aboue, which ſhall pay them home, and make the ſmart thereof intolerable. I would haue them therefore to know, that theſe are ſecret ſins, and that the plagues that ſhall come vpon them, ſhall be alſo ſecret. Nor becauſe the husband hath ſlaſht his wife ouer the face, & giuen her a whores marke, or hath beaten her (like a ſlaue) with a cudgell, let theſe men thinke, that this ſin ſhall eſcape without puniſhment, for the chaſtiſement is then inflicted vpō them, when another taketh away his wife from him,

God ſo permitting it. When he ſhall ſee his houſe full of diſſention, infamie,& ſicknelſes,let him lay it to his ſoule & conſcience,that theſe come for this cauſe. I ſpeake not to one,but to all ; let them put their hand in their boſome,and take them-ſelues by the ſleeue,as well thoſe that are the occaſioners, as they that are the fauourers thereof,for they all ſaile in one and the ſame ſhip ; and the fault is alike in both;and therefore are to looke for the like puniſhment. Doeſt thou not ſee,how (on the wedding day) all things go trim and trickſie,what a troope attends vs at our heeles,what a deale of kinde care & paines euery man takes from the bridegroome to the gueſts, how contented they are, and how well pleaſed with their entertainment, the tables couered with neat and pure linnen, the boords furniſhed with dainty fare,the bed [f] handſomly made vp, the ſheets fine & ſweet,& all the reſt of the furniture anſwerable thereunto ; all then was delicate,& delightfull vnto vs.And thus it laſted with vs for a while: But now that my moneys are gone, that our gallantry begins to goe downe, and that things go not ſo well with vs as they were wont to do, the teat with-drawes its milke, and the loue of many yeeres (as if it were a mortall ſin) is loſt in a moment. It is like to ſucceed with them,as it did with me, who was quite vndone,not out of any inſufficiencie in my ſelfe, or want of care, and paines-taking, for I had wit enough,and knew how to manage my affaires with good iudgement. But I miſcarried for the reaſons I told you but a litle before.This was Gods handy-work, his chaſtiſement was vpon me. For, as he is infinite,ſo hath he no circumſcription,his power is not bounded,his arme not limited to puniſh this man for this, and that other for that.In ſome things he pronounceth a ſet & determinate ſentence,& for ſuch a particular ſin,ſuch a penalty appointed,beſides others,which appertaine vnto the ſoule,as alſo thoſe that ariſe out of ſuch & ſuch circumſtances.Mine was ill gotten gaine,& therfore could not thriue with me. *Malè parta, malè dilabuntur :* Ill got,ill ſpent. Now when a woman is married to a man,and afterwards findes her-ſelfe deceiued, for that her husband proues not ſo rich, as he was reported to be,thoſe goods that he hath,being other mens,and taken vp vpon credit; & likewiſe,that when he was to be married,he ran farther in debt, for the apparelling & ſetting forth of his wife,and that within a few dayes after, the Mercer comes to demand his money for the ſilks he had of him,& the Taylor for the making vp of the cloathes, and that the Sargeants be on the backe of him both for the one, and the other, there is not any thing wherewith to pay them;& if there be,yet meat is more neceſſarie,then the payment of debts. For whoſoeuer goes without,the belly muſt be ſerued ; though we could cozen all the world beſides,the belly will not be cozened.He will daily importune vs,& we muſt daily ſatisfie him. It is a debt of nature,that muſt needs be paid : It admits no forbearance : it is a commandement without controlment ; it is a rule without exception. When it comes to this, the peacock hangs downe his taile, as ſoone as he lookes vpon his feet.The pride of his ſtarrie traine begins to flag, and his hoarſe trumpet ſhrikes out his pitifull complaints. The flowers then begin to wither;their pleaſant ſpring is paſt;contentment & patience betake them to their heeles.They preſently ſet a ſowre face on the matter,like him that hath taſted ſharp vinegar.And if you ſhall aske them then,what they haue,how they doe,how their husbands vſe them,how like of mariage ? In ſtead of an anſwer, you ſhall haue them ſtop their noſes;it is [g] fiſh of foure dayes old ; it is too ſtale, and begins to ſtinke. They will not endure the mouing of this ſtone ; and will therefore tell you by ſome ſcuruy ſilent geſture or other:Speake no more of him for Gods ſake,let the man alone, doe not ſtir the turd, that ſtinks too much already;let vs talke of ſome other ſubiect. But how can thy *Lazarus* (deare wife) being dead in his ſins, otherwiſe chuſe, but ſtinke, and lament his hard misfortune, being buried in the graue of thy miſeries, from whence I ſhall neuer be raiſed vp againe to life ? Doth he not lye intombed in the darke and ſtrong ſepulchre of thy vaine thoughts ? and in that hollow vault of thy noyſome clamours,

[f] *The Spaniſh phraſe is*; la cama hecha de lana nueva. *The bed was made of new wooll,or had new wooll put into it. For in* Spaine, *in regard of their beats,they haue no feather beds.*

Prouerbe.
[g] Quartidiano es, ya hiede.

Prouerbe.
[h] No alçen la piedra.

mours, and peſtilent importunities? Is he not ſhrowded in the winding ſheet of thy loue, tyed to thy contents? Which he ſtriues all that he can, to giue thee; be it by hooke, or by crooke, with the expence of his purſe, or the hazard of his perſon, hauing my hands bound, ſhowing that I ſubmit my ſelfe as humbly to thy ſubiection, as thou (good wife, wert thou good) ſhould ſubmit thy ſelfe to mine? He that hath charge of a wife, and familie, let him hold his tongue, he cannot be at leyſure to talke, he hath ſomething elſe to doe, he muſt employ him-ſelfe in making prouiſion to ſupply neceſſarie wants, and perhaps is in want through thee, and is come to all this miſery by thy meanes. Doe not thou then complaine that he ſtinks, ſeeing that he is putrified with thy impertinencies, finding him-ſelfe thruſt in amongſt the wormes of thy waſtefull ryots and exceſſes, which like ſo many deuourers, lye gnawing vpon his heart and bowels? Thy boldnes in going abroad; thy liberty in conuerſing; thy exorbitancies in ſpending; thy waſtefulneſſe in ſcattering; thy vanitie, in vaunting thy ſelfe, bragging and boaſting thy birth & parentage, which hath ſo many mixtures, as there are differences of keyes, and variety of ſtops, in an Organ. Haſt thou a huſband that can beare with all theſe, and much more; and yet is he fiſh of foure dayes old? growes he ſtale with thee, and begins he now to ſtinke? Tell me (I prithee) by the life and light (I coniure thee) of thoſe thy faire eyes, and doe not lye vnto me; whether yeſterday thou didſt not viſit ſuch a Hermitage, ſuch a Chappel, & ſuch & ſuch other places of deuotion, making there thy vowes, & thy offerings; but to what purpoſe, God he beſt knowes? And is it not likewiſe true, that ſince thou hadſt the vſe of reaſon (nay rather before thou hadſt it, becauſe thou yet wanteſt it) there was neuer yet any Midſommer night, or feaſt of *S. Iohn*, wherein, without ſleeping (for they ſay, that ſleep hindereth the vertue and operation of thoſe, you know what I meane) thou betookſt thy ſelfe to ſuch a prayer, thou knowſt well enough what one, but better it had beene for thee, that thou hadſt not knowne it (being ſuch a one as it is, and ſo much reproued) & without opening thy mouth, or ſpeaking ſo much as one word (for they likewiſe ſay, that ſilence is another eſſentiall point of that prayer) thou ſhouldſt ſtay waiting and looking for the firſt that ſhould paſſe along by thee after midnight, to the end, that by what thou ſhouldſt heare come from him, thou mightſt accordingly iudge of thy future mariage, & know him that ſhould be thy husbād, hauing therein a ſtrong confidence & affiance, and giuing the ſame credit & beleefe vnto it, as if it were an article of Faith, or one of thoſe of thy Creed, when as in very deed, they are no other then old wiues tales, the impoſtures of witches, & the meere fooleries of fooliſh women, & ſuch as want iudgment. And is it not alſo true, that there is not that *Beata*, nor that deuout & religious woman, that thou haſt not either beene with her, or ſhee with thee, to the ſame effect?

Is it not true, that thou haſt put on thy mantle, walking diuers ſtations with them, only for this purpoſe? Haſt thou not forcibly laid hold on their garments, & torne the mantles of theſe Saints, who neuer throw them off frō their ſhoulders, burning tapers, to thou knowſt whom? Haſt thou not broken the bounds of modeſty without bluſhing, neither ſetting before thee thine owne ſhame, or the feare of God? Haſt thou left any ſieue, without trying thy ſorceries thereupon? or beanes lye ſtill in their place, which thou haſt not made to leape and dance, by euill meanes, and by words, and charmes, hated & prohibited by our holy Religion? Is there any match-maker, or knowne friend of thine, whom thou haſt not been importunate withall, telling them that thou art ſicke, & that thou longeſt for a husband? At laſt, God ſends her a husband (I ſpeake of others, not of my ſelfe) a quiet man, milde ſpirited, one that is carefull to liue, & an honeſt man, who takes paines, and labours hard to get a Royall wherewith to feed and maintaine her, not ſuffering her to want her oyntments, her paintings, and a thouſand other toyes & trinkets, as brooches, flowres, buttōs, aglets, & the like, for the ornament of her perſon; & yet for all this, within foure dayes, this man

alſo growes ſtale, and ſtinkes. If (poore ſoule) he doe all that hee can for thee, why doeſt thou afflict both him and thy ſelfe, and why ſhould it turne thy ſtomacke, and cauſe a loathing in thee, when others ſhall but name him vnto thee? Why doſt thou ſeeke to defame him, by thy obloquies, detractions, deprauings, reproaches, raylings, and reuilings? Why doſt thou grumble at thoſe good offices he does thee? Why miſconſtrue his kindneſſe? Why faſhion his affection according to thy falſe fancy, meaſuring his heart by thine owne? Thou wouldſt not haue him digg'd out of his graue, but that the memory of him ſhould ſleep for euer, and yet thou digg'ſt him vp with thine owne hands, not ſparing the very bones of his Anceſtors, and harmeleſſe aſhes of his whole linage, throwing out lies and ſcandals by ſhouell-fuls to thoſe that giue thee the hearing, laying foule (but falſe) imputations vpon him, proclaiming that (as they ſay) in the open market-place of him, which neither doeſt thou know to bee true, neither indeed is he guilty of. To what end then is all this outrage? I will tell thee; It is onely out of her malice towards him, thinking by this meanes to affront and diſgrace him. But thou doeſt therein, like thy ſelfe, thou ſhoweſt thy ſelfe a right woman; full of change and mutability, fickle and inconſtant; and would to God, theſe thy ſodaine, and vndeſerued alterations, doe not ariſe (taking the courſe that thou doſt) from the offences, that thou haſt committed againſt thy husband, againſt thy God, and againſt thine owne ſoule.

Now that I am come hither, and brought thus, before euer I thought of it, into this port, I will vnpacke my commodities, ſet vp a boothe, and make ſhow of all my wares, as your Pedlers and poore Mercers vſe to doe, that goe from Faire to Faire, and from Towne to Towne, opening them here to day, and there to morrow, without making any ſet reſidence, in this or that other place, and when they haue ſold all their trinkets, returne home to their owne countrie. Let vs here ſet open our ſhop, and ſell you ſome of theſe our good wares, and let vs in open market make ſhow vnto you of the intentions of ſome kind of mariages; as well, that we may put thoſe out of their errour, who are led thereunto for thoſe ends; as alſo for that they may know, that they are knowne; and it is fit, that we ſhould tell them the ill that they doe, becauſe they truly doe ill; and that done, we will preſently returne home againe to our ſelues.

Concerning mariage, and ſeuerall ends leading thereunto.

Some take this holy ſtate of mariage vpon them, out of no other conſideration in the world, then to free them-ſelues from the ſubiection of a Father or a mother, and to be at their owne liberty, it ſeemeth to your fooliſh young girle, (be ſhe Gentlewoman, or otherwiſe) that ſhe ſhall preſently be a free-woman; and that as ſoone as ſhee is remoued from her fathers houſe, and receiued into that of her husbands, ſhe may gad and runne, where, and whither ſhe liſt. That ſhe ſhall haue the Law in her owne hands; that ſhe ſhall command with authorite, haue where-withall to giue, and ſeruants to waite and attend vpon her, and to be at her becke. To theſe kind of creatures, ſubiection ſeemes to be too ſharpe and cruell a tye vpon them; and therefore eaſily ſuppoſe, that as ſoone as they are married, they ſhall on the ſodaine, be abſolute in their Empire, powerfull in their will, and ſway all things as they liſt them-ſelues. They will not ſticke to frame this argument to them-ſelues; that their parents perſecute them, that they are their daily torment, neuer ſuffring them to bee at quiet, and that they ſhall finde their husbands more ſoft and pliable then waxe, and that they will proue kind and louing vnto them. The growth whereof ſprings from this, That their fathers, in the life that they led with their wiues, liue like bruit beaſts, whereby they raiſe vp vaine deſires in their daughters, inflame their appetites, and cauſe them (by their ill example) to runne a croſſe courſe; for, being (as they are) imprudent, they cannot diſtinguiſh of things aright; they embrace all, that is ſweet and pleaſant, thinking to meet with it, whereſoeuer they come, not thinking that there is any tartneſſe or ſowerneſſe in any, ſaue onely in their parents.

Theſe,

Theſe, and other the like idle conceits, diſquiet their minds, making them not to care which end goes forward, it puts them beſides their wits, and leaues them without any iudgement. But as they looke and gaze vpon this, why doe they not alſo with a fixed and ſetled eye, behold that other friend and acquaintance of theirs, who is married to a iealous foole, a rough and bitter husband, who not onely giues her not a good word, but will not ſuffer her to ſtep a foot out of doores, to take the ayre, and recreate her ſelfe, no not ſo much as to goe to Maſſe, vnleſſe it be very early in the morning, and that in a cloath kirtle, and muffled vp in a poore mantle, as if ſhe were one of the ſeruants of his houſe: And in a word, not vſing her as his wife, but as his ſlaue that had fled, and run away from him. It is not ſo well (my maſters) as you take it to be; and beleeue me, that good mariages are not chickens of euery dayes hatching; they happen good now and then by chance, or as it pleaſeth God to ſend them; and it befalleth thoſe that are married, as it fareth with him, that buyes a Melon, for one dainty and delicate one indeed, which he may chance to light vpon, hee ſhall meet with a hundred other, which proue gourds and pompeons in their taſt and reliſh? Haſt thou not obſerued that other familiar friend of thine, who hath married a gameſter, who playes away all, to the very ſheets wherein hee lyes, turning them into table-cloathes, at a common dicing houſe? Doſt thou not thinke vpon that other neighbour of thine, whoſe husband keepes a whore vnder her noſe, and neuer a morning throughout the yeare, but that he ſends her out of the market a good basket full of prouiſion, whilſt his poore wife is ready to famiſh at home for hunger. Nor haue they heard (as it ſhould ſeeme) of ſome husbands, who are no ſooner entred within the doores of their owne houſe, but that they leuell their eyes with their feet, and neuer lift them vp, vnleſſe it bee to chide, and finde fault without a cauſe, and to feed this their peeuiſh and froward humour? Doe theſe women happly thinke, that all wiues are as much reſpected and beloued of their husbands, as they are of their fathers? I can aſſure you, that a bad father is to be preferred before a good husband; I haue ſeldome ſeene a father that hath not ſtill ſhow'd him-ſelfe a father; but few husbands ſo kinde, that they haue ſtill continued kind. And if any ſuch, hath at any time beene, that hath not beene wanting to thoſe obligations and duties, which belong vnto wedlocke, it may well be taken for a wonder. But I neuer knew a father ceaſe to be a father, though his ſonne ceaſed to be a ſonne. There is many a good father, that will make much of a bad ſonne; but ſeldome ſhall you ſee a bad husband make much of a good wife.

A ſecond end.

Others doe marry, becauſe (hauing neither father nor mother aliue) they deſire to be out of their Tutors or Guardians hands; thinking that by them they are ſold and rob'd of that they haue. They caſt vp their reckoning, and ſay with them-ſelues, that a husband would manage their eſtate farre better, and looke a great deale more faithfully vnto it, then a Guardian, who being loth to be diſpoſſeſſed thereof, and to render that vp into her hands, which is her owne, takes no great care to preferre her, but does all that he can to keepe her from marrying, hoping that to morrow ſhe will fall ſicke, and die; and himſelfe haue all.

And therefore, they ſay; How better were it, that mine owne children ſhould enioy that which I haue, then to leaue it to my enemies, who wiſh my death, that they may inherit my goods. I will marry, that I will, I will to this geare, though it be with ſome foule filthy Negro, for my father did not take the paines to get that he did for my Guardian, nor was it his meaning, that he ſhould licke him-ſelfe hole by me, cutting him-ſelfe large thongs, out of another bodies leather, eſpecially vſing me ſo vntowardly as he doth, ſuffering me to goe all to ragged, and torne, halfe ſtarued for want of good meat, and not ſo much as one poore Royall in my purſe to buy me a few pinnes. This is that that makes them runne headlong downe the hill; and therefore taking coun-

saile of the first they meet with; they thinke, that this their friend hath aduised them well, and that what they tell them, is out of loue, and a well wishing to their good: and being led thus along in this blind-fold manner, they pitch vpon a dunghill, where they are so bemired, that they shall neuer come off cleane from thence, while they liue, because they made choice of such a young gallant, that wastes all vpon his backe, and his belly, in good cloathes, and good meat; whose maine care is to pamper his body, keepe his horses fat, bestow rich liueries on his seruants, spend in feasts and banquets, leauing his wife weeping at home in a corner; and that which shee purposed, and desired to leaue to her children, to wit, the wealth that she brought with her, hauing now a house full of little brats, shee hath not one single peny to giue, or leaue vnto them; for hauing matcht with an vnthrift, the winde hath blowne it all away. And if she were afraid before, that her kinsmen, for to make them-selues masters of her estate, did desire her death; sure her husband now wisheth it no lesse, for out of a humor of his that he hath, to shift cleane linnen, being now growne weary of so much wife, which neuer misses him at bed, and at boord, hee desireth, and peraduenture also procureth, to put her vnder ground; and so this poore soule, deceiued by her selfe and others, fayles in the obtaining of that, which her false imagination proposed vnto her.

The third end.

Others, of a lesse staied temper, a kind of giddy-headed Hobby-horses, will needs marry forsooth for pure loue; these show them-selues in Churches, and at publike meetings; when they are at home at their owne houses, their windowes stand wide open, that they may see, and be seene; and in the night they lye tumbling and tossing in their beds, looking still when some one gallant or other should come vnder their *Balcone*, who with the *Trin-Trin* of his *ghitterne*, should rouze them vp from their vnquiet rest.

This or that other young wench, heares him sing certaine *coplas* or verses, which *Gerineldos* made to *Doña Urraca*, and thinkes that they were purposely made for her. She is more blacke then the Crow, more foule then the Tortoise, more foolish then the Salamander, more vgly then the Rat; and because there they paint her forth, to be more faire then *Venus*, not leauing any boxe, or cabinet vnsearcht, from which they take not forth for her, Alabaster, Rubies, Turkeses, Pearles, Snow, Iesmines, and Roses, euen to the vnnailing from heauen, of the Sunne, and the Moone, setting her forth with Starres, and comparing her eye-browes, to the Rainebow, that beautifull Arche of heauen, they are taken as truly there-with, as if they did properly belong vnto them, applauding them-selues with these their vndeserued prayses: Being as an euen so, or rather farre otherwise.

Alas poore silly foole, get thee gone, and sooth not vp thy selfe with these glorious (but feigned) glosses; for he (I assure thee) that made them, did not so much as once dreame on thee; he made them not for thee; or if hee did, hee lyde, that hee might deceiue and abuse thee with his flattering of thee; knowing thee to be vainly giuen, and a louer thereof. Take heed, I aduise thee of such a glozing companion; for he is a meere Emperique, who with one kinde of sirrop cures all sorts of persons, and diseases. He sayes the very same vnto others, as he does vnto thee. He readeth vnto thee (to stirre vp thy desires) another Lecture, taken out of *Diana*, where he tels thee that he saw the burning flames of those faire Shephardesses, the Palace of that wise Dame, with all the riches & sumptuousnesse thereof, the pearles and pretious stones wherewith it was adorned, those delicate gardens, and pleasant groues, wherein they tooke their pleasures and delights, and the dainty musicke which they had made vnto them; and as if all this had beene true, or might haue beene, and that the same things might one day happen to them-selues, these poore fooles beginne to melt, and pine away for loue.

These wenches are like tindar, any the least sparke that lights vpon them,

sets

ſets them all on a light fire; they are quickly tinded, and quickly ended, no ſooner in, then out; they make a blaze, and dye.

There are ſome others, that are a little more curious, who refuſing to make them-ſelues ready, and to buy other things more neceſſarie for them, ſpend their money in hyring of bookes; and becauſe they haue read in *Don Belianis*, in *Amadis*, or in *Eſplandian*, or *Knight of the Sunne*, thoſe dangers, and ill voyages, whereon thoſe vnfortunate Knights went for the *Infanta Magalona*, which ſhould be (as it ſeemed) ſome well diſpoſed Dame, they ſuppoſe, that the horſe is ready ſadled at their doore, and that there is the dwarfe, and that good old wench with *Señor Agrajes*, to goe and direct them in the way, and to bring them through thoſe thick forreſts and woods, to the end that they might not touch vpon the inchaunted Caſtle; whence they goe to performe ſome other atchieuement. And a head-leſſe Lyon, encountring with them, as they were on the way, vſing many courteſies and ceremonies vnto them, with a great deale of willingneſſe, brings them, where they are ſerued, and royally entertayned with diuers daintily dreſt diſhes of meat, which to their thinking, they now feed vpon, and that they finde them-ſelues afterwards there ſleeping in delicate ſoft beds of downe, not knowing who brought them thither, nor whence they come, for all is inchantment. There they are honeſtly lodged, and well vſed, till *Don Galaor* comes thither, and kills the Gyant, who makes me to ſhed teares, as oft as I heare tell of the cruelties that he vſed towards them. Whereas it had beene much better, that by one of theſe Gentle-women, he had beene ſent into *Caſtile*, together with his oppreſſed priſoners, where onely for the very ſight of them, they might haue got ſo much money, that would haue made vp a ſufficient Dowry for to marry them, without running ſo many aduentures, and diſaduentures. And ſo this inchantment is now wholly come to an end. But let them take heed, who reade ſuch, and the like bookes, leſt that ſucceed vnto them, which happened vnto *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, who thinking him-ſelfe an errant Knight, came to be an arrant Aſſe. But there is not wanting ſuch another mad rogue as my ſelfe, who told me the other day, That if ſuch bookes as theſe ſhould, like a bundle of fagots, be pitcht round about theſe faire curious creatures, and that fire ſhould bee put vnto them, yet were it impoſſible to make them to burne, becauſe their vertues would extinguiſh thoſe flames. But I ſay nothing; and ſo I proteſt, becauſe my ſelfe goes wandring through the world, I know not whither: and if I ſhould ſay this of others, they would ſay the like of mee.

A fourth.

Other wenches there are, who vpon the firſt ſight of ſome ſpruce yonker, with a ſtarcht beard, and his whiskers turn'd vp, his bodie peraduenture being as full of gummes, as a *Valençia* veluet, and as many iſſues in his armes and leggs, as *Aranjuez* hath fountaines, yet conceiting him to be another *Adonis* for his handſomneſſe and his neatneſſe, are taken with the pretineſſe of his perſon, and apparell, and are ready forſooth to runne mad for loue. This dandling, fidling, tender, and wanton young fellow, made of purpoſe (as they thinke) for pleaſure and delight, who makes a profeſſion of neatneſſe, and other apiſh toyes, as conging and kiſſing his hand, a poppet that one may put in his pocket, is the onely man with them: as if theſe curioſities, were not the Veſpers of ſome bone-fire, wherein they are to be burned. Let a woman be like a woman; and a man like a man. Though theſe vanities, and idle ſuperfluities befit neither the one, nor the other, but ſerue onely as Liueries, to ſhow that they are the Deuils followers. But if you will allow fore-tops, curlings of the hayre, lyes, paintings, neat dreſſings, a ſoft skinne, and a thouſand other things to beautifie both face and body, let women haue onely this priuiledge, who haue need thereof, and know beſt how to make vſe of theſe niceties. It ſhall ſuffice man that he expreſſe him-ſelfe to be a man: it will well become him,

to

to haue a bigge voice, a hard and bushy hayre, a thicke skinne, a manly face, a graue carriage, and a hand that is none of the tendereſt. Yet theſe fooliſh wenches, thinke that ſuch ſpruce princoxes as theſe, are made of ſuch pure mettall, that they haue not any naturall paſſions, nor that they ſpit and cough as other men; and yet for all this their ſeeming fineneſſe, they are ſubiect to *Sarſaparrilla*, *China* earth, *Guacum*, *Emplaſtrum Melilotum*, *Vnguentum Apoſtolorum*, decoctions, ſirrops, and electuaries, and many other miſeries, and medicines; for whom theſe fond things are ready to run mad, and are ſo hot in their loue, that if the bridle of ſhame did not ſomewhat reſtraine this their head-ſtrong affection, they would be worſe then any deuill, when he is vnchained and let looſe. And if you ſhall aske, either all, or any one of them, what they ſee in this finicall fellow, what reaſon they haue to dote vpon him, why conceit him to be ſuch a pretious peece? This accurſed anſwer (as it is common with them) ſo it ſerues then in ſtead of all other: That it is their pleaſure forſooth to haue it ſo; it is their humour, and they will not be beaten out of it. And if you lay before them their vnaduiſedneſſe in doing ſo, the inconueniences that are likely to follow thereupon, the ill counſaile which they take, and the like, their anſwer is; I muſt ſuffer for it, and no body for me; it is I, and not you, that muſt feele the ſmart of it: and therefore you were as good hold your peace. If it ſucceed ill with me, I muſt be contented with my bad fortune, and conne no body thanke but my ſelfe, and therefore I pray let me alone, and ſpare your labour to ſpeake thereof any more, for I am of age, and know well enough what I doe. And yet this miſerable maid, neither knowes what ſhe does, or ſayes. but if they find them-ſelues obliged by the ſweet-meates, that are ſent vnto them, a gawdy girdle, a neat payre of Twizes, a ſilke payre of ſtockings, garters fringed with gold, perfum'd gloues, or a loue-letter brought her by her mayd, or her anſwer thereunto, if ſhe ſuffer him to pinch her as ſhe paſſeth by, or reach forth her hand to him from vnder the doore, if not perhaps her foot: when it comes to this, Lord haue mercy vpon her, there is no other medicine for this malady. For ſhe is already toucht [h] with the venome of that herbe, whoſe infection (without diuine helpe) is incurable.

Prouerbe.
[h] Tocada eſta de la yerua.
A fifth.

There are other women, that doe likewiſe marry, onely that they may liue as merrily as the day is long, that they may goe whither it pleaſeth them, as well to ſee, as to be ſeene; that they may dreſſe them-ſelues to their owne liking, weare this gowne, or put on this mantle, either as it ſutes with their fancy, or the faſhion: it ſeeming vnto them, that becauſe they ſaw ſuch a one vpon ſuch a feſtiuall day, or all the weeke long, in her brauery and her gallantry, that as ſoone as ſhe is married, her husband will maintaine her in the ſame manner, and if not better, yet at leaſt as other husbands keepe their wiues: and if ſuch a mans wife trot vp and downe all the day long, hee will not deny her leaue to walke the ſtreets at her pleaſure.

Hence ariſeth the quarrell, this is it which maketh the fray; for if her hopes be croſt, and that things fall not out according to her expectation, or that her husband doth not like of it, and that he will not haue his wife to goe either cloathed, or naked, for any but him-ſelfe; telling her, that though ſuch a one let his wife doe what ſhe liſt, and to goe thus and thus, he does not well in it, giuing the world occaſion to ſcandall her good name, whereby he muſt needs be toucht in his honor; and therefore he will not permit her ſo to doe, for feare of incurring the like cenſure. Whereupon, and for no other cauſe in the world, becauſe they will not giue them leaue to weare what cloathes they liſt themſelues, what ſhooes, and what ſtockings, nor to take their pleaſure abroad, and to walke the ſtreets, as ſome other women doe, nor bee left wholly to their owne liberty, not one ſtone ſhall reſt quiet vpon another in all the whole houſe; ſhe plotteth treaſons wherewith to reuenge her ſelfe vpon her vnfortunate husband, who being a wiſe and conſiderate man, knowing what a kind of wo-

man

man ſhee is, and how affected in her diſpoſition, is afraid, that if he ſhould grant her this licence, and giue her wings, they would turne to her deſtruction, as they doe to the [1] Ante. So that he dares not giue her leaue to range abroad, nor to conſent to other her extrauagancies. This only coale is enough to kindle the fire, this ſingle contradiction will ſerue the turne to make her fall a ſcratching of her face, and tearing her hayre, calling her ſelfe the moſt wretched and vnfortunate of all women, and wiſhes that as ſoone as ſhee was borne, it had pleaſed God, that her mother had ſtrangled her, buried her in a ditch, or throwne her into ſome deepe well, rather then to liue to be ſubiect to ſo tyrannicall a power; that ſhe onely of all other married women, is the moſt miſerable; that ſuch a woman is of this and that quality, and that ſhee liues like a Queene with her husband, in compariſon of her; that ſhe is no whit inferiour vnto her, nor brought a leſſer dowry with her, nor would ſhee euer haue married, if ſhe had thought her husband would haue vs'd her no better. And breaking the bounds of womanhood, ſhe diſhonours him, calling him baſe fellow, dunghill-ſquire, neglectfull villaine, rogue, raſcall, and what not; vpbraiding him, that her father kept better men then hee was; and that hee was not worthy to make cleane her old ſhooes. And if her husband chance to ouerheare her, ſhe ſtraines her voice a note higher, crying out, Wretched woman that I am, was I ſo daintily bred vp, to be fed with this courſe fare? Are theſe the delights I am like to haue? Did they leaue me ſo well for this, that thou ſhouldſt vſe me in this ſcuruy manner as thou doeſt? Muſt I bee thy ſlaue night and day, to looke to thy houſe and children, and to bee made a drudge to thy ſeruants? See, and there be any griefe like vnto mine? God and the world knowes what I am, of what houſe I come, and how well I am deſcended! *Don Fulano*, and *Don Cutano*, ſuch a Biſhop, ſuch a *Conde*, and ſuch a Duke, are of my alliance; leauing out neither beardling, nor ſhaueling, high, nor low, whereof ſhe does not make a Letany, and verball proceſſe.

But poore vnhappy man as he is, if it ſhould fortune ſo to happen, (which God forbid ſhould euer befall any honeſt man) that he haue his aged mother at home with him in his houſe, his ſiſters that are virgins, or children by another wife; then will ſhe keepe a racket, and cry out; That it was for them, that her father got his wealth; that it is ſpent vpon them; that they eate it out, whileſt I (poore ſoule) who brought him all this, muſt bee vſed like a *Negra*; *Negra* (ſaid I) if it were Gods will, would I were no worſe vs'd then ſuch a ones *Negra*, which paſſeth here daily by our doore, as if ſhe were ſome great Lady; to day in this change of cloathes, to morrow in that. I onely am that vnlucky bird, that continue ſtill in theſe old ragges, euer ſince I was firſt married, and haue not where-withall to mend them, mew'd vp betweene theſe wals, accompanied with I know not how many ſpindles, reeles, diſtaffes, and hitchels for flaxe: What can her husband (poore man) ſay to all this? What anſwer can he make her? His beſt courſe will bee to let her alone, otherwiſe hee ſhall neuer bring his purpoſe to paſſe.

[1] *There are diuers ſorts of Ants, whereof ſome are borne with wings, but to their owne hurt.* Couart. verb. Hormiga.

The ſixt.

There are another ſort of women, that marry, to the end that by hauing a husband to cloake their faults, they may not be moleſted by the Iuſtice, nor reproached by their neighbours, or any other perſons whatſoeuer. This is roguery, knauery, villanie, beaſtlineſſe, and diſhoneſty in the higheſt degree. What ſhould a man ſay more of them? They are a kinde of kinde wenches, but diſhoneſt and ſhameleſſe. They are like thoſe Gardiners, that clap vp a skar-crow in a fig-tree, that the birds may not come and pecke at the figges: which are onely kept for thoſe, whom it ſhall pleaſe the Gardiner to giue leaue to plucke them; or ſuch as ſhall pay him well for them: ſo as the birds doe not pecke them, it is all good and well.

Is there none then, that may correct, reproue, or open his mouth againſt theſe kinde of women? No ſurely. They haue a skar-crow in the fig-tree; a huſband

band of their owne in the houſe. Touch them who dares. They can eyther giue or ſell, their honour, or their perſons, as they will and liſt themſelues, euen in the ſight of the whole world, and yet by-reaſon of this their skar-crow, the Iuſtice dare not offer to puniſh them. For it fareth with them, as it doth with Vine-yards, which haue a guard vpon them in their time of fruitage; but when the Vintage ſhall be gathered in, and the grapes carryed away, and put into the wine-preſſe, they are no more looked vnto, but are laid open, and made a common field, for their flockes and heards of cattell to feede on, treading and trampling them downe with their feet.

Siſter, let me tell thee, that theſe are the ſteps that leade vnto hell: God will take away this cloake from thee, this husband of thine for thy diſſolute life and ſhameleſſe luſt, to the end, that this may be the whip to laſh thee, by bringing thy ſecret whorings in publike view: and in that balance wherein thou didſt put his honor, thine owne ere long ſhall be weighed. But I were beſt take heed to whom I ſpeake, leſt I may chance to haue my head broken for my labour. She feared not her husband, ſhe was paſt all ſhame towards God and Man: and ſhall I thinke to reclaime her, or ſuch as ſhee is, by theſe my fooleries? (for I know they take them for no other,) I ſhall neuer be able to doe it while I liue, and therefore I will let them alone.

The ſeuenth. Other ſome alſo marry, for that they ſee their wealth beginnes to waſte, they know not how themſelues: yet pretend, that the onely cauſe why they marry, is, for that they are young, and are loth to haue their honour lyable to the lauiſh tongues of euill diſpoſed people; as alſo, leſt their perſons might run the hazard of Rapes, and other the like violences. Well, of two euils the leaſt: But becauſe God hath not any part in all theſe mariages, and that it may be better ſaid of them, that they be the Deuils contracts: and for that all things are to be reputed eyther good or ill, according to the end whereunto they are directed: and this being knowne, thoſe actions are determined and defined that leade thereunto; bearing more loue alwayes to the end it ſelfe, then to thoſe things which conduce and guide vs vnto it. So that mariage is not loued in ſuch as theſe, for the loue that they beare vnto mariage, but onely vſe it as a meanes, for the accompliſhing of their deſires. And theſe kinde of women doe not walke directly in the right way, but goe ſomewhat about to ſerue their owne turnes, running a by-way to their owne ruine. And therefore I hold it no good mariage, (nor indeed is it) when it hath any other end in it, ſaue only to ſerue God in that holy and honourable eſtate.

God doth permit (I confeſſe) all theſe mariages, but I muſt tell you withall, that in moſt of them the deuill hath a ſhare, and that not the leaſt. It is a good and holy Calling, but thou makeſt it a helliſh Mariage. It was inſtituted for quietneſſe and for comfort, but thou lou'ſt it not; thou neyther haſt it, nor art willing to haue it: but thou doſt rather intangle thy feet in it, that thou maiſt the ſooner trip, and fall with it to the ground. Let not a virgin, or a widow, make the butt that ſhe ſhoots at her lawleſſe liberty, nor the freeing of her-ſelfe from her Fathers, or her Gardians ſubiection: let her not be led along with vaine loue, let her caſt away from her all ſuch filthineſſe as followes her ſenſuall appetite. Which if they doe not doe, let them aſſure them-ſelues, that it will goe ill both with the one and the other: and if their husbands ſhall not proue ſo good and kinde vnto them, as they them-ſelues did thinke, and wiſh they ſhould, if they ſhall make ſlaues of them after they are maryed vnto them; if they ſhall mewe them vp like Hawkes; if they ſhall lead an euill life with them; if they ſhall waſte away their wealth, and yet leaue a great charge of children vpon them; if their purſe ſhall be ſtill empty; if troubles ſhall come vpon them; if their husband ſhall be a Gameſter, or a whore-maſter; if they ſhall be thus abuſed by them, and ſhall haply dye vnder their hands: all this ariſeth from thoſe euill ends, which they propoſed to themſelues, eyther by

ſeeking

ſeeking to aduance themſelues beyond their qualitie, or to flaunt it beyond their meanes: or thoſe other fore-mentioned reaſons, which are the ſole cauſe of their ruine. This Idoll of *Baal*, whom they adored, in him did they put their truſt: this was the God who (they thought) could ſuccour, free and defend them; but in caſe at any time they ſhould haue true need indeed of his helpe, they ſhall find, that he ought not to be feared, nor that he is able to ſend downe fire to conſume their enemies, or comfort them; for as he hath it not, ſo can he not giue it them. Thou adoreſt Idols, but thou ſhalt be deliuered by none of them in the day of trouble: for in a word, they are Idols, the workmanſhip of our owne hands, faſhioned out of wantonneſſe, and a longing to be doing of ſomething, and adored onely out of an idle humour, and out of a kinde of pleaſure and delight that wee take in theſe toyes. Fire ſhall come downe from heauen, and conſume the ſacrifice, the wood, the ſtones, and the aſhes, euen to the waters themſelues in the trenches, (like vnto that of *Elias*) though they be filled afreſh, barrell after barrell, yet ſhall all that moyſture be licked vp by the fire. Know yee then, that thoſe are mariages which God ordaineth, and ſuch as you enter into, onely to ſhew your ſelues obedient to his will, and haue conſulted therewith afore-hand; leauing it wholly to him, to worke in the reſt, as he ſhall thinke fitteſt for his ſeruice, without ſeeking after any ill and foule meanes: and then though yee ſhould be dung-wet, and bucketted a hundred times with the waters of perſecutions, of hunger, of cold, of impriſonment, and all other troubles and miſeries, that may befall the life of man, it is no matter: For fire ſhall come downe from heauen, that is to ſay, the loue of God and his charitie, which ſhall conſume and dry vp, theſe their many waters of tribulations. This quicke fire makes ſpeedy riddance of all our troubles, preſenting them as a ſacrifice before his diuine Maieſtie, who will not onely aſſiſt vs with his grace in this world, but crowne vs with his glory in the world to come. And let this ſerue as an end to this my Sermon. Now let vs returne againe to our Mariage, which (and it had pleas'd God) would it had neuer beene.

I had now ſeru'd ſome ſix yeares in the Mariage-galley; in which ſhort time (would it had beene leſſe) I endured (I thanke my wife for it) a great deale of miſery. Howbeit, for the foure firſt yeares, our wedding loaues (I muſt confeſſe) were freſh and new: for as yet, it was but hony-moone with vs; all was of the fineſt flowre and the pureſt wheat. But when wee beganne to goe downe the hill, and were now fallen halfe in halfe from that height wherein wee were before, and wanted money to maintaine vs at that ſcantling: when the cloth-of-gold kirtle, which was richly both bordred and imbroydered, was to be ſold, and turn'd into gold; and that not any the leaſt thread of it, though no bigger then a Spiders, eſcap't the melting-pot, and yet paſt for a reaſonable handſome kirtle ſtill, as the world went with vs: when all our old ends were ſpent and gone; when I could not inch it out any further; when I ſaw that the water was come vp aboue my chinne, and that I could not long hold out, but muſt needes ſinke, for that ſhe would by no meanes conſent, that I ſhould ſell any thing eyther of hers, or mine owne, and that my credit to furniſh my ſhop would not reach ſo farre as one farthing-worth of Radiſhes, I found my ſelfe then in that ſtrait, that aduiſing with my father-in-law, I was willing to take ſome-what a more rigerous courſe with her. God ſend vs a good night of it. She thereupon began to ſet out ſo loud a throat, as if (like a pig) I had offered to ſticke her, or that the matter had beene of more moment then indeed it was: inſomuch that the neighbours came running in for to helpe her, who were ſo many that the houſe could not hold them. But when they ſaw the truth of the buſineſſe, as God would haue it, it was a thing of nothing; and when they perceiued I had reaſon to doe as I did, they reſted quiet, and went their wayes: yet for all this did not ſhee leaue off her lamentations, which might very well haue ſeru'd her turne for a hundred holy-weekes. I was inforced that I might

might not fall further foule with her, to let her alone, and to leaue her to her ſelf, that I might not be bound by hearing her, to anſwer her both with words and deeds. I tooke my cloake, threw it on my ſhoulder, and got mee out a-doores, leauing her all alone, and giuing her thereby free liberty to ſay and doe what ſhe would, till ſhe ſhould grow weary, and could no more.

This madded her more then all the reſt, when ſhe ſaw mee ſet ſo light by that which ſhe ſaid, and that I ſeemed to make ſuch little reckning of it. And I may truly confeſſe vnto you, that in all that time that I liued with her, I cannot accuſe my ſelfe, nor did ſhe euer taxe me of any the leaſt iniury that I had done her, but vs'd her with all the kindneſſe that a husband could vſe a wife. But when God ſhall beſtow wealth vpon vs; or when he pleaſeth, take it away, this alters the caſe; for man cannot then doe withall, it lyes not in his hands, neyther is it in his power, to goe increaſing in riches, neyther can he ſtop them in their courſe, (no more then a man can the tyde) when they are ebbing from him. Hee cannot be termed an vnthrift, or a bad husband, who vſeth his beſt endeuors, as others doe, for to get where-withall to liue in ſome good and honeſt faſhion, and to prouide, as well as hee can, for his wife, children, and family. But he is a bad husband, who ſpends his meanes vpon women, throwes it away at play, waſtes it in eating and drinking, and prodigally conſumes it in pride of apparell, and other vices of like exceſſe.

Let my young prodigals hearken vnto mee, and doe thou to vnderſtand this leſſon, thou that art the onely ſonne and heyre of ſome rich merchant: for it is vnto thee that I ſpeake, and thou knoweſt why and wherefore I ſpeake it. And I was alſo about to ſay farther vnto thee, that if thou doe not take heede, thy raſh and vnaduiſed courſes, (holpen on by other mens ill counſell) will carry thee hence to hell. Repent thee therefore betime, and haue a care to liue, that thou maiſt not dye.

So that I ſay, it is neyther good, nor bad ſucceſſe, that ſhould cauſe any ſeparation betwixt Man and wife; nor ought marryed folkes to fall out and diſagree about the tranſitory things of this world. For a husband hath no more obligation, then to vſe all his induſtry and diligence, and to doe the beſt hee can: The ſucceſſe wee muſt leaue to God. Nor is hee to be condemned for a bad husband, who keepes his wifes dowry well ſecured, and hath rather augmented, then diminiſht it, without hauing eyther ſold, or paltred it away. Shee, without doubt, could not confeſſe ſo much, or if ſhee did confeſſe it, ſhee did not ſpeake the truth; or if ſhee did ſpeake it, ſhee did adulterate it in that manner, that they might abſolue her vpon it. Thus (poore ſoule) did ſhee deceiue her-ſelfe, whileſt ſhee thought to cozen her Confeſſor. Likewiſe, there were not ſome wicked people wanting, of baſe birth, who, vpon weake grounds, and a weaker vnderſtanding, to flatter and ſooth vp this her idle humour, did help to further her fooleries, fauouring them all that they could, not ſo much as once giuing eare vnto mee, nor knowing the iuſtneſſe of my cauſe: And theſe were they that wrought my woe, and brought her to hell. For ſhe dyed ſhortly after of a ſharpe diſeaſe, without ſhewing any tokens of repentance, or receiuing the Sacrament.

Guzmans wife dyes.

In two things may I ſtyle my ſelfe vnfortunate: Firſt, in this my mariage, though on my part I did vſe all poſſible meanes to obſerue the lawes therof. Secondly, that hauing done penance ſo long a time with her, and hauing loſt all my wealth, I had not any acquittance or receipt vnder her hand, no not ſo much as a childe by her, whereby I might haue recouered her dowry. Howbeit, I haue no great cauſe to complaine much for this: for the vnhappineſſe of her death, made my life happy. For there is no burthen ſo heauy, as the inſupportable waight of a froward wife. As a certaine paſſenger plainly gaue vs to vnderſtand, who being vpon a voyage at Sea, and a great ſtorme ariſing, the Maſter of the Shippe gaue order that they ſhould preſently lighten the Shippe, and throw

A ſhort tale of one that threw his wife ouer-boord.

throw the heauieſt commodities ouer-board for the ſauing of their liues. The paſſenger hearing him ſay ſo, tooke his wife vp in his armes, and threw her into the ſea. The Iuſtice going afterwards about to puniſh him for this his offence, he excuſed him-ſelfe, ſaying; That the maſter of the ſhip, had commanded him ſo to doe. And that amongſt all the merchandize that hee had aboord, there was not any that waighed ſo heauy as his wife, which was the cauſe that hee threw her into the Sea: And it pleaſed God that they had faire weather after it.

Now, turne your eyes vpon my father-in-Law, who neuer had any difference with me, but did cheriſh and comfort me, as if I had beene his owne naturall ſonne; and taking alwayes part with me againſt his daughter, and would euer chide and reprehend her; and when he ſaw his fatherly admonitions could not reclaime her, nor worke any good vpon her, he would neuer come within her doores. But howſoeuer he did hate her conditions; in concluſion, ſhe was his daughter; and children are thoſe tables that are ſawen and hewen as it were out of the fathers heart. And though they cauſe their ſorrow, yet they loue them dearely. He mourned much for her, but we remained friends. Wee buried this vnhappy woman (for that muſt be her name) and did that was fitting for her ſoule. And within a few dayes after, we parled of parting Company; for he would that I ſhould returne that vnto him which he had giuen me with his daughter. I did not ſtand off, but gaue him all that he had giuen me, and in better caſe then he conſigned it vnto me. He kindly thankt me; we leuel'd our accompts, remaining ſtill as good friends as euer we were heretofore.

Chap. IIII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being now a Widower, reſolues to goe to* Alcala de Henares, *to ſtudy the Artes, and Diuinity, that he might make him-ſelfe fit to ſay Maſſe. And hauing fulfilled all his tearmes, and duly heard his Lectures, hee leaues all and marries againe.*

FOR to tumble downe a ſtone from the top of a hill, euery mean mans ſtrength will ſerue, with the touch (as they ſay) of his little finger, hee will make it to roule to the ground. But if the ſame ſtone were to be drawne out of ſome deepe Well, many men would not be able to fetch it forth, and great diligence muſt be vſed for the getting of it vp. For to make my ſelfe fall from that good eſtate, wherein I was, and to run head-long out of my wealth and credit, my wifes waſtfulneſſe was enough to turne me going; but to get my ſelfe vp againe, to the ſame height wherein I was before, I had need of the helpe of other the like Vnkles and Kinsfolke; ſuch another *Genoa*, and *Milane*; or that another *Sayavedra* ſhould come and liue with me; or that the ſame man ſhould riſe againe; for I neuer lighted on the like ſeruant, or companion for my turne; by whoſe helping hand I might haue beene raiſed vp as high as euer I was, and reſtored to a better eſtate then before: But wanting theſe good helpes, I lay buryed and whelmed-ouer head and eares in a well of miſeries.

Goods and riches, the ſlower they are in comming, the quicker they are in going. They are gathered with a great deale of leaſure; but are ſcattered away in haſte. All at this preſent (whatſoeuer it be) in this world, it is all ſubiect to mutation; it being fuller of alterations, then any thing elſe. Let not the rich

Riches long a comming, but quicke in going.

man therefore reſt too ſecure, nor yet the poore man deſpaire. For the wheele is as ſlow in comming vp, as in going downe; and as quickly emptieth, as fils the Buckets that it bringeth vp. The exceſſiue expences of my houſe had ſtript me of all, both my iewels and my money; My wife might with a good conſcience (if ſhe had had it) conſidering what I ſuffered for her ſake, and the troubles which by her exorbitancies, lighted vpon me, haue left mee ſome ſmall part of her portion, (which ſhe might lawfully haue done) where-with at leaſt I might (had I beene ſo diſpoſed) being a ſole and retired man, haue driuen ſome ſmall trade, attended my old occupation of vſury, or emploied my ſelfe in ſome one thing or other, to haue pickt out a poore liuing, and to beginne the world anew, to ſee if I could recouer this my weakneſſe, whereinto by her meanes I was fallen, and now brought ſo low. But not onely in this particular occaſion, but in all the reſt, that offered them-ſelues vnto mee, with my friends and acquaintance, I might ſay that which *Simonides* ſaid; He had two coffers or cheſts in his houſe, and was wont to ſay, (vſing to open them at certaine times) that when he opened that of cares and troubles, from which hee thought, and hoped to reape ſome profit, it fell out contrary to his expectation, finding nothing but his labour for his paines; and of that it was brim-full; but that wherein the Graces were kept, who ſhould haue recompenced him for his good ſeruices, he could get nothing thence, but had the ill lucke to find it alwayes empty.

Simonides *his two coffers.*

This Philoſopher and my ſelfe, were equally vnfortunate; and it ſeemeth, that the influence of one and the ſame Starre, had lighted on vs both. For albeit, I did euermore labour to helpe and benefit others, not conſidering the good or hurt that might come thereof, and without taking the counſell of thoſe, who ſay; *Haz bien, [a] y guarte:* Doe well for others, but yet looke to thy ſelfe; ſo may I alſo ſay, That I neuer waſht that head, that I had any other reward for my paines, but ſcabs and ſcurffe. And albeit I had felt the ſmart of it, and paid ſoundly for this my folly, yet I could not hold my hand, but wilfully perſiſted in mine owne wayes; for, being made drunke with the delight, that I tooke therein, I did not ſeeke to repayre the hurt it had done mee. For as it is an eaſie matter to ſtrip a [b] drunken man out of his cloathes; ſo is it hard to doe the ſame vpon him, that is ſober. They may [c] rifle him that ſleepes; but not him, that is awake. I did neuer ſtand vpon my guard; I did neuer thinke to ſee the day that I ſhould haue wanted; Whileſt I had where-withall, I alwaies made this account; But when I ſaw to what pouerty I was brought, I then knew the error I was in. And though I was a naughty man, yet I had a deſire to be good; not out of any true loue to goodneſſe it ſelfe, but for the ſhunning of ſome greater euill, that otherwiſe might enſue. I had throwne aſide my vices, forgetting them for a while, and had applied my ſelfe to labour and paines-taking; I had tride all the meanes and wayes that might be to work my ſelfe a fortune, and to come forward in the world; but not any one of them that thriu'd with me. I was an vnfortunate man in all thoſe better courſes, that I ranne. Onely in doing ill was I lucky, I had a happy hand in filching and ſtealing, fortune only fauouring me ſo far, as to make me vnhappily-happy.

Prouerbe.
a Haz bien, y guarte.
Guzman *hurt by his kind heart.*

Prouerbe.
b Facil deſpojar à vn ebrio.
Prouerbe.
c Pueden robar, al que duerme, pero no à quien vela.

Guzman *could neuer thriue by any good courſes.*

This is a cunning tricke, which ſinne ſtill puts vpon vs, to further vs with its counſaile, and to helpe thoſe that are her champions, to the end, that with that heat and warmth they receiue from ſinne, they may bee the better incouraged and drawne on with the more mettall, to commit more heynous crimes; and when ſhee ſees that they haue attained to the height of all villany, and that they cannot well climbe higher, ſhee tumbles them downe headlong with a witneſſe. She makes them to mount by the ladder, but ſends them downe by the rope. Differing herein from God, who workes after another manner. For he neuer ſendeth vs any trouble, which he doth not accompanie with ſome bleſſing or other; from our greateſt miſeries, groweth our greater

Sinne, how ſhe vſeth her followers.

greater glory: leading vs by a narrow path, to the broad and ſpatious way of bliſſe.

It ſeemeth vnto vs, that when we are ſwallowed vp as it were with deſperation; and that want and pouerty lye heauy vpon vs, that hee is forgetfull and vnmindfull of vs; when as indeed, he is but like vnto that father, who for to teach his ſonne to goe, maketh as if he did looſen his hand from him, faigning to let him goe alone by him-ſelfe, and for a while to ſee how hee will ſhift his feete, ſtands in ſome neere diſtance from him, yet not ſo farre off, but that hee ſtill keepes him-ſelfe cloſe by his ſide, and when walking ſoftly, and with trembling ſteps towards him, he ſees him ready to fall, he runnes in vnto him, and catching him in his armes, receiues him into them, and embraces him, not ſuffering him to fall to the ground. But when the father hath no ſooner left him to him-ſelfe, but that either he makes too much haſte, or will not goe at all, nor ſo much as offer to moue a foot, or letting goe his hold, vnfaſtning him-ſelfe from his fathers hands, he comes to catch a fall, the fault is not in the father, but in the ſonnes either too much dulneſſe, or too much haſte.

God is alwayes at hand to helpe vs.

We are of a naughty and an euill nature, wee are not willing to helpe our ſelues a iot, we doe not endeuour to doe our ſelues good, wee will not vſe our beſt diligence, nor put to any helping hand of our owne, but looke (like little children) to haue our meat put ſtill in our mouthes, (being now big lubbers) and that all ſhould be put into our laps, without any paines, or care-taking of ours. But God is of that infinit goodneſſe, that he neuer forgets vs, nor forſakes vs; Hee knowes very well how to take away from the wicked in a moment, many great Lordſhips and Farmes, which they haue beene many yeares a purchaſing; and to enrich *Iob* within a little while, with double ſo much wealth, and thoſe other good bleſſings which before he had taken from him.

The naughty condition of mans nature.

How God rewards the righteous.

I neuer had the grace to be ſo good; but I am ſure I was as naked as *Iob*. For I had nothing to leane my ſelfe againſt, ſaue onely the bare walls of my houſe. If, when I had plenty, I did pamper vp my ſelfe; now I did deſire, to haue only where-withall to hold life and ſoule together. I was ready to periſh for want of food.

Guzman *as poore as* Iob.

I remember (when I was a youth) that I had knowne in *Madrid* a pretty little boy, that was very well giuen, and for his yeares, of good vnderſtanding. This little Lad was bred vp by a Gentle-woman, that was his mother, not that ſhee had borne him, but for the loue ſhee bore him; ſhee gaue him good breeding both for his booke, and otherwiſe; ſhee cloath'd him well, and handſomely; and for his dyet, if there were one bit better then other at the boord, he was ſure to haue his part of it. This childe was bred in *Granada*, where there are certaine little ſmall grapes, which are very dainty ones indeed, wonderfull pleaſant, and of an excellent reliſh; which in thoſe parts they call *jauies*. Now there being none of this kind in *Madrid*, and for that this little boy would not eat any other ſaue his owne Country grapes, when he ſaw he had none of that ſort giuen him, ſeeing your [d] *aluillas* one day on the boord, he askt for ſome of thoſe little ones, as he was wont to doe; To whom his mother ſaid; Childe; Here are no little ones to giue thee. We haue none but theſe: To whom the childe anſwered; Then (good Mother) giue me ſome of thoſe. For I can eat alſo great ones for a need.

A Tale of a little boy.

[d] Aluillas: *A kinde of great gray, or whitiſh grapes.*

I likewiſe could now feed vpon groſſe fare, no meat came amiſſe, all was ſweet and ſauourie vnto mee, nothing did hurt mee, but hunger without meat; any thing, ſo as it were a belly full, it was all one to me. For the alterations of times, oblige all, and to all; and to content our ſelues with thoſe things, which are quite auerſe to our nature, and no way ſuting with our diſpoſition. I was driuen to doe that, which I neuer dreamt to haue done, to the end, that I might alwayes be able to ſay; That neither ſelfe-loue made me doubt; nor feare, dread to aduenture vpon any meanes

He that cannot liue as he would, muſt be content to liue as he may.

whatſoeuer, that might make for my profit. And queſtionleſſe, if I had wholly bent my ſelfe to ſome one ſet courſe or other, and had ſetled my ſelfe cloſe vnto it, and conſtantly perſeuered therein, I ſhould haue done ſome good in it, and made it a meanes of no meane aduancement vnto me. But I was hot and cholericke; I miſ-ſpent my time; and my beginnings being bad, I failed in the goodneſſe of the ends. I had often reſolued to be good, but I was quickly weary of well-doing; I was that * rolling ſtone, that neuer gathers moſſe. And becauſe I could not tame my ſelfe, time had now tamed me. I ſaw my ſelfe abandoned of all humane remedie, and had no hope of any other helpe, then that onely of my houſe. I began then to conſider, and ſay with my ſelfe; What haue I now in the houſe, to ſtanch my hunger withall? Shall I bite vpon a brick-bat? that is but tough feeding, and ſomewhat too hard a cruſt to gnaw vpon. Shall I roſte one of my rafters? That will be burnt away vpon the ſpit: I found that a naked houſe, without ſomething to maintaine it, could not afford me any kinde of remedie. I could thinke vpon no better thing, then to betake my ſelfe to ſacred Orders, and to become a Church man: Saying to my ſelfe; I haue humane learning; I will make benefit of that, by hearing thoſe Lectures read in *Alcala de Henares*. I haue ſome little ſmackering alſo in the Liberall Arts, and Diuinitie, and when I haue ſtudyed theſe a-while, I will take my Degree, then ſhall I be qualified for the Pulpit, and being able to ſay Maſſe, and to preach a Sermon, I ſhall be ſure to haue wherewithall to eat; and if all ſhould fayle, I would turne Fryar at the laſt, whereby I ſhould not onely liue vpon certainties, but ſhould alſo lead a very ſafe and ſecure life. For a *Dominus vobiſcum*, did neuer yet dye of hunger. By this courſe, I ſhall not only repayre my life, but I ſhall free it likewiſe from any danger whatſoeuer, which I might haue incurred by my former miſdemeanors. The time, for the payment of my debts, drawes on a-pace, and my wealth goes away as faſt; if by this meanes I did not prouide for the ſtorme, that was now a comming, I might afterwards ſee my ſelfe oppreſſed, and in great perill to be vtterly loſt.

Prouerbe. * Piedra mouediza, nunca la cubre moho.

I knew that this came not from my heart, for I was not ignorant of mine owne euill inclination; but he that hath no other meanes, and is put to his ſhifts, muſt doe as he may. He that cannot make choyſe of his game, muſt flie at that which comes next in his way. Now that I am imbarked, I muſt play the cunning Mariner, and ſeeing I cannot ſayle with a fore-winde, I muſt fetch boords, and come about with a ſide-winde. Any one will ſerue my turne, ſo it be not ſuch a contrary winde, as ſhall chop me into the mouthes of my hungry Creditors. This is the key that muſt make all ſure, and keepe them out from comming within me. The money that I ſhall make of this houſe, will ſerue well enough to maintaine me as a ſcholler; which being well husbanded, though I ſhould ſpend yearely a hundred Ducats, or a hundred and fiftie, which will be the moſt, (and is a good liberall allowance) I ſhall haue ſtore of money for that time, that I ſhall need to continue there; ſo that I may liue like a Duke, (if I liſt my ſelfe) and yet haue wherewithall to buy me bookes, and to take ſome honourable Degree. I will make choyſe of a good Chamber-fellow, a ſtudent of mine owne profeſſion, that we may follow our ſtudies cloſe together, heare the Lectures, compare our Notes, communicate our doubts, that ſo by ioyning our forces together, and ayding one another, we ſhould be able to quit our ſelues like braue fellowes, when we came to breake a lance in thoſe liſts. In this manner had I made vp my recknings with my ſelfe; this was my conſultation, and this was I fully reſolued to put in execution. But how ill a conſultation, and how worſe a reſolution, that I ſhould determine to ſtudie Diuinitie, more for the nouriſhing of this my body, then for the feeding of others ſoules!

Guzman reſolues to goe to the Vniuerſitie.

What a ſtudent ſhould doe.

soules! How a Gods name should it enter into my imagination to be a Masse-Officiall, and not a Masse-priest? Or that I should once thinke of becomming a Religious man, hauing such a scandalous spirit? Accursed I, and accursed he, who is so vnhappy, as not primarily to propose vnto him-selfe the seruice and glory of God. And most vnfortunate are they of all others, who treat of their owne profit, of their preferments, of their honours, and of the maintayning of their backe and belly, by this so worthy and diuine a Calling; and that doe not solely and wholly take the Ministerie vpon them, for no other end, but to be Gods Messengers, and to doe him seruice in his Church; and that shall not worthily performe that holy function; and that shall not desire learning for any other end, then to be a light vnto himselfe, and vnto others.

Young Diuines, what they should propose vnto them-selues.

What their ends ought to be.

Traytor as I was, why did I treat, like another *Iudas*, of the selling of my Master? And I speake it to all, as well as to my selfe; that he shall be taken for no other then a Traytor, that shall treat of being a Priest, or a Fryar, hauing no other ayme, but to feed his belly, cloath his backe, and spend lauishly. And that father is a Traytor, whosoeuer he be, that shall enforce his sonne, contrary to his owne inclination and liking, to take the Ministerie vpon him, because his Grand-father, his Vnckle, his kinsman, or his friend, hath left him such a Patronage, or such an Aduouson, if his sonne shall in such a time take holy Orders. When a father casts about with him-selfe to make his sonne a Fryar, or one, or more of his daughters Nunnes, either because hee hath not store of wealth to leaue them, or that he may leaue his other children the richer, or for any other worldly causes, which cannot be but vaine and idle, let him weigh and consider well with him-selfe what hee doth in so doing: For it is a great wonder, if one of a hundred proue good (I say nothing of the Nunnes) the most part of them, roming and rambling through the world, like a companie of vagabonds, and Apostata's, dishonouring their religion, disgracing their habit, putting their liues in perill, and sending their soules to Hell. It is God that must call vs to this holy Calling: For it is hee that anoynted *Dauid*, hee that made choyse of the Priests and the Prophets. The religious man must be religious, meerely for Religions sake; for the very loue that hee beareth vnto it. This must be the principall end, this the substance, and all the rest but matter of dependance. For it is fit and iust, that he that serues at the [f] Altar, should liue by the Altar: and it were inhumanitie, when thy Oxe hath plowed thy ground, and laboured hard, to tye him to his stall, and giue him no meat. Let euery one open his eyes, and looke well about him, before he resolue as I did. Let him weigh well with him-selfe, what charge he takes vpon him, and what a deale of danger hee runnes. Let him first aske of him-selfe, what moues him to take that estate vpon him? For by walking in the darke, the eye that sees not, must make the feet to stumble. The marke whereat a good Priest, and an honest religious soule should shoot at, must be brighter, purer, and clearer then the Sunne. Let not Parents thinke, that for to fill their sonnes bellies, they must needs make them Church-men: nor let them thinke, when they haue a lame, weake, sickly, vnprofitable, crumpt-back't, or ill-featur'd sonne, to offer him vpon Gods Altar, or to make him a Priest. For God will haue the best, and those that are without blemish for his sacrifice, being that hee offered vp the best that euer was for vs, when hee offered him-selfe in his beloued Sonne. Therefore if thou shalt make a bad choyce, thou wilt haue the worst of it. For if thou shalt reserue the better for thy selfe, and giue the worser vnto God, he will take them both away from thee, so that both thy eyes shall be put out; hee will bereaue thee of the bad, because hee was not good enough for him;

Fathers ought not to inforce their children to take Orders.

Prouerbe.
f Quien sirve al Altar, como del.

and of the good, becauſe thou thoughtſt him too good. You muſt not change [g] bridles, leaſt you ſpoyle the horſes mouthes: Euery horſe muſt haue his owne bit: What need a continent man to [h] marry? Or a laſciuious [i] wanton be made a Prieſt? The one is not ſo fit for a wife; And I am ſure the other altogether vnfit for the Church. There are many habitations in heauen, and euery one hath his right place appointed for him. Let euery man take that way, that may direct him to his ſaluation; and let him not goe any other way, leſt hee may chance to loſe him-ſelfe; and thinking he treads in the right path, neuer ſees his deſire, nor that which hee pretends. It were a pretty kinde of ouer-ſight in me, if being to goe from *Madrid* to *Barajas*, I ſhould take ouer *Segouia* bridge, and paſſe on to *Guadarrama*. Or being to goe for *Valladolid*, I ſhould make for *Siguença*. Doeſt thou not ſee how thou art out of thy way? Doeſt thou not perceiue thy folly? Let a Virgin, be a Virgin; A marryed man, a marryed man: Let the Continent abſtaine; The Religious, be religious: And let euery one goe on in the way that is ſet before him, without turning to the right hand, or to the left.

Prouerbe.
g No ſe han de trocar los frenos.

Prouerbe.
h No hare buen caſado, vn continente.

Prouerbe.
i Seria malo vn lacivo, por religioſo.

I was reſolued to be a Church-man, and for no other reaſon in the world, but onely to repayre a broken fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditors; who, as ſoone as my ten yeares were out, were to come vpon my backe. With this, I finely ſtopt their mouthes, ſhut the gap whereat they ſhould enter, and left them to ſhake their eares. I ſold my houſe for almoſt as much as it coſt me: For albeit men doe vſually ſell houſes to great loſſe, yet mine yeelded mee little leſſe then what it ſtood mee in. For I did value it at ſomewhat the dearer rate, becauſe it was bettered by the bordering buildings that were round about it, which time had wrought for mee. When the Scriuener had drawne the writings, and that they were ready to be ſealed, and I to receiue my money, I ſaid; That before I proceeded therein any farther, wee would goe to his houſe, that was the publike Officer for the rating of mens goods, that we might haue a Licence from him vnder his hand, requiring his confirmation of the Contract that was betweene vs, and that wee might conclude with him touching the ſeſſing of the rent, as alſo the twentieth part that was to goe out, and to be leuyed vpon the ſale of the houſe. When we came thither, and had caſt vp our reckonings, we found that the ſeſſment came not to aboue ſix Royals, but the twentieth part to better then a thouſand fiue hundred. Mee thought this was ſomewhat cruell, and beyond all reaſon of policie, that I ſhould giue him ſuch a great ſumme of money, which amounted to more then the Fee-ſimple of the ground, whereon I built it. I ſtood vpon it, and was very loth to pay him ſo much, but becauſe my ſtanding out might haue hindred the ſale thereof, and ſo I might haue let ſlip the occaſion of doing my ſelfe good, I paid thoſe duties; but with proteſtation, to require the ſame againe by courſe of Iuſtice, as a thing which in all Law and Conſcience, hee could not duely challenge of me.

An abuſe about the rates of houſes in Spaine, *ſet downe here at large by* Guzman.

The Maſter of the Office began to laugh at me, as if I had vttered ſome famous foolery. And it might very well be ſo; but as then it did not ſeeme ſo vnto me. I askt him, why hee laught: He told mee, at my pretenſion. And that he would returne me all my money againe, on condition, that I would but giue him halfe a Royall euery day, till I had ſentence on my ſide in this ſute. I was about to haue accepted of it; it ſeeming to my vnderſtanding, that an ill cuſtome ought not ſo farre to ouer-ſway reaſon, but that vpon diſcouering the cunning and deceit vſed therein, it would eaſily be abrogated, and broken. Nor would this which I ſpeake of, beene my caſe alone, but all the whole Kingdome would haue put in their plea

into the Courts of Iuſtice; and as well for their priuate profit, as the publike good, would haue declar'd them-ſelues in my fauour, to the end that there might be ſome order taken for the redreſſing of ſo great a wrong. I was not ſo wide of the marke; nor did I goe vpon ſuch weake grounds; but that with that which I then knew, I thought I ſhould be able ſtrongly to maintayne my opinion, it ſeeming vnto mee *ſcientiam certam*, a ſetled knowledge, the certaintie whereof could not be gaine-ſaid.

It might haue ſo fallen out, that I might haue defended it with a little coſte, and peraduenture I might haue ſpent much in it, and ſo much, that not onely this one, but all others of this kinde, might haue beene vtterly ouerthrowne. As it did once happen with certaine Seſſings, that were a-foot in thoſe dayes, for that it was found out at laſt, that there was in the ſetting of thoſe rates a certaine kinde of Vſury, which our State doth not allow. The cauſe which moued mee to this Defence was, becauſe I ſaw it grew out of the diſcourſe of naturall Reaſon: conſidering with my ſelfe, that onely from thence, all Lawes had their beginning.

But becauſe this buſineſſe crept in by degrees, and was not ſo currant and common in the world, as now it is, it was not much ſtood vpon. But if wee ſhall a little more curiouſly ſearch into it, and the abuſe thereof were well lookt into, I doubt not but it would appeare ſo harſh and ſower to moſt mens taſtes, that it would in ſome great part, if not wholly, be reformed. For ſuppoſe a thing not to bee worth any more then that which is giuen for it; and that this which is giuen, ought to bee limited, finite, and certaine. Now, if to mee they ſhould ſell that plot of ground for a thouſand Royals, with two Royals of perpetuall rent vpon it, and that there is not any man that will giue more for it, nor indeed is worth any more; and that I haue ſpent in building a houſe vpon it, three thouſand Ducats at leaſt in good money: If it bee a truth, and a Rule in Law, that no man ought to make himſelfe rich with another mans wealth; why ſhould this prolling Officer inrich himſelfe out of my moneyes. For that this, which giues this valew, and inhances the price of the ground, is mine owne peculiar purſe, and thoſe moneyes I laid out my ſelfe, is a cleare caſe, and cannot bee denyed. So that, if the ſame building, which I had reared, ſhould bee taken downe and carryed away, the ground it ſelfe would remaine vpon the very ſame tearmes, as it did before that I had bought it: So that this twentieth peny to be leauied out of it, ſeemeth in my poore vnderſtanding, to be rather *pœna delicti*, a puniſhment for the offence that I had committed in building me an houſe, then *debitum iuſtum*, a iuſt and due debt; becauſe it hath its being from a bad cauſe.

And ſo true is this, which I haue already told you; that in caſe euen that very day, that I ſold this houſe, I ſhould haue placed a pillar in it, or a *Statua* of ſtone, of ſome great value, and that buying the ſame together with my houſe, hee ſhould giue me in the whole ten thouſand Ducats, out of which ſumme, this officer will haue a twentieth part; if I, to excuſe this intolerable taxe, may take away, and haue taken away the *Statua*, and afterwards ſell the houſe for onely one thouſand Ducats; I may well iuſtifie the doing of it, and they can demand no more of me, then what accrewes vnto them out of the price of the houſe. But that we may proceed a little farther; If I ſhould afterwards carry away all the yron-worke, the timber, and the glaſſe; if I ſhould demoliſh the wals, and ſhould make it, of a houſe of tenne thouſand Ducats, ſcarce worth a hundred, I may likewiſe doe it. And I may lawfully ſell all that I thus tooke away, and ſeparated from the houſe, without being charged with the twentieth part.

How then can this hang together, that the parts, euery one of them being taken

taken ſeuerally by them-ſelues, doe owe no ſuch taxe, but in whole, and in groſſe, ſhould be lyable to this debt? If the maſter of this office ſhould ſay vnto me; you are to pay me the twentieth part of that price, whereat you firſt bought this plot of ground, for the which you paid a thouſand Royals, and that the charge where-with he charged me, ſhould ſtill runne on in this ſet and certaine kind of manner, there were ſome reaſon for it; as being grounded vpon *Dominium rectum*, a true and lawfull claime; for that it was ſold with that condition, at ſuch a ſet price, with ſuch a reſeruation of a perpetuall rent vpon it, which I voluntarily and willingly did accept of. But how can he oblige me, or I conſent to pay that which I my ſelfe doe not know what it is, nor how much it may come to, & which peraduenture may amount to ſuch an exceſſiue ſumme, that onely with that twentieth part, I might buy a whole Towne. And as thoſe that I beſtow'd vpon my houſe, were but three thouſand Ducats, they might as well haue beene three hundred, or thirty thouſand, and that houſe might hap to haue beene ſold thirty times in one yeare, which would haue come to an exceſſiue and exorbitant ſeſſment. And ſuch vnreaſonable rates as theſe are neyther ratified in the *Ciuill* nor the *Canon* Law; nor hath any other ground or foundation for it, but that which ariſeth from that which wee call *ius Gentium*, or the Law of Nations. And that, not *commune*, but *priuatum*, not common, but priuate: for it is impoſed, as it pleaſeth the Impoſer, nor doth it paſſe generally in all places, but in ſome particular parts; & within foure leagues compaſſe, in ſome townes they pay it, and in ſome, not. Eſpecially in *Sevill*, and in almoſt all *Andaluzia* they know no ſuch thing, nor ſo much as euer once heard of it. The perpetuall Seſſment, that was firſt ſetled, this, I ſay, is euer more truly paid, without any other taxes or tallages, though the ſaid poſſeſſion or houſe ſhould be ſolde a hundred thouſand times ouer.

Now, for to make the carrying away of the twentieth part lawfull, it muſt be by the vertue of a *Common-Law*, ratified and confirmed by the approbation and conſent of the whole Kingdome: but this neyther is ſo, nor euer was, but onely approued by the ignorant; and ſuch mens errour, cannot make this good. There is no man but knowes the nature and qualitie of your Seſſings, as alſo how and which way they are to bee raiſed, and with what reaſon and moderation, and how much is to be paid out of euery hundred: And if theſe bee lyable to the Lawes, and ſubiect to their cenſure; why ſhould not theſe perpetuall ſeſſings, as they call them, ſubmit themſelues in like manner to the Lawes? What ſtrange kinde of taxes are theſe? What new kinde of deuices to wrong the ſubiect? What reaſon is there, that they ſhould be paid in this manner? What ground haue they for it? They haue but two prices to worke vpon: Eyther that, for which I bought it; or that for which I ſold it. And why ſhould they not rather pitch vpon the price for which it was bought, then for which it was ſolde? Will they oblige me to pay theſe duties out of mine owne particular moneyes, out of my proper expences, out of mine owne improuing of my eſtate, and out of mine owne proper induſtry?

So that euery way, this Caſe being nakedly laid open, and duely conſidered, there being no greater eyther Law or Reaſon on their ſide, then I can ſee as yet, it ſeemeth vniuſt, that they ſhould take that my wealth from mee, which I had *bona fide* ſpent vpon it, or from my Wife and my Children, being that the one halfe thereof is ordinarily loſt, that is laid out in building. Why then ſhould it be permitted, that my principall, by the benefit of that peece of ground, ſhould not onely become leſſe, then before, but that I muſt afterwards alſo pay, and loſe that which they take from me, and carry away with this their twentieth part?

And in caſe it muſt be paid, as paid it is, and that to a peny; let it be lookt into, treated of, and determined: for it being defined and ſet downe, we will reſt ſatisfied, becauſe it hath beene conſulted on, and that good heads had

the

the handling of it, who would not willingly doe any thing but what is iuſt and honeſt; and therefore ought to like of it. But till that courſe be taken, the people take great ſcandall thereat; not a man but talkes, and that liberally to of the great wrong and iniury which they receiue hereby. Some, holding it for a great peece of iniuſtice; and others, not able to containe them-ſelues, ſtyling it with worſer names.

This paſt with mee at that time with the Receiuer of theſe Seſſments. But hee and I were well met, wee were ene as wiſe one as another; I knew little, and hee not ouer-much. Hee would needs reply vnto mee, ſaying; That, was the condition of the Contract, and therefore was of force: For a man may oblige himſelfe as farre out of his owne free will, as if hee had beene otherwiſe bound. This did not ſatisfie mee, wherefore I anſwered that truly, That it were likewiſe a Condition of Contract, if I ſhould lend an hundred Ducats, which were to be paid vnto mee within ſuch a time, wherein if hee fayled, he was to pay mee euery day eight Royals, till hee had paid mee the Principall. But this is not lawfull: So that, to iuſtifie a thing, it is not enough, that it is a Condition contracted, and agreed vpon; but wee muſt ſee whether it be alowable and lawfull.

Then hee turned vpon me againe, and told mee: This, Sir, is but a matter of hap-hazard: for, that a houſe be ſolde, or not be ſold, is a meere venture: and if it be not ſolde, there is nothing due vnto me. O what a good reaſon (quoth I) is this? As ſoone therefore as the houſe is ſolde, the twentieth part muſt bee as a puniſhment of the Contract. And if it be, why doe you binde my hands, and prohibit, that I may not ſell it to ſuch and ſuch perſons? You your ſelfe, by your owne confeſſion, condemne the Contract. You open the doore to all that may pay you, you ſell the thing for that it is worth, and you will haue the *Indians* to giue you the ſweat of their browes, and take paines for you, and for no other end, but to better your owne ground, and by ſecuring you of a good round ſumme of money, they augment your wealth by diminiſhing their owne: And when they muſt liue thus by the loſſe, wilt thou haue one out of twenty? But ſay ſuch a thing ſhould be done *mala fide*, yet you may pretend your right; but of that poſſeſſion whereof you are now depriued, and haue made me Lord thereof in your roome, ſhall I out of thoſe things, which I may, as it pleaſeth mee, eyther remoue thence, of bring thither; will you haue a penſion out of that, which I haue ordained for my pleaſure? Of the *Statuas*, the *Pyramides*, the *Fountaines*, of whoſe conduits and waters, I alwayes am Lord and Maſter, and can alienate all this from thee, without letting thee haue any part therein? wilt thou haue it adiudged vnto thee, becauſe thou ſaiſt it muſt follow with the whole, as a thing that is founded on thy ground?

That *totum* of yours, I doe not well vnderſtand (ſaid he) what it is, neither can I beleeue that it can be brought within the compaſſe of iuſtice, and that you can carry it away by Law. And I am verily perſwaded, that they who know and vnderſtand theſe things, and are able to determine of them, will not incline not to your part.

I paid him that which he call'd his due, though ſore againſt my wil, & hauing made my proteſtation againſt it, I beganne to follow the ſute: but becauſe the Schooles at *Alcala* were now ſhortly to be opened, and that the time drew neer for the Reading of their Lectures, I gaue that ouer, that I might goe about that which did more neerly concerne me. And ſo committing the care of this and ſome other buſineſſes to a Solicitor, a friend of mine, and to my father-in-law, I prepared for my iourney. I got me my money together, and put in out to profit, which yeelded me a moderate gaine, purpoſing to ſpend vpon my ſelfe ſo much as was needful & neceſſary for me. I made me a cloak, and a *Sotana*, prouided my ſelf of bedding & ſuch other implements as were fitting for a ſtudents chamber, and ſo preſently got me to *Alcala de Henares*, where I had ſo often wiſht to be.

When

When I came thither, I was doubtfull with my ſelfe, what I were beſt to doe, not knowing as yet what to reſolue vpon, and whether it would bee my better and more profitable courſe, to take a [k] chamber by my ſelfe, and to bee all alone, or to be vnder [l] pupillage, and common with others. I had knowne already what it was to keepe and gouerne a houſe, to bee chiefe commander of it, to pleaſe mine owne taſte, and to enioy mine owne liberty. Yet notwithſtanding, hauing reſpect to the leſſer trouble of the two, I was content at laſt to take my fortune in the Common, amongſt the reſt of thoſe Pupils that dyeted altogether in one houſe, though it went ſomewhat againſt the haire with me, (I muſt confeſſe) to ſubmit my ſelfe to the poore and ſlender pittance of a Maſter ouer Pupils, who was to command in the houſe, to ſit at the vpper end of the table, to diuide the Commons, and to giue euery man his portion vpon his plate, with thoſe his filthy, and perhaps mangy fingers, and thoſe his foule and dirty nailes, as crooked, and as long, as thoſe of an *Oſtriche*, tearing, rather then cutting the fleſh, out into threads and ſtrings, like the rending of the barbes, from the root of ſome plant, or young tree, diſtributing the porrige in Lettice leaues, to make it ſtretch the farther, cutting the bread eauen, and giuing euery one his ſlice for the auoiding of waſte, allowing vs no new bread, but that which was ſtale and hard, that we might eate the leſſe of it; our [m] *Olla*, was nothing but the fat of bacon, whence onely it might take its name, which made a very glorious broth to ſee to, and more cleare then the light, at leaſt ſo bright that a man might eaſily diſcerne the leaſt Louſe that fell from our ſleeues in the bottome of the porringer. Which if we did not ſwallow downe in ſtead of a crumme, we would take forth with our fingers, and cracke it betweene our nayles. And of theſe kind of repaſtes, we had ſome foure and fifty euery month; for on the Saturdayes, we alwaies made our meales of [n] *Mondongo's*. In fruit-time we had ſome foure Cherries, three ſowre Plummes, one or two little Apricocks, halfe a pound of Figges, and now and then a whole pound, according to the number of thoſe that ſate at table; but in that minced and curtall manner, that there was none of vs ſo nimble finger'd, that wee could come to vye it the ſecond time.

Our Grapes were diuided by little ſprigs or bunches, ſuch as they giue little children to their Beuer, being no more in the whole, then would lie vpon a poore little plate, and he that had moſt, had not aboue ſixe Grapes that fell to his ſhare.

And of theſe, you muſt vnderſtand, that we had not all of all ſorts euery day, but in one onely kind: for when we had Figges we had no Grapes, and when we had Cherries we had no Apricockes. Our Tutor would tell vs, that too much fruit would breed tertian Agues, and therefore for our healths ſake, hee would not haue vs to eate any more, for feare we ſhould be ſicke.

In winter time, vpon a little plate, thinly ſcattered, wee ſhould haue a few Raiſins laid out, as if they had meant to dry them in the Sunne, ſo farre off were they ſundred the one from the other.

For our laſt courſe, to cloſe vp our ſtomacke, we had a thinne ſlice of cheeſe, which ſeemed rather to be a Spiders-web then any thing elſe, or like thoſe thinne ſhauings which your Ioyners planiſh away with their playners when they ſhaue their wainſcoat; alledging that thoſe thicker ſlunchins would dull our wits. Beſides, it was ſo full of eyes, and ſo tranſparent, that whoſoeuer had ſeene it, would haue iudg'd it to haue beene the *diaphragma*, or that thin and ſlender caule of ſome young little Kid, or ſome Lambkins mid-riffe; and for a need might haue ſeru'd in ſtead of ſpectacles, ſo eaſily could wee ſee through them.

Other whiles we had halfe a Pompeon amongſt vs all, and a little thinne cut of a ſmall Melon, nothing ſo bigge as a mans head, but about the bigneſſe of my fiſt, or a well growne Peare. And vpon fiſh-dayes, we had a meſſe of lentill

[k] *The Spaniſh word is* camariſta, *which is one that hath no houſe for him-ſelfe, nor keepes company with any other, but hyres him a chamber in ſome houſe, where he lodgeth, and locks him-ſelfe vp, without conuerſing with the reſt of that houſe.*

[l] *In your vniuerſities in Spaine, they are called Pupils, that are vnder a Tutor, for their diet, and their gouernment. And this houſe where they diet and lodge, they call* Pupillage. Covarr. verb. Pupilo.

A Student that puts him-ſelfe in Commons with a Tutor and his ſcholler, what things he muſt be ſubiect vnto.

[m] Olla, *is all that meat, whatſoeuer is ſod together in a pot.* Covarr. verb. Olla.

[n] *The tripes or intrals of any beaſt.*

lentill porrige, ſuch as *Eſope* was fed withall, being no better then Duckes-meat; and if at any time we had peaſe-porrige, (which was very ſeldome, that we had ſuch Gau-dies) I aſſure you, that the beſt and the cunningeſt *Indian* diuer of them all, that fiſhes for Pearle, muſt haue been forced to haue diued foure times at leaſt, to the bottome of my porringer, before he ſhould be able to bring vp one of theſe pearles; which how ſcarce they were to bee met withall, you may iudge by this, that the peaſe had not giuen ſo much tincture to the porrige as would ſerue to giue a colour to a wenches coyfe. One day in the Lent, and no more, hee did vſe to giue vs cheſſe-nuts for an Antipaſt to whet our ſtomackes, but no honey with them, for that they were ſweet enough (he ſaid) of them-ſelues; and of thoſe too, we had but a few, for he would tell vs, we were as good eate ſo much wood, they were ſo hard of digeſtion.

What ſhall I ſay vnto you concerning our fiſh, which was poorer then the worſt poore-*Iohn*, of our withered and rotten ropes of Onions, our pulpe-fiſh, our dryde pilchards, that had hung I know not how long in the ſmoake, and a man had as good almoſt be hang'd as to haue eaten of them, being ſo drye, and ſo ſalt, as if they would haue fretted out our very guts and bowels. Wee had euery one a piece, and had the head alſo in to the bargaine, if it were a faſting-day; but on other dayes, we had but halfe a one, and that was ſlit aſunder head and all, and equally diuided betweene two of vs.

What ſhall I tell you of that other fiſh, which the Abbot would not meddle with, becauſe it was ſo rammiſh, and ſtuncke ſo vilely? yet they ſet it before vs, and wee muſt be contented with it. As alſo of our fride egges, that wee had now and then, like vnto thoſe in ſome baſe Inne, or poore victualling-houſe, or little better, if not ſometimes worſe; for they would buy a great many of them together, that they might haue them the better cheape, keeping them in a tub of aſhes, or in ſome great heape of ſalt, that they might not grow ſtale and addle; and in this manner would they preſerue them ſome ſixe or ſeauen moneths, whole and ſound.

What ſhall I ſay to our benediction and giuing of thankes both before and after our meales, and how neceſſarily we were tied to ſay a ſolemne grace? In ſo much, that a certaine Student, who tooke his diet in ſuch another kind or Ordinary, as I did, comming late to dinner, and being very hot with the haſte that hee had made before they ſhould haue dined, fell to vnbuttoning of his doublet, and to vnbrace him-ſelfe for coolenеſſe, and when hee was about to fall to his meat, he might heare them beginne to giue thankes: with that hee ſtrucke his hand againſt the boord, and with a loud voice ſaid vnto them; Silence (my maſters) I know not what I ſhould giue thankes for, let them giue thankes that haue cauſe ſo to doe, for I ſee none. *A tale of a Student.*

At ſupper we had a ſallat, but a very poore one, and a great deale of chopt greene ſtuffe, (I know not what) amongſt it; for they would not loſe ſo much as the greene leaues of a Radiſh roote, or the blade of an Onion, whereof they would not make vſe, powring a little vnſauory oyle into it, and a little vinegar, whereof the one halfe was water, the Lettice were onely thinnely ſpred vpon the top, with two or three ſlices of Carrets, with a little Marjoram or Pennyryall mixed with it; they were wont ſome-times to intermixe with it (but alwayes all the Summer long) a hodge podge of boyled mutton, that was nothing but mammocks.

They would buy of the reffuſe-bones, which the Cookes had left out, when they made their pies: they did coſt but little, and tooke vp much roome. The ſhow being greater then the price. And when we had not whereon to gnaw, we wanted not yet whereof to ſucke; and the hungry ſauour of our porrige, was a ſhooing-horne to draw downe the hardneſſe of our bread. Wee had alſo certaine wilde Oliues allowed vs, becauſe we ſhould not eate too many of them, for feare of ſetting our teeth on edge. Our wine was like that which they

they gaue our Sauiour vpon the Croſſe, compound ſtuffe, that taſted worſe then ſowre beere.

What ſhall I tell you of the care that our Tutors wife had, to notifie vnto vs the faſting dayes that were in euery weeke, to the end, that we might not looke for our Collation; nor call for our breake-faſt; and for the more ſurety, that ſhee might not erre, ſhee would vſually ſay there were two, when there was but one. What ſhall I tell you of the commutation of our ſuppers into dinners, which being put both together would not make vp a reaſonable nunchions. Which when they did giue it vs, was weighed out as iuſt, and as euen, as you would weigh out Saffron, allotting to euery one his foure ounces, and not a penny-weight ouer; as if this ſame *Caſuiſt*, who did thus ſize vs, did know our neceſſitie, and how much would iuſt ſerue our turne; or as if in regard of our long ſtudies, and ſhort dinners, (and thoſe none of the beſt) we had no reaſon to finde fault, ſeeing we were vs'd all alike, and were now entred like fellow-labourers into one and the ſelfe-ſame Vineyard, where euery man muſt haue one and the ſame allowance, not one hauing more then another. Or, as if the food that they gaue vs, were well fitted and proportioned for our ſuſtenance; being that all was ſo limited, ſo ſcanted, ſo little, and ſo ill dreſt, that your ſchoole-boyes, and poorer ſort of ſchollers could not haue their dyet in a worſe faſhion, who haue their ſtomacks pin'd to their back-bone, who haue more minde to a good meale, then a good lecture, and a greater will to eat, then to ſtudie.

Marcus Aurelius *his ſaying.*

This our Tutor that boorded vs, would now and then tell vs, that *Marcus Aurelius* was wont to ſay; That Sots and Fooles onely had poore ſtudies of bookes, and tables plentifully furniſht with meats; ſtinting their mindes more then their bellies; but that a wiſe man (ſhowing him-ſelfe therein moſt wiſe) doth abhorre full diſhes, and will feed very ſparingly, that he may the ſooner and the better retyre him-ſelfe to his ſtudies: That hoggs, and horſes, fatneſſe did well become them; but that it was more commendable in men, to be leane and ſlender; for that your groſſe men are commonly groſſe-witted; beſides, they haue a filthy wallowing gate; they are vnfit to fight either for them-ſelues, or their friends; they are a kinde of vnweldie lumpe, an vnprofitable maſſe of fleſh and bone, being not able to vſe any manly exerciſe; whereas we ſee it is quite otherwiſe in thoſe that are leane, and not laden with fat.

I was willing to graunt him this, to the end that he might not denie me a more manifeſt truth then the other; to wit; That a little meat, and that naught, quickly ſhortens the life of man. And if I may not liue to thriue by my ſtudies, it is but loſt labour to drudge at my booke. What Falcon I pray, was euer brought into the field to flie, which was not firſt fed before ſhee came there? What Greyhound, or other dogge, was euer put to courſe, or to hunt, before they had put victuals iuto his belly? They muſt both be kept reaſonably high, and not come hunger-ſtaru'd into the field; for then will neither the one maintayne her flight, nor the other his courſe. They muſt be kept in good ſtate; and ſo muſt we Students. There is a meane in all things; and that meane is the beſt. We will grant to theſe meat-moderators, theſe gut-mathematicians, That it is not fit to feed to fulneſſe, nor to cram the belly as full as it will hold: ſo as they will yeeld againe on the other ſide, that we are not to faſt, till we grow ſo feeble therewith, that our leggs are not able to ſupport our bodies. And we had one Student there amongſt vs, who was well knowne to haue his guts ſhrunke, and his excrements growne mouldie through the penuriouſneſſe of his dyet. Yet notwithſtanding I thought good to make choyce, as of the leſſer inconuenience, to enter into penſion; it ſeeming vnto me, that being (as I was) a man of ſome yeares, if I ſhould take a chamber-fellow vnto me, I muſt conſort my ſelfe with one that was mine equall, and ſuch another as my

I am; conſidering with my ſelfe, that as our countenances muſt be differing, ſo we might differ in our conditions; whereby it might ſo come to paſſe, that whereas I had a purpoſe to profit my ſelfe by learning, my ſtudies might end in the harmefull exerciſe of Vices, frequenting them more then the Schooles. Of two euils, I choſe the leſſe; and ſo became a Pupill: Though I knew they would play vpon me, and laugh and ſcoffe at me, to ſee ſuch a Gyant as I was, in regard of the reſt, with ſuch a bigge muzzell, and ſuch another great beard, as the good wife of *Peñaranda*, to ſit and conuerſe with boyes. Yet it was ſome comfort vnto mee, that there were likewiſe ſome boorders amongſt vs, that were as bigge Lubbers (almoſt) as my ſelfe; ſo that (to ſay the truth) wee, and thoſe leſſer frye, were mixed one amongſt another, like peaſe and beanes. And this benefit I had by boording my ſelfe, that I was free from all manner of care and trouble, not being put to make mine owne prouiſion, nor to take thought either for my dinner or my ſupper, but remayned free and at full libertie to follow my booke, and ſuch other things as I had moſt minde vnto. For hee that will attend his ſtudies, muſt firſt ſtudie to remoue all impediments, that may be a hinderance vnto them; and he that will not doe ſo, may goe ſhooe goſlins, for any great good hee ſhall get thereby. I did ſeeke all that I could to auoyd your Innes-of-Court wenches, thoſe your ancient mayds, or more elderly matrones, that make a liuing of ſweeping chambers, making of beds, emptying of piſ-pots, and other the like ſeruile offices; for they are worſe then fire, burning and conſuming whatſoeuer is before them.

What we ſay of theſe, may likewiſe be meant of our Miſtreſſes, our Tutors wiues; we may put them all into a packe, and ſhuffle them together; Miſtreſſe and mayd, mayd and miſtreſſe, all is one; there is not a halfe-penny odds betweene them: O, how my fingers ends doe itch at them! How much better were it to boxe them about the eares, and to tugg them by the hayre of the head, then to doe them any the leaſt kindneſſe, or courteſie in the world. I ſpeake of theſe Gouerneſſes ouer your young Students, who will ſeeme to take all the care vpon them of guiding the houſe, and ordering all things in good faſhion, as if nothing could be done well without them, when as there is not a more raſcall, or roguiſher kinde of people in the world. O how quicke and nimble in filching and ſtealing! how dull and lazie to doe any labour! O how cleane would they make our cheſts; but how foule would they keepe the houſe!

Our Maſter had one Gouerneſſe amongſt the reſt, who did commonly ſteale from vs a third part of that which ſheee ſhould haue giuen vs: And when ſhee could not come to the fingring of our money, or to pilfering this or that other thing out of our cofers, or our trunkes; ſhee would rob vs of our coales, our ſpices, our peaſe, and whatſoeuer elſe ſhee could cleanely lay hands on, and theſe commodities ſhe kept apart by them-ſelues, and when they were growne to ſome pretty quantitie, ſhee would ſell that vnto vs, which we had payd for already; faigning to haue bought that, which we well knew ſhee had ſtolne. If ſhee were to waſh our linnen, ſhee would cozen vs of our ſope, and what with the boyſterous blowes of her beetle, ſquaſhing and beating them vpon ſome ſtone, or waſhing blocke, and renſing them in riuer water with I know not how many lauers, ſhee made our cloathes reaſonable white, though ſhee tooke away two thirds of the life of the threads, which wee were forced, through ill handling, to turne into tindar, ſooner, then had it beene well vs'd, we needed to haue done. So that we were not onely damnified by that which ſhee purloyned from vs, but ſhee marred and quite ſpoyled that which remayned vnto vs. Now if you would faine know, how ſhee ſpent that which ſhe had thus got, hearken vnto me, and I ſhall tell you.

This Gouerneſſe, mayd, ſeruant, huſwife, kitchen-drudge, or what other name ſuch a vile creature can be capable of, when ſhee did not ſell that which ſhee had ſtolne, ſhee kept it for ſome poore Scholler, or Seruitor, that was her ſweet-heart, on whom with all care and diligence ſhee attended, furniſhing him with all ſuch things as he had neede of; he could not lacke that, which ſhee would not preſently helpe him to. For him would ſhee ſteale our bread; for him would ſhee skimme our pot, reſeruing the very beſt, and as it were the very creame and flower of all that was therein for him. And if by chance he were in the houſe, ſhee would be ſure to giue him of the fatteſt of the porridge, with ſippets of bread throughly ſoaked in it, and fleſh without bones, and his linnen cleanely and handſomly waſht with ſope; and in a word, ſhee maintaynd him well out of our meanes; for it was our, and not her purſe, that paid for it.

Tricks of a knauiſh wagg.

In concluſion, ſuch kinde of women, as theſe, are preiudiciall, vntamable, notable lurchers, arrant theeues; farre worſe then that ſouldiers boy, who playd the wagg-paſty with his Maſters paſtie; and of eight *Maranedis* made twelue. For hee opened the lid of the paſtie, that it was not to be perceiued, and ſupt vp all the ſirrop and ſweetneſſe that was in it. Afterwards, his Maſter ſending him for wine, he kept the eight *Maranedis* that were giuen him, to him-ſelfe, and ſold the Iarre for foure, preſently comming crying home vnto him, and telling him, that the Iarre brake by the way, and all the wine was ſpilt.

There neuer came a quarter of mutton into the houſe, but that by little and little, we loſt a fifth part of it, and with it the kidney, ſaying; That for the deuotion which ſhee bare to the bleſſed Saint *Zoilo*, ſhee would not boyle that part; ſo that the kidneyes neuer came to our ſhare; they fell to her ſweethearts lot. But he was not ſo deuoted vnto her, as to offer her all that he had. There was not any thing that we had, whereof he had not a part, nay ſometimes all: ſaying, I put it here, it ſtood there but now, the Cat hath eaten it, ſome body or other hath taken it away, and a thouſand ſuch excuſes to ſerue her turne, ſtealing and filching from vs at her pleaſure. But will you peraduenture ſeeke to reſtraine theſe theeues, to limit them, to keep them within their bounds, or to hinder them in any thing contrary to their liking? It is impoſſible to doe it. Speake but a word vnto them, that doth not pleaſe them, there is not a houſe in all that ſtreet, not a ſhop, a tauerne, nor an ouen, where ſhee will not make a large relation of your life, reckning vp all the miracles done by you, painting you out to be a wretched and vnfortunate man, baſe-minded, a crib, a hunger-ſtaru'd whore-ſonne, a miſerable wretch, of an ill condition, a grumble-ſeede, one that is ſtill murmuring, that a Hen cannot lay an egge, but you muſt be prying into her neſt, that you muſt haue an eye to the skimming of the pot, that you will tye your bacon to a ſtring, and put it into the kettle amongſt other meat, a fourth part whereof ſhall ſerue you a whole weeke, taking it out one day, and putting it in another, making thy meale of one poore morſell, to make it hold out the longer. Will you turne her out of doores, and take another, you ſhall not finde any that will come at you; and ſo you muſt be forced to ſerue your ſelfe: for ſhee that is gone from you, will tell her that is to come vnto you, what a manner of man you are, what an ill life ſhee led with you, and for what cauſe ſhee quit her-ſelfe of your ſeruice. In a word, hee that will be ſerued by them, muſt winke at all their faults, muſt make no replyes, and beſides, muſt let them doe what they liſt, let them haue their owne will, and yet that will ſcarce content them.

I remember, that before I was marryed, I receiued a maid-ſeruant into my houſe; and for that ſhee was a beaſtly filthy ſlut, an idle drone, and altogether vnfit for ſeruice, I turn'd her away after ſhee had beene

ſome

ſome three dayes with me: Then I tooke another, who ſeemed to be in good health when ſhee came vnto me, but falling ſicke of her old diſeaſe, ſhee onely continued with mee two dayes, and went backe againe to the Hoſpitall, from whence ſhee came. Preſently after I had a third, a neat ſeruant, but a great theefe; for willing her to roſte me a Conie, ſhee cuts it in peeces, and ſtues it, and brought onely to the table the head, the leggs, and the wings, diſpoſing of the reſt as ſhee thought good; for which roguery of hers, ſhee ſtayd with mee onely that day, and the next morning I put her away.

When my neighbours ſaw that I had three ſeruants in ſix dayes, and that euery one of them went away mumbling their mattens, and murmuring at mee, a bad report went of mee, they laid a hundred faults to my charge, and did diſcredit my ſernice in that ſhamefull and vile manner, that for ſome twenty dayes after, I was faine to take my dyet in a common victualing houſe. For no woman would be drawne to my houſe, by reaſon of the euill ſpeech that was giuen of mee, till ſuch time, as a friend of mine, brought mee one, that was worſe then all the reſt: for ſhee would be in loue with euery body, and denie none that would aske her the queſtion: Not any Stallion that came amiſſe to her: Shee was a wheele, that was eaſily to be turned with euery hand. I would preſently haue put her away, but I durſt not, for feare of being ill ſpoken of by my neighbours. And I tell you the truth: For this cauſe I held it the leſſer inconuenience of the two, to leaue my houſe, and to hyre me another in ſome other ſtreet that was farther off, keeping her till then with mee, before I would diſmiſſe her. And ſo I did. If you were at home, ſhee would be abroad; if you were abroad, ſhee would be at home. If ſhee haue nothing to doe, ſhee will call to you for flaxe; and if you giue it her, ſhee will ſay you are miſerable, and too great a husband. And neither of theſe, are without their myſterie. But this I leaue to your coniecture.

And how can you imagine them to be otherwiſe then ill diſpoſed in their perſons, when as there is not any Gouerneſſe, eſpecially amongſt theſe your Schollers, which is not branded with the like buſineſſe? Theſe kinde of creatures, would not conuerſe with all, nor yet filch from all, they would haue little or nothing to doe with your young idle fellowes, that lye loytring in the market-place, nor with your Lackayes, nor ſteale from ſome, though they found it lying before them vpon the ground.

I did not make any reckoning of it, nor did it trouble me ſo much, to ſee that they rob'd me of my goods, or that they were neuer without one ſweetheart or other, that ſtill haunted their companie, though I was not willing to giue way to any ſuch things in my houſe; as that they went about to rob me of my iudgement and my vnderſtanding, and to depriue me of my ſenſes; for with lyes and teares they would ſeeke to grace and countenance their villanies; ſo that though the truth thereof appeared vnto me as cleare as noone day, and that with theſe eyes I plainely perceiued their rogueries, their knaueries, and all their wicked ſhifts and deuices, yet they would force mee whether I would or no, and contrary to mine owne knowledge, to hold their conuerſation, and their cariage to be good and honeſt. A man muſt ſuffer much at their hands, euen at all times, and in all ages. If they be old, they are ſtarke naught; if young, farre worſe. And if one be ſo troubleſome, what will two be? Happy is that man, that can excuſe him-ſelfe of them, and ſerue him-ſelfe with leſſe; for no man is worſe ſerued, then he that is moſt ſerued.

Notwithſtanding, I proteſt, that I do not ſpeake this of our Mrs Gouerneſſe, or with purpoſe that ſhee ſhould heare me, for I know her to be a good woman, and of that kinde nature, that ſhee will forget and forgiue all, if you will but begin to her in a cup of wine.

I was now ſetled in my Pupillage, which I patiently ſuffered, that I might not ſuffer: What was amiſſe I ſought to amend, by ſome prouiſion of dainties, which I kept ſtill in ſtore in my chamber, with which I paſt the better, entertayning my ſtomacke with them, when I ſaw it was needfull. Wee thought it good diſcretion ſo to doe, and our Maſter was well content with it, that we ſhould roſte a good lunch of porke, or boyle vs a friendly peece of bacon, and onely out of the hope that he had, that we would inuite him vnto it. And I doubt not but all Tutors, by a generall conſent, would yeeld to accept of ſuch conditions as theſe, foure dayes in a weeke.

Liuing in this manner, as I haue told you, after I had ſtudied the Arts, and the Metaphyſicks, and had duely obſerued thoſe publike Lectures that were required of me, they gaue me the ſecond place; when I was preſented to take my Degree, the whole Vniuerſitie crying out, that they had therein done me great wrong, in taking the firſt place from mee, that they might conferre it on a Gentle-mans ſonne of good ranke and qualitie, but my *Iunior*.

Hauing taken my Degree, I began now to fall to my Diuinitie, and to frequent thoſe Lectures. I entred into it with a great deale of delight; for I tooke much pleaſure in following my booke, the bayt that drew me on, being that moſt ſweet entertaynment of the Schooles, becauſe it was a kinde of life, that was ſomewhat neere a-kinne to that, which I had alwayes led. Where doth a man enioy more liberty, then in the Vniuerſitie? And who liues ſo merry and ſo quiet a life, as your ſchollers? What entertainments of all ſorts whatſoeuer, haue not your Students amongſt them? There is not the thing you can name, that they want. In a word, they haue what they will; and doe what they will. If they will be ciuill and retyred, they may fit them-ſelues with companie that ſhall iumpe iuſt with them: If looſe and diſſolute, they ſhall meet with as mad waggs as them-ſelues. There euery birde ſhall finde ſome of his owne feather, ſuch as ſhall equally ſute with them in their diſpoſition. The ſtudious ſhall haue thoſe that will conferre with them about their ſtudies, that will keepe their ſet houres, write out Lectures, compare their Notes, and punctually performe all thoſe laudable exerciſes, that appertaine to a good Student: And if they are diſpoſed to walke abroad, they are like vnto your *Biskayners*, thoſe women that liue in the mountaynous Countries; who, where-ſoeuer they goe, carry their diſtaffe along with them, that a man may truly ſay of them, That they plow, ſpinning. Where-ſoeuer you light vpon a Student, though he be out of his Colledge, and walkt abroad, with a purpoſe onely to recreate him-ſelfe by the Riuers ſide, in thoſe ſweet and pleaſant fields, yet euen then doth his wit and his memory alſo goe a-walking, calling to minde what he hath read, arguing and reaſoning vpon this, or that other point, and conferring with him-ſelfe on thoſe things, which he hath ſtudied, being neuer leſſe alone, then when he is thus alone. For men that employ their time well, though alone, cannot be truly ſaid to be alone. If once in a yeare, he will take his liberty, and ride into the Country, ſlacking for a while the ſtringe of his bowe, fetching ſome vagaries abroad to make merry with his friends; what ſports or what paſtimes can be equall'd with theirs? How by their Art will they make a Paſtie to runne of it ſelfe vp and downe the table? A Melon, to roll from one end of the boord to the other? Your biskets, and other diſhes of ſweet-meats to dance as they will haue them? Who can ſo featly doe theſe tricks as they? If you will giue your Miſtreſſe muſicke at her window, if you will beſtow a poſie on her, ſome fine embleme, or the like deuice, entertaine her with pretty ieſts, and witty conceits, will you haue them with a *ſtentorious* voyce to deliuer an Oration *extempore*, to maintayne Paradoxes for pleaſure and entertainment, to preſſe an Argument to the proofe, to inuent a thouſand merry toyes, to paſſe away the time, to make

The commendation of a Schollers life.

make ſomething of nothing, onely to ſhow their wit, without any reaſon or ground that they haue to maintayne it: Who, where, or how, can theſe things be done ſo handſomly in all the world, as in the Schooles of *Alcala*? Where haue you brauer, or more flouriſhing wits in the Arts, in Phyſicke, and Diuinitie? Where haue you Colledges better ſeene and practiſed in the three principall Languages? Whence doe there daily proceed ſo many and ſo good Students, as from thence? Where is the like concourſe to be found of ſo many well skill'd in the Arts, who conuerſing together like friends and brothers, yet as if they were enemies, are alwayes one againſt another in the exerciſe of learning? Where ſo many, ſo good, and ſuch faithfull friends to be had? Where ſuch good faſhion, ſuch good fellowſhip, ſuch good diſcipline, ſuch good skill in Muſicke, in Armes, in dancing, running, leaping, and throwing the barre, making their wits able, and their bodies agile? Where doe concurre ſo many good things together, beſides the pureneſſe of the ayre, the clearneſſe of the skie, the temperateneſſe of the heauen aboue, and the fertileneſſe of the ſoyle beneath, and aboue all, ſuch a Cathedrall Church, which may iuſtly be called the *Phœnix* of the world, for the rare and ſingular workmanſhip in that moſt ſtately and vnmatchable fabricke? O my deare Mother *Alcala*, what ſhall I ſay of thee, that may ſufficiently expreſſe thy worth? Or how, without wronging thee, ſhall I be ſilent in thy praiſe? I ſhall doe thee wrong, and yet I cannot doe it. Though it were better for me to hold my peace, for therein I ſhould leſſe offend. It was a rare thing, if not a wonder, to ſee any Scholler ſo debaux'd, or ſo wholly giuen ouer to Vice (were it of gaming, or otherwiſe) that would omit the principall end for which he was ſent thither, or neglect thoſe good ſtudies, whereunto hee was to apply him-ſelfe; for with vs, no greater infamie could befall him, then to be accounted an idle loyterer, and miſ-ſpender of his time. O the ſweetneſſe of a Schollers life! You cannot imagine the many pleaſures and delights that they take: O how merry doe they make them-ſelues vpon S^t. *Nicholas* day, when they meet to make choyce of ſome petty little Biſhops amongſt them! What ſport doe they make with your freſh-men? how doe they play the waggs with them, putting them vpon a wheele, and twirling them downe into a hollow pit, bring them vp againe laden with ſnow? How put a little round rolling pinne betweene the lid of their cheſts, and the locke, taking forth what they can finger, challenging it as a fee for their entrance? not a booke of theirs that can eſcape their hands, no nor their very cloakes that are vpon their ſhoulders. What a pleaſure is it to ſee them labour and canuaſe for voyces, to make vp a maior part at the election of their Generall? How cloſe doe thoſe that are Country-men cling and ſticke together, how doe they ſtickle to make their owne man, euery one ſtriuing to preferre him that is of their owne Shire or Prouince? How ſtiffely and how faithfully will they labour in the buſineſſe? What a quarter and a racket doe they keepe, poſting away meſſengers to this friend, and that friend; impawning all that they can rapp or wring, till the next returne of the Carryer; ſome of their bookes lye in lauander at the Cookes; ſome at this Inne, and ſome at that: *Scotus* his workes are in pawne at the *Buñoleros*, or thoſe that ſell Frittars: *Ariſtotles*, lye ingaged in the Tauerne; *Bartolus*, at the Bakers; *Baldus*, and all his fellow *Ciuilians*, ſome in one place, ſome in another: So one thing after another, all goes away; not ſparing ſo much as the Iacke of male, that lyes betweene our mattreſſes; the ſword, that is vnder our bed; the pot-lid, that hangs in the kitchin; the couers of the powdring tubs, of the pans, and what not? In what Comfit-makers ſhop, had not we a pawne and a ſcore, when our credit began to faile?

In this manner, and with theſe intertainments, did I merrily paſſe my time, till I was ready to profeſſe Diuinity. And when I was vpon my laſt yeare, and

How Guzman *was with-drawn from his ſtudies.*

ready to proceed Bachelor therein, my ſinnes carried me one euening towards *Santa Maria del val*; there are ſome kinde of Pilgrimages, and other the like places for deuotion, that a man were better breake his legge, and abide at home, then to gad thither. For we often goe thither, not with any intention to giue an almes to the poore, or to powre forth our prayers vnto God, and to praiſe and thanke him for his benefits; but all cleane contrary. There we commit a thouſand offences againſt our Lord God, that it were better for vs not onely to breake our legge, but our necke too, and to die in the ſtate of grace. I know, and ſo doeſt thou too, why I ſpeake it. This perambulation or ſtation of mine, was the chiefe cauſe, and principall occaſion of my vtter vndoing. Hence roſe that terrible ſtorme of my tempeſtuous life, the deſtruction of my wealth, and the finall ouer-throw of my credit.

I went out of my lodging, with a purpoſe onely to viſit this holy Houſe: I did ſo: And at my entring into the Church, I eſpy'd a company of women, and amongſt them ſome very beautifull and handſome; according to my wonted cuſtome, I made towards the Font, where the holy-water was: I dipt in my right hand, and that little I tooke out on the tops of my fingers, I ſprinkled on my forehead: But hauing my eyes and my feet tending towards that faire herd which you heard me ſpeake of. Not ſo much as once offering to looke towards the Altar, nor once dreaming or thinking on the Sacrament, I kneeled with one knee on the ground, putting forth my other legge in that manner of poſture, as your Fowlers vſe to doe, when they lye cloſe to make a ſhoot. And inſtead of croſſing and bleſſing my ſelfe, I made a hundred loue-ſignes; and that I might the better driue theſe Conies into the net, I went directly towards them; but before I could come at them, the game was riſen; and going away from thence, they tooke downe through a groue of Alder trees, towards the Riuer ſide; and being come to a pretty little greene meadow, they made the graſſe their cuſhions, and ſo ſate them downe. I followed them afarre off, to ſee where they did quat, and perceiuing that they had there taken vp their reſt, and meant to ſit by it, for they had now taken out of their ſleeues ſuch iunkets as they had brought along with them. And as they were thus preparing for their beuer, faire and ſoftly, and in a ſober and ciuill faſhion, I drew nearer & nearer vnto them: This good company conſiſted of a widow-woman, a good honeſt Hoſteſſe, and two of her daughters, that were more faire and beautifull then *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, beſides ſome other their friends and acquaintance, that were not much inferiour vnto them, as being likewiſe endowed with thoſe gracefull gifts of nature; but ſhe whoſe name was *Grace*, (for ſo was the elder daughter to my Hoſteſſe called) did ſo farre-exceed the reſt, that they ſeemed rather her attendants, then her companions; they were Starres, but my *Grace* was the Sunne.

I was a man generally well knowne, I had reſided in *Alcala* ſome ſeauen yeares and better; was accounted one of the beſt Students amongſt them, and held to be rich, which was no ſmall addition to my credit; Attributes, that haue the power to draw the hardeſt hearts to loue. And theſe wenches were the buxomeſt and the wittieſt in all the Towne. Now they were beginning to fall to their *merendar*, or inter-mealary repaſt, when ieſting with them, I beganne to inſinuate my ſelfe, and to cloſe with them; wherein I was not ſo crafty, but they were as cunning.

But before I proceede any further, leauing this buſineſſe on theſe tearmes you ſee, I muſt giue you to vnderſtand, that what with the charge I was at, for bookes to furniſh my Study, for the taking of my Degrees, and for apparell, I, and my moneyes, had in a manner made an euen reckoning. I had ſome left, but ſo little, that I was not able therewith to take my farther Degrees, and ſo enter into holy Orders. And becauſe, before I was to proceede Bachelor of Diuinitie, I muſt neceſſarily take Orders, and this was impoſſible

for

for mee to doe, becauſe I wanted an Eccleſiaſticall Benefice, or ſome Chaplainſhip to qualifie me; I had no other ſhift to helpe my ſelfe withall, but to haue recourſe vnto my father-in-law, and to requeſt his helping hand, with whom I did alwayes communicate my neceſſities, whoſe friendſhip had neuer yet fayled me. Hee did encourage me on in my good courſes, by affording me at once his beſt both aduice and helpe. For little doth hee (that is *o able*) who doth not as well afford vs his hand, as his head; his helpe, as his counſell.

Prouerbe.
o Quien puede, poco haze, quando a conſeja, ſino remedia.

Hee told mee, that hée would make a Donation vnto mee of the poſſeſſions of my wifes Dowry, ſaying; That hee would beſtow the ſame vpon me for the maintaining of a Chaplaine to ſay Maſſe for his ſoule: and that I on the other ſide, ſhould make a Declaration of the truth, obliging my ſelfe by bond to returne the ſame againe, when and as oft, as hee ſhould require it at my hands. Euen in theſe things alſo are theſe Counter-bonds ſtarke nought, being that they take place againſt that which is eſtabliſhed by the Ho'y Councels, running on ſo inſolently and ſo impudently, deuoid of the feare of thoſe grieuous penalties and cenſures, which they incurre by theſe their Symoniacall Contracts. O good God, how is it poſſible to cut off the thread whereat this ſo great a miſchiefe hangs, ſince I cannot reforme this abuſe in my ſelfe.

I kindly accepted of his offer, and gaue him many thankes, for that his good will was ſuch vnto me, that hee would hand in hand walke with me to Hell, to keepe me company.

Shall I here ſay any thing vnto you concerning this point? Me-thinkes I heare you ſay, No: And that I ſhould not meddle any more with matters of Reformation, vnleſſe they might doe more good, and worke more amendment then (for ought you ſee) they yet doe. I can doe no more then I can doe. But ſay (Friend *Guzman*) I could, put that to thy account; for what is this to me? Nothing, I aſſure thee. Doeſt thou thinke, that thou art the onely man, that is ſenſible of theſe things? that thou art the firſt that hath found fault with theſe Abuſes; or that thou ſhalt be the laſt that ſhall complaine of them? Doe thou talke of that, which concernes thee a little more neerly, and makes more for thy preſent purpoſe: For (if you be remembred) you left thoſe pretty wenches with the meat in their mouthes (feaſting, and making merry) and expecting the words that ſhould come from yours. Bring vs backe againe therefore to thy former diſcourſe, and let theſe things alone, for there will a day come, when my Lady *Symonie* ſhall haue her doome.

Thou ſayeſt well, thy demand is reaſonable, and I cannot deny it thee. And ſince that I am ſo willing to yeeld to thy requeſt, doe me likewiſe the fauor to pardon this my fault, in falling afreſh vpon this ſubiect.

I ſtood vpon thoſe tearmes which you haue already heard me tell you, I had paſt ouer all my Lectures, and in a manner ended all my Exerciſes, a Chaplainſhip ſetled vpon me, to qualifie mee for the taking of Orders, being within three moneths after to take my Degree. This was in *February*, I was to take my Orders the firſt Ember-weeke following, and my Degree about the beginning of *May*.

This pretty Soules ſayings and doings, name and actions, were all compact of *Grace*: and all the Graces being put together, (ſhould they come vpon compariſon) muſt fall ſhort of this *Grace*. For her wit, ſhee was a Cabinet ſtored with all manner of pleaſant and merry conceits: for her beauty, I know not how to expreſſe it better then by ſilencing it: ſhe ſang delicately, plaid daintily on the Violl, was wonderfull diſcreet, had a nimble apprehenſion, but quicker eyes, wherewith (me-thought) ſhee formed a pretty kinde of chearfull laughter vpon him, towards whom ſhee was pleaſed to turne them, ſo ſparkling and cleare were they, and ſo full both of life and loue. Glancing with them to and fro, hers and mine met, it ſeeming on the ſodain, that the viſiue beames

in

in both, reconcentrating them-ſelues in this encounter, by a reciprocall repercuſſion, ſtrucke home vpon our ſoules. I knew it was affection in her, and ſhee was fully perſwaded of the like in mee. Shee had rob'd mee of my ſoule; and ſo I told her then, ſpeaking aloud vnto her by my lookes, but not a word of any ſuch matter that came from my mouth. All that I then vttered, was onely this; That they would bee pleaſed ſo farre forth to grace mee, as to make mee worthy their Company, by inuiting mee to bee their Gueſt. They did ſo, euery one of them did offer mee a part of their iunkets, and did in a manner inforce mee to receiue this courteſie from their hands.

When I had giuen them thankes for this vn-deſerued kindneſſe they had ſhowne mee, commending much their faire carriage, I beganne (with a very good will, though ſeeming to bee conſtrained by their command,) to ſpread my cloake vpon the ground, and ſitting downe thereupon, I tooke my ſhare amongſt them, (which was none of the leaſt) for they did all ſtriue, who ſhould make moſt of mee, and bid mee beſt welcome. I did gratefully acknowledge this their loue, the wine went round, we tooke and gaue healths one from another, as they came about to our turne, and made ſo good a beuer, that I might very well excuſe my ſupper.

When wee had made an end of eating, a maid-ſeruant, that waited vpon them, tooke out a Violl, which ſhee had brought along with her vnder her mantle; and *Grace* putting it with a very good grace into my hand, intreated mee to ſhew my skill thereupon, for that they were minded to dance: Which they did in that manner, with ſo much comelineſſe and arte, and euery way ſo excellently well, but *Grace* beyond them all, ſo gracefully, that I was exceedingly taken therewith, and more inflamed now, then before.

When they were now growne weary, and were willing to reſt themſelues a while, deliuering vp the Violl into her hands, from whom I had receiued it, I beſought her to grace that Inſtrument with a Song: which without any kinde of nicety or coyneſſe, when ſhee had tuned it, and accorded the ſame with her voyce, ſhee performed both ſo ſweetly, as well for the ayring of her notes, as the vowelling of her words, now towring, then melting them at her pleaſure: that for the time, ſhee ſeemed to haue arreſted *Time*. For before euer wee were aware, ſhee had no ſooner made an end, but *Time* went away; and haſtning to recouer that hee had loſt there, it was inſtantly night.

And now was it high time for them to hye them home, homewards they goe; and I in kindneſſe would needs accompany them all the way, leading my Loue by the hand. I was ſomewhat abaſht at the firſt, not knowing how, or where, to beginne to ſpeake vnto her; till ſhee taking notice of this eyther my daſtardlineſſe or feare; I cannot ſay, whether careleſly, or of ſet-purpoſe, ſhee tript with her Chapin, but to ſaue her from falſing, I preſently opened my armes, into which I louingly receiued her; and as I was raiſing her vp, my cheeke hapned (as if it had beene done by chance) to leane a little vpon hers: But hauing ſet her now vpon her feet, (taking my ſubiect from thence,) I ſodainly flew backe, beſeeching her to excuſe that exceſſe, and that if eyther my ſelfe, or mine eyes had offended in preſſing ſo neere vpon her, they were for their owne vnmannerlineſſe, moſt willingly ready to receiue ſuch puniſhment as ſhee ſhould be pleaſed to inioyne them. Shee anſwered mee in that manner, that I was forced to reply. And leading her (as before) by the hand, I did gently ſtraine it with mine, wringing it ſoftly hard, that I might not hurt it. Whereat ſhe ſmiling, ſaid; For all your wringing it ſo hard, you ſhall neuer ſqueeze any iuyce from thence.

This

This put a little more mettall into me, and added farther boldneſſe to my words: So that faigning that we ſtaid behind, becauſe we were not able to goe any faſter, we went diſcourſing together of our Loues; I ſpeake onely of mine owne; for ſhee laught at all that I ſayd, making her ſelfe merry therewith, the better (as ſhee would haue it ſo to ſeeme) to intertaine and paſſe away the time.

Her mother was a crafty ſlye ſubtill thing; ſhe ſought after ſonnes-in-Law, and her daughters were deſirous of husbands, nor did they miſlike of the man: They gaue me line enough, till they had led me along by the noſe within their owne doores: whither when we were come, they made mee enter into their priuate chamber, which was very well furniſht; they brought me a chayre, and would needs haue me ſit downe, that I might reſt my ſelfe a while; and taking out of a Cupboord, neere there at hand, a boxe of Conſerues, they brought me with it a iarre of water, which was no more then needed for to quench the fire of that poyſon which had ſo ſcorcht my heart: but all would not doe. It was now time for mee to take my leaue; I did ſo: deſiring them to giue mee leaue, that I might now and then receiue the like fauours againe from them: They told me, that they ſhould eſteeme it as a great courteſie, that I would bee pleaſed to command this their houſe, and to make my ſelfe no ſtranger, and that in ſo doing, they ſhould thereby know that my words did correſpond with my workes.

Well, now haue I left them, and am gone. Not ſo. I am neither gone, nor yet haue I left them. For my heart ſtaid ſtill there with my deare, that ſhe might the better imprint in it the liuely image of her matchleſſe beauty. I had already bid them good night: But what a night (trow you) was this to me? How long were the houres? How ſhort the ſleepes? What a confuſion of thoughts? What diſtractions of mind? What a generall warre? What a battaile of cares? What a cruell tempeſt riſen on the ſodaine, euen in the very Port and Hauen where I thought my ſelfe ſo ſurely anchored, the skie being ſo cleare, the weather ſo faire, and the Sea ſo ſmooth, as heart could wiſh? This made me ſay to my ſelfe; How in ſo quiet a calme, could ſuch a ſodaine ſtorme come vpon me, without perceiuing its approach, or knowing how in the world to prouide any remedy againſt it? I am vtterly loſt, and vndone for euer; ſo vncertaine is my hope of recouery. But now that morning was come, and that I had got me to the Schooles, when I came thither, I knew not whether I were there or no; nor did I vnderſtand any one word that was read vnto me all the while that the Lecture laſted. That done, I returned home, the cloath was laid, dinner brought in, I ſate downe, and offering to eate, my meat would not goe downe, my morſels remained as it were frozen within my mouth, and ſeemed ſo careleſſe in all that I did, that it wrought amazement in my fellow-Students, and admiration in our Tutor, who thought with him-ſelfe, that this was but an induction to ſome moſt grieuous inſuing ſickneſſe. Nor was he therein deceiued, for this was the diſeaſe that afterwards wrought my death. He askt me what I ayled? I knew not what anſwer to make him; onely I told him, That my heart did fore-bode ſome great mis-fortune, that was comming towards me; for euer ſince yeſterday, my thinkes I feele it ſunke downe as it were into my body, and ſo ſhrunke together, that I find my ſelfe in a manner without a ſoule. All is Lead and lumpiſhneſſe with me, that I know not what to thinke of it.

He told me that I muſt not be a *Mendoçino*, nor be ſo ſuperſtitious as to admit ſuch idle toyes to my imagination, nor to let ſuch abuſing illuſions to come within me, but to keepe them off at armes-end; for this ill (ſaid he) which you preſage vnto your ſelfe, is nothing elſe but the abundance of ſome ill humour in the body, which will quickly be remoued.

Now, for that I already knew that my malady, *Nullis erat medicabilis herbis*, was not to be cured by any herbes, or other medicinable drugges, I diſſembled the

the buſineſſe, and that I might not manifeſt the misfortune that was likely to befall me, I ſayd vnto him; it may be ſo Sir, and I hope it ſhall be ſo, but in the meane while it paines me much.

I roſe from boord, but not from dinner, for I had eaten nothing. And thence got mee to my chamber, where I was ſo oppreſſed with ſorrow, that ſuffering my ſelfe to fall downe vpon my bed, wrapping my mouth and eyes in my pillow, I powred forth teares in abundance, burying my ſighes within the ſtuffing thereof. What with this and the deſire that I had to ſee the Phyſitian of my ſoules health, I found my ſelfe ſomewhat eaſed: So putting on my cloake, and putting off my Lecture, I went home to her houſe. I may not omit onely in two words to tell you, That there is not any exerciſe, but deſires a continuance thereof, wherein to faile, though neuer ſo little, more then ordinary, is like to the breaking of a ſtich in a mans ſtockin, which if it be not taken vp in time, will rauell out all the reſt.

With this Lecture that I loſt, I loſt the benefit of all my former tearmes, and with them my ſelfe. For one after another I left off to continue them, not caring a ruſh for them. *Loue* had now matriculated me in his Schoole, *Grace* was my *Rector*, her grace my *Tutor*, and her will my exerciſe. I did now deſire to heare no other Lectures, but thoſe ſhee read to me, nor any other directions, ſaue what her eyes taught me. I beganne in ioy, but ended in teares. I beg'd in ieſt of them a bit of their beuer, but I found in earneſt, how (going croſſe my throat) I was choaked with this contrary morſell. Beſides, I was poyſoned therewith, for it had quite taken my vnderſtanding from me, hauing now beene bereft thereof for the ſpace of three moneths and more, it being much pittied, but more condemned in me, that one that had beene heretofore ſo ſtudious, and ſo famous a Scholler for his time, as there were few better in the Vniuerſity; ſhould now when hee was come to the vp-ſhot, roue thus at randome, loſing both him-ſelfe, and that good opinion which the world had of him.

The *Rector*, when he had notice hereof, taking compaſſion of mee, ſought to apply ſome remedy to cure me of this my diſeaſe; but therein he rather did me hurt then good; for ſeeing my ſelfe ſo hardly ſet vpon on all ſides, but much more oppreſſed with mine owne proper paſſion, not hauing any power of reſiſtance, I burſt forth into open rebellion, following my vnruly appetite. The bones of reaſon, which like ſo many props, ſhould haue ſeru'd to ſtrengthen my weaker vnderſtanding, were all broken, and ſo ſtrangely ſplit and ſhiuered in ſunder, that there is no hope of euer ſetting them together againe.

Now our Loues went on amaine; the fauours afforded me, great; the hopes, not ſmall; for it was left to my choice, whether I would haue her to wife, or no. Let vs now (my maſters) change places; and let him that is the wiſeſt amongſt you take mine: let him be ſhut vp, as I was, in *Loues* ſtrongeſt priſon; let him haue ſuch iuſt cauſe as I had, to yeeld my ſelfe captiue vnto him; let him be croſt and thwarted in his deſignes, all things conſpiring together, to hinder the execution of his deſires; then let him ſit downe and giue me counſaile. For that is the man that I would hearken vnto. I knew no better meanes for my good, I left all other for this; for that I thought this would be my beſt remedy. Her mother offered me her houſe, and with it all that ſhe had. Shee was a woman that had good credit in her kind of trading, and had good and quicke returnes, ſhe gained wherewithall to maintaine both the backe and the belly, ſhe made exceeding much of me, ſhee was ready vpon all occaſions to ſerue me, I could not imagine more kindneſſe then ſhe was willing to doe me; ſhe kept me neat, ſweet and handſome, and made that reckning and reſpect of me, as Lord and Maſter of all. I thought this world would ſtill haue laſted; I ſought to auoid the venome of euill tongues, but all in vaine; for they had raiſed that already of me, which if it had beene true, perhaps I might not haue

miſcarried.

miſcarried. Pardon me (Gentlemen) I am now a married man, and there is no more to be ſaid of it. Is not this an ill accompt which I haue giuen you of ſo many yeares ſtudies, ſo much good learning, and being vpon the point of taking Orders, and to attaine to ſome degree in Schooles, that I might at leaſt haue beene able to haue read another day Lectures in the open Schooles, as publike Profeſſor, and Doctor of the Chayre: which might haue beene eaſie for me to haue done, conſidering the good conceit they had of me. And being come now to the height of all my labours and paines-taking, and when I was to haue receiued the reward of them, and to take mine eaſe after all this toyle, the ſtone rolled downe, and I was forced like *Siſiphus*, to beginne the world anew, and to fall afreſh to my worke. Doe thou therefore conſider that now, which I then ſo often thought vpon.

O how often doth God put a ſpoake in our wheele! How doth he croſſe our deſignes, making them to proue vaine and fruitleſſe! For the Altar being now made ready, the wood laid vpon it, and vpon it *Iſaac*, the ſword drawne out, the arme lifted vp on high, and now letting it fall, to ſtrike the ſtroke; euen then, and not till then, was it hindred in its execution.

O *Guzman*, why didſt thou ſit vp ſo late anights to thy booke? Why waſt thou ſo diligent at thy ſtudies? Why didſt thou riſe ſo early in the mornings? Why didſt thou continue ſo long in the Schooles? So many Acts, ſo many Degrees, ſo many pretenſions, as thou hadſt now on foot, what is become of them all? what good will they doe thee?

I haue already told you, that the courſes which I tooke in my childhood, came to end in the carrying of a basket; and now theſe of my more manly years, to make their manſion in an Inne, or common Victualling-houſe. And God grant my troubles may here haue an end, and that my foot may be once fixed.

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaues off his ſtudies; he goes to liue at* Madrid; *hee carries his wife with him; from whence they were both baniſhed.*

HAuing ſhapt from a Bachelor of Diuinity, into the degree of a Maſter of prophane Loue; it is now to bee ſuppoſed that I am become a *Licentiat*; and hauing already ſo farre proceeded therein, I may with your good licence (as a true profeſſor thereof) be permitted to ſpeake ſo much as I know concerning the ſame. For, out of the good experience that I haue had thereof, I dare boldly boaſt my ſelfe to be one of the beſt Proficients that was euer bred vp in the Schoole of *Loue*. If we ſhould goe about to define it (ſo many hauing ſaid ſo much of it) it were but to repeat that Leſſon, which hath already beene ſaid ouer a thouſand times and more. *Loue* then is, *Totum in toto*, all in all: And ſo contrary in its effects, that the more we ſay thereof, the leſſe we ſhall be vnderſtood. Yet will wee ſhoote one arrow amongſt the reſt that haue endeuoured to hit this marke, and ſay ſomething of that whereof ſo many haue ſpoken.

A diſcourſe of Loue.

Loue is the priſon of Folly, borne of Idleneſſe, bred vp by Selfe-will and Money, and maintained with Filthineſſe, Vncleanneſſe, and Diſhoneſty: It is the exceſſe of a bruitiſh and beaſtly deſire; moſt ſubtill and piercing, making its way through the eyes to the heart: It is that poyſoned ſhaft, deliuered from the hand of the Archer, which neuer ſtayes till it come to its Center. It is a gueſt, whom with a great deale of earneſtneſſe, we our ſelues inuite, but being once

once receiued into our house, is not so easily put out. It is a childe that longs for euery thing it sees, fantasticall, and full of Apish trickes; it is an old doting foole, feeble and decrepit. It is a sonne that will not pardon his owne father; and a father which will mis-vse his owne sonne. It is a God that hath no mercie, a secret enemie, a feigned friend, a blind but sure shooter, weake to vndergoe any paines, and yet as strong as Death. He obserues no law, nor is he gouerned by reason; he is impatient, suspitious, iealous, reuengefull, and a sweet tyrant. They paint him blind, because he keepes neither meane nor measure, distinction or election, order or counsaile, constancy or modesty, but euermore erres. They giue him wings, to show his lightnesse, in apprehending that, which is beloued by vs, by which he bringeth vs to an vnfortunate end. So that onely he that goes blindly to worke, speeds best; and he that lightly wooes, likely winnes the wench. And though these, and such as these, bee the effects of *Loue*, yet for to bring them to passe, ere euer we can execute them, he will, that we shall want patience in our hopes, feare in the hazarding of our persons, wit in our words, modesty in our demands, iudgement in making our choyce, a bridle to restraine our inconsiderate actions, and consideration to free vs from dangers.

I fell in loue at the first sight, I was taken with a looke, the darts that flew from forth those her eyes, comming so thicke, and with that force vpon mee, that I presently yeelded thereupon, and became her Captiue. Nor was transcursion of time, needfull in this case, as some would necessarily inferre, which affirmation of theirs, I hold to bee an error. For, euer since the fall of our first parents, with that Leauen of theirs, was the whole lumpe and masse of mankind made sowre, and corrupted with these their hereditary vices; the frame of this humane horologe, was so broaken, and put out of order, that there was not one whole wheele left, to answer one another, nor any spring remaining, whereby to giue it motion: But was so vtterly spoiled, so rent and torne in pieces, and so wholly out of all frame and order, as if it had beene a cleane contrary thing, so differing was it now, from that first setled estate, wherein God had created it; the alteration of this its truer course, arising from mans disorderly disobedience. From hence, grew that blindnesse in his vnderstanding, that forgetfulnesse in his memory, that defect in his will, that disorder in his appetite, that deprauednesse in his Actions, that deceit in his senses, that weaknesse in his strength, and those paines and torments, in his greatest delights, and pleasures. A cruell squadron of sore and fierce enemies; who, as soone as God hath infused our soules into our bodies, incompassing vs on euery side, violently set vpon vs; and so hotly assaile vs with the sweet enticements of sin, faire promises, and the false apparances of foule and filthy pleasures, that they ouer-throw all goodnesse in vs, and so taint and corrupt our soules, that they put them quite out of that good course, for which they were created. So that it may be said of the soule, that it is composed of two contrary parts, the one rationall and diuine; and the other, of naturall corruption. And forasmuch as the flesh, on that side whereto it inclines, is weake, fraile, and so full of imperfection, (sinne hauing so wholly infected it cleane throughout) hence is it come to passe, that imperfection and disorder, is as it were naturall vnto vs. And such and so great is this extreame, that man cannot account any conquest greater then the subduing of his passions. Great is his courage, whosoeuer he be, that can resist them, and bring them vnder, in regard of that mortall warre, and infernall enmity, which is, and still will be, betweene our *Reason* and our *Appetite*. For our *Appetite* perswadeth vs vnto that, which is most agreeable to our nature, to that which doth best like and please vs, and to things of that quality, which we take pleasure to treat of, and haue a desire to obtaine them. Whereas on the contrary, *Reason* is like vnto a Schoole-master, who, that she may the better correct vs, goes alwayes with a rod of reprehension in her hand, condem-

Fortior est qui se, quam qui fortissima vincit moenia.

condemning the ill which wee commit. But wee, like little children, play the Truants, and flye from this Schoole, for feare of correction when wee doe amiſſe, and runne a-mouching eyther to our Aunts houſe, or our grandfathers, where wee are made much of, and ſuffered to play the wantons.

Thus often (if not alwayes) *Reaſon* remaineth (which ought not ſo to be) in vaſſallage and ſlauery to our Appetite: Which when it hath once gotten ſo great a power and dominion ouer vs, that of filthy Loue, being ſo vehement, ſo violent, ſo powerfull, ſo proper to this our being, ſo ſolely, and wholly ours, ſo ſutable to our diſpoſition, ſo glued and wedged to our nature, that to breathe, or liue, is not more proper vnto vs; it muſt of neceſſitie follow, that it is the hardeſt paſſion to repreſſe, the terribleſt enemy that wee haue to deale withall, and who with moſt ſtrength and greateſt force comes vpon vs, aſſaults vs, and ſubdues vs.

Reaſon many times made ſubiect to our ſenſuall Appetite.

And albeit, it be true, that *Reaſon*, holding (as ſhee doth) her ancient place of preheminence, is wont ſometimes to hinder, by her great wiſedome and valour, the ſodaine working of a looke (although it haue the power of potent cauſes, to aſſiſt and further the ſame) that it may not eaſily, and as it were in a trice, rob vs of our will, before wee are aware, putting a man in an inſtant beſides himſelfe: yet (as already hath beene ſaid) for as much as the *Appetite* and the *Will*, are ſuch ſure marke-men, ſo free, ſo Lord-like, being neuer yet taught to obey, nor acknowledge any Superiour, it is an eaſie thing for them, hauing *Loue* on their ſide, to worke whatſoeuer effects, and in ſuch forme and manner, as ſhall ſeeme beſt to ſtand with their owne liking.

And becauſe likewiſe there is not any thing, which doth not naturally *appetere bonum*, deſire that which is good; and that euery action which wee vndergoe, is in regard of that good, which repreſents it ſelfe vnto vs, or that happineſſe wee finde to be in it, wee euermore deſire to obtaine the ſame, and ioyne it vnto vs, ſide (as they ſay) to ſide: nay, wee would (if it were poſſible) out of this our earneſt deſire, conuert it, and incorporate it into our owne ſubſtance.

Men may ſodainly fall in loue.

From hence then, this Concluſion may be gathered; That, for a man to fall in loue, there is no ſuch force or neceſſitie in it, that there ſhould ſome diſtance of time interpoſe it ſelfe, that ſome diſcourſe enſue thereupon, or that there be any election or deliberation had in the matter; but that vpon the very firſt veiw, that onely, ſole, ſingle, and primary ſight, there may ioyntly concurre in both, a correſpondencie, or conſonancie, or (as we here in *Spaine* commonly vſe to call it) *Vna confrontacion de ſangre*, a confronting, or conformitie of the blood, wherin the ſtarres by a particular influence, are wont to worke, and doe often moue vs thereunto.

For, being that theſe beames doe dart themſelues by the eyes from the heart, they take infection from that which they finde before them, eſpecially if thoſe they encounter withall, be like vnto their owne, and returning preſently backe againe to the very ſelfe-ſame place, from whence they were ſent forth, as they draw theſe in with them to the heart, ſo doe they portrait and ingraue therein that fayre obiect, which they ſaw and deſired. And becauſe it ſeemeth to the *Appetite*, to be a noble pledge, and well worthy the buying, at any rate or price whatſoeuer, eſteeming it as a thing of infinite value; it preſently enters into treaty, how he may come to inioy the ſame, freely offring for it, and with a very good will, the greateſt treaſure and riches, that hee hath, which is his Liberty, his heart being made priſoner by that Lord, whom himſelfe admitted into his boſome.

And in that very inſtant, that this *bonum*, or this thing, be it what it will bee, comes to be beloued, and entertained by vs, it is likewiſe to be conſidered, that man doth forthwith apply his vnderſtanding to eſteeme it as its

ſummum bonum, or chiefeſt happineſſe: and ſo deſiring to haue it conuerted into himſelfe, is himſelfe conuerted into that which he ſo much deſireth.

Whence it commeth to paſſe, that thoſe very ſelfe-ſame effects, which may be wrought by length of time, getting ground vpon vs by continuation, conſideration, and conuerſation: ſo alſo they may be occaſioned in that inſtant, that this contentment, or pleaſure, that wee take in that good, which wee in our imagination, figure and faſhion to our ſelues, is cauſed in vs. For, in regard that wee know not, or (to ſpeake in a truer kinde of language) will not hinder the courſe thereof, nor make any reſiſtance againſt it; as alſo in reſpect of the corruption of our nature, debilitie of our reaſon, captiuitie of our liberty, and the weakneſſe of our forces, dazled, if not blinded, with this light, wee want wings to flye from it; and like men that are hood-winkt, runne headlong on to our owne ruine: it ſeeming decent and fitting for vs, to yeeld our ſelues preſently thereunto, as to a thing that is naturall vnto vs.

Of Reaſon, Vnderſtanding, and the Will.

And this is ſo proper vnto man, as light is to the Sunne, cold to Snow, heat to Fire; as it is to heauy things to deſcend, and to thoſe that are ayrie to aſcend; without giuing way to the vnderſtanding, or any power to free-will, who inioying their priuiledges, might exerciſe their office; which are now in ſubiection to the Will, which remaines now no more free, ſo that in ſtead of making reſiſtance, wee furniſh the enemie with weapons againſt our ſelues. Iuſt ſo, doth it ſucceed with *Reaſon* and *Vnderſtanding*, in regard of the *Will*. For whereas in that firſt age, whileſt wee ſtood in the ſtate of innocency, they were abſolute Lords, and like Kings, had all things vnder their ſubiection, and did conſerue and keepe in peace, all that fayre and goodly fabricke. After mans firſt ſinne, they remained ſlaues, and were made obedient to the *Will*, and forced to become the miniſters and executioners of this her cruell Tyranny. So that now, our paſſions and affections hauing got the vpper-hand, and wee being furthered and led along with a blinde and depraued vnderſtanding, and hungring and thirſting after our owne luſtfull appetites, wee doe inconſiderately debaſe our manly breſts, bowing them to the ground, to lappe of thoſe waters, which may pleaſe the palate of our luſtfull pleaſures.

Wee flye like hooded Falcons, one while towring to the vppermoſt Regions of the ayre; another while taking through the thickeſt woods, ignorant of any future danger, nor fearing the aſſured miſchiefe that muſt light vpon vs. So that few doe ſtand vpon this diſtance of time, which is ſet before them, neyther doe they preuiſe, or prouide for after-claps; or if they would, *Loue* will not ſuffer them ſo to doe, ſo impatient is this little-great-God, of delayes. And theſe the like effects did he worke vpon me.

Prouerbe.

I was now turn'd marryed man the ſecond time, and ſo well and happily to mine owne liking and content, that I did verily perſwade my ſelfe, *Que nunca por mi ſe començara el toçino del parayſo*, That I ſhould neuer haue fallen from ſo great a happineſſe, and that I ſhould ſtill haue continued the happieſt man in the world. I did not then conſider with my ſelfe, nor did it once enter into my imagination, that this holy Ordinance, ordayned by God in *Paradiſe*, I ſhould ſolely and wholly haue ſought after it for the ſeruice and glory of God, the augmentation of his Church, and the continuation of mine owne *Species* or kinde, by a lawfull meanes of ſucceſſion. But theſe, were the leaſt of my thought, I did meerly intend mine owne pleaſure and delight. It was her beauty, and not my duty, that I minded. Much leſſe, did I giue place to the *Vnderſtanding*, that hee might aduiſe mee to to that which hee knew was beſt for mee: nor indeed was I willing to hearken to his good counſaile. I did ſhut mine eyes againſt thoſe things, that ſhould haue done me good. I did put *Reaſon* away from mee: I ill intreated *Truth*, for ſhee told mee, that marrying with a fayre woman, many

cares

cares muſt neceſſarily offer them-ſelues vnto mee, for feare ſhee ſhould become common.

In concluſion, being ill aduiſed, I purſued to pleaſe mine owne humour, an ill-deſired-good: I was blinded with thoſe her naturall gifts, and bewitched with her grace and beauty; things, as proper to my Spouſe as they were without any artifice or dawbing. Hee erres, who thinkes that any thing can ſeeme well that is an artificiall compoſition, or a borrowed beauty: for this fayre tincture that is giuen to the face, is but a falſe and counterfeit plaiſtring; and when that dawbing is taken off, that foulneſſe that was there before, returnes afreſh, and becomes more fowle.

I liu'd as merrily as the day was long: And hee, [a] that is not bleſt with a Mother-in-law, knowes not what a bleſſing he wants. Shee vs'd mee as if I had beene her owne ſonne, ſeeking by all meanes poſſible how ſhee might pleaſe me, and giue me content. There was not any Gueſt, that brought a good morſell of meat into the houſe, whereof I had not a part. And if it came not in that wayes, why then her purſe ſhould pay for it, buying the beſt the market would afford.

Prouerbe.
a Los, que no gozan de ſuegro, no gazan de coſa buena.

And as my wife brought me but a ſmall dowry, ſo did ſhee take vnto herſelfe the leſſe liberty of ſpeech, and had the leſſe cauſe to put me to vnneceſſary and ſuperfluous expence, and to demand a thouſand idle toyes of mee which chargeable fooleries, your wiues that bring great portions, too-too often put their husbands vnto. Shee was young, and ſo young, that I eaſily wrought her to mine owne will, and could bowe and bend her which way I liſt my ſelfe. It was a pretty flexible foole, and was willing to be rul'd by mee.

Wiues with great porcions looke for large maintenance.

I had got me kinsfolke, who thought them-ſelues much honoured and graced by my perſon, becauſe they knew I was euery way ſuperiour vnto them. For hee that ſhall linke him-ſelfe in alliance with thoſe that are of greater ranke and qualitie then him-ſelfe, ſhall neuer lacke Lords, to ſerue; Iudges, to feare; and Princes, to whom hee muſt pay perpetuall tribute. But my Mother-in-law was tributary to me, & my Siſter-in-law was my ſlaue, my Spouſe did adore me, and all the houſe did ſerue mee. Neuer at any time, as now, was I ſo free from taking thought for any thing, or from the troubles and cares of this world. For I thought vpon nothing, but eating, drinking, and ſleeping, and to paſſe away the time merrily, without being ſubiect to anothers controlment, nor lyable to any payments, not ſo much as the value of one farthing, eyther for houſe-rent, or to the King. All did dance after my pipe, and did foot it as I would haue them But this dance was the blinde-mans Meaſure, and my ſelfe that led them, was the blindeſt amongſt them.

Guzman *his happineſſe.*

They ſay of *Circes*, that inticing ſtrumpet, that with her wicked ſorceries, and diuelliſh inchantments, ſhe turned thoſe men into beaſts, with whom ſhee conuerſed. Some ſhee turned into Lyons; others, into Wolues, Boares, Beares, Serpents, and other the like bruitiſh ſhapes: but withall, left them their vnderſtanding quicke and ſouud; for in that particular ſhee did not touch them. But this other whore (which is our blinde Will) takes a cleane contrary courſe; for, leauing vs the formes of men, ſhee beſtowes on vs the vnderſtanding of beaſts. And (as I haue ſaid heretofore) I neuer ſaw any alteration of fortune, which was not accompanyed with ſome diſaſters, which were neuer preſuppoſed, or once dreamt of before. And alwayes at the firſt ſhee makes ſhow of a great deale of loue and kindneſſe, that to our greater griefe ſhee may tumble vs downe, from that height of happineſſe, wherin wee now ſuppoſed wee ſafely ſtood. For that which grieues, vs moſt in theſe our worldly loſſes, is the recordation the poſſeſſion of them. So that the more (in inioying them) was our happineſſe, the more ſenſible (in loſing them) is our miſery. Shee turn'd her wheele, againſt me, my wife, and all our whole houſe.

The mutable effects of fortune.

My father-in-law (whoſe ſoule is now in heauen) though he were an Inne-

Guzmans *father-in-law, what manner of man he was.*

keeper, yet I can assure you he was a good honest man: for they are not all of thē knaues, they doe not all picke their guests pockets, rob their mailes, nor peruse their cloak-bags: and there are many of them that doe not will their Ostlers to cozen the beasts of their prouender; nor will them-selues pinch their guests in their dyet, and yet make them pay deare for it. For these are things which appertaine more properly vnto women, for that they are naturally more sparing and solicitous about these things, then men, and more curious in the ordering of their prouision. And if there be any such false dealing amongst them, the fault was nóne of theirs, nor was any such thing to be presumed from my father- or mother-in-law; for they were good honest plaine people, bred in the mountainous Country, as good Gentle-folk, and as well descended as *Cid* him-selfe, saue that through their mis-fortune and pouerty, they were forced to follow that course of life: which shall plainly appeare vnto you by that which ensueth. For he being so honest a man as he was, such a friend to his friends, and naturally giuen to doe other men good, he trusted one of his acquaintance with a certaine rent of Tithes: some would say, that he spent all this Barley and Wheat in his house, but I doe not beleeue it, being it fell out so ill with him; but did rather lose thereby, preferring his credit before his profit. For as it was afterwards told me, both by my mother-in-law, my wife, and my Sister-in-law, hee was a man that lou'd to fare well, and that his table was alwayes well furnisht, his vessels were fill'd with rich Wines, he made much of himselfe, and led as merry a life, as cup and can could make him: for there are a certaine kinde of men whose God is their belly.

A tale of a poore fellow in Seuill, that lou'd to fare well.

I knew a good-fellow in *Seuill*, that was iust such another for all the world as hee was, though hee liu'd not in that credit as hee did; who pickt out a poore liuing by copying out of Sermons, euery sheet that he wrote, yeelding him halfe a Royall. This mans helpe my selfe had occasion once to vse, for to copy out a certaine Processe for mee at home in mine owne house, and hee hauing staid somewhat long after dinner, before he returned againe to his worke, I demanded of him why he came no sooner: And he told me that hee was faine to goe a great wayes off to fetch his dinner. But looking a little better vpon him, and beholding him to be a man, made of Taylors shreds, composed of a company of patches, and those all to bee tatterd and torne, not hauing a ragge to his taile, a shooe to his foot, a cloake to his backe, nor a hat to his head, but as poore as poore might be; I imagined with my selfe, that for his owne ease he might or ought to haue dined in some poore victualing-house, or the next Tauerne, that was at hand. Whereupon, I said vnto him, Are there no Cookes shops, or victualing-houses here-abouts, that you are forced to goe so farre? Hee told me; Sir, I am a poore man; I eate that I get, and I get what I can, that I may liue the better. To that *Bodegon*, or victualing-house whither I goe, they are acquainted with my dyet; and know that I will haue to my dinner a pound of the best mutton that is to be bought in the market, and another of Kid: the sawce thereunto being Rocket and Sugar. And this is my fashion of feeding for the winter: for the sommer a little thing contents me, a morsell of veale, or a chicken, ot some such light meate.

Guzmans *miserable estate.*

But to goe on with my former discourse, This friend and acquaintance of my father-in-lawes, beginning to sinke in his estate, and dying within a few dayes after, when the day of payment was come, they came vpon my mother-in-law with an Execution, by vertue wherof they ceazed on all that was in the house, and carried away with them whatsoeuer they found there, & I was afraid that they would haue taken me and my wife along with them, as reckning vs a part of the houshold-goods. But though they did not, yet was it little better, and in a manner almost all one: for they tooke vs by the shoulders, and thrust vs out of doores, that we might not hinder them in the execution of their office, or keepe a coyle and stirre with them about the carrying away of the goods.

Wee

We ſaw our ſelues, like thoſe that are rob'd by pyrates, rifled of all that wee had. We made ſhift to with-draw our ſelues, as well as we could, to a neighbors houſe; and becauſe the creditors would make the beſt benefit that they could of the Inne, being willing that they ſhould haue it, that would pay moſt for it: there were not thoſe wanting, that did ſeeke to out-bid one another; for there is no man ſo great an enemy vnto thee, [b] as he that is of thine owne trade. In theſe kind of men, there is no enuy wanting; they doe repine at anothers proſperity, and ſeeke to cut each others throat.

Prouerbe.
b Quien es de tu officio eſſe es tu enemigo.

This Inne, had beene heretofore in very good credit; ſo that they went out-vying one another, (euery one ſtriuing to haue it) ſtill out-bidding my mother-in-law, who was likewiſe a ſuter vnto them, that ſhee might rent it of them, for that ſhe, and her daughters, had beene there bred vp, and had continued therein ſo long, which made her the more deſirous to hold it, and to offer more for it then it was worth. In concluſion, we had poſſeſſion againe of the houſe, in deſpight of all our enemies, but ſo inhaunced in the rent (for the which me may thanke others malice) and other by-payments, that were to goe out of it, that we were ſcarce able to find our ſelues bread and pilchards. For the Rent, like a Sponge, did ſucke vp all our gaines, and drunke vp ſo much of our commoditie, that we were ready (being thus ouer-rented) to periſh for want of food.

When I ſaw my ſelfe brought to ſo low ad ebbe, I beganne to bethinke my ſelfe, purpoſing to make vſe of my Philoſophy, and apply my ſelfe to the ſtudying of Phyſicke, thinking to thriue by that courſe, and to picke a good liuing out of it; but it would not fadge with me, nor was it poſſible for me to doe my ſelfe good that way; howbeit I had ſpent ſome time therein, to make triall what I could doe: Some little profit I made of it, by reaſon of thoſe good grounds which I had from the Metaphyſicks: For it is a vſuall ſaying with vs, That, *Vbi deſinit Philoſophus, ibi incipit Medicus; & vbi Medicus, ibi Theologus:* Where the Philoſopher ends, there the Phyſitian beginnes; and where the Phyſitian, there the Diuine. The maine drift of my deſire was, to ſee if I could make a ſhift to rub out, and by ſome meanes or other to ſuſtaine my ſelfe; but all was loſt labour, howbeit that I might the better bring the world about, I permitted gaming, viſites, conuerſations, and other impertinencies in my houſe, all which did me more harme then goods I [c] ſought to ſhunne *Charibdis*, and fell vpon *Scilla*. And thinking to mend, I mar'd my fortune. So ſeeing mine owne error, and perceiuing at laſt, that none of all theſe would come to take fire, I beganne to conſider with my ſelfe, that ſome dainty pleaſing bayte, that was ſweet to ſwallow, would doe the deed, and proue like vnto your Comine-ſeeds, which being hung vp in a little linnen bag in ſome Doue-houſe, will onely with the ſent thereof, cauſe the Pigeons to flocke vnto it. But herein that happened vnto me, which commonly befalleth your Comfit-makers; when as the Flies with the very ſauour of his ſweet meates, reſort in ſwarmes to his ſhop, and there glut them-ſelues with feeding vpon theſe his pleaſing confections.

Guzman *ſtudies phyſicke.*

c The Spaniſh phraſe is, Huy del peregil, y naçia me en la frente.

The property of Comin-ſeed.

At the firſt I diſſembled it a little, and would not ſeeme to take notice of any ſuch thing; for giue you but neuer ſo little way to a woman, ſlacken but the line that holds her in, and nothing in the world will laſh out more, or aſſume more liberty to it ſelfe. Lay but the raynes on her necke, and ſeeke not to hold her in, there is no ho with her; then ſhall you ſee what friskals ſhee will fetch, leape, fling, and flie out, that no ground ſhall hold her. She will take hedge, or ditch, or any thing; nothing comes amiſſe, though it be to the breaking of her owne, and her riders neck.

Women apt to take too much liberty.

All things (as it is with old cloathes) grew worſe and worſe with vs, wee did eate, but (God he knowes) how little it was, to ſo hard a ſcantling, and to ſuch a poore allowance, were our hungry bellies limited. But there was no

Guzman *driuen to baſe courſes, and vpon what reaſon.*

limitation put to our lawleſſe liberties, they had now broken all bounds of modeſty, they had loſt their former ſure footing, and had runne them-ſelues out of all order, without any feare or reſpect, either to God or man; ſo that my reputation lay now in the ſuds, our honour gone to ruine, our houſe, all on a flaming fire; and all this were we faine to ſuffer, for want of food. My mother-in-law was content to winke at it, my ſiſter ſhe ſolicited the buſineſſe, my wife was a willing worme, and theſe three playing booty, they made their game the ſurer. My mouth was bung'd vp, I durſt not ſpeake, becauſe it was I that had ſet open the doore to three, and intertained all occaſions; which if I had not done, we might all haue ſtaru'd.

Want, a great enemie to goodneſſe.

I paſt a while with this, (ſtill ſeeming ignorant of what was done) and taking no notice of the meale, that fell into the Mill-cheſt) but the tolle was ſo poore, that wee could not liue by that kinde of grinding in *Alcala*. The Students were able to part but with a little; for their allowances were ſo ſmall, that they could not maintayne them-ſelues and another; and there was not one amongſt them all, that was capable to be made a Nominatiue to rule a Verbe in order of Conſtruction, and whereunto a man might haue reference and recourſe, when things are neceſſarily required to be ioyned together. But to fare ill, to eat little, and that late, and to part with ſo much pleaſure, for ſo little profit, that I ſhould ſee my ſelfe (like a perſon that ſuffereth) put ſtill in the Accuſatiue Caſe, I could by no meanes endure it; nor was I willing to giue entertaynment in my houſe to theſe needy Schollers, who are more for the Vocatiue then the Datiue. I had caſt vp my reckoning, and found, that the [d] Crow could not be blacker then his wings: The harme is already done: The greateſt Gudgeon is already ſwallowed downe: Things cannot be well worſe, then they are. My honour is already impawned, the leſſer euill is to ſell it outright; the profit here is ſmall, the infamie great; the Students crafty, and full of tricks; and victuals hard to come by: So that now it was not onely fitting to change our bowles, but to doe the ſame ſpeedily. It goes ill with vs one way, and worſe another; and therefore wee muſt apply our ſelues to that, which may make moſt for our profit. And being that ſomething muſt be loſt by the bargaine, let vs not be like the botcher, that dwells at the corner of the ſtreet, who workes all day for nothing, and then throwes away his needle and thread in a rage. We muſt not hurle all away with a curſe, but carry things in that manner, that we may haue ſome-thing remayning to helpe vs at a pinch, at leaſt as is neceſſarie for our *victum*, and *veſtitum*; our food, and apparell. Let vs leaue this valley of teares, before the long vacation come, when all is in a calme, and no winde ſtirring, to blow vs any good. Let vs leaue this vnhallowed people, from whom the greateſt things of value, that can be gotten, is a ſix-penny pye, or two rolls of *manjar blanco*, and when they doe beſtow theſe things, they goe not out of the houſe, till they haue eaten the better halfe thereof them-ſelues. If their Mothers ſend them a barrell of *Cordova* Oliues, they thinke they doe vs a great kindneſſe, if they giue vs a little plate-full of them, and that they make our eyes water, if not cleane put them out, with two ſmoakie ſauſages of the mountaine. No, no, there is no ſuch matter, it coſt vs more then ſo. I will not ſell my honour ſo cheape to Schollers, where there is nothing to be got, but halfe-penny loafes, and hat-bands.

Prouerbe.
[d] No puede ſer el corvo mas negro, que las alas.

Wenches haue better trading in Court, then in the Vniuerſitie.

I knew well enough what had paſt in Court, and how the world went there: There had I ſeene many men, who had no other trade to liue by, nor any other in-come to maintayne them, but a faire face, and that they would often take in ſtead of a Dowry; for with them it was held to be a mine of infinite treaſure, labouring and ſuing to marry with women of ſuch worth and credit, that were cunning in their Art, and knew what did belong to the buſineſſe,

buſineſſe, and could tell without teaching, where their ſhooe did wring them. I was alſo acquainted with thoſe their ſubtle and cunning tricks which they made vſe of, that they might not be obliged to that, which was vnbeſeeming them. For when the chamber was occupyed, and that they had a friend with them, whom they were willing to entertaine, they would either take downe the Lettice, or ſet a jarr in the window, or a ſhooe, or ſome one thing or other, whereby their husbands might know that they were to paſſe by the doore, and not to come in for feare of interrupting their ſport. But at noone, the field was left open vnto them, they might then freely enter into their owne houſes, where they ſhould finde the table well furniſht, the meat good, and neatly dreſt, and needed not to take any great care to keepe the chayre warme; for he that ſent in this prouiſion, would come thither in perſon to paſſe away the time, and to make merry a-while with them. And a-nights, when the *Aue-Mary*-bell had gone, and that deuotion ended, they would returne home againe, they had their ſupper ready prouided for them, then would they goe to ſleepe alone by them-ſelues, till that the houre was come, that their wiues were to come to bed to them, it ſometimes ſo falling out, that they would ſtay away till it were broad-day, for that they had occaſion to goe forth to viſit ſome of their neighbours.

In a word, theſe good men, and their wiues, did liue in that cunning faſhion, that without ſuffering them-ſelues to be vnderſtood, either by word, or by deed, they both knew very well how to play their parts, and what each of them had to doe. And theſe kinde of kinde husbands, were well reſpected by their wiues, and honoured with many Viſites, in another gates faſhion, then they were, who did walke without this diſguiſe: Nay, their wiues would be earneſt to haue them abroad with them, calling and carrying them along with them to thoſe feaſts and bankets, whereunto they were inuited, eating together at one boord, and ſleeping together in one bed.

I knew one, who becauſe a Gallant, that lou'd and maintaynd his wife, had ſetled his affection vpon another woman, made no more adoe, when he heard of it, but goes preſently in all haſte to looke him out: And when hee had found where he was, he comes vnto him, and asks him, what fault hee could finde in his wife, that hee had forſaken her companie: Which queſtion he had no ſooner put vnto him, but hee ſodainly claps within him, and ſtab'd him twice in the bodie, but (as God would haue it) he did not dye of thoſe his wounds.

A baſe part of a Wittall.

Such as theſe goe to a *Bodegon* for their dinner, for their wine to a Tauerne, and to the market with a basket. But thoſe that are of a more honourable and noble diſpoſition, it will well agree with them, that they leaue the houſe free for all cõmers, going them-ſelues in the meane while to ſee a Comedie, or to get them abroad to play a bout or two at billiards, or ſome other the like paſtimes, eſpecially when their Commiſſions are out. I would not for any thing doe that, which ſome doe; who, when in the preſence of their wiues, others begin to commend theſe and theſe good parts, in ſuch, or ſuch a courted Dame, will neuer leaue till they make their wiues diſcouer theirs there before them, preferring and prayſing them to be farre better then any that they can ſhow. But for a tacite permiſſion, without any kinde of ſubmiſſion, or yeelding thereunto of mine, I did no way diſlike it, but was well contented with it.

I got my bagg and baggage together, made vp that little that I had into a fardle, all which a man might in a manner haue ſhut vp in a Snailes ſhell; for one little olde worme-eaten cheſt contain'd all the houſhold ſtuffe and wealth that I had; which being put into a Cart, my wife and I ſitting thereupon, we marched on to *Madrid*, ſinging all the way as we went, [e] *Tres anades madre.* Before we came thither, I began to caſt vp my reckonings with my ſelfe, and when I had well thought vpon the buſineſſe, and made vp my account, I ſaid to my

[e] Tres anades madre, paſſan por aqui, Mal penan à mi. *It is an ancient and common ſong in* Spaine: *And when men trauaile merrily on the way, and laugh and be Ioniall, we vſually ſay, That they goe ſinging,* Tres anades madre, *Three ducks &c.* Covarr. pag. 67.

my ſelfe; I carry here along with me a morſell for a King, new fruit new, freſh ware, freſh, neuer ſeene, nor handled before: And therefore I will ſell deare, and ſet what price on't I liſt my ſelfe; I will make mine owne market: I ſhall not faile to meet with ſome one or other, who that he may ſupply my turne, will employ mee abroad in ſome profitable buſineſſe; and a ſecret moleſtation may well be diſſembled, and fairely borne withall, eſpecially when it ſhadowes it ſelfe vnder the cloake of friendſhip: So that, what with ſparing the expences of my houſe, and what by getting other wayes, I ſhall quickly grow rich; I ſhall once more come to be Maſter of a Familie, and to haue an honeſt houſe of mine owne, wherein I may be able to lodge ſix or ſeauen good gueſts, which will yeeld mee ſuch reaſonable profit, that wee ſhall not want wherewithall to liue, but be ſupplyde with all ſuch things as are neceſſarie for vs. I am priuie to mine owne good parts, and know how fit I am for any imployment of importance, wherewith they may truſt mee, and how ſurely they may relie vpon me. In buſineſſes abroad, I ſhall be carefull and diligent; and at home in my houſe, patient and quiet. I will vſe all the meanes I can to gaine my ſelfe credit, and to grow into a good opinion with the world: And when the meaſure of my deſires ſhall be full, and come to its height, I will bend my courſes to matters of greater moment, and leaue off my trading; nor ſhall any other by-occaſions neceſſarily with-draw me from theſe my deſignes.

My wife entred into *Madrid* in the beſt cloathes ſhee had, hauing a gallant hat on her head, ſet forth with a faire plume of feathers of diuers colours, but the deuill a iot of any thing elſe that we had, that was worth any thing, excepting onely our Ghitterne, which wee ſtill carryed with vs whereſoeuer wee went.

We were no ſooner come to Court, but preſently in an inſtant, before wee could ſet our feet on the ground, the fame of our welcome to Towne had ſpread it ſelfe abroad, her beauty had muſtered together a great number of Voluntaries, that offered their ſeruice vnto her, and were willing to hazard their lifes and fortunes fighting vnder her colours; where ſhee was, there was their *rendezvous*. The people flockt apace, where ſhee had pitcht her ſtandard: But the only man that ſhow'd him-ſelfe moſt forward at that time to accommodate vs, being thus newly arriued, was a rich Fripper or Broaker in the high ſtreet, who asking vs, whence we came, and whither we would: when I had told him, that we were bound for this place, and had no farther to goe, and that we had no knowne lodging, nor any acquaintance, whither to direct vs; he forth-with made profeſſion how willing he was to further vs, and how deſirous to expreſſe him-ſelfe a friend vnto vs; and thereupon brought vs to a womans houſe, a friend of his, where we were kindly entertayn'd, and with a great deale of reſpect, not for the Aſſes ſake, but the Goddeſſe, that was borne by the Aſſe.

A Broaker inſinuates him-ſelfe into Guzmans *and his wifes acquaintance.*

This good honeſt Broaker, when he had ſeene vs in our lodging, told vs, that we could not chooſe but be weary with our laſt nights ill reſt, and our hard iourney: And for that we had not any, that could on the ſodaine make fitting prouiſion of ſuch things, as were needfull for vs, that wee ſhould not trouble our heads therewith, nor take any farther care; for we ſhould be ſupplyde by a ſeruant of his, whom hee would ſend vnto vs. And ſo that day hee ſent vs in good ſtore of meat ready dreſt by one that kept a Cookes ſhop, and had alwayes good victuals in a readineſſe. And after that he had furniſht vs with all things fitting, towards the euening hee him-ſelfe came to viſit vs, and after that a few of complements and ceremonies had paſt too and fro betweene vs, I askt him how much hee had laid out for vs: But hee ſeemed to make light of it, and told me (as one that was willing not to heare on that care) that it was a trifle, a thing of nothing; telling mee farther, how much he

he did deſire to ſerue mee, in things of a higher nature then theſe were, whenſoeuer occaſion ſhould offer it ſelfe; and that this was not worthy the talking of, and therefore I ſhould ſpeake no more of it, ſeeming as it were to be aſhamed of him-ſelfe, that I ſhould touch any more vpon that ſtring; yet notwithſtanding I did preſſe him to receiue the coſt he had beene at; Telling him, That friendſhip is friendſhip, and money is money; and that I ſhould not eſteeme the leſſe of his loue, if he would giue me leaue to diſcharge it, it being enough that I had put him to ſo much trouble. So at laſt (to ſatisfie my importunitie) he told me, that the whole came to a matter of eight Royalls, which I preſently paid him: But becauſe I would not haue him goe out of the houſe, I began to vſe my old occupation, and putting on my cloake, I tooke my leaue of him, telling him, that I muſt needs goe viſit a certaine friend touching ſome buſineſſes, that did much concerne mee, and that therefore hee would hold mee excuſed, and pardon this my vnmannerly proceeding. Hauing thus made my way, I left him in good conuerſation in mine Hoſteſſes lodging, and got me abroad a walking vntill it was night.

When I came home, I found the cloath laid, ſupper ready, and all things in that good order, and in that plentifull manner, as if I had left ſtore of money in my wifes hands for to make this prouiſion. I ſpake not a word of it, nor did ſo much as aske whence ſhee had it, or who had ſent it in; as well becauſe it was not fitting for mee ſo to doe, as alſo for that mine Hoſteſſe had told mee, that wee were that night to be her gueſts; as alſo this honeſt man the Broaker. And from that ſuppers acquaintance, hee and I remayned euer after very great and kinde friends. Hee did often come to viſit vs, and would carry vs abroad to walke, and merrily to paſſe the time, inuiting vs ſometimes to goe downe to ſup by the riuer ſide, to dine at ſuch and ſuch *quintas* and gardens of pleaſure: In the euening he would carry vs to Comedies, and beſtow a box vpon vs, and there make vs a good [f]Collation; wherewith we paſt away the time the better.

And albeit I muſt truly confeſſe, that this honeſt man did all that he could, and that nothing was wanting vnto vs, yet notwithſtanding, all that hee did, ſeemed little or nothing vnto me; for I muſt tell you, there were ſome, who to haue had a taſte of theſe ſauoury fruits, would haue paſt the bounds of honeſtie, and come to a higher price, and giuen much more money for a ſtanding in ſuch a Faire. For I knew very well, that women that are faire, and of a good preſence, are like vnto your meale, which is made of the beſt wheat; for from the flower, the pureſt and fineſt part thereof, that white and delicate bread is taken forth, whereon Kings and Princes, your *Grandes*, and Gentle-men of qualitie doe feed; but that which is not of the choyſeſt flower, but is browner, as it comes from the mill, is bread for the houſhold, for Seruingmen, trauellers, and perſons of meane account: and the bran, or reffuſe part thereof, ſerues for dogs-meat, or for the feeding of ſwine, making lap of it for the one, and waſhe for the other. But a woman of a beautifull and cheerefull countenance, ſhee no ſooner comes into any place, though ſhee be there vnknowne, but all are ready to grace her, the chiefeſt and principalleſt perſons, offering, the firſt thing they doe, to riſe, and giue her reſpect, the gallanteſt and richeſt amongſt them, euen to the very Lords, and greateſt Peeres of the Kingdome, vayling their bonnets, giuing her a faire and ciuill ſalutation, deſiring to enioy ſuch a dainty peece, whom Nature hath ſo adapted for noble conuerſation. But anon after (when theſe are glutted, and will no more) the common route ruſhes in, firſt our neighbours ſonnes, then thoſe that come to the Vintage with a tankard of [g] *arrope* in their hands; a burden of wood vpon their backs, to make a Chriſtmas fire; or a basket of figs, according to the ſeaſon of the yeare; theſe pay

[f] *In* Spaine *they vſe at their Comedies to entertaine the women they bring thither with good wines cooled with ſnow, and ſweetmeats.*

[g] *New ſweet wine.*

pay a penſion all the yeare long for their pleaſure, as duly as they doe to their Phyſitian or their Barber. But when theſe will nible no more, but refuſe to bite at the baite, the dogges will beginne to barke at her; not a knaue ſhooe-maker, nor poore old Cobler, that will not ſet vpon her, and raile at her; nor a ſieue-maker, that will not make her dance to the ſound of his bels.

This kind hearted Broaker had already beſtow'd on my wife a gowne of black ſaten, trim'd with veluet, and a ſcarlet mantle, which was daintily ſet forth with a broad parchment lace of gold, which made a glorious ſhow; we had a maruelous faire bed, a neate little table, and a handſome ſute of chaires ſutable therevnto; but how, or which way be came by them, I knew not. Wee had foure good pieces of leather-hangings, richly gilt. In a word, the furniture of our houſe was now ſo well increaſed. that with the helpe of a little more houſhold-ſtuffe, we might very well ſet vp for our ſelues, and kill our fleſh within our owne doores, and make our market within our owne liberties, which could not chooſe but be much more gainfull vnto vs. On the other ſide our hoſteſſe did fleece vs, it ſeeming vnto her, that ſhe had good reaſon to licke her fingers, and to dip her [h] ſop in our honey, and onely forſooth for her permiſſion and conniuence. But this was not a thing that I ſought after, I did not ſo well like of it, nor did it make for my profit. And I did as little like of my Broaker, for that a better and more beneficiall *Opponent* ſought to ſit in that chayre, which he now occupied. And although I knew well enough, that hee proceeded in his dealing like an honeſt Broaker, yet the caſe was now otherwiſe with me, it was quite altered, and come about another way. For I would part with that to day for three, for the which to morrow I would not take tenne. Men muſt ſell [i] according to the ſeaſon, and make their market as the time ſerues. Nor is it materiall that ſuch a one be an honeſt man in this or that particular, if I haue more need of another for my purpoſe. For it little importeth, that a Taylor, who is to make me vp a handſome ſute of cloathes ſhould be a good Muſitian; nor that a Phyſitian, who is to treat of my health, ſhould be a famous player at Cheſſe. Money, more and more money, was that which I lookt after, and not honeſty, and greatneſſe of alliance, or good acquaintance.

That which was not of much profit, was to me tedious, and diſtaſtfull. For I could not content my ſelfe with onely neceſſary food and apparell; I muſt liue like a King; I was to be courted with extraordinary kindneſſes; and that they ſhould buy at its weight in gold, the chaire wherein I ſhould giue them leaue to ſit, the ſweet conuerſation that they were to inioy, the good lookes that were caſt vpon them, our permitting them to come into our houſe; and aboue all, the liberty which I left vnto them, by going forth my ſelfe, to giue them the freer acceſſe. And this our honeſt Broaker could not doe. Hee was willing to lead vs ſtill along by that plaine ſong, which hee beganne withall, when he grew firſt acquainted with vs: as if it had beene an impoſition of ſome perpetuall tribute, which was io paſſe for euer, after one and the ſelfe-ſame forme.

I had now found out one, who did farre ſurpaſſe him both in wealth, and in merit, and was much more for my aduantage; onely that difference did preſent it ſelfe to mine imagination, which there is between Hauing and Wiſhing; the preſent poſſeſſion of a thing, or the deſiring to poſſeſſe it. As alſo that I knew not how to goe to this amorous Gentleman, to giue him to vnderſtand, that I ſhould be very glad to embrace his friendſhip. And better is one [k] bird in the hand then two in the buſh. I knew full well, and it plainely appeares vnto me, that he did much deſire her, and had a moneths mind to haue a fling at her; but he was a ſtranger, and durſt not aduenture on the buſineſſe. And for me to animate him on to this geare, had beene to make him the leſſe to eſteeme of it. And to leaue the other, that was taken already in the net, had beene folly, if not madneſſe. For better is ſtale [l] bread, then none at all. So that

Prouerbe.
[h] Auia de meter ſopa, y mojar en la miel.

Prouerbe.
[i] El tiempo es el que lo vende.

Prouerbe.
[k] Tienes, a qui eres.

Prouerbe.
[l] Mejores pan duro, que ninguno.

that I durſt neither take nor leaue. Thus did things paſſe for a while, waiting ſtill when that happy day would come.

I did vſually frequent your Ordinaries, and houſes of gaming, one while playing my ſelfe, another while expecting ſomething to be giuen me for good lucks ſake, by thoſe that had a good hand, asking now and then, ſomething of thoſe that haue beene my ancient friends and acquaintance. And what with that which they gaue me, and that which my ſelfe had ſcraped together, I took occaſion, when the Broaker was with vs at our houſe, to giue it to my wife to ſpend as ſhe ſaw cauſe, becauſe he ſhould not know the weakneſſe of my eſtate; or to conceiue, that I willingly gaue way to his Viſites out of meere want, and to maintaine my ſelfe at his coſt; but he was no ſooner gone from thence, but I preſently demanded the ſame money againe of my wife, to goe to play. And ſhee did not onely returne mee that, but much more. So that alwayes before him, I bare my ſelfe like a Lord of mine owne will, without leauing any gap open vnto him, whereby he might haue entrance to loſe his reſpect towards me.

This ſtranger on the other ſide, went for his part ſucking-in the ayre, and (as it is in the Prouerbe) drinking [m] downe the windes; vſing extraordinary diligences to gaine our good will; and euery one of vs on all ſides, working vpon all aduantages, to effect our ſeuerall intents. But I, for my part, being very carefull to auoid all diſaſters, eſpecially that might fall out in mine owne houſe; and for the better preuenting of diſ-order, was much afraid, and wonderfull loth, that two ſhould tread together in one and the ſame path; as one that knew by experience, that one Kingdome would not admit of two [n] Heads; nor two birds [o] make their neſt together in one hole. Nor durſt my vvife likewiſe conſent thereunto, being vnwilling to haue more ſacks brought to her mill, then ſhe could vvell grinde, it going much againſt her ſtomacke to bee put in the Grammer rules for a *common of three*. Till at laſt, we perceiuing that this would make well for vs, and that by how much the more the Broaker did ſlacken his ſtring, ſo much the more the ſtranger did ſtraine to ſhoot home, drawing his bow for that purpoſe to a good round compaſſe; for preſents, iewels, moneys, and banquets, like ſo many arrowes, came thicke one vpon another, in hope at laſt to hit the marke. I began now to looke bigge vpon the matter, and to talke in a higher ſtraine, ſaying; That I was not minded to pay a rent any longer for my lodgings, being that I was able to keepe houſe of my ſelfe. So the ſiege was raiſed, my old Hoſteſſe and I parted, and began to ſet vp ſhop wholly for my ſelfe.

The ſtranger made me a thouſand ducks and congies, ſaluting me, whereſoeuer he met me, with a great deale of reſpect; and I on the contrary lookt on the Broaker with a ſcornefull and diſdainfull eye, ſhowing as dogged a countenance towards him, as I could poſſibly put on. And by how much the more the one did ſeeke to draw me after him; ſo much the more I ſtroue to ſhake off the other.

Till at laſt, growing weary of him, I came and told him, that if I had now taken a houſe of mine owne, and had left that which hee wiſht mee vnto, I had onely done it, that I might bee ſole maſter of mine owne houſe, that I might goe and come at my pleaſure, and be either cloathed or naked, as I ſaw cauſe, vnſeene or ouer-looked by others. And that hee ſhould doe mee a fauour to come now and then and ſee me, when I ſhould bee at beſt leiſure to receiue him, and not when I had earneſt occaſion of buſineſſe. For neither I, nor my wife could alwayes be in diſpoſition to receiue Viſits.

The poore man was ſo out of countenance with this anſwer, and tooke it ſo ill at my hands, that neuer after would hee offer to put his foote within my doores, except by the mediation of his friend, ſhe that had beene our Hoſteſſe, and

Prouerbe:
[m] Beuer los vientos. *To drinke-in the wind, is to deſire a thing with great earneſtneſſe. And becauſe the wanting of it, till we come to attaine vnto it, cauſeth anguiſh and vexation to the heart, a man muſt of force fetch his breath thicke, inſomuch that he ſeemeth to ſup in the aire, and to drinke downe the wind.* Covarr. verb. viento.

Prouerbe.
[n] No ſufre dos cabeças vn gouierno.

Prouerbe.
[o] No ſe anidan bien dos paxaros juntos en vn agujero.

Guzman *ſhakes off the Broaker, to intertaine a new Gallant.*

and that alſo very ſeldome, ſome once (as we ſay) in a thouſand yeares, when he could doe it handſomely, and my wife was beſt at leaſure, neither my ſelfe, nor any body elſe, being then at home.

Now, our ſtranger being ſo open-handed and liberall as hee was, I was forced to carry my ſelfe fairely towards him, for hee was well able to goe through thicke and thinne, and if he held on that round pace that hee beganne, there was great hope that he would quickly bring vs out of the mire, and that wee ſhould happely arriue to our intended iourney, and ſo it fell out. For my wife, ſhowing him but a good looke, when they two were alone, hee did ſo highly eſteeme of euery ſlight fauour that ſhe afforded him, that he would requite her kindneſſes with their waight in gold.

We entred into a great league of friendſhip; he inuited me to his houſe, and when I had taken my leaue of him, hee would ſend home after me many, and thoſe very good, diſhes of meat, which ſerued very well to furniſh our owne table, taking ſecret order with thoſe his ſeruants, that carried them thither, that they ſhould not bring them backe againe, but leaue them there, though they were all of ſiluer.

Prouerbe.

I was not offended at this, but it did ſomewhat trouble mee, that he ſhould doe it ſo openly; for there is no man ſo blockiſh, that doth not perceiue, when ſuch things as theſe are done, it is not *à humo de pajas*, for Moone-ſhine in the water, nor for a mans good lookes.

It is a braue thing, when a rich Gallant ſhall intertaine my wife with great preſents, and whatſoeuer elſe that may giue her content, and that I may not know the end why he does it. But I was well enough contented therewithall, and all other Witals doe the like. He ſayes not true, who ſayes it grieues him; for if it did grieue him; he would neuer giue way vnto it. If I were glad thereof, and gaue my conſent that my wife ſhould kindly intertaine him; if I ſuffered her to goe abroad, and was well pleaſed when ſhe return'd, to ſee her come home laden with iewels, or with a new gowne, or with ſome delicate ſweetmeats, brought from the banquet that was made for her; & if my ſhame was ſo little, that I could fall heartily to them, and eate my part of them, and could diſſemble all this, and much more; they likewiſe doe the like; neither will they, nor can they clap the hornes on my head, and thinke to goe without them themſelues. For I muſt aſſure them, that I vnderſtand them, and they vnderſtand me.

But this was the miſchiefe of it, that when they ſaw me walke the ſtreets ſo well clad, with a iewell in my hat, and a hat-band ſutable vnto it, garniſhed with ſtones of good value; they would ſay as I paſt by them; and that ſo loud, that I might very well heare it; What rich ſtones hath *Guzman* in his hat? O what a glorious ſhow they make; but doe you marke how that ſame *Cornix* doth out-ſhine all the reſt? And perhaps ſome of theſe which ſaid this of me, did enuie my good fortune; and others, like your Goates, did not ſee their owne hornes, though all the world beſides did ſee them.

This ſtranger of ours, did purchaſe our libertie, and he had ſuch ſtore of wealth, that now my houſe was for no body elſe, but him. But I had alwayes a care to keepe my *decorum*, entertayning his friendſhip, and maintayning mine owne credit. The goods in my houſe, did like froath, gather daily more and more increaſe. I had both winter and ſummer hangings, peeces of Arras, wrought in *Bruxells*, others of branched Damaske interwouen with tinſell, beds of Damaske, Canopies, & quilts of the ſame, Turkie carpets to tread vpon, pillow-cuſhions for my wifes *eſtrado*, when ſhee was pleas'd to ſit in State; and many other moueables, that might well beſeeme ſome great Lord. The table that I kept, and the houſe that I maintaynde, did not (I aſſure you) ſtand mee in leſſe then two thouſand Crownes a yeare. And when I was diſpoſed to make my good Maſter almoſt ready to runne madde, (which I was

ſometimes

ſometimes wont to doe, eſpecially vpon feſtiuall dayes) I would, as ſoone as we had din'de, command the Gitterne to bee brought in, and laid vpon the boord, and then looking cheerefully vpon my Wife, I would ſay vnto her; I prethee (good *Grace*) if thou beeſt a good Wench, doe vs the kindneſſe to beſtow a Song vpon vs, it is a Holiday to day, & therefore I prethee do not ſtick with vs: but let vs haue it quickly, and with a good-wil. For otherwiſe, it was a wonder to ſee her take her Inſtrument in her hand. And ſtill in my preſence, when-ſoeuer I cauſ'd her to ſing, (howbeit ſhe knew, that I knew all, and that nothing was hidden from me) ſhee would carry her ſelfe very ſoberly and decently, keeping alwayes a ſettled and compoſed countenance, and was as carefull (as if her life had layne vpon it) that I might not perceiue any thing to come from her, either in her lookes, or her geſture, that might giue me any the leaſt cauſe to interpret it as an affront, or ſhould otherwiſe force mee to make demonſtration, that I tooke any diſlike at it. Each of vs did vnderſtand our ſelues; and both one another; though we would not ſeeme to vnderſtand any thing, or make any ſhow thereof to the world. With this Shooing-Horne ſomtimes we drew on our good Maſter, which coſt him many a faire Crowne.

I liu'd like a yong Prince; Siluer diſhes did runne vpon wheeles round about my houſe; one tumbled heere, and another there. My Coffers could not containe thoſe rich imbroideries, and the reſt of my wardrobe; ſome of ſundry ſorts of Cloth of Gold, and others of Silkes, that were full of variety: my Cabinets were cramm'd full of Iewels, precious Stones, and other curioſities; I neuer wanted money to game, I did triumph in plenty, and had good Cards in my hand to trumpe about; And for this cauſe, our friends did inioy their liberty; for I perceiuing, that it was not fit for mee to enter into mine owne houſe, (which I knew, as oft as I found the doore ſhut) I paſt by it, and went abroad a walking, vntill a more conuenient time did offer it ſelfe; and ſeeing, when I returned home, that the doore was open, it was a ſigne vnto me that the coaſt was cleere, and that they had paſt the time away in good conuerſation: wherevpon I boldly went in, and ſitting down, we all fell a talking of ſome one thing or other, as occaſion offered.

Thou ſeeſt all this my happineſſe; the faireneſſe of the weather; the freſhneſſe of the winde; thou ſeeſt how fauourable Fortune was vnto mee; how ſhe ſmil'd, and laught vpon me; how franke, and liberall ſhe was towards me. But it ſucceeded in the end no leſſe vnhappily with mee, then all things elſe which I vnder-went by euill meanes. Nor doe I thinke, that any man can eſcape ſuch flawes as theſe, whoſoeuer hee ſhall be, that ſhall ſayle in the ſame Ocean.

The Courtiers court Guzmans *wife.*

Vpon the fame of this ſo rare a piece of beauty, and the large licence that I had giuen her, ſome Princes, and Gentlemen belonging to the Court, aſſumed the more liberty to themſelues, who had ſmelt out what a hungry and ſauoury ſent this raſher on the coales had with it; they walke their Stations before my houſe, meſſages are ſent to and fro; how-beit I am verily perſwaded, that there was neuer any friendſhip ſtrooken with them, nor any iuſt cauſe giuen, whereat our yong Maſter might deſeruedly take offence. Yet notwithſtanding, ſeeing himſelfe thus perſecuted, and as it were out-brau'd by others, that were mightier and more powerfull then himſelfe, in wealth, linage, and gallantry; he grew ſo exceeding iealous there-vpon, that he was ready to runne out of his wits, and had almoſt vtterly loſt his iudgement. He went about at the firſt to ſtraine himſelfe to ſtand in competition againſt them all, exerciſing to this end, extraordinarie liberalitie towards vs; preſenting vs with gifts of great price, amounting to thouſands of Ducats; but when hee ſaw, that hee could not conteſt with them, nor bee able to reſiſt ſo great force and power as theirs was, vn-conſtrained, without cauſe, or any other iuſt exception in the world, ſaue onely what his owne iealouſie did ſuggeſt to his

weake conſideration, he by little and little fell off, and began to retire himſelfe, frighted thus from vs onely with a vaine ſhadow.

And ſometimes I went conſidering with my ſelfe, what a ſtrange kinde of foole this was, that in his heatfull humour, ſet on fire with filthy Luſt, hee ſhould ſo eagerly follow the chaſe, and hunt with that violence after ſuch diſhoneſties as theſe, to his both ſo great coſt, and vexation of minde. I laught at him, as alſo at the pooreneſſe of his wit and iudgement. For if one of the Maids of my houſe had come vnto him, crauing ſomething of him that was of good worth, hee would very willingly and freely beſtow it vpon them; but if by chance a poore man ſhould come vnto him, and begge but halfe a Royall of him for Gods ſake, he would not ſticke to deny it him. All of vs receiued the reward wee deſerued, we were paid in our owne coyne: The Maſter whom wee ſerued, for to inrich vs, had made himſelfe poore; and we, through our ill gouernment, could not continue rich; ſo that like ruinous buildings, we fell altogether to the ground. Our firſt man had left the field and was fled, and now thoſe other Gallants come on amaine: for the greater thoſe perſons are, who are priuy to their greatneſſe, and truely vnderſtand their owne ſtrength and worth; ſo much the more free they are in that which they pretend, and thinke that all other men muſt giue way to them.

The condition of great men.

I could haue told them, or demanded of them; Sir, what ſeruice doe I owe you? What haue you throwne vpon mee, whereby to binde me vnto you? What good did you euer doe mee? Why then ſhould you expect, that I ſhould wait vpon you with my workes, words, and thoughts? And which is worſt of all; beſides that they are bad Pay-maſters, they vſe vs harſhly, and beare themſelues ſo proudly, as if we were in debt to them, and had an execution to enter by force vpon my houſe, my wife, and all that I had. So lawleſſe was this their liberty, ſo vnciuill their proceeding, that within a few dayes after we fell into the hands of the Iuſtice.

A Fable of the Lyon.

A graue Miniſter of the State came to know what had paſt amongſt vs; You may haply haue heard, how the Lyon once vpon a time, hauing admitted all the other beaſts into his Company, and hauing in a generall hunting kill'd a Hart, when they came to the diſtribution and ſharing of it, he out of his abſolute authoritie, and Princely prerogatiue, adiudg'd it wholly to himſelfe.

A Iudge falls in loue with Guzmans *Wife.*

Iuſt ſo did this Miniſter deale with mee. And that hee might haue ſomewhat the better colour to doe as he did, he began (Lyon-like) with a little roaring, as if hee had meant to quarrell with vs. When I knew the courſe where-vnto hee tended, I preſently had recourſe vnto him, complaining of ſuch and ſuch wrongs that were offered vnto me, boaſting my ſelfe to bee a Gentleman, and one that was anciently deſcended of the *Gothes*. And hee (cunning as he was) who deſired nothing more, then that I ſhould thus come vnto him, gaue me kinde entertainment, and cauſing me to ſit downe ſide by ſide with him, he began to aske of me what Country-man I was? I told him that I was of *Seuill*. O (ſaid hee) of *Seuill*? The beſt Countrey in all the world.

Then began he to treat of that Citie, indearing it very much vnto mee, as if, by his commendation of it, I ſhould haue receiued a great deale of honour, or profit thereby. Hee demanded of mee what my Parents were, and how they were called? And when I had named them vnto him; he told mee, that they had beene his very good friends, and acquaintance, making a long diſcourſe vnto me, how when he was Iudge there, he had ſentenced a certaine ſute in his fauour. And he farther told mee, that he did aſſure himſelfe, that my Mother was ſtill liuing, to whom hee was well knowne in her yonger dayes. In a word, hee proceeded ſo farre with me in theſe and like kinde of complements, that there was nothing wanting to make it full and complete,

but

but his acknowledging himſelfe to be my neere Kinſman. Which I did ſtill looke for, eſpecially when I ſaw him come to ſuch particulars, and that hee could tell me ſuch and ſuch tokens; which made me to ſay with my ſelfe; *Omnia poſſunt potentes.* What cannot your great men doe? And now I am falne vpon this Theame, I cannot but call to minde a certaine Iudge, who hauing moſt faithfully vs'd his Iudicature, and exerciſed his Office with a great deale of integritie, his time of reſidencie being expired, and that he was to render an account (as the cuſtome is) of his Gouernment, they could not charge him with any thing, ſaue only for his wenching, and for being a little too much ſubiect to this humane frailtie; for which, being ſharpely reprehended, he made anſwer; That when he was recommended by them to this Office, they had only giuen him in charge, that hee ſhould deale vprightly, and truly adminiſter Iuſtice, which he moſt faithfully performed, and that no man could taxe him of the contrary. Would yee therefore be pleaſed to peruſe my Letters, and to looke vpon the Contents of my Commiſsion, and if there (amongſt other my inſtructions) you ſhall finde that I was by vertue of them, inioyned Chaſtitie, I ſhall moſt willingly ſubmit my ſelfe to your cenſure, and indure ſuch puniſhment as yee ſhall be pleaſed to inflict vpon me. So that, becauſe this clauſe was not expreſly ſpecified in his Commiſsion, nor any particular mention made thereof; it ſeemeth vnto theſe kinde of men, that they doe not faile in their dutie, nor doe any thing contrary to their Office, though they ſweepe (as they ſay) a whole ſtreet before them, and doe otherwiſe vndoe a Countrie: As did a certaine Iudge, who hauing deflowred about ſome thirtie Maidens, and amongſt thoſe, the daughter of a poore woman, who when ſhe ſaw what wrong he had done her, ſhee went vnto him, and beſought him, that ſince he had done, or vndone her daughter, that hee would be pleaſed to returne her home vnto her, to the end that her diſhonour might not be diuulged.

Of a Iudge that was giuen to wantonneſſe.

Of a Iudge that was a deflowrer of Virgins.

Whereupon, he taking a Royall of (a) eight out of his Purſe, ſaid vnto her: Good woman, I know nothing concerning your daughter; Lo, here be eight Royals for you, take you theſe, and get you ſome Maſſes to be ſaid to *S. Antonio* of *Padua*, that he may doe you the fauour to recouer her loſt maiden-head. A very good amends. I doe not know to whom this may ſeeme to bee well done. Doe thou tell me if thou canſt. I am almoſt at my wits end, to thinke on the ſmall puniſhment, that is inflicted vpon ſuch great faults.

(a) *A piece of foure ſhillings.*

He commanded me to get me home to my houſe, proffering (out of his loue vnto me) to doe me many fauours, and that hee ſhould count himſelfe very happy, if at any time it ſhould lie in his power to doe mee a courteſie. For it was a ſufficient motiue vnto him, to binde him vnto me, that I was of *Seuill*, and the ſonne of ſuch parents; and that as well in this, as all other occaſions, hee would aſsiſt mee all that he could, and afford mee his beſt fauour.

With this faire anſwer I got me home. And within a few dayes after, when I and my wife were all alone, and thought our ſelues ſecure, not thinking on any thing in the world, much leſſe dreaming of his comming thither, behold, one night, when he walked the Round, he came to our doore, and commanding one of his people to knocke thereat, vpon anſwer giuen, they askt for me; intreating a Iarre of water of me for his Worſhip. I well knew where his thirſt lay; Whereupon I earneſtly beſought him, that he would doe me the honour to come in, that he might ſit, and take his drinke, and not (like beggers) to take it without doores. He deſired nothing more, this was that which he lookt for. He comes in, and when hee was ſate, ſome Conſerues were brought him to ſweeten his mouth, which hauing taſted, he tooke the Iarre and dranke. Then began he to enter into Diſcourſe, telling vs, that he had walked himſelfe weary, and that he had ſeene that night many faire women,

Of a Iudge that was in authority.

but none that came neere my wife. He ſaid farther, that he had heard her exceedingly commended for her good voyce. I then will'd her to take her Violl, and ſeeing his Worſhip was pleaſed to giue her the hearing, that ſhee ſhould ſing ſome one ſong or other, which ſhe thought fit. Which ſhee did without any coyneſſe, or ſtraining courteſie; it ſeeming vnto vs both, that it would much aduantage vs, to get ſo great a perſon to be our friend, who might be ready to ſtead vs vpon all occaſions. The man was aſtoniſhed, as well with the ſeeing, as the hearing of her; & when he was to take his leaue, he willed me to come now and then to ſee him, and that I ſhould make my ſelfe no ſtranger. With that, he went his way; and I and my wife began to talke as well of this, as other things that had paſt; and how farre forth this his fauour might be a meanes, to make vs hereafter be more both reſpected and feared. I did viſit him ſometimes: and one day among the reſt, careleſſe of any thing that might befall me, he ſaid vnto me; How happens it (*Guzman*) whileſt I am yet liuing, (for men are mortall, and I may die before I ſhall bee able to doe thee any good, if it be not done the ſooner) that thou doeſt not make vſe of my fauour, and ſue vnto me for ſome Commiſsion, that may be both honourable and profitable vnto thee? I told him, that I held my ſelfe much bound vnto him, and that I ſhould euer reſt thankfull for this expreſsion of his loue and fauour towards me, but becauſe I was loath to be troubleſome vnto him, as alſo for that I had not as yet ſerued him in any thing, whereby to deſerue any the leaſt kindeneſſe from him, I had forborne to moue him in things of this nature. He then telling me the friendſhip of my father and mother, (though this his kindeneſſe towards me, proceeded more from his loue to my wife then my ſelfe) he offred me a Commiſsion; telling me, that it would be very beneficiall vnto me. I thank't him for it, though this was the Induction to all my future miſ-fortunes. For within two dayes after, he puts thoſe papers into my hands, with order for the recouery of certaine debts that were due to the Exchequer. The which he had procured (begging it for me) of an eſpeciall good friend of his, a great man in his place, and one that aſsiſted in that Court; telling him that I was a friend of his, and a well-deſeruing Perſon, worthy to be imployed in waightie matters, as ſhould appeare by that good ſatisfaction, which I ſhould giue both of my perſon and imployment.

Guzman *imployd in Commiſsions, for the Councell,* de la hazienda. *The Councell* de la hazienda *is of the ſame nature with the Barons of our Kings Exchequer*

When I had my Diſpatch, I went from home, but (I muſt confeſſe) ſore againſt my will; I carried along with me eight hundred *Marauedis*, which I had by way of ſalarie, or ſtipend; and for that I had euer beene accuſtomed to fare well, I knew not how to begin to frame my ſelfe to liue with this poore allowance, much leſſe to be able to put money in my Purſe, or to hoord vp to carry, or ſend home any thing to my houſe. But I ſaw now, that there was no other remedie, and muſt of force doe as I did: and ſo for auoyding of farther miſchiefe, I held my peace, and accepted of it. *Partime, y perdime*, My departure was my deſtruction. And when I went away, all went awry. For it ſeemed vnto this kinde Maſter of mine, that he might get himſelfe ſlaues at other mens coſt to doe him ſeruice, and that with theſe eight hundred *Marauedis*, I might part ſhares with my wife, and maintaine two houſes, and that this would be a ſufficient recompence for vs; out of which reſpect, he was not only willing to be exempted from all other taxes and tributes belonging vnto vs; but alſo, that my wife ſhould not looke out to ſee the Sunne, nor to receiue any Viſits, but only his. He ſought to be ſo abſolute a Iudge ouer any thing that was mine, and did ſo wring and pinch vs, that I and my familie were ready to ſtarue for hunger, ſo that we were driuen dayly to goe ſelling ſome of our houſ-hold ſtuffe, for to put bread in our mouthes.

Guzmans *wife likes not the Iudges miſerable proceeding.*

My wife (who was now become his Hoſteſſe) could not liue by theſe reckonings, it was no good account for her, to indure ſo much ſubiection, and to be

tyed

tyed to ſo ſhort prouiſion. She firſt began to ſhew ſome diſlike of this his imperious, yet baſe dealing; and alſo many times of purpoſe refuſed to ſee him; hiding her ſelfe out of the way, vſing the helpe of a great friend of hers, who ſtill made her excuſe, when ſhe was diſpoſed that he ſhould not come at her: For ſhe thought ſhe ſhould haue made her ſelfe by this market; but it proued otherwiſe.

But when this new Maſter of mine perceiued the euill correſpondence which ſhe held with him, thinking with him-ſelfe, that my preſence would quickly remedie all this, and bring the Bowle to it's old bias, he preſently gaue order, that there ſhould be no more Prorogations granted vnto me, and that I ſhould be commanded to giue an account of that which I had done. They put me to it, and I did it; more willingly reſigning vp my Office, then I tooke it vpon me; for I found my ſtate therby much impawned, and my houſe much waſted and conſumed. He thought that my preſence ſhould haue beene the only remedie to giue him content, and that he might the better inioy all things to his owne liking; but it fell out farre otherwiſe, for by my preſence, his expence increaſed, and wee had the better meanes to make it riſe. Hee was much troubled here-with, and knew not in the world how to mend himſelfe; and conceiuing with himſelfe, that nothing would worke vs better to his will then rigour, then to put vs to our ſhifts, that we might come Cap in hand, crouching vnto him, and that with our armes acroſſe, and teares in our eyes, we ſhould come and cry him mercy, and intreat his fauour; he treated with his Colleagues and fellow Officers, to baniſh vs the Court; and ſo accordingly it was notified vnto vs. I began to caſt vp my recknings, and made this account with my ſelfe; This Lord Iudge takes himſelfe to bee ſuch a great man, that he thinkes, he does me a great fauour, in putting mee to maintaine his Houſe, and procure his pleaſure, ſelling him that for a ſong, which I haue bought with ſo many affronts, and ſcraped together with ſuch a deale of toyle.

Guzman *baniſhed* Madrid.

Againe, it will doe me no good to ſtay here, if I may not haue free leaue to make the beſt of mine owne Commodities. It will be the leſſer euill (thought I with my ſelfe) to obey this baniſhment, and to be packing, then to tarry here to no purpoſe. For though it were hard meaſure that was offred vnto vs, and did pinch vs ſomewhat; yet I knew it would wring him much more, nay gall him to the very heart. For, though we loſt one of our owne eyes, yet we had put out both his. For he miſt of his marke; he had taken the wrong Sow by the eare, and all went kim-kam, cleane contrary to his expectation. So this poore ſilly aſſe, thinking to bang vs, had made a Cudgell for his owne ſides. Beſides, at the end of that yeere, thoſe ten yeeres were to be expired, wherein I was to giue my Creditors ſatisfaction.

All theſe things had I laid together, and thorowly weigh'd them with my ſelfe. I knew likewiſe that my Mother was aliue; ſo on the ſudden I hired a Coach for our owne perſons, and two Carts, for to carry our ſtuffe, and our people, leauing the Court and the Courtiers to themſelues, bidding them farewell for euer. Thinking with my ſelfe, that thoſe that came from *Peru*, fluſh with their gold and ſiluer, would proue a great deale more profitable for vs. And ſo we went quietly along to *Seuill*.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *and his Wife come to* Seuill ; *Hee findes his Mother to be now ſomewhat ancient , and well ſtricken in yeeres. His Wife gets her away to* Italy *with one of the Captaines of the Gallies , leauing him alone to himſelfe, and exceeding poore. Where-vpon, he fals to his old trade of theeuing.*

FOr that they, who eſcape out of ſome great danger, as oft as they thinke there-vpon, it ſeemeth ſtill vnto them, that they are yet ſcarce free from the perill they were in ; I did often call my life to remembrance , but neuer to amendment; and more particularly, that of my late lewd courſes, the bad eſtate wherein I found my ſelfe, the little honour that I had to mine owne credit, and the ſmall , or no reſpect at all which I bare towards my God, all the while that my feete walked in theſe euill ſteps. I beganne to wonder at my ſelfe that I vvas become ſuch a beaſt, as amongſt men, none could be greater. For none of all thoſe, that are created on earth, would euer haue permitted that which I did winke at ; making my ſelfe a liuing , out of my wiues lewd and filthy gaine, putting her into the occaſion of ſinning , giuing her tacit licence to trade, nay, expreſſely commanding her to turne Whore: And which is as bad, (if not worſe then all the reſt) that I ſhould require from her , my food, my raiment, and the maintaining of my houſe , whileſt I my ſelfe ledde an idle kinde of life, holding (like the ſluggard) my thumbs vnder my girdle. It is a fearefull and terrible thing , that I ſhould thinke my ſelfe to be an honeſt man, and to haue honour in mee, being ſo farre from it, and ſo depriued of true good. That for to haue crownes to play , I ſhould crowne my ſelfe with infamy ; and that by not vſing theſe armes of mine , to labour for my liuing, I ſhould blot thoſe Armes of my Anceſtors, and the nobleneſſe of that houſe, whereof I was deſcended ; Loſing that , which is one of the hardeſt things to be gotten : to wit, a good name, and opinion in the world; That I ſhould prophane ſo holy a Miſterie ; That I ſhould vſe it in that ill and vile manner, that being I ſhould haue made it to ſerue as a meanes of my ſaluation, I made it the high-way to bring mee to hell, and onely for food and apparell, to nouriſh, and cloath this miſerable carkaſſe; That I ſhould oppoſe my ſelfe to ſuch perill, when as behinde my backe , and euen face to face , they might haue put an affront vpon mee , obliging mee thereby rather to loſe my life , then to indure ſuch diſhonour ; That a man ſhould not be able to do more then he can do; that he ſhould know it, and diſſemble it, either out of his too much loue, or his too much griefe, or that he may not proclaime himſelfe a Cuckold to the world: I do not ſo much wonder at this. And this may not onely not be a Vice, but a Vertue, and a goodneſſe , in caſe hee conſent not there-vnto, nor affoord any fauour or entrance into it. But to doe as I did, who did not onely take pleaſure therein, but as if it had been neceſſary for mee ſo to doe, did (as they ſay) caſt my Cloake ouer it ; I doe not well know, whether I were blind, or mad, or bewitcht , that I did not conſider better there-vpon ; or if I did, that I did not vſe ſome good remedie againſt it, but did further it all that I could. O foole , foole that I was ! and giue me leaue heere to be-foole my ſelfe a thouſand times, that I was ſo wretchleſſe as I was ; that I did not ſo much as once dreame on this miſchiefe, and ſeeke to preuent it ; knowing , how incompatible companions theſe

Guzman diſcourſeth of thoſe Wittols , that willingly make their Wiues turne Whores.

theſe two are, *honra, y muger guitarrera*; *Honeſtie*, and a woman that playes and ſings to her Inſtrument; and that I did not weigh, what hurt it had done others, and that it might likewiſe ruine her and me, beſides the diſhonour that muſt thereby redound to vs both. Men, for to oblige their Miſtreſſes vnto them, are wont to beſtow muſicke on them vnder their windowes, and to ſing vnto them in the ſtreetes; but my Wife was ſuch a one, that ſhee made theſe men to fall in loue with her, by going abroad to ſing and play at their houſes. And it is a cleere caſe, that ſuch graces are appetible in their owne nature, and much deſired.

Muſicke in a Woman, a bewitching thing.

Now then, if men were inuited, nay, incited there-vnto, why ſhould they not deſire, and ſeek after my Wife? What wit or iudgement hath that man in the world, who wil make ſhow of his treaſure to theeues? What quiet ſleepes can hee take? with what eaſe can hee reſt, liuing (as hee cannot chooſe) in in a continuall feare of being robb'd? How was it poſsible, that I ſhould be ſuch an Aſſe, that ſince I had giuen my ſelfe ouer to ſuch ſhame and reproach, which haply might be occaſioned by my too much weakeneſſe, I ſhould (for mine owne priuate intereſt) incurre another farre greater? To wit, to fall in company, into the commendation of my Wife, extolling to the skies, in the preſence of thoſe that pretended loue vnto her, thoſe louely qualities, and commendable parts that were in her, intreating alſo her, nay, ſometimes commanding her, that ſhee ſhould diſcouer and make ſhow of ſome illicit part of her perſon, as her breſt, armes, feet, and likewiſe (but I will heere hold my peace for ſhame, for I bluſh to thinke on it) that they might ſee whether her fleſh were fat, plumpe, and ſoft; white, browne, or ruddy? So that all grew worſe and worſe with me. For that which heretofore I did hate and abhorre with my heart, and was as it were a death vnto me to indure it, was now by vſe and cuſtome become eaſie and familiar vnto me, and I grew at laſt to take great delight in it. That I ſhould conſent, that ſhe ſhould receiue Viſits, and that I my ſelfe ſhould bring Cuſtomers to my houſe, and leauing them with her, ſhould get mee out of doores, and walke abroad; and aboue all, that I ſhould faine ſimplicitie, and make my ſelfe ignorant, as if there were no ſuch matter in the winde; and that I ſhould thinke withall, that they did verily beleeue, that this was a good and lawfull thing, being indeed a moſt depraued and wicked Act? That I ſhould ſet her a-worke to ſollicite Commiſsions, and to follow buſineſſes at ſuch great Miniſters houſes, as had a minde vnto her, and deſired nothing more, then that ſhee ſhould come vnto them, and that I ſhould make, as if I knew nothing, ſo ſlight reckoning of that infamie, which returning with them, or without them, ſhe brought home with her? That they making her ſo many feaſts and banquets, giuing her ſo many Iewels, ſo many Crownes, and ſo many coſtly Gownes, that they could thinke, that I ſhould beleeue, that they beſtow'd all theſe things vpon her for niſles in a bagge, for meere ſmoke, for her faire lookes, for very pure loue, and honeſt affection, ſimply and plainely, without any doubling, or other by-pretenſion? What can I anſwere for my ſelfe? Or what can bee expected from mee, who not onely gaue way therevnto, but did alſo worke for her to runne that courſe? That fellow had good reaſon to ſay that he did, who ſeeing how well I began to thriue in *Madrid*, himſelfe being then in priſon, hee ſaid in the preſence of my ſelfe, and others. You ſee in what caſe I am heere; it is now ſome three yeeres ſince that I was apprehended for a Thiefe, a Forger, an Adulterer, a Slanderer, a Murderer, and a thouſand other crimes, which they laid to my charge; all which being heaped vpon mee, I ſinke vnder the burthen of them, and am ready to periſh for want of food: whereas *Señor Guzman*, onely by giuing his Wife leaue to take her liberty, liues free, takes his eaſe, and growes rich.

What a Priſoner ſaid to Guzman.

What think'ſt thou, could I think, when I heard this? O accurſed riches, accurſed

curſed eaſe, accurſed freedome, and accurſed alſo bee that day, wherein I conſented to any ſuch thing, whether it were for loue, neceſsitie, fauour of great Perſons, or any other intereſt of mine owne. But becauſe the end may be knowne, which that man muſt come to, who gaines by ſuch vngodly meanes, and that ye may ſee the vnfortunate ſucceſſe of ſuch baſe delights and pleaſures, I will recount my mis-fortunes vnto you, and intertaine you with the diſcourſe of my ſharpe and bitter life, which was as ill beſtowed on mee, as it was ill imployed by me.

Guzman *leaues* Madrid, *and goes for* Seuill.

We traueld to *Seuill* (as they ſay) *al paſſo del buey*: with the foot (*a*) of an Oxe; That is, faire and ſoftly, and with a great deale of leiſure. For my Wife was afraid of the iogging of the Coach, leaſt it ſhould make her little foyſting-Dogge ſicke, which ſhe carried along with her in her lap, in which was all her happineſſe, it was her onely iewell, and her deareſt delight. For one of theſe fizzling-curres is a maine piece of a Ladies Eſſence, and the proper paſsion of a Gentle-woman. Nor can they any more goe without them, then a Phyſician without his Gloues and his Ring, an Apothecarie without a Cheſſe-boord, a Barber without a Gitterne, a Miller without a Kit, or a Spaniſh *Don*, without a Tooth-pick.

(*a*) *Prouerb.* Al paſſo del buey.

The fooliſh conceits, which vaine men flatter themſelues withall.

When we were come thither, out of the deſire that we had to draw profit from thoſe that returned from *Peru*, and to ſee our houſe to become ſuch another, as the Contractation houſe for the *Indies*; whither & from whence, barres of gold and ſiluer dayly come, and goe; and that it might bee all built of Plate, and pau'd with Gold; mee thought it ſeemed vnto mee, that I ſaw them already entring in at my doores, their backes bowing vnder them with the burthen of their Barres, ſo maſsie is that kinde of metall; and that their ſtrong-ſowne pockets were ready to rip and rend in ſunder, with the weight of their double Piſtolets, and Royals of eight, and all to offer them vp to that their Idol, my Wife.

With this golden conceit, and glorious imagination, I ſought to reuenge my ſelfe vpon him that had baniſht vs the Court; and ſaid with my ſelfe; O thou Traytor; Thou thought'ſt to put a tricke vpon mee; but if any bee coozen'd, it is thy ſelfe; for all fell out to vs for the beſt. The affront that thou offered'ſt me, hath lighted on thine owne head. I am now comming into the Country of *Cucaña*, or the Land of *Xauxa*, where is Gods plenty of all things, and where the ſtreetes are ſtrowed with Siluer, where wee ſhall be no ſooner arriued, but they ſhall come forth to receiue vs with a rich Canopy of State, where we ſhall all liue like Kings.

With theſe, and the like thoughts, I call'd to remembrance, whatſoeuer had ſucceeded there vnto me, in that my firſt departure from *Seuill*. S. *Lazaro* his Church would not out of my minde; I ſaw the Fountaine where I drunke; the Stone, whereon I ſlept in the Church-Porch; the ſteppes, by which I went vp and downe; I ſaw his Sacred Temple, and that holy Chappell, where I ſo deuoutly ſaid my prayers; And though I was farre off from it, I ſaluted the Patron thereof in this manner:

O glorious Saint; when I tooke my leaue of thee, I went away with teares afoot, poore, all alone, and a child. Now I returne to ſee thee rich, attended, merry, and a married man.

Touching theſe things, ſee the firſt Part, Chap. 3. & 5.

Then was repreſented vnto me from the very beginning all the diſcourſe of my life, ripping it vp euen to that very inſtant. I remembred my ſelfe of my Hoſteſſe that kept a victualing houſe by the High-way ſide, and of the Inne, where they gaue me that good froyze of Egges, and the Muleter of *Cantillana*; but I had now left that on the right hand. I entred by that Royall Cauſey, we turn'd about by the Field, rounding the Citie, till we came to the Inne where our Carts were, where, of neceſsitie my people were to ſtay; And for that all thoſe were ſteps which I had often troden, when I was a boy,

boy,& that place was wel known vnto me, becauſe I was there bred & born, my bloud began to riſe as cheerefully, as if I had ſeene mine owne Mother. We lodged there that night, but not very well. But in the morning I roſe vp with the Sun,for to ſeeke out a new Lodging,and to free my goods from that *Magazine*, as alſo to make inquirie, if any one could tell me tidings of my Mother. But for all the good diligence therein vſed by me, all was to no end; I could heare no newes of her, no,not a word. I thought I ſhould haue found all things as I left them; but they were ſo farre from being in *ſtatu, quo priùs*, in the ſame caſe, wherein they were before, that there was not ſo much as a ſhadow, or any memoriall thereof remaining. For ſome were altered, others abſent, and moſt of them dead, inſomuch that there was ſcarce one ſtone left vpon another, whereby a man might be able to ſay; This is ſtill the ſame *Seuill*. I forbore for the preſent to make any farther ſearch after her, deferring it till ſome fitter ſeaſon, in regard of the great haſte that I had at that time to accommodate my ſelfe; and going about to ſee how I could fit my ſelfe, I might perceiue a bill, newly ſet vp ouer the doore of a certaine houſe, that was to be let in the (a) *Barrios* of *St. Bartholmew*, being within the precincts of the ſaid Pariſh. I made meanes to ſee it, I viewd it, I lik't it then well, I hyred it for ſome moneths, and paying my Rent before-hand, I caus'd all my ſtuffe to be carryed thither.

(a) *A Ward. A libertie. A ſtreet. A neighbourhood.*

We reſted our ſelues ſome two dayes, eating and ſleeping our fill, till my *Grace* began to thinke with her ſelfe, that it was not fit, that ſhe ſhould come to ſo noble a Citie as that was, and ſo much famouſed thoro wout the whole world, to mue her ſelfe vp within doore, & not once offer to walke abroad. I got me to the (b) *Gradas*; for her, I had hyred a Squire, to vſher her thorow the ſtreets, for that theſe kinde of people are beſt acquainted with them; and that ſhe might goe ſee thoſe things, that ſhe had moſt minde to, without rouing vp and downe at randome, or loſing of her ſelfe, or without aſking which was the way to ſuch, or ſuch a place. And ſo for fifteene dayes together, ſhe neuer folded vp her Mantle. For euery morning and euening, ſhe duly all that while walked abroad, and was neuer weary, nor fully ſatisfied with ſeeing ſuch Greatneſſes, as did offer themſelues euery where to her view. For albeit, although that ſhe was in *Madrid*, ſhe liked it very well,and ſo well, that ſhe then thought, that that Court had the aduantage of all other habitations of the world for it's State and Maieſtie, the greatneſſe and great number of their Dukes, Marqueſſes, Condes, and other *Titulados*, for it's concourſe of Embaſſadours from all forraine parts. for the good Trading, that is in it, for their temperate carriage, their diſcretion in generall, and their libertie without compariſon, for the earth affords not a freer place to liue in: Yet ſhe found in *Seuill*, the ſauour of a Citie, another I know not what, other Greatneſſes, though not in the ſame qualitie, for there wanted Kings there to keepe their Courts, nor ſo many *Grandes* and men of Title, at leaſt in quantitie; yet had they great ſtore of wealth amongſt them,and were in no leſſe eſteeme; for ſiluer was there as common amongſt the vulgar ſort, as Copper money in other places, and they made ſuch ſmall reckning of it, that they ſpent it farre more freely.

(b) Gradas de Seuilla. *A place like our Exchange in London,where men meet to walke, & talke.*

Within a few dayes after we came thither, Lent was come,and we ſaw the Holy Weeke in that manner, as it is there ſolemnized, wee ſaw the liberall almes that were there, and at that time beſtowed on the poore, the ſtore of Waxe which was ſpent in Taper-lights. My wife was ſtrooken with wonder, and as a woman beſides her ſelfe, not well imagining how this could poſsibly be: ſo farre did it out-ſtrip in workes, that which had beene vttered of it in words.

Now in this meane time, which was not long after my arriuall in this Citie, I had,by the great care that I had taken, and by ſome circumſtances, got

to

to the knowledge of my mother, and if I may ſo ſay, had found her out by the tracke of her bloud. For my wife entring into ſpeech with ſome other faire Gentle-women, that were of her acquaintance, as they were diſcourſing of diuers things, falling by the way vpon her, ſhe came to know, that ſhee kept company with a handſome young Wench, to whom ſhe was ſuſpected to be Mother, for the good vſage, wherewith ſhe treated her, and for the due reſpect which ſhe bare vnto her. But in truth it was not ſo; for ſhee had no other childe but my ſelfe. But the true cauſe thereof only was this; that ſeeing ſhe was left thus all alone, poore, and growing now old, ſhe had bred her vp of a little Girle, to doe her ſeruice hereafter, whom ſhe now made profit of, whereby they made a ſhift to liue as well as they could. I, when I had notice of her, was very inſtant with her, to haue her come liue with mee; but I could not winne her to it, being wondrous loth to leaue this young Wench, as well for that ſhe had bred her vp; as alſo, for that ſhe was vnwilling to haue any difference with a daughter in Law, which, her diſcretion told her, could not well be auoyded. And as oft as I intreated her thereunto, ſhe would ſtill anſwer me, (a) *Que dos tocas en vn fuego, nunca ençienden lumbre à derechas.* That two white Kerchiefs in one Kitchen, did neuer yet make good fire: Themſelues being apter to kindle one another, then to kindle it. For the ſorrow is not ſo great which a woman ſuffers, when ſhe liues alone, by, and of her ſelfe, as is the torment which ſhe indureth, when ſhe is inforced to keepe Company contrary to her liking. And ſeeing that there was neuer yet any daughter in Law, that could liue peaceably and louingly with her Mother in Law, ſhe was of the minde, that my wife would liue more merrily alone by her ſelfe with me, and reſt better contented with it, then if ſhe ſhould liue with her. But in the end, the loue of a ſonne preuailed ſo farre with her, that I had perſwaded her to yeeld to my deſire. Shee was my Mother, I deſired to cheriſh her, and to make much of her, and that ſhe might now take her eaſe in her old age. For albeit to mee ſhe did ſtill repreſent her ſelfe with the ſelfe-ſame beauty, and the ſame freſhneſſe of colour, and cleareneſſe of skinne, with the which I left her, when I parted from her; yet was ſhe now ſo quite altered from that ſhee was, that it vvas hard to ſay, This is ſhee. I found her leane, old, tawny, toothleſſe, her face (like an old Apple-*Iohn*) all ſhriueled, and altogether another kinde of creature. I ſaw in her the ruines of Time; and how yeeres conſume euery thing. Where-vpon, turning my ſelfe about to my Wife, and looking wiſtly vpon her, I told her; This faire face of thine muſt run the like Fortune one day; beauty will not laſt for euer: And if at any time a woman chance to eſcape that deformitie, which age layeth vpon her; yet at leaſt ſhee muſt fall at laſt into the hands of death, which will dis-figure euen the yongeſt body, and claw all the fleſh from the bones. I did figure the like vnto my ſelfe. But as well in this, as in all other thoſe good conſiderations, which had offred themſelues vnto me, I did iuſt as he doth, who comes to drinke in an Inne, that ſtands in the High-way, who as ſoone as he has drunke, ſets downe the glaſſe, and goes his way. They ſtayd but a little while with mee; I kept them ſtill going, but neuer proffer'd them a chaire to ſit downe and reſt themſelues; for thoſe that I had in my houſe, were occupied and taken vp by Appetite, and Senſualitie. At my earneſt intreatie, the Mother and Daughter in Law came to houſe together. My Mother, you knew her well inough before, though not by ſight, yet by report, and thoſe famous things you had heard of her. She was able to ouer-maſter the beſt of them, not any of them all that could goe beyond her for her wit, and her vnderſtanding; as well becauſe theſe things were ſo naturally and truely her owne; as alſo, for that ſhee had beene ſchooled and trained vp in them; and aboue all, hauing the aduantage of ſo many yeeres experience.

Guzman heares newes of his Mother, and how ſhe got her liuing.

Prouerb.
(a) Dos tocas en vn fuego, nunca ençienden lumbre à derechas.

A mother in Law, and a daughter in Law, ſeldome agree well together.

Beauties frailty.

Guzman *vnſettled in his good reſolutions.*

See the firſt booke the firſt Part. Chap. 1. & 2.

Shee gaue my wife very good counſell, aduiſing her, that ſhe ſhould not admit into her company the young men of that ſtreet wherein ſhe dwelt, but (like the Fox) ſhould fetch her prey farther off; for beſides the infamie and diſ-honour that ſhe ſhould get thereby, ſhe told her; that they are *Como agua de por San Iuan*; (a) *quitan el prouecho, y ellos no lo dan*; Like vnto your Mid-ſummer raine, which quits all profit, and yeelds no gaine. They will rather draw from you, then bring any benefit to you. They dine and ſup ſtill at home, and when they know not what to doe, or how otherwiſe to beſtow their time, then will they come to our houſe, and looke to be entertained by vs in good conuerſation; there will they ſtay all that euening; *Tres neçios en plata*, (b) *y vn majadero en menudos*; Three fooles in one diſh, and a block-head cut out in Sippets. Hauing no other ground for their acquaintance, but this weake foundation, that they are (forſooth) of the ſame ſtreet or Pariſh, wherein you dwell.

The inſtructions of the Mother in Law, to her daughter in Law. Prouerb.

(a) Aquas de por San Iuan; quitan el prouecho, y no lo dan.

Prouerb.

(b) Tres neçios en plata, y vn majadero en menudos.

Of your Court Pages, your Students at Law, and your Vniuerſitie young Frie, ſhe read the like Lecture vnto her; telling her, that they were like vnto Crowes, which would ſmell out fleſh a farre off, and were good for nothing elſe but to pecke at it, and when they had done, get them gone.

Pages. Students. Schollers.

Shee wiſht her to ſet a Croſſe vpon her doore, to keepe all married men out; for, from no enemie that ſhe had, could ſhe receiue greater harme. For wiues that are iealous, commit a thouſand outrages, and cauſe millions of inconueniences to come vpon you. And when they cannot come to miſ-chiefe you, and worke their will vpon you themſelues (for not one amongſt a thouſand of them, but will ſcratch out your eyes, if ſhee doe but imagine, you draw the cuſtome from their Mill) they will get them to this, or that Iudge, and with foure teares, two ſighes, one wry mouth, and a wringing of the hands, they will put all the Towne in an vprore, and vtterly ouerthrow your credit. In a word, ſhe gaue in this kinde, many true, wholſome, and ſound Inſtructions, as one that from the very wombe of her Mother, proceeded Doctreſſe in her Art, had all her Leſſons that ſhe had learn'd, at her fingers ends, and knew how to make vſe of them. She carried her alwayes along with her, whither-ſoeuer ſhe went, omitting no ſtation, that ſhe did not goe vnto; no Feaſt, that ſhe did not viſit, nor no ſtreet, that ſhe did not walke thorow.

Married men. Iealous wiues, their condition.

When then they came home, they would one while returne with Taffel-gentles, amorous Knights, like *Amadis de Gaule*, that would eaſily be man'd, and quickly brought to ſtoope to the Lure; and other-whiles with fierce Maſtiffes, roaring Boyes, and ruffian-like Swaggerers, ſuch as would ſweare and drinke, and throw the houſe out at the Windowes; And out of theſe my Mother did cull, and picke out ſuch, as ſhe thought would make moſt for our profit: for, hauing traded ſo long as ſhe had done in that Countrie, ſhee knew which tracke to take, there was not that path, which ſhe had not beaten; nor that thing which ſhe did not know; and knowing all, ſhe knew beſt how to goe beyond them all.

Kinde Louers. Rough hewne Hackſters.

For your beardleſſe yong Gallants, and Sattin-cheekt boyes, ſhee would not haue her to haue any thing to do with them; nor to be beholding to them for ſo much as a ſticke of fire, which is a common courteſie betwixt neighbour and neighbour. For ſuch as theſe will not ſticke to tell you, that their penny is as good ſiluer as yours; their Sugar-pellets, are as ſweet as your Conſerues; that their gay cloathes, their curl'd Locks, and ſtrong Perfumes, deſerue your perſon, and that you ſhould kindely (without any other retaliation) entertaine their loue: And they will alſo thinke (being well conceited of themſelues) that you ſhould rather woo them, then they you; and that you ſhould make them a curt'ſie, and cry, I thanke you Sir. She tooke a great deale of paines with her in theſe, and the like; but aboue all, ſhee bid her take

Young Gallants.

take heed, that ſhe held no commerce or correſpondence with thoſe of the Place of *San Franciſco*, and that ſhe ſhould be áfraid how ſhe did meddle with them; for if ſhe once begin to haue any thing to doe with your Officers of the Courts of Iuſtice; as your Clerkes, and Regiſters, the whole rabble of them will runne in vpon you, euen to thoſe that write at the Deske, and will copie you out a ſheete for a groat. And being they follow the Law, they thinke, that all that is yours, is theirs, and that of right it belongs vnto them. For if you once fall into their hands, there is no ſcaping from them; for either by faire meanes, or by foule; by intreaties, or by threatnings, being ſo abſolute, and ſo diſſolute, as they are, (I meane ſome of them) they exerciſe more Tyrannies, and more cruelties, then *Totila*, or *Dionyſius*, as if there were not a God for them, as well as for other folkes.

Lawyers and their Clerkes.

The Fleete was not come; the Citie was in great want; their purſes were ſhut, and our mouthes open; and we were ready to dye for hunger. We fell a ſelling, and then a eating; and which was worſe, we paid a great rent, and had little commings in. All went ill with vs, wee had brawling and ſcolding at home, and the poore Maid that was in our houſe, ſhe paid for it; off goes her Kerchiefe, and with it her haire, tugging her thereby vpon euery light or ſlight occaſion, keeping a great deale of ſtirre about toyes and trifles, that were not worth the talking of. There was not that Rogue, or baſe Raſkall, but would dare to doe vs wrong, and not ſticke to gybe and Fleare at vs; one ſaluting mee in ſcorne, with the ſtile, of *Señor Don Fulano*, and another with that of *Don Cutano*. My Wife liu'd in a continuall feare, and was now growne weary, and ſicke of the Mother-in-Law; For in regard that with me, ſhee had liu'd ſo long at her owne libertie, and had taken ſo much head, and now finding her ſelfe ſome-what reſtrain'd of it, and that ſhe could no longer bee Miſtreſſe of her owne will; and that if the one did but ſpeake, the other would begin to grumble; of euery gnat, they made a Cammell; and of Mole-hils, Mountaines. And ſuch a cruell ſtorme & tempeſt would ariſe between them, that becauſe I would not be Stickler betweene them, or ſeeme to take one part more then another, I would take my Cloake, and throwing it on my ſhoulders, when I ſaw theſe *Dolfines* once begin to play aboue water, and hye me (with all the haſte I could) out of the houſe, and get mee abroad, leauing them together by the eares, tugging one anothers head-geare off; fight Dogge, fight Beare, take them off who would, for mee. For I would haue nothing to doe with them.

Prouerb. Don Fulano, y Cutano: *Words of ſcorne, men not deigning to call vs by our owne name. Intimating that we are baſe fellowes, and not worthy to be made any reckoning of.*

Couarruuias. *The Mother-in-Law, and Daughter in Law, fall together by the eares.*

My Wife hereat was ſo mad, and grew ſo angry with me, that I would not ſhew my ſelfe on her ſide, that by little and little ſhe grew to hate mee; that whether it were right or wrong, ſhe thought it fit, that Man and Wife, ſeeing God had ioyn'd vs together, we ſhould cleaue each to other; or whether with, or without reaſon, I had great reaſon to take her part againſt my Mother: but that on the other ſide I held not to be ſo lawfull.

Guzmans *wife begins to hate her husband.*

Wherevpon her hate grew to that height, and ſhe did ſo abhorre my company, that meeting with an occaſion by meanes of a Captaine of the Gallies of *Naples*, that lay there in the rode, ſhe exchanged my loue for his. And gathering all the money together ſhe was able to make, and thoſe Iewels of Gold and Siluer, which we were ſtored with at that time, ſhe hoyſed ſayle, and went for *Italy*, I not knowing then for the preſent, what was become of her.

Guzmans *wife goes away with a Captaine of the* Neapolitane *Gallies.*

I haue heard it ſpoken, That he is a Mad-man, or a Foole, that will ſeeke after his Wife, when ſhe is once gone. And that a man ſhould make a golden (*a*) Bridge, for a flying enemy: And be glad, that he can be ſo rid of him.

I thought with my ſelfe, That I ſhould better be (*b*) alone, then ill accompanied. For, although it be true, that I gaue way to all her deſires, and ſo had all my maintenance by that meanes; whereas otherwiſe I ſhould haue wanted

(*a*) *Prou.* Al enemigo, hazer la puente de plata, por donde huyeſſe.

(*b*) *Prouerb.* Mejor ſolo, que mal acompañado.

ted meat to put in my mouth; and cloathes, to put on my backe; yet I grew weary of it, becauſe euery one had one fling or other at me.

The force of vſe.

See the force of vſe; for being that I was alwayes bred vp to baſeneſſe, and was euer accuſtomed to heare affronts, when I was a child, and afterwards when I grew ſome-what bigger, I could the better beare them, when I came to be a man.

My Wife was gone from me, and therein ſhe did me a fauour; for beſides that I was now free from that obligation of giuing way, that ſhe ſhould leade that kinde of life, which ſhe did; I was likewiſe free from that dayly ſinne, which might haue layen vpon my conſcience; For I did not caſt her off; but ſhe for to ſatisfie her owne wilfull humour, abſented her ſelfe from me. And it was impoſsible, that I ſhould follow her, and hunt her out, for the hazzard that I ſhould runne, if I ſhould returne backe againe into *Italy*. Theſe difficulties therefore offering themſelues vnto me, I ledde a retyred life with my Mother. And not hauing where-withall handſomely to maintaine our ſelues, we fell a ſelling ſuch houſhold-ſtuffe as was left. But there beeing more dayes in the yeere, then wee had implements in the houſe, all was gone within a very ſhort time. Saint *Iohn*, (a) & *Corpus Chriſti*, hapned to me all on a day. I had now brought both ends together: I wanted goods to ſell, and money to buy. I found my ſelfe out of reparations, not hauing where-withall to cloath my backe, nor to feede my belly; nor any thing elſe, whereby to gaine a penny, vnleſſe I ſhould fall againe to my old trade. I got mee forth a nights into thoſe ſtreetes, where there were diuers turnings, or croſſe-wayes, and when I had made my purchaſe, I would come home laden with two or three Cloakes, ſuch as I could compaſſe with leaſt trouble, and perill to my perſon.

Guzman ſels all he hath.

(a) *Proueb.* San Iuan, y Corpus Chriſti, cayeron para mi, en Vn dia.

Guzman fals to ſtealing of Cloakes.

The next morning, one of theſe two courſes I tooke with them, that I turn'd them in a trice either into Mandillians, Doublets, and Hoſe, altering the propertie of them, or elſe ridde my hands otherwiſe of them as handſomely as I could. But commonly when I had chang'd the faſhion of them, in the duske of the Euening I would get me vnto the *Gradas*, and there barter them away, either for other Ware, or ready money, as others did.

His Mother and he part.

This kinde of trading my Mother was not ſo well pleaſ'd with, ſhee did not like well of it; as well, for that ſhe had neuer vſ'd it in all her life; as alſo, for that ſhe would not willingly now in her old Age, runne the hazzard of ſo foule an affront.

She followes her o'd courſe; and he his.

Where-vpon, ſhee reſolued with her ſelfe, once more to open ſhop, and ſee what good ſhe could doe by her old Trade; ſhee, and the young Wench, (which ſhe liu'd withall before) being agreed to become partners, and equally to ſhare all gaines betweene them. O how glad was ſhee, when ſhee ſaw my Mother come within her doores, how did ſhe hugge and imbrace her, as if ſhee had brought in the *Indies* with her; or were the onely Phyſician to recouer the ſicke and decayed eſtate of her low-brought fortunes, hauing no ſuch vtterance of her Ware, nor nothing the like doings now, as when ſhee liu'd with her! I (my Mother being now gone from mee) quickly brought my ſelfe acquainted with ſome other good fellowes, with whom I might merrily paſſe my life, till fortune ſhould change, and the times grow better. Theſe my Camerades, I fitted them with inuention, plotted their buſineſſes for them, aſsiſted them in all occaſions with my perſon, went along with them to the Townes and Villages neere adioyning. And whatſoeuer elſe we did chance to light vpon by the way, wee did neuer likely miſſe, in ſome of the backe Courts belonging to their houſes, a good Buck of Cloathes, which together with their Flasket, wee made to vaniſh and diſ-appeare in an inſtant.

We had in the Suburbs, and the *Triana*, certaine knowne houſes, places

Theeues, & their cunning carriage.

of purpoſe for receit, where, without entring into the Citie, wee did pitch our Pikes, and make a Stand. There did we dry our cloathes, and being cleane waſht, and handſomely folded vp, by little and little wee conuay'd them into the Citie, one while through the gates, another while ouer the walles, after mid-night was paſt, when the Iuſtice had done walking the Round, and was retyred home. For thoſe garments of Cloth and of Silke, which by our induſtrie we had purloyned heere and there, as we could come to lay hands on them, we had knowne Brokers for them, to whom we ſold them at a reaſonable good price, loſing little or nothing of what they were worth, which being once deliuered vp into their hands, they well knew that they would paſſe for currant, as goods that had beene gotten in a iuſt warre, and were their crafts-maſters in altering the forme and faſhion of them, to the end that they might not be knowne, for feare of after-claps. For we had no other obligation, but to giue them good wares for their money, dry, and well-conditioned, putting it within the doores of their houſes free from taxe and tallage, and all other paiments, leauing them to bee freely inioyed by them. Your cleane white linnen had quicke diſpatch, in regard of the good conueniencie that was offered vs to come eaſily by it; as alſo for that it was very good chaffer, to trafficke away with ſtrangers. And in this manner did we maintaine our ſelues brauely, and went well & cleere away with it.

One time (I remember) in the Winter, there was ſuch a continued raine without intermiſsion, that none did dare to goe out of doores; ſo that the owners of thoſe houſes, keeping themſelues within, all commoditie of viſiting them was taken away from vs; whereby money beganne to grow ſcant with vs. It was my hap at that time, as I was paſsing along through a certaine ſtreet, that I eſpide all the fore-part of a houſe quite falne downe to the ground. I askt whoſe houſe that was? They told mee it was a Gentle-womans that was a Widdow. I vvent, and ſought her out, and deſired her, That ſeeing there was no body dwelt in her houſe, ſhe would giue mee leaue to goe in, and lodge there, promiſing her to looke carefully vnto it. She (good Woman) being afraid leſt the whole houſe ſhould come tumbling downe about my eares, told mee; That I vvere beſt take heed vvhat I did, leaſt the houſe ſhould chance to fall. As for that (I anſwered againe, it made no great matter, for that there was an vpper roome (which as I conceiu'd) was ſtrong, and ſure inough, where-into I might ſafely retire my ſelfe: telling her beſides; That ſuch as were poore (as I was) had no cauſe of feare, or loſſe; life being to them rather a burthen, then otherwiſe; and was the thing, which of all other, they could beſt ſpare. Where-vpon, very willingly ſhe gaue me leaue ſo to doe. And I preſently, without any more adoe, got mee in, and within ſome foure dayes after, there was not a doore, which I had not vnhindged, nor a locke, which I had not ripped off.

Guzman robs a Widdow of her Tyle-ſtones; and how?

The next day after, I got me into the ſtreet of *San Saluador*, and there I cauſ'd it to bee openly cry'de at the Croſſe, that whoſoeuer vvould buy foure or fiue thouſand Tyle-ſtones, he ſhould repaire vnto me; for I had authority to ſell them vnto them. At that time, there was not a Tyle to be got in all the whole Towne for any money. Anon after came poſting vnto mee three or foure Maſons and Brick-layers, and happy was he that could come firſt, all of them earneſtly ſtriuing, which of them ſhould haue the bargaine out of each others hands, and were ready to goe together by the eares about it.

Well, they came to agreement with mee for fiue *Maraudis* a Tyle; and bringing them to the houſe, I made ſhow of them vnto them; telling them that I was the *Mayor-domo*, or Steward of the houſe, and that my Miſtreſſe was minded to pull it quite downe to the ground, and build it all new after another manner. Beſides theſe of mine, which I made my ſelfe Maſter of for the

the time, I ſhewd them others of our next neighbours, ioyning houſe to houſe with vs, being ſo neere the other, as they ſeemed to be fellowes, which likewiſe they were to haue away with them. They gaue me ſix hundred Royals in good ready coyne, vpon condition, that I ſhould make vp my tale of Tyles, to the full number of fiue thouſand; telling me, that the next day they would come and fetch them away.

When I had my money, I haſted away to the Miſtreſſe of the houſe, and ſaid vnto her; that it was great pittie, that ſhe had giuen leaue to her *Mayor-domo*, to make ſale of all the doores, and tyles that couered her houſes. Whereupon ſhe grew into a great rage, and kept a foule coyle about it, ſaying, She had no *Mayor-domo*, nor yet knew, who had any ſuch authoritie to doe it. Thereupon I told her; That your Worſhip then may know, who it is that takes this vpon him; I haue beene already commanded to get me out of the houſe, and that I muſt haue nothing to doe there any more. Wherefore I muſt be inforced to looke out a lodging elſe-where. For to morrow very early, thoſe that haue bought the Tyles, will come to carry them away. Your Worſhip may be pleaſed to ſend ſome body thither, or to take the paines to goe your ſelfe, and then you ſhall ſee what hath paſſed. This ſaid, I tooke my leaue of her; and the next day following, ſtanding aloofe off, leaning againſt the corner of a Wall, I kept my ſelfe cloſe, to ſee the ſtirre that would bee about this buſineſſe; and I can aſſure you, it was ſport alone, and was able to make as many as beheld it, to breake their hearts with laughing, to ſee how buſie the Tylers were, in vntyling the houſe, and how the poore Gentlewoman beſtirr'd her ſelfe, to defend her owne. In concluſion, ſhee exhibited a Complaint againſt the poore Tyler, and did not only take away the Tyles from him, but alſo made him pay the price of her doores and lockes. This caus'd me for ſome few dayes to keepe my ſelfe cloſe within doores, hauing a good fire, and laughing in my ſleeue, till the ſtorme was ouer-paſt, and that they had giuen ouer looking after me.

One day, there was a great feaſt in *San Auguſtin*; and becauſe ſuch kinde of meetings made for vs, I got me thither. Where I perceiu'd, that a Gentleman had good ſtore of money looſe in his left Pocket, on that ſide where his Rapyer hung. Now, when he came into a place, where there was a great preſſe of people, and that there was much thruſting and crowding one another, I did gently lift vp his Hangers, and thruſting in my hand, did nimbly diue to the bottome, letting not ſo much as one Royall eſcape my fingers. But the vnquiet motion of thoſe that were about me, hindred my hand, being ſo full as it was, to carry it away cleanly, by meanes whereof a great deale of it fell downe vpon the ground. And for that the Cloyſter was pau'd, it made a great gingling; With that I let all goe, and putting my hand into my Pocket, in a trice I tooke out my Handkerchiefe, and crying to the people, that they would for Gods ſake giue backe, and make a little roome, for that in pulling forth my Handkerchiefe, I had ſhed all my money. All very kindely did as I deſired them; and the good honeſt Gentleman, whom I had thus robd, moued out of charity, hearing the pittious moane that I made, crying out, that I was with theſe moneys to pay my Merchant, ſtooped downe with me to the ground, and holpe me to gather it vp, till I had all to the laſt Royall. I gaue him thankes for his paines, and getting out of the throng, I went home well contented. This was that Knife that cut my throat; this poore little theft, was my finall perdition and vtter vndoing; being the laſt that I did, and for the which I paid dearer then all the reſt. For albeit heretofore I had beene taken in the like manner, yet, for all thoſe ſtormes, I arriued at laſt in a ſafe Hauen. With money I could negociate what I liſt my ſelfe; and there, and in euery place, there is no other talke, then how a man may make a ſhift to liue, and to get where-withall to maintaine his port; this was, is,

Guzman *picks a Gentlemans Pocket.*

and will be the practice as long as the world is the world; Iudges haue hands to take; and Malefactors money to giue. Euery man (you know) would faine liue by his place. But now those Trumpes would doe me no good, for I had renounced them long agoe. When I was flush of money, I would seeke to furnish my selfe afresh, before they were spent, for preuentions-sake. I would make new prouision; for as long as I could out of mine owne abilitie, supply my necessities and wants, I did not seeke after incumbrances, or to draw sorrow vpon my selfe. I had in a corner some Purses, that I had cut, and some pretty little strange pieces, that I had met withall. I made choyse of one that I lik't best of, and caus'd it to be handsomely trim'd vp, and putting into it sixe Crownes, in three Doblones of gold, fifty Royals in Plate, a siluer Thimble, and foure Rings; I carryed it to my Mother, and shew'd her euery thing particularly by it selfe, vsing therein a great deale of leisure, pawsing well betweene euery parcell: I likewise did set downe the same in writing vnto her, to the end that she might learne it without booke, and not misse one letter of the lesson that I had taught her: for a good memorie is all in all; and that which in this businesse did most of all import vs. And hauing well instructed her in that which she was to doe, when shee was to come afterwards to repetitions, I got me to the Cell of a certaine famous Preacher, who was a good man, and a holy, and reputed and reuerenced of all men, as if he had beene some Saint, and said vnto him;

Guzman craftily coozens a Preacher, and gets a good almes, and how he did it.

Reuerend Father, I am a poore stranger in this place, I am come hither to this Citie, and am at this present in great want and necessitie; I desire to accommodate my selfe, if I could light vpon some honest house, where I might liue peaceably and quietly for my soules health; this is the only thing that I desire in this world; as for any set wages, I shall not stand much vpon that. For so as I may haue honest cloathes to my backe, (I care not how meane, so they be whole,) and some set Commons, (though neuer so poore) to passe ouer this miserable life, I should well content my selfe there-withall, without either hope, or desire of any farther profit. And albeit I am in this wretched estate as you see, and that I am nothing but rags; in so much that for lacke of decent and seemely cloathes (being so ill clad as I am) I shall not happely light vpon any, that will take me into his seruice; and albeit I could for the present be able to helpe my selfe, and supply this my necessitie by an occasion, that is now offred vnto me to relieue my wants, yet I hold it better to suffer penurie, and to relie vpon a hopefull expectation of Gods helping hand (who will at one time or other pittie the distressed state of the poore) then by offending his diuine Maiestie, in vsurping vpon the goods of my neighbour. God forbid that other mens Purses should free mee from my corporall labour, leauing to my selfe a guiltie and condemning conscience.

I got me this morning out of my lodging, for to seeke some worke, whereby I might gaine me bread to put in my mouth, and it was my good hap to finde this Purse in the midst of the street: I tooke it vp, and went to looke what was in it. And when I perceiu'd it was money, I presently shut the Purse, fearing lest mine owne weakenesse might draw me to doe an vnlawfull Act. I shall intreat your Fatherhood, to take it into your hands, and being that you are next Sunday to preach, that you wil publish the same to the people. It may be, that the Owner thereof may be present there, or by others report chance to heare of it, who peraduenture may haue as much, if not more need of it then I haue. Much good may it doe him with it, for I will not inioy any other goods, saue only such, as his diuine Maiestie may be best serued by me.

The honest Frier, when he had heard me out, and saw the heroicall disposition that was in me, tooke me to be rather a Saint, then a man. And he did so

ſo much honour and reuerence me for it, that there only was wanting the kiſsing of my garment: and in a heauenly kinde of language, he thus ſpake vnto me:

My deare brother; giue hearty thankes to almighty God, that hee hath conferr'd vpon you ſo cleere an vnderſtanding, and the knowledge of that little eſteeme which we are to make of the goods of this world, and aſſure your ſelfe, that he, that hath communicated vnto you this his holy Spirit, will (as he hath promiſed in his holy Word) prouide for you, and miniſter ſuch things vnto you, as his diuine wiſdome ſhall thinke fit and needfull for you. He, who to the poore leaſt little Wormes, and all your ſmall fleſhleſſe and bloudleſſe Vermine (as your Ants, Flyes, Caterpillers, and the like hurtfull creeping things, that crawle vpon the earth) is not wanting, but careth for them, ſhall much more be mindefull of you, and ſupply you with all thoſe things, that he ſhall ſee you ſtand in need of: not only freeing you from theſe your preſent miſeries, but farther increaſing your ioyes, and his bleſsings vpon you. This action of yours, is a ſupernaturall and diuine worke, which ſtrikes admiration into men, and ſtirres vp thoſe Angelicall ſpirits of heauen, to ſing forth a thouſand Hymnes of praiſe and thankes-giuing, that ſuch a noble creature was borne for the glory of God, and the good of the world. This is his gift, and none but his, acknowledge it, and magnifie his praiſe by ſpeaking good of his holy Name, and perſeuering in vertue.

I ſhall doe as you would haue me, and ſee you returne againe vnto mee ſome day in the next weeke; for I hope in God, I ſhall bee able to doe you much good, and procure ſome fauour to be be ſhewne vnto you.

When this good man had made an end of theſe his holy words, my heart there-with (me thought) was quite pierced thorow, and began to bleed within me; for conſidering the greatneſſe of his Sanctitie and ſinceritie; and on the contrary, of my roguerie and villanie, who by ſuch vile and wicked meanes, ſhould goe about to make him the inſtrument of my thefts; and the more to colour the buſineſſe, I let fall a few feigned teares; this holy Frier, thought I had ſhed them for Gods ſake, and there-vpon began likewiſe himſelfe to grow ſomewhat tender.

This matter reſted thus till the next Sunday following, which was *All Saints* day; and when he came to preach, he ſpent the greateſt part of his Sermon in this buſineſſe of mine, indearing that Act ſo much the more, for that it had proceeded from a ſubiect ſo much neceſsited; and did exaggerate it ſo to the heighth, that he moued all thoſe that were there to compaſsion, and made them the willinger to doe me good. So they repaired vnto him with their almes, which they powred forth in a plentifull manner.

On Munday morning, my Mother came to the (*a*) *Portaria*, and askt for that holy Father; ſaying, that ſhe was to ſpeake with him about an earneſt piece of buſineſſe. The Porter, who perceiued how deſirous ſhee was to come to the ſpeech of him, went in to call him, and preſently brought him vnto her. Whom ſhe no ſooner ſaw, but taking hold of his hands, and his Habit, kneeling downe before him, and offring to kiſſe his feet, told him; That the Purſe was hers, deſiring him for Gods ſake, that ſhe might haue it againe. She acquainted him with all the outward markes of it, as alſo with the particular and remarkeable pieces that were in it, as one that had well ſtudied the Caſe. Where-vpon the Frier, without any more adoe, did deliuer it vnto her, knowing the tokens to be true.

When my Mother had the purſe in her owne hands, ſhee opened it, and taking out one of thoſe three *Doblones* that were in it, ſhe gaue it to this holy Father to beſtow vpon me for the finding of it: As alſo foure *Royals*, for two Maſſes to bee ſaid for the Soules in Purgatorie; and for that purpoſe ſhee re-commended them vnto him. Thus did ſhee recouer her purſe,

(*a*) Portaria *in your religious houſes, is that gate or Porters lodge, belonging to the Couent.* Couarruuias.

and brought it presently home vnto me, not wanting so much as a pins-head of all that was in it; for I had likewise of purpose wrapt some of those pieces in little parcels of paper, that it might the sooner seeme to be some womans purse, who vse such kinde of fiddling and fooling vvith their money.

After this businesse was thus ouer-past, about some two dayes after, vpon Wednesday towards the Euening, I went to visit my Frier; who against my comming thither, had prouided mee a Coffer full of cloathes, which might very well out-weare ten yeeres, and spending money besides for some dayes. He gaue it mee with a cheerefull countenance, and willed mee to returne againe vnto him the next day: For hee had something else to say vnto mee, and hee did not doubt, but it should bee much for my good. I did so; repairing vnto him at the time appointed: Then did he aske mee, whether I could write or no? I inform'd him of my sufficiencie in that kinde. Whereupon he told me, that there was a certaine Gentlewoman, whose Husband was in the *Indies*, who did much desire to haue such a one as I was, to follow her businesse, and to haue a care to husband her estate both in the Citie, and in the Country, and to bee true and faithfull in those things that she should commit to my charge; and that therefore I should deale plainely with him, and truely tell him, whether I could like of this course or no? for that, according to my answere, he should seeke, or not seeke to settle mee there, as hee saw I stood affected.

I (after that I had giuen him thankes) said vnto him; My good father, that which appertaines to my personall paines, to my sollicitude, diligence, and fidelitie, where-with I ought to serue her, this I am able to tender vnto you; but I must tell you withall, that I am not of this Countrey, nor haue any knowne acquaintance in these parts. And therefore, if this Gentle-woman shall put her goods into my hands, and that I must haue the disposing of them, she will expect that some body shall bee bound for my truth; but I am not able to giue her any securitie; and this is likely to be the onely rub that I know. I leaue it therefore to your fatherly consideration, what is to be done in this case, craving your aduice therein. He told mee, that he would bee my Surety; and that if that were all that I stood vpon, that stoppe should not damme vp the way, wishing me not to forgoe so fayre an offer. I accepted it very willingly. For I saw, that by this meanes, my businesse was in a good forwardnesse, and would finde legges to goe well on with it. For there is not any thing, that doth sooner deceiue a iust and an honest-minded man, then the simulated sanctitie of a wicked and counterfet Rogue.

CHAP.

CHAPTER VII.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being preferr'd to a Gentlewomans ſeruice, robs her; Vpon this theft hee is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life.*

SO great is the force of Cuſtome, as well in the roughneſſe of troubles and afflictions, as in the ſmooth waters of happineſſe and proſperitie, that ſome eaſe in the miſerable, doth lighten the loade, and doth in ſome ſort helpe to make them ſeeme more facill in their ſufferance; but the greater burthen lights vpon thoſe that haue liu'd well and happily; there is no griefe to this; comfort hardly takes hold on them: Fortune cannot doe a man more harme, then when ſhe hath inueſted him with a habit of Happineſſe, to diſ-robe him thereof, and that diſgracefully: for this vn-expected priuation makes it the more inſupportable. *Of Cuſtome, and the force thereof.*

This Cuſtome is that vncontrouled Lord, that preſcribes, and proſcribes Lawes at his pleaſure; infirming ſome, and confirming others; ratifying this, and diſ-annulling that. He (like a powerfull Prince) prohibits heere; and eſtabliſheth there; and conſequently, to that ſide, where-vnto he leanes, he carries all after him, as well in the purſuit of Vice, as in the practice of Vertue. So that, if he apply himſelfe to goodneſſe, he eaſily runneth the danger of loſing it; and adhering to that which is euill, it will hardly afterwards be rooted out. There is no force that can ſubdue it; but hath power & command ouer all humane actions.

Some haue called Cuſtome a ſecond Nature; but experience teacheth vs, that its power is greater then that of Nature; For Cuſtome will ouerthrow Nature with her little finger. She is no body in her hands: if ſhe affect ſowre and bitter things, with ſuch artifice doth ſhee conſerue and ſweeten them; that as if they were not bitter at all, ſhe makes them to become ſweet and pleaſant. But if ſhe clap in cloſe with Truth, and linke her ſelfe in League with her, ſhe is then the mightieſt Monarch that is, and her Fort is inexpugnable. Who but ſhe makes the poore Shepheard to liue alone by himſelfe in the ſolitarie fields, in the depth of the low Vallies, and on the tops of high Mountaines, amidſt Buſhes, and Thornes, Woods, and Rocks, oppoſing himſelfe againſt the vnmercifulneſſe & cruelty of a ſharp and rigorous Winter, ſuffering terrible Stormes, continuall Raines, bitter Windes, and piercing Ayres? And in the Summer, a parching, and ſcorching Sunne, which doth as it were roſt, and ſindge the Trees, burne Stones, and melt Metals? And its force being ſo great, that it tameth the fierceſt and wildeſt beaſts, and thoſe that are moſt venemous, bridling their fury, and allaying their poiſon, Time at laſt ouercommeth Cuſtome; it is he, and none but he, that works vpon it, and to him onely it is ſubiect.

For comparing Cuſtome with Time, her long and ſtrong preſcriptions are but as Spiders webs, made to catch an Elephant: For, if Cuſtome be powerfull, Time is prudent and wiſe. And as Wit goes beyond Strength; ſo Time ſubdueth Cuſtome. After night, comes day; after light, darkneſſe: They tread one vpon the heeles of another; and the ſhadow that followes after the body, and growing greater and greater, conteſts with him for ſuperioritie. The fire wageth warre with the Ayre; the Earth, with the Water, and all the Elements goe together by the eares, and are at a perpetuall enmitie one with another. The Sunne generates the Gold, it giues it its eſſence, *Cuſtome muſt yeeld to Time.*

eſſence, and its life. In like manner, Time purſues, proſecutes, and fortifies Cuſtome. It makes and it marres, working wiſely with ſilence, according to the ſelfe-ſame order, as ſhe is wont by continued drops, to hollow the hardeſt ſtone.

Cuſtome is of others, not ours; but Time is our owne. It is hee that diſcouereth the thread, manifeſting what is moſt ſecret, and by the fire of occaſion, maketh an eſſay and tryall of his Art. By experience, hee teacheth vs the quilates and aloy of that gold, & ſheweth vs the end where-vnto his pretenſions tend; And declar'd himſelfe at laſt to bee one, that neuer tooke any pitie of me. For, in a very ſhort ſpace, he made that publike, which I had laboured with all diligence to keepe hid and ſecret. All that which hath been ſaid, was verified truely of my ſelfe in its proper termes and caſes. O how often treating of my buſineſſes, trading of my wares, putting money out to vſe, framing nets to catch fooles, by raiſing of my prices, ſelling my commodities farre dearer to him that went vpon truſt, then him that paid ready money, carrying alway my Beads in my hand, my countenance compoſ'd, and ſtill the ſame; with a Truely, and a Verily in my mouth (from whence neuer any truth yet came) I did openly (according to my old Cuſtome) coozen and ſteale from as many as I had to doe withall! but Time did diſcouer all my rogueries.

The common courſe of Tradeſmen.

How often, and by how many, haue I beene heard to ſay; I promiſe you Sir, that it ſtood me in more, I cannot affoord it you at that price, I vow and proteſt vnto you, that I get not a Royall by you, in all this whole parcell of Wares that you haue bought of me? I may goe ſhut vp my ſhop, if I make many ſuch markets. And if I haue let you haue it better cheape then I could affoord it; it is becauſe I am to make ſome payment of moneys, and if it were not for that, you ſhould not haue them at this rate. And the ſame courſe I tooke in a thouſand other things of the like nature, not hauing any other vſe then for moneys, more then from their hands to mine, to gaine a hundred in a hundred.

Guzman deliuers ſome things worthy our conſideration, but to be auoyded by vs.

How often likewiſe, when I was in my proſperitie, during this my good fortune, and ſtudying dayly to grow greater and greater (onely that I might get my ſelfe a good opinion in the world, meerely for vaine-glory, and not for the loue of God: for I did not ſo much as dreame vpon him, nor thinke vpon any thing elſe, ſaue onely to be well thought of, and to haue the peoples eyes vpon me, who taking me to be a charitable minded man, and a giuer of almes, would gather there-vpon, that I was a man of a good Conſcience, and that I had a care of my ſoules health, and therefore might the better truſt me) did I cauſe a great number of poore, morning after morning to come to my doore, and keeping them there two or three houres, that there might be good notice taken of them, and ſeene ouer and ouer by thoſe that paſt along by my houſe, did I afterwards ſend away with (God hee knowes) a poore ſlender almes, whileſt with that *no nada*, that thing of nothing, which they receiued from me, I did gaine my ſelfe a good reputation, which like a ſtalking horſe, I made vſe of, the better to get other mens goods into my hands? How often haue I diuided a loafe of bread in twaine, (when I was no whit hungry, but as full as my belly could hold) and of that which remained, as if it were a thing to be loſt, or to be caſt away to the dogges, did I part in a thouſand pieces, and beſtow it afterwards on the poore? Nor did I giue it vnto thoſe, who, I knew had moſt need of it; but to thoſe, by whoſe mouthes, I knew, it would be moſt ſpoken of, and divulged to the world. And how often (hauing a bloudy heart, and a damnable intention, being naturally cowardly, timorous, and feeble) did I pardon, and put vp iniuries, putting them in publike to Gods account, mine owne thoughts ſecretly condemning me, did I in ſecret diſſemble them, not ſticking to ſay in publike, God be thanked for it;

when

when I was truly inwardly offended, and that no other thing in the world did hinder my reuenge, but that I was fearefull, and found my ſelfe vnable to put it in execution? But the coales thereof were aliue, and did burne within my ſoule, whoſe flames I had much adoe to ſuppreſſe. How often at other times, did I ſhew my ſelfe an abſtinent and orderly faſter, not for any other thing in the world, then to ſeeme to bee ſuch a one, and that I might ſpend leſſe, and ſpare the more? But when I did eate at another mans coſt, or ſpend vpon another mans Purſe, I did then ſwallow downe my victuals like a Cormorant, then I had a Wolfe in my belly, and was ſtill afraid, that I ſhould neuer haue enough. I did continually viſit the Churches, I would often both goe and ſend to the Priſons, only to get my ſelfe credit amongſt the Officers there, and ſuch other Miniſters as belonged vnto them, and not for to doe any good offices for the Priſoners, or any gratefull worke vnto God. But rather to the end, that if it ſhould be my ill hap at one time or other to come thither, being formerly knowne by them, they might vſe me the more kindely, and beare me the better reſpect. If I repaired to the Hoſpitals, if I went vpon Pilgrimage, if I did frequent places of Deuotion, kiſsing, nay, gnawing as it were the Altars, out of a hungry zeale; if I would not loſe a Sermon, nor a Iubilee, nor any publike deuotion, all thoſe ſteps that I trod, and all that paines that I tooke, were only directed to the getting me a good name, to the intent that vnder the colour thereof, I might the better coozen my neighbour, and take his cloake from off his backe.

Moreouer, I muſt not forget to tell you, that diuers things were now and then told me, and thoſe very ſecret ones, touching ſuch, or ſuch a perſon; the which were kept ſo cloſe, that when afterwards, when I did chance to talke with thoſe perſons, whom they concerned, counſelling them to leaue off ſuch and ſuch courſes, or rather correcting and reprouing them for it, they imagined of me, that I had come to the knowledge of them by ſome diuine reuelation. And ſo by indirect wayes, and a ſeeming kinde of holineſſe in mee, I gaue them to vnderſtand their faults: by which meanes, I got my ſelfe a great deale of reputation, eſpecially amongſt the women, who after theſe things, and Gypſies, runne as ſwift as the winde; being facill in beleeuing, and nimble in publiſhing. Out of whoſe mouthes, my praiſe and commendation went ſpreading it ſelfe abroad.

Many a time and oft, when ſome poore body was willing to vſe my helpe, making eſpeciall choyſe of me, as one that was well eſteemed and reputed of all men, I would ſtand in the open ſtreet with a Diſh in my hand, publikely begging Almes for him, of thoſe that I was acquainted withall: and hauing got a pretty round ſumme of money, I gaue him the leaſt part of it, and kept the reſt to my ſelfe. I lickt vp the Creame, and left him the Whey.

When I was minded to doe ſome notable villanie, the firſt thing that I went about, for the better effecting of ſuch a buſineſſe, was to get me a very faire and goodly large Ieſuiticall cloake, wherewith to couer it; and for the better diſſembling of it, I would put on all the geſtures of outward Sanctity, as ſubmiſsion, mortification, and good example; hauing the true turning vp of the white of mine eye, a ſober looke, a graue vtterance, ſeldome ſpetting, but when I was to ſpeake to the purpoſe, a broad-waking Hat, a little Band, and a leſſe paire of Breeches. And with this kinde of habit, and poſture, I bore the Ball before me, and tript vp the heeles of all thoſe that ſtood in my way. Which if in nothing elſe, yet was it plainly to be ſeene in this; that I had there-with ſo eaſily deceiued this holy man, this good honeſt Frier, that wiſht me ſo well, nay had already done ſo well for me. Nor did I only doe him this harme alone, but a greater miſchiefe followed vpon the necke of it. That he by no meanes loſt that good opinion, which the world had of him: But ſay hee had not loſt it; and admit, that hee kept it whole and ſound, as before;

before; yet, what a villanous inſtrument was I, and what iuſt cauſe had I giuen of preiudicing, and that in no meane meaſure, the credit and reputation of ſo honeſt and innocent a creature as he was?

Well, he had now placed me with this Gentle-woman, being verily perſwaded of me, that I would doe her all true and faithfull ſeruice, as he might very well preſume by thoſe particular Actions, which I had made ſhew of vnto him of this my rare and ſingular (ſhall I ſay knauerie, or) perfection? Well, what ſo e're I was, I am ſure he tooke mee to be a very honeſt man. He gaue his word for me, and truſted me with much of his owne: I could not lacke any thing, if it lay in his power to pleaſure me, ſo good an opinion had he conceiued of me. She willingly (vpon his recommendation) receiu'd me into her ſeruice. Shee truſted me with her wealth and her familie. Shee had ordained a very good lodging for me, prouided a delicate ſoft bed for me, and all other neceſſaries that were fitting for mee. Shee vſed mee in all things elſe, not as a ſeruant, but as a Kinſman, and as ſuch a one, for whoſe ſake, ſhe did verily beleeue, that God would throw many fauours vpon her. Sometimes ſhe would intreat me, to ſay an *Aue-Mary* for the health and good ſucceſſe of her Husband. I made anſwer to all her demands, as if I had beene ſome Oracle, and with ſuch a deale of mortification, that I made her many times to ſhead teares. By this meanes I came to coozen her, to rob her, and which was worſt of all, to iniure her, by wronging her houſe. For you ſhall vnderſtand, that this Gentle-woman had a certaine faire white ſlaue (none I wiſſe of theſe blacke Moores, but a handſome well-fauoured Wench) to her Maid-ſeruant, whom for a long time, I tooke to bee free-borne, and ſhe likewiſe ſeemed to be a good, and holy creature. But in very truth, ſhe was ſuch a one, that ſhe and I might very well ſhake hands; of vs both, there was neuer a barrell better Herring: Well, were ſhe better or worſe then my ſelfe, be ſhe what ſhe will be, let it ſuffice you, ſhe and I had tumbled together vpon one bed. I know not how we did ſmell out one another, that in ſo ſhort a time, we had growne to be ſo well acquainted. For within ſome few dayes that I had beene in the houſe, there was no ho with her, I could not keepe her out of my Chamber, would I neuer ſo faine, but ſhe would come in whether I would or no. To all the reſt of the ſeruants, ſhe ſeemed to be a Saint, and looked as though butter would not haue melted in her mouth; but with me ſhe ſhewd her ſelfe moſt looſe and diſſolute, as if ſhe had beene bred vp in ſome Brothell houſe, or trained to this geare in the publike Stewes, yet ſtil carryed her ſelfe with that wiſdome and diſcretion, that none of the houſe, except my ſelfe, no not her Miſtreſſe could come to know, or the leaſt way to ſuſpect, that there was any ſuch ſecret buſineſſe betweene vs. Beſides, ſhe did ſo cheriſh me, and make ſo much of me, that my Cheſt was neuer without good ſtore of Collations, and other ſweet-meates. So that my Chamber, was like a Comfit-makers ſhop. She furniſhed me with a great deale of fine Linnen, as white as the curd, neatly folded vp, neat and ſweet it was. And her Miſtreſſe was glad to ſee it; for ſhe tooke vs both to be Saints. Shee likewiſe gaue me money to ſpend, not knowing whence ſhe had it, nor how ſhe came by it, or from whoſe hands ſhe receiued it.

Guzman entertained into ſeruice by a Gentlewoman.

Guzman lies with his Miſtreſſes maid.

I had a glimpſe of ſome things: but becauſe I would not fall from thoſe good tearmes wherein I ſtood, I would not be too curious in the ſearch of them; as well that I might not loſe her company, while I continued there; as alſo that I might thereby oblige her the more vnto me: I went intertaining her with faire words, and good hopes, telling her, that when time ſhould ſerue, I would ſeeke to redeeme her out of her captiuitie, and afterwards make her my Wife. This ſeaſoned the pot, made her rowze vp her ſpirits, and like a Spaniell, to wait diligently vpon mee, and to ſerue mee in any thing that ſhe thought would pleaſe me. For, conſidering the loue which I

feigned

feigned to beare vnto her, (though ſhe were a crafty ſubtill Wench) ſhe did euermore make ſure account of me, as if I were not a free-man, and ſhee a Slaue. And yet not ſo free, as you thinke neither, hauing a Wife (for ought I knew to the contrary) ſtill aliue.

My Miſtris knew nothing concerning her owne eſtate and wealth, nor did finger any other moneys, then what I gaue her. All things that were in the Citie, went through my hands; I likewiſe had the command of all her ſtocke abroad in the Country, and did take and gather in all the fruits and profits thereof. For my deſigne was, to make a reaſonable good round booty, and ſo get mee gone, to ſeeke out a new world. I had a great minde to goe to the *Indies*, and did but watch for an opportunitie to imbarke my ſelfe, howſoeuer it ſhould afterwards fall out with mee. But I could not handſomely put this blow home. For my Miſtris fore-ſeeing her certaine ruine, for that her Farmers and Tenants had told her, that they had paid in their rents to me; the Shepheards, that I had ſold her flockes; the Baylife of her Vineyards, that I had conuaid all her Wines out of their Vaults and Sellars, where they were wont to be kept; and that of all this one penny-worth thereof was not come to her purſe; ſhe reſolued with her ſelfe to communicate this matter in priuate onely to one Gentleman that was her neere kinſman. She then acquainted him with all that had paſſed, and what an ill account I had made her, intreating him to apply ſome conuenient remedy for the ſame. Hee, without ſpeaking ſo much as a word thereof vnto mee, when as I was going one euening to caſt vp my reckning, and to deuiſe with my ſelfe, how I might make cleane worke of all that my Miſtris had, not thinking (God wot) on any ſuch thing, being deuoyd of all care, and free from the leaſt ſuſpition of any ſuch matter, the weather being hot, and my ſelfe very drowzie, I fell faſt aſleepe.

Guzman *arreſted and carried to Priſon.*

Now, whileſt I was thus taking my reſt, and thinking no body any harme, an *Alguazil* comes in ſuddenly vpon mee, takes hold on mee, and without telling me why, or wherefore; (for that (ſaid he) I ſhould know hereafter at better leiſure) hee carried mee away to priſon. The buſineſſe was thus carried, that neither our houſe, nor the ſtreet, ſhould bee in a hurry and tumult, by any ſtirre or coyle that I ſhould make, when I ſhould come to know by whoſe order I was apprehended, and committed. I went along very ſad and heauy, and knew not in the world what to thinke of it; one while deuiſing with my ſelfe, whether this my Commitment were by vertue of ſome *Requiſitoria*, or Commiſsion come out of *Italy*? Whether it were at the ſuite of my Creditors in *Caſtile*? Or for ſome of my new thefts, that I had ſo lately committed in that Citie, which perhaps for want of good carriage, were now come to light? And albeit euery one of theſe had weight inough to preſſe downe my heart, and to make it ſinke vnder ſo many, and ſuch heauy burthens; yet did it grieue me more then all the reſt, that I ſhould now lye no more at racke and manger, as I was wont to doe; and that together with my good name, I ſhould likewiſe loſe my credit and eſtimation, and that men would not truſt me, as they had done heretofore. But what remedie but patience? But ſeeing it was no better, God bee thanked it was no worſe. For this mis-fortune befell mee iuſt at ſuch a time when as my Crowne was ſhauen, and had not any thing worth the ſpeaking, that was to be found either about me, or at home in my lodging. For in regard that my Mother was a ſingle woman, and liu'd alone by her ſelfe, by a little and a little, I carried all that I had ſcrap't together, to her, and ſhe kept it for mee. Afterwards they broke open my Cheſt, but found nothing in it, but a Bull of the laſt yeere, and a few of old ragges. Where-vpon, they came to priſon to take an account of mee; giuing them ſo bad a one, as might well bee preſumed from ſuch a one as I was, who would alwayes receiue, but neuer pay.

I did

I did not giue them ſuch a Bead-roll, as they doe, that pray vpon their Beads. They laid great ſums to my charge, but could meet with nothing but Blankes. They made ſtrict inquiſition to finde them out; They looked heere, and they looked there, but they could not light vpon any thing, for I had not ſo much as one farthing of it in my cuſtodie. When they ſaw that, they got them to the Frier, and gaue him a large account of the caſe how it ſtood with them.

He (like a wiſe man) did neither condemne, nor abſolue me, till he ſhould heare, what I could ſay for my ſelfe, that hee might the better iudge thereof, when hee had heard both parties. Hee came to the priſon to viſit mee, and talking with me about this buſineſſe, I deny'de all, and ſtood ſtiffely to it; affirming, that they had ſuborn'd falſe witneſſes againſt me; and that I was as innocent as the child that was new borne; and that no man knew leſſe thereof then I did. And therefore my hope was in God, and that hee would helpe mee; and that, as he had freed *Ioſeph* and *Suſanna*; ſo would he defend the iuſtneſſe of my cauſe, and would not ſuffer the vprightneſſe of my dealing to periſh: Acknowledging withall, that this, and much more chaſtiſement my ſinnes had deſerued, for many other my former offences, which I had committed againſt his diuine Maieſtie.

The good religious man knew not what to doe, nor to which of vs hee ſhould giue moſt credit. Hee was much perplexed within himſelfe, and ſtood doubtfull to which ſide hee ſhould leane. But for the preſent, hee inclined to that part that was falling, ſeeking to ſupport the weakeſt. He gaue me comfortable words, promiſing his beſt care and paines in my defence, recommending my buſineſſes vnto God, who would (when he ſaw fit) free mee out of my troubles, and afford me his helping hand. Hee tooke his leaue of me; from thence he went to the *Eſcriuanos* office, for to *abonar*, and make good my Cauſe, deſiring him for charities-ſake, that hee would haue an eſpeciall care of it, and looke well into it, telling him that he was verily perſwaded, that I was a religious honeſt man, one that feared God, and was a Saint vpon earth.

But when the *Eſcriuano* heard him laſh out ſo farre into my commendation, laughing heartily thereat, hee pull'd forth ſome *Proceſſes*, that had been put in againſt me, and making a relation vnto him of the particular points therein contained, laying there before him, what a lewd kinde of fellow I was; the thefts that I had committed; and the coozening tricks that I had vſed; the poore Frier was aſhamed of himſelfe. There-vpon, this good holy Father, with all the ſinceritie and ſimplicitie in the world, vp and told him, what had paſt betwixt him and mee, and by what meanes hee came to the firſt knowledge of mee, and how, and for what cauſe, hee gaue mee ſo much truſt and credit; not thinking (good man) thereby, to doe mee any harme; but did onely tell him this, that he might bee the better perſwaded of me, and that he himſelfe had ſome reaſon to ſpeake for me, and to doe me all the lawfull fauour he could.

When the *Eſcriuano* had heard this Tale, hee grew Hart-angry, and his ſoule was vexed at this my villany, to ſee that I had no more grace with me, but to make ſo graue a perſon a ſtale for my roguery; and that I ſhould put ſo groſſe a ieſt vpon ſo good a man. He was herewith ſo incenſed againſt me, and his choller did riſe in that aboundance, that if hee had had the Law in his owne hands, I had preſently beene hang'd out of the way, without any more adoe. He left the Office, and went preſently to the *Teniente*, or Deputy Lieutenant, to whom hee made a large relation of all the whole matter, and ſet it downe all vnder his owne hand, and finding himſelfe as much affronted with this wrong I had done the Fryer, and that the parties aggrieued had paſt ouer all their power vnto him to proſecute it for them, as if it had

had beene his owne cauſe, they laid more and more to my charge, forming another new proceſſe againſt me of farre greater aggrauation then the former; and commanding me ſtricter impriſonment, willing the Iaylor to put me downe into the dungeon.

This vnfortunate day did not catch me ſo naked, that I wanted money to be able to draw out my thread to its length, and to wage Law with them. But the Priſon is of the nature and qualitie of fire; it conſumeth all that come vnto it, conuerting it into its owne proper ſubſtance. Large experiences had I made thereof, and by my account I found it to be a Winde-Mill, and a May-game for children. There is not any one that comes thither, but is a Miller, and grinds there; crying out, that his impriſonment is but for a thing of nothing, a toy, a trifle; when as ſometime it ſo falleth out, that they are committed thither for three or foure murders, for a robbery vpon the High-way, or for ſome other the like foule and odious offences. It is a place where fooles ſet vp their reſt, a forced tryall of a mans patience, a deare-bought experience, a too late repentance, a prooуall of a mans friends, and a reuenge-ment of his enemies, a confuſed Common-wealth, a ſhort Hell, a long Death, a hauen of Sighs, a vally of Teares, a houſe of Mad-men, a very Bedlame, where euery one cryes out, and loues to heare himſelfe talke of his owne fooliſh and wilde prankes. And all of them being guilty, not a man of them that will confeſſe he is faulty, nor that his crime is any thing heinous.

What a Priſon it.

They that are priſoners, are like vnto your Grapes on a Vine Bower, which as ſoone as they waxe ripe, there is not a ſprigge or bough of them which is not laden with Waſpes, who inſenſibly (they hauing no feeling of it) ſucke all the iuice and ſweetneſſe out of them, leauing onely the Caskes and Husks of them empty, hanging vpon the Arbour; And as are the Grapes, ſo is the ſwarme; if great and more, the more Waſpes; if few and ſmall, the leſſe. As it is with this Vine, and its Grapes; ſo is it with thoſe that are led to Priſon.

The Officers and Miniſters, that belong there-vnto, come thicke & three-fold about him, clinging ſo cloſe vnto him, and ſucking ſo hard from him, that they neuer leaue him, till they haue drawne him dry, and taken all his pyth and ſubſtance from him. And when the poore Priſoner hath not longer where-withall to feede their hungry maw, and that they haue ſqueez'd all his ſweetneſſe out of him, they fly away from him, and forget him, as if there had neuer beene any ſuch man, leauing him to himſelfe poore, and comfortleſſe. And this is as it were but a flea-biting, and a little euill, in compariſon of a greater, which is too vſuall and common amongſt them. For if the priſoner be poore, and haue no money, they preſently pronounce ſentence againſt him, leauing him ſtarke naked, and vndone.

Touching Iaylors, and Keepers of Priſons.

As ſoone as they conſigne and deliuer him ouer to the Maſter Keeper, or head-Iaylor, who hath the keeping and diſpoſing of the vpper-Wards, and the beſt lodgings, they giue him that intertainment as his purſe ſhall deſerue. For that Keeper or Iaylor does like him that buyes; who has no reſpect to the qualitie of him that ſels, but to the thing that he ſelleth: ſo to him it matters not, whether the priſoner be more one, then another; Noble, or baſe; Gentleman, or Clowne; all is one for that: He lookes onely vnto that which he giues him. When his Commitment is not a matter of importance, nor meriting corporall puniſhment, and is not of that heinous nature, as murder, theft, the foule ſinne, and other ſuch like, they leaue him at large to take the pleaſure of the priſon, alwayes prouided, that they pay him well for this his liberty. I was well vſ'd at the firſt, (for my cauſe was not criminall) and handſomely lodg'd, before that I had giuen ſecuritie either to ſatisfie, or anſwer to that debt, wherewithall I was charged. By this time they all knew me, and all of vs vnderſtood one another well inough, we were all Camerades, and

hayle fellow, well met, one with another. I gaue them content, and ſtayd below amongſt them, talking and paſsing away the time with them, but had euermore an eye, to ſee if I could ſafely get to the doore, and ſtood ſtill, watching an opportunitie, when I might conueniently doe it, and ſo giue them the ſlip.

The fashion of Attourneys, and Sollicitours, and the like Officers of your Courts of Iuſtice.

But vpon my firſt apprehending, as ſoone as I was come within ſight of the priſon; as alſo, after that I was committed, there preſently flockt about mee twenty ſeuerall Proctors, Attourneys, and Sollicitours, (who liu'd by the ſinnes of the people) who with their pen and Paper, (which they neuer went without) tooke both my name, and the cauſe of my impriſonment; all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an eaſie ſuite to goe through with. One of them would tell me, that the Iudge was his very good friend, and did fauour all the cauſes that he brought before him; another, that hee had a great intereſt in the publike Notary; a third, that within two houres he would get me bailed; a fourth, that my buſineſſe was a toy, a meere trifle, a thing of no conſideration in the world, and that for ſixe Royals, hee would inſtantly vndertake to free mee. Euery one of them would make himſelfe Maſter of my cauſe, ſaying, that it did properly belong vnto him, for that he had accompanied me, & come along with me, from the time of my Arreſt. This man I intertained, for his plea of preuention, being vnwilling to croſſe that Prouerbe; of *Firſt come, firſt ſeru'd*. Where-vpon I intreated him, that hee would call ſuch an *Eſcriuano*, a friend of mine vnto me. Another, for that he was the firſt that put pen to paper, and had drawne my Petition for mee to the *Teniente*. But to my ſelfe, I laught at them all. For I knew them well inough, and the manner of their proceeding. For they onely liue by what they can get and wring from a man before-hand; but afterwards you ſhall not draw them along, with two yoke of Oxen, they will ſo hang the Arſe. And there was one of them that hauing a Power or Warrant to free a Thiefe, was not aſhamed to aske him money for to make his Interrogatories, after that he ſhould be condemned to the Gallies.

Thus, all of them ſtriuing, which of them ſhould be imploy'd in my buſineſſe, there comes mee ruſhing in violently thorow the midſt of them, a very bold and confident fellow, that thought to rule the roſt, and to carry all away before him, one that had beene my Proctor heretofore in criminall cauſes, and ſaid vnto mee; What, Sir, are you heere? I told him, yes. Which queſtion he might haue ſau'd; for he ſaw I was ſure inough. Then he askt me, What was the cauſe of my impriſonment? When I had told it him, hee replyde: Tuſh, Laugh and be merry, Sir, take no care for this, it is a toy, a trifle, I warrant you Sir, wee will take order for this, and therefore let it neuer trouble you. Haue you any money, Sir, that I may carry it to the *Eſcriuano*? I will poaſt preſently with a Petition to the *Teniente*, that you may put in Sureties to anſwere the matter, and in the meane time to haue your libertie to follow your buſineſſe. And if he ſhall refuſe to grant you prouiſion in this Caſe, we will haue a Writ of remoue, to bring the matter into the open Hall, and thoſe that aſsiſt there in Counſell, ſhall preſently giue order for your releaſe. I ſhall ſpeake to one of them, who is my ſingular good Lord, and I dare pawne my word to you, that you ſhall not tarry heere aboue halfe a day.

When the others heard this, they ſaid, Ha? how now? what's this? is the winde in that doore? Heere is a pretty kinde of forme of framing a Petition withall my heart. Is this the courſe you meane to take? Wee haue beene ſome twenty of vs and vpward, theſe two long houres and better taking paines in this buſineſſe, and will you now take the ſame out of our hands? Shall the hindermoſt dogge beare away the Hare? Muſt he now follow the ſuite?

My Proctor there-vpon, made them this anſwere; My Maſters, had you beene

beene writing and labouring about this buſineſſe theſe two moneths and more; yet notwithſtanding vpon my comming vnto him, I am the man that muſt goe thorow with it. For this Gentleman is my very good friend, and I am to diſpatch all his buſineſſes. And therefore a Gods name ye may be gone; and let my Clyent alone.

When they heard him ſay ſo, they replyde vnto him; O what a ſweet and ſeemely manner of negociating is this? What a faire flouriſh does hee make? Where has he waſht his hands, that hee ſhould ſhaue vs on this faſhion, and carry away this cauſe ſo cleanely? You may be gone, Sir, and it pleaſe you; for this Gentleman knowes reaſon, and will intertaine him in his cauſe that he hath moſt minde to: and therefore what need ſo many words? In concluſion, one ſaid I; and the other ſaid no; and in the end, they differr'd ſo long about it, that they grew at laſt ſo hot and ſo angry one with another, that they began to rip vp each others faults, and to tell (without any other bodies help) who they were; there was not that ſpot in their practice, which they did not lay open to view; nor that ſtaine in their life, which they did not diſcouer; ſhewing how, and in what manner they did coozen the poore priſoners, and picke their money out of their purſes. Which was a Dialogue (for thoſe that heard it) of excellent intertainment, and paſsing good mirth; for that they were truthes, repreſented to the life. And this (I aſſure you) is a common Trade amongſt them, and this coozening courſe they take at all houres, and with all perſons, as well priſoners, as others.

Now, when this heat was ouer-paſt, and all was quiet; I came to my old Proctor, intreating him to doe what was fitting, and I would ſee him well contented for his paines. I gaue him foure Royals to begin withall: which when he had fingred, I could ſee my friend no more in fifteene dayes after. I knew well enough before, what he meant to doe; and that he had no other errand vnto me but this, to lick ſomething from me, though it were neuer ſo little, the better to ſecure the ſeething of the Pot, againſt the next day following, and to haue where-withall to goe to the Market-place. But I was driuen perforce to make choyce of him, becauſe I ſtood in feare of him: Who, for that he was wel acquainted with all my old cauſes, if I ſhould haue refuſed him, or ſhewd him any but the leaſt vnkindenes, & that he ſhould haue taken a ſtitch there-vpon againſt mee, hee would haue diſcouered the pot of Roſes, and throwne open the cloake that couered all my knaueries, and would in two houres haue heapt vpon me a hundred ſeuerall accuſations. So that partly chooſing him, (by refuſing the reſt) and partly leauing him, (in the poorenesſe of his Fee) as wel to haue him hold his peace, as to get him to follow my buſineſſe; for I muſt haue paid ſome body; I held it the beſt courſe to make him my *Proctor*, though this were not a buſineſſe that required much following; but did mainely conſiſt on matter of money. But afterwards when I began to be examined, and thorowly ſifted of that my audacious deluſion, and impoſture, which I had put vpon that good Religious Fryer, and that they came to compare cauſe with cauſe, then did I need a *Proctor*.

Now things began to goe on in good earneſt; they call'd mee vp, and went about to clap bolts on my legges: but thoſe I redeem'd with my money. I paid the Keeper, who had the keeping of them, and the yong fellow, that was to put them on, had his Fee likewiſe of me. My *Eſcriuano* now often viſits me; my Petitions runne vp and downe from place to place; Giue me thus much, ſayes my Sollicitour; Where is my Fee, quoth my Aduocate? Thus by little and little, like ſo many Horſe-leeches, they went ſucking all my bloud from mee, till they had ſcarce left me one drop. So that now I was like a cluſter of Grapes, that was quite dry'de away, and withered to nothing. Yet notwithſtanding all theſe miſeries, it is not fit, that I ſhould paſſe ouer in ſilence, that which paſſed betwixt my Wench, and my ſelfe. For as much that euery morning,

ning, as ſoone as it was day, ſhe rayned downe Manna vpon me; in her I found ſome helpe, for that ſhe furniſhed me with all things that were neceſſary for me; and when the rigour of my impriſonment was vpon me, being ſentenced by the *Teniente* to the Gallyes, ſhe ſent me a letter: which, for that it is a pleaſant and a witty one, I thought good to make it knowne vnto you; as alſo, becauſe it is not amiſſe, to ſlacken the ſtring, and vnbend the bowe, by recounting of ſomething, that may ſerue for intertainment. Which letter ſpake after this maner:

To *Señor Guzman de Alfarache*, my hearts-ioy, and my hopes comfort.

A letter of Guzmans *wench lamenting his misfortunes.*

MY deare Loue; *(though now to my great griefe, a poore condemned Slaue) I write theſe lines to no other end vnto thee, ſaue only to perſwade thee to caſt away ſorrowe, and to take comfort vnto thee. Let it ſuffice (ſweetheart) that I haue none; and let me alone mourne for thee: for euer ſince Saint* Iames *his day, about two of the clock in the after-noone, when thou waſt firſt apprehended whileſt thou lay'ſt quietly aſleepe, who (hard-hearted as they were) would not let thee take out thy nap, my Soule hath much ſorrowed for thee. But that which farther increaſeth my affliction, is; that this ſad newes is brought to day to my eares, that the* Teniente *hath adiudged thee to two hundred ſtripes, and tenne yeeres continuance in the Gallyes. God laſh his ſhoulders for it with whips of wyer, and the knottieſt, and ſeuereſt ſcourges of his wrath; Let him liue a ſlaue all the dayes of his life in the Gallies, and then rot, and dye. It well appeares, that he wiſhes thee not ſo well as I doe; nor knowes the bitternes of thoſe teares that I ſhed for thee. Little does he thinke how deare thy loue coſts me.*

Iuliana wiſhes me to tell thee, that thou ſhouldſt foorth-with appeale from him. Appeale twenty times, and more (if more ſhall ſeeme fitting vnto thee) and take care for nothing; for (by the grace of God) I doubt not, but all ſhall goe well inough in the end: And then, this Tyrannicall Teniente *ſhall ſee (though it griene him) that thou ſhalt not for euer remaine a priſoner to his pride: for I ſweare and vowe vnto thee by this my (a)* Mulata *face, that I will make him to remember as long as hee liues, the teares which hee hath drawne from mine eyes; which haue beene ſo many, that I had much adoe to keepe them from the worlds knowledge; And I ſhould haue powred them foorth, till they ſhould haue growne to be great riuers, had I not feared, I ſhould haue beene drowned in them, and ſo neuer haue inioyed thee more. By the faith that I owe vnto thee, I will neuer ceaſe weeping, till the fountaines of my teares ſwell ſo high, that I may come ſwimming vnto thee, and drawe thee out of that dungeon, where-vnto my Soule is chayned, and remayneth there priſoner with thee.* Iuliana *can tell thee, how I tore my haire, when I heard this bad newes. By her I haue ſent thee twenty Royalls, that thou may'ſt followe thy ſuite, be as merry as thou may'ſt, and that thou woula'ſt thinke on me, howbeit I knewe the time, when ſuch ceremonies needed not betweene thee and mee: For had I beene but a minute of an houre from thee, ſtaying no longer away, then while I had put a fewe coles vnder the pot, thou didſt thinke it a thouſand yeeres. Remember (my ſweet Slaue, my pretty Cage-bird) that I both loue, and adore thee: And receiue this greene girdle from my hands, in token of the good hope which I haue, that mine eyes ſhall quickly ſee thee ſet free. And if for to ſupply thy wants, it were needfull that I ſhould be ſold, brand this my face with two hot yrons, and ſet a Slaues marke in eyther cheeke, and make ſale of me in the open market: for aſſure thy ſelfe, I ſhall eſteeme it the greateſt happines that can befall me, that my bondage may worke thy freedome.*

(a) Mulata, *is a maid-child, that is borne of a* Negra, *and a fayre man; and ſo on the contrary. And becauſe it is an extraordinary mixture, they cõpare ſuch a one to a Mule.*

Thou tell'ſt me, that Soto, *thy* Camarade *is ill, and was neuer well, ſince the Hang-man dealt ſo roughly with him, and ſtraind the ſtrings ſo hard, that he made him change his note; racking as much from him, as there needed no farther confeſſi-*

on;

on; it grieues me to the very heart, that a man of his ſpirit, ſhould be ſo cow'd by ſuch a vile and baſe fellow, that for very feare, he ſhould be forced to confeſſe, not only his owne, but other mens faults. Commend me vnto him (though vnknowne) and tell him, that I am hartily ſorry for him; ſhare part of theſe Conſerues with him, which I ſend you, which (my deare Loue) I haue made a ſhift to ſaue for thee.

To morrow is our kneading day, wherein we muſt mould vp our bread, and put the loaues into the Ouen; then ſhall I make thee ſuch a friendly cake, and butter it ſo finely for thee, that thou ſhalt not be aſhamed to bid thy beſt friends to the eating of it.

Send me your foule linnen, and ſhift dayly, that you may keepe your ſelfe cleane and ſweete: For ſince that theſe mine armes cannot imbrace thee, they ſhall tyre and weary out themſelues in thy ſeruice; as being moſt willing to doe any thing, that may giue thee content. My Miſtris ſweares that ſhee will hang thee, becauſe ſhe ſayes, you haue rob'd her, of you knowe what; but I am ſure, you haue rob'd another of more then ſhe; of I knowe What, you knowe; To a Wiſe man, (a) a word is ſufficient.

If Vſher Gomez *ſhall come to ſee thee, talke not With him, or if thou doeſt, be very circumſpect, What thou ſayſt vnto him: For he is a man, that carries two faces vnder one hood; He ſeekes to inſinuate himſelfe into other mens boſomes, only to ſift them: And beſides, he is a great friend to a cup of Wine; And a drunken tongue (Which I neeed not to tell thee) Will blab out all it knowes. I aduertiſe thee of all: And becauſe this is for no other end, I heere end: yet neuer end to pray vnto God, that he Will preſerue thee for me, and that he Will free thee out of this filthie dungeon. From this thy chamber, about an houre before mid-night, my contemplation (ſweet heart) being ſolely and Wholy beſtowed on thy beſt-beloued ſelfe.*

Thy Slaue till death.

Prouerb.
(a) A Buen entendedor, pocas palabras.

This wenches oyle maintained the weeke aliue, all the time of my troubles, which otherwiſe would haue gone out. For I liu'd at a great charge, my expences were many, and though I had made my harueſt, and gathered a great deale together, yet all was melted away, like ſalt in water, or butter againſt the fire. My Mother likewiſe, when ſhe ſawe in what bad tearmes my ſuite ſtood, told me; That ſhe was rob'd of all that ſhe had; but as I did conceiue (and I thinke truly) her meaning was to hold that faſt which ſhe had, when ſhe ſaw it was to no purpoſe to let it goe. Whereupon, I was inforced to doe as the reſt did, and to follow the currant. My plea ſtill went on, and I wanted money to maintayne my cauſe. I could not corrupt the *Eſcriuano*, (for I had nothing, where-withall to bribe him) The Iudge, he was ſo highly incenſt againſt me, that there was no hope of working him; My Proctor, hee ſlept in the buſines, and would not ſtirre a foote; and my Solicitor fled as far from me, as his legs would carry him. There was now no more iuyce in my bunch of grapes, the Waſps were now gone their way, and had left me all alone; they had pronounced Sentence againſt me, the effect whereof was, That I ſhould be ſet vpon an Aſſe, and ſo ride ſtript to the waſte, round about the Towne, receiue ſo many ſtripes; the Cryer proclayming my offence before me; and this done, to remaine for ſix yeeres in the Gallyes.

When I ſaw I muſt bee made a Gally-ſlaue, and that there was no redemption of this my puniſhment, I put on a brazen face on the matter, and grew careleſſe of any mans either ſight, or cenſure. I playd my part without feare, or ſhame, as being now the Kings Slaue, and out of all other mens reach and danger, they hauing nothing more to doe with me. Yet was it ſome comfort vnto me, that my *Camarade Soto* was condemned to the like puniſhment, and that we ſhould, like a couple of louing Curres, bee ty'de together in one payre of couples. And as wee were fellowes and Companions in one Priſon,

and in one and the ſame Dungeon, and had runne both of vs one and the ſame Carreere; ſo was I very willing, that there might haue beene that good amitie betweene vs, and that true loue that ought to haue been; which if he had beene the ſame man he ſhould haue been, it had gone better both with him and me, then now it did. But (as you ſhall ſee hereafter) he playd the Traytor with me.

He was a notable ſqueeze-grape, a huge quaffer, his glaſſe ſhould bee alway brim-full, and he would vp with it *de profundis*; his vſuall draught was a large pint & a halfe: and hauing drunke liberally before he came to the rack, thinking that would haue made him leſſe ſenſible of his paine, he confeſt at the firſt, whatſoeuer they would haue him. Seeing I had now receiu'd my doome, and that there was not any remedy, nor the leaſt hope thereof, for my redemption, I was willing to try my fortune; but I neuer had her yet to friend: So that it had beene a miracle, if ſhe had not fayl'd me now. I feign'd my ſelfe ſicke for ſome fifteene dayes, neuer came out of the dungeon, nor roſe from my bed.

Guzman ſeekes to breake priſon.

At the fifteene dayes end, hauing prouided my ſelfe of womans apparell, and hauing ſhau'd my Beard cleane away with a Razour, putting on thoſe cloathes, caſting a Mantle ouer them, and painting my face, dawbing it firſt with white, and then giuing it a little tincture of Red; now when night was in, I paſt thorow the two vpper doores, that belonged to the Galleries, and neither of thoſe Porters ſaid a word, but let me paſſe quietly, yet were they both of them quicke-ſighted inough, and had their eyes cleere and ſound.

Guzman preuented of his purpoſe.

But when I came downe to the doore that opens to the ſtreet, and was ready to put my foot ouer the threſhold, a blinke-ey'de Porter, that had but one eye, (would to God he had beene blinde on the other) claps his arme athwart the Poſterne, kept me backe, lookt vpon me, and preſently knew me: Whereupon, he ſhuts to the doore. I had prouided my ſelfe of a good ſhort arming ſword, one, that if need had been, would haue done the deed, which I carried cloſely about me, if I ſhould chance to be put to my ſhifts, and haue occaſion to vſe it. But as ill lucke would haue it, I bore it about mee at ſuch a time, when as it could doe me no good, nor ſtand me in any ſtead in the world. This was ſuch an aggrauation of my fault, that my accuſation was now made criminall.

Guzman condemned during life to the Gallies.

Well, they turn'd me vp ſtayres, and fulminating a new *Proceſſe* againſt me, they condemn'd me to the Gallies, during life. And it was no ſmall courteſie, that they did mee, that they did not make mee ride in thoſe cloathes vp and downe the Citie, as they had heretofore done the like diſgrace vnto others. I thought to haue auoided danger, and fell vpon my death.

CHAP.

Chapter VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the Priſon of* Seuill, *to bee carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. Hee recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewiſe in the Gallies.*

I Am a Gally-Slaue, and am now come to the end, for which I was ordained, where-vnto my lewd courſes were the meanes to bring mee. I muſt now leade that life, as the reſt of my fellowes doe, who indure the like fortune. I muſt pull at a Rope, tugge at an Oare, and content my ſelfe with ſuch poore fare, as others of my wretched condition are allow'd. I was one of the Band of the Braggards; *de los, de Dios, es Chriſto*; one of that company, who confeſſe Chriſt to bee God, and haue no other Cognizance of their Faith; for their workes march vnder the Colours, and conduct of the Diuell. I put on my white linnen breeches, my colour'd Stockins, my cut Doublet, and my Holland Night-Cap; all vvhich my kinde and louing *Mulata* had ſent me; liuing in hope, that in time the Dice would turne, and that ſhe might one day ſee me againe at libertie. What with the helpe that I had from her, and what with thoſe my fees, that I recouered (as due vnto me) from thoſe new Priſoners that came in, I led a fine gentle life, as alſo the life of a Gentile; for ſuch is the qualitie of ſuch as I am, when they are admitted into ſuch a famous ſchoole as that is, where ſuch a deale of Roguery is profeſt.

I had now got ſome oyle to my Lampe, ſome money in my purſe, partly out of other mens deuotions, and partly out of mine owne indeuours; I did lend vpon pawnes, of euery ſingle *Royall* I made dayly a (a) *Quarte* profit; I did filch from thoſe that were freſh men, and newly come in amongſt vs; not one of them that ſcap't my fingers, all that came vnder my hands paid ſoundly for it. When they were aſleepe, I would play the wagge with them, putting the ſnuffe of a Candle on the top of their ſhooe, and holding matches of brimſtone vnder their noſes, or rolling a Card, let the ſmoke runne vp into their noſtrils, till it were ready to choake them; and a thouſand other the like knauiſh tricks. For albeit God is there knowne, yet is hee not feared. They haue no more reſpect vnto him, then if they were ſo many Pagans. And for the moſt part, thoſe that come to the like miſery, are Ruffians, and High-way robbers, a brutiſh and beaſtly kinde of people. And it muſt be either a great wonder, or mis-fortune, that ſuch a one as I ſhould come thither; and when it ſo falleth out, the reaſon of it is, becauſe God blindeth their vnderſtanding, to the end, that by leading them this way, he may bring them to the acknowledgement of their ſinne; and that they may in time come to a clearer knowledge of him, learne to ſerue him, and ſo be ſaued.

(a) Eight Quartos *make a* Royall: *ſo that he made a halfe-penny and better, of euery ſixe pence.*

The wicked condition of the Gally-Slaues.

There was a Ruffian, a notable ſhauer (in my time whileſt I was there) who being condemned to death, and put into the *enfermiria*, or that quarter, where the ſicke are cured; whence he was to be taken forth the next day to be executed, ſeeing ſome of thoſe that had the guarding of him, playing at three-hand *Primera*, he roſe from his banke, he made to them as well as hee could, crawling along, with his two paire of fetters, and a great chaine; and they asking him, whither he would? Hee told them; I come hither, to paſſe away the time a while.

A Tale of a Ruffian.

The Guards that had the charge of him, told him, that it was fitter that he ſhould betake himſelfe to his prayers, and recommend himſelfe and his Soule

Soule vnto God. Where-vnto, he anſwered, I haue pray'd already all that I can pray; I haue not one prayer more left me. I haue no more to doe, then what I haue done already; and therefore ſhuffle, and deale about, and fill out ſome Wine, and let the cup walke; that we may waſh away ſorrow, and rid away that care, which is ready to choake my heart. They replyde, it was very late, and that the Tauerne doore was ſhut, and there was no getting in. Goe tell then (ſaid he) the fellow that keepes it, that it is for me, and that's inough; I warrant you, hee will not deny me. And therefore no more words, my Maſters, but play on, and follow your ſport; for I ſweare vnto you, that I know not what will become of this buſineſſe, nor what the iſſue thereof will be.

They dance all to this Tune. Others there are, that will haue their Head and Beard neatly trimm'd, that they may ſeeme the handſomer when they come to the Gallowes, and be ſaid to be proper men, and well-fauour'd; and will likewiſe take order to haue a fine cleane ſtarcht-Ruffe, daintily and curiouſly ſet; it ſeeming perhaps vnto them, that the wearing of that, and the bearing their *Bigotes* high, turn'd vp with hot irons, and ſtiffened with gums, ſhould be their ſaluation, and bring them to heauen. And as in good Philoſophy, mens complexions follow generally the goodneſſe, or badneſſe of their meats; ſo may it likewiſe of the good or bad company that we keepe. Whence grew that Prouerbe: *No (a) con quien naces, ſi no con quien paces.* We muſt not iudge of men by their birth, but by their breeding. It is their conuerſation, that muſt giue them their denomination.

(a) *Prou.* No con quien naces, ſi no con quien paces.

Now I was one of theſe, and like a barbarous and ill-bred fellow, would faine imploy that little money which I had, in renting one of thoſe (*a*) *Bodegones* belonging to the Priſon; but fearing a day, that they would on the ſudden ſtrike vp an Alarme, and ſo I might chance to loſe all, I did not doe it; and I thinke I did well in it. For now that wee beganne to make a number of ſome ſixe and twenty Gally-ſlaues, & were grown ſo vnruly in the Priſon, that there was no ho with vs; the Keeper was halfe afraid, that wee would make ſome hole or other in the Meſhe, and finde a time to get out of the net; and therefore laboured all that hee could to be diſcharged of vs.

(*b*) Bodegon *is a poore victailing houſe.*

One Munday morning wee were called vp, and giuing euery one of vs a Teſtimoniall of his Sentence, wee were all chained one to another: And being thus threaded as it were vpon foure chaines, wee were deliuered ouer to the Commiſſary, who was to conuey vs by little iourneys to the Port, faire and ſoftly, foot after foot, and as we could hale our haltred legges after vs; our pace, like our irons, being very heauy.

Guzman *and the reſt of the Gally-Slaues deliuered ouer to the Commiſſary.*

In this manner went we out of *Seuill*, to the great griefe and ſorrow of our Parents and Kinſfolke, and other our good friends, who went tearing their hayre, as we paſt along the ſtreetes, and ſcratching their faces with their nayles, euery one according to the loue and reſpect which ſhee bare vnto her friend. And they on the other ſide, pulling their Hats ouer their eyes, went along like ſo many meeke and gentle Lambes, and not with that Lyon-like looke, and haughty carriage, as they were wont heretofore; it was not any brauing now, or out-facing of the matter, that could doe them good. Arrogancie was out of requeſt with them, and would not ſerue the turne. I cannot deny, but it did touch me for my part to the very quicke, it went to the heart of mee: eſpecially, when I called to minde the merry life that I had led, the good ſtate wherein I had liu'd; if I had had but the grace to keepe my ſelfe well, while I was well; and to ſee the miſery, where-vnto now I was come.

Then did I begin to thinke with my ſelfe; If this bee ſo painefull vnto mee already; if this chaine doe ſo much torment me, that I can ſcarce indure it; if I feele ſuch trouble now, and if this befall me while the wood is greene, what

will

will it doe, when it growes old and dry? What torment will they feele that are condemned for euer to perpetuall paine? Musing vpon these things, I past along thorow the streetes of *Seuill*, for my Mother did not come to accompanie me, nor was she willing to see mee. And I was the onely man amongst them all, that was *Solus cum solo*, left alone to my selfe.

We walkt along very leisurely, which (God wot) was slowly inough, yet as fast as we could conueniently; for when my chaine was slacke, and I was offering to goe forward, my next fellow would oftentimes pull mee backe, which hee could not sometimes doe withall, and sometimes againe would stop of set purpose, as his necessarie occasions did require. Another, he was foundred with going bare-foot, and all the rest ready to sinke, they vvere so weary. Wee were men sensible of paine, as other men are, and being in that case as we were, none had more cause to sorrow then we; yet amongst our selues our griefes were so equall, that we had but little aduantage one of another.

O the wretched and miserable state that we liue in, and to how many various and vnfortunate chances are wee necessarily obliged! Wee came to a place called *Las Cabeças*; and as we went on a morning from thence, wee had scarce gone halfe a League, but that one of our company had espide a farre off, a certaine yong fellow, who was going towards *Seuill*, with a great many fine little young Pigs, and giuing the word one from another, wee did presently battell-wise cast our selues into a Wing, as if we had been the Turkish Gallies; and marshalling our selues after the manner of a halfe Moone, wee did in such an orderly fashion set vpon them, that the points of the Hornes meeting as it were before, and in a kinde of circle-wise inclining each to other, wee had shut in the Pigges on a sudden, and incompast them so, that they could not get out from amongst vs, and in spight of the young fellowes teeth, doe what he could for his life, euery one of vs made purchase of a fat Pigge.

The Gally-slaues rob a poore fellow of his Pigges, that he was carrying to Market.

The fellow began to cry out aloud, making great exclamations, and intreating the Commissary, that for Gods sake, hee would take order that he might haue them againe. But hee seemed to be deafe, and would not heare of that eare, as one that was to haue the greatest share in this bootie; and so wee past on along with our prey, leauing the poore Clowne to goe seeke his remedy else-where. Wee knew the worst of it alreadie, so that our care, and our pitie were much about one.

About noone, when wee came to our Inne where wee were to rest our selues, and with a little sleepe to passe ouer the heat of the day, the Commissary called to vs for the share that hee was to haue of this our theft: for, being that he was consenting there-vnto, the Accessorie was to haue as much as the Principall; the Assentant, as the Assaylant. Hee commanded one of them to bee rosted for him; where-vpon there arose a great stirre and tumult amongst vs, being ready to goe together by the eares, whilest we were arguing the Case, which of vs was to part with his Pigge. For amongst vs all, there were scarce three of vs that had the vse of reason.

The Slaues mutine about their Pigs.

When I saw the Mutiny, that was amongst them, and that in the carriage of this busines, he might (and that iustly) blame me the more, because my vnderstanding was more then theirs: I said vnto him; Master Commissary, my Pigge is heere ready at your seruice, dispose of it as you please: And if you shall so thinke it fit, seeing heere is Guard sufficient vpon vs, may it please you to comaund them to vnchaine me, and I will take the paines to dresse it for you with mine owne hands: for I haue some reliques yet remayning of a good Cooke. He thankefully accepted of this my ciuill Compliment, and said vnto me; Of all this company, that is heere vnder my charge, I must truely confesse vnto thee, I haue, since my first knowledge of thee, obserued in thee

Guzman *offers his to the Commissary.*

thee a certaine kind of noblenes, and free nature, which cannot but proceed from ſome good blood. I therfore thanke you for this your preſent, and take it kindely at your hands, and ſhall be very glad to eate it, as you ſhall order it for me. I was taken from the chayne; & being recommended to the Guards, I call'd for ſuch things as were neceſſary: but becauſe the Inne was ill prouided of ſuch things as I would haue had, to ſhewe my Cookerie, I could ſhew my ſkill no farther, then in the well roſting of it, with a fewe eggs battered together, and ſeaſoned with a little pepper, & ſalt: I would haue made a pudding in it's bellie, but I wanted neceſſaries. I minced the liuer, & of that, and ſuch other things as I could for the preſent, I made him ſauce to his Pigge, which I knewe well how to doe.

He dreſſes it for him.

At the ſame time ſome Trauaylours came in, to take their eaſe, who were not a little ſorry to finde vs there: for that they were halfe afraid that their eares were ſcarce ſure on their heads amongſt ſuch a company of Rogues as we were. The Table whereat they were to ſit, was a long planke, neeere adioyning to a bench of ſtone: they were to eate altogether. The Commiſſary kindly ſaluted them, and they him; and after a fewe Compliments were exchanged betweene them, they ſate three in a file, and one of them taking his Port-mantua vnto him, and putting it betweene his legges, vnder the boord, he there likewiſe lay'd his *Alforjas*, or wallet, wherein he had Cheeſe, a Bottle of Wine, and a peice of a Gammon of Bacon; and that he might the better take it out, he did thruſt his Port-mantua a little forward, leauing the *Alforjas* in the midſt betweene his legges. I, when I ſaw that he was ſo warie, began to ſuſpect, that it was not without cauſe, and calling to the Hoſteſſe for a Knife, I cloſely clapt it in betweene my arme, and my ſleeue: And puting a great earthen Iarre full of water, vnderneath the boord, and in it, a Bottle of Wine; that the Commiſſary might haue it freſh and coole, when hee ſhould call for it; as oft as I ſtoopt downe to powre out his wine, by little & little, I fell to fingering of the Port-mantua, till at laſt, hauing made a ſhift to vndoe all the Buttons, and giuing it a gentle ſlaſh cloſe where the Chaine ranne along, that made all faſt, I nimbly tooke out two litte bundles, but ſomwhat weighty withall, which I preſently conuay'd very handſomely into my Gally-ſloppes, where there was Sea-roome inough for them; and afterwards buttoning it vp iuſt in the ſame faſhion as it was before, it was cloſe and well, and not any ſigne to be ſeene of this theft that I had made.

Guzman *filches two Fardles out of a Trauailours Port-mantua: And the maner how.*

When they had made an end of their dinner, the Cloth was taken away, and hauing paid their reckoning, away went theſe Trauailours; and we likewiſe began to prouide to be packing: for we alſo were to be gone. *Soto*, my *Camerade*, was faſtned to another Chayne, ſomwhat farther off from mee, then I could haue wiſh't it, which did not a little grieue me, becauſe this diſtance did hinder our more priuate talke; but before they brought me back againe to my Chayne, I came vnto him, and ſecretly deliuered vnto him thoſe two bundles, deſiring him to keepe them ſafe for mee, till we ſhould meete with ſome better occaſion, to knowe what was in them. He receiued them with a great deale of ioy, and killing his Pigge vnknowne to any, he thruſt them both into the body of it, placing the intralls before the mouth of the wound, as well, that the bundles might not droppe out, as alſo to hide them thereby the better out of ſight.

Soto Guzmãs *Companion a notable Thiefe.*

Soto *his cunning in the cleanly conuayance of this theft.*

Now when they were going to put me to the Chayne, I intreated the Cõmiſſary to doe me the fauour, that I might be filed next to this my old friend and acquaintance. He willingly granted my requeſt; ſo one was taken out of that file, and he and I were ranked together, that other and my ſelfe exchanging places.

We went lazily on along, as the faſhion is, & as we were pacing theſe our leiſurely ſteps, I rounded *Soto* ſoftly in the eare, and ſaid vnto him; How now

now (my Camarade) what haſt thou done with that which I gaue thee to keepe? How haſt thou diſpoſ'd of it? But he, as if hee had not knowne mee, or had not giuen him any ſuch thing at all, made ſo ſtrange of it, that hee made me to ſuſpect, that according to the cuſtome of that Country, hee had drunke a cup too much, and ſo might happely haue forgot it. Where-vpon, I went putting him in minde, when and where I gaue it him. But hee ſtill denyde any ſuch deliuerie. And in the end grew ſome-what hot and angry with me, asking mee, whether I were drunke, or well in my wits, that I ſhould demand any ſuch thing of him, or make him beleeue, that I had deliuered him either this, or that? I vnderſtand you not, I neither know you, nor it, nor haue any thing of yours, and therefore all that I can ſay vnto you, is; That for mee you muſt goe looke it. Nothing I had of you, and nothing are you like to get from mee.

You cannot imagine, nor am I able to expreſſe the great both anger, and ſorrow that I had, that I ſhould be ſo vnthankefully dealt withall, and receiue ſuch hard meaſure from one, to whom I had done ſo many good offices, and lou'd ſo truely, as I did him. For, there was not that morſell of meat, that went downe my throat, whereof he had not his ſhare; nor that money in my purſe, whereof I did not diuide halfe with him. And my purpoſe was, that he ſhould likewiſe ſhare with mee in this. But that hee ſhould thus breake the bonds of friendſhip, and deny, (and that ſo inſolently, and impudently) that I had euer giuen him any ſuch thing; this was it that troubled me; this was it that vext mee to the very heart.

Soto *becomes an enemy to* Guzman.

He was a man of an ill condition, his concoction was not good, and hee was ſo moued vpon theſe words of mine, and ſo out of all patience, that in a thundring voice he beganne to bolt out oathes and blaſphemies, inſomuch that the Commiſſarie was inforced to correct him with a Cudgell. I, relying on the fauour he had ſhewne me, intreated him to beare with him, becauſe he was angry, and in choller, which was the cauſe of this his intemperancie. And he being deſirous to know the cauſe of this his diſtemperature; I began to apprehend with my ſelfe, that *Soto* would reſerue all this for him; and I made this reckoning with my ſelfe; If I ſhall acquaint the Commiſſarie with that which had paſt betweene vs, it may bee, that though I ſhould not haue all, yet at leaſt, ſome part of the bootie might fall to my ſhare.

How Guzman *cryes quittance with* Soto.

This thiefe (thought I) ſhall not carry it away ſo; hee ſhall not haue all the thankes, and laugh at me when he has done. I will not bee thus gull'd by him. And therefore I reſolued with my ſelfe, to acquaint him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe, who, I preſumed, would not be a little glad of it, out of the greedy and couetous deſire that he would haue to take that bone from vs, which we two ſtroue for.

Herevpon (being informed by me) he commanded *Soto*, that he ſhould preſently giue him that which I had giuen him. He ſtoutly denies, that hee had any thing of me. The guards are will'd to ſearch him; they doe ſo; and when they had done the vtmoſt of their diligence, they could finde no ſuch thing about him, nor any the leaſt ſigne or token thereof. Where-vpon I gathered, that he had done as I did, deliuering the ſame ouer to ſome other body, to keepe it ſafe for him.

I told the Commiſſary, that there was no queſtion to be made of it, but that he had ſecretly conuay'd it away to ſome one or other of this our company, for that really and truly he receiued it of me, who gaue the ſame vnto him with mine owne hands. When he ſaw, that neither by faire meanes, nor by foule, by perſwaſions, nor threatnings, nor any other courſe that hee tooke with him, he could be brought to manifeſt the truth, and to bring theſe things to light; the Commiſſary commanded they ſhould take him aſide, and put him to the Racke, till they ſhould make him to confeſſe. And for that they had

had no other inſtruments there, ſaue Cords, they applide them to thoſe his lower parts; and when vpon their twiſting, they began to ſtraine ſome-what hard vpon the fleſh, which was too delicate and ſenſible to indure any torture, being likewiſe a faint-hearted fellow, and of little or no courage, hee forth-with confeſſed, whither he had conuayd them. Therevpon, they preſently tooke his Pigge from him, (ſo that he loſt that too by the bargaine) and taking out the intrals to ſee what was there, they quickly lighted on the two little bundles, in either of which was a *Roſario*, or ſet of Beads of the perfect-eſt, and the daintieſt pure Corall, that euer mine eyes ſaw; euery Bead at both ends, hauing his Cap of Gold, which was much graced by the neat cutting and inameling that was beſtowed vpon them, which (it ſhould ſeeme) were ſent as tokens to two ſeuerall perſons.

The Commiſſary makes no more adoe, but preſently claps them vp in his pocket, promiſing to befriend me for it, and to giue mee, what I my ſelfe ſhould aske for them. *Soto* was herewith ſo madded, and ſo extremely incenſed againſt me, that they were forced to change our chaines, and ſet vs farther aſunder then before; for though we were thus diuided, and parted each from other, they did afterwards fall to manacling of him, faſtning both his wriſts together with bolts of iron, becauſe when he came where any ſtones were, he would take them vp, and throw them at me.

In this troubleſome manner we came at laſt vnto the Gallies, iuſt vpon the very nicke, when they were calking, and rigging, and making all ready to put forth to Sea, and to goe in chaſe. And before they brought vs aboord, they carried vs to a Priſon, where wee paſt ouer that night, with the like incommoditie and trouble, as at other times. Nay rather, it was worſe with vs now, then heretofore, for that the Priſon was little, and cramm'd as full as euer it could hold. But be it better, or bee it worſe, ſuch as it was, wee were forced to take all in good part, and to make as good ſhift as we could. For we could not doe as we would, nor make choiſe of any place to our liking.

The Commiſſary had talkt in the meane while with the Kings Officers; who came with thoſe other of the Gallies, and the Kings *Alguazil*; and hauing now aſsigned and appointed vs our Bankes, where wee were to ſit and rowe, they gaue the Commiſſary a diſcharge for the deliuering ſo many Slaues into their hands, who told mee, that he would come and ſee me; and that he would ſtand my very good friend; ſo he betooke him to his Mule, and from that day forward, I did neuer more ſet eye on him.

Now, before that they tooke vs out of Priſon, to leade vs along to the Gallies, they had ordered how wee ſhould bee diuided, and it fell out, that wee were to goe ſixe and ſixe in a fyle; in which diuiſion, it was my ill lucke (thankes to my ſinnes, that laid this puniſhment vpon me) to haue *Soto* to be my Camerade.

This done, they preſently deliuered vs ouer to certaine Mooriſh Slaues, who with their halfe Pikes came to guard vs along, and tying our hands with tough thongs, which they had brought with them for that purpoſe, away we goe with them. We come aboord the Gally, where-into being entred, wee were willed to retire our ſelues to the poope, till that the Captaine and the Maſters-Mate ſhould come, and call vs out one by one, placing euery man in this, or that other Banke, as they thought fit; now, when they were come amongſt vs, they went walking vp and downe on the *Courſey*, or the Gallerie-like ſpace, on both ſides whereof, the Slaues Bankes are placed: and whileſt they were looking on the bankes, and aduiſing with themſelues where it were fitteſt to diſpoſe of vs; the other Gally-ſlaues began to ſet out their throats, and to cry out aloud vnto them, deſiring that they would diſperce vs amongſt them; ſome complaining that they had an vnprofitable member amongſt them; others, that all in their Banke

were

were weake and feeble persons, vnable to doe any seruice.

But the Captaine, and the Masters-Mate, not giuing eare to their clamours, but gouerning themselues by their owne discretion, hauing considered what was fittest to be done, placed vs heere and there, as they saw cause: in which partition it fell to my lot, to be ranked in the second Banke, iust before the Cooke-roome, neere vnto the Masters-Mates Cabin, at the foot of the Mast; hauing placed *Soto* in the *Patrone*, or Masters Banke. It grieu'd me very much, that he was seated so neere vnto me, in regard of the late quarrell that had beene betweene vs; for wee could neuer afterwards indure one another; and he, me lesse, then I could him; for he was a malitious minded man, & had intertained in his heart a deep hatred against me; though I (for my part) neuer did deny him my friendship, nor was euer wanting vnto him, whensoeuer he had occasion to vse me: but he, like the Commissary, would haue all to himselfe, if I should haue let him alone. And all he should haue had, and that with a very good will, if I had but once thought, that hee would haue cry'de quits with mee, and paid mee home in mine owne coyne. When they had brought mee to the Banke, those that were there, bade mee welcome; in requitall whereof, I could haue wisht, that I had beene able to say vnto them; Excuse me, that I cannot come.

What Guzman *indured in the Gallies.*

They installed me in my seat, and put on the Kings Robes vpon me, two Shirts, two paire of linnen Breeches, a colour'd Waistecoat, and a red Cap. I was scarce warme in my seat, when a base vnder-Barber comes vnto mee, a better Shauer, then a Cutter, and with his Razor, makes my head and Beard: as bare as my hand, which I tooke to heart, for the great account I made thereof. But re-collecting my spirits, I beganne to comfort my selfe, that this was the fortune of the world, and that others, that had beene in farre higher place, had falne into farre greater miseries.

I remoued my eyes from those that were before mee, and looked towards those that were behinde me: not considering so much with my selfe how many were more happy, but how many were more wretched then I was. O this looking downeward is a comfortable thing to a man in misery. And albeit, it be true, that there is not any life almost so miserable, as that of a Gally-Slaue, yet was it not halfe so bad as that which I indured vvith my first Wife. And it was some comfort besides vnto mee, that I was not a lone man in this my afflictions, but had many fellowes that suffered the like torment.

A yong fellow that belonged to the *Alguazil*, made presently towards mee, to clappe fetters on my feet, and manacles on my hands, chaining mee, and other my companions, that sate together on the same Banke, so fast, and so sure, that wee could not stirre from thence. Then did they giue mee my allowance, which was sixe and twenty ounces of Bisket; it so fell out, that that day was (as we call it) *dia de Caldero*, the Caldron day, for the boiling of flesh, and making of pottage: And because I was but a new-comer, and was vnprouided of a woodden dish, I tooke my part of those mammocks that were shared amongst vs, with one of my fellowes that sate by mee. I would not offer to soke my Bisket in it, but chew'd it downe dry, as all your fresh-men doe at the first, till time had taught mee the vse of my armes.

The paine we were put to for the present was little or nothing; for the Gallies being then a trimming, and a calking, wee that were the ghing, the base rout, and raskalitie of the Gallies, seru'd as then for no other vse, but to row towards the shore, when wee were so commanded, and to make prouision of boughes, or something else for shade, lest the heate of the Sunne should melt the tallow. All the cloathes that I brought aboord with mee into the Gally, I made show of them, and sold them; vvhich yeelded

mee some money, though not much, adding that, to that other little summe, which I brought with me, when I came out of Prison. Nor did I know in the world, how, or where I might secretly lay it vp, and keepe it safe, either to relieue mee in such necessities as vsually offer themselues, or to imploy it in some one thing or other, that I might haue a penny in my purse at a pinch. And for that I had neither Coffer, Chest, nor so much as a Deske, that had a Locke and Key to it, where I might safely lay it vp, it did some-what trouble me, not being able to deuise with my selfe, what I were best to doe with it. To carry it still about mee, were to runne the hazzard of beeing robb'd, or coozen'd of it by my owne Camerades: And to commit it to another bodies keeping, I had already too late experience of the ill correspondence in that kinde.

All I saw, was ill, it concern'd me to looke well vnto it, and to be-thinke my selfe, how I should dispose of it. At last (after long consideration) I resolued with my selfe, that I could not giue it a better or more secret place, then to clappe it in my bosome, and to lay it as neere to my heart as I could possibly bring it. Others put their hearts there, where they put their treasure: but I tooke a cleane contrary course, putting my treasure where my heart was.

Well, I got me a needle and thread, and clapping my Thimble on my finger, I fell to worke, and made mee vp a little Purse, about the bigneſſe of a Wax-kernell, which being strongly sowed, and quilted with many a sure stitch vpon that part of my shirt, which toucht vpon my heart, I bare it there, neuer suffering it to be out of my sight; and hauing still an eye vpon it, that it might bee the safer from its friends, and my enemies, who would bee euer and anon leering that way, casting a sheepes eye towards it; but hee, whose mouth watered most at it, and had a months minde to be doing with it, was a notable famous Thiefe, that was my Camerade, and sate next vnto mee, who could neuer come to filch it from mee, neither at mid-night, nor at at any other time, so surely did I guard it on that side. Yet was hee not wanting to doe his best; for, when he perceiu'd that I was asleepe, hee would goe groping heere and there, visiting euery part about mee with his hand; and for that the roomes were but few, and the houshold-stuffe that belong'd vnto them, not much, they were easily and quickly runne ouer. Hee had past ouer in a trice, a little Satchell that I had by my side, my Gabardine, and my Breeches; and was come now at last to my Waste-coat, which I might more properly haue termed my Soule: for that with its warmth, it did viuifie, and quicken the bloud, whereby it sustained it selfe, and was kept aliue. Wee both labour'd hard, hee to robbe, I to keepe. He was not so crafty, but I was as carefull. And if at any time I did strip my selfe naked, I vvould order the businesse so, that it should be impossible for him to take it from vnder mee, vnlesse he tooke mee away with it. Hee continued a long time in this his care to come by it, watching all opportunities to rob me of it.

Now, in the meane while, forasmuch as I did consider with my selfe, that whereſoeuer a man liues, hee had need of an Angell of guard to attend him vpon all occasions; I beganne to bethinke my selfe whom I should make choyse of to bee my Protector. And after that I had thorowly thought there-vpon, I could not finde out any fitter for my turne, then the Masters-Mate. For albeit it be true, that the Captaine, as Lord, and chiefe Commander of all the rest, is to bee accounted the onely Protector of vs all; yet, out of his authoritie and greatneſſe of his Place, hee will not trouble himselfe with this raskall rabble.

They are for the most part principall persons, and men of qualitie; they will not vouchsafe to looke so low; they reckon not of such poore snakes as

we

we be, nor take any notice who, or what we are. And I was the willinger to make this choyce, for that the Maſters-Mate was my neere neighbour, his Cabbin was cloſe by my Banke, by meanes whereof, I might the eaſier and more conueniently ſerue him. And ſo much the rather was I deſirous to ſettle vpon him, becauſe hee carried the Cudgell, and had the poſſeſsion of the ſalt Eele, which hee diſtributed amongſt vs, either more or leſſe, according as he fauour'd, or dis-fauour'd; paying ſome ſoundly, and letting others goe ſcot-free.

Thus by little and little, I went ſcruing my ſelfe into his ſeruice, getting more ground ſtill vpon him, and ſtriuing to out-ſtrip the reſt: As vvell in my attendance at his boord, as in hauing him to bed; I trickt vp his Cabbin, bruſht his Cloathes, kept them neat and handſome, lookt to his linnen, and was in euery other reſpect ſo diligent about him, that within a few dayes I was the onely man in his eye. Nor did I account it as a ſmall fauour, that hee would deigne mee a good looke: It ſeeming vnto mee, as oft as hee lookt vpon mee, that hee had beſtow'd a Bull (I meane not the Pizzle) vpon mee, and a free Indulgence from ſtripes, and that hee did thereby abſolue mee both *à culpa, & pœna*: From my fault, and the puniſhment thereof. But therein I was deceiued; for that they beeing naturally ſeuere and cruell, and that commonly ſuch kinde of ſterne and auſtere men are put into ſuch places, they neuer haue an eye to conſider courteſies, not ſeeking to requite good, but to puniſh ill.

They are a people, that will not acknowledge any thankefulneſſe, becauſe all that wee doe for them, they thinke to bee due vnto them. A nights I did ridde the Dandruffe out of his head, rubb'd his feet, fann'd his face, deſtroyed the Gnats, and waited on him with that obſeruance and punctualitie, that the greateſt Prince in the world could not bee better ſerued. And if they ſerue their Prince for loue, I did the like to the Maſters-Mate for feare; leſt the Hoope of a Hogs-head, or an Eeles tayle ſhould twine it ſelfe about my ſhoulders, which kinde of weapons they neuer goe without. And howbeit it bee true, that this manner of ſeruice is not ſo perfect, nor ſo noble as the other; yet feare makes men to take more heed. And now and then when I ſaw hee was waking, and had no minde to ſleepe, I would entertaine him with a merry Fable, or pleaſant Hiſtorie, to paſſe away the time the better. And I was neuer vnprouided of a company of witty ieſts, and fine conceits, to make his Worſhip laugh: It being no ſmall comfort to mee, to ſee him looke cheerefully. I grew in grace with him, and was very happy in this particular; yet am I ſo much priuieto mine owne worth, that it was no more then my good ſeruice did deſerue. So that now, hee would not that any other, ſaue my ſelfe, ſhould ſerue him in thoſe things, which gaue him the greateſt content. And I had more eſpeciall reaſon to eſteeme of this his fauour towards mee, in regard that hee had a Gally-ſlaue, before hee entertained me, that attended on his Perſon. Whom, though hee vſed well, yet hee went dayly pyning and conſuming away, that hee was very ſorry to ſee it. For, though hee led a better life then the reſt, and that hee lou'd him ſo well, that he fed him from his owne trencher, and beſtow'd the beſt morſels vpon him; yet was he like your *Gaeta*-colts, which the better you feed them, the worſe they proue.

One day, when wee were both together with him, waiting at the table, he ſaid vnto mee; I prethe (*Guzman*) tell mee (for thou art a Scholler, and an vnderſtanding fellow) what ſhould bee the reaſon, that *Fermin* being, at his firſt comming into the Gallies, of a very able body, ſtrong, fat, and luſty, and I hauing ſought to continue him ſtill in the ſame ſtate, by entertaining him into my ſeruice, and doing other friendly Offices for him, not eating that good morſell, whereof hee hath not a part, ſhould, the more I make of

him, fall (as thou ſeeſt) the more away? Whereunto I made anſwere; Sir, for to giue reſolution to this your queſtion, it will be needfull for me to relate vnto you another caſe, like vnto this, of a new Chriſtian, who had paſt thorow the hands of the Holy-Houſe, or (as we commonly call it) the Inquiſition.

A ſhort tale of a new Chriſtian that had one of the Inquiſition to to his neighbour.

This man was rich, and powerfull, liu'd honourably, and in a plentifull faſhion, led a merry life, waxed plump, and fat, had all things neate and handſome about him, and tooke much content in the houſe wherein he dwelt. Now it ſo fell out, that one of the Inquiſitors came and tooke a houſe, that was the very next doore to his; who, for no other reaſon in the world, ſaue only that he was ſo neere a neighbour vnto him, grewe ſo meager, and ſo leane thereupon, that within a very ſhort time, he was brought ſo lowe, and pined ſo faſt away, that he was nothing but ſkinne and bone. So that to both theſe, I ſhall giue Solution, by another the like accident, which I ſhall deliuer for truth vnto you, and thus it was:

A Storie of the King of Granada, *and his Fauourite* Buferiz.

Muley Almançor (who was King of *Granada*) had a great *Priuado*, or principall fauourite of his, who was called *el Alcayde Buferiz*; a very wiſe man, punctuall, truſty, and hauing many other good parts, worthy the great loue that his Lord and Maſter bare vnto him; for the which his King lou'd him ſo dearely, as alſo for the truſt and confidence that he had in him; (for there was not any difficulty in the world, which he would not wade thorow, ſo as it might make for his Maieſties ſeruice) And for that thoſe, that deſerue theſe kinde of honours, are euermore enuy'd by thoſe that are vnworthy of them, there were not ſome wanting, who, hearing the King ſpeake of his loue and affection towards this his Fauourite, ſaid vnto him; Sir, that your Maieſtie may ſee, whether that bee true or no, for which you ſo much commend your *Alcayde*; would you be pleaſed to make proofe of him in ſome buſines of importance, and wherein there is ſome difficultie; and then ſhall you finde, whether he be that maner of man, that you take him to bee: For by the diligence that he ſhall vſe therein, your Maieſtie ſhall truly knowe, whether his heart be with you or no. The King liked exceeding well of this motion, and ſaid; I will not only command him in a buſines that is difficult, but ſuch a one, as is impoſsible to be effected. And cauſing him forth-with to be called in, he ſaid vnto him; *Alcayde*, I haue a thing to giue you in charge, which you muſt accompliſh out of hand, vpon paine of my diſpleaſure, and the loſſe of my fauour; And this it is; I ſhall deliuer ouer vnto you, a good fat Weather, which you ſhall keepe at home in your owne houſe, you ſhall giue the ſame allowance of meat, as he was wont to haue heretofore, and more, if more hee will eate; and within a Moneth, you muſt returne him back vnto me, poore, and leane as a rake.

This poore Moore, whoſe deſire was neuer other, then to ſerue his King, & punctually to performe whatſoeuer hee ſhould bee pleaſed to cómaund him; howbeit he did beleeue, that he ſhould neuer be able to bring ſuch an impoſſibilitie as this, to paſſe; was not therewith diſmayed a whit, but readily, and with a cheerfull countenance receiuing the Weather, he cauſed it to be crary-ed home to his houſe, according as the King had commaunded: And there ſitting downe, and deuiſing with himſelfe, how he might bring this buſines about, and giue ſatisfaction to his Maſters deſire; hee began to ſet his wits aworke, and at laſt lighted vpon a ſtrange, yet a naturall conceit, which, he preſumed, would make much for his purpoſe, and cumply vvith the Kings commaund.

Hee cauſed two woodden Cages to bee made out of hand, both ſtrongly barr'd, and of equall bigneſſe, the which, he gaue order ſhould be placed very neere each to other; in one of the which he puts me the Weather, and in the other hard by him, a Wolfe: To the Weather, he gaue his full allowance; but

the Wolfe, he kept ſo ſhort, that he was ſtill exceeding hungry; And being almoſt famiſhed for want of meate, he did labour all that he could (thruſting his legges within the grates) to reach at the Weather, and to try if hee could come at him, and eate him. The fearefull Weather, being much troubled, and ſorry at the heart, to ſee himſelfe ſo neere his mortall enemy, although he did eate that which they gaue him, he did thriue ſo ill with it, out of the continuall feare that he was in, that he did not only not waxe fat, but pin'd away, till he was pure skinne and bone. By this courſe that he had taken with him, he returned at the time apoynted: the Weather back againe to his King, not failing in that he was commauned, nor falling from his accuſtomed grace and fauour.

Now that I may apply this Story to the purpoſe wee haue in hand; It ſeemeth vnto mee, that *Fermin* is growne leane and feeble, by beeing ſo neere about you, and by liuing in that grace and fauour with you, as he doth: And it is only the feare which he hath of you, whom he ſo much deſires to ſerue, that makes him to thriue no better then he does.

The Maſters-Mate was ſo well pleaſed with this Tale of mine, becauſe it fell out ſo pat to the purpoſe, that he preſently gaue order to haue me remoued from my Banke, receiuing me into his ſeruice, and giuing me the charge of his Wardrobe, and of his Table, for that hee had alwaies found me ſuitable to his deſires. Nor, (for all this fauour that he ſhewed vnto mee, which was very great in releaſing me from the obligation of a Slaue, and exerciſing ſuch duties, as were required in the Galley) would I forbeare (for mine owne pleaſure) to come ſometimes amongſt them, and to doe as they did; but would now and then, of mine owne accord, fall to my labour, that I might not bee to ſeeke, if out of neceſsity I ſhould chance to be put vnto it.

The exerciſes of your Gally-Slaues.

There did I learne to knit Stockins, to make falſe Dice, as your High-men, and your Low-men, ſetting two Aces one againſt another, or two Sixes on one Dye, for your Coggers and Cheaters, who, for the vſe that they made of them, would pay well for them. I likewiſe there learn'd to make Buttons, both of Silke, and of haire; as alſo dainty delicate Tooth-picks, of diuers ſundry inuentions, and colours, and neatly guilded; which none in the Galley could do beſides my ſelfe. My poyze being put into this ballãce; that is, ſtanding vpon theſe euen termes, we were forced to goe with our Galley to *Cadiz*, for Maſts, and Main-yards, Sayles, Pitch, Tarre, Tallowe, and the like neceſſaries; and this Voyage was the firſt, wherein I was put to any paines: For, being ſo much friended by the Maſters-Mate, as I was, they did not force me to doe any more worke, then what I would my ſelfe.

And for that this did not ſeeme to me, to bee a matter of any great labour, that I might not ſhewe my ſelfe an idle ſpectator, or that I did ſeeke to auoyd paines-taking, eſpecially, being that wee were not to giue the chaſe, or forced to betake our ſelues to flight; where, and in which caſes, we were to rowe for our liues, and to tugge with all the ſtrength and force that we had, at the Oare; And for that, when we were once in the Port, and had a good Hauen to friend, we did vſually lye quiet, and were neuer whipt, and had our intertainements, and paſtimes, preſuming that between Port, and Port, eſpecially being ſo neere, there needed not the ſinewes of an Oxe, to hale and pull; I would needs ſet my ſelfe to the Oare, only to try what manner of thing it was: But it was not ſo ſlight and eaſie a thing, as I tooke it to be: for (becauſe we were forced to goe towing the Maſts, and Main-yards) when wee came to caſt Anchor, I was nothing but wearines and ſweat, becauſe I would not leaue my Oare, nor giue occaſion to others to murmur, by withdrawing my hand from that, which for mine owne pleaſure I had voluntarily vndertaken. And this was the only, and ſole cauſe, why ſo ſoone, and ſo ſoundly, (after I had had my Maſter to bed) I fell aſleepe, falling like a ſtone, flat to the

ground; giuing very good ſignes and tokens thereof to my Camerades, who heard me now to doe that, which they had neuer heard me doe before; to wit, to ſnort like a yong ſucking Pigge. That Traytour of mine owne Banke, was the firſt (as being neereſt vnto me) that heard me rout; and calling ſoftly to another of my fellowes that was his Conſort, one that was his very good friend, and whom he might beſt truſt, acquainted him with his deſire, and the good occaſion that was now offered, to robbe me of that little money that I had. They ioyn'd both together, as well in the manner of ſharing it, as of taking it from me. Which they had gone cleare away with, if I had not had the *Alcalde* to friend. They tooke it as eaſily from mee, as they could wiſh; paſsing it preſently from Banke to Banke, to the further end of the Galley; perſwading themſelues, that becauſe it was night, and not perceiued by any, both of them ſtiffely denying it, they ſhould, without any more adoe, carry away the prey, and deuide the ſpoyle between them.

Guzman rob'd by the Galley-Slaues.

Now, when it was day, they all began to wake, and I amongſt the reſt, got vp, heauie of ſleepe, but light of purſe: for that weight which I was wont to feele lying vpon my heart, I felt no more; and it did much trouble me, that it did not trouble me. I lookt about, and found my money gone; I was ſtrooke as dead as a doore-nayle; death was in my face, and I knew not what to doe. If I held my peace, I ſhould heare no more newes of it, but muſt giue it for loſt; and if I ſhould ſpeake thereof, I ſhould roaſt all my part thereof (as the Prouerb is) vpon my finger, and put all in mine eye, that I ſhould get by the bargaine. Now was I put out of the poſſeſſion of that which I had inioyed ſo long; Whereupon I ſaid with my ſelfe; If he that hath taken it from me, will giue me no thankes for it, much leſſe ſhall I reape any benefit from him; better it were notwithſtanding, that he ſhould keeepe it, that has it, for it may be, that at ſome time or other, he will not be wanting to make ſome acknowledgement thereof; and he at laſt may come to be puniſhed, who did mee this wrong: at leaſt, he will eate his meate with ſorrow, when hee ſees he ſhall reape no profit by it. But this Counſaile did not pleaſe mee.

Now, when the Maſters-Mate was ready to riſe, I brought him his cloathes and while he was making himſelfe ready, I made him a long relation of my mis-fortune, making him (to my coſt) to knowe, and to touch, as it were with the hande the miſerie of thoſe men, who hauing purſt vp a few pence with a great deale of labour and paines-taking, earning it very hardly, are, either by miſchance, or by a pilfering hand, depriued thereof in an inſtant: Telling him moreouer, that I had brought thoſe moneys from *Seuill*, amongſt which, I had likewiſe put thoſe other, which I had made of my cloathes that I ſold, when I came aboord the Galley, which I kept as charily as I could for my life, that I might there-with either relieue my neceſsities, when occaſion ſhould ſerue, or elſe imploy it on ſome one thing or other, that might yeeld me profit. And as I was opening my minde thus vnto him, I likewiſe opened my boſome, and ſhew'd him the falſe ſtuffing, wherein I had put it, the mold, or indented marke whereof, theſe Theeues had left behinde them, being for all the world, ſuch a kinde of print, as a Hare leaues in her Forme, when ſhe is newly gone out of it.

It ſeemed to the Maſters-Mate, that this that I told him, was an euident truth, and giuing credit vnto me, ſtrengthened the more in his beliefe by this empty Forme, where the Hare was vſ'd to ſit, as alſo, out of the loue that hee bare vnto me, he commaunded the two fore-Bankes, and ſix other that were in the rere, to be had in *Coram nobis*; whereupon, the *Alguazils* ſeruant, cõming amongſt them with a good Ropes end, (which your Sea-faring men call a ſalt Eele) gaue euery one of them fifty ſound blowes apiece, which made the wheales to bunch out vpon their backs, leauing the skinne clinging

The manner of the beating of your Gally-Slaues.

cloſe

cloſe vnto them : Examining firſt euery one by himſelfe, whether he had ſeene or heard of this ſtolne money ? And after they had beene well laſht, they waſht them with ſalt, and tart Vineger, rubbing their wounds there-with, leauing their backes and ſides ſo rent and torne, as if they had not beene men.

When this theft hapned, there was by chance a Gypſie that was not then aſleepe, when my purſe was ſtolne, and when his turne came to receiue his payment, hee confeſt, that hee had ſeene his Companion, the night before, riſe from his owne Banke, and to goe to mine, but why, or wherefore he knew not.

When that Slaue perceiu'd that hee ſpake of him, and that hee had charg'd him in this maner, he ſtarted vp on his feet, and ſaid; That he was intangled in that chaine, which belonged to the other Banke, and that hee had ſprained his foot thereby, it being wrung and wrenched by it, and that hee was faine, (for to giue himſelfe eaſe) to clamber ouer thither, to diſ-intangle himſelfe. But becauſe this reaſon was too weake to hold water, and carried not that faireneſſe with it, as to bee taken for a iuſt excuſe, and much leſſe with thoſe, who knew well inough on which foot hee halted, they tooke him preſently to taske, and had many more ſtripes beſtowed vpon him then any of the reſt. And the Maſters-Mate was ſo angry with the *Alguazils* ſeruant, becauſe hee did not lay them on ſo ſoundly as hee would haue him, that hee gaue order, that hee ſhould preſently haue as many beſtow'd vpon him; beſides a great many more which hee himſelfe with his owne hand laid vpon him with the Hoope of a Hogs-head. And in this his cholericke humour, (for he was now mightily moued) hee forth-with commanded, that they ſhould take the delinquent in hand againe, and baſte him as long as they could ſtand ouer him; who (poore man) had more then inough before. But when hee ſaw that hee muſt goe to this geare againe, he then began to thinke with himſelfe, that the Maſters-Mate would neuer giue him ouer, till hee had confeſt the truth, and therefore held it to bee his beſt courſe, to deale plainely and truely with him, vvho had the money, by what meanes they came by it, and the plot that they had laid to get it from mee, excuſing himſelfe the beſt that hee could, as that he had no purpoſe of himſelfe to doe it, and that he had neuer entred into the buſineſſe, had he not otherwiſe been drawne into it.

Guzman *recouers his loſt money.*

Well, hee was well laſht afterwards for his offence, and my money was returned backe vnto mee, which I receiued with a very good-will from my Maſters hand, aduiſing mee withall, that I ſhould imploy it, making profit thereof, for hee ſhould bee well pleaſed vvith any thing that vvere for my good.

My good fortune (like froth) beganne to increaſe more and more, in regard that I gaue my Maſter ſuch good content. And the Gallies beeing to goe forth, which were to ioyne with thoſe of *Naples*, vpon a certaine imployment at Sea, I got mee a-ſhore, hauing a Souldiour of guard to bee my keeper, and to looke to my ſafe returne, where I imployed all that little money that I had, in matters of victuallage, which preſently from my ſetting forth from thence would double the coſt, and it ſucceeded well with me. Out of that gaines, (with my Maſters leaue) I made mee a ſute after the faſhion of an old Gally-ſlaue, or one that had beene of ancient ſtanding amongſt them, Hoſe and Waſtecoat of black Buckram, liſted and welted handſomely in the ſeames, which (it being then the Summer ſeaſon) was cooler and freſher for me, and fitter for my turne.

Now (thinking vpon my former mis-fortunes) I beganne to haue a glimpſe of that light, which they inioy, who follow Vertue, and proteſting with a firme reſolution, and ſettled conſtancie, rather to dye, then doe a baſe

a baſe action; I did onely ſtudy, how I might ſerue my Maſter, how I might pleaſe his humour, and giue him all content, how I might keepe his cloathes, his Cabbin, and his table cleane and neat.

Guzman diſcourſes, and tels vs, that it is onely Vertue and Goodneſſe, that brings a man to Heauen.

And as I was thinking and conſidering on theſe things, I ſaid one night with my ſelfe; *Guzman*, thou ſeeſt heere the top of that Mountaine of miſeries, where-vnto thy filthy ſenſualitie hath brought thee: now art thou come to the higheſt part of it, and muſt either make a ſpeedy leape downe to the bottomleſſe pit of hell, or which thou mayſt more eaſily doe, by lifting vp thy armes, take hold on Heauen. Thou ſeeſt now the care that thou haſt to ſerue thy Maſter, for feare of a few ſtripes, vvhich being giuen to day, are not felt to morrow. Thou doeſt watch late, riſe vp early, thou art diligent, carefull, and ſollicitous in ſeeking out new Inuentions, where-with to delight him, and to purchaſe his fauour, which when thou haſt obtained, is but of a man, and a Maſters-Mate. And this is the moſt thou canſt make of him.

Now thou well knoweſt, and canſt not be ignorant of it, for thou haſt beene a profeſt Student, and haſt ſtudied that point; how much leſſe God requires at thy hands, and how much more he hath to conferre vpon thee, and how farre a greater friend hee is, then any man can be vnto thee.

Rouze vp thy ſelfe therefore, and awake from this heauy ſleepe, which oppreſſeth thy ſoule; Returne home vnto thy ſelfe; and conſider, that though it be true, that thy ſinnes haue brought thee hither, yet ſo apply this thy puniſhment vnto thee, and lay it ſo neere to thy heart, that thou mayſt make good vſe of it, and that it may turne to thy good. Thou haſt ſought after a ſtocke to imploy it for thy profit; ſeeke now to obtaine eternall happineſſe, and lay out all that thou haſt, that thou maiſt buy it. For it is a Iewell of ineſtimable worth, it cannot be valued. Theſe thy troubles, theſe thy miſeries which thou indureſt, this thy care which thou takeſt to ſerue this thy Maſter, put it all to Gods account, and bee as diligent in ſeruing him. Charge him alſo with that, which thou art to loſe hereafter, and hee will beare the burthen of that charge; hee will leſſen thine, and adde it to his owne account. With this thou maiſt buy grace, which if here-tofore it bore no price with thee, (for euen the beſt deſeruings of all the Saints that euer were, cannot raiſe ſuch a ſtocke, whereby to be able to buy it, till their merits meet with thoſe of our Sauiour Chriſt) now make much of it; and the rather ſeeing that Chriſt, that he may communicate this his grace vnto vs, is willingly become our brother.

What brother did euer forſake a good and a louing brother? Serue him but with a ſigh, with a teare, or with a true heart-ſorrow, grieuing for thy ſinnes; and being angry and offended with thy ſelfe, that thou haſt offended ſo good a brother: And ſo by giuing him that which thou haſt, hee will ioyne thy ſtocke with his owne, and making it of an infinit price, not by thine, but his merits, thou ſhalt enioy life euerlaſting.

Guzmans conuerſion.

In this diſcourſe vvith my ſelfe, and in other, which roſe out of this, I ſpent a great part of the night, ſhowring downe teares in aboundance, and waxing now heauy with the griefe for my ſinnes, I fell aſleepe; and when I awakt, I found my ſelfe another manner of man then I was before. I had caſt off my old heart, and put on a new one in its place. I gaue thankes vnto God for this my regeneration, and that hee had renued his ſpirit aright in me, humbly beſeeching him, that he would vphold me with his holy hand, and ſtrengthen mee with his grace.

Preſently vpon this, I treated of the frequent Confeſsion of my ſinnes, and of the reformation of my life, and of the cleanſing of my conſcience; in which good deliberation, I continued many dayes; but I was fleſh and bloud. I did ſtill ſtumble, almoſt at euery ſtep, and now and then tooke a fall.

fall. But for any proceeding in my accuſtomed euill actions, I was much amended, and went from that time forward reforming my former courſe of life. Howbeit, for that I had exerciſed my ſelfe ſo much in my fore-paſſed ill deportments, I was ſtill pointed at with the finger for a wicked man, which name I could neuer claw off, but did ſticke cloſe vnto me. For this is an euill, that followes euill men; that euen thoſe good actions vvhich they doe, leaue a iealouſie and ſuſpition behinde them, and occaſion, as it were, ſcandall to ſuch as ſee them. For, though we doe them neuer ſo well, & with an vpright heart, yet are wee held to bee but Hypocrites. We haue a common Prouerbe amongſt vs; *Que ſe ſacan por las Viſperas, los dias Santos*: That by the Veſpers, we come to know the Feaſts of the Saints. So they, by my precedent actions, would iudge of the future.

Prouerb. Se ſacan por las Viſperas, los dias ſantos.

But to giue the world leaue to cenſure things as they liſt, let him that would faine know whether hee ſtand in the ſtate of grace, or no, and liue in Gods loue and fauour, looke, and conſider with himſelfe, how God worketh with him, and he ſhall eaſily come to know it. Vſe thy beſt endeuours; doe that, which (as a good Chriſtian) thou art bound to doe: ſo ſhall thy workes bee acceptable in his ſight, and thou ſhalt know (like *Abel*) that God is well pleaſed with this thy ſacrifice, and that hee hath ſet his eyes vpon thee.

Marke and obſerue, whether hee vſes thee no worſe, then hee vſes himſelfe; for this is a ſure and infallible ſigne, that thy Lord loues thee, when of the ſame bread that hee eateth; of the ſame cloathes which hee weareth; of the ſame table, where hee takes his meales; of the ſame ſeat, vvhereon he ſitteth; of the ſame Wine, whereof he drinketh; of the ſame bed, whereon he lyeth; he makes no difference betweene thee and him, but is as it were all one. What did God inioy? What did God loue? What did God ſuffer? Troubles.

Troubles, the ſignes of Gods loue towards vs.

Now then, when God ſhall ſhare theſe with thee, hee ſhewes that hee loues thee. Thou art his Minion, he feaſts thee, and makes much of thee; Be thou ſo wiſe as to receiue theſe things thankefully, and to make profit of them. Nor doe thou thinke, that God refuſes to giue thee thine owne hearts deſire, thy pleaſures, thy contentments, riches, and large poſſeſsions, or what elſe may delight thee, for that he is cloſe fiſted, niggardly, or couetous; for if thou art willing to ſee the worth of theſe worldly comforts, turne but thine eye aſide, and looke vpon thoſe that poſſeſſe them in greateſt aboundance. But who are theſe? Euen Moores, Infidels, and Heretiques. But God runnes a contrary courſe with his friends, with thoſe that are his elected, and beſt beloued children; the cheriſhments, and blandiſhments, that he beſtowes vpon them, are pouerty, afflictions, and perſecutions. O had I but knowne ſo much heretofore, as I doe now, and that God would haue been pleaſed to haue inlightened my vnderſtanding, that I might haue truely ſeene, and lookt into my former errours, I might haue benefited my ſelfe in another kinde of manner, then I did at that time.

I am the willinger to deliuer this vnto you, for that when I made this Diſcourſe with my ſelfe, I did doe it truly, and with all my heart. And albeit I am not worthy to merit thereby any reward, (being ſo great a ſinner as I am) yet notwithſtanding, this little crumme, this poore drop, this ſmall ſparke, had its reward at that very inſtant, that ſlender repentance of mine, that my reſolution (though weake) to doe good, and that good beginning which I had put my ſelfe into, was not without its paiment.

As ſoone as I had re-gained my moneys, new perſecutions, and new troubles beganne to grow vpon mee. Would to God that I had beene ſo conſiderate, as I ought to haue beene. He ſtript mee of that contentment, wherein I now liu'd; and hee beganne to touch mee to the quicke, and to beat

me

me with many ſtripes. That ſmall ſhade of Iuy, (which like *Ionas* Gourd, did keepe mee from the ſcorching of the Sunne) was loſt, and quite taken from mee; it was dry'de vp, and withered, there was a worme bred in the root of it, which had waſted and conſumed it; ſo that I was forced to lye open to the heates, ſuffering new calamities, and new troubles, and ſuch as I neuer thought on, without any cauſe giuen by mee, or any the leaſt ſigne of offence, hauing no way deſerued ſuch hard meaſure. But ſtay thy Pen, and ingeniouſly confeſſe, that ſuch miſeries and afflictions as theſe, are that hidden treaſure in the field, ſo highly commended vnto vs. And ſince thou haſt patiently heard me hitherto, for thine owne pleaſure, heare mee now another while for mine; and hearken a little to the remainder of my misfortunes, where-vnto I ſhall giue an end, in the next enſuing Chapter.

CHAPTER IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which hapned vnto him in the Gallies: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence.*

A ſhort Story of a Painter, with its application.

THere was a famous Painter, who was ſo excellent in his Art, that he had not his fellow in all the world. Vpon the fame and report of whoſe admirable pieces of worke, there came a Gentleman to his houſe, and going into the roome, where hee drew his pictures, hee agreed with him, that he ſhould paint for him in a Table, a very faire and beautifull Horſe, with rich furniture, and gracefully ſet forth, who being looſe, ſhould ſeeme to runne away as faſt as his legges could carry him. The Painter performed this piece of worke with all poſsible perfection, and ſhew'd therein the vtmoſt of his skill. And hauing fully finiſht it, he placed it there where the colours might ſooneſt grow dry?

Now, when the Gentleman came to ſee how this his worke vvent forward, and to know how farre hee had proceeded therein, the Painter made haſte to ſhew it him, telling him hee had already ended it. And for that, when hee ſet forth this Table a drying, the Painter did not greatly care (as a thing that was nothing materiall) to ſet it after this, or that other manner, more one then another: So that the horſe ſtood (as hee had then placed the Table) with his feet vpward, and his Saddle downeward.

The Gentleman, when hee lookt vpon it, it ſeeming vnto him not to bee the ſame, which hee had be-ſpoken, ſaid vnto him; Sir, the Horſe that I wiſht you to make me, was to be drawne running away; and this rather ſeemes to lye tumbling on the ground. The diſcreet Painter, mildly made anſwere; It ſeemeth, Sir, that you haue no great inſight in painting; the Picture is the ſame, that you pretend, if your Worſhip will bee but pleaſed to turne the Table. Whereupon, that part that was downe-ward, was turned vpward; Which done, the Gentleman viewing it againe, reſted very well contented there-with, as well for the goodneſſe of the workmanſhip, as that thereby he was taught to know his owne errour.

If wee conſider the handy-workes of God, they will oftentimes ſeeme vnto vs like this Horſe, that lyes tumbling and wallowing on the ground; but if we ſhall but turne this Table, wrought by the penſill of that ſupreme Artizan, that painted to the life both Heauen and earth, beautifying the one with Sunne, Moone, and Starres; the other, with all variety of colours, in Flowers,

flowers, fruites, and the like; we ſhall finde, that this is the piece that wee would haue, and that the worke is done to it's full perfection.

Troubles (as I told you a little before) ſeeme harſh and ſharp vnto vs: we haue not (no more then had this ignorant Gentleman) the true diſcerning of them aright; there are fewe that vnderſtand them as they ſhould; but when he that ſends them vnto vs, ſhews that mercy vnto vs, which is laid vp in them, then we ſhall ſee them in their true ſhape and colours, and ſhall take great pleaſure and delight in them.

Amongſt all the Slaues that were in the Galley, there was none of them like vnto me, either in their good vſage, or in the knowledge of giuing ſuch good content as I did, to my Maſter. But the pinne in Fortunes wheele ſlipt out, & vp came I in ſuch a ſtrange kind of māner, as the like was neuer ſeene.

It hapned at that time, that there came a Gentleman into our Galley, who bare our Captaines name, and was alſo of kinne vnto him, to learne experience, and to ſee ſome ſeruice. He was rich, well clad, better behau'd, and ware about his neck a maſsie chaine of gold, Soldier-like, being iuſt ſuch another for all the world, as I was vſ'd to haue heretofore. He dieted in the Poope; he had a good garniſh of Plate; and ſeruants, that waited vpon him, well and handſomly ſuited: But it ſo fell out, that the very next day after his imbarking, there were eighteene linkes of his chaine miſsing, which were no leſſe worth, then fifty Crownes. Sure, ſome of his owne ſeruants muſt needes haue them: for there were none, that came into the Poope-roome, but ſuch as were knowne perſons, and free from all ſuſpicion: Yet notwithſtanding, for the better cleering of this doubt, all the Captaines ſeruants were put to the laſh, yet for all that, was there no newes to be heard of them, they could neuer heare of them more, nor get any the leaſt inckling thereof in the world, nor is it knowne till this day who ſtole them, or what became of them.

And for the better excuſing hereafter of the like misfortune, the Captaine came to his kinſeman, and told him, that his beſt and ſureſt courſe was, that for the time that he ſtay'd there, he ſhould commit the charge of his apparell, and Iewels, to ſome truſty Galley-Slaue, who might take care of them and keepe them neate and handſome; aſſuring him, that what-ſoeuer hee ſhould deliuer to any one of their cuſtodies, they durſt as well be hang'd, as not giue him a true account of it, and that there ſhould not bee ſo much as a haire miſsing, of any thing that he ſhould truſt them withall.

This Gentleman liked very well of his counſaile; and making afterwards inquirie, who in all the Galley might be the fitteſt man for him, and the moſt ſufficient, I was the only man they made choyce of, as being recommended vnto them, for the good ſatisfaction that I would giue him in my vnderſtanding, my diligencie in attending his perſon, and for my cleanlines about my ſelfe, as alſo any thing that was my maſters. When the Gentleman had heard of theſe my good qualities, and how I was likewiſe able to intertaine him with witty ieſts, & merry conceits, hee thought the time long, till hee might ſee me in the Poope. So in all haſte, they called the Maſters-Mate vnto them, and being intreated to part with me, he could not deny them their requeſt, although it grieu'd him much, for the good ſeruice that hee receiued from mee; They clapt a long chaine to my legge, which I trailed after mee; and I was no ſooner come vnto him, but he was very glad to ſee me, and ſpake very kindely vnto me: and I thinke the rather, for that my feature, my face, and my actions, were anſwerable to that which he had heard of me. It did ſomwhat grieue him, to ſee mee (like a Monky) ty'd thus to a chaine, and to drawe it after mee. He intreated the Captaine, that hee would fauour me ſo farre, that I might walke vp and downe with one only fetter; which was graunted: By which meanes, I was inabled to doe him the quicker and nimbler

bler ſeruice, as well whē he ſate without at his meales, as when he was within his Cabbin, as alſo, in going to & fro in the Gally, when occaſion was offred. I had an Inuentorie deliuered vnto me, of all his apparell and Iewels; whereof, I ſtill gaue him a very good accompt; But that which he and I, had leaſt affiance in, and were moſt iealous of, was, of his owne ſeruants: For now that I had the charge of his *recamera*, his Wardrobe, or whatſoeuer elſe was appertaining vnto him, they might eaſily excuſe themſelues of ſuch things, as they could ſteale cleanly from me. They cabbin'd with the Chaplaine, neere to the maine Maſt: and the Gentleman, he had his cabbin within the Poope; and I, in a little Diſpenſe, or Pantrie, where I kept ſome *regalos*, and dainties, beſides other neceſſary prouiſion.

I liked very well of my ſeruice, though I tooke a great deale of paines, but it was a pleaſure vnto me, and gaue me much content, that I had now the power, by thoſe things that paſt thorow my hands, to performe many kindneſſes toward ſuch Slaues as were my friends and acquaintance: and albeit I was willing to haue done the like towards *Soto*, my old *Camerade*, yet I could not get within him, nor come to faſten any kindnes vpon him; I wiſh't his goodas mine owne, but he did all me the ſpight that he could, diſcrediting and diſgracing me, telling ſome things truly of me, and inuenting other-ſome, like vnto thoſe, at what time we were taken, and committed to priſon, defaming me, as much as did lye in him, broaching whatſoeuer hee knew of me, not leauing any one thing vn-ript vp, for the manifeſting of his malice, and my ſhame: ſo that, albeit I, for mine owne part, were priuy to my ſelfe, how much I was now reformed; yet thoſe that heard him thus exclaime againſt me, would make interpretation of them, as they ſtood affected, and comment vpon them, as they themſelues liſted. And though God, at that inſtant, ſhould haue giuen mee the power to haue wrought Miracles, they would not haue ſtik't to haue ſaid, that I had done them in *Belzebub's* name.

Soto, was the knife, that ſought to cut my throat; the point, or edge thereof, was ſtill towards me: yet neuer did any man heare me ſpeake ſo much as one foule word of him, or euer open my mouth againſt him, or make ſhow of any the leaſt choller, at this his abuſing me; I made no reckoning of it, but let it paſſe as lightly as I could, all my whole care being now taken vp, in the diligent atending of my new Maſter, and in doing him all faithfull ſeruice, that I might procure his loue and good liking towards me; hoping it might one day ſo fall out, that either by him, or by ſome other, in recompence of my good ſeruice, I might chance to purchaſe my liberty.

When he came out of his Cabbin, I was ſtil at hand to receiue him; when he ſet his feet to come downe the ladder, I lent him my hand, at his entering, and returning out of the Cock-Boate; I made him Tooth-picks for his Table, putting them vpon a plate, when he ſate downe to his meate; which, being many, & maruailous curious, hee would often ſend for tokens to his friends. His Trencher-plates, and thoſe his other veſſels for the cooling of his wine, his Cups, and his Glaſſes, were ſo cleanly kept, ſo neate, and ſo in euery point as they ſhould be, that it was a pleaſure to the eye to behold them. His bottles of Wine, and his iarrs of water, freſh and ſweet; the wooll of the Mattreſſes whereon he lay, kept vnknotty, and ſoft; his whole bedding ſo well look't to, that there was not a Flea to be found in it, nor any the like troubleſom vermin: for as my leaſure would giue me leaue, it was my daily exerciſe, to goe a hunting after them, ſtopping thoſe holes and chinkes, where there was any the leaſt ſuſpition of their breeding, that my Maſter might not only be free from Fleas, and *Chinches*, but the bad ſent which they haue with them.

So great was my diligence, and ſo pleaſing the whole manner of my proceeding vvith him, that my Maſter had now left off conuerſing with his other ſeruants, and would at large diſcourſe with mee of graue and weighty matters;

ters; but dealt therein with mee as your Diſtillers vſe to doe; he did Limbecke me, and ſqueeze what hee could from mee; and when hee had exhauſted from mee that iuice and ſubſtance, which was for his turne, and as much as hee deſired at that time to draw from me, he would pauſe awhile vpon the matter, or to ſpeake more plainely, was halfe iealous of mee, that I was not ſo complete, and perfect as I ſhould bee, nor had not that true touch and relliſh, which properly appertaineth to your purer diſtillations. And all for the ſmacke of one Herbe, which was that euill report, which *Soto* had giuen of mee. But his virulent tongue could not make mee wrong Vertue: I went as faſt on in doing well, as he did in ſpeaking ill: as well, that my actions might giue him the lye, as alſo for that I now minded no other thing, then to runne on ſtill in that good reſolution, which I had propoſed to my ſelfe.

When I waited on him at Table, I would out now and then with a merry Tale, or ſome odde conceited ieſt or other. And a-nights, or at other ſuch times as hee was diſpoſed to take a nap, I would chat one thing or other to him, that I might keepe him ſtill cheerefull and merry. And the rather, for that of late hee was growne ſome-what melancholly, vpon a Letter that hee had receiued but a few dayes before from a graue perſonage, to whom hee was much obliged, who all his life-time could neuer be drawne himſelfe to marry, and was now wonderfull inſtant with this Gentleman my Maſter that hee would get him a Wife. Perceiuing therefore how ſadde hee was, I made bold to aske him the reaſon, why hee was ſo penſiue. He told it me; and did likewiſe aske my aduice, what hee were beſt to doe in this caſe? I told him; Me thinkes (Sir) that the fitteſt anſwere, which is to bee giuen to ſuch a one, who hath beene ſo auerſe from marriage himſelfe, and would now inforce others there-vnto, at leaſt ſeeke to perſwade them vnto it, is, That you are well content to doe ſo, if hee will giue you one of his daughters to Wife. My Maſter was well pleaſed with the counſell I gaue him, reſoluing with himſelfe to take that courſe which I had preſcribed vnto him. And continuing talke till it was dinner time, he will'd mee to tell him, being I had beene twice married, how I liked that kinde of life.

Touching Marriage.

I told him, Sir, a good and peaceable marriage, where loue, and condition of the parties ſtand vpon equall termes, it is a glory; it is an enioying both of earth and Heauen; it is a ſtate for thoſe, who make choiſe thereof, out of a deſire to be ſaued thereby, of ſo great perfection, and of ſuch exceeding both content, and comfort, that for to treat of ſuch a ſubiect, it will require the relation of ſuch a tongue, as hath taſted the true happineſſe thereof. But for my ſelfe, who made Matrimony a matter of money, and more for pleaſure, then propagation, as I did, I know not what to ſay vnto it; I haue deſeruedly paid the price of that ſinne, by this my preſent puniſhment, which I now indure.

Worthy Wiues, who are they?

Wicked wiues, and which are they?

There are ſome women (I muſt confeſſe) who by their wiſedome, and diſcreet carriage, haue reduced to very good order and conformitie, as peruerſe and wicked men, as any are in the world. And there are other ſome againe, that will make the beſt tempered, and the holyeſt men aliue, to loſe all patience, though he he able to ſuffer neuer ſo much. Look but vpon *Iob's* wife, and ſee into what a deſperate humour ſhe would faine haue put her Husband; how did ſhe perſecute him, and how much did it import him, to haue recourſe vnto God, and onely to defend himſelfe more from her, then from all other his perſecutions, and afflictions?

Opinions of Marriage.

And therefore three friends being together in conuerſation; the one ſaid; Happy is that Man, that hath the good hap to match with a good Wife. But more happy (ſaid the other) who buries her quickly, if ſhee proue vntoward. And the third ſaid; Moſt happy is hee, that hath neither t'one nor t'other.

A Tale teaching a man how to be rid of a bad Wife.

How much an importunate Wife and of an ill condition, doth torment and vexe a man, let that *Prouenzall* tell it you, who being quite wearied and tyred out with a shrewd Wife, and being vnable any longer to indure her harsh behauiour, and not knowing in the world, how to correct these her malignant humours, that he might without scandall rid himselfe of her, hee was resolued to goe and make merry with his Wife and all his Family, at a house that hee had in the Countrey, that was not farre off, it lying in his way, to passe by the skirt of a Mountaine, adioyning close vpon *Rodanus*, a great and swift Riuer; which in that very part of it, for that it vvas narrow, and past along betweene two Mountaines, was very deepe, and ranne with a furious Currant. Hee tooke order that the Mule which his Wife was to ride on, had not for three dayes before, one drop of water giuen her; so that, when she came to the place afore-said, and that she saw the water, there was no holding of her backe, but hastning downe the hanging of the Hill, from one ridge to another, shee got to the Riuer; from whence, it being impossible to turne her about, and to get vp againe against the steepinesse of the Cliffe, nor being able with all the force she had, to reyne her in, they both rushed into the Riuer, where the woman was drowned, & the Mule with much adoe escaped; but came out so weake, and so weary, that she was scarce able to stand vpon her legges.

A Tale of certain Thrushes.

For those which neuer knew what marriage meant, and yet desire to bee informed what manner of thing it is, I may for a patterne set before their eyes, that which passed with those Thrushes the Summer following that they were hatcht, and ready to fly abroad and shift for themselues. There was a great Shole of them gathered together, as if all the Thrushes in the world had ioyn'd in one muster, and were such a cloud of them, when they were vpon their wings, that they seemed to darken the ayre, and by their interposition betwixt the Sunne and the Earth, to make an Eclipse.

And when all this iolly company were assembled, and met together, they rais'd their Campe, and marched away together, to seeke out some better place to liue in, (for that yeere, their owne Countrey failed them of that plenty, which it was wont to afford them;) so at last they entred into a very goodly Countrey, that was full of Gardens and Orchards, and fresh Fields, where there were many pleasant Fruits, and other delicate feeding for them; where they vvere very willing to set vp their rest, it seeming vnto them, to bee a place not onely of much recreation and delight, but of sufficient sustenance and maintenance for them. But when the Inhabitants of that Countrey saw how they flocked together, they spred their nets, made ginnes, and pit-fals for them, and by little and little went taking and destroying of them.

The poore Thrushes, seeing themselues thus persecuted, and that they could not safely feed there, nor rest in quiet, they sought out another place that might make better for their purpose, which they found as pleasant, and as plentifull as the former; but they tasted heere of the same sauce, as they did there; which made them likewise to fly for feare from that danger which hung ouer their heads.

Thus did they trauell vp and downe from place to place, till that they being in a manner almost all destroy'd, those few that were left aliue, agreed to returne home to their owne Countrey. When their fellow-Thrushes that stayd at home, saw them returne so faire, and fat, they said vnto them; O how happy are you, and how wretched are we? Wee stayd heere behinde, and you see how weake, and how poore wee be; but you are come home in that good case, your feathers so smooth, and so sleeke, that it is a pleasure to looke vpon them; and your bodies so plumpe, and so well fed, that yee can scarce fly, yee be so fat; whereas we through pure hunger, are scarce able

to

to ſtand vpon our legges, and when we are on our wings, are ready through faintneſſe to fall to the ground.

Where-vnto theſe welcome-home Trauellers returned this anſwere: The eyes of your conſideration reach no farther, then to this our fatneſſe; but if you would be pleaſed to weigh with your ſelues, how many of vs went from hence, and how few of vs are returned home aliue, you would rather reſt contented with your poore, but ſecure fare; then with this our fatneſſe, and full feeding, ſo full of dangers.

They who looke onely on the pleaſures of Marriage, and goe no farther, where they may ſee ſcarce ten of ten thouſand, to come off cleere, and eſcape the danger of it, will thinke better of a ſingle life, then of Marriage; and that it is farre better and ſafer to be alone, then ill accompanied.

Whileſt we were in this Diſcourſe, dinner was ſeruing in, and the cloth being laid, I waited as I was wont to doe; hauing my eyes ſtill fixed on my Maſters hands, that hee might not wagge a finger, but I might bee in readineſſe to apprehend and execute his thoughts. But whileſt I was thus watchfull about my Maſter, *Soto* was not ſleeping in the meane while to worke me a miſchiefe.

And when he ſaw all his former malice could not worke mee out of fauour, nor doe mee any harme, with ſheere money hee went about to purchaſe out his reuenge vpon mee. He grew into a League of friendſhip vvith my Maſters Page, ſuch another Bird as himſelfe, for that bribes had corrupted him, and priuate intereſt drawne him to be thus diſhoneſt towards me. He promiſed him a dainty fine payre of Stockins of his owne knitting, and told him, that he would beſtow them vpon him, if (as he waited at the Table, he could handſomely ſteale a piece of Plate from thence, and hide it in ſome ſecret place in my Pantry, that I might not know of it. For, in ſo doing, he ſhould effect two good things. Firſt, he ſhould gaine a good paire of Stockins by the bargaine. And ſecondly, himſelfe, and his other fellow ſeruants, ſhould by this meanes be receiued againe into fauour, and I caſt out.

Soto *his malice towards* Guzman.
His plot to diſgrace him.

The Page did not like amiſſe of this motion; and taking occaſion that day to goe downe, he tooke vp a Siluer Plate, which (by lifting vp a little boord) he hid in one of the ſides of the Gallie.

Now when the cloth was taken away, going to gather vp my Plates (as my manner was) that I might make them cleane, finding one of them wanting, I made diligent ſearch for it; and when I had ſearcht euery corner, and could not finde it, I preſently gaue notice, that I miſt ſuch a Plate; to the end that ſome diligence might be vſed, for the ſooner recouerie of it, vvith thoſe his ſeruants that appertained to the Poope.

The Captaine and my Maſter did beleeue what was truth at the firſt; but becauſe my enemy *Soto* bare witneſſe againſt mee, it was voiced out amongſt them, that my ſelfe, abuſing the fauour that I had with my Maſter, had ſtolne it, and conuayd it away, that I might lay the fault vpon others, and ſo goe away with it my ſelfe. This roguiſh Page, did put a helping hand here-vnto, and did all that he could to diſgrace me; So that now the doores beganne to be ſet open to ſuſpition, and had made ſome little entrance; and ſtepping farther in by degrees, my Maſter was often earneſt with mee, to confeſſe the truth, before the buſineſſe ſhould grow fouler. But becauſe I knew mine owne innocencie, and that I was as cleere thereof, as the child that is new borne, I could giue him no other ſatisfaction ſaue good words.

Hatred, what effects it produceth.

Then this Traitor the Page ſtood vp, and ſaid; Me thinkes, Sir, it vvere not amiſſe that you would cauſe his Diſpence, or Pantry to be ſearcht. For it is not poſsible, but that hee muſt hide it ſome where or other there-abouts. For, being that I had not gone out of the Poope, it was very likely they might finde it in my lodging. This courſe tooke beſt, and was of all very vvell liked,

liked, and approued: And ſo getting them downe, and rummaging all that little roome; firſt this place, and then that, they lighted vpon it at laſt where the Page had put it; and taking it forth, they came vp with great ioy, and proclaim'd, that now they had found it, and that I had hid it there; for that it was not poſsible, that any body elſe ſhould doe it.

Now, becauſe this carried with it a ſhow of truth, and that they had caught me in the Negatiue, this confirmed them in their ſuſpition, and this crime was laid to my charge.

The Captaine commanded the *AlguaZils* ſeruant, to glue me fifty ſtripes; from the which my Maſter did free me, intreating my pardon, for that it was the firſt fault that I had committed; aduiſing me withall, that if hereafter I ſhould be taken with the like, I ſhould be ſoundly puniſht, and pay both for the old, and the new. After this, I held not vp my head any more, my heart was neuer truely merry, nor did I inioy my ſelfe, as before; not for that which was paſt; but fearing that which was to come; Thinking with my ſelfe, that he, that had done me this wrong, would (hauing ſcap't this ſo well) watch his time to doe me a greater miſchiefe. And being iealous of ſome farther foule play, I earneſtly beſought both the Captaine, and my Maſter, that they would quit me of this charge, and that I might haue their good will to deliuer ouer thoſe things that were in my cuſtodie to ſome other, and I ſhould take it from them as a fauour, that they would returne mee backe againe, laden with my irons, to my Banke. They thought, that the ground of all this, was the deſire that I had to goe backe againe to ſerue my old Maſter, the Maſters-Mate: And howbeit I did importune them very hard, and was very inſtant with them; they, for the ſame reaſon, were more earneſt and vrgent vpon mee; and that I ſhould (though it grieu'd me) ſerue and attend there all the dayes of my life. Miſerable man that I am (ſaid I) I know not in the vvorld vvhat to doe, nor how to defend my ſelfe from Traytors; who, it ſeemeth, haue ſet themſelues againſt me, onely of purpoſe to vndoo me.

Argo's eyes are not ſufficient to keepe a man from the malice of his enemies.

I did all that I could poſsibly doe for my life, no man liuing could be more carefull, watching (like *Argo's*) with a hundred eyes, whatſoeuer was committed to my charge, not neglecting thoſe things that were ſcarce worth the looking after, being but trifles, and not to bee reckoned of: yet all this my care would not ſerue my turne; it hath done mee, you ſee, no good; I vvas now in my riſing, but Heauen hath thought it fit that I muſt firſt fall.

One euening, as my Maſter was comming forth, I went out (as I was wont to doe) to receiue him as he was to aſcend the ſtayres, I gaue him my hand; he comes vp: I tooke off his Cloake, his Sword, and his Hat, and gaue him his Sea-Gowne, and Cap, which was of greene Damaske; for theſe things I had ſtill in a readineſſe.

When I had done, I carried downe thoſe other things, putting them in their right place. That very night, not knowing, how, who, or by what meanes (vnleſſe it were the Diuels doing, for I could not conceiue otherwiſe of it) that the Hat being falne downe from the place where it hung, I found it without a Band, which was ſet with gold Buttons. Whip, Sir *Iohn*, it was gone in a trice; ſo that in the morning, when I ſaw how it lay, and the Hat-band gone, I ſtood like a man amaz'd.

Well, I ſearch't as diligently for it, as if my life had layne vpon it; but to no purpoſe in the world. The Hat-band would not appeare, nor was there any ſigne, or marke thereof, how it ſhould be gone.

When I told my Maſter of it; Ah (ſaid he) now I know thee to be a thiefe; I wot well what thou art, and why thou doeſt it. But ſet your heart at reſt, it ſhall not ſerue your turne, for the Hat-band muſt not be ſo loſt; I ſhall make you fetch it out, and yet faile of your purpoſe beſides. I know your fetch well inough. Doeſt not thou thinke, that euer ſince the Plate was miſsing, I haue

lookt into your water, and found out the diſeaſe thou art ſicke of, and that thou goeſt ſeeking new occaſions, that thou mayſt be quit of my ſeruice? But thou ſhalt ſerue me ſtill in ſpite of thy teeth, if it be but to vexe thee the more, and thou ſhalt haue a thouſand baſtonado's walke daily about thy ſhoulders: Nor ſhalt thou euer ſerue any other Maſter in the Galley, but my ſelfe; And in caſe I ſhould go hence, I will ſo farre befriend you, that thou ſhalt be rank't like a Rogue, according as thy Villanies deſerue, and thy lewd and naughty dealings, ſince my good vſage towards thee, will not make thee leaue of, to be that which thou art, and euer wilt be *Guzman de Alfarache*; that's inough, I need ſay no more vnto thee.

I know not what to ſay vnto thee, nor to indeare the griefe that I conceiued here-vpon. Finding my ſelfe cleere and innocent, and yet charged with a iuſt (as they would haue it) and lawfull crime, I reply'de not ſo much as one word, nor had I the power to ſpeake; And if I ſhould haue ſought to iuſtifie my ſelfe, had it beene Goſpel, that I ſhould haue deliuered vnto them, comming out of my mouth, no more credit would haue beene giuen vnto it, then to *Mahomet*. I therefore was ſilent, and held my peace. For, when words will not profit a man, it were better that his tongue ſhould be dumbe, and his heart tell its griefes vnto God. Inwardly to my ſelfe, I gaue his Maieſtie thankes for this my affliction, beſeeching him, that he would free mee from this mans hands; for I knew not, wherein I had offended him. For I was ſo truely become another man, and ſo quite altred from that I was before, that I would rather ſuffer my ſelfe to be torne in a thouſand pieces, then to commit any the leaſt crime in the world.

When they had vſed many diligences, and ſaw that by no meanes they could bring this Hat-band to light; the Captaine commanded the *Alguazils* man, that hee ſhould beat it out of mee, and neuer giue mee ouer, till I had confeſt the Theft.

I was preſently taken vp, they did what they could, and I indured it as well as I could. They would haue mee to acknowledge that, which I neuer knew, whileſt I with my ſoule powr'd forth ſuch prayers, as I knew; inuocating heauen, that that torment and bloud, which thoſe cruell ſtripes did draw from mee, might bee ioyned with thoſe innocent droppes, and vndeſerued tortures, which my good God both ſuffered, and ſhed for me, and that they might bee auailable for mee to ſaluation; ſeeing that there was now no way but one with me: For dye I muſt vnder theſe their tyrannous hands, if they did not leaue off the ſooner. They ſaw all of them in vvhat a pittifull caſe I was, and there was nothing elſe wanting betwixt mee and my death, but the breathing forth of my Spirit. And albeit it ſeemed to my Maſter, that my crueltie, in ſuffering my ſelfe thus to be whipt, was greater then his, in commanding it to be done; yet at laſt taking compaſsion vpon me, and pittying the great torment that I was put to, cauſed me to be taken away.

Then did they chafe my body with Salt, and Wine Vineger, which vvas of greater torment vnto me, then the other. The Captaine would haue had them to haue giuen me as much more vpon my belly, ſaying; Little doe you know, Sir, the condition of theſe Theeues, who are of like nature to your Foxes; they will counterfet themſelues to be almoſt dead, and will lye, as if there were no life in them; but if you let them alone, and ſuffer them to take breath, they will runne from you, like ſo many yong Colts: And other ſome are ſo hardy, that for a piece of ſixe pence, they will let you flea the skin from off their backes. But let this Dogge aſſure himſelfe, hee ſhall not carry it away ſo; for I will neuer giue him ouer, till I haue either the Hat-band, or his life. He commanded me to be carried away from thence to my *Diſpenſilla*, or little Pantry, where they did lye at mee (I know not how often) with perſwaſions and admonitions, euer and anon notifying vnto mee, that

that I ſhould either deliuer vp the Hat-band, or arme my ſelfe with patience; for it was reſolued, that I muſt be beaten to death, rather then I ſhould inioy what I had ſtolne. But, as no man can reſtore that which hee neuer had; no more could I cumply with that which they commanded me.

Then I knew what it was to be a Gally-ſlaue; and how that the loue, which ſome made ſhow to beare vnto mee, and the good lookes that they gaue mee, proceeded onely from the pleaſure that they tooke in my merry ieſts, and witty conceits, and not for mine owne ſake. And the greateſt griefe that I did feele in theſe my miſeries, was not ſo much for the paine which I did indure, nor for the falſe witneſſe that was giuen againſt mee, as that all of them did verily beleeue, that I did iuſtly deſerue this puniſhment, and therefore tooke no pitie of me.

Some few dayes (after this my rubbing and being waſht with Salt and Vineger) paſt ouer my head, when lo, they came a-freſh vpon me, commanding me to make reſtitution of the Hat-band; and I becauſe I would not or (to ſpeake more truely) could not giue it them, they pull'd mee out of the Pantry, being very weake and ill, faſtening Cords to the wreſts of mine arme, and haling me vp with a pully, I hung (I know not how long) in the ayre, which was a terrible torment vnto mee, where I thought, I ſhould haue breath'd my laſt. For my heart was ſo afflicted, that I had ſcarce any feeling that there was any ſuch thing in my body, and my breath began to faile me. At laſt, they let me downe, not to giue me eaſe, but to lay me downe vpon my backe athwart the Cannon, that lyes betweene the Fore-caſtle, and hinder Decke; where when my belly lay fit for their purpoſe, they laid thereon ſuch cruell blowes, as if it had beene for ſome heinous crime, charging the Officer to be-labour me euen to the death.

But the Captaine, beginning now to feare, that I was ready to giue vp the Ghoſt, and that hee ſhould bee accountable to the King for mee, if I ſhould through this his cruell vſage periſh in my puniſhment, hee held it the better option of the two, rather to loſe the Hat-band, then me. Where-vpon hee commanded they ſhould take me away, and carry me to my wonted lodging, there to be cured.

When I began to recouer, and had got a little ſtrength, they yet thought themſelues not ſufficiently reuenged of me; for they had ſtill this ſtedfaſt beliefe of me, that I was ſuch a notable Villaine, and ſuch a ſtubborn Rogue, that I would rather ſuffer all that rigour of this their whipping and ſcourging of me, then loſe the intereſt of this my ſuppoſed theft: Inſomuch, that they commanded the Maſters Mate, that he ſhould neuer pardon me, when I did offend, but that he ſhould be very carefull to puniſh ſtill in me, thoſe ſinnes that were veniall, as if they had beene mortall:

And he, who could not otherwiſe chooſe but fulfill his Captaines command (for he durſt not for his life doe otherwiſe) did chaſtiſe me with vnaccuſtomed crueltie, one while for that I did not get mee to ſleepe at my due houres; another-while, for that I did not wake in time; if to ſupply my other wants, I did ſell my allowance, ſparing the meat out of my belly, to relieue my neceſſities, I was ſure to be laſht for it; vſing me ſo extremely ill, that I was weary of my life, and did deſire with all my heart, that I were out of this wretched world. And, that they might haue the better colour to doe as they did, and that they might picke occaſion to pay mee ſoundly, and yet ſaue themſelues harmeleſſe; they committed to my charge the trouble of the (a) *Corulle*; with proteſtation, that if any thing therein ſhould be wanting, I ſhould be ſure to pay well for it. I was likewiſe vpon all occaſions, like the reſt of the Gally-Slaues, put to tugge at the Oare; my Banke was the hindermoſt, and therefore the more painfull, as being ſubiect to the inclemency of the weather; in Summer, to heates; and in Winter to colds; being ſtill ty'de to haue a care to keepe

(a) *The Italian will haue this to ſignifie* tutta la robo del Rey. *The French renders it*, Connille.

keepe vp the Beake of our Gally in the windes mouth, and to goe ſnugge and tyte. To my cuſtody, were committed all the iron implements that vvere aboord her; as likewiſe the Cables, to caſt or weigh Anchor, as need ſhould require. When we did ſayle with the winde, I was faine to looke to the fore-ſayle, as alſo to the ſheate that was to the Lar-boord; ſayle, or not ſayle, I had ſomething ſtill to doe, either before, or behinde. I did ſpinne all the Hempe, whereof your ſmaller cordage, and leſſer Ropes were made, which were ſpent and imployed on the Gallies. It was put to my account to tye vp the Yards, to ruffle the Sayles, to dry them, and then deliuer them to the Ship-boyes, to hoyſe the Fore-ſayle, and ſee euery thing fit about it. I did mend thoſe ends of the ſayles that were torne and rent with the winde, I did patch and lengthen out thoſe that were grown too ſhort; I did ſtrengthen the old tacklings with olde ends, that I had in ſtore for that purpoſe; but the Cables I ſupplyde ſtill with new ſtuffe: I did helpe the Gunners to plant their Ordnance, remoue their Carriages, and to winde and turne their Artillerie, as they would haue it. The care was laid vpon me, to ſtop the touch-holes, and to ſee them well couer'd, that no wet ſhould come at them; to looke to the ſcouring ſticks, and the Spoones to powre in the powder, to the Rammers, the Spunges, and the Lin-ſtocks that belonged to the Artillerie. And vvhen the Maſter-Mates man was out of the way, or otherwiſe occupied, it vvas inioyned me to ſweepe and make cleane the Gally, and to bee the common Swabber, cauſing the Ship-boyes to bring Mats and Ruſhes, to make Maps where-withall to rub it, keeping it alwayes neat and cleane from all kinde of filthineſſe. And of old ends of Ragges, or of Flax and Tow, to make wads and wiſps for thoſe that go to the Long-houſe (you know what I meane) and this was the vtmoſt of all miſeries, and that went moſt againſt my ſtomake, as being of all others the meaneſt and the baſeſt Office; for being to ſerue them with theſe, for ſo beaſtly (that I may not giue it a worſe word, for feare of turning thy ſtomake) a piece of buſineſſe, I muſt firſt be forced to kiſſe it, before I giue it into their hands, ſo that by an Attourney, I muſt kiſſe, you know what.

He, that ſhould haue ſo many things committed to his charge as I had, and had not been accuſtomed vnto them, it muſt haue been almoſt impoſsible for him not to haue failed in the performance of them; but through the great care that I alwayes tooke, I did ſtudy to doe all things well, and did ſeldome or neuer miſſe in doing of my dutie, and with vſe, they grew euery day leſſe difficult then other. Euen from hence alſo would Fortune haue throwne mee downe if ſhe could; but becauſe her force cannot extend it ſelfe againſt the goods of the minde; and that aduerſitie makes men wiſe and prudent; I ſtill bare vp ſtoutly, and continued firme and conſtant, withſtanding all the power that ſhe could make againſt me. And as hee that is rich, and liues happily, is euermore afraid of falling; ſo on the contrarie, was I in good hope of riſing, becauſe it was impoſsible for me to fall any lower. And as my minde gaue me, ſo it fell out.

Soto, my Camerade, came not to the Gallies, either to giue Almes, or to preach Faith in Chriſt to the Infidels It was his ſins that had brought him thither; for he had been the greateſt, and moſt notorious thiefe, that euer vvas heard of in his time, either in all *Italy*, or in *Spaine*. Hee had ſometimes beene a Souldier, and knew euery part of the Countrey, as one that had trauell'd it to and fro many a time. Hee perceiuing that our Gallies did ſayle along the Mediterranean, and that we went touching now and then vpon the coaſt of *Barbary*, ſeeking reprizals, it entred into his imagination to treat with ſome Moores, and other Gally-ſlaues, that were of his faction, to make purchaſe of this our Gally, and to goe ſheere away with it. For which purpoſe, he and they were already prouided of ſome weapons, which they had hid in by-

corners,

corners, and vnder their Banks, to make vſe of them, when time ſhould ſerue. But becauſe he could not bring this his deſigne to paſſe, without hauing me to bee of his Party, in regard of the place that I had in my Banke, vvhere I was behinde at his backe; and for that the ordering of the Tacklings and Cables were committed wholly to my charge, he thought fit to make me acquainted with this his intention, caſting and conſidering with himſelfe, that this buſineſſe would be better welcome to no man then my ſelfe, as well for that I was condemned to ſerue there as a Slaue all the dayes of my life; as alſo, that I might free my ſelfe from that Hell, where-into they had thruſt me, and did ſo ſeuerely puniſh me. *Soto* would haue broken the Ice himſelfe, and did much deſire to conferre with mee about it, but hee could not finde the meanes. Where-vpon, he ſent a Meſſenger vnto mee, (one that hee might truſt) deſiring my reconciliation, and fauour, and that I would ioyne with him for the better effecting of our freedome from this cruell bondage and ſlauery wherein we now liued. I returned him anſwere, that this was not a buſineſſe ſo eaſily to be vndertaken as hee ſuppoſed; but ought to bee well weigh'd and thought vpon, before we did reſolue thereon; for we muſt needs runne a very great hazzard in the vndergoing thereof; for that there was no *medium* betwixt theſe two; either to come off cleere, or to loſe our liues. To the Moore, who had brought me this meſſage, my Counſell did not ſeeme amiſſe; Telling me, that he would goe with my anſwere to *Soto*, and finde a time to come againe vnto me, and talke farther of it.

In the *Interim*, while theſe meſſages paſt to and fro, I conſulted with my ſelfe; and for that I had put on a full reſolution, not to doe any thing that was infamous, or ill, no not for any profit or benefit that ſhould accrue thereby vnto me, I knew that it was now no time for mee to aduiſe farther vvith them; as well, for that I ſaw how they were reſolued; as alſo for feare, if I ſhould fall off from them, or otherwiſe miſſe of their purpoſe, they might chance to diſcloſe me, and ſuborne ſome falſe witneſſes againſt me, the better to excuſe and ſaue themſelues: Giuing out, that I, to free my ſelfe from the miſery, wherein I liu'd, had incited them there-vnto. Well, I gaue them good words, and made my ſelfe to be of their party, they beeing reſolued to put this their plot in execution vpon Saint *Iohn Baptiſts* day, betimes in the Morning.

Now, when the Eue was come, and that one of the Souldiers was going to vntruſſe a point, when he came to me for ſome Ockame to wipe his poſteriors, I roſe vp, and whiſpering him in the eare, ſecretly ſaid vnto him, Sir, tell your Captain, that it imports both his life, and his honour, to heare two words from me, which tend to his Maieſties ſeruice: and therefore let him preſently giue order that I may bee brought to him into the Poope. He did ſo, and the Captaine forthwith commanded me to come before him, where, in his preſence, I reuealed vnto him this their conſpiracy: whereat he bleſt himſelfe, and would ſcarce giue credit vnto it; it ſeeming vnto him, that I had inuented this of mine own head, that I might be eaſed of thoſe troubleſome labours, and great miſeries which I indured, and that by this meanes, I might procure ſome mercede or fauour from him. But when I told him, where he ſhould find their Weapons, and who, and how they were brought thither, hee rendred many thankes vnto God, that hee had deliuered him from ſo great a danger; promiſing, that he would ſee me well rewarded for my labour.

Hee commanded one that was Captaine of a Squadron, that hee ſhould make diligent ſearch about thoſe Bankes, which I had pointed forth vnto him, and looking there for their weapons, at laſt they lighted vpon them. Preſently there-vpon, was a Proceſſe fulminated forth againſt all the Offendours: And becauſe the next day following was a great Feſtiuall day, and very ſolemnely obſerued by vs, their puniſhment was deferr'd till the next day following.

God,

God, (and my good fortune) who was well pleaſed with this my ſeruice, and did guide theſe buſineſſes of mine, by his owne diuine hand, would needs haue it fall out ſo luckily for mee, that opening a Cheſt to hang out the Streamers that belonged to the Maine-Maſt, the Miſne, and other fitting places for them, as well in acknowledgement of their thankefulneſſe vnto God, as the honour and ſolemnitie of that day, they found therein a neſt of Rats, and amongſt other trinkets my Maſters Hat-band.

Soto conceiuing how the world was like to goe with him, was very deſirous to haue his ghoſtly Father come to him, that (like a good Chriſtian) he might make confeſsion of his ſinnes, and crauing pardon and forgiueneſſe at my hands, for the falſe witneſſes, that he had ſuborned againſt me about the Hat-band, he did together declare, how, and wherefore hee had done it, and howbeit he had made ſhow to be reconciled vnto me, and to enter into a new League of friendſhip with me, yet his purpoſe and reſolution was, when they had made themſelues Maſters of the Gally, to haue ſtab'd me, his hatred being ſuch towards mee, that nothing could ſatisfie it, but my death. From whoſe reuengefull hand, my good God, that day, was ſo gracious vnto me, as to free me from this his implacable malice.

Soto, and one of his Companions, who were the Ring-leaders of this rebellion, were condemned to be drawne in pieces with foure Gallies; and fiue other to bee hang'd: Which ſentence was executed. And as many as were found to haue a finger in this buſineſſe, were confined to the Gallies for terme of life, being firſt publikely whipt, paſsing from Gally to Gally, till they had rounded the whole Fleete. As for the *Moores*, moſt of them had their noſes and their eares cut off, that by this marke, they might be knowne, where euer they came, to be Rogues vpon record.

This exemplary Iuſtice hauing paſt vpon theſe Offenders; when all vvas ended, and things ſettled as before, the Captaine ſends for mee, and highly extolling the goodneſſe of my nature, my innocencie, and my loyaltie, crauing pardon of me for my former ill vſage, hee commanded my irons to bee ſtrooke off, and gaue me leaue to goe at libertie vp and downe the Gally, till his Maieſties Royall *Scedula* ſhould be ſent for my abſolute diſcharge. For ſo the Captaine had ſupplicated for me; and being conſulted on by the Councell of Warre, the Petition was ſigned; which was no ſooner ſent downe, but I was ſet at liberty.

And heere (gentle Reader) doe I put a full point to theſe my mis-fortunes. I haue giuen thee a large account of my lewd life; it is truely ſumm'd vp vnto thee. What it was hereafter, thou ſhalt ſee in my third and laſt Part, if God ſhall giue me life: and that I doe not firſt exchange this tranſitorie one, for one that is eternall, which is the hope and life of the faithfull.

FINIS.